

**DIALOGS WITH
THE
LORD JESUS CHRIST**

FIRST VOLUME



DIALOGS WITH THE LORD JESUS CHRIST
FIRST VOLUME

DIALOGS WITH
THE
LORD JESUS CHRIST

FIRST VOLUME

DIALOGS WITH THE LORD JESUS CHIRST — FIRST VOLUME

For a free copy of this book, please, write to:
TNR Foundation
4482 Meadowlark Lane
Santa Barbara, California 93105-9725

Published by TNR Foundation in the United States of America

Second Printing

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Introduction	v
First Dialog	1
Second Dialog	15
Third Dialog	23
Fourth Dialog	33
Fifth Dialog	43
Sixth Dialog	55
Seventh Dialog	61
Eighth Dialog	69
Ninth Dialog	79
Tenth Dialog	87
Eleventh Dialog	95
Twelfth Dialog	105
Thirteenth Dialog	113
Fourteenth Dialog	121
Fifteenth Dialog	129
Sixteenth Dialog	139
Seventeenth Dialog	147
Eighteenth Dialog	155
Nineteenth Dialog	163
Twentieth Dialog	171
Twenty First Dialog	181
Twenty Second Dialog	189
Twenty Third Dialog	197
Twenty Fourth Dialog	205
Twenty Fifth Dialog	213
Twenty Sixth Dialog	221
Twenty Seventh Dialog	229
Twenty Eighth Dialog	237
Twenty Ninth Dialog	245
Thirtieth Dialog	253
Thirty First Dialog	261
Thirty Second Dialog	269
Thirty Third Dialog	277
Thirty Fourth Dialog	285
Thirty Fifth Dialog	293
Thirty Sixth Dialog	307
Thirty Seventh Dialog	315
Thirty Eighth Dialog	323
Thirty Ninth Dialog	331
Fortieth Dialog	339
Forty First Dialog	347

Forty Second Dialog	357
Forty Third Dialog	367
Forty Fourth Dialog	377
Forty Fifth Dialog	385
Forty Sixth Dialog	395
Forty Seventh Dialog	407
Forty Eighth Dialog	417
Forty Ninth Dialog	425
Fiftieth Dialog	433
Fifty First Dialog	441
Fifty Second Dialog	449
Fifty Third Dialog	459
Fifty Fourth Dialog	469
Fifty Fifth Dialog	477
Fifty Sixth Dialog	485
Fifty Seventh Dialog	497
Fifty Eighth Dialog	507
Fifty Ninth Dialog	517
Sixtieth Dialog	525
Sixty First Dialog	533
Sixty Second Dialog	541
Sixty Third Dialog	549
Sixty Fourth Dialog	559
Sixty Fifth	569
Sixty Sixth Dialog	577
Sixty Seventh Dialog	587
Sixty Eighth Dialog	595
Sixty Ninth Dialog	603
Seventieth Dialog	613
Seventy First Dialog	625
Seventy Second Dialog	635
Seventy Third Dialog	643
Seventy Fourth Dialog	651
Seventy Fifth Dialog	663
Seventy Sixth Dialog	671
Seventy Seventh Dialog	681
Seventy Eighth	689
Seventy Ninth Dialog	699
Eightieth Dialog	709
Eighty First Dialog	719
Eighty Second Dialog	729
Eighty Third Dialog	737
Eighty Fourth Dialog	745
Eighty Fifth Dialog	755

Eighty Sixth Dialog	775
Eighty Seventh Dialog	783
Eighty Eighth	793
Eighty Ninth Dialog	801
Ninetieth Dialog	809
Ninety First Dialog	819
Ninety Second Dialog	827
Ninety Third Dialog	837
Ninety Fourth Dialog	845
Ninety Fifth Dialog	855
Ninety Sixth Dialog	871
Ninety Seventh Dialog	881
Ninety Eighth Dialog	891
Ninety Ninth Dialog	899
One Hundredth Dialog	909-932

INTRODUCTION

The first volume of this book consists of 100 Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ. They were recorded sequentially and therefore, it is advised that their first reading be undertaken sequentially as well. Some Dialogs contain topics which were addressed in the previous Dialogs and for that reason, it would be difficult to understand what they contain without their relatedness to the preceding Dialogs.

These Dialogs can be considered as a sequence to and continuation of **The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ** and the **Corollaries to The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ**. Because their philosophy, and everything contained in them, has a direct relevance to those two books, it would be impossible to properly understand anything in these Dialogs without the prior reading of those two preceding books and without thorough knowledge and practice of what they contain. Otherwise, very little would make sense with what these Dialogs deal. And not only that, but there is a certain degree of spiritual danger in reading them without the prior familiarity and acceptance of the content of the previously published two books. Not knowing and understanding what these Dialogs contain or deal with, may lead the prospective reader to reject whatever they offer. In such a rejection is hidden the possible denial of the spiritual truth directly derived from The Lord Jesus Christ Who is the Absolute Truth Himself/Herself. In this logical sense, denial of the content of these Dialogs, may equal denial of The Lord Jesus Christ. This is the mentioned spiritual danger.

Of course, based on any prospective reader's free will and choice, he/she may accept or reject anything contained not only in these Dialogs but also in the preceding two books — as indicated above. Nothing is being forced or imposed on anyone. However, in order to be fair and objective, it is necessary to honestly warn about any possible consequences, results and outcomes of any choice in this respect.

The above mentioned conditions and requirements fully apply to the Second Volume of these Dialogs likewise.

Thank you for considering what is being revealed in these Dialogs.

Dr. Peter D. Francuch
Santa Barbara, CA
June 20, 2000

DIALOGS WITH THE LORD JESUS CHRIST

First Dialog

December 24, 1998

Peter: As You know, recently I have been having very active and intense dialogs with You, related to various spiritual issues, and also questioning the validity of some statements and requirements outlined in the **Corollaries to The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ**. Also, I am experiencing a tremendous need, intuitive desire and almost pressure to record our dialogs and share them with some selected people connected to Your New Revelation. Are these desires, needs, intuition, or whatever I am experiencing, coming from You directly; are they imposed upon me by the forces of the negative state or are they the result of my stinky human ego that wants me to feel useful and elevated above others? What is the true reason behind all of this?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Let Me assure you, Peter, that it is by no means a coincidence that you are experiencing such needs or desires. This is coming from your intuition. Do I need to remind you that My most pronounced presence is in your intuition? So, for your peace of mind I am reassuring you that this is coming directly from Me because the present spiritual climate and situation is such that they require you to act in this particular manner. Let us go back a little into your personal history relating to the transmission of your previous books. Do you remember what happened to you after you published your very first book, **Principles of Spiritual Hypnosis**? After it was published, you felt tremendous pressure to continue writing. At that time, of course, you did not consciously realize that your role and assignment was to be the transmitter of The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ. But, what kind of ideas were you getting at the time? From your typical human standpoint, as a practicing clinical psychologist, you were going to proceed and write something like, 'Principles of Spiritual Psychology'. What a narrow and limited topic! However, at the same time a different idea was impinging on you, and the outline of a different type of book, and its content, was pictured in your mind, titled, **Fundamentals of Human Spirituality**. At that time you thought that it was spiritual arrogance on your part to even remotely conceive such a tremendously important topic as that because, after all, who were you? What kind of person were you who dared to even think in such terms? You were only a psychologist who had no business being preoccupied with anything related to such vast and far-reaching issues. So, you struggled

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

tremendously with that idea, refusing to act upon it for a long period of time. But, do you remember, that the more you struggled with it, the more you tried to avoid it and reject it from your mind, the stronger it became, so that at one point it became unbearable and it burned within you until one morning — after you woke up from that significant dream-vision — it was utterly impossible for you to procrastinate any longer except to begin recording? And, as you know, this was the very beginning of the transmission of the series of books that comprise ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ*** in their totality. That time was a tremendous spiritual milestone that initiated something entirely new in all areas of the multiverse, as well as in the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero. Of course, at the time, you did not realize that planet Earth was actually planet Zero, or that such a thing as the Zone of Displacement even existed.

Now, the present situation has a very similar significance, although its meaning and content, as well as the present spiritual climate and condition are entirely different. Nothing is even remotely the same as it was at that time.

Peter: I am experiencing tremendous anxiety and fear, as well as hesitation, to proceed because of what You said in the first Private Conversation, in Update 20 and in the Announcement, recorded in the ***Corollaries...*** that no more messages in the written form would be forthcoming. I don't want to find myself in violation of that requirement. What is the reality of that requirement and how is it still valid?

The Lord Jesus Christ: I can repeat exactly the same words as above: "Nothing is even remotely the same as it was at the time of transmission of the mentioned portion of that book." From that time until now, tremendous changes have occurred in the fabric of Creation, the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero. Several most significant shifts have taken place. They require a different approach, attitude, understanding, behavior and mode of relating, communicating and involvement. It is not by coincidence that it is at this particular time that you have retired from your professional human type of job. You are needed now on an entirely different, all-inclusive level, devoting your entire time to My New Revelation and to all connected to it at all levels of the multiverse, including the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero.

Peter: So, what about the danger of the written material, and the personalized, individualized approach to all of this? What about the need to ask one's own questions and get one's own answers?

The Lord Jesus Christ: At the time when those types of suggestions were given, it was supposed to be that way. It was the right thing to do. But, please do not forget even for a moment that from that time, almost five years have elapsed. (In February 1999, it will be five years since the first indication about this issue). Do you have the foolish notion that things are still the same as they were at that time? Don't you remember that it was indicated very clearly and emphatically at the time that all Updates in the **Corollaries...** reflect the **here-and-now** situation and only the **here-and-now** situation, and that they should not be considered as unchangeable dogma, embedded forever into the rules of your behavior and lifestyle, never, ever to be changed, modified or refuted? How easy it is for your human nature — and this statement relates to all of you — to forget the statement repeated many times throughout the entire transmission of the books of The New Revelation that what was proper and right yesterday might not be so today, and what is proper, right and correct today might not be so tomorrow? What happened to the principles of continuous spiritual progression?

Now, to answer your question directly: At that time, it was vital and crucial for everyone to establish a personalized and individualized approach and to learn not to be dependent on Updates, messages or the written material but on one's own intuition and unique mode of communicating with The Lord Jesus Christ in one's within. This requirement related directly to the issue of synergetic work with the pseudo-creators who needed to experience answers to their questions from the right source and from the right position. Only all of you could provide them with such answers. The issue was to ask questions and receive answers, not by the mode of imposition from the outside and from someone else, but from the position of one's internals; meaning, to illustrate to the pseudo-creators that the only right answers to their questions can and may be acquired only from the position of within, from The Lord Jesus Christ, who is fully present in that within, and from it, also in the without and in everything in-between. As you know, for the pseudo-creators, the concept of within and the individualized, personalized approach, is or was up to that point, totally unacceptable because it is unscientific. Being that they are or were the greatest scientists of all time — by the principles of the scientific requirements so conveniently established by them — the only proper answers one could acquire would be by outside objective observation, gathering information, classifying events and similar things, which then can lead to objective conclusions, from which, generalizations can be made that would be valid for all. Of course, as you know so well, Peter, such an approach leads to nothing else but distortions and outright falsities. This is the reason why

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

it was necessary for all of you to establish a different mode of acquiring information, so that the pseudo-creators would be able to observe the fact that one can get proper, valid and correct answers only by the mode which has been reflected in your lives up to this point.

Peter: So, what is the situation now with the pseudo-creators, their minions and renegades?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Those who were willing and ready to learn that most significant and important lesson, have learned it. Those who were not, refused to acknowledge or accept the validity of that type of learning. For how long do you think such lessons need to be illustrated or continued in the time-space continuum? Either until you learn them or fail to learn them. Such lessons cannot continue forever because if this were the case, it would effectively impede spiritual progression and learning something new and different. That would virtually establish a regressive and stagnant condition, so characteristic of the nature of the negative state. In that case, the negative state could not be eliminated unto eternity. Such an outcome is not feasible at all because it would be contrary to My Nature, to the nature of the positive state and to the promise that was made by Me before the activation of the negative state. A little later we will discuss the other aspects of the current condition of the pseudo-creators, their minions and renegades.

Peter: Please, let us go back to the danger of relying on the written material and the messages coming from You through me and then being conveyed to interested others.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, Peter, look at it this way: What has been the problem with humankind as far as the written material is concerned? Consider this: for example, take all those so-called holy books, such as the Christian Bible, the Hebrew Talmud, the Islamic Koran, the Tibetan Book of the Dead, the Buddhist and Hindu holy books, and numerous others. What has happened to them? They have become a dogmatic, unchangeable, rigid, stagnant and forever fixed source of human pseudo-spirituality without allowing any alteration, renewal or change in anything in them. And not only that, but they became a source of tremendously bloody human conflicts and problems in all times. Their ridiculousness goes so far that even changes in the formal linguistic expression are considered profane and sinful. For example, look at how all readers of the Christian Bible, and all others in their own religious systems, cling to that archaic, old, confusing English translation with all those “thous,” “thees” and similar nonsense that have absolutely no meaning or significance. Yet, they cling to this and don’t want to change

anything in that respect. And although there are some modern translations of such books, humans still prefer the old ways, as though they would get better results in their efforts to be saved, or for whatever reasons they read them.

There is a similar situation with the messages or Updates. Their readers will have the tendency to look at their content as immutable, unchangeable, always applicable and valid for all times and conditions. You have to look at their validity only from the standpoint of their historical value, as a reflection of the spiritual climate of that particular time, as a lesson or learning of how spiritual development and progression had been occurring during those times and how new, more progressive and more advanced steps were being built on them. If you look at them from this proper perspective, then and only then they will have proper meaning and significance. In that sense, and only in that sense, their validity will be forever.

Peter: What about the issue of not giving any messages to anyone any longer because it would be by imposition and thus, it would become subsumable by the forces of the negative state?

The Lord Jesus Christ: At that time it was necessary to establish a mode of life that would make everyone who read and practiced **The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ** accountable and responsible for their own life. As you know, a very spiritually dangerous situation started to occur then. The readers of **The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ** were starting to rely on what you, Peter, said or wrote, or they anxiously waited for messages to come through you. That type of attitude fostered a dangerous dependency on you and on the messages. As you know, depending on anyone or anything else robs one of the abilities to establish and express one's own unique personality and nature, impeding all from the ability and desire to think and act for themselves, from themselves and by themselves. In that case, they become slaves of the negative state because the negative state is built on external dependencies and slavery to someone or something else.

Peter: Was this one of the reasons why a painful break occurred among us here on the West Coast as well as on the East Coast at that time?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, albeit not the only one. The break was permitted by Me to happen in order to establish individualized and personalized lifestyles and to avoid a dependency on each other. There was a dangerous tendency to foster a group-type, togetherness-type and interdependent-type mode of life that would have blocked everyone not

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

only from properly understanding the principles of ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ*** and its Updates, but, most importantly, from recognizing the position, role, assignment and mission that they have from Me. However, unfortunately that break also led to an opposite, undesirable and negative outcome — so typical on planet Zero with humans. On the one hand, it was assumed that no more messages would ever be coming in the future, and that the case was closed, so-to-speak. On the other hand, some of you also assumed that your mission, Peter, was finished or completed and that you would not be representing, transmitting or speaking about spiritual issues any longer, that The Lord Jesus Christ would be mute once again and that everyone would be on their own without any input from anyone or anything. In other words, it was taken as indisputable dogma, rigid law and a fixed, imbedded and non-modifiable condition that would never ever change. At the same time, some of you incorrectly assumed that if Peter was no longer in that position, then someone else would be assigned that role.

Peter: In that case, what is the difference between receiving messages and the recording that I am doing right now?

The Lord Jesus Christ: But isn't it obvious? Do you remember a few days ago, during your rereading of Update 20, you came across a statement that hit you like a brick, clearly indicating that the current shift (at the time) was going from messages toward asking questions? How many times have you read that text and the tremendous significance of that statement has never registered in your mind until now? Look at how messages are being received (or were being received): Passively, you waited patiently for when I put the ideas into your mind. After that, you would write them down and share them with the rest of you. Because of the current spiritual requirement — to continue in that mode would signify that messages come in and are accepted by imposition and not by freedom of choice. Such an acceptance, based on imposition, would lead the pseudo-creators to conclude that there is no difference between the positive state and the negative state because, after all, everything in the negative state and in human life is by imposition. To make such a conclusion would prevent them from discovering the Absolute Truth for which they have been searching during all of their being and existence. In that case, the negative state could not be eliminated.

On the other hand, look at how this Dialog is proceeding. You are not passively receiving messages but, instead, by your own free will and choice, you are asking questions and, because you asked for the answers to your questions, you are getting those answers. Nothing is being

imposed on you and nothing is being said that would not come from your immense desire to know the truth and live by it. This is the fundamental difference that leads the pseudo-creators to acknowledge that you are not a passive slave of the positive state, but an active, free thinking, free willing, independent and unique being who is able, in searching for Truth, to ask relevant questions and, subsequently, receive relevant answers. And, most importantly, the questions come from your within, from your own integrated mind without waiting on someone or something to initiate them on your behalf and to impose their own answers on you. This kind of communication, which is an entirely new one, prevents anyone in the negative state to know what is going on here between Me and you. It simply bypasses their awareness. Two of us are talking to each other and no one is able to interfere with this process.

Peter: Are there any criteria for asking such questions?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Of course. The questions may be asked either from the purity of one's heart, with positive and good intent, for the purpose of becoming a better, more loving, wiser and more useful being/entity, in which case the answers will always come from the right source; or the questions are asked with some hidden or apparent ulterior reason or motivation, with the wrong intent and for the wrong reasons. In that case, the answers will come from a deceiving negative source.

Peter: What about the content of ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***? How valid are its principles and statements?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Please notice the language and the topic of that monumental book. With the exception of the fifth chapter, it deals primarily with analyzing the nature of the negative state, its origin, source and the reasons for its activation, the nature of human life, planet Zero and the Zone of Displacement, the origin of human problems, the nature of the positive state, the Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ, the meaning of life in general and human life in particular (in all their possible details, to the extent that you, being in the human skin, so-to-speak, are able to grasp it). Furthermore, it defines the fundamental spiritual laws by which life is possible and feasible; it outlines the proper spiritual principles that regulate the current spiritual state for this particular cycle of time and many other similar things. But, notice please, that in formulating those principles, for example, how to survive human life or how to practice the principles of The New Revelation, it outlines the most necessary conditions for your survival in the midst of the negative state and in the human life. When talking about spiritual principles, it clearly distinguishes between those that will have validity

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

for all cycles of time, from those that will have only temporary value until the end of the negative state. As you know, at that time, such principles will either be modified, reformulated or entirely abolished. So, to answer your questions, and to reiterate it again and again (remember Update 15?), nothing in **The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ** will ever become old, outdated or obsolete.

Peter: What about Chapter 5 in that book?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, as you know, Peter, Chapter Five was written *before* the entire content of **The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ** was completed. Because of that, at that time, under those conditions, it was a valid and proper procedure. But the availability of **The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ** in its entirety changed that situation and requirement completely. Do not forget that before that time, symbolically speaking, the positive state was very remote or far from the negative state, the Zone of Displacement and your planet. Because of that, it was necessary and required to develop and establish an elaborate procedure that would enable anyone interested to get in contact with their spiritual reality and spiritual family. However, as of now, reading, meditating, pondering, thinking or whatever, about **The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ**, puts one in direct contact with Me, one's true spiritual family and the true reality of the positive state, with or without one's conscious awareness that such is the case. So, to repeat again, the content of that chapter will always have historical value, describing the spiritual climate that existed before the complete version of **The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ** became available. It will be a good lesson, a basis for comparing the situation that existed before with the one that exists now, and will exist in the future. So, don't disregard it.

Peter: I would like to go back to the issue of the breakup that happened among us several years ago and still continues with some of us. As you know, this caused me a tremendous amount of anguish, anxiety, pain and a sense of being abandoned. What was the significance of all of that, for me personally? It is an especially painful realization being completely isolated and separated from Mark Keating.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, it is understandable. However, look at what was happening at the time. Slowly and gradually, you were becoming too dependent on Mark for any inputs or messages from Me. Gradually, almost imperceptibly, you were relinquishing your communication with Me, directly from your own within and waited for Mark to come or for you to visit him at his place in order to communicate

Dialog 1

with Me by using his vocal chords and voice. The forces of the negative state capitalized on that situation and started to invade your group, breaking it up and shutting off your own ability to contact Me directly from your own within and from your own self-reliance. You stopped trusting anything that came from your own within. On the other hand, when some of the members of your group incorrectly assumed that you were finished being a representative and conveyor of anything coming from Me and My positive state, and that you had become spiritually impotent to do anything but sit around and sulk, they started to make suggestions to you about what you should do, how you should be and in what manner you should behave and relate to them. Such demands on their part caused you even more anguish and you became extremely uncomfortable in their presence — and rightly so. There is a historical precedent in this situation, Peter, from your own life. Something similar happened before the transmission of your book ***Fundamentals of Human Spirituality***. At that time, you had tremendous difficulties accepting the fact that your mission and assignment from Me was to be the transmitter of My New Revelation. You had very little trust in what was coming from your own mind. Instead, you were relying on what was coming to you from Me through a very young Mark Keating. To teach you to stop relying on others, no matter how pure and how good they were and are; and to teach you to rely on your own input, it was necessary to break up your association with Mark for many years. That break served a very good purpose. Both of you have no idea of the tremendous spiritual danger that was prevented by that act for both of your lives. And something similar happened during the current break. As you know, you have not been in communication with Mark for almost two years, as well as with some others.

Peter: Does this break and separation need to continue?

The Lord Jesus Christ: That depends on the choices that others are to make. There is no objective reason why it should continue. Subjectively however, it is a different story. The choices have to be made. In your position, Peter, due to who you are and what your true assignment from Me is, it would not be appropriate for you to make the first contact. Because you speak in My Name (we will talk about it a little later), it would be an imposition, an inevitability and a necessity for them to listen to what you have to say. On the other hand, it could also foster a typical human resentment, in that they have to communicate with you and listen to what you have to say or convey. Do not forget for a second what it means to talk to people in My Name.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Peter: Is there another reason for all of that?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, there is. As you know, humans have a very strong tendency to imitate or duplicate what others do and how others behave or what others experience. Many years ago, even before any of your books were written or published, some of the former students whom you taught at the University of California, proclaimed, “if Peter, or Dr. Francuch can do it, I can also do it, and even better.” So, they wanted to become you, instead of becoming themselves. Do you remember those events? By trying to duplicate you or to become like you, they denied their own unique personalities, their own mission and assignment and became useless and unproductive in their endeavor. With that kind of attitude, where are they now? Do you see what I mean? So, in your present situation, a dangerous tendency started to develop with some members of your group, to try to have the same experiences or to be the same way you are. In order to prevent them from falling into the trap set up for them by the forces of the negative state, it was necessary to separate them from you so that they would learn to become themselves and rely on their own intuition and input from their own within, instead of on you or anyone else, for that matter.

Peter: Again, the question is, does this situation need to continue?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Again, it depends on the extent to which they learned their lessons and are anchored in their own within, and how independent they are at the present time. Are they capable of establishing a relationship based on this new factor, which doesn’t foster the need to imitate or duplicate anyone or anything? Are they free from such a tendency? Are they strong and able enough to be able to resist the temptation to want to be like you, Peter, or to have similar experiences and a similar assignment? Are they comfortable with their own nature, with their own unique assignment, role and position, which they have from Me? Do they accept who they are and why they are on planet Zero, regardless of who they are or what their role here is? Are they willing to accept the fact that no one is the same and that everyone has their own unique experiences that cannot be duplicated or imitated? If the answer to these or similar questions is a resounding “Yes,” then, by all means, this situation doesn’t need to continue. Otherwise, no change could take place in the current state of affairs in this particular respect.

Peter: To repeat the question again: What about the issue of the written material? How spiritually dangerous is it to record this or other types of dialogs in the form of written material and to share them with others?

The Lord Jesus Christ: As you know, Peter, it was stated before that this type of information should be shared with others in a conversational manner. At the time this advice was given to you, it was necessary to establish a different approach for the sake of the pseudo-creators. That approach entailed a recession from group sharing to an individual one. The reason for this was obvious: If the pseudo-creators, their minions and renegades rely on masses and numbers, if it is their stronghold, then, in comparison, the individual approach, in face to face communication, bypasses their attention. The major reason here was the issue of security. At the same time, under those conditions, the written material, as read by someone else, put the reader into a position of imposition. Accepting the read material by imposition was placing the reader into the tremendous danger of becoming a target by the forces of the negative state. So, once again, the issue was for security reasons and for preventing any prospective reader from becoming a target. However, since that time, a monumental shift has taken place (as a matter of fact, several such shifts have occurred!). Once everyone of you was anchored in your own within, and once you learned to rely on your own intuition, and the pseudo-creators received the necessary answers from the right side of the bridge and once you had completed your translations for them, the issue of security was no longer tenable. As long as you do not see any written material in a dogmatic way, as something that is good forever (although some aspects of it might as well be that way), and as long as you are willing to change at any time when such change is indicated, you are safe in reading the written material. Do not forget one very important factor in this respect. What happens when you share important information with someone in a conversational manner? Well, when that person leaves your premises, as he or she crosses the doors of your house or leaves your presence, at least one third of that information is forgotten. The greater the distance from your place or your presence, the more information disappears from their memory. At one point in time, all of it, or most of it, is either completely forgotten or retained in their memory in a distorted and incorrect manner. Again, this situation gives the forces of the negative state the chance to influence them in such a manner so as not to properly remember anything that they learned or acquired during such a conversation. This is the way human memory is. You can do nothing about it. As long as you are in your human skin, this is the way it is going to be.

On the other hand, at least, the written material gives you, to some degree, the opportunity to refresh your memory, as long as you approach it with the positive and good intent to properly understand what is being conveyed to you and to see it as valuable information, subject to

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

verification by your own intuition and confirmation from your own within. If you approach it in this manner, you are safe.

Peter: To repeat again: What about the statement that we should ask our own questions and get our own answers?

The Lord Jesus Christ: This requirement relates to the issue of personalizing and individualizing your own life. This means that everyone is responsible and accountable for their own life. Due to this factor, any questions and any answers to those questions that relate to the specific and unique life of a specific individual, have to come only from his/her own within. No one can or may answer such questions on behalf of anyone. It would be a gross violation of one's freedom and independence. It would be an abominable imposition that could adversely influence both lives, the life of the inquirer and the life of the person who provides such responses. However, a certain degree of misunderstanding transpired regarding this issue. It was assumed, as with many other things in human life, that this had an all-inclusive validity, that it applies to anyone and anything in a blanket manner. If this were the case, you would have never been able to receive **The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ** or its Updates or the present Dialogs. In this respect, it would be a good idea to refresh your memory and reread the first chapter of **Major Ideas of The New Revelation**, titled 'On Various Types of Revelations and How To Properly Verify Their Source And Validity.' It deals extensively with this issue and the issues of various types of revelations. Of course, the only update that needs to be made in that chapter relates to the tools of verification of the verity and source of any such revelation. It was stated there that such verification has to be based on the principles of spiritual homogeneity, as defined in the book **Messages From Within**. As you know, at that time, the complete New Revelation was not yet available. For that reason, at the present time, any such verification has to be based on the principles of The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ and not on those in that book.

Let Me elaborate a little further on this issue. At the time when **Messages From Within** was written, **The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ** was in a nascent condition. Because of that, all religious systems on your planet contained some grains of spiritual truth that gave them a semblance of unification. Those truths had not yet been extracted from those religions. Thus, they served some positive purpose in the sense of giving humans some degree of awareness of spirituality, albeit a distorted one. Such awareness made it possible for humans to

Dialog 1

survive. However, once **The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ** was transmitted, as you know, it extracted all those grains of truths contained in those religious systems and made them not only obsolete, but totally impotent, reactionary, useless, dangerous and misleading. For that reason, it is no longer appropriate to refer to them in any manner or way.

But going back to your original question: Each individual has the responsibility to ask his/her own questions and to get his/her own answers, as related to his/her personal life. But it is a different story when you have questions that have multiversal significance. They relate to everyone in being and existence and in pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. The answers to those kinds of questions can only come from someone who was appointed by Me to be the transmitter of My New Revelation. In this case, through you, Peter. Remember please, it is your mission, your assignment, your responsibility and your duty to present those questions to Me and to convey their answers to everyone interested or involved. But it has to be in dialog form, in order to avoid the issue of imposition. So, prepare yourself for your real work.

Peter: Is this the reason that I have retired from my professional job?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes. And not only that, but your real work is just beginning.

Peter: Is there any specific reason that for the last four and a half years nothing was seemingly happening in my personal and private life?

The Lord Jesus Christ: The reason for that condition was in the fact that you have been involved in very important work elsewhere in other dimensions. Because of that work, it was necessary to keep you on the external level in a mode of suspension, so that nothing interfered with that important spiritual work. So, your external activity was limited to your everyday job at your place of employment, in order to keep your conscious mind preoccupied with what was happening in the externals; and also to help you finish your job until the time when you could become eligible for retirement. Your retirement time coincides with the tremendous shift that occurred in the spiritual realm and elsewhere. The present spiritual situation is such that it requires your entire involvement with My work at all levels of being and existence, including the very external level.

Peter: Is there any significance why the recording of this dialog happened on Christmas Eve?

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

The Lord Jesus Christ: Of course. As you know, Peter, nothing is by coincidence. Don't forget that at this particular time you are celebrating the two most important milestones that have occurred in the entire fabric of time: My birth into human life, that is, My First Coming; and most importantly, My New Nature which was completed around this time. For your information, something very new, very different, totally transcending anything previously available, is being born as of this day. The implication of this fact will have far-reaching consequences and results. Nothing will be the same any longer.

Peter: Is it proper and right to share this first dialog with our people?

The Lord Jesus Christ: With some of them, but not all at this time. You will intuitively know with whom to share this dialog.

Peter: Thank You very much for talking with me. I hope we will soon continue in this form of dialoging again.

The Lord Jesus Christ: It was a pleasure. Yes, we will. Any time you have any question from yourself or from someone else that has this multiversal significance, you may approach Me for another dialog. In the meantime, have a very nice time.

Second Dialog

December 25, 1998

Peter: Today, I would like to continue in our discussion about the individual differences in all the agents of the positive state and their position, as related to You and to Your New Revelation and its Updates. I am humbly asking You to further elaborate on this issue, as well as on my role, position and assignment in this respect.

The Lord Jesus Christ: First of all, let us reiterate what was said about it in the ***Corollaries...*** . As you remember, it was indicated there that no one person in your group, or in a broader sense, none of the agents of the positive state situated on planet Zero — or anywhere else for that matter — are on the same level of understanding, acceptance, application or practice of My New Revelation, as well as how they perceive, recognize, understand, accept and relate to My Nature or to Me personally. Why is this so? First of all, My Absolute Nature — and this is a reminder of what was said before — cannot be manifested in its fullness in any relative or created entity/being. So, My Nature releases an idea of a certain element in Me which is subsequently imparted on the prospective sentient entity, by which idea, that entity becomes a living, thriving, productive, creative, functional, independent and unique personality or “I am” relative to My Absolute “I AM.”

Secondly, once any idea of that one element is released and imparted on the prospective individual, it becomes relative only to that area of My Nature from which it was released. Because of the conditionality and relativity of the subject to the object of its source, in this case to Me — by its very nature, reflecting the portion of that Nature from which it originated — that individual is capable to relate only to that aspect and level of My Nature from which it was born. Thirdly, it is impossible and totally inconceivable to repeatedly release the same idea of the same element into being and existence because it already has its place, condition and life. If it were possible to do so, it would require the annihilation of the already existing individual who occupies his/her own unique place, state and condition.

What you have to understand in this case, if you can, is that the idea of the element in question may be projected only into the state, condition, place and position which is already occupied by someone else. After all, it is the same idea and therefore, it requires its own state, condition, position and place. But because there is someone else in that situation already, the same idea, repeatedly released, would violently force out

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

that someone else from his/her position, state, condition and/or place. Due to the fact that the idea in question cannot occupy some other state, condition, position and/or place, (after all, it always has its own position, state, condition and/or place), it would have to be annihilated, yielding to the same repeatedly released idea. Fourthly, being that the idea in question comes from an element in My Nature that is entirely unique and different from any other elements, it gives the respective individual a unique nature which is different from anyone and anything else in the entire being and existence. Fifthly, there is a corresponding factor to the placement of that individual into the world or dimension which comprises or, to use a better word, reflects in its totality, that aspect of My Nature in which the element — which was used to project its idea into that individual — resides, and from which, it was released.

Now, because of these factors, any individual can relate to Me or to My Nature — as well as to anything conveyed by Me in ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ*** and its Updates — only from the position of his/her placement, state, condition and/or place. From this stems the reason why no one can relate to Me or to My Word, or have the same understanding of My Nature or My Word, as any other individual.

So, to summarize, due to this factor, every individual has his/her own assignment, role, life and character which is uniquely different from anyone else's. There is always an alignment of this role and assignment with the area or level of Creation, in which and from which, that individual initially originated. Thus, he/she carries within her/his nature, in a unique conglomeration and manifestation, all traits of the character and nature of the world from which he/she was incarnated on planet Zero, or from anywhere or anywhen else. Because of this setup, that individual is responsible and accountable, first of all, to Me, or to be precise, to the idea of that element of My Nature which became the source of life and manifestation of that individual; and secondly, that particular individual is responsible and accountable to the world or dimension where he/she was situated in permanent residence and, in the case of the agents of the positive state who incarnated on planet Zero, from where they came.

As you see from this description, it would be extremely dangerous for anyone to try to imitate or duplicate anybody's nature, role, position and/or assignment. This would equal the denial and even destruction of everything related to the uniqueness of one's personality and assignment. So, whenever any individual had agreed to accept an assignment from Me which required him/her to incarnate on planet Zero, that individual also explicitly agreed to do so solely from the position of his/her unique nature, from the world he/she came from and, most

importantly, from the nature, character and traits of the idea of the specific element which I released from an area of My Absolute Nature and imparted on that individual, giving him/her, by that factor, unique life.

From what was said so far, it is clear why no one can ever be on the same level of understanding, acceptance or relatedness to Me or to My Word. Remember, this is the way it is supposed to be.

Peter: What about my role, position, place, etc., in all of this?

The Lord Jesus Christ: As you remember from the information relating to your own position, contained in Update 13, which you were so reluctant to accept, your nature was created from an idea of an all-inclusive area of My Nature that contains, in a relative condition, as related to you, all the elements that were needed in order for you to become the sole transmitter of My Word. The need for such a widespread inclusion stems from the fact that My Word, whenever it is being released or conveyed, cannot be limited only to one area or region of My Creation or to any other place, state or condition. Don't forget that My Word, in this case My New Revelation, always originates from the Absolute Condition and for that reason, it has the most vital and significant relevance to all in the entire being and existence, and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. So, to limit you or your nature to some single idea, stemming from some isolated specific element of My Nature, would be to limit My Word or The New Revelation only to that one world or area in which you originated and where you were placed. In that case, My Word would become relative and limiting, having very little or no impact on the rest of My Creation. Do you see the problem with this situation?

Peter: Yes, very clearly. But what about the possibility of a specific revelation, relevant only to one specific world or even to one specific individual?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, as you know, Peter, and as it was so nicely revealed in the First Chapter of the book, **Major Ideas of The New Revelation**, such revelations, as well as numerous pseudo-revelations, occur on a continuous basis. However, as it is obvious from what was said above, they do not have multiversal significance in the same way as the ones that come through you, Peter. This factor has to be continuously emphasized in order to avoid the dangerous spiritual trend to pronounce something that doesn't have that meaning and which is relevant only to that one region or to that one individual. In most instances, as they occur on planet Zero with some agents of the positive

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

state, such revelations have a very private and personal connotation and are applicable only to that single individual.

A good example of such private and intimate revelations, or in this particular case, conversations with Me, would be the prolific and beautiful ***Writings*** by Dr. Pieter Noomen. Dr. Noomen produced two volumes of his Writings, in which he recorded many conversations that he has had with Me. As you noticed while reading them, it was clearly indicated to him by Me that someone else would have a different perception, understanding and mode of communication from what he has experienced. However, it was left to him to decide whether he wanted to share his ***Writings*** with selected friends and individuals. Obviously, the danger of such sharing — as well as any sharing of experiences that you all have, is in the fact that some of you who are not blessed with that kind of ability (after all, before incarnating on planet Zero, for some very important spiritual reasons, you agreed not to have it!), being that you are in the human skin — could create a desire on your part to have the same type of experience and mode of communication that Dr. Noomen has, or Peter Francuch has, or Lyudmila Savelieva has or some others have. Because you cannot have the same type of experiences or mode of communication (this would violate the principle of your origin as described above), you would have the tendency to be resentful, envious and/or jealous. In that case, you would completely shut off any ability to communicate with Me in your own unique manner or to properly represent the nature of the world from which you incarnated on planet Zero, the character and nature of which you are supposed to manifest; and to which you are supposed to translate everything that is happening on your planet. To end up like that would mean spiritual death for you. In that case, you would miserably fail in your mission and you would end up rejecting your true nature, subsequently rejecting My Absolute Nature, from which, your relative nature had derived. Do you see the tremendous danger of this situation?

Peter: Most definitely. I have to confess to you that, in the past, I fell into the same predicament very often — being envious of some of my friends who were able to visualize and to hear You and talk to You in a typical human fashion. Please, forgive me for being so arrogant and inconsiderate in this, or any other respect. Also, may I ask you to further elaborate on the reasons why this was always the case with me?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Gladly, Peter. And I gladly forgive you. But you also have to forgive yourself. Now, the reasons: As you remember from the First Private Conversation recorded in the ***Corollaries...***, it was stated there that your mode of communicating, transmitting, understanding and interpreting anything coming from Me, parallels that

of the pseudo-creators. It is a scientific mode — through logic, reasoning and classification, and similar modes, so inherent in the external approach of any scientific investigation. Such an approach doesn't allow any impositions from an internal or subjective source. Let Me elaborate on this issue a little further. As you know, Peter, the pseudo-creators are in search for the Absolute Truth. What is the Absolute Truth? The most fundamental and most obvious truth in this respect — which at the same time is very simple and uncomplicated, as well as very clear — is that the only Absolute Truth is The Lord Jesus Christ, from Whom all life and everything else originated. This is the spiritual factor of any life. Without the being and existence of The Lord Jesus Christ, as The Only Absolute Being, no other beings or existences are possible. This Absolute Truth will always be absolutely true. No change in this respect is ever conceivable, to eternity. If you derive all other conclusions from this indisputable fact, your knowledge and understanding of the structure and dynamics of life and everything related to it, will be proper and correct.

However, for the pseudo-creators this was not sufficiently convincing because it was too simple, obvious and axiomatic. They needed some kind of objective proof that this was so. Then, how do you go about verifying the validity that it is so? You develop a methodology of investigation that will totally differ from anything which had been available up to that point. You come up with an idea that, in order to verify the truthfulness of that fundamental premise of life — any life, you need to develop something that would allow you to discover in an oblique way, what is not the Absolute Truth. In order to do that, the pseudo-creators developed a so-called scientific method of verification, based on objective observation and statistical probabilities; rooted in the quantification of gathered objective experiences. This method is known in the statistical language as — rejection of the Null-Hypothesis. In our particular case, it begins with the statement that there is no Absolute Truth. Once this statement is made, you need to prove that either it is so, or it is not so. Consequently, you begin gathering all kinds of information that is not true or correct. As you are analyzing it, you come to the conclusion that it is not the Absolute Truth because it is false.

At one point in time, when you have exhausted all possibilities that exist in this respect, you have no choice, based on your developed methodology of verification, but to reject your statement that there is no such thing as Absolute Truth. At this junction of your reasoning process, you will inevitably come to the conclusion that the original axiomatic, simple and clear assertion about what the real Absolute Truth is, must be true in an absolute sense.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Now, Peter, your method of coming to the right conclusions about this issue parallels this methodology in that you didn't have any obvious visual and/or auditory input from anyone, anywhere. You had to rely solely on your reasoning abilities, logical conclusions and intuition. They helped you recognize what the truth was not. Only after, but not before, you established this factor, the verification of your conclusions could be made from your own within, directly by input from Me. You have to understand very clearly why this was the case: The pseudo-creators arrogantly assumed that no one originally fabricated by them, and especially no human being, could come to the right conclusions about these issues whatsoever, and discover what was really behind all of the events surrounding the activation and placing the negative state in dominance, and the fabrication of the human species with all of their consequences, outcomes and results.

I want you to imagine, Peter, what would really happen if I were to appear to you in all My Glory, with pomp and circumstance, so-to-speak, and begin to proclaim all these things, and what was revealed in ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***, in a very authoritative voice. First of all, you would have to accept everything I would tell you on face value without any possibility to verify it by your own reasoning process and logic. You wouldn't even dare try to do that because, after all, — who are you to quarrel with Me or to dictate to Me the manner in which I should talk to you or inspire you, or whatever? If I say something, it must have an absolute validity. Such an approach would be in gross violation of your freedom of choice and would constitute a terrible imposition. You would become a slave of the necessity to blindly believe in something that is not possible or allowed to be verified by any other mode of verification. What a terrible thing would happen, as the history of blind faith on your planet so vividly testifies, with all your ridiculous religious systems! Do I need to remind you of what happened to Apostle Paul on the road to Damascus, on which he was planning to persecute and murder My disciples, in his zeal to preserve his own belief system based on the ritualistic laws of Moses? His so-called miraculous experience on that road ultimately lead to the betrayal of Christianity and the reversion to his old self upon his return to the spiritual world, as it was so nicely described in the third chapter of ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***. Well, in that case the pseudo-creators would say, — “Aha, this is too easy; you see, we told you so, he is not able to discover the real truth on his own as we predicted, because, after all, we fabricated his human nature and we know he cannot do it. He needs a potent revelation from You, God Lord Jesus Christ, with all that glory, pomp and circumstance and unusual experience. How ridiculous! It doesn't prove anything. It only proves that we are right and therefore,

really, no such thing as Absolute Truth exists. No human being fabricated by us would ever be able to discover it by the methods we developed for that purpose. This is the way we made them to be so that, really, humans would never be able to discover the real truth.”

Peter: Is there any other aspect to this issue in addition the one related to the pseudo-creators?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, there is. It relates to the issue that we talked about earlier this morning — no one is on the same level of spiritual awareness, understanding, acceptance, application or implementation of My Word and/or My Nature. The mode and the way you received the information contained in the books of My New Revelation are unique and unusual. The most important reason why you are unable to see and hear on the other levels, as some of you do, relates to the factor of all-inclusiveness. Remember please, you are in the human skin. As such, if I were to appear to you in the visual and auditory mode, it would have to be at your human level because otherwise your human self could not survive My other type of appearance for a fraction of a second. Sure, I could do so to please your human ego (or your stinky human ego, as you like to say it, Peter) but in that case, whatever you would experience, see or ascertain in that condition would be only at your human level and not on an all-inclusive multiversal level. And not only that, but if you were to try to apply anything that I say to you on that level towards the multiversal level — and such a tendency would be very strong in your case — you would be conveying only distortions and falsities to people because, after all, that experience and that statement were not meant for anyone or anything else and are not applicable to anyone or anything else. Can you see, Peter, from this explanation, how dangerous and inappropriate in any respect it would be for anyone, other than you, to assume the role of transmitter of anything at all coming from Me, things which are individualized and personalized in their own way in an all-inclusive multiversal manner?

Peter: Yes, but I am afraid that many individuals will not like it. It will place me in the role of being self-exclusive, self-righteous and infallible. I will be most certainly accused of spiritual arrogance and of similar things.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Your position, role and assignment, Peter, are to always be a transmitter for Me in an all-inclusive multiversal manner. This is the way you were created by Me and this is the reason you were created from Me. However, as pointed out many times before, it doesn't mean at all that others with different roles, assignments and positions, are less valuable, less needed or less useful. They are as equally needed,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

useful and valuable as you are. They are needed in their own position, for their own world and for their own contribution to the cache of knowledge that they are gathering and translating to the positive state and vice versa. All of you have to simply accept the fact that you do have a different role, assignment and position. And if anyone would start to spread rumors about you or anyone else for that matter, that you are arrogant, self-righteous, etc., then, of course, that person is laboring under the influence of the negative state. Don't be taken in by any of that. Continue in your valuable mission and in My services.

Now, it would be a good idea to take a break and to continue either later this afternoon or tomorrow morning with the Third Dialog.

Peter: Thank You very much for this great opportunity to dialog with You.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome. It is always a pleasure, Peter, to dialog with you. You may go to sunbathe now.

Third Dialog

December 26, 1998

Peter: Before beginning with questions, I would like to apologize for asking You so many personal questions during our two previous dialogs.

The Lord Jesus Christ: No need to apologize, Peter, no need. Let me remind you of what was indicated in the First Chapter, mentioned before, of ***Major Ideas of The New Revelation***. As you remember, it was stated there that once anyone is assigned the role, the position and the nature to be a representative, or a speaker or transmitter of My New Revelation, the events of the life of that person, everything that would happen to him/her in the minutest possible details, represents or, to be more precise, reflects some important occurrences that are happening in the multiverse and/or in the spiritual world. In other words, the life of such a person would be a reflection of all possible shifts that would be happening in the course of spiritual progression and changes. As I told you many times, I gave you, and you accepted, My mission to be the transmitter of My New Revelation. By virtue of that assignment, whatever is happening in your life, no matter what it is, no matter how insignificant, has some deeper meaning and connotation, reflecting, metaphorically speaking, the events, shifts, progression, changes, or whatever is occurring in the spiritual and multiversal realm. Because of this important factor, your personal questions are, in fact, not personal but they do have a multilevel significance and they reflect something important that needs to be stated because it has relevance not only to you personally — although this is also the case — but to everyone and everything else. So, due to that, you do not need to apologize. There is a certain parallel here between what happened in the life of Apostle Peter, as described in the third chapter of ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***, and what has been and will be happening in your personal life.

Peter: Is this the reason for all those strange things that have been happening in our house in Santa Barbara for the last two or three days?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes. Just look at what has been going on: In the morning of December 24, 1998, you received a telephone call from England, informing you that our friend, supporter and helper, Wilf Grunau, departed planet Zero and arrived in the spiritual world. This call came during the time you were recording our First Dialog. After that, things started to fall apart in your house. A water leak occurred in

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

the guest house, your kitchen sink backed up, your vacuum cleaner broke down, your light fixtures went out, your washing machine stopped functioning properly, etc. This all happened at the very same time.

Peter: So, what is the significance of all these frustrating events?

The Lord Jesus Christ: There are several reasons for that. The first one is a reflection that everything old, established, familiar and lived-in has exhausted its usefulness, served its purpose and is no longer tenable. Wilf's departure from planet Zero, being who he was, what he represented and did for all of us, signifies the beginning of a new life, new condition, new state, new experience and new creativity. The breakdown of various components in your house represents the fact that everything old, stagnant, fixed and worn out needs to be removed, replaced or repaired to give way and room to something different, more progressive, more functional, more stable and totally new.

But there is another point to these happenings. The forces of the negative state are aware of the monumental shift that is happening during this time. Unfortunately for you, Peter, they are also aware of the fact that any such monumental, important and revolutionary changes, shifts, new beginnings, or whatever, in some way are reflected in your life, and in all events that are happening in your surroundings, within and outside of you. Because of that, they watch you very carefully in order to detect the initiation of those steps, shifts, new beginnings, etc. And although they are not aware of the specifics in this respect (for example, they are not aware of what is transpiring between Me and you at this moment, as we dialog together — at least not until it is written down and read by someone else), they do know that something is going on. Somehow they are convinced that if they can disrupt your personal life or cause you some kind of problem or trouble, it would prevent those shifts, changes, progressions, or whatever, from happening, which are so devastating for them. So, they have tried to frustrate and annoy you in order to make it impossible for you to do what you are supposed to do.

But please, notice what happened. My Divine Providence arranged that while Richard Schumert was on his way back home to San Francisco from visiting Dr. Beth Ann Voien, he would stop at your place and help you fix most of those annoying problems so that you would not be distracted from your important work. And, at this point, I would like to join Gloria and you, Peter, in thanking Richard very much for his willingness to interrupt his travel back home and stay with you for a few days, helping you resolve and repair the above mentioned problems.

Peter: How do the forces of the negative state react to that?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, Peter, it is a good lesson and learning for them. First of all, they can learn that no matter what they do, they are incapable of preventing the needed shift, progression and changes from happening, of which they are so terrified. And secondly, they are learning that no matter what happens to the agents of the positive state, they are not deterred from continuing in their important mission; and that no matter how frustrating and annoying those breakdowns are, they don't get upset but remain calm, understanding and at peace.

Peter: Talking about Wilf's departure, let me ask You the following question, posed by the three of us (Gloria, Richard and myself): As you know, in Swedenborg's writings it is indicated that once someone dies by natural causes, it takes approximately three days, or three days in our planetary time, to resurrect that person in the spiritual world. On the other hand, if someone dies by violent means (killed suddenly in accidents, or shot, or by some kind of similar violent death), that person is resurrected immediately following the accident. Is this arrangement still valid?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes and no. In some cases, it takes three days, in some it takes longer, and in some other cases it happens immediately. The changes in this respect relate to the issue, emphasized so many times before, of personalizing and individualizing one's life. Because of this requirement, the mode of death and the time that is needed for resurrection is also personalized and individualized. As you know from previous statements in this respect, there was an important agreement between Me and each individual by which mode or way each individual will depart planet Zero and how long it will take for them to become aware that they have arrived in the intermediate world, or world of spirits. A somewhat different situation exists with some agents of the positive state, especially with those integrally connected to My New Revelation. In their case, many things that normally happen after their departure from your planet, are bypassed. The reason for this bypass is that they are needed immediately to continue or to be engaged in the works of helping with the process of eliminating the negative state. You don't want any delays in this respect if you want them to continue without interruption in this extremely important work. So, don't expect any general, all-inclusive ways, of how these things will happen.

Peter: And now let me switch from these, more or less, personal questions (although I do accept the fact that nothing in my life has only personal connotation), to more general ones. The other evening, as I

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

watched a television program on the Learning Channel, I overheard several interesting false statements. Let me present them one by one. The first statement alleged that there are ancient scrolls in existence (they now call them apocryphal scriptures) from the time of Your incarnation on planet Zero that claim that You actually did not die on the cross, and that You not only survived that ordeal but were saved by someone (maybe by Joseph, the rich man), who hid You; and that You continued to live on this planet for a long period of time, involved with Mary Magdalene and that You had many children with her. Those children allegedly established a line of very important persons that have been born from that time on and that they are still among us. What is Your comment about this allegation?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Do you remember My statement from Update 20 that the pseudo-creators took the book of ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ*** and rewrote it on a computer in such a manner that every word in it is pure falsity? What do you suppose the forces of the negative state did at the time? Parallel with the writing of the true Gospels by My disciples, they also wrote their own version of them so they could refute anything that was true about Me, My life on planet Zero, regarding all My deeds, but especially the mode of My death and whether I really died on that cross or not. The forces of the negative state have been trying their worst during all these 2000 years to prove that either I did not exist at all, or that I was only a regular human, albeit enlightened, and that no such thing as the resurrection had ever occurred. If this were the case, the pseudo-creators could have never been locked up and separated from everyone in being and existence and in pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. I want you to be assured that if all of what they say were to be true, planet Zero and the Zone of Displacement would have ceased to exist a long time ago. The importance of My death, entrance into the Hells, mode of My death and what happened afterwards, was nicely explained in Update 9 of the ***Corollaries...*** . It is not necessary to repeat it here.

As far as My involvement with Mary Magdalene is concerned, no physical children were ever produced by it. However, the result of that involvement gave birth to tremendously important ideas, which were utilized by Me in the process of My entrance into the Hells of the pseudo-creators and which enabled Me to lock them up and prevent them from further influencing and governing the destiny of planet Zero and the Zone of Displacement. Do not forget the important fact about who Mary Magdalene originally was. Because, by the definition of that time, she was one of the greatest sinners of all, possessed by the most vicious

demons, My involvement with her gave me a very important and direct access to the knowledge of all aspects of the nature of the negative state from the standpoint of human life and human nature. What you have to understand in this respect is that only with the knowledge of all aspects of the negative state — from the position of experiencing it as a human does — it was possible for Me to enter the very center of the negative state and accomplish My mission there — without annihilating anyone in the Hells or in the entire Zone of Displacement. If I had entered that center without such human experiences provided for Me by My involvement with Mary Magdalene (by her and My prior mutual agreement!), it would have meant having entered there from the standpoint of experiencing it from the position of My Absolute Divine Substance, in which case no one could have survived there for a fraction of a second. But, as you know from previous revelations to you in this respect, such an event would have also destroyed the entire being and existence of the positive state, for the reason that there would have been no state, condition or place into which the negative ideas of rejecting Me as The Only Source of Life could have been repudiated. In that case, that idea would have struck back and killed everyone. Anything like that could have never even entered My mind. For that reason, a very careful plan was devised and executed by Me so nothing of that nature would ever take place. It would be difficult for your limited human mind to conceive and understand how My involvement with Mary Magdalene was utilized for this most important purpose. Suffice it to say that it was utilized in the most effective and potent way, to the dismay and disappointment of the forces of the negative state.

At the time, the forces of the negative state didn't realize what the results of that involvement would produce. In actuality, they thought that they had trapped Me and that I would succumb to the sinful mode of life perpetuated by her. Thus, that I would become one of them. In that case they would have won and would have taken over the entire Creation and everything else. This was their hope, which has never materialized itself. Instead, exactly the opposite has happened.

Peter: In the same television program it was alleged that this planet has been visited many times by various alien beings from different planets, solar systems and galaxies. Is there any truth to this claim?

The Lord Jesus Christ: As you know, Peter, at that time, before the pseudo-creators' lockup, extensive travel throughout the Zone of Displacement was taking place. This planet was being visited at all times by various beings of the clan of the pseudo-creators, in order to observe and influence the development of humankind in accordance with their

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

own plans. After the lockup of the pseudo-creators, and after The First Coming of The Lord Jesus Christ, for a time, such visits, in such obvious ways, were prohibited. The reason for this prohibition was in the fact of giving humans the choice to be negative or positive by their own free choice and not by the imposition of various forces of the negative state, in this case, by aliens with their advanced technologies. However, those so-called aliens, the minions of the pseudo-creators, in fact, frequently tried to circumvent that prohibition in order to continue visiting this planet. But their visits, following that prohibition, were, in most instances, in a covert but never overt manner. Of course, with the release of the pseudo-creators, the situation is gradually changing and the resumption of overt visits will become reality once again. Please, do remember though, that the overt appearance of the so-called alien beings, for a time, will always be from the negative source. So, do not be taken in by any of them or by their very potent and convincing statements. Such statements, — as depicted above, and which are coming to human attention at this particular time, such as, for example, that I didn't die on the cross, and similar claims, — are in preparation for their reappearance. I can assure you, Peter, and everyone who reads these words, that it will not be easy; in fact, it will be extremely difficult not to believe their various statements in the spirit of the above mentioned ones, especially if they are accompanied by all kinds of convincing miracles, even resurrecting people from the dead, and similar events. All of you are being warned that this could happen, so that you do not fall into their trap.

Peter: As you know, recently The Third Secret of Fatima appeared on the Internet. It is a very disturbing claim for many of its readers. I would like You to comment on that and on the claim that World War III would occur on July 4th of 1999, and will continue until 2028 or later, causing tremendous destruction and the loss of millions, if not billions of human lives.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Notice please, the language that is being used in The Third Secret of Fatima and in all other similar “prophecies.” How many choices do they give you? None. In actuality, you have only two choices: Either to be destroyed or to be saved by certain well-prescribed procedures — and that is no choice at all. Will those things really happen, as they are being predicted, by all those numerous self-appointed false prophets? Well, as you know from the past, the reason why some of those types of predictions came true, was because the forces of the negative state were able to arrange certain events in the future, predicting them in advance, and then making sure that they materialized in the predicted manner. Don't forget for a minute that this

is their world and that they do have the ability to do so. You have to understand that it is very important for them to convince humans of their rightness so that humans would believe these events, act upon them and follow the forces of the negative state — as always, under disguise or in the name of God. Is there any better way than that to mislead humans, except in the name of God?

The most abominable and devastating prediction in this respect is the one under the name of Mary in the Secrets of Fatima. Mary is portrayed there as someone who has the absolute position and power to influence and/or to change anything she wants to. She places herself on the level of God, being a Goddess that has an even higher position than her so-called Son. Notice, please, that in those messages she never mentions the word “Jesus,” “Christ,” or “Jesus Christ,” or “The Lord Jesus Christ” but only “my Son.” Believe me, Peter, this is not by coincidence. Also please notice, how she talks about a punishing God, and especially about unleashing her Son to destroy all sinners from the face of the earth and lock them up in the Hells forever, to *literally* burn unto eternity in the fires of Hell. Unless of course, humans listen to her and do what she tells them to do. Do you see the problem here? Let us repeat it: Unless you do what I tell you to do, I will unleash my Son onto you and he will punish, destroy and throw you into Hell so that you can be burned there in *literal* fire forever, for good, to eternity. And what is it that she wants you to do? She wants you to pray a daily Rosary, sacrifice for the atonement of the sins of the world, and the solemn public Consecration of Russia to the Immaculate Heart, to be carried out by the Holy Pontiff in unison with all Catholic bishops. The Pope has to proclaim the last and most solemn Marian dogma, in which the so-called Mother of God is honored as the “Co-Redemptrix, Mediatrix, and Advocate” of all mankind. Together, the Pope and all international leaders have to consecrate all nations to her immaculate heart, etc.

Do you see the ridiculousness of all these requirements? Since when had Mary died for humans’ sins or their problems? Since when had she become the savior of the world? By what means and merits? The real, true Mary — the Mary that I chose as the means to enter your world — would never, ever say anything like that and especially not in the manner it was said. The real Mary is the embodiment of true modesty, humbleness, innocence and humility. Like anyone else, she worships Me as The One Absolute Lord Jesus Christ, the only One God Indivisible.

It is not by coincidence that during My stay on planet Zero, I clearly indicated to My followers that Mary should never be considered as being My mother. Let Me refresh your memory: Do you remember when some

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

of the listeners thought that I had become insane and My relatives, hearing that, came to take Me away and maybe to lock Me up? What did I answer to them when they told Me that “your mother, father, brothers and sisters are here to see you?” I told them, “who is my mother, father, sisters or brothers? Those who listen to Me and do My will.” The reason I said this was, that **among many other things**, I foresaw that a Marian cult would appear later on, after My departure from your planet. Or take that scene when I was hanging on the cross and Mary and some of My disciples were standing there and crying because of My suffering and ordeal. I turned My attention to Mary, pointed My finger to My disciple John and told her, “he is your son.” Then I turned My attention to John and told him, “she is your mother.” And from that moment on John took Mary to live with him so that he could take care of her.

All these events clearly indicate that Mary should never be considered My mother in any respect or aspect of her being and existence. She was a valuable tool, a means for My entrance into human life. I and she agreed beforehand that this would be the case and that because of her being such a tool, she would never use that fact to proclaim herself to be a goddess or anything more than God.

Peter: So, who was that person who proclaimed herself to be Mary, the mother of God?

The Lord Jesus Christ: This is a very good question. Isn't it obvious that she was not the real Mary? She was/is an appointee of the forces of the negative state in order to implant in humans very wrong ideas about the nature of God, the nature of the so-called Son of God and about her own nature, position and power. And the reason she cunningly appeared to those innocent children, was to give humans the strong belief that she is so considerate, so nice, so loving, so kind and so concerned about the destiny of humans, or of the sinners — to use her words. And not only that, but she gives them a vision of the hells where the sinners burn in ***literal*** fire (how ridiculous and foolish!), suffering the most horrible pain and misery. Also, she gives them other convenient signs so that they have absolutely no doubts that she is the real Mary and that what she tells them is the absolute truth. What kind of God am I in her conceptualization? A very cruel monster, a sadistic, unloving and inconsiderate god who cannot wait for Mary to allow Me to unleash My fury and to destroy all — unless of course, you pray your Rosary everyday, in the way she taught you, and do other foolish, useless, impotent, meaningless and most ridiculous rituals; proclaiming her to be your savior and protector. Can you imagine, Peter, the life of the positive state under those kinds of conditions? How could anybody in the positive

state be happy, joyous, productive, creative, progressive, and fulfilled with the constant awareness that somewhere out there in the Hells, billions and billions of people exist who are continuously and without any interruption, going through the most horrible, the most cruel suffering, pain and misery, burning and sizzling in literal fire, or whatever type of hellish fire, unto eternity? How could I personally continue in My creative effort, in everything that I constantly do, and provide for all in My Creation, if some of My children, the so-called sinners, are experiencing these most horrible and devastating conditions? What kind of life would it be in the positive state? Such things are utterly inconceivable and they are contrary to My very Nature. How could anything like that be justified if life in the negative state is an experiment and if everybody is in that life by agreement? And that the agreement was, that every participant in it would be rewarded by being ultimately saved from all its consequences, results and outcomes and returned to the positive state?

What happened here to the concept of My Absolute Unconditional Love, Wisdom, Mercy, Compassion and Forgiveness? Do I need to say anything more?

Peter: No. However, what about the prediction of doomsday?

The Lord Jesus Christ: How many times in the recent decades were such predictions made? As you know, none of them came true. What all these predictions omit is that there are trillions and trillions of sentient entities at all levels of being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence that are in the process of making vital choices regarding the fate of all levels of the negative state and planet Zero. Because of that, such predicted events may or may not happen. As you remember from some of the Updates, it was pointed out in them that there are several different scenarios that are available for how the ending will occur. Which scenario will be chosen depends on all the choices that all in Creation and pseudo-creation will make. Because of that it is futile and a waste of your precious time to be preoccupied with this issue. Do not listen to any of them! Leave it to My Divine Providence. I know in an absolute sense what is the best for all of you. In this respect, the outcome is very clear. And believe Me, it is not eternal *literal* hellish fire that will torture you to the very eternity!

Peter: Thank You for this explanation.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome. And now I would suggest, if I may, to finish it for today and resume whenever you feel the need and whenever you are inspired by Me. Go with peace and have a nice time.

Peter: Thank You very much.

Fourth Dialog

December 27, 1998

Peter: Today, I would like to bring to Your attention a question that was asked so many times by Dan Barba from New York but has never been properly answered. I am also joining him in that question. The question relates to the issue of dreams, dreaming and sleep. Why do we dream and what is the meaning of dreams, if anything?

The Lord Jesus Christ: The reason why that question has never been properly answered up to this point, is in the fact that some of the aspects of their meaning relate to deeper mystical and mysterious reasons, the revelation of which would be dangerous and premature to convey. If they were to be prematurely revealed, this would give a potent tool to the pseudo-creators, their minions and renegades to effectively interfere with the workings of My Divine Providence. Although some minor and general ideas about this issue were somewhat described in a limited sense, in the Chapter titled **Sleep Life** in your book, Peter, **Understanding and Fulfillment of Our Earthly Life**, its true meaning was not available until today.

As you know, Peter, tremendous changes are occurring in the entire fabric of the entire being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, related to the shift currently taking place. This shift transcends anything that has happened during preceding shifts. Due to a certain position, place, condition and state that has been achieved and because all and everything everywhere has been put in the proper, significant order and hierarchy of the spiritual organization, the issue of prior security is no longer a consideration. So, let us discuss this issue.

Before proceeding to the discussion proper, a warning needs to be offered: As you know, human life was fabricated in such a manner so as to be very complex, convoluted, unstable and extremist — from one extreme to another, confusing and extremely unreliable. Due to this accursed factor, the issue of human dreaming is also very complex, confusing, convoluted, etc. Some of its aspects would be totally incomprehensible to your human mind. They will be obvious to you after you depart from your human life. However, we may proceed with the discussion of those aspects which can be grasped by your human mind.

In a general sense, we can divide this issue into three parts; each of which, having at least its own three aspects. The first one relates to everyone's spiritual mind and the spiritual world, and to the pseudo-spiritual mind and pseudo-spiritual world. The second one relates to

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

everyone's interior or mental mind or intermediate world and to the pseudo-interior or pseudo-mental mind and to the pseudo-intermediate world. And the third one relates to the external or physical mind and the external, physical world and to the pseudo-external mind and pseudo-physical world.

Let us begin with the discussion of the most external aspects of this issue and then go to the other levels. The first aspect of this level relates to the physiological factor. In fact, it relates to the structure and dynamics of the human body, human brain and its nervous system. As you know, Peter, the human body and its nervous system is very fragile and limited in its scope of continuous and uninterrupted function and manifestation. During its daily activities it accumulates many experiences and perceptions in its attentive and scanning duties, and of the daily events that constantly impinge on the brain and its nervous system. Very often, without one's conscious awareness, this accumulation is deposited into the human brain. Because there is a limit to how much or how little a brain can contain of the accumulated information, it forces the human body to get tired and to get some sleep. During the sleep cycle, it discharges unnecessary and unimportant accumulated information, so as to prepare that body and its nervous system to register everything that will be happening the next day. During this discharge, the neurons in the brain are firing their electric charges. These neurons' charges are manifested as dreams. In most instances, at this level of dreaming, one dreams about those events of the previous day which were either not registered by one's conscious awareness or were unimportant and meaningless. Because of this factor, some dreams are meaningless and have no other significance than performing a cleaning and janitorial function, keeping the brain on an optimal level of performance and function.

The second aspect of this level relates to the biological factor. The biological factor of the human body relates to the life force which enters that body for the purpose of continuously vivifying it. There is a flow of life energy, continuously entering that body in order to keep that body alive and functional. However, as you know so well, Peter, the human body is extremely limited in how much or how little it can take in of that life energy. Too much, as well as too little, would annihilate it. As that flow of life energy enters that body, the body, in all its organs, accumulates and stores it in its vital organs and all its cells. Due to the accumulative limitation of these organs and cells, when they are full, they stop receiving further amounts of that life energy. Once they stop receiving it, by the continuous function of those organs and cells, that life energy becomes depleted in them and they fall in danger of dying out. In the process of that depletion, because no more life energy vivifies them, a

certain type of poison begins to develop in them. This condition makes the human body very tired and it falls asleep. During the sleep cycle, a cleaning and janitorial work takes place in all bodily organs and cells. Again, this activity produces electrical discharges in the nerves connected to these organs and cells, which inform the human brain about the work that is being done and about the level of depleted life energy, and of how much cleaning needs to be done in order to prepare them to receive a new and fresh surge of life force energy. These electrical discharges are manifested as dreams. These types of dreams produce somewhat bizarre and almost foolish pictures, the content and reality of which is totally impossible to conceive or experience in the waking state. In most instances, these types of dreams relate to the specificity of human organs and cells that have their own coded language which is projected into the brain for the purpose of continuous feedback of their condition and function. Because of that, they don't make any sense to the human conscious mind.

The third aspect of this level relates to the physical lifestyle of humans. As you know, humans need to eat and drink in order to keep their body alive. Any time they overeat, overdrink, oversleep or underdrink, undereat or undersleep, the bodily organs, the nervous system, the human brain and all bodily cells go into a certain type of turmoil and almost a shock like condition. As you know, too much food, too much drink or too much sleep and vice versa, causes tremendous pressure and burden on all bodily systems. Again, the body becomes very tired and sleepy. When one goes to sleep, the pressure and shock of physical exertion or the lack of it, by whatever mode it happens, causes one to dream, reflecting the abnormality of one's bodily condition. This abnormality, signaled to the human brain, forces the brain to begin the activity which would revert the bodily function, once again, to its normal optimal level. In the process of these types of activities, an unusually intense firing of the neurons takes place in the brain, more than under any other conditions. These unusual amounts of activities are reflected in the dreams that you experience as nightmares. These types of nightmares can be termed physiological. (There are other types of nightmares of which we will talk later). When you overeat, for example, the heaviness, the heartburn in your stomach and similar symptoms cause you these types of nightmares.

The second, intermediate or mental level can also be conceived to have its own three aspects. The first aspect relates to the mental and/or intellectual, emotional and similar activities in which every human being is, to some extent, engaged. These activities put a lot of pressure on the mental faculties of each individual. Because all mental faculties and the processes of mentation of every human being are processed through the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

human brain and its nervous system, they are limited in the scope of their manifestation by the limits of how much or how little the instrument or the means through which they can be manifested can take into it, or how it is able to process. When there is an excess of these types of activities or too intense a preoccupation with them or, on the other hand, there is not enough of them (the state of boredom, for example), the nervous system and its center — the brain, become very tired and require sleep, rest or slumber. During this time, a replenishment of life force energies, related to and enabling such mental activities and processes of mentation takes place in order for them to become reality. A special type of activity is introduced during this time, which causes other types of neurons to be activated and start firing into the area which is assigned to be the carrier of these mental activities and processes of mentation. In the process of this firing, a specific area in the brain is activated which opens the door both to the human soul and to the special intermediate dimension or intermediate pseudo-dimension, which enables these dimensions to perform the necessary work in order to restore the proper and optimal mental function to the human being who manifests in such activities such as thinking, feeling, willing, deciding, relating and similar activities, summarily called — the processes of mentation.

During this important work, whoever or whatever participates in it, may inadvertently influence the state and the process of dreaming, leaking their presence into the visual field of dreams. Due to the fact that each world has its own language, and at the same time, one language common to all — the language of correspondences, the dreams are depicted in the symbols, metaphors, pictures and similar elements specific to that world. Depending on who or what or from where this participation occurs, these types of dreams can either be positive, pleasant and happy, or negative, unpleasant and unhappy.

The second aspect of this level relates to human self-perception, self-worth, self-image, self-identity, self-evaluation and self-acceptance. The way each human perceives, feels, thinks, wills, accepts, experiences and evaluates himself/herself, determines the quality and the content of his/her dreams. These states cause the opening of the doors, during sleep time, to various dimensions in the intermediate world and in the pseudo-intermediate world. Depending on what type of self-concept, self-identity, self-acceptance, etc., one has, the doors are opened either to the positive side or to the negative side of those dimensions, or sometimes to both, either simultaneously or sequentially. For example, if one feels guilty, ashamed, remorseful, etc., about something one did, or thought he/she did, the doors are opened wide to the negative side of that dimension and one is influenced by it in a negative way — by anxiety and nightmarish

types of dreams, related to the unconscious needs and desires to be punished.

What you have to understand about this aspect of the level in question, and all the other following levels and their aspects, is that each sentient entity, including all humans and sub-creatures of the Zone of Displacement, reside in several multidimensional worlds that exert their influence on their lives. For humans, sub-creatures and similar entities in the Zone of Displacement, this residence is always unconscious. However, by certain types of attitudes, behaviors, relationships and similar factors, the awareness of this residence, communication and interaction with them, may leak through during their sleep. In that case, the residents of those worlds will influence the content and dynamics of one's dreams. And again, because they speak their own language, the language of specific metaphors, pictures and symbols, the dreams become full of them, subject to the need to interpret them or to translate them into the human conscious type of everyday language. So, for example, if one feels guilty, etc., by that negative feeling, one will trigger a communication and interaction with entities that feed on those kinds of feelings and will attach themselves to that one, causing him/her to dream in symbols that would cause anxiety, fear and similar adverse emotions resulting in a possible nightmare; and sometimes even in cardiac arrest — wishful thinking to be punished. However, the opposite is also true: The positive, happy, joyous, kind, peaceful and altruistic types of emotions and feelings will cause the opening of the doors to the positive side of those dimensions, enabling the positive residents of those worlds to come through, causing one to have dreams which are very pleasant, delightful, fulfilling, refreshing and healing from which one does not want to come out.

The third aspect of this level relates to the uniqueness of one's personality, and soul or mentality. There are specific aspects to this awareness which places each individual in a unique position relative to everyone and everything else. As you know, Peter, each individual occupies his/her own unique, personal and individual space, time, condition and/or state. At the same time, each individual has his/her own specific function and assignment in the fabric of space-time and state-condition continuum. Due to this arrangement, in order to illustrate and manifest the specificity of one's position, state, place, condition, assignment and function for the benefit or harm to all — whatever the case may be, each individual is connected in a very specific and unusual way to all others. Because of this important factor, a continuous interaction is going on 24 hours a day, with all of them at one time or another, producing a very special and unique setup in which that individual is able to release from himself/herself everything specific to

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

him/her and to his/her work. In the process of such a release, depending on the quality and content of the information which is being released, and by the process of that release, the door is opened for the dream awareness of such communication and influence of the entities that participate at that moment in receiving the relevant information. The quality and the content of that release, and the degree of importance of the information which is being released, determine who or what will come through and what type of dream symbolism will manifest itself in the dreams of the individual in question.

The third level of the meaning of dreaming — the spiritual — is the most important, crucial and significant one. It is this level that was designated as the most mysterious and mystical one. It relates to the fact that every individual is a multidimensional being. This statement entails the reality of the principle which indicates that everyone functions on many levels of reality and pseudo-reality.

Let us begin with a reminder of the following facts: As you remember, Peter, it was indicated many times to all that you are engaged in working and functioning in many worlds, without your being consciously aware, in most instances, that it is so. Thus, by various levels and aspects of your mind and your pseudo-mind, you are connected to various circles of Creation and pseudo-Creation. During your interaction in those worlds, your conscious mind is either preoccupied with some external factors happening in your external worlds, or whenever a more intense involvement is required, during your sleep. It is in this phase of involvement in your sleep that certain aspects of that interaction and work leak into your sleep in the form of dreams. But, also, because you are in the human skin, in order for you not to be sidetracked from that work and not to interfere with its process, or that the negative state does not recognize and becomes aware that you are involved in some important work, either in its realm or in the realm of the positive state, dream states are induced with events that are banal, boring or having no particular meaning. This helps you to avoid any contamination or undesirable influence from anyone who is not part of that process. At the same time, the interaction with beings in other dimensions on various levels and pseudo-levels influences the content and nature of your dreams. So, in this particular sense, dreams very often function as important decoys.

It is in this aspect of dreaming that the negative state — knowing that you are somehow involved, but not knowing how, where or in what manner — in order to prevent you from whatever it is that you are involved with, induces the so-called propaganda dreams. These are the scary tactics of the negative state in order to cause you anxiety, fear

attacks, spiritual nightmares and induce unnecessary concerns into your mind. The negative state knows very well that if you become preoccupied by whatever they induce in this respect, you would not be able to function fully and competently in anything that you do at any level of being and existence, and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence.

The second aspect of this level relates to the factor of the non-temporal and non-spatial nature of non-physical worlds. In those worlds, you function outside of time-space parameters. In them, past, present and future occur simultaneously and synchronously. To function in such a mode of non-spatial and non-temporal continuum is inconceivable to the human brain and the human conscious mind. As you know, they function in a linear mode that flows as a straight arrow from the past to the present and toward the future. In order not to place your mind into confusion and mortal shock, orientation points in some types of time-space bound pictures, visions and dreams are induced during your sleep. Thus, in this respect, to have dreams is a matter of survival for your physical body. That the human body cannot survive without having dreams (the so-called REM sleep), is a very well-known factor even to your dream researchers. However, they have no idea why it cannot survive without them.

However, there is another aspect to this situation. Some sensitive individuals who are basically immune to developing such mortal shocks, may utilize this non-temporal and non-spatial condition in order to develop certain types of dreams and visions that take the form of premonitions and a sense of something important happening in the near, or even, far future. These are the so-called prophetic dreams which are the results of one's ability to plug into the energies of events that are about to occur based on their participation in the non-temporal and non-spatial continuum. Of course, some sensitive individuals are able to plug into such energies even in the waking state, when they shift their attention to the state of inwardness. This occurrence is permitted by Me to happen in order to prepare these individuals for what is to come and soften the shock of incoming events. Again, it has a protective value. It is also during this type of dreaming that the so-called vivid and lucid dreams occur. Also, some *very few* sensitive individuals, with the help of the forces of the negative state, are able to make predictions and see some limited aspects of the future while in this state. You call them psychics.

The third aspect of this level is the most important one. It relates directly to Me and to My relationship with everyone in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. As you know, all of you are relative. Your relativity requires the continuous maintenance, support and flow of

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

My personal Life energies into you. The life of all relative beings, whether sentient or non-sentient, whether positive or temporarily negative, are maintained by the factor that they are connected to Me in some way or another, regardless of whether they know it or not that such is the case. Working from the Absolute Condition into the relative one requires a special approach. There is a titration of that energy into each individual in accordance with his/her unique needs. During this titration, a very important process occurs in the interaction between Me and you. In this process, the Absolute enters the relative. By the factor of that entrance, the relative is being continuously resurrected into its own life. Here is an unusual mystery for you: At every point of your being and existence, because of your relativity and because you cannot produce your own life from yourself, of yourself or by yourself, you are continuously dead. My Absolute presence in your relativity enables you, in a fraction of a second, to instantly become alive again. This is a very difficult concept for you to grasp. Because of your relative condition, every fraction of a second, you die. At exactly the same moment, when you die, you are being resurrected by My presence as the Only Life by, from and of Himself/Herself. Because this event happens in a non-spatial and non-temporal realm, you have no awareness of your continuous dying or being dead at every moment, and at the very same time being resurrected.

So, how does this mystery relate to the state of your sleep and dreaming? Your sleep actually reflects the state of your dying. Your daily non-sleep activities reflect the state of your continuous resurrection by Me. Now, don't forget that this happens in a non-spatial and non-temporal condition. However, when it is projected to your external life, it yields to the laws of your time and space, thus, it occurs sequentially and not at the very same time as is the case in My Absolute State. Because of My unceasing work in this respect, during the phase of your death represented by your sleep, in order to prevent you from the horrible sense of your not being alive, I induce various types of dreams that give you a sense that life in you continues. At the same time, by the induction of these dreams, the representatives of the negative state are deterred from perceiving your death, thinking that you are alive, thus, unable to derive from your condition, and My work with you, anything that they could utilize for their adverse purposes.

But there is another important point to this aspect. A special type of dream is continuously being induced during your sleep time, or death time, which you forget upon awakening but which is the most important factor in My working with you. These and similar dreams relate to My work of salvation and elimination of the negative state. Certain types of very unusual — for you — symbols, pictures and depictions are used

Dialog 4

during that time which are a continuous reminder to everyone everywhere, both in the positive and the negative state, respectively, about the agreement which was made between Me and all participants in this cycle of time regarding its outcome. Such a continuous reminder is an absolutely necessary condition, for the simple reason that these participants — all of you, would forget that this was the case and would succumb to the negative state or to eternal death. These types of dreams are especially vital for humans on your planet and for everyone in the Zone of Displacement.

At one point in time, the content and the meaning of these dreams will be brought to their conscious attention and, based on them, they will be able to recall the conditions of this vital agreement and recede from their life of negativity and subsequently convert to the positive state. The issue here is, again, the relativity of their condition. If they were not to have a continuous input from the Absolute in this respect, they would not be able to retain anything about that agreement or about anything else for that matter. The reason why such important work is done through dreaming, is in the fact that if they were to know that this is the case, they would do everything in their power to annul the impact and the influence of those dreams. In that case, they would eternally perish.

Peter: What about now? They will be reading this dialog as soon as Gloria reads it and as soon as it is sent to Dan, and Dan and Olga read it.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, Peter, you were informed by Me in the First Dialog that tremendous changes have taken place as of now. You have no conscious idea what all these changes entail — during this monumental shift. Suffice it to say that a very important situation was established in all the Hells and elsewhere, a very important work was accomplished, a most significant milestone was set up and a new foundation was built. What that accomplished is that no one in the negative state or elsewhere, neither the pseudo-creators nor their minions nor renegades nor anyone else are capable any longer to do anything about what was revealed here in this respect or any other respect. Don't forget that. So, this information is very safe and cannot be misused at all.

Peter: Thank You very much for this information. I don't want to ask any more questions today because I think we have had enough for now. Am I right?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, you are right. However, in conclusion to this dialog, let Me remind you again that there are other important aspects of the issue discussed here today but they are of an

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Absolute Nature, or that at this point in time their nature cannot be comprehended by the limited human mind. However, what was revealed here about it is quite sufficient and I hope that Dan will also be satisfied with My response to his question. So, have a nice rest of the day and prepare yourself for the visit of Marko and Michal from Slovakia who are arriving late tonight.

Peter: Again, thank You very much.

Fifth Dialog

December 28, 1998

Peter: Several questions are going through my mind this morning. First of all, as You know, Marko Mihálik and Michal Miko arrived from Slovakia and brought me a copy of the beautiful hard cover bound translation of **The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ**. I wish we could issue such a beautiful edition in the English version.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, and I extend My Personal gratitude, thankfulness and appreciation to them, and to all who were involved in making this publishing possible, and for their outstanding and excellent work. Believe Me, Peter, it is not by coincidence that a copy of My book in the Slovak version was delivered to you at this crucial time. It signifies another important milestone in the process of the current shift's manifestation.

Peter: Before asking my questions, I would like to request that You comment a little further on the dream issues. Dan and I are interested to know if there are any specific issues about dreaming and dreams as related to the agents of the positive state, and particularly to those who are integrally connected to Your New Revelation.

The Lord Jesus Christ: By and large, what was revealed in this respect in the Fourth Dialog is fully applicable to all of you. However, there are some subtleties and details. For example, some of you are involved in very important work in various regions of the Hells. The nature of that work cannot be revealed at this time for security reasons. Because that involvement is, in essence, on a continuous basis, your dreaming will be significantly influenced by that factor. In that case, your dreams, in a majority of the cases, will be of an unpleasant nature. After all, what is pleasant about working in the midst of the negative state? However, this does not mean that you don't also have pleasant dreams occasionally. You simply don't remember them for the reason that their memory could and would not only discourage you from your work but also they could and would prevent you from that work. Then, you would want to have those types of dreams continuously. In that case, because during these types of dreams, you are in communication with Me or with the members of your true spiritual family and your home base, you could not perform your duties and assignment in the Hells or whatever region of the Zone of Displacement to which you are assigned.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

The door cannot be opened simultaneously to both the positive state and the negative state, respectively.

In Dan's case, the situation is somewhat more complicated due to his medical condition for which he is taking psychotropic medications. As you know from your professional practice, Peter, that type of medication has a tendency to alter the workings of brain cells and the transmission of chemical substances. Because of that alteration, he is more susceptible to opening the door to the negative state in the case of his dreaming. This is the way some of that medication works. His condition was chosen for the very purpose of having easier access to those regions of the Hells where he performs work for Me. Because of that, he doesn't need to go each time through the complicated process of entering those worlds. So, let no one be harsh in judging his taking medication. It serves an important purpose.

Peter: Thank You very much for this explanation. My question today relates more to a political issue and to the situation with the pseudo-creators, their minions and renegades. What is Your comment about the current political and economic situation on this planet? Is it appropriate for me to ask questions like that?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Of course, Peter. You should know by now that there is nothing in being and existence that does not have a spiritual connotation. Whatever you are experiencing on your planet in the form of political, economic or any other type of turmoil, always stems from the spiritual area and has spiritual roots and correspondences. But, before going into some elaboration on this issue, let Me divert for a moment to something else. I am perceiving continuous doubts in your mind whether it is appropriate to record these Dialogs and disseminate them in the written form. Am I correct?

Peter: Yes, you are correct. I am really concerned about it due to such authoritarian statements regarding that in the Updates of the ***Corollaries...*** .

The Lord Jesus Christ: To ease your mind, let Me make some comparisons between what was said about it in the book of My New Revelation, at the very end of Chapter 30, with that which was indicated to you in the ***Corollaries...*** . As you remember from that Chapter, it was very clearly emphasized there that, and I quote, "The New Revelation will remain open-ended. This means that, if and when necessary, additional Chapters, beyond Chapter Thirty, will be added to it to reflect further developments in the spiritual reality of Creation and in the

process of The Lord Jesus Christ's salvation and unfolding of His/Her Grand Plan." And in the next paragraph: "Many ideas of the New Revelation, as revealed in this book, will be valid to the very end of this cycle of time. Some will be modified or **replaced *as needed, when needed and if needed.***"(Page 831).

A proclamation of this nature is very clear: Nothing in My Creation or elsewhere is ever stagnant, regressive or fixed. Everything is in continuous movement onward and forward in a progressive mode. Since all sentient entities and creatures are of a relative nature, I continuously release to them, in a progressive mode from My Absolute Creative effort, always something new, on which, they can enhance and enrich their life. Because of this factor, as noted in My New Revelation, there will always be another New Revelation, another addition, modification, and changes and updates to it, in order to reflect the incoming new step in everyone's spiritual progression. As long as you are in the human skin, living on planet Zero, the need for the written material will always be there. There is nothing else available in this respect. It is the mode of how it is presented to you which changes, and not its form. No other way exists on your planet at this time for conveying these most important issues than this one. So, the statement quoted above will always be true.

On the other hand, what was indicated to you in the ***Corollaries...***, does not have this particular connotation. To repeat again: The advice given to you, and to all readers at that time, reflected the need which existed then for that particular situation — ***for the here and now.*** Therefore, it was true only for that particular time and for that particular condition which existed in the mode of the shifts that were occurring at each of their junctions. So, don't doubt about this because it only pleases the forces of the negative state. They could use your doubts as a gate to influence you adversely. And we don't want that to happen.

Peter: Thank You for this reminder. I'll do my best in this respect.

The Lord Jesus Christ: But let us go back to your question. At this point, it would be a good idea to reiterate some information about the pseudo-creators' return and what happened afterwards. As you know, Peter, this information was given to you verbally but it was never recorded in the written form. It is timely and appropriate to do so now.

When the pseudo-creators returned and looked at the situation on planet Zero and how humanity has been developing on it, they became disgusted with it. So, their first impulse was to destroy everything and everyone on its face and start all over again with their genetic

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

experimentation. Obviously, things did not turn out the way they expected with humanity. And what was it that they expected? Their expectation in this respect entailed total proof that life can exist in the same mode and manner as in the positive state without the involvement of any spiritual principles or God, or with false spiritual principles and false gods. Of course, it didn't turn out that way. So, they decided to do away with it. However, as they observed the life of various humans and their respective societies and countries, as you know, Peter, they noticed that some agents of the positive state didn't turn out to be the same way as all others. Due to this observation, they postponed their decision to destroy planet Zero. They needed to study these agents of the positive state in order to determine what it is in them that makes them so different from the rest.

However, you have to be aware that not all pseudo-creators agreed with this plan. Due to that, a three-way split occurred among them. One group — based on their observation and recognition of the fact that life without true spirituality and The Lord Jesus Christ is incapable of turning out any other way but what human life became — arrived at the right conclusion to convert to the positive state or to support that conversion. The other group was inclined to let everything remain as is on this planet and to continue observing it in order to see how it will turn out in the end. The third group, the most aggressive, negative and radical one, wanted to proceed with destruction because they assumed, that based on the observation and examination of the agents of the positive state, and based on these agents' genetic makeup, they now had enough material to start all over again with a new breed of creatures with whom they could prove that life may and can exist in the same way and manner as in the positive state without The Lord Jesus Christ and His/Her spiritual principles or, most importantly, with false gods — them, and their own pseudo-spiritual principles.

Eventually, the first and the second group formed a certain type of alliance and proposed the following scenario to the third group: Wait, and don't proceed with destruction. First, based on the new material made available by these strange agents of the positive state, fabricate your new creatures and place them into the life of planet Zero and see how they turn out. If they turn out the way you expect, we'll join you and do whatever is needed in this respect. In that case, the answer to our original question will be provided and the so-called Null Hypothesis will not be rejected as expected. On the other hand, if you fail in your endeavor, then all of us, including you, will reject this Hypothesis, as expected, and we'll all convert to the positive state.

So, an agreement was forged. Of course, the first group had become very much aware by then of the fact that no matter how much and how often you try to fabricate someone on other than spiritual principles, stemming directly from The Lord Jesus Christ, such creatures cannot turn out to be any other way but what human life is all about. In this case however, the situation would be much worse than with any human or creature of Hell because it would include something in their new genetic makeup that had never existed before up to that point. Because the agreement they made in this respect is binding even for the pseudo-creators, after the experiment is completed in this respect, all pseudo-creators will convert to the positive state. And that would be the end of the negative state.

Unfortunately for them, their situation is complicated by the factor of the renegades. As you remember from My information that I gave you some time ago, upon the pseudo-creators' release into the Hells, the very first act they undertook was to take over the government and rule of all the Hells and the entire Zone of Displacement. Because the principles by which the Hells and the negative state in general are ruled is by power, intimidation and force, and because no one there ever wants to give up their powers and powerful positions, the former rulers of the Hells rebelled against the pseudo-creators and split from them, forming their own factions, the purpose of which is to take back their formerly held powers. This split created a tremendous problem for all of them. Many various factions of the minions were formed who became followers either of the relevant groups of the pseudo-creators or various groups of the renegades. They all fight each other for dominance and control.

The renegades try to imitate the pseudo-creators in that they are trying to fabricate their own creatures and populate planet Zero with them to prove that they are capable of doing the same things as the pseudo-creators, and even better. For your information, Peter, they function at 80% of the knowledge, abilities and power of the pseudo-creators.

In the process of the wars that they are waging amongst themselves, at one point in time, the pseudo-creators made the decision to yield certain regions of planet Zero to the renegades. The purpose of this step was to teach the renegades some lessons and to have them admit that they are not capable of accomplishing anything that would count significantly or that would make a success of their effort to bring about the ultimate victory of the negative state. Just the opposite: The more they try, the less they succeed. The very first sign of the renegades' takeover was the Asian economic collapse, followed by the devastating Russian economic collapse and the South American economic turmoil. In the United States, it was manifested by the impeachment of President William Clinton,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

based on his so-called sexual escapades, by attempting to remove him from office, and by the bombing of a defiant Iraq.

The renegades established their center in Moscow, Russia with followers in Asia, in the Arabic Nations, especially Iraq; in Afghanistan, China, North Korea, Cuba and, to some extent, in France and South America, as well as in Serbia. In the United States, the renegades are represented by the sanctimonious conservative Republicans, some conservative Democrats, and a host of religious groups that impose the most restrictive and rigid rules on their followers for living their lives, controlling them by the fear of eternal hellish and literal fire.

So, as you see, the only way the renegades are capable of ruling a region occupied and influenced by them, is by the principle of chaos. That is the reason why, in the moment they took over those regions, everything in them literally fell apart, almost overnight.

From what was said above, you can clearly see that in general, everything in the negative state is falling apart. This is a sign of its decay and dying out.

Peter: But what about the complete winning of the negative state on this planet before its total elimination — as it was pointed out several times in Your New Revelation and its Updates?

The Lord Jesus Christ: As you know, Peter, a wounded beast, before succumbing to its wounds, is able to exert a tremendous last effort of strength, power and rage that enable it to cause much damage and kill many of its attackers. This is the condition into which the negative state is presently entering. Because of that, this phase of its life can be considered the most dangerous, most devastating and most effective in pseudo-winning on your planet and throughout the Zone of Displacement. This situation is connected with the shift that you are in the process of experiencing. The condensing effort of the entire negative state is about to be finished. At the point when it is completed, several things can and may happen. These things relate to the issue, emphasized many times before, of many different scenarios of how it will all happen. It will depend on the choices that all will make during this most crucial and most significant time in the history of the activation and dominance of the negative state and planet Zero.

Peter: So, what is the situation with them right now?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, as you know, Peter, for some time now, the pseudo-creators have been experimenting with two issues: One, fabricating a new creature comparable to the agents of the positive state but with greater power, abilities and productivity; and two, fabricating a human body which would not be so immensely restricted in the scope of its function, mental and intellectual faculties, physical stamina and power of mind control, as the typical human body is. They want to preserve in themselves all the power, abilities, scientific superiority and mind control that they have without this body. In the first case, they have almost succeeded. Their effort in this respect is being hampered by a so-called civil war, if we may call it that, which is raging among them and particularly with the renegades. In the second case, they have not been able to succeed yet.

However, let it be known to you, Peter, and to all who will read these words, that some of the pseudo-creators decided to appear as typical humans with the same limitations and restrictions that humans have. This appearance stems from their scientific curiosity to know and experience how it is to be a typical human. However, even with these physical and mental limitations, so typical for humans proper, they still far surpass anything that a human proper can and may achieve. These types of pseudo-creators, gradually and covertly, are taking over the crucial and important positions of power and dominance in the political, economic, scientific and other important and crucial worlds, preparing the way for the defeat of the renegades and for the return of the rest of the pseudo-creators. As you know, the vast majority of the pseudo-creators is still waiting for that special type of human body to be fabricated; a body that would look, feel and manifest itself as a typical human body, but would retain all and everything that the pseudo-creators possess now.

Peter: May I ask You to further comment on the situation with this country and the spiritual implications with what is going on here?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, as mentioned before, the struggle for power and dominance that is going on between the pseudo-creators and the renegades is manifested in two major areas: The first one relates to the conflict with Iraq. Iraq is the most negative, evil and ruthless representation of the renegades and their respective Hells. For that reason, if it continues to be unchecked, it will produce weapons of mass destruction and would use them very effectively against this country and Israel without the slightest hesitation, as well as against some others who are under the control of the pseudo-creators. You have to understand, Peter, that winning over the control of this country,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

represents for the renegades the total defeat of the pseudo-creators. After all, this country is the one that has all the power, dominance and control over the vast majority of this planet. This is also the reason why the pseudo-creators chose this country as their major stronghold.

The second area relates to the impeachment process of President Clinton. The renegades succeeded in invading the minds of conservative Republicans and through them are trying to get rid of Clinton, hoping that with his removal, this country will fall apart and as a result, will considerably weaken the influence and position of the pseudo-creators, thus, giving them a chance to take over here also.

Because of this situation, this country faces a very crucial and important decision and choice in this respect. Correspondentially and symbolically speaking, if the Republicans succeed in removing Clinton from office, it means that the choice was made for the renegades. The consequences of that choice ***could be*** very unpleasant. Fortunately, the majority of common people have no desire for this to happen. They are willing to forgive and show mercy on Clinton for his sexual escapades and let him serve out his term. This is a good sign, for there is nothing more important for this country, as well as for any other, and for any sentient entity, than the willingness to forgive and show mercy.

Peter: Talking about mercy and forgiveness, may I ask You to elaborate on these two most important concepts?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Very gladly, Peter. Look carefully at what happened here. Clinton allegedly became sexually involved with a young intern and, maybe, with some others. What kind of sinful involvement is that? The sinfulness of that act would come into the foreground if it had been forcefully, or otherwise, imposed and demanded, giving the other party no choice in the matter. This was not the case with Clinton because it was fully consensual. As a matter of fact, one of the purposes of that young intern was to become an intern in the White House, to have that kind of experience and involvement with the very President of the United States of America. That was her goal and ambition. Of course, it is questionable whether President Clinton had real sexual intercourse with her because only oral sex was involved. From the spiritual standpoint, this cannot be considered true sexual intercourse, because, in order to trigger the true spiritual significance and vital spiritual correspondence of this act, and what it entails, the physical penetration of a penis into a female vagina is required. The accusation against President Clinton is in the fact that he lied under oath about his involvement with the young intern and, thus, he perjured himself, obstructed justice and abused his

power. If you take the spiritual aspect of this case into consideration, then President Clinton couldn't have lied, by the factor of how sexual intercourse is defined in the spiritual sense — which is what counts in our case; and therefore, there was no obstruction of justice or perjury or abuse of power.

It is natural for humans to lie about their sexual involvement whenever it comes into public light. The reason for this stems from the fact that any **consensual** sexual involvement is a matter of the utmost privacy and intimacy. It is between two involved, consenting individuals and Me. It reflects the most sacred concept of the interaction of two beings for the purpose of knowing each other, themselves and ultimately Me; and this is so, regardless of whether they are consciously aware of this crucial fact or not. On the spiritual level, where it counts, they are, and that knowledge will be subsequently utilized for their own enhancement and enrichment. Now, because of the nature of the intimacy and privacy of the sexual involvement, it should never be made public. It is no one's business. At the moment it becomes public knowledge, the first natural impulse is to deny that such things happened. Should anyone be judged because of that?

But look at sexuality from the standpoint of this consideration, Peter: Which words are used, for example, in the Holy Bible to describe sexual intercourse? Do you remember, Peter?

Peter: Absolutely. I do remember very well.

The Lord Jesus Christ: The words that are used, as you know so well, are, quote, “he knew her and she conceived.” It is not by coincidence that in describing sexual intercourse the words “to know her and subsequently of that knowledge she conceives” are being used. What is the best way to know someone than through sexual intercourse? You have to understand this statement in the following manner: In the process of sexual intercourse, he acquires knowledge of her feminine principle from the position of his masculine principle; and from the position of his feminine principle, he acquires knowledge of her masculine principle. On the other hand, she acquires knowledge of his masculine principle from the position of her feminine principle, and from the position of her masculine principle, she acquires knowledge of his feminine principle. In such an exchange, a new idea is born that is utilized for some very important productive and reproductive purpose. Of course, depending on who the two individuals are in this respect, the result of that exchange can be either positive or negative. However, in either case something new was born.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

So, in Clinton's case, his involvement should have never been made public and he should have never been judged for what he did or didn't do in this respect.

However, the renegades capitalized on this situation and incited a public prosecutor and conservative republicans to make an issue out of it so that they could bring down the dominance of the pseudo-creators in this country. President Clinton and the young intern, and everyone else involved in this situation, entered into it by prior agreement, ultimately with Me, in order to make this involvement public for a very important reason — to give humans in this country the opportunity to make a very decisive choice in which way they want to go. The choice in this respect is to go either with the pseudo-creators, which would lead to the salvation and conversion of the pseudo-creators to the positive state; or to go with the renegades, in which case it would result in their prolonged misery and suffering before the negative state could be eliminated.

But going back to the issue of mercy and forgiveness. Unless this country, in the form of its conservative Republicans, and other people supporting them, is willing to show mercy and forgiveness in this particular case, they would have to bear the full consequences of their attitude. In this respect, it would be a good idea to quote a very prolific verse, recorded in The Epistle of James, Chapter 2, verse 13:

For judgment is without mercy to the one who has shown no mercy. Mercy triumphs over judgment.

I would like to modify this verse in the following manner:

For judgment is without mercy and forgiveness to the one who has shown no mercy and forgiveness, because mercy and forgiveness supersede, transcend and nullify judgment.

Why is it so important to forgive and show mercy? Because no one is absolute. What it means is that no one can be absolutely good or absolutely evil and negative. In the first place, absolute evil and absolute negativity do not exist. If they were to exist, there would be two absolute gods in existence. Such a concept of existence is mutually exclusive. For that reason, by the logic of this axiomatic fact, only Absolute Goodness and Positiveness exist — The Lord Jesus Christ. In order to break out of the curse of one's relativity, one needs to be willing to be merciful and forgiving as related to each other's imperfection, fallibility, limitations and shortcomings. Because I am the absolutely positive God, I am also

the absolutely merciful and forgiving God and My Mercy and Forgiveness are always absolutely unconditional.

However, in applying the concept of My Absolute Mercy and Forgiveness to any relative being, that being is put in the position of the freedom of choice and willingness either to accept or to reject My Mercy and Forgiveness. By the very nature and structure of any sentient being, who carries within himself/herself My attributes in the relative condition, the only way My Mercy and Forgiveness can take hold within that individual, is if he/she accepts them by his/her own freedom of choice to do so.

But what happens if that individual is unwilling to forgive others and to show mercy upon them? In that case, that individual is relating from the position of the negative state. To take the position of this adverse nature excludes My presence in it. In that case, My Mercy and Forgiveness cannot take hold or enter into that individual because, by that adverse attitude, that individual shuts the doors for them to enter.

As you see from this example, My Mercy and Forgiveness are contingent on each individual's willingness and desire, by his/her own free will and choice, to forgive and to show mercy to others — but also to himself/herself. Such willingness and desire puts the respective individual into the positive state, in which state My presence is contained in an absolute sense. In this case, the doors to that individual's heart and mind are opened and I am able to enter them and, not only impart on him/her My Mercy and Forgiveness, but enable that individual to forgive and to show mercy on others and himself/herself. My presence in that condition, from the position of My Absolute State triggers the ability to do so in that individual. Without Me such an act of mercy and forgiveness would not be possible for that individual to exhibit because no one can be positive from oneself, by oneself and of oneself but only from Me, by Me and of Me, being that I AM the only One who is that way by, of and from Myself alone.

The reason that each individual is to also apply mercy and forgiveness to himself/herself, is in the fact that unwillingness to do so by his/her own free will and choice, keeps him/her in the negative state. In that case, the same rule applies as outlined just now in the previous paragraph.

I hope, Peter, this explanation satisfies you and every prospective reader.

Peter: Yes, very much so. It makes perfect sense to me. I hope it will also make perfect sense for others. Should we finish for today?

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, we should. Go and devote the rest of your time today to some other tasks. Hopefully, Dan will be able to E-mail you the corrections on some previous Dialogs so that you can prepare them for mailing to the selected interested individuals. Go in peace and have a nice day.

Sixth Dialog

December 30, 1998

Peter: I would like to begin this morning with the concerns that were expressed last night in my conversation with Dan about some statements in the Fifth Dialog. As you've heard, they relate to the situation with President Clinton. It seemed to us as though You were allegedly justifying Clinton's wrong behavior and attitude. I am afraid that some other readers of that Dialog might have the same feelings. Could You comment on that?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Most certainly, Peter. I am glad that this question was raised once again because it needs further elaboration and explanation. Both of you were almost offended by what was said about him in this respect. However, your problem was that you looked on the whole situation from a typical human standpoint and not from the spiritual, or My standpoint. My knowledge about this situation is absolute, whereas yours is relative and, in most instances, distorted. Just look at the source of your information and knowledge about it. What is the source of your information and knowledge? Either from your external observation, which is typically human and thus, unreliable, or from the media, which is known to be notoriously distorted, incorrect or even false. As you see, you do not know what is behind the scene of the whole setup with this issue.

What you disregarded in this respect is the factor of the admission of wrongdoing by President Clinton. Any time anyone admits either publicly or privately that he/she is wrong, apologizes and asks for forgiveness, by virtue of that fact, that person opens the door for My Absolute Unconditional Mercy and Forgiveness to enter him/her and nullify the entire wrongdoing. This is the way My Absolute Nature is. The remorse, the bad feelings that person experiences about himself/herself at that moment and the shame and embarrassment that he/she feels are sufficient retribution for acts of that nature. No further need for punishment is required after that. President Clinton publicly admitted his wrongdoing, apologized for it and asked the American people for forgiveness. Regardless of whether what he did or didn't do was wrong and criminal from your typical human standpoint, and from the standpoint of your typical human criminal justice system, he, as everyone else, deserves another chance. No matter how evil, how bad, how horrible that person was or is, any time that person apologizes and asks for forgiveness, his/her request in this respect is always granted by Me.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Of course, being typical humans, it is difficult for you to avoid a judgmental and punitive attitude and desire because, psychologically speaking, it triggers within you the need to be punished for your own shortcomings which you, as humans, all have. In this case, your demand for Clinton's punishment assuages your own needs to be punished.

However, don't forget that you, as agents of the positive state, connected to My New Revelation, are not typical humans only. For that reason, you need to learn to look behind the scenes and to see things from an entirely different perspective in all matters of life and not only with President Clinton's situation. Unfortunately, last night you erred in that you used very inappropriate words in describing President Clinton's character. You named him a horrible, bad, evil, inconsiderate, manipulative and almost murderous type of person. Even if it were true that he is such a person, it is extremely inappropriate for you, as My beloved agents, to harbor such thoughts and feelings. They should never, ever even enter your mind. To label someone with such traits, signifies that you are under the influence of the negative state. By making such assumptions about anyone, regardless if it is true or not, you are instantly exposing yourself to the negative state, becoming a well-pointed target. The consequences of that could be undesirable.

Just tell Me frankly, what do you really know about President Clinton, about his intention, motivation, character, internal disposition, his innermost thoughts, desires, wishes, feelings, emotions and will? In other words, what do you really know about his unique personality? What is the driving force behind his behavior and lifestyle? Is your knowledge absolute in this respect? Can you and do you know him as I do? Of course not. So, instead of naming him names, as the true agents of My positive state, you should be more benevolent, tolerant, understanding and utterly non-judgmental. Do you remember from the Gospels what I said to My disciple Peter when he asked Me how many times he should forgive his neighbor or his brother in the human sense if he or she had done something wrong against him and if he then tells him that he is sorry for what he did? And Peter asks whether it should be seven times a day? What did I answer? "I am telling you, Peter, not seven times but seventy seven times by seven times if he/she turns to you and asks you for forgiveness." In other words, there are no limitations to how many times you are to forgive and show mercy to anyone, if that one asks for it.

In some ways, your typical human attitude brings to your memory the story of prophet Jonah and the great fish (some people think it was a whale). In that story, I asked Jonah to go to the great city of Nineveh and cry out against it because of its inhabitants' great wickedness and

murderous drives and similar atrocities for which they were about to be destroyed. So, instead of going to that city and warning them about the impending doom, Jonah runs away from Me because he knows very well that, if the inhabitants of that city repent, show remorse and ask for forgiveness, I will not permit the planned destruction. But how does he behave when it really does not happen as he predicted? He becomes very angry with Me for not going along as planned and sits outside the city waiting in his zeal for destruction to take place. He wanted judgement! He could not tolerate the concept of My being absolutely merciful and forgiving. He could not accept the fact that if people cry to Me for mercy and forgiveness, that I would never permit any bad consequences to take place. Again, this is the way I am, this is the way My Absolute Nature absolutely is. And would you like to see President Clinton be punished and removed from office after he showed his remorse and asked for forgiveness?

How would it feel for you personally if something about you came out that would be very embarrassing and shameful for you? Just imagine, if you can, how would it feel if your escapades were to come to the attention of the entire population of planet Zero and you would have to continue your work under those kinds of conditions? Do you have any idea what he is going through in this respect? And you want more punishment, more retaliation and more judgment to satisfy your own typical human idea of how much and to what extent punishment should be imposed on him.

So, the issue with President Clinton is not President Clinton and what type of person he is — no one should be allowed to judge that — but what he represents, what his position and placement signifies and what he agreed to exhibit and manifest from the spiritual standpoint. The issue here is the positioning of the negative state for the final encounter between the pseudo-creators and the renegades and how the situation with President Clinton and his assignment, role and especially his sexual escapades, are being used or utilized in this process. Look at it from the standpoint of the outcome and not in the behavioral manner.

But there is another important point to this issue. It relates to you, My agents, and your positioning in the process of the currently occurring shift — a shift that is very unusual, mysterious, profoundly different and decisive, transcending anything that has been experienced up to this point. It is time that you fully assumed your role in this process by becoming a reflection, in a relative condition, of My absolute attitude, behavior and mode of relating to all in the negative state and planet Zero. As you know, what this planet, its humans and the agents of the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

negative state need, is not condemnation, judgmental attitude, rejection, aversion, or any other similar negative and adverse patterns in your behavior and attitude — after all, in the negative state and on your planet there is more than enough of that without your need to be a contributing factor in this respect — but what they need is your love, understanding, mercy, forgiveness, compassion, empathy, patience and acceptance. For if you are not able to exhibit these types of positive aspects in your personalities and behavior, and if you continue to act and react from the aspects of your human nature, what is the difference between you and the agents of the negative state and humans proper? What kind of examples and what kind of answers are you providing the pseudo-creators and all others in the negative state and on planet Zero?

Your assignment now is to fully manifest all aspects of My Absolute Nature in your relative condition, so that an important example is set for all others who are not in the same position as you. Setting such an example is an integral part of the plan for the ultimate elimination of the negative state and salvation of all. That example will be utilized to build a foundation for all of them, on which, they will be able to recognize and accept the fact that it is possible to be that way, and how to achieve being that way. For that reason, **the most important factor for you in this respect is the shift from looking at everything that is going on around you from the typical human standpoint, to looking at and assessing everything from My standpoint.** It is time for you to do that. This is very important, more important than you can imagine. Unless you are willing and able to do so by your own free will and choice — and I know you are — and unless you disregard your human position and attitude and, instead, fully trigger the positive aspects of your nature that stem from Me, you will side with the negative state. And I know you don't want to do that. So, your position, attitude, view and opinion, as well as your behavior, are being carefully observed both by all in the positive state as well as by the pseudo-creators, their minions and renegades in the negative state and planet Zero.

In a sense, the situation occurring in your country with President Clinton is an important test for you and all agents of the negative state, to see which way you decide to go — by the typical human way, in which case their conclusion would be that you are no different than any other humans or creatures of the negative state — or by My way, the way of My positive state, in which case they can learn the valuable lessons that it is possible to be in the human skin, so-to-speak, and yet to act, behave and relate the way My true agents do. Such lessons and examples provide tremendous incentives and hope for them that they will also be able, when the time is right, to become, based on your experiences and

examples, agents of the positive state, leading ultimately to the elimination of the negative state in its entirety. And this is what it is all about.

Peter: I would like to ask You for Your mercy and forgiveness for any tendencies in me for harboring any negative feelings, thoughts, desires or wishes as related to the discussed topic or to anyone or anything else.

The Lord Jesus Christ: And I gladly forgive you, Peter. But also don't forget to forgive yourself.

Peter: Because we are talking here about what happened last night and what transpired in the Fifth dialog, I would like to get some clarification from You about, why it is that in the process of sexual intercourse, in order for it to be the source of acquiring proper and correct knowledge, it is required for the physical penetration of a penis into a vagina to take place? What is the significance of this requirement?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, Peter, it is very simple. Look at the spiritual correspondence of the act itself. What happens when sexual partners engage in sex other than the merging type; when a male's penis enters a female's vagina? The physical touching either by hands or by mouth, or by any other external tools, comes from externals to externals. It is a foreplay, a stimulation, a preparation for the real thing, so-to-speak. Because it is, after all, from externals to externals, it doesn't trigger a response on the spiritual level that would release the expected and desirable experience and knowledge. Don't forget for a second that all true knowledge comes and stems only from within, from My presence in it, and from that, also in the without and everything in-between.

On the other hand, when the merging occurs, when the penis goes into the vagina and the vagina receives the penis, the state of internals occurs because of the corresponding factor — being deep inside in one's sexual partner. This correspondence enables the spiritual state of within to enter the without and release to it, or convey to it, the necessary information and knowledge related to the birth of an idea which is ready to be manifested in the external world. Of course, in your human type of life, this interaction happens without your conscious awareness.

This is the reason why external sexual play, oral sex and similar external stimulation cannot be considered true sexual intercourse by the definition of the spiritual understanding of what sexual intercourse is all about.

Peter: Thank You very much for this explanation.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome. At this point I would recommend to stop the question and answer sessions and start printing out the corrected material that Dan E-mailed to you. Let the editing of these six Dialogs be completed first and mailed out to the selected individuals before proceeding with the Seventh Dialog. Have a nice day.

Seventh Dialog

December 31, 1998

Peter: Before asking my own questions, I would like to ask You if You have further comments regarding anything that was conveyed to us in the Sixth Dialog or anything else.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter. Thank you for giving Me this opportunity to make such a comment. It relates to the issue of the retribution and punishment of humans who committed some kind of transgression from the standpoint of the human laws and criminal and/or civil justice system and also from the spiritual standpoint and how it all relates to you, as agents of My positive state. In your conversation with Dan, after he read the Sixth Dialog, you put it nicely when you told him that you guys should not worry about punishment and justice because the negative state has enough of its own people who are eager, willing and ready to punish their own. Let them take care of their own. Or, “let the dead take care of their own dead.”

So, in this respect, it is no longer your concern whether justice was or is being done to anyone who deserves it but, instead, you are to concentrate on illustrating and demonstrating the positive attributes, in your relative condition, of the life of My positive state in accordance with the character and traits of My Absolute Nature.

As you know, Peter, up to this point, you have been concentrating on observing and experiencing the events of the negative state’s manifestation on your planet and elsewhere. This was an issue of translation for the positive state. However, with this new shift, which is in the process of manifesting right now, the situation has changed drastically in this respect, you may say. Therefore, it is no longer appropriate for you to waste your energy and time on being preoccupied with the events of the negative state. The positive state, thanks to you, learned as much as it needs about the nature and life in the negative state and on planet Zero. For that reason, your assignment has changed in this respect.

In your case, the shift is toward illustrating and demonstrating the nature, character, content and life of the positive state to everyone in the negative state and on planet Zero. This illustration and demonstration happens by the manner in which you behave, think, feel and relate to the agents of the negative state and by your attitude toward such issues as, for example, punishment and retribution — as related to those who, by

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

their behavior and acts, put themselves in a position for such punishment, triggering the need for retribution.

As mentioned in the Sixth Dialog, in this respect, you are to reflect, in your relative condition, My Absolute behavior, attitude and stance that I have in cases like that. As you know, they are founded on My Absolute Unconditional Mercy and Forgiveness, rooted in My Absolute Unconditional Divine Love and Divine Wisdom. As long as no one asks Me to apply My Unconditional Mercy and Forgiveness in their lives, I don't interfere with the just punishment and retribution in those cases when it is deserved, due to their adverse, negative and evil behavior and action. However, in the moment someone asks for them from the bottom of their heart, I make them immediately available to such a person, giving him/her another chance.

As you know, Peter, punishment and retribution exist only in the negative state and on your planet. They don't exist in the positive state. To assume that such negative attributes and traits exist in the positive state, means to also assume that something bad, negative and evil takes place amongst its inhabitants. On the other hand, in the negative state, only everything bad, negative and evil is produced and manifested. Inherent in such conditions is the need for punishment and retribution — by whatever means or mode. By the logic of this setup, punishment and retribution are negative and bad in themselves. This is the reason why they cannot exist or even be conceived of in the positive state. And because you are agents of the positive state, and because, as of now, you have agreed to manifest all attributes of the positive state in your lives, behaviors, actions and relationships; by virtue of this fact and indisputable logic, it would be very inappropriate for you to dwell on the issues of anyone's punishment and retribution. The situation at the present time is such that any dwelling on them would put you in a bright spot, and you would stick out like a sore thumb; in which case you would instantaneously become a target for the agents of the negative state. So, to repeat again, "let the dead take care of their own dead." They are very proficient and effective at doing so in this respect.

So, as far as you are concerned, all of you who read these words are always to concentrate on Me and on the positive aspects of the positive state. And whenever any negative, punitive, punishing and typically negative feelings enter your mind — and, as long as you are in the human skin, such thoughts, feelings, emotions, or whatever, inevitably enter you — then you, as Dan in New York so nicely put it in his conversation with you, immediately reject them from your mind and turn

all your attention onto Me and your assignment on this planet as representatives of the positive state.

Peter: This is very clear to me and I clearly see the beautiful rationale and logic in this. Thank You for this explanation.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. I would like to make a brief comment regarding Dan's technical question, which he asked you last night. It relates to the requirement of the English customary expression whenever two or more people talk to each other. As you know, it is a matter of common courtesy to put the one you talk to in the first place and yourself in the second. Thus, it is proper to say "you and I or me" instead of "I or me and you." However, in your recording of our Dialogs, you, Peter, reversed it and you always put 'I' or 'Me,' as related to Me only, in the first place and yourself in the second.

As you know, you always hear Me correctly in this respect and it always comes out as "you and Me" — because of My respect for you and as a reflection of My Absolute Humbleness, Modesty and Humility. But, from the position of your own humbleness, modesty and humility, you don't feel right putting yourself in the first place. Due to the fact that you are the recorder, and because it is your personal choice to put Me in the first place, it is appropriate to continue in the same mode of recording. I hope Dan will accept this as a matter of your own courtesy, as related to Me; and I thank you for your attitude in this respect.

Peter: It just feels right for me to record it that way. Now, I have the following question. As You know, for some time now, our people have been asking me about the issue of prayer. The question is: "How appropriate is it for us, the agents of the positive state, to pray for other people and their health, situation and well-being in general?"

The Lord Jesus Christ: As you know, Peter, from your own past Baptist experience, as well as from the knowledge of the requirements of all other religious systems, the emphasis is always on some form of prayer. They believe that the more you pray, the more is accomplished in this world, in their personal lives and the more I hear them.

With the present issue of personalizing and individualizing one's personal life, as well as personal accountability and responsibility for one's life and choices, such prayers are utterly useless and have no meaning whatsoever. It is a waste of your time.

At the same time, it can be considered spiritual arrogance on the praying person's part to believe that by his/her intervention on behalf of someone

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

else, that this one will either change or get better — whatever the case may be. This spiritual arrogance goes even further in that the praying person grossly interferes with the freedom of choice, the agreement and choice that the respective individual made, either before coming to this planet or in the process of his/her life on it. From this understanding of the current situation, it is clear that such prayers are of a negative nature.

Peter: What about Your statement in the Gospel According to Luke (Chapter 18:1) that men always ought to pray and not lose heart?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Two reasons exist for that statement: One, it related to praying primarily on one's behalf and not on behalf of someone else. And two, the spiritual situation and climate of that time was such that, as you know, Peter, the pseudo-creators were in full control of this planet and the entire Zone of Displacement. They ruled them by the principles of necessity and no freedom of choice. Remember, please, and this is a reminder, My First Coming was, among many other things, for the purpose of giving humans the freedom of choice and free will, which they didn't have then.

Because of that, at the time, it was appropriate to pray to Me on behalf of others because they didn't know what they were doing. They were convinced that their behavior and actions were appropriate and godly. Not knowing that, it was appropriate for someone else who was enlightened about that situation, to pray that way. This is also the reason that while I was hanging on the cross, I prayed to My Father from My human aspects, that is, to My Absolute Divine aspect which was separated from Me during that time, to forgive those who crucified Me because they didn't know what they were doing.

But after My victory in the Hells, and after the lockup of the pseudo-creators, a new situation was established for humans, which put them in the position of free will and choice. This freed them from doing and choosing things by sole necessity and no freedom of choice. Once this situation was established, it was no longer necessary to pray for others because they became responsible and accountable for their own choices and their lives in general.

Unfortunately, after Paul came on the scene, and after other Apostles took over following My physical departure from your planet, they continued to emphasize the need for such prayers. And not only that, but, for example, Paul insisted that members of the church should pray continuously on each other's behalf.

Peter: But what about if someone requests us to pray for them?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, look at it this way, Peter: If someone is fully, totally and completely responsible and accountable for his/her own life, isn't it true that by such a request they shun or avoid manifesting their own responsibility and accountability?

However, there is more to it than that. If you ask someone to pray for you, it signals the negative state the fact that you have become impotent and unable to take care of your own problems or whatever it is that you are asking them to pray for. In that case, you become a very-well pointed target for the negative state.

The consequence of such targeting could be that your situation might become much worse than it was before you asked to be prayed for. So, in your present situation, you should never ask anyone to pray for you. It is between Me and you; and not anyone else.

Peter: What about praying for ourselves as individuals before You?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Now, that's an entirely different story. Due to the fact that you are responsible and accountable for your own life and for everything that is happening in it, it is proper, correct and right to address Me for helping you to cope with everything that is going on in it and for the effective and competent fulfillment of your mission.

There are at least two considerations in this respect. One is that because you are not absolute and perfect, and limited in the scope and power of your knowledge and understanding of anything on your own, you can easily make an inappropriate choice or decision, undermining your effort in carrying out your mission effectively.

Any time such things happen, you become a target for the negative state. Only from the State of Absolute Knowledge and Perfection that I have, can you accomplish anything. Thus, your request for Me to give you help and assistance in all your endeavors, makes it possible for you to accomplish anything at all. This is the reason why I said that men always ought to pray and not lose heart and why some Apostles emphasized the need for praying continuously.

Two, because of the requirement to individualize and personalize your life and the need to establish a relationship with Me, which is very important for your life, founded on such an individualized and personalized approach, the ability to accomplish this necessary condition can be made only from the Absolute Knowledge of who you are and from

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

which idea of the element in My Nature you originated. But because you are put into a condition of free will and choice, such knowledge and understanding cannot be imparted upon you without a specific request for Me to provide you with it.

Otherwise, it would be by imposition. Any knowledge acquired by imposition cannot take hold within you, where it counts, and therefore, you would tend to disregard it. In that case, you would instantaneously become a target for the negative state. Any factor of imposition opens the doors to the negative state. The process of a request by free will and choice is the process of prayer. By praying to Me for that purpose and in such a manner, you are enabled to function and to carry on with your mission.

Peter: Do any specific requirements exist for praying to You?

The Lord Jesus Christ: With the exception that it should come from the purity of your heart, with positive and good intent, and by your own free will and choice, none whatsoever. The method, mode and practice of how you do it, depends entirely on you. Again, it is spiritually very dangerous to prescribe or impose on anyone how, how often or in what manner they should communicate with Me. After all, what is a prayer all about? It is a means of communicating with Me and I with you. It is between Me and you. Because of that, your mode of communicating with Me is also between Me and you; and no one else's whatsoever. And I can assure you that I will inspire you through your own intuition in the manner and mode you should communicate with Me.

All other modes and methods would become very uncomfortable for you. (Just for clarification: Communicating with Me means prayer on your part; and vice versa: Praying to Me means to communicate with Me.)

But there is another point to the need to pray in your own individualized and personalized manner. As mentioned many times before, because of your relative condition to My Absolute State, you cannot be positive, good or wise in, by, of and from yourself. Unless you acknowledge this, you are in danger of considering yourself to be that way without My making you so. Only from the One Who is Absolutely Positive, Good and Wise in, by, of and from Himself/Herself, can anyone, who is not in such a state, become that way. The moment you fail to acknowledge that, you become a target for the negative state.

Remember please, the negative state was activated by the pseudo-creators' assumption that they could and may be that way in, by, of and from themselves. And you can clearly see the horrendous, negative and

evil consequences of that assumption in the entire history of planet Zero and the Zone of Displacement. So, by the process of your individualized and personalized prayer, by acknowledging this to be an indisputable fact, you avoid all such consequences for your own life.

The issue of the various forms of prayer was properly explained in Chapter 27 of ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***. It is not necessary to repeat it here. However, it would be a good idea to talk about what kind of request should be addressed in the process of your prayer or communication with Me. Because you are not perfect, as well as not absolute, it is advisable to concentrate on becoming as and like Me in your relative condition.

Such a desire can be accomplished by focusing during your state of informal and formal inwardness — by whatever mode or method you do it in your own personalized and individualized way — requesting Me to help you every day to be exactly as I would like to you be — for your own sake; to experience in your everyday life exactly whatever I would like you to experience — for your own sake; to do every day exactly whatever I would like you to do — for your own sake; to behave, act and relate every day as I would like you to — for your own sake; to be involved only in those types of situations as I would like you to be — for your own sake; to say, write, convey, share and express only whatever I would like you to — for your own sake; to think, feel, will, emote, choose and desire only whatever I would like you to — for your own sake; to perform your duties, obligations, work, job, profession, assignment, mission, destiny and the reason you are on this planet in this particular human life, exactly as I would like you to — dutifully, responsibly, accountably, lovingly, wisely, successfully — for your own sake; to sleep, dream, have fun, play and enjoy yourself, and everything else in your daily life, exactly the way I would like you to — for your own sake; and to do and experience all that and be that way in the manner and way which is proper, correct, right and godly, in accordance with My will — for your own sake; and only from Me, by Me, of Me, through Me and for Me; in unity and oneness with all members of your spiritual family, all members of the New Universe and all agents of the positive state situated everywhere; and with great joy, delight, pleasure, contentment, satisfaction, love, wisdom and happiness; to My satisfaction, to the satisfaction of all and to your own satisfaction with the attitude that it is an honor and privilege to be an agent of the positive state in My services — for your own sake and for everyone else's sake. And to request all that by your own free will and choice, for the sake of principle, because it is the right thing to request and to be that way. Of course, in your request, you can add anything else you want. And this is what true prayer is all

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

about. Anything else, any of those public prayers, group prayers, demanding prayers, prayers for others, Rosary prayers and prayers for this planet, so venerated and required in the churches, are useless, futile, ineffective and leading nowhere. They can even be spiritually dangerous due to the factor of interference with My Divine Providence and the free choices that humankind is in the process of making as a whole.

Another aspect of this danger relates to the sophisticated renegades and other 'prominent' members of the negative state and the Zone of Displacement who may and can respond to those kinds of prayers and set up a condition for their partial fulfillment, contrary to My Grand Plan of Salvation of all. To tell you the truth, they love those kinds of prayers, and they do everything in their power to occasionally answer them so that they can interfere with My Divine Plans, in accordance with My Divine Providence in this respect. Does this answer your question, Peter?

Peter: Yes. And let me tell You something, You have no idea... excuse me please, You do have the absolute idea of how content, satisfied and happy I am to serve You and do Your will. It is such a delight and pleasure. It is so inspiring and uplifting, like nothing else I have ever experienced in my life. Thank You very much for this opportunity to serve You.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, I do have an idea in the absolute sense. But there is another point to these feelings. It is a very important illustration and demonstration to all in the negative state that only in service to Me and in doing My will one can find true happiness, joy, delight, satisfaction, contentment and fulfillment; and only in that can one be productive, constructive, creative, inventive and innovative; and have all other felicities inherent in My Absolute Nature and in the nature of My positive state. There is no other source of all of these felicities — as the life of the negative state has been illustrating so vividly throughout all of its long history.

Peter: Thank You very much for this dialog. I will present my next question to You in our next dialog, if I may.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Of course, Peter, you always may. Have a very nice day.

Eighth Dialog

January 1, 1999

Peter: Again, I would like to start today by asking You whether You would like to make any additional comments regarding the content of the Seventh Dialog.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Actually, I would like to respond to the request by Rosemarie Fitzpatrick, one of My loyal and faithful servants, to clarify some issues on punishment and retribution. She would like to receive clarification about the rights that any one of you, My agents, has to use the typical human justice system to recover losses sustained as the result of some criminal activity by an agent of the negative state. She gives an example in which her mother-in-law suffered from a woman that was supposed to look after her, and who not only neglected her duties as a caretaker, but also embezzled all her savings and ruined her, both financially and perhaps even physically.

Two aspects exist for this particular, or similar, situation. The first aspect relates to the choices that were made by both the women in question. Some very important spiritual reasons exist why these two women got together and why it was necessary for one to play out the role of a ruthless criminal and the other, the role of helpless victim. In other words, what was it in the life of the alleged helpless victim that made her susceptible to get involved with the ruthless criminal? Why was it necessary for the alleged victim to place herself in a position like that? And why did the alleged ruthless criminal agree to be a punishing and retributive rod for the alleged victim? What happened in the life of the alleged helpless victim that deserves such severe punishment? By what deeds and why did she need to bring it upon herself?

As you see from these questions, the situation is much more complex than it seems at first glance. No one knows the real reasons behind these events. The conscious minds of both individuals have absolutely no recollection of anything that would predispose them to place themselves in their roles. Because no objective knowledge is available to anyone for the spiritual reasons behind all these negative events, and because you are My positive spiritual agents, from this standpoint, it is clear why it is impossible for you to judge anyone and why the issue of retribution and punishment should never be considered by you. In this respect, it is between those two individuals and the agreement they made to play out their roles. Some important spiritual lessons exist for all involved, as

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

well as for the entire being and existence, why such events are allowed to happen and what the consequences of such interactions are.

The second aspect relates to your duties in this respect as My positive agents, placed on planet Zero to illustrate and demonstrate the difference between the agents of the negative state and you. The issue here is unconditional love rooted in unconditional wisdom. Unconditional love desires to forgive unconditionally, and unconditional wisdom defines for its unconditional love what is best for each particular individual. For example, is it in the best interest of any criminally minded individual to let him/her go without bearing any consequences for his/her criminal actions? After all, the choice of that individual was not only to become a disavowed ruthless criminal but, most importantly, the choice was also to illustrate and demonstrate the consequences of such a criminal lifestyle. Thus, the choice was to experience punishment and retribution. And because the choice was to be negative, which is inherent in the nature of the negative state, there was also the choice to be punished and experience the full-fledged retribution for their behavior and action.

In your particular case, you allow that punishment and retribution to take its course, as required by the human criminal justice system, without condoning it. As you see, the issue here is in your attitude, behavior and position toward punishment and retribution, and not in being their cause, source or means. The issue here is to concentrate on the factor that even the most horrible criminal, a murderer, or whatever, is not absolutely evil because, as mentioned many times before, no one can be absolutely evil. The issue is in **respecting that individual's need and choice to be punished and bear the retributive consequences of his/her criminal actions.**

From what was said above, it is obvious that there are two approaches that one is to take in this respect. Whenever something like that happens to you, your first impulse should be to explore what it is in your particular life that predisposed you to undergo such an unpleasant and seemingly damaging experience. On the other hand, respecting the needs for the other individual to be punished, you may provide him/her with such an opportunity to be realized — without judging or condemning him/her.

Because you are in the human life, in this case the only means available to you is the human criminal justice system, which fulfills the need of that individual to be punished. In this instance, if it is possible, it is appropriate for you to recover any losses that you sustained by the actions of the individual in question. After all, whatever the thief stole

from you was yours and belonged to you; therefore, should he or she be caught, you should recover what is yours and belongs to you by using the only means available in human life — the criminal justice system in case the thief is caught; or by mercy and forgiveness if he or she returns the stolen goods to you on his/her own. However, your mercy and forgiveness should be extended to the thief even if he or she is caught, following or **after** the implementation of the punishment and retribution required and chosen by him/her.

It is a different story when it is up to you to decide or whenever you are put in the position of pressing charges against that individual. In a case like that, it is upon your sole discretion to impose or not to impose punishment and call for retribution on that individual. Your decision in this case depends on that individual's request for your mercy and forgiveness. If such a request is made, regardless of whether that individual means it or not, your spiritual duty is to forgive and show mercy and not to press charges. Here is the test that is put before you.

The negative state, as well as everyone else in the positive state, will be carefully watching your decision in this respect. Are you going to forgive and show mercy upon such an individual, if asked for them — as any true agent of the positive state and Myself would do? Or are you going to go after his/her blood, so-to-speak, in your desire to punish him/her, because you feel violated and so just and deserving — as any agent of the negative state would do? The first choice sets a valuable example for all in the negative state of how an agent of the positive state behaves, making a crucial distinction between the mode of life in the positive state and the mode of life in the negative state, respectively. The second choice gives the agents of the negative state the wrong impression that no difference exists between them and everyone in the positive state. If this is so, then why bother converting to the positive state? It is all the same. Do you see from this example how important it is for you to give them the right answer, and particularly to the pseudo-creators?

Of course, if the individual in question does not ask for your mercy and forgiveness, no matter how much you are willing to give it to him/her, or to show it to him/her, it cannot take hold. In that case, allow the criminal justice system, and not you, to proceed with punishment and retribution. You may hope that such punishment and retribution may function as a deterrent for that individual to commit such crimes again.

The only problem with the human criminal justice system is that once it puts someone in prison, instead of being rehabilitated, that person may learn better and more efficient ways to commit his/her criminal acts

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

without being caught. In cases like that, it only means that the individual in question chose to experience punishment and retribution, not on this planet, but in some of the respective Hells. There, they cannot wait for that individual to arrive so they can impose on him/her the most sadistic punishment available to them. It would be much better to be punished while still on planet Zero.

Peter: What about Your statement recorded in the Gospels? I quote, “You have heard that it was said, *‘An eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth.’*” “But I tell you not to resist an evil person. But whoever slaps you on your right cheek, turn the other to him also.” (Matthew 5:38-39).

The Lord Jesus Christ: I am glad, Peter, that you brought this statement to My attention. It does need clarification. Look carefully at the frame of reference in which it was made and, most importantly, the conditions that existed on planet Zero at the time it was made. My statement referred to the demands of Moses’ law to have equal retribution to the degree and extent that the harm was done. Because it was/is taken literally, it led to the ridiculous acts of doing to your neighbor exactly the same things he did to you. So, if he/she plucked out your eye, you should do the same to him/her.

As you know, Peter, this law is still practiced by many humans and even governments on your planet. Look at what is going on between Israel and some Arab nations, for example. If an Israeli is killed by them, the Israelis immediately retaliate by killing Arabs. And vice versa. Do you see the perpetuation of this problem? I will kill your people because you killed mine. Well, now I am going to retaliate by killing your people. The other nation then feels obligated to do more killing because everybody expects it. And it can go on like that until they all kill each other. If it were not for My Divine Providence that intervenes in this matter by providing some type of mediation by some other nations, they would really kill each other until they all perish.

The true sense of that type of requirement — an eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth — lays down the fact that no negative action can go without bearing its consequences. This is the justice of the matter. It does not mean that you have to literally pluck out an eye or extract a tooth. Any evil act, because it is evil, requires to be validated by its consequences, outcomes and results. Because such an act is always of and from the negative state, it is rewarded by the only thing which is inherent in the nature of the negative state — punishment and retribution — to the degree and extent of its severity — no more and no

less; thus, 'an eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth.' This is the typical setup of the negative state.

However, because at the time of My incarnation on planet Zero there was no other position but the position of the negative state, it was necessary to bring the reality of the positive state to the attention of humans. This reality proclaims that the positive state doesn't contain any notion of punishment or retribution within its nature because such things as that are the sole property of the negative state which doesn't have anything in common with the positive state. The consequences of any action in the positive state produce rewards which are positive because no evil deeds exist within its realm.

On the other hand, the consequences of any action in the negative state produce rewards which are negative — punishment and retribution — because no good deeds exist within its realm. This is yielding to the law of cause and effect. A positive action produces a positive effect. A negative action produces a negative effect. Remember please, the negative state was activated solely on everything opposite of what the nature of the positive state contains and what its nature is. Otherwise, it would not be the negative state.

So, in this connotation, the quoted statement in Matthew 'but whoever slaps you on your right cheek, turn the other to him also,' signifies that no agent of the positive state judges anyone in the negative state, no matter what that person does or how he or she is or behaves. And 'turning the other cheek' signifies that such an agent understands that there are important spiritual reasons why the negative state was permitted to be activated and why its temporary existence is tolerated by the positive state, or, in a broader sense, why I permitted its pseudo-being and pseudo-existence to come to its adverse fruition.

However, there is another aspect to the interpretation of the quoted saying. It also has a purely individual connotation, related to the agents of the positive state situated on planet Zero. As you know, Peter, from your personal life, and the personal lives of all of you who read these words, the negative state would like to devour, destroy and torture you, and make your life miserable and unbearable. If it were not for My personal protection, it would succeed in its efforts in this respect. So, symbolically and metaphorically speaking, it slaps you continuously on the cheek. What kind of reaction do you have when you realize that this is the fact? Do you retaliate against it? Do you judge it for being the way it is? After all, it is in its nature to be that way and to do this to you. Instead of becoming bitter, resentful, punitive and retributive; instead of

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

succumbing to its temptations and efforts to bribe you into being like its members, you accept these facts about the negative state's nature and continue in your endeavors the way you agreed or are supposed to, and you don't yield to its pseudo-charms and promises of heavens in their Hells. You acknowledge the necessity for Me to permit its pseudo-being and pseudo-existence for the important spiritual learning of all, as related to the question about life without Me and My spiritual principles; and for the purpose of the choices that need to be made for activating the fullness and completeness of life in the positive state. By doing it just like that, you symbolically turn the other cheek to be slapped by the negative state.

Still, there is another individual connotation to this statement. The agents of the negative state continuously deride you, put you down, ridicule you, badmouth you, consider you to be crazy, useless and inefficient in the matters of their world; very often they say that you are no different or no better than them because externally you look like them, you walk like them, you talk like them, you even get angry, frustrated, discouraged and disappointed; sometimes you even use bad language, curse, judge, condemn, and you do and manifest in your behavior many similar things. In their view, you are no more valuable, deserving or special than they are. So, in that case, what is the difference between the agents of the negative state and agents of the positive state, respectively? In other words, they slapped you on the right cheek. Notice please, the spiritual correspondence of the right cheek. It corresponds to the nature of the positive state. In the view of the negative state, the positive state is very bad, as bad as described above about you or even worse. So, it spits on it, it slaps it and it ridicules it on a continuous basis.

On the other hand, the left cheek corresponds, in this particular connotation, to the nature of the negative state which is exactly the way that it ascribes it to you, or in a general sense, to the positive state. So, symbolically speaking, you turn your left cheek to the one who slapped you on your right cheek and you allow him/her to slap you also on it. By allowing that, you are telling the negative state that, first of all, it is the negative state whose nature is the way it ascribes it to you and therefore, it should be slapped; and secondly, and most importantly, by doing that, you admit to the negative state that without The Lord Jesus Christ you would be exactly the way the negative state is.

Because of your relative nature, and we are reiterating this again and again, without My Absolute Goodness, Love, Mercy, Forgiveness and Compassion; without My continuously extending these attributes into

you, you would be just like them. And this is what the quoted verse signifies — nothing else. Do you see My point and the logic of My statements at that time?

Peter: Absolutely. And I thank You very much. Talking about biblical quotations, it brings to my mind another question which is asked frequently by the readers and practitioners of Your New Revelation: Should they also continue to read the Holy Bible together with reading Your New Revelation, or is the reading of Your New Revelation sufficient for their continuous spiritual growth and progression?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, Peter, it depends on their choices and preferences. No one is prohibited or demanded to stop or not to read anything, including the Bible. It all depends on how one understands the reading material, what one puts into its meaning and content and to what extent one wants to apply the Bible's principles in one's life. As you know, and this is repeated to refresh your memory, the Bible basically contains two types of books. One type has an inner, spiritual meaning, the other type has none. The type that has no such meaning has only historical value. It reflects the status of the spiritual condition, atmosphere and climate that existed at the time it was written. For that reason, whatever principles and guidelines they gave for living and practicing life in accordance with the spiritual requirements of those times, they are, in most instances, not applicable to the present time. Due to this factor, you can clearly see the problem that may arise in one's life if one wants to live by those principles.

A good example — and there are many such examples — can be seen by how the Epistles of the Apostles are formulated. They directly address the members of the newly established Christian communities or Christian churches that were in their very initial conception. No one knew exactly what to do, how to interpret various biblical statements, how to live in accordance with their requirements and similar matters.

Under those conditions, taking the factor of the quality of life of that time into consideration, it was necessary to establish some clear guidelines relevant to the nature of that time. Because for example, male dominance of the societies of that time was the commonly accepted rule rather than the exception, Paul came up with the idea of prohibiting women to speak or to have active participation in the church's business.

His attitude also stemmed from the faulty and perverted understanding of the concept of My First Coming, or incarnation into human life. Everyone assumed that, because I incarnated here as a male figure (and

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

the reason for this need was explained in Update 9 in the ***Corollaries...***), only men can and may speak, rule and guide the members of the church.

So, as you see from this illustration, reading these types of books in the Bible without properly understanding the historical perspective of the time during which they were written, could be quite harmful.

Again, this harm can be vividly illustrated by all those numerous religious sects, within and without the Christian religions, which apply the various rules and guidelines of those books in their lives without any consideration for the spiritual requirements of the current time. (Or in the Islamic religions, which have the most restrictive demands on their members or followers, especially on their females.) And not only that, but due to the different understanding and interpretation of the meaning of the principles formulated in those books, they violently fight amongst themselves to the point of bloody wars that can rage for decades or even centuries.

As far as the books that have deeper spiritual meaning and correspondences are concerned, their reading used to be, before the availability of My New Revelation, the only source for humankind to connect with the spiritual reality of My positive state and Me personally.

Even if the prospective reader consciously didn't know or was unable to ascertain their inner, spiritual meaning, his/her spiritual mind was able. From the position of that understanding, the spiritual mind kept the door open for My life to flow in and allow this planet to keep going.

Without such availability, this planet, and everyone on it, would be doomed to a spiritual death. In that case, the negative state could not be eliminated, because no one would know why and for what reasons the negative state was permitted to come to its adverse fruition.

In other words, no one would be able to trigger that knowledge from the universal consciousness that is directly connected to the reading of those books; the reading of which, triggers such vital and crucial knowledge. In that case, it would be dangerously assumed that the negative state is the natural state of affairs, originated in My Nature and therefore, must stay forever.

However, with the availability of My New Revelation and its Updates, and now with the availability of these Dialogs, the situation has changed completely. All principles, laws, precepts and whatever one needs for

salvation and continuous spiritual and mental growth and progression, all information about the negative state and why and for what reasons it was activated and put into dominance on planet Zero, and why the Zone of Displacement is permitted to exist, are fully contained in My New Revelation.

For that reason, if you make a choice not to read the Bible, you are not endangering yourself spiritually or in any other ways — as the members of various Christian religions would like you to believe. You are safe.

On the other hand, if you feel the need to read the Bible, together with reading My New Revelation, it is also acceptable as long as you understand what was said about it above. Otherwise, it could become a stumbling block for you, due to the contradictions — in the literal statements of those books — with what is contained and explained in My New Revelation.

Don't forget that the literal meaning of those books can be contradictory, confusing, mysterious and, very often, misleading. Unless you know and understand their inner, spiritual meaning, they really can become a stumbling block for you.

In that case you would immediately become a target for the agents of the negative state who love, cherish and propagate the literal sense of the Bible. Their purpose for doing so, is to continue the constant quarrels, fights and intolerance among all religions, incited by the various different understandings and interpretations of their literal meaning.

Due to the fact that the inner, spiritual and symbolic meaning of the relevant books of the Bible is not fully available to anyone, and will not be available to anyone until the end of the negative state — because of security reasons (the danger that the renegades, their minions and other agents of the negative state will misuse the correspondences), it is obvious the kind of problems their prospective reader may face. So, the choice is yours. So are the consequences, as you like to say it, Peter.

Peter: I appreciate this explanation very much. Should I continue asking other questions as raised by Rosemarie or should we make it the subject of our next Dialog?

The Lord Jesus Christ: My recommendation would be to continue tomorrow and include them in the Ninth Dialog. Your physical body is tired. After all, you have been up since 3 o'clock this morning. It would be a good idea to take a rest now. Have a nice day.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Peter: Again, I thank You very much for giving me this opportunity to dialog with You.

Ninth Dialog

January 2, 1999

Peter: Before proceeding with the questions, is there anything else You would like to add to the issues raised in the Eighth Dialog?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter. I would like to offer clarification on the issue raised by one of My most *analytical*, faithful and loyal servants, Dan in New York. In discussing the issue of mercy and forgiveness with you — when it is being offered to someone who asks you for it but, in essence they are not sincere about it, and inwardly have no desire or intention to change, Dan correctly concluded that the reason why it is desirable to proceed with that offer, is because from your relative condition, it is impossible for you to know exactly whether that individual means it or not.

However, let us assume for a moment that you know with 100% certainty that the individual in question isn't sincere in his/her request for your mercy and forgiveness. The only way you can base your opinion in this respect is on his/her past behavior. That behavior indicates to you that the individual in question is not motivated and does not have any intention to change or amend his/her ways. What do you do in cases like that? Consider this: Seventy times seven times that individual didn't mean it at all and continued in his/her negative and/or criminal behavior. But, how do you know if on the seventy seven times seventy seventh time he/she finally wouldn't decide from the bottom of his/her heart to change and amend his/her ways? Remember Apostle Peter and his question, and what My answer was in this respect? In cases like these, you have two choices. Both can be erroneous. You either err on the positive side or on the negative side.

From the spiritual standpoint it is more profitable and righteous for all concerned to err on the positive side, rather than on the negative side. Should you err on the negative side, you become a target for the negative state. In that case, you failed to illustrate to the negative state that, as an agent of the positive state, you would rather let that criminal go without an opportunity to be punished than make an error in judgment about his/her intention and motivation. This is nicely reflected in the American criminal justice system's requirement that 'you are innocent until proven guilty.' Don't you think that it is better to let several criminals off the hook, to use your figure of speech, at least temporarily, rather than punish one innocent person unjustly? In our case, it would be a person that really means to change and amend his/her ways. Or would

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

you like to go by the negative state's principles, as reflected in the criminal code of the non-democratic countries, especially in the communist governments, that state 'you are guilty until proven innocent?' Of course, in the negative state, and in those countries, everyone is guilty, no matter what, and therefore, everyone deserves punishment and retribution. It is their delight and pleasure to punish people and cause them to suffer.

Don't forget the fact that when a criminal gets off the hook permanently, it only means that the choice was made to be punished and receive his/her retribution somewhere in the Hells — after departing from planet Zero. Is this clarification satisfactory to you and Dan?

Peter: To me, yes, without any reservation. Remember when I worked in one of the California prisons as a clinical psychologist? My tendency was always to give them the benefit of the doubt, no matter how much I knew that they didn't mean it one bit. As You know so well, my attitude in this respect led to some very unpleasant consequences discussed in Update 20 of the ***Corollaries...*** Of course, I don't know at the point of this recording whether it will satisfy Dan or not. I am quite positive that, being so analytical, he will come up with something.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter. And if Dan comes up with something in this respect, it will only mean that there is a spiritual need to offer further clarification. In that case, it is proper and right to do so.

Peter: But what about the issue of self-defense raised by Dan? This issue is also so much in the heart of our Richard Schumert in San Francisco.

The Lord Jesus Christ: There are two aspects to this issue that need to be clarified for them and you, Peter. The first one relates to the offensive mode of the negative state which is in a constant war against the positive state. As you know, up to this point, the negative state has always been in the attacking position. Its desire to destroy the positive state and take control of the entire Creation is a well-known fact. This situation also applies to you personally. Being that you are agents of the positive state, by virtue of that fact, you are subject to such attacks in a general sense — as the result of an all-out attack by the negative state against the positive state. If the positive state, as well as you, were to fail to defend itself in this respect, the negative state would win. But the question is: By what means does the positive state accomplish its effective self-defense? What is it that makes the negative state so afraid, so miserable and so defensive instead of offensive? In their wisdom, the members of the positive state pour into the negative state the light and warmth of

My Absolute Unconditional Love, Wisdom, Mercy, Forgiveness and Compassion. In the moment it hits its attacking crew, they fall into such anguish that they throw themselves headlong back into one of their Hells in order to avoid becoming aware of the misery and anguish of their negative state. In other words, they bring a horrible punishment and retribution upon themselves for their attacks or, in our case, for their criminal behavior. It is not I, nor any of My agents, that cause that punishment or retribution, but they themselves trigger this by their negative and evil attitude and behavior.

The second issue in this respect is the issue of your own attitude and motivation regarding your own personal self-defense against the criminality of any prospective individual. The wisdom of your love requires you to restrain such a person from committing any criminal, evil or negative acts in general, not only against you but against anyone. But do you do that for your own sake *only*, for the sake of your own selfish motivation, for the sake of your own need to see someone being punished in order to satisfy your own ego? Or do you do it for the sake of that person, as well as, most importantly, for the sake of all because it is, after all, the right thing to do? This is what makes it so fundamentally different, and what determines the outcome of the whole issue of the rightness and the need for self-defense. If you do it for the sake of all, for the sake of that person and consequently also for your own sake, so as to not succumb to the viciousness of the negative state criminals who attack you and the positive state, which is represented by you, then, you have all the right, duty and responsibility to do so, utilizing whatever means are available in your society for such self-defense. At the same time, you are in constant readiness to offer that person your mercy and forgiveness, should he/she ask you for it.

Let Me tell you, Peter, it is not easy for a true representative of My positive state to see anyone punished, no matter what they did or didn't do. If someone's life is rooted in pure love, compassion, understanding, acceptance and empathy, that one doesn't want to see anyone suffer or be punished. However, the wisdom of that love and all its attributes, recognizes the need for such negative acts to take place as a deterrent against the hurt and harm that the punished person is liable to commit against others and ultimately, against himself/herself. Because of that, for the sake of salvation and justice for all in the negative state and on planet Zero, such punishing and retributive acts are permitted and tolerated to occur. Remember please, they are not willed, they are not desirable, they are not imposed and they are not supported by Me or by anyone in the positive state. They are only permitted and tolerated until the end of the negative state's pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. And

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

because all of you, connected to My New Revelation, are agents and representatives of My positive state, you ought to exhibit a similar understanding and attitude about this issue in your behavior and lifestyle. This is important!

Peter: Thank You for this beautiful clarification.

The Lord Jesus Christ: It is My pleasure, Peter, My pleasure.

Peter: And now some questions posed by our Rosemarie. The first question relates to the issue of the consumption of alcohol and its effects on human beings and positive agents here on planet Zero and why lately, there seems to be an increase in consumption and pressure to consume.

The Lord Jesus Christ: As you know, Peter, alcohol is a highly addictive agent which causes the alteration of one's consciousness. In other words, in its initial stage of consumption, it makes one high and seemingly happy. It is not by coincidence that alcohol in general is called 'spirits.' This name reflects the fact that the negative state has no proper spiritual foundation but is founded on distortions and outright falsities. Thus, anyone who consumes alcohol is, in fact, attempting to reach into their spiritual self or find the way to spirituality by an oblique and totally inefficient manner. And not only that but if one consumes alcohol for a longer period of time, one becomes addicted to it — ending in becoming an alcoholic. In essence, alcohol consumption means replacing true spirituality with a false one. What happens here is that any time you imbibe even the smallest amount of alcohol, in any of its available forms, you instantly open the doors to the negative state's influence on your brain and psyche. By this factor, the negative state is enabled to implant in you its own versions of spirituality, its own ideas and feelings and similar things that may become an integral part of your life. If this happens, you become a full-fledged slave of the negative state.

This is the reason why it was very strongly recommended in one of the Updates that you are to restrain yourself from using any type of alcohol, even in the smallest amounts. It is a deterrent for you from being influenced by the negative state. Unfortunately, the consumption of a small amount of alcohol feels and is considered harmless and pleasurable by some of you. Such an attitude is very spiritually dangerous for you because gradually, slowly and almost imperceptibly, you will fall into the trap of the negative state and you will become not only its target but its slave — slave of the need to consume alcohol and dependent on it in all your endeavors and decision-making processes. Once you are at this point, your life becomes ruled by the principles of the negative state. You

will begin to see things differently in concordance with the needs to justify and excuse your alcohol consumption, falling into the terrible denial that you don't have any problem in this respect. All your views, concepts, ideas and understanding will be distorted or outright false — without your realizing that they are distorted or false. You will self-righteously consider them true, proper and correct. Do you see why alcohol is such a favorable tool in the hands of the negative state? It is a great means for them to exert its total influence on humans. It uses humans to try to corrupt any agent of the positive state to join other humans in their various parties during which, alcohol consumption is the major event of the day. They even become demanding and forceful in this respect, imposing the drinking on such an agent under the disguise that he/she should be sociable and respectful of all participants in those parties. By not participating in their drinking orgies, they want the respective agent of the positive state to feel guilty, disrespectful and unsociable. This is a trap set up by the negative state to catch the agent of the positive state into its domain. You can say exactly the same thing about nicotine and all other abuseable drugs.

A good excuse for people's drinking, smoking and using illicit drugs, is that this helps them to cope with the everyday pressures of life. They don't realize that just the opposite is true: Drinking, smoking and using illicit drugs compounds the pressure, making it more unbearable and pronounced, and causing them to want even more to drink, smoke and use these illicit drugs.

But there is another point to this issue. It relates to the increased consumption of alcohol, and other substances among some humans. This situation reflects the depletion of any spiritual values in society and the total failure of all religious systems existing on planet Zero to fulfill the spiritual needs of their followers. Due to the lack of this fulfillment, these humans feel empty inwardly and begin searching for some kind of fulfillment or substitution. Because no religion or any current pseudo-spiritual trend is capable of that fulfillment, they seek out its substitutes. And what are better substitutes than 'spirits,' nicotine and/or illicit drugs? They all temporarily alter one's consciousness, giving a false sense of transient fulfillment. They even have, under their influence, some 'great spiritual insights and enlightenment' that gives them the false impression that they finally have something in their life which is truly spiritual, right and proper. After the influence of those substances wears off, they become, once more, empty, even more empty than before, falling into a horrible and unbearable craving to reexperience whatever happened to them under the influence of the previously consumed substances. This way the trap is nicely set. Now,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

they become full-fledged slaves and followers of the negative state's pseudo-spirituality. Do you see what's happening here?

Peter: Yes, very clearly. What about Rosemarie's question about diet, food and one's spiritual state. She complains that food products are of inferior quality, overprocessed, filled with preservatives, etc.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Food issues often have a similar meaning as described above, regarding alcohol, nicotine and illicit drugs. In this particular case, very often, food is a substitute for real love. Lack of experiencing real love, which is so vital and needed for one's life and well-being, makes one feel empty and continuously hungry. So, food becomes a means to satiate that hunger and need for love. Of course, the fulfillment of that need is temporary and illusory. In that case, one needs to eat more. Unfortunately, the more one eats, the more one becomes hungry and the more one feels empty and unfulfilled. This becomes a vicious cycle, leading toward the development of obesity.

Don't forget for a minute about the spiritual correspondence of food. As you need to feed your body in order for it to survive, so I continuously feed your spirit and soul with My life, which they need for their own survival. Lack of any such feeding leads to starvation and craving for food. If it is not available, the body will die. If I were not to provide your spirit and soul with My continuous life, your spirit and soul would not be able to survive for a second.

The contamination of the food, with which you feed your body, by the various foodmakers' processing endeavors, reflects through corresponding spiritual factors, the negative state's attempt to undermine My Life-Giving effort into all of you, so that instead, you would be fed by the negative state's ideas of its pseudo-life. If it were to succeed in its effort to feed you with such ideas, you would die as far as the positive state is concerned. Instead, you would be imbued with the pseudo-life of the negative state.

The question of diet in this respect is not in what you eat but in your attitude toward food in general. Is eating the only purpose of your life or a means to keep your body healthy and alive so that your spirit and soul may function properly and effectively within it? In this respect, you shouldn't concern yourself with anything else related to the food-processing practices on your planet. After all, don't forget an indisputable fact; in the past, when no such food-processing was available, and from your standpoint, food was considered clean and healthy, human life expectancy on planet Zero barely exceeded 50 years. On the other hand,

at the present time, with all those preservatives or chemicals they put in food products, life expectancy has increased considerably. Nowadays it is not uncommon to live over 90 years. The average life expectancy on your planet has increased considerably — from 50 to about 75 years. It is almost a 25 year difference.

So, in this respect, you can eat anything that is available to you, or anything you feel like (your body can tell you what you need, how much you really need and what kind of food you should eat), as long as you eat in moderation, in varieties and with the attitude that consuming food is not the purpose and goal of your life in itself and by itself but only a means toward fulfilling the duty and responsibility that you have toward your physical body.

Peter: Thank You for Your response. The next question posed by Rosemarie, and also in the past by some other readers, practitioners and followers of Your New Revelation relates to parenthood. As You know, many of them have small, as well as older, children. They would like to know how they should proceed in the effort of rearing their children in the light of Your New Revelation's principles.

The Lord Jesus Christ: First of all, don't forget the reasons for which your children incarnated on this planet and the prior agreement you made with them before your own incarnation. Many of your children are agents of the negative state — especially those born after July 1, 1988. You can assume correctly that from that date on, most of those born are agents of the negative state. Nowadays, for some time now, only agents of the negative state are born on your planet. This situation reflects the condensation of the negative state and its impending pseudo-victory on your planet. Because of these factors, the only way you can do anything for your children is by your own living example, by illustrating and demonstrating to them the mode of life of the agents of the positive state and by making My New Revelation available to them in its entirety — without any duress, forcefulness, demands or imposition. At the same time, emphasizing to them the many choices they have regarding the spiritual and non-spiritual issues in the life of planet Zero. Parallel with that, teaching them — in a loving, kind, wise, and sometimes, firm manner — discipline, order, respect and consideration for other humans' needs to be the way they are. Besides that, and in addition to the above, providing for their physical, mental and educational needs, as you agreed to do, your duty and responsibility in this respect end right there. After all, they have to fulfill their own purpose, the reasons for being on this planet and particularly in your life. You can do nothing more in this respect.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Peter: Her next, and final, question is too personal and should not be answered through me. It relates to her experience early in her life, at the age of seven, during which she had a vision of someone who appeared to be Mary. She wants to know if it was the real Mary who warned her about the danger of being involved with the Catholic Church, through her involvement with a Catholic nun.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, this is a good example of the types of questions that should never be asked through someone else. She should personally pose that question to Me herself and rely on her intuition in this respect. I would be more than happy to answer it for her in her own private and personal state of communication with Me.

Peter: Thank You very much for all Your answers. Is there anything else for today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. It is sufficient for the moment. Go and have a pleasant day. And I thank you for your willingness to dialog with Me.

Tenth Dialog

January 3, 1999

Peter: Today, I don't have any specific question that comes to mind. However, I would like to ask if You have anything to add or to clarify as related to the content of the Ninth Dialog.

The Lord Jesus Christ: As a matter of fact, I do have something to add. Thank you for asking Me that. In fact, today I would like to briefly discuss three issues. They relate to something that transpired in your three-way conversation with Rosemarie and Dan after they called you on the telephone, following the reading of the Ninth Dialog.

The first issue relates to the topic of self-defense as related to you guys. In this case however, it is not the common criminals or obvious negative entities that we are talking about, but everyday types of humans with whom you are required to deal and who may cause you all kinds of problems and/or reactions that could be of a negative nature. Moreover, it also relates to the problems that you encounter during your interactions with your own friends, relatives and even with those who read, accept and practice My New Revelation, or at least, claim to practice it. Here, we are talking about the frustrating and irritating behavior that some of them may exhibit in the process of interacting with you. Such as, for example, not keeping their promises, being consistently late for their appointments with you, avoiding you, not returning your phone calls, telling you one thing, but doing just the opposite; or doing it in an inappropriate and unacceptable way and many similar things that they might do which are labeled in your psychiatric textbooks as passive-aggressive behavior.

So, what do you do or how do you respond in these kinds of situations from the position of your being the agents of My positive state? Let Me refresh your memories and repeat it again (as you know, human memory is extremely forgetful, unreliable and fragile): In Chapter 11 of My New Revelation — ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ*** — it was clearly stated that whoever is born on planet Zero, is born, first of all, with many problems and, secondly, he/she is born into many problems. In addition, during his/her upbringing, he/she acquires more problems, which are subsequently internalized by him/her and become an integral part of his/her lifestyle.

This situation establishes a condition, during which, a total identification with these compounded problems occurs, effectively repressing or erasing

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

from one's memory any signs of the original self-identity, self-concept, self-image and self-acceptance and the way that individual was before incarnating on planet Zero. Due to the fact that the individual in question has no conscious connection to anything from his/her original makeup, he/she is put into the forceful position of an imposition to establish a false self-concept, self-image, self-identity and self-acceptance built from the problems that, first of all, were integrally implanted into him/her before and at the time of birth, and secondly, which were imposed on him/her by significant others who brought him/her up from the position of their own problems. So, a special adverse type of treatment may occur, during which, he/she is treated from the problems of his/her parents, teachers or any significant others, feeding him/her with them and reinforcing his/her own problems.

Because nothing is available but problems for establishing the required foundation on which one's self-identity and self-image are built, one will acquire an artificial self-identity, self-image and self-worth, full of nothing but problems, which, in their essence, are unreal and unrealistic, but which are considered to be real, feasible and the only ones available to that one. Once such a false identity is established, and once that individual fully accepts it as his/her own, that individual puts himself/herself into the position of not having a choice but to relate to you from the only position he/she has — from the position of his/her problems. Unless that individual recognizes the problem of this setup, and unless he/she starts to work on himself/herself and gets rid of his/her problems, or at least learns how to control them, he/she will go throughout his/her entire life treating himself/herself, and all others, from no other position but the position of his/her problems.

This is one of the major sources of problematical relationships amongst humans. From the spiritual standpoint of understanding the reasons for this type of establishment, this is an illustration and demonstration to the entire Creation of the nature of human life, which is rooted in nothing but problems. Whoever agreed to participate in human life, also agreed to this type of arrangement. In other words, as mentioned many times before in all the books of My New Revelation, it is an illustration and demonstration of what not to choose and how not to be.

Unfortunately, the vast majority of humans have no concept, awareness, understanding or notion that this is the case with them and with their human life. Therefore, they go around behaving in this problematical way, treating each other in frustrating and irritable ways, causing themselves animosity, envy, deception, cheating, lying, confabulation, misrepresenting themselves to each other, breaking their promises, and

the many other negative and irresponsible things they do. Because humans have no concept of why they behave as they do, they consider their behavior, actions and how they relate to you, to be normal, proper, appropriate and the only feasible ones.

So, what kind of relevance do these facts have on your relationship with and treatment of these types of humans, or even your friends and those who claim to be an integral part of My New Revelation? First of all, once you know about these confounding facts, you avoid relating and treating them from the position of your own problems, which you all have, no matter what and how spiritually advanced you are. After all, you are in the human life. You need to learn to recognize your own sensitive points and problems and to work them out or, at least not to bring them, as an important factor, into your relationship with and treatment of others. This is not an easy task, knowing in what type of pseudo-life you are situated at the moment. However, neither is it impossible to learn how to avoid projecting your own personal problems into your interactions with others.

Secondly, you learn not to expect anything from anyone or not to expect from them to be the way you think they should be, behave and/or relate to you or others. After all, do you really know why they are the way they are? Don't forget that all of you were raised with many externally imposed suggestions, internalized by you, of how to behave, what to do, what is expected from you and what is and is not proper from the standpoint of the rules of your society, neighborhood, family dynamics, gangs, sub-cultures and similar numerous factors. They are all constantly impinging themselves on you, demanding that you follow their rules, whether in a so-called pseudo-positive way or in an outrightly negative way.

Your duty, as My agents, to which you agreed in this respect, is to be constantly aware of these adverse factors that determine human behavior, including many of your friends and the so-called followers of My New Revelation, and to learn to illustrate and demonstrate the type of attitude and behavior integral to the nature of the positive state. Your attitude and behavior in this respect should be rooted in unconditional love and wisdom. Your unconditional love requires you to forgive unconditionally such behavior toward you. The wisdom of that love requires you to bring to your friends' attention — in a kind, loving, wise, understanding, and sometimes firm and determined manner and/or voice — how they behave and what their behavior is causing you and others. If your friends recognize their problems in this respect, and show a willingness to amend their ways, and subsequently amend them, you've

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

gained your friends, you helped them and you fulfilled your spiritual obligation to them. If they don't respond kindly to your intervention, you let them go with the assurance that the door is always open for establishing a relationship founded on the true spiritual principles rooted in the life of the positive state.

In the case of your co-workers and other acquaintances who are obvious agents and/or slaves of the negative state, and with whom it is unavoidable for you to be in contact due to the arrangements of the very nature of human life on this planet, and who are treating you with contempt or in any other negative, irritable and frustrating manner, you are to learn to accept the fact that this is the way they are and that nothing different can be expected from them and that it is their mission and assignment from the negative state to be that way for some very important spiritual reasons. You interact with them as required by your job or for whatever reasons it is necessary for you to interact with them, and in the process, you treat them with the utmost courtesy and understanding, limiting your involvement with them only to the nature of the needed or required interaction. By your consistently kind and courteous behavior, you are not only showing them what and how it is to be an agent of My positive state, but ultimately you disarm them so that, at one point in time, they will, perhaps, begin to treat you with deserved respect. However, don't expect anything from them in this respect. As long as you treat them as suggested here, your duty and obligation in this kind of situation has been fulfilled and you have done what you were supposed to do. Nothing more is required from you in this respect.

Of course, you may say, Peter, and it is in your mind right now, that being in the human skin, it is not easy to treat people like that.

Peter: I am sorry, You are very right.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Don't forget, please, that before incarnating on planet Zero, none of you was promised that it would be easy. And you accepted that fact. You agreed to do your most possible best to be that way. And in actuality, it is not as difficult to be that way as it seems, due to the knowledge you possess about these issues from My New Revelation. It would only be difficult if such knowledge would be lacking or not available. But in your case, you are blessed, as no one else, for having such knowledge. It will help you change your attitude and behavior toward others in accordance with the line of the principles of My positive state, which you represent on planet Zero.

Peter: I fully acknowledge these facts.

The Lord Jesus Christ: I know you do. Let us talk about the second issue. It relates to the topic of your discussion with Rosemarie and Dan about the way people are punished and experience retribution after they arrive in the Hells. Some seeming contradictions were noted between what was said about it in ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ*** and in these Dialogs. It was mentioned in the big book that, after returning from planet Zero to their respective Hells, their agents are rewarded by a greater degree of evils and falsities. The crucial word here is “rewarded.” With what do you reward people if they deserve your reward? With something valuable which is available to you. And what is available to creatures in the Hells or in the negative state in general? Only something negative, evil and false. So, you reward them exactly with that. One of the many aspects of such a deserved reward is retribution and punishment. Because in the negative state everyone is after receiving rewards for their deeds, their nature is structured in such a way that they desire punishment and retribution — it is their reward. In this respect, you have to understand something that is extremely difficult to conceive and to accept by your mind. How could anyone desire something awful like that — to be rewarded with punishment and retribution? The problem with your understanding of this concept is that you look at it as something pleasant, delightful and desirable from the standpoint of how a reward is defined and experienced in the positive state. You cannot apply those kinds of measures to the negative state’s definition and conceptualization of this term — reward. For them, punishment and retribution are as pleasurable and delightful as a positive reward is in the positive state.

In your human terms, you have a description for this type of situation, as Dan so aptly pointed out yesterday. It is called sadistic-masochistic behavior. It is also described in the books of the prolific Russian writer, Dostojevsky, especially in his novel ***White Nights***. In it, the hero argues about what a great pleasure it can be, and is, to experience pain, suffering and similar adverse feelings.

There is a special contingent of creatures in the Hells which specializes in inducing ‘rewards’ of punishment and retribution in accordance with the degree of evil deeds and the production of falsities that one achieved during one’s tour of duty on planet Zero, or during one’s pseudo-life in the Hells. Of course, these creatures are also ‘rewarded’ for their ‘venerable’ efforts of doing their job of ‘rewarding’ others with punishment and retribution. In turn, they are punished by each other and experience retribution amongst themselves for their ‘good deeds’ in this respect.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

So, as you see from this explanation, you cannot apply your understanding of the concept of 'reward,' as well as of anything else, to the negative state. Do remember please, that everything in the negative state was set up by the pseudo-creators to be exactly the opposite of how things are in the positive state. Otherwise, it would not be the negative state. Thus, everything is perverted there.

Peter: This is very clear to me, but as You know, it is not easy for us not to apply the same categories to both states — as we try to understand and describe things that happen in them.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, but you have to train your mind, intellect, logic and all other mental faculties to discern correctly the state of affairs in either domain. Otherwise, you could find out that your conclusions about things are either distortions or outright falsities.

Peter: Understood. You mentioned a third issue that You want to discuss.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter. It is a brief one. It relates to the concerns of Rosemarie as to whether the statements about food were meant to be specifically personal, related to her. Let Me very strongly assure everyone who reads these Dialogs that nothing personal is contained in any of them and nothing personal will be contained in any of them that will come in the future — whenever there is a need to continue with them. The content of these Dialogs relate to questions of common interest, to know things from the right perspective. Of course, it is upon each individual to decide, through the process of self-exploration by intuitive discernment, whether anything in them is applicable to their own personal life or personal problems from the position of their general consideration. If it is, it is up to their own freedom of choice and free will, if they want to pursue it further and work on resolving their problems as related to any statements that were made in the Dialogs. After all, these Dialogs are made available for all of you to help you in any way they could, or would, or in any way that you need to be helped.

Peter: Thank You for bringing these issues to our attention. I just remembered that I do have one question; actually, it is not that much a question but more precisely a request to elaborate further, if possible, on some negative statements that the Bible, and the other so-called 'holy' Books, so frequently make. This is especially related to the issue of eternal punishment, such as, for example, 'unless you repent, you all perish.' How should we understand or interpret statements like that?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, as you know, Peter, from My New Revelation, those kinds of books were written in the language of the negative state because nothing else was available during the time of their writing. If you live in midst of the negative state, if the only language that has any effect on you is the language of threats, fears and duress, and if there is no comprehension or even knowledge that any other language is available or even possible; then, in that case, how do you approach the inhabitants of the respective regions ruled by the negative state, in order to help them realize the negativity and evilness of their lifestyle? By using their own language. So, you clearly state to them that their ways are bad, evil, wrong and dangerous; that their lifestyle establishes a horrible predisposition to be thrown out of life entirely or, in other words, to perish forever; and unless they change and amend their ways, they are in danger of losing their privilege to have any type of life.

Once you bring this fact to their attention, and once they understand and accept the fact that their life is negative and evil, the next step is to introduce them to the principles of life in the positive state. The best way to accomplish this crucial introduction, is by the examples of the agents of My positive state situated on planet Zero for that important purpose or by the examples that I illustrated and demonstrated to them during My life on planet Zero or by what is written in My various books of the Old and The New Revelation. If they take heed and respond to such examples and accordingly change their life, they will be converted to the positive state.

But there is another point to this issue. Don't forget that at the time those books were written, the pseudo-creators and their crew freely roamed planet Zero and had full control of all humans with the meager exception of some of My agents who lived on your planet at that time. Because of this factor, and due to the fact that no memory was available to any of them about the voluntary status of their participation in activating and being in the life of the negative state, it was necessary to implant an idea in their mind which would bring about the awareness, in the opportune time, that a binding agreement was made either to convert to the positive state at the end of the life of the negative state, or to perish to eternity — that is to say, to relinquish their personal and individual life back to the Absolute Life of The Lord Jesus Christ. Of course, as you know, Peter, from My New Revelation, someone who would potentially not agree to convert to the positive state at the end of the negative state's life, would have never come into his/her being and existence in the first place. A reminder of this nature — 'unless you repent, you will perish' — prevents such a terrible fate from ever

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

happening to them because it will give them a way out of the negative state. Without realizing the availability of such an important way as that, there would be no incentive, not even a need, desire or will to change. After all, why change or live a different type of life if I don't know or don't have or am not aware of any other alternative, or how to trigger and implement it? In that case, they would really perish for good, forever.

So, those kinds of negative statements have a very important preventive function. They will be utilized at that time to save everyone from the clutches and lifestyle of the negative state. And this is all that you need to know about it. Of course, there are some other important reasons for statements like that, but it would be premature to reveal their knowledge at this particular time. So, go in peace and have a very pleasant rest of the day.

Peter: Thank You very much.

Eleventh Dialog

January 5, 1999

Peter: I have a confession to make. As you know, I didn't record anything that occurred yesterday during our early morning dialog. It feels very funny to me, as though I didn't do anything useful but was wasting my time on all kinds of typical human errands and similar things.

The Lord Jesus Christ: It is understandable, Peter. However, you shouldn't feel that way because you do have a responsibility and duty to also take care of your most external and typical human affairs. Don't be surprised if having such times out happens more frequently than you would like. Sometimes, it will be days, or weeks or even months when you won't be recording anything. Should anything like that happen, it will only mean that some other type of work, as important as recording our dialogs, needs to be taken care of, either in your typical external human life or on some other levels of being and existence or pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. Also, don't forget that you will need to travel in order to visit My people on planet Zero, both in the United States and abroad. Don't underestimate the face to face contact with them. Being who you are and what you represent from Me on planet Zero, such face to face contact may trigger something important in them. Because of that, by your presence with them, they will be able to come up with questions for which you will help them get proper and correct answers without violating their freedom of choice. Again, don't underestimate the important process of asking questions and enabling them, by your face to face presence, to get their own answers. On the other hand, their questions could very well have a multiversal significance that needs to be answered through dialoging with Me and subsequently recorded by you for the benefit of all everywhere. The potency and power of face to face contact can be very pronounced and significant. You don't get such an all-inclusive impact from letters or telephone conversations as with face to face contact because they are too impersonal, remote and cold. This is one of the reasons why you have so much aversion toward talking with people on the phone. Believe Me, it is not the same as talking with them face to face. So, prepare yourself for such possibilities in the near future.

Peter: I understand; and I am humbly asking You to help me to avoid such funny feelings when the recording of our dialogs does not occur for a longer period of time. Also, as to the issue of the financial needs related to these travels. As You know, I have retired and My personal income

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

has dropped by more than 50%. And yet, the expenses of living here are the same.

The Lord Jesus Christ: I can assure you, Peter, that these things will be taken care of. As you know, My people in the Czech and Slovak Republics are already thinking of paying your airplane tickets for your important visits with them. And in the past, Lyudmila and her family in Moscow, Russia did the same thing either partially or completely.

Peter: I very much hope that it will never come to that point and that some other means are provided to take care of this issue. The last thing I want in my life is to be a financial burden on someone else.

The Lord Jesus Christ: However, Peter, if it were to come to that, it would only mean that it is spiritually appropriate for that to happen. Don't take the opportunity from My people to also serve Me in this manner. It could have some important spiritual significance for them, as well as for everyone else as well, — to do that.

Peter: I understand. But I still hope that it will not happen that way. However, forgive me for bringing up this kind of personal matter to Your attention.

The Lord Jesus Christ: It is very appropriate for you, as well as for anyone else, to bring such things to My attention. Again, don't forget that even things like that have some important spiritual correspondences. Therefore, it is never by coincidence that you feel like bringing them to My attention. As you know so well, everything, without any exceptions or exclusions, always has spiritual roots.

Peter: In that case, let me bring my first question to Your attention. As you know, one of the members of my spiritual family represents the important spiritual fact that You, my beloved Lord Jesus Christ, manifest Yourself to Your Creation and to the Zone of Displacement in infinite varieties, manners and ways. How does this important factor take into consideration Your human body and its nature, which You acquired on planet Zero and took with You after Your resurrection and which became a major catalyst in Your acquiring Your absolutely New Absolute Nature?

The Lord Jesus Christ: As you know, Peter, the human body and human nature represent something that doesn't exist anywhere in My Creation or even in the Zone of Displacement. Their spiritual correspondence, among many other things, is tangibility and solidity, so-to-speak. In other words, it provided Me with the ability to experience

life as humans do. However, the most important factor in this respect is that it makes it possible for relative beings to have a very private, personal and intimate relationship with Me. Through that body and the human nature, I can be touched, felt, hugged, held, kissed, etc. I am no longer a remote, incomprehensible, unapproachable, non-understandable and non-tangible Being who resides somewhere out there where not one living and breathing being can enter. I am able to come to your level, to the level of all, and communicate with everyone on an equal footing, to use your figure of speech.

Peter: But couldn't You have acquired such a tangible body and its nature somewhere else in the physical universe that would have given You the same types of possibilities as You describe above, and more?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Of course I could have. But consider this: What would happen if I had acquired such a body and its nature somewhere else? First of all, with that type of body, I would not be able to enter human life because of the position, placement and correspondence that the typical human life has. Taking into consideration the gross perceptual limitations of the human sensory organs, as well as their human nature, I could not be visible or heard by humans. In that case, My approach to other beings would be limited to only those worlds where spiritual correspondence is established, which makes it possible for their inhabitants to physically see Me, hear Me, touch Me, hug Me, kiss Me and relate to Me in general. If this were to happen, humans would be excluded from this vital and important experiential mode of interacting with Me. Should such things as that happen, not only could humans not be saved from their accursed position, but, in an ultimate sense, the negative state could not be eliminated to eternity either. Don't forget please, that, as mentioned in My New Revelation, transmitted through you, Peter, human life was the end product of the activation of the negative state by the pseudo-creators. Unless you do something with the end product, which is the foundation on which the entire negative state is manifested, that product assures, gives or provides a continuous opportunity for the negative state to be in its pseudo-being and pseudo-existence.

But there is another point to this: As you know, Peter, human life is the representation and embodiment of the most external of the most external. This factor gives it the ability, if put into the proper perspective and position, to be an all-inclusive factor of all and everything. Correspondentially speaking, if you are a skin or a container that holds everything together or in one place, in order for you to be such an effective container, you will potentially contain within you all the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

elements of everything else in being and existence and in pseudo-being and pseudo-existence.

As you noticed, I said ‘potentially.’ The reason for this is in the fact that human life is a manifestation and exemplification of a perverted, screwed up (excuse Me for that expression!) and inverted order of life. Nothing is normal in and about human life. However, in order for Me to be able to manifest Myself to My Creation and elsewhere in infinite varieties, manners and ways, it was necessary and vital for Me to acquire a very unusual and specific nature which has all the prerequisites of having something in its structure and dynamics that would be able to contain all the necessary elements from everything, everyone and everywhere. Such possibilities can only be found in something that occupies the most external of the most external because it is the end product of the creative or pseudo-creative effort. Its nature can be actualized and realized only, and only by the inclusion of all elements representing everyone and everything from everywhere. This is how it is built.

For your information, there is no other physical place, or any other, which would have this ability except human life and what it represents, and planet Zero. The reasons for this situation are in the fact that human life and human nature were fabricated, as you remember, from three contradictory elements: perverted and distorted elements from the life of the positive state and all its aspects; from perverted and distorted animal elements; and from perverted and distorted ideas of the physical elements. Because of this factor, human nature contains, in the ultimate conglomeration of these elements — in a perverted and distorted manner — the potential to represent everything and everyone in the most external of the most external manifestation.

In order to utilize these potentials of human nature and its life, it was necessary, and even absolutely vital, for Me to incarnate into the human life, become a human, experience life as humans do, and by the process of a special procedure, impossible for your human mind to comprehend, to revert it within Me, keep it from being perverted and distorted and make it proper, natural and orderly so that it could be utilized by Me for the purpose for which I acquired it.

So, how does all this relate to your question of My manifesting Myself to My Creation and elsewhere in infinite varieties, manners and ways?

Having this type of human body and the human nature relevant to it, in their purified and freed condition, process and state, it enables Me to appear in a physical and tangible mode, way and manner, which is

relevant to each and every level of My Creation and elsewhere. Such an appearance comes from the position of that element contained in that body, which was extracted from the respective world and its inhabitants.

This process, Peter, how it happens and how the human body and its nature are being utilized in this process, is extremely difficult for the limited human mind to grasp or comprehend. No more can be said about it at this particular time.

Peter: I understand. Intuitively however, I can grasp this process quite well. Now, my second question: It relates to something I heard at the beginning of December, 1998. As You know, at that time, I was mandated to take some seminars required by law for the purpose of renewing my professional license in the State of California. The topic of that seminar was “How to integrate spirituality into psychotherapy” or from our standpoint “pseudo-spirituality.” Most of it related to yoga practices and similar methods of the Indian pseudo-spirituality and to what they teach. The presenters mentioned Christian and Islamic pseudo-spirituality only marginally. At one point during the seminar, one of the presenters mentioned with great elation that a conference was being organized in San Francisco in which the representatives of all existing religions on planet Zero will participate. The purpose of that conference is to disregard all existing differences amongst them, and instead, to find, establish and promote the common ideas, concepts and denominators that exist in all of them. In other words, to unify the purpose and goal for which they were established. Any comment about this particular event?

The Lord Jesus Christ: I am glad, Peter, that you asked this question. It is not by coincidence that this type of conference is being organized at this particular time. It is keyed into the shift that is in the process of occurring. As you know so well, any time that a shift is initiated from the position of the positive state (and for your information, only and only from the position of the positive state such shifts can be initiated — the negative state doesn’t want to change anything), the members of the negative state have to come up with some type of countermeasure in order to protect themselves from the positive influence which that shift imparts upon them. Of course, as you know, Peter, such an influence is not experienced by them as positive but as a very painful and troubling event.

Due to the fact that the negative state’s pseudo-philosophy and pseudo-spirituality are based on differences, contradictions and opposites, and due to the fact that whenever a shift occurs in the positive state and

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

brings its impact into the negative state, exposing this adverse state of affairs in the negative state, its members must come up with something that could successfully block them from the influence of that shift. Finally, at this point in time, they realized that the problem they have in this respect lies in their differences, oppositions and irreconcilable views, opinions, dogmas and principles, upon which, their lifestyle and pseudo-spirituality are founded. So, for the first time, they very clearly recognize that the only way to fight the impact of these shifts, the positive state and its agents in general, is by coming together and doing something about the structure and dynamics of their setup.

On your planet, this state of affairs is reflected in the attempt of all existing religious and spiritualistic trends to forge some kind of unification of their respective systems through their commonalities, rather than differences. This effort has been in motion on their part and on your planet for some time. It is assumed that by accomplishing this, they would be able to win their case against the positive state more successfully. And because the issue here is purely spiritual, it is the religions and their respective sects, as well as various pseudo-spiritual movements, that they are utilizing for this purpose. I can assure you, Peter, and all who read these words, that this is one of the most important means for the negative state to completely pseudo-win on your planet.

So, what is going to happen or is already happening? First of all, in order to establish some common ground for all these religions for the purpose of their pseudo-unification, they will need — and they already do — to redefine the conceptualization of My True Nature and any of My Words in My Old, as well as, in My New Revelation. As you know, Peter, the major stumbling block for most of those religions is Me and Who I truly am. Not many of them, or not even all of them, acknowledge My Divinity. They have problems accepting the fact that I am either the true and only God or the only begotten Son of God — as the majority of Christians believe (although nowadays not all of them believe this to be so). Because of that, they need to come up with a compromise about this issue, proclaiming that, yes, I did exist but I was either a common, enlightened man or a prophet comparable to Mohammed in the Islamic religion. Now, you can build a real unification on this kind of compromise. But at the same time, this compromise totally destroys any semblance of anything truly spiritual, because it is totally and completely false. If you build something on falsities, you establish a purely negative lifestyle, that doesn't contain even one grain of anything from the positive state. By establishing such a compromise, a total pseudo-victory is accomplished on your planet.

Another compromise which is being reached by these religions and all their respective sects and pseudo-spiritual trends, is to admit or accept the pseudo-fact that whatever is written in the Gospels, for example, or in The New Revelation, was — in the majority of that written material — not from Me, but added by My disciples, or in the case of My New Revelation, by its current transmitter — Peter. Oh, yes, of course, in their effort to compromise, they will admit that I did say some of it but that most of it, I didn't say. Did you notice how this concept was propagated not that long ago in an article in ***Time*** magazine? They put the words that I allegedly didn't say in parenthesis and those that I allegedly did say, outside parenthesis. If you carefully analyze and compare the words that, according to them, I said, with those that I didn't, you will notice that the most important and spiritually impactful words are put in parenthesis, and those that are the least important and almost insignificant, are outside of them. So, what is it that I actually said? Nothing of great revolutionary importance or significance. Doesn't it prove that I am not God or the only begotten Son of God? And they will compromise in many other similar issues so they can accomplish their goal in this respect.

Do you see from this explanation how the negative state is being condensed and is concentrating on its pseudo-victory on this planet? It is almost there.

Peter: Yes, clearly. How do the pseudo-creators and their minions, and the renegades and their minions fit into all of these pseudo-endavors?

The Lord Jesus Christ: In essence, it is the renegades and their minions that are the most intensely involved in this effort. Besides what was said about it just above, there is another point to this effort. It relates to the renegades' takeover of some regions on planet Zero (as indicated to you in one of the previous Dialogs). Their pseudo-unification in this respect is not only for the purpose of bringing about their pseudo-spiritual victory, but to also destroy the power of the pseudo-creators and take over from them not only this planet, but the entire Zone of Displacement and all the Hells. Because one of the major strongholds of the pseudo-creators has always been the religions and their widespread pseudo-diversity, the renegades are targeting these religions by trying to eliminate this pseudo-diversity through the process of pseudo-unification and a compromise in their major dogmas.

The pseudo-creators have no interest in this process per se, because, first of all, in their opinion, it is the best possible way to keep people in darkness regarding the truth; and secondly, they need to scientifically

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

experiment with all modes of diverse, irreconcilable religious views, dogmas, ideas and philosophies, in order to see whether there is any specific religion or sect or spiritual trend that could give them the right answers to their most fundamental question; and whether a lifestyle could be established, based on such a religion, or whatever, in this respect, that would lead to the acceptance of the statistical Null-Hypothesis, claiming that there is no Absolute Truth and that, therefore, everything is relative and transient, making life possible without The Lord Jesus Christ and His/Her True Spiritual Principles or with false gods — them, and their pseudo-spiritual principles.

If the renegades could succeed in their effort in this respect, they would undermine one of the most potent tools of the pseudo-creators for accomplishing their goal. In that case, they could never get the right answers, or any answers, to their inquiry. They would become totally impotent, an easy subject for takeover by the renegades. If this were to happen, then the negative state could not be eliminated because the answers to those vital questions could never be received. And of course, Peter, this is exactly the goal of the renegades — to assure the existence of the negative state, under their domain and rule, to eternity.

You see, Peter, at the time of My First Coming on your planet, the pseudo-creators had already experimented with and established a pseudo-unified spiritual movement, for the purpose of studying its development in order to ascertain whether the answers to their questions could be derived from such an effort. As you know, at that time only two major religious trends existed. One was the so-called gentile/pagan type of pseudo-spirituality reflected in all those nations that existed at that time in many clusters and communities; the other was found among the Jewish nation, rooted in Moses' Laws.

However, if you carefully analyze the dogmas of these religions, you will see clearly that they all were based on one unifying principle — the well-defined rituals and sacrifices of animals and, sometimes, even humans. So, after studying these established pseudo-unified procedures for a while, it became obvious to the pseudo-creators that from the standpoint of their scientific and logical approach, whatever outcome they offered, it became circular, leading nowhere. The Null-Hypothesis, based on them, could be neither accepted nor rejected.

Because of the circularity of their conclusions, the pseudo-creators found themselves at a dead end. At this point, they needed something new and different. As you remember from My New Revelation, it was at that point of their experimentation that they conceived the idea of going backward

in time before My Creation was created in order to approach the whole subject and object of their inquiry from an entirely different angle. From the standpoint of the spiritual and physical laws, such travel could not have been permitted by Me because it would have entailed such havoc in the time-space and condition-state continuum that it would have nullified all possibilities for any type of creative effort to take place — forever to eternity. For the sake of all of those who were already created, as well as for the sake of the pseudo-creators themselves and their possible salvation, it was necessary to prevent this travel from happening.

My birth on planet Zero was a preventive measure from this ever happening. The reason why it was on this planet and into human life was because only from that position could I accomplish My goal without annihilating anyone or anything in the process, due to My Absolute State and Condition. Human life gave Me the possibility to do that from the relative condition, the condition in which all experimentation has been taking place by the pseudo-creators and in the condition that the pseudo-creators were themselves. As you remember, a valid, effective and lasting change in such a condition can only take place from its own state. Any other state would have no impact on it. It would simply fail.

So, the pseudo-creators were locked up for a very long time from the standpoint of your planetary time. In the meantime, the rulers of the Hells who succeeded the pseudo-creators, and who are now called renegades, continued in their effort to establish the dominance of the negative state on planet Zero and elsewhere. One such effort led to further diversions, schisms, divisions and factions within the various religious systems on planet Zero and elsewhere in the Zone of Displacement. As you know, Peter, following My departure from your planet, My disciples, and especially Paul, established the so-called Christian religion; in addition to the existing ones (especially Buddhism and Hinduism). Later on, the Islamic religion was established. However, shortly after they were established, the negative state succeeded in perverting them in such a manner that anything positive and good in them gradually eroded so that at the present time nothing of that remains in them.

When the pseudo-creators were released from their lockup, they were almost shocked out of their wits, so-to-speak, to discover how many new religions, sects and various spiritualistic trends had appeared on planet Zero. They were even more shocked to realize that My New Revelation was in the process of being transmitted, which revealed all these facts for the first time in human history; as well as the secret of their own work

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

and what they did with humans. So, they decided to observe and watch these two parallels very carefully. One, they decided to follow the development of all those numerous religions and their various sects and trends in order to see whether they will be able to establish a lifestyle, based on any of them, that would lead toward the answers to their questions; two, after they discovered the existence of My New Revelation, its Updates, and now these Dialogs, and the life of those who read them and follow their principles, and who differ so much from anyone else, they decided to find out whether or not they represent the true answers to their questions.

These present efforts of the pseudo-creators will lead them to the indisputable conclusions that none of the observed and studied religious systems will be able to answer their questions properly because their methods and conclusions, and the lifestyle they lead, are circular, leading nowhere; and, on the other hand, studying, observing and working together with those who read and practice My New Revelation, its Updates and what is so far contained and will be offered in the upcoming days, months and maybe even years in these Dialogs, will lead them to the inevitable conclusions that they contain all the answers to their questions in an absolute sense. Thus, to their scientific mind, the Null-Hypothesis will be rejected by them. They will wholeheartedly accept the fact that the only Absolute Truth is The Lord Jesus Christ and His/Her Spiritual Principles from Whom all life derives and is made possible.

In the meantime, they will be dealing with the renegades, placing them into the position of recognizing the foolishness of their endeavors and efforts and gradually convincing them to relinquish their position and join the pseudo-creators in building the bridge for converting to the positive state. At that time, the end of the negative state will become eternal reality.

Peter: Thank You very much for this profound explanation. I think I will postpone asking my third question to the Twelfth Dialog.

The Lord Jesus Christ: It is a wise decision. Go and rest now, Peter. Thank you for your effort in recording these dialogs and disseminating them to those who ask for them or who are eager to get them.

Twelfth Dialog

January 6, 1999

Peter: You know, it is interesting to notice how things work. Yesterday evening I received an E-mail letter from one of our people in Slovakia who raises some of his concerns about the alleged behavior of some other person from the Slovak group of the readers and practitioners of Your New Revelation; and who is also asking for clarification on the use of homeopathic means in treating physical problems; and on the use of similar, non-traditional alternative (alternative to traditional medicine) approaches to healing. Then, early this morning, when I fired up my computer and checked my E-mail, I found our Rosemarie's message, asking the same type of question. She responded to the reading of our Eleventh Dialog. In the Slovak letter, the issue is also raised about the possible spiritual danger of practicing numerology, palm reading, astrology and similar methods so widely practiced and believed by many humans on this planet. Can You offer us some clarifications and comments on these two issues?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Gladly, Peter. Let us take them one by one. First, we will discuss the issue of homeopathy and other alternative means for the cure of your physical ills and problems (such as acupuncture, hypnosis, chiropractic, herbs, vitamins and minerals, etc.) and then we'll address the more spiritually dangerous issue of utilizing psychic readings by whatever means or methods.

In a general sense, any treatment, alternative to the traditional medical treatment is neutral from the spiritual standpoint. It is neither positive nor negative. The neutrality of its condition is nullified by the purpose for which it is being prescribed and utilized; and by the attitude of the individual who seeks out such alternative treatment. The problem only begins with the attempt to generalize its utilization, claiming that it is either a cure for all ills, or applicable for all to utilize without discrimination. A more dangerous problem behind such methods is in their pseudo-spiritual background. We shall speak about it in a moment.

In a general sense, there is no difference between the traditional medical approach and the alternative medical approach. Both approaches prescribe a certain type of treatment either by some kinds of medications or other procedures. Both of them are from the externals to the externals. They either work or they don't. And no one knows why, in some cases, they work, and in others, they don't. And in some cases their application and/or taking may kill you. Take for example, the very common and

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

useful treatment by antibiotics. For some people it can be a physical life-saving means. For others, allergic to it, it can cause severe reactions that may lead to physical death. The same things can and may happen with homeopathic prescriptions or with taking herbs, vitamins and minerals. In some cases they work beautifully, in some, they don't do anything, they are harmless; and in other cases they can be harmful.

So, as you see from these facts, there is no simple conclusion that would make us comfortable proclaiming that one method is better than the other, or that some methods can be used indiscriminately by all, because it would accomplish or give them exactly the same results. What does this conclusion tell you? The simple answer to this question is in the spiritual fact that whatever is proper, right, useful and beneficial for one individual, may or may not be necessarily proper, right, useful and beneficial for another; and in some cases, that which can be a life-saving means for one person, can be deadly for another.

Why is this so? And here comes the most important spiritual factor that none of these methods are taking into consideration — the personal, individualized and unique choices that each individual made in this respect, either before entering the pseudo-life on this planet or in the process of their choice-making decisions while living here. How much do you or can you know about all those myriad reasons why anyone is in the situation that he/she is in, at each fraction of a moment in time? What is it that predisposes each individual to experience this or that and to respond so well to one approach and totally fail, or even get killed, by some other?

The answers to all such questions tie-in with each individual's purpose and assignment for participating in human life on planet Zero. As you know, such purpose and assignment is known only to Me and, to some extent, to the individual's Spiritual Mind. Because of this important spiritual factor, there can never be anything in human life, or anywhere else for that matter, that could be effectively applicable and utilizable by all for resolving any of their problems, no matter what they might be.

Because of this factor, it is extremely spiritually inappropriate and even dangerous to go around trying to convince other people to take homeopathic medications, or undergo some other type of treatment method (such as for example, acupuncture, chiropractic, hypnosis, biofeedback, herbs, vitamins and minerals, or any other traditional medication and/or procedure, etc.) only because it works for you or someone else, as the alleged behavior of that Slovak gentleman indicates. To do that is spiritual arrogance. By doing that, you are setting yourself

up to become a target for the forces of the negative state. Of course, before making any final conclusions about whether the allegation about that gentleman in Slovakia has any objective merit, it would be prudent to hear his side of the story. However, such things can happen even amongst you. For that reason, we are treating this issue in the framework of — what if it happens?

In this respect, it is the responsibility of each individual to determine, through his/her intuition or personal feelings, which method of treatment would be the best to utilize for each particular problem that he/she might have. For you, as agents of My positive state, it is advisable to go inward, by whatever means or ways that are available to you, or simply rely on your intuition, to determine from Me in you, if any of these methods would be applicable, effective and useful for you personally. Don't be surprised however, if in some cases it is indicated to you that none of those methods, either traditional or alternative, would work. In that case, some other spiritual factors are involved that require you to go through the entire process of experiencing your condition until it runs its course — without any outside intervention.

Peter: What about the spiritual means for healing? Or what they call the 'mind over matter' type of healing?

The Lord Jesus Christ: I am glad you asked this question, Peter. At one point in time, such methods were feasible and appropriate. However, as you know, with all those shifts in the spiritual climate that have been going on to this date, everything has changed. Don't forget for a minute what you were told some time ago; (Update 3 in the ***Corollaries...***) that all the methods and practices of humans had been totally and completely subsumed by the forces of the negative state. There is an important reason why this takeover was permitted by Me. Let Me illustrate this situation on an example from your own experience, Peter. As you know, several years ago, in the process of developing the principles of spiritual hypnosis, and later on, the principles of spiritual self-hypnosis, as reflected in your books, you were able to apply this method on yourself very effectively. During many years of practicing your mind control, you were able to instantly stop any bleeding from your cuts; remove within a few minutes any symptoms of a cold or flu setting in; to prevent yourself from any skin burns when you were sunbathing in temperatures exceeding 100 degrees Fahrenheit; and you were able to utilize it for many other similar conditions. For many years you would never get physically or mentally ill. But, at one point in time, in the process of transmitting ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***, you suddenly noticed that your methods of control were no longer working.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

For a long period of time, you couldn't figure out why this was happening to you. Initially, you didn't discern that the gradual process of the takeover by the forces of the negative state of all methods and practices was taking place on planet Zero, and because of that, this would have resulted in the danger that the transmitted New Revelation could be corrupted.

So, at that point, you were advised to switch to the typical external means of dealing with these types of problems, specifically to taking vitamins and minerals. You even tried all kinds of herbs but, in your case, they didn't work. This advice and the need to follow it, reflected the shift on your planet from the inner, spiritual means to the more external physical means. Or, on a higher level of understanding, it reflected the process of shifting the battle from the spiritual and intermediate realm, to planet Zero and the Zone of Displacement. In other words, everything was shifted to the externals. For this reason, it became proper and right to utilize external means to deal with external problems. Under these conditions, the spiritual means could not work any longer, especially for you and for some other agents of the positive state.

It is a different story with the agents of the negative state and humans proper. Due to the fact that all methods and practices in this respect were taken over by the forces of the negative state, at the present time, such methods and practices are being utilized by them to corrupt, mislead and influence people on this planet. And here comes the spiritual danger of using these methods, as well as the alternative medicine approach in healing, especially for the agents of My positive state and also for everyone else on your planet. The forces of the negative state are utilizing these methods and practices in such a manner so as to attach various pseudo-spiritualistic philosophies, ideas and practices to them which they attempt, in many instances very successfully, to impose on all those who utilize such means for a cure. The rationale behind that is as follows: If those methods and practices are working, if homeopathic medicine, vitamins, minerals, chiropractic, hypnosis, acupuncture, acupressure, yoga, and all other similar methods are working so well, then, what they proclaim in their philosophy or religion or spiritual claims must also be correct and right. Otherwise, their suggested methods of cure would not be working.

Based on this factor, many humans on your planet converted to their pseudo-spiritual cause and became their ardent followers. Thus, they fell into the trap of the forces of the negative state, set for them in such a convenient and convincing manner. Is there any better way to convince someone of the rightness of their pseudo-spiritual cause than by giving

them a means for effectively dealing with their physical problems? For the agents of My positive state, the use of such methods and practices — if not careful, and if their use is not corroborated and endorsed by Me through their intuitive discernment — may very well open the doors to the forces of the negative state and cause many serious spiritual and other types of problems. It is not easy to avoid falling into their trap if you have such convincing proof that their approach may be working so well.

Don't forget please, that the forces of the negative state took over the methods and practices that were utilized by *the positive state*. This is the reason **why** they are working. On the other hand, because of this factor, the positive state, likewise, had to change its own procedures in this respect by switching to a purely individualized and personalized approach which is totally and completely outside the reach of the forces of the negative state. This is the reason why it was emphasized above that it is up to each individual to determine, by his/her intuitive discernment, which method or practice would be beneficial for him/her. This is the proper spiritual way for all of you, My agents.

For that reason, going around and trying to convince others, or even impose on them, to use something that is working so well for you, but may or may not be proper and useful for others, is an extremely dangerous thing to do. If you were to do that, as the alleged behavior of the gentleman in Slovakia indicates, you would be playing into the hands of the negative state. The consequences of such behavior could be very unpleasant. You could easily become a propagator of the methods and practices of the forces of the negative state. In that case, you would become their slaves, receding from the principles of My New Revelation. Be aware and beware of this extreme danger!

However, there is another point to the fact of why the spiritual means are not working any longer for some of My agents when applied to the treatment of physical ills and/or problems; or why some of you are unable to experience a formal state of inwardness and be aware of My presence within you and the presence of the members of your spiritual family. This factor relates to the illustration and demonstration of your personal life in your position as My agents.

The present spiritual climate and state of affairs, as related to the current shift, requires your total and complete independence from any imposing factors, either from within or from without. Especially the imposing factor is the problem — in the view of the negative state. It is easy to believe in anything which is contained in My New Revelation, in

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

its Updates, and now in these Dialogs, if you can see Me, hear Me, communicate with Me and/or the members of your spiritual family; and if you could accomplish many things in your life, based on your experiences with such methods.

The forces of the negative state are saying: “Why don’t You cut off all the ability of some of Your agents to go inward or to communicate with You or to effectively utilize any of Your methods for dealing with their problems, whatever they may be? Let us see, if only by reading and applying the principles of Your New Revelation — without any backing by Your visual or any other type of input, or without any effective response during the application of Your spiritual methods, they continue to be Your loyal and faithful servants — we’ll see whether they will stick it out with Your New Revelation and whatever is written in it.” At the same time, the forces of the negative state are providing you with their own methods and practices that could be very effective in dealing with whatever it is that you need to deal with. And they say, “Now we shall see what or who is more effective — the reading and practicing of Your New Revelation without any apparent impact and visible and immediate response or support from You and Your positive state; or applying our methods and practices which can have an immediate effect and result on their lives. We shall see how long their loyalties to You and to Your New Revelation will last under these conditions.”

This is a crucial issue for all of you, My agents connected to My New Revelation. Agreeing to illustrate and demonstrate to the forces of the negative state your ability, willingness, determination and resolve, by your own free will, choice and decision, not to succumb to the great temptation and charms of the negative state, no matter what; no matter whether you have or don’t have any contact or input from Me in your state of inwardness, by whatever means or modes; and that you are totally content, happy and joyous to simply rely on the logic and beauty of that which is contained in My New Revelation, its Updates and these Dialogs; and your determination and willingness to live in accordance with its principles, regardless of any external benefits and/or rewards; doing so or being so, solely for the sake of the principles themselves, because it is the right and proper thing to do. By doing all that and by being that way, you are building the most beautiful, most permanent and most solid foundation, on which, will be accomplished the conversion — to the positive state and to My cause — of all agents and followers of the negative state. This is the most beautiful and elating thing to do.

Peter: What about the allegations that the person in question has reverted to his old practices of numerology and reading people’s palms?

This brings us to the question of any possible spiritual values in such practices.

The Lord Jesus Christ: First of all, from the onset of the answer to this question: No true spiritual values exist in such practices. They are of the negative state's nature. Not only that no spiritual values exist in them, but they can become very dangerous. To read people's palms, to make conclusions about their nature, character, personality and/or about their future; to cast horoscopes; to read the cards or tarots for them; to practice numerology; or any other similar methods, so admired and revered by the forces of the negative state and many humans, is to interfere with My Divine Providence; with their free will and choice; with their destiny, assignment and mission; and to impose on them something that was not meant for them to know, or to have, or to be. These methods are one of the favorite tools in the hands of the forces of the negative state for the purpose of trying to alter or change the destiny of the humans who are seeking such readings; for imposing their own plan on them of how the life of such a person should proceed from then on, thus, ultimately making him/her their own slave, who carries out their bidding.

What happens in cases like that is that the forces of the negative state are able, in some instances, to catch such a person in their trap by arranging things to happen exactly the way they were predicted. They are also able to read out such person's past events, impressing him/her to the point that he/she starts to believe in everything that is indicated to him/her in such readings. Once he/she starts to believe them, his/her future actions are determined, not by his/her own freedom of choice, or the original agreement, but by predicted, and therefore, expected events. He/she becomes his/her own self-fulfilling prophecy. Because of these facts, if there is any truth in what is being related to you, Peter, from Slovakia; or if any one of you, anywhere, still practices these types of methods; or lets others do readings for them; then he/she completely and totally misunderstood the principles of My New Revelation. In that case, you would not be led by My Divine Providence, or from your own within, or by your own freedom of choice and free will, but by someone or something else from the externals in the manner and way of inevitability and fate. In that case, you have succumbed to the negative state. You have lost your trust and confidence in Me and in My ability to lead you by freedom of choice and by the events of our mutual agreement.

Of course, before the availability of The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ in general (in all its sources), the situation was somewhat different. Such methods and practices were tolerated and permitted to flourish. At that time, it gave some humans a little bit of awareness of

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

the existence of a spiritual reality that was lacking in their mind. Thus, it provided an assurance for them that life is not limited only to that which is presented to them by science or the blind faith of their respective religious systems, but that a tangible proof exists for something that transcends anything offered to them by the conventional sources of knowledge. This is the reason, Peter, that you were allowed to study those methods and use them very effectively and successfully. However, once My New Revelation became available to you and to all, it became obvious to you very quickly that such methods and practices were no longer tenable because they had become the dangerous domain of the negative state, through which, it interferes with the workings of My Divine Providence. At that very moment, you threw them out of your life, never returning back to them. They served their purpose and fulfilled their use.

Peter: Again, I thank You very much for Your input and explanation of these issues.

Thirteenth Dialog

January 7, 1999

Peter: Before proceeding to any of my own questions, I would like to ask You if You have anything to add to the content of the previous Dialogs.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, I do and I thank you for giving Me this opportunity to do so. However, before proceeding to make any such needed comments, first, I would like to remind you of what kind of date this is. Today is your birth date. You have been on planet Zero for 65 years. And I would like to take this opportunity to express My personal gratitude, thankfulness and appreciation to you for enduring on this planet up to this day, despite all the turmoil, suffering, tribulation and danger that you have experienced in the process of living here.

You know, Peter, what happened yesterday on the eve of your birthdate is not by coincidence. You were tremendously surprised that when you opened a birth date card from your sister Vera and her daughter — your niece, you found a rather lengthy article from a prominent person in the Czech culture — Karel Pech, titled **‘I am searching for Peter Francuch.’** Mr. Pech, who is 83 years old, and who was a prominent producer, director and actor of many television programs in the former Czechoslovakia, is trying to find you. In that article he reminisces on your encounter, sometime in 1961, at a remote mountain resort, designated for prominent people in the performing arts. You were taken there by your friend, the opera singer, Jan Marik, for a week of rest. At that time, you were very physically ill. It was a respite for you from your lengthy hospitalizations. You, as well as your friends, and even your treating physicians, expected you to live only for a few months, if not for a few weeks. Little did you know at the time that, not only would you survive your ordeal, but you would enter the famous Charles University and get your doctorate in psychology, psychopathology and history of philosophy, becoming a clinical psychologist, escaping from Czechoslovakia through Austria to West Germany and asking for and receiving political asylum at the United States Embassy in Frankfurt, then arriving in this country and, despite working as a clinician in various hospitals, prisons and institutions with the mentally ill, criminally insane and alcohol and drug addicts, you would become the transmitter of My New Revelation, contained in your eleven books, and now in these Dialogs, which can be considered to be your 12th book.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

In his article, Mr. Pech goes on to describe, in very impressive and detailed language, the ordeal that you experienced during your life in the Soviet Union — as told to him by your friend Jan Marik, in your presence. You were introduced to Mr. Pech as a philosopher who got his ‘degree’ in a Soviet concentration camp, which you considered to be your true life university. Of course, being 83 years old, and being that the encounter in question happened 38 years ago, Mr. Pech’s recollection of those events is somewhat distorted, spotty and imprecise. But that’s not the issue. The issue is the general idea of what happened then and why it is brought to your attention at this particular time. So, in order to test whether you were a true philosopher or not, being that at the time you didn’t have any formal education, he asked you to explain to him the difference between the philosophies of Aristotle and that of Plato’s. According to him, you presented him with a half hour lecture on that topic, which he recorded on tape. (Can you imagine the type of tape recorders that existed at that time?) You have no recollection of that particular lecture; but, for your information, it did happen, and Mr. Pech does have a tape of your prolific lecture.

Peter: You see, this is the real problem. How do I know that, being 65 years old, my own memory about anything that happened in my life is not a fantasy or distortion?

The Lord Jesus Christ: You don’t. But this has always been a problem with you. This is the reason that, very rarely, have you liked to talk about the details of your life or the dates when it happened and how long it lasted because you have never been sure of whether what you tell people about yourself is true, a fantasy or a distortion. You are almost ashamed and embarrassed to talk about yourself. Your problem, Peter, has always been that you underestimated yourself, belittled yourself, put yourself down and considerably diminished the importance of your life events. And yet they are all an integral part of My New Revelation, reflecting the history of someone who was constantly harassed, many times at the brink of death; many times restricted; many times in despair, depression, misery and suffering; constantly watched and followed by the infamous Soviet KGB, and later on by the Czechoslovak State Secret Security; and similar adverse experiences; but who, nevertheless, despite all that and more, succeeded in bringing about the availability of My New Revelation on planet Zero and elsewhere. Do you realize the importance of all of this? You don’t. But it is time that you do. Don’t forget that your life in the Soviet Union — from the end of 1945 when you were 12 years old, to 1957 when you were allowed to leave that country and join your family in Prague, Czechoslovakia — were years of

lockup, even without an actual lockup in the various Soviet prisons and concentration camps; which lockup happened a little later on. Those were the darkest, cruelest, most miserable years of your life. And Mr. Pech, even with all those distortions in the dates and details of those events, is helping you to reevaluate your life, to look at it with a fresh perspective and significance, from the standpoint of the current monumental shift, which you are in the process of experiencing.

Mr. Pech put out so much energy and effort all these years to find you. And after he succeeded, he is humbly begging you to call him, to let him know that you are still alive and doing well. He was very much afraid that because he is 83 years old, he would fail in finding you. So, don't you think that it would be a matter of simple courtesy to pick up your phone and call him, despite the fact that you are reluctant to do so? You are afraid that he will publish another article about you in the Czech and Slovak magazines, or put you on television or something like that. Well, you can always say 'no' if you want to. It is your prerogative.

Peter: I am sorry. You are very right. Even now, I am embarrassed that You are talking about me and not about some important issues of a spiritual nature, beneficial to all.

The Lord Jesus Christ: But, don't you think that talking about you is a part of talking about important spiritual issues that could be, in some way or another, beneficial to all who would be privileged to read these Dialogs?

Peter: O.K., I surrender. However, I would like us to get back on track and to address the issues that are on Your mind — if You don't mind.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Very well, Peter. You are stubborn regarding the discussion of topics from your personal life. But, to continue with this Dialog. As I mentioned at the beginning, I do have some comments regarding certain ideas conveyed to you in the Tenth and Twelfth Dialogs. Let us begin with the issues of the Twelfth Dialog and following that, we will address the issues of the Tenth Dialog.

At this point you interrupted our dialog and you called Mr. Pech. Do you see what happened? Have you ever heard anyone be so full of happiness, delight, pleasure and joy from hearing your voice and being able to talk with you, to the point that he started to literally cry? And you wanted to prevent him from having such an experience. Tell me, Peter, is it not true, that whenever there is an opportunity, one of your duties and responsibilities, as agents of My positive state, is to bring some joy,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

delight, pleasure and happiness into people's lives — even for a moment, no matter who they are or what they represent; or by what means you can do that for them? After all, there is enough misery, suffering, sadness, turmoil and all other similar adversities on your planet, without you contributing to them. Whenever you can break or interrupt such adversities and bring the sunshine of your positive spiritual self, no matter how, when or under what circumstances, you do that. By doing that, you are bringing into their life, for that one beautiful moment, the nature of My positive state. In other words, you are bringing Me into their life, as the only source of happiness, joy, delight, pleasure and all other felicities that are contained in Me in the absolute sense.

Peter: Yes, I see it clearly, following my telephone conversation with Mr. Pech. And I am humbly asking for Your forgiveness for my reluctance and stubbornness in this respect. Also, I am asking for Your help in breaking my aversion to talking with people on the phone.

The Lord Jesus Christ: I gladly forgive and will help you. Now, to the mentioned issues: Just a brief reminder regarding the treatment of human ills by whatever method — traditional, conventional alternative or unconventional. This is a reminder: Whatever method you choose to apply in your life — whenever there is a need for it, if you get good results from it, because of that, that result stems from the positive state, thus, in an ultimate sense, it is the result of My intervention. I use such external means to cause your cures. Don't forget that I work in many different ways, utilizing many different methods to accomplish My goals in the process of treating people and help them whenever they ask for My help. So, all those methods and professionals, as well as paraprofessionals that are using their respective methods, regardless of who they are, how pseudo-spiritual or non-spiritual they are, regardless whether they are good or bad — by your definition of what good and bad is, they can all be a tool in My hands to accomplish such goals. So, neither overestimate nor underestimate such methods. As always, keep your mind open.

If you look at such methods in this properly spiritual way, if you utilize them with Me in mind, asking for My influence and My input into those methods so that they are effective in their therapeutic properties, you are nullifying any spiritual danger of being contaminated, polluted or influenced by any negative pseudo-spiritual philosophies, or no philosophies at all, that are behind them.

Peter: What about the good results of such methods with either the agents of the negative state or humans who follow various pseudo-spiritual trends propagated by their practitioners?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Results of that nature are still by My permission. It is the impact of My Mercy and Forgiveness that constantly radiate into the entire being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. Don't forget the following important fact: By constantly radiating My Mercy and Forgiveness, everyone and everything is sustained alive and functional. Should these be lacking or stop radiating from Me, not one sentient entity, and not one respective environment in which sentient entities reside, wherever and whenever it may be, could continue in their function for a second. The reason for this fact can be found in the nature of the structure and dynamics of all sentient entities. It stems from and is dependent on their relative condition. Because of their relativity, the life of all sentient entities — no matter where or when, no matter whether this factor is acknowledged or not by them — is fully dependent on My Absolute Being and Absolute Existence. In the condition of their relativity, very often, they fail to acknowledge this fact. This is especially true regarding many humans and everyone in the Hells and in the entire Zone of Displacement. Objectively speaking, everyone's life depends on acknowledging this Absolute Truth. If this is so, then everyone who does not confess or accept this truth should instantaneously die. However, the unceasingly and constantly radiating sphere of my all-encompassing Mercy, Forgiveness, and **especially My Absolute Compassion**, prevents them from this terrible destiny. They continue to live.

From that sphere of Mine, the negative agents and humans who don't acknowledge this fact, very often derive a positive response during the application of various methods of healing. However, because this positive response is either not internalized by them or, in most instances, they attribute it to the wrong source, it doesn't have a lasting and eternal effect, as is the case with those who acknowledge this fact and attribute it to Me. In that case, either during their lifetime in the negative state or on planet Zero, or after they transcend their current state and/or place, the spiritually corresponding factors which caused any such condition or problem in the first place, will flare up to their fullest possible extent. They will still have to deal with it — no matter what. Does this answer your question, Peter?

Peter: Yes, fully. Thank You very much.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

The Lord Jesus Christ: In that case, let us continue. The second issue that needs to be urgently brought out is the serious concerns that you raised about some statements in the Tenth Dialog. The concerns are as follows: What happens if some readers of that particular Dialog will recognize themselves as the ones who have the problems of keeping their promises, etc., as described in detail in the Tenth Dialog? They could be hurt by that statement. As a result of that, they could become bitter and stop communicating with you. These are the concerns you have. Are these legitimate concerns?

If you carefully reread the Tenth Dialog, its statements in that respect are made in the most loving, wise, considerate and compassionate manner. They are stated for the sole purpose of bringing those types of problems to their attention so that they are given the opportunity to work on them and to do something about them, because they are inconsistent with the nature of the positive state or with being My agents, connected to My New Revelation. This is a very important issue, Peter. Don't forget the kind of times in which you are living. These are times of tremendous changes and shifts. Everyone, and especially you, connected to My New Revelation, have to establish a special type of position, that determines who you are, why you are the way you are and where you are on the road of spiritual progression and manifesting the life of the positive state while living in the midst of the negative state. The final decisions have to be made in many aspects of your life. The reaffirmation and reconfirmation of your loyalties and preferences have to be firmly established. If you are behind in this task, you need to catch up.

The reminder in the Tenth Dialog is almost a last-ditch opportunity, so-to-speak, while living on this planet, to amend your ways, to make necessary corrections in the mode of your behavior and attitude, to establish your priorities, to organize your thoughts, feelings, will, intentions and motivation; to look upon yourself and to make a final decision on which way you want to go; and to recognize that you are unique individuals before Me. By doing just that, you are being differentiated from those who don't recognize their mistakes or their negative ways in whatever mode or aspects of their lives they are manifested. This differentiation is a very crucial factor during the current shift. In some ways it can be compared to the Passover in Old Egypt. When the 'Great Tribulation' — the pseudo-winning of the negative state on your planet — strikes, you will be recognized as agents of My positive state by those who will initiate and execute that strike, and they will bypass you.

Taking these important factors into consideration, it would be very spiritually dangerous and inappropriate to make any changes in the Tenth Dialog or delete anything from it for the purpose of appeasing those who might think that it speaks about them — even if it is done only for the sake of those few who might be in that position and for no one else. Should they be offended by it, well, it is their choice and decision to respond in such a negative and inappropriate way. If they reject you and do not want to continue to associate with you, whom are they really rejecting? You?, or Me and My Words, which I spoke in response to your question? Do you want to take away the opportunity from them to reject Me and My Words? Don't they have the right and privilege to do so? Or do you want to deprive them of the greatest possible opportunity to amend their ways and to be thankful and grateful to Me and to you for bringing those issues to their attention? How do you know if the reminder of the Tenth Dialog is not their last opportunity, while on this planet, to change and to become My loyal and faithful servants and your best possible friends and supporters?

However, let us assume for a moment that they'll get offended and stop communicating with you or stop being a part of your life in accordance with the principles of My New Revelation. Such a decision would only mean that they have already fulfilled their obligation and agreement in this respect and that their continuation with My New Revelation and with you would no longer be useful, desirable, profitable or spiritually appropriate. Thus, it might constitute, at this point in time, even a certain degree of danger for their, as well as your, physical and spiritual life. Don't forget please, that even if they fall away, as you would perceive it, it would only be on a temporary basis — until the end of the negative state or even sooner. After all, remember what was indicated to you in Update 15? No one is ever lost, even the pseudo-creators and their renegades. And how would you know if their so-called falling away is not needed for some of their own important spiritual reasons? Or if the Tenth Dialog is not a means by which that so-called falling away is triggered? Do you see what I mean?

Peter: Very clearly. Thank You for this reminder. There is one more question that I need to ask. It was posed by Thomas Oudal who lives in Texas. He asked: How is the issue of Your Mercy and Forgiveness applicable to those in the Hells, who don't address You in Your New Nature as The Lord Jesus Christ, which is the requirement to be saved from the Hells, as indicated in Your New Revelation, but who turn themselves to some kind of God, asking Him for mercy and forgiveness?

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

The Lord Jesus Christ: As you remember from My New Revelation, after it was transmitted, many outposts were established throughout the Hells which were staffed by My agents, specially trained and equipped for that very purpose. Whenever anyone there turns himself/herself to God, asking for mercy and forgiveness, at that moment, a staff member from My outposts appears to them and instructs them on My New Nature and how it can help them to receive My Mercy and Forgiveness and get them out of their respective Hell. As you see, all necessary means were provided for everyone in the Hells in order to give them the opportunity for such a conversion.

Peter: Thank You very much. Is there anything else that You would like to discuss today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: No, Peter, it is sufficient for today. We can resume our dialogs either tomorrow, if feasible, or the next day. You will know when. You do need to take care of some other business and you do need to write a letter to Mr. Pech as you promised him in your phone conversation. So, in the meantime, have a nice day.

Fourteenth Dialog

January 8, 1999

Peter: For some time now I've been pondering on the effectiveness of punishment and retribution as a means to deter criminal or any other type of evil, bad and inappropriate behavior. May I ask You to elaborate further on this subject? After all, if, let us say, a negative person welcomes punishment, pain, retribution, or whatever in this respect, because it is a pleasurable experience for him/her and even seeks them out consciously or unconsciously, what is the use of applying them in cases like that? On the other hand, what would be really effective in changing that type of adverse behavior?

The Lord Jesus Christ: This is a very good question, Peter. Let us discuss it a little bit deeper than we did previously. Take these factors into consideration: Since when have punishment, retribution, and similar methods, ever really changed anyone? Not only they don't change anyone, but anyone with that kind of negative nature becomes even more negative, bitter, resentful, full of vengeance, murderous drive, rage and similar negative emotions and thoughts. Oh, yes, in order to avoid punishment and/or prison, while they are living in the human life, (at this moment, we are not talking about this type of situation in the Hells), they may pretend that they changed and receded from their criminal or negative behavior. But don't forget for a minute that punishment, retribution and similar methods are totally and completely impositional. Because of that, no internal change takes place where it counts and where it effectively causes behavior alteration. Take, for example, an abused child's behavior. From your own clinical practice, from the numerous cases you've dealt with during your many years of work in the mental health field, you saw very clearly that the abused becomes an abuser. This is a clinical fact, recorded in all your psychiatric textbooks. Why is it so? Because when you are physically, mentally or in any other way, abused, you have no choice in the matter but to internalize it and identify yourself with that type of behavior. In that case, you will come to the inevitable conclusion that such a mode of treating people is the normal state of affairs in human life. The problem with this type of abusive treatment is that it shuts the door to any other aspects of the abused person's mind, putting him/her into the position of having no further choice but to become either mentally ill, developing some type of personality disorder or dissociative identity disorder or psychosis, or, as it happens in most instances, to become an abuser himself/herself.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

From these facts, and numerous others, you can clearly see that punishment and retribution have no positive spiritual value and are utilized only in the negative state to make people more negative. Also, punishment and retribution are inherent in the structure and dynamics of the negative state in order to prevent the discovery of other modes — that could really be permanently effective — of removing the negative behavior. The reason for this fact is that punishment and retribution are imposed from the externals to the externals. Nothing of an internal nature is involved in this process. The only method that can work in this respect is if it is initiated in the internals solely by internal means. Unfortunately, in your typical human mind, you demand, expect and want people to be punished for whatever they did to you or to others.

But what are internal means? Let us take someone in the Hells who experiences punishment, pain, suffering, retribution and similar emotions as pleasurable and desirable. Obviously, such methods would not produce any changes in such a person. Not only that, but such a person would become more negative, more evil and more cunning in order to deserve more ‘rewards.’ So, what do you do with a person like that? What is available to Me or to My agents that would be effective in changing the behavior of such a person? Neither punishment nor retribution nor any other impositional methods are applicable in our case because they are not of the nature of the positive state. As pointed out above, they are all external methods that don’t work. So, what do we do in this case? How do we approach it?

This is a very crucial question because it leads to the very clear indication of how the negative state can be permanently eliminated. Obviously, it cannot be eliminated by continuously punishing people because it becomes circular, leading nowhere; or leading to a greater degree of negativity. Logically speaking, if something is negative, using negative means to eliminate it makes it even more negative — instead of eliminating it.

Imagine, if you can, the following scenario: A person is in one of the Hells for committing a most horrible, putrid, vile and despicable murder. At this point in time, he or she is incapable of experiencing any remorse or sorrow for his/her awful deed. No matter how much he/she is punished, he/she doesn’t feel anything internally but only externally because it is coming from the externals; in this case, from someone else. He/she might feel something externally, but such feelings are temporary and not binding, because they soon disappear. In that case he/she reverts to his/her previous behavior. However, put him/her in the situation of the person he/she murdered in such a horrible way. Have him/her experience

all the minutest details of the process of being murdered, or whatever the case may be, not from his/her own self but from the way the murdered person experienced it. Put him/her in the internals of that person and have him/her go through all the steps in all that happened and what was felt at each moment of that process, having him/her experience the entire terror and horror of that process. At the very same moment, simultaneously and synchronously, open in that person the special area which has been completely and totally locked up and inaccessible up to that point, and which is designated in My New Revelation as the ability to choose and change, in which ability is the fullness of My presence.

Inherent in, and an integral part of that ability is the ability to experience compassion, remorse, sorrow and repentance, and all other positive feelings. At that moment, the person in question is able to experience such terrible shame and misery that he/she really wants to die because he/she now knows that he/she deserves a similar or worse fate than what he/she imposed on the murdered person. As he/she is going through these types of experiences, he/she is introduced to the concept of My Unconditional Mercy, Forgiveness and Compassion and is told that they are available to him/her as well. Accepting and applying them has a profound transformative effect on such a person. Gradually, his/her negative aspects are removed and the original positive ones (from the 5% or less) are opened more and more, to the extent that at one point, a complete and total identity change occurs within them. At that moment the old, negative, evil, despicable person really dies and a new, positive, kind and loving one is born.

If you carefully analyze this process, or how the change is accomplished in such a case, you will notice that nothing was imposed on that person from the externals. No punishment, no retribution and no other punitive means were used. Instead, as a matter of justice, that person was put into the internals of the murdered one to show him/her what it is like to go through that type of experience. Under these conditions, with the simultaneous and synchronous opening of the doors to his/her ability to choose and change, he/she is placed into a state of a different choice not available to him/her up to that point because of their closure and identification with the nature of the negative state. Once he/she is able to experience remorse, shame, embarrassment and the need to repent, he/she becomes eligible for My Unconditional Mercy, Forgiveness and Compassion. By asking for them — and in this new condition he/she is able to realize that he/she may and can ask for them by his/her own free will and choice — they are attributed and appropriated to him/her and

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

they become the foundation on which his/her new personality and life are built in a purely positive sense.

These, and similar, methods of converting to the positive state are being utilized by Me and by My agents. In human life, the situation is somewhat different. Don't forget that human life is the epitome of life in the most externals of the most externals. Because of that, while living on planet Zero, and while illustrating and demonstrating the nature of such a pseudo-life to all, the internal methods of deterring negative behavior, whatever it may be, are not applicable in their case. Their position still requires the external means of punishment and retribution, as depicted in their criminal justice system, because, at this point in time, nothing else is available to them.

However, bear in mind that just as their modes of life are temporary and transient, so are the modes of their external punishment and retribution. They don't have a permanent impact on their internals, where it counts. No real change of a permanent and lasting nature ever happens to them. For that reason, in their case, the only change they can experience in this respect is under the influence of the spiritual factors which are available to them in My New Revelation and its Updates, and now in these Dialogs. They may and can read them by external means and, if they choose to apply them in their life, by that choice, their internals are opened by Me, initiating the process of changing and transforming all aspects of their personality from their very internals. The completion of this process is accomplished after they depart from your planet. The reason why this process cannot be completed while they are living on planet Zero, is because they carry the typical human nature within and with them, which impedes the completion of that process by its factor of illustrating and demonstrating the life of the extreme externals.

In all other cases, any changes that take place on planet Zero under any other conditions, are nullified after arriving in the spiritual world because they are only of an external nature. Once there, they have to go through the process described above.

What you have to understand clearly, Peter, and all who read these words, is that the presently occurring shift — which influences all levels of My multiverse, as well as everything and everyone outside of it — indicates and requires that the only impactful and permanent positive changes that could have eternal validity, may occur within any human or any agent of the negative state situated on planet Zero, only by reading, accepting and practicing My New Revelation and all its additions — as recorded in its Updates and these Dialogs.

Everything else, any other methods or means, any pseudo-spiritual movements, presently existing on your planet in such abundant numbers, no matter how nice they look and sound; no matter how positive and good they seem to be; no matter how much they can accomplish or how many miracles they produce; no matter how deep they seem to be, etc.; they are only of an external nature. Their impact is only of a transient and temporary nature. They are incapable of producing any lasting and eternally valid changes and/or transformation. Their influence will fall away the moment their followers arrive in the spiritual world. They are impotent to produce any internal changes. The reason for this statement is in the fact that those methods and means are based either on a distortion of the true spiritual reality, or they are outright falsities. You cannot very well build anything lasting and permanent on something that has no foundation in true reality. If you don't contain any truth within yourself but only distortions and falsities, no real change can take place within you because you are building on something which has no reality in itself and by itself. It is illusory, which falls apart immediately upon realizing that it was distorted and/or false.

As you know, all presently existing religions and their numerous derivatives, all pseudo-spiritual trends existing side by side on your planet, don't know, understand or apprehend the real truth. None of them is aware of the real reasons for the existence of the negative state and human life. They have none or very little notion of how, why, where, under what conditions or for what purpose the negative state and human life were initiated and are in their being and existence (pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, from our standpoint). Their explanations for all of these most important existential occurrences are totally off, having no roots in true reality. Sure, since the time My New Revelation was transmitted, when for the first time such questions were begging to be answered, when its concepts registered in the multiversal consciousness because of its availability and its influence, without being consciously aware of it, suddenly, many started to talk about the fact that humans were created (in our terms — fabricated) by some alien creatures. But what do they know about the pseudo-creators; about My New Nature; of why such things were permitted; what is the outcome of all of this; and of similar important issues? Either nothing, or their knowledge is a total distortion or a total falsity.

Because such proper, appropriate and true knowledge is only contained in the totality of My current New Revelation, it is obvious that only on this totality, anyone of the human stock or of the agents of the negative state, can and may initiate any permanent, lasting and eternal changes,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

which culminate in their total transformation upon their departure from planet Zero and arrival in the spiritual world.

As far as the agents of the positive state and you who are connected to My New Revelation are concerned, the situation is different in this respect. Those of you who have such knowledge and who practice its principles in your life, are in the process of continuously changing and transforming the vestiges of the aspects of your human nature. You are being maintained and updated in your true and original nature as it stems directly from Me. You are outside of the negative state and of the typical human life. Even though you are continuously being influenced adversely by the human nature that is imposed on you by your own choice and agreement with Me, by applying the principles of My New Revelation in your life, that human nature is not attributed and/or appropriated to you. It does not take hold in your internals where it counts. Upon your arrival to the spiritual world, it will fall away.

My other agents on planet Zero who don't know about the existence of My New Revelation are covertly influenced by its availability and they are being protected from falling into the traps of the life so typical to human nature. They intuitively know what is proper and right for them to do and how to live their lives in accordance with My principles. Because of that, upon their arrival to the spiritual world, they will accept My New Revelation with great happiness, joy, delight, pleasure and elation.

However, let us go back to the issue of punishment and retribution. From what was clearly indicated above, such concepts as those, the way they are perceived, understood and utilized by the forces of the negative state and by humans in general, are not only inconceivable in the positive state, but they never even enter anyone's mind. Instead, what you have there is the sphere and atmosphere of unconditional mercy, forgiveness, compassion and empathy which constantly radiate into the entire being and existence. But, in the moment they enter the sphere and atmosphere of the negative state, they are turned into their opposites: mercilessness, unforgiveness, cruelty, rejection, vengeance and retaliation — by the principles of 'an eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth.' At the same time, for those who are in need of punishment and retribution in the typical human sense — to make him/her suffer for his/her crime, or whatever! — the positive sphere and atmosphere of mercy, forgiveness, compassion and empathy, place such a person into the mode of going through exactly the same type of suffering and misery he/she imposed on others in whatever manner or way. Because that suffering and misery are now experienced by him/her, not from his/her own position, state or condition,

(that would be pleasurable!) but from the other person's position or state, the culprit in this case really experiences punishment and retribution in the typical human sense — and not as a pleasurable event.

This setup yields to the necessary justice that needs to be done whenever something evil, bad and negative is committed by anyone. At the same time, after going through this type of punishment and retribution, it places that culprit into the position of a choice to change or not to change his/her behavior, attitude and negative lifestyle. The choice to change causes the door to be opened to his/her ability to change and to choose, resulting in the experience of remorse, sorrow and repentance and, at the same time, enabling him/her to feel the true impact of mercy, forgiveness, compassion and empathy that radiate into him/her. By that factor, these take him/her out of the negative state. The choice not to change places that person into a deeper Hell, where he/she continues in his/her negative behavior, going through the same cycle as described above until he/she realizes the futility of that lifestyle and subsequently makes the right choice.

Peter: Talking about punishment, may I ask You to shed some light on the proper meaning of Your own behavior during Your life on planet Zero, when You drove out of the temple all those who bought and sold in the temple, and overturned the tables of the moneychangers and the seats of those who sold doves?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Certainly, Peter. As you know, at the time of My incarnation on planet Zero, the negative state was prevailing over the positive state. The pseudo-creators and their minions were in full charge and control of both your planet and the entire Zone of Displacement. The temple, or the house of prayer, corresponded at that time to the third level of the spiritual world in the positive state. Let Me explain it: As you know, each world, regardless of what dimension, has its own three levels. The most within or spiritual dimension of that world constitutes its first level; the interior dimension of that world constitutes its second level; and the external dimension of that world constitutes its third level. You can also call these levels the degrees of each respective world. The temple in question, or the house of prayer, corresponded at that time to the third level of the spiritual world. At that time, the formal prayers were required only on that level because of its somewhat external position, relative to the second and first level, respectively. That a commerce was going on in it — selling and buying things, signifies that the third or external level, or degree, of the spiritual world was invaded by the forces of the negative state. Selling doves signifies an attempt by the pseudo-creators to corrupt and to sway the inhabitants of that level

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

or degree to join them in their efforts to proceed with the invasion of the second level and, from that level, on to the first level. My driving them out and overturning their tables and seats indicates the spiritual war that was going on at that level, resulting into throwing out the forces of the negative state from that level and pushing them back to the intermediate world or the world of spirits; and locking up the pseudo-creators. All these events happened at that time and they relate only to that time and the spiritual situation that existed at that time.

Peter: Thank You so much for this explanation and for everything that You conveyed to me in this Dialog.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. It is always a pleasure. And now I would recommend to finish it for today. Please, go and eat something. Your body needs food. Have a very nice day.

Fifteenth Dialog

January 10, 1999

Peter: Good morning, my Lord Jesus Christ and to all who are present.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Good morning to you, Peter; and yes, there are many present with us today — as every time we are dialoging.

Peter: Before proceeding with my question, I would like to ask if You wish to make any comments regarding anything You feel like.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for yielding Me the floor. I would like to make some comments related to your conversation yesterday with Heather Oudal of Rochester, Minnesota and Dan Barba of New York. The first comment is about the E-mail which Dan sent you the other day. It was an Internet news item about some British Church organization in England portraying Me as some kind of revolutionary, portrayed in the image and likeness of the Marxist “Che” Guevara. That church did that comparison in order to attract more humans from its respective community into their parish.

Can you visualize Me as someone like that, full of zealous murderous drive, destruction, burning hate, intolerance and self-righteousness, justifying such pseudo-revolutionary terrorist acts as were committed by Guevara and similar so-called revolutionaries? Portraying Me in such a manner is an integral part of that compromise, of which we were talking about the other day and which is being attempted by all existing religious systems on your planet in order to make Me be like someone I am not and never will be.

If you look at this attempt from the spiritual standpoint, you will notice that such a compromise, if accepted by the majority of believers, will lead them to believe not in Me and My true Nature, but in someone who in reality does not exist. This is exactly the purpose for which such undertakings and efforts are made — to make humans believe in someone or something that do not exist in the true reality of being and existence. In some ways this event only externally confirms the verity of our conversation in this respect.

The topic of yesterday’s conversation with Dan related to a Web page on the Internet developed by some prominent person in the scientific community in which he informs readers about his funding the preparation for the return and welcoming party for humans’ creators

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

with his many millions of dollars. Of course, he doesn't call them pseudo-creators because he is not consciously aware about the spiritual background of the whole process of genetic manipulation and engineering which was adopted by them in the process of fabricating the human race. In order to remind you again, let Me bring the fact to your attention that, before ***Fundamentals of Human Spirituality*** was published, which for the first time in the history of humankind revealed the information about the pseudo-creators and how they fabricated the human race, no one had ever talked about such concepts. Up to that point everyone, or most everyone, was convinced that humans were created either by God, or were the result of an evolutionary development from some kind of cosmic stew that accidentally produced life, culminating in the appearance of humans.

As the content of that book registered in the multiversal consciousness, and as the succeeding books of My New Revelation elaborated on that issue further and in more detail, that information became available to the human sub-consciousness, and from there, it leaked to their obscure awareness. Suddenly a plethora of news and information started to pour out to the public in all kinds of forms and shapes regarding this issue.

Of course, as always, information of that nature, as well as with any similar type of information, entered the human conscious awareness in a totally distorted and skewed manner. It is assumed that some kind of alien race created humans and that they will be coming back to introduce themselves to their products.

As you see, from this kind of understanding of the issue in question, the spiritual aspects and origin of these events are totally and completely disregarded or thrown aside as useless garbage. What does this tell you? It tells you that the negative state captured the ideas of The New Revelation, as so clearly foreseen and warned in the books of My New Revelation that it would exactly happen that way, and perverted them in such a manner so as to suit their needs to destroy any spiritual awareness in the human mind about this situation. And not only that, but to proclaim and to convince many humans that there were no spiritual factors that played a most substantial and significant role in the process of fabricating the human race and why such an act, leading to the activation of the negative state, was permitted to be realized by Me. Furthermore, the negative state can now say, "You see, humans, there was no God or Jesus Christ, or whatever Deity, that created you. You were created by us, by natural, external, materialistic and physical means, without any spirituality involved. And if you want to know, in actuality, Jesus Christ is one of us and not some kind of God or Son of

God.” And this is what it is all about. However, let Me tell you something else about such statements and news that you read or hear on the Internet or in any other type of media. Although it is nice to have such external confirmations about the authenticity and verity of the content of My New Revelation; and that events like these will be happening in the manner foreseen and warned about in the books of My New Revelation, nevertheless, you should not be taken in by any of this. And not only that, but you should never base your acceptance of the verity of My New Revelation, and the verification of its ideas, thoughts, concepts, principles and precepts by such external, sensational and commercialized means. Such a need is of the typical human nature. As agents of My positive state, you are to avoid such an approach. Instead, you are advised to base your verification of its verity on your personal, individualized and private intuition, on pure logic and the rationale of its proclamations and ideas, seeing, feeling and recognizing that it is really so. This is the way sentient entities everywhere in the positive state do it. So please, on your planet, represent the approach utilized by the positive state.

Peter: Thank You for this reminder.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. And now I would like to make some comments about your conversation with Heather yesterday. She asked you if I had given you any revelation on the structure of the positive state. Similar questions have been asked by some others in the past, especially by Dan. Well, it is time that we put this question to rest. The structure of the positive state is very dynamic. What does this statement indicate to you? That its structure is not something stationary, fixed, the same, unchangeable or unmovable. It is continuously being updated. At each junction of its occurrence, each shift causes profound structural changes in the fabric of the entire positive state. At that point, its structure transcends anything previously contained in the nature and structure of the positive state. Because of this factor, it would be difficult to give you a precise idea of how things are in the positive state. In a broader and general sense, you can derive some remote understanding of its structure from the structure of the negative state, in which you are presently residing.

As you know, originally, the structure of the negative state was patterned after the structure of the positive state — at the time of the activation of the negative state. By analyzing that structure, the pseudo-creators redesigned it in such a manner so as to make everything in the negative state be the exact opposite to how things are in the positive state.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

So, in that sense, and only in that sense, the structure of the positive state does not contain anything that you experience in the negative state or on planet Zero. Because of that, you have no foundation in your experiential perception of reality that would even remotely enable you to recognize anything of the structure of the positive state. It is so unusual and wonderful that absolutely no idea of it can enter your mind, even in your wildest dreams.

However, there is another point to this issue. One of the reasons why you are unable to grasp the true structure of the positive state and its dynamics, is because of your typical human nature which impedes you from that ability. Don't forget that the pseudo-creators put a special type of genetic code into your mind, brain and nervous system which prevents you from comprehending or apprehending the true structure of the positive state. Remember please, if you were to know that structure, the negative state would not have any chance to survive for too long. In that case, the question about life without Me and My spiritual principles could never be answered. On the other hand, if I were to reveal to you what the true structure of My positive state is, under your presently existing human conditions, the full awareness and impact of that knowledge would be of such tremendous proportions that most of you could not survive it. You would commit existential suicide. When you compare what you have, or what you live in now, with that which is of the structure of the positive state, your life on planet Zero would become totally unbearable and impossible. So, such knowledge would not be beneficial for you at this time — no matter what you think. It is for your own protection. You have to be patient a little longer — until you depart from planet Zero, but never before. And now, Peter, you may proceed with asking your own questions.

Peter: Thank You for Your comments. My first question has two parts. Let me bring its first part to Your attention. What is the verity and reality of the so-called human near death experiences and related matters? Whatever some humans claim in their books written about such experiences, or what I have personally heard from one of my co-workers who went through a near death experience himself, would seem to contradict what You say about it; meaning that it is a personalized and individualized event, and that no generalizations are possible in this respect. Yet, all of them describe almost identical near death experiences. How much truth exists in such claims?

The Lord Jesus Christ: First of all, we are not talking here about the actual death beyond which, no return is possible. It is not by coincidence that such events are called “near death” experiences. So, in this sense,

you can be assured that no one who has experienced actual death beyond the point of no return, has come back and reported anything about how and what happened, following their actual and factual death. Let Me explain what actually happens in cases like that. When someone clinically dies, that person enters the first stage of the process of separation of his/her spirit and soul from his/her body. In this first stage, before a total separation takes place and when some connection to the body still exists, a return into the physical body is possible. During this stage, some people but not all, may have a certain type of experience that seems to be the same or very similar to all involved in it. You have to understand that there is a boundary placed between the area which can be called the pre-entrance area into the other life, and the actual entrance into the other life. Between these two areas there is a tunnel, or similar place, or a waiting area that while staying in it, one is prodded to return or to continue in his/her travel to the other side. The structure of this area is such that it is built from the personal expectations of what and how things should happen after death.

At this stage of affairs, it is permitted for humans to experience their expectations in this respect, in order to give them comfort and remove any possible fears and anxieties which they are prone to have during this time. These expectations are based, in most instances, on what they learned about it, either from their respective religions or what they read in books that describe such experiences; or what they themselves come up with, regarding this issue. So, when you enter that area, your brain releases the stored expectations about how things should be experienced at this stage, and your spirit and soul provide you with them for your own sake and comfort. If you expect to see light at the end of the tunnel, or radiant figures or even someone looking like Me telling you to go back, you will have such an experience. In this respect, your expectations are fulfilled. And please don't forget that here we are talking not only about conscious expectations but also, and most importantly, about unconscious ones. Such expectations are recorded in the memory banks of the unconscious mind, which opens up at this stage. During this first stage, the unconscious mind is fully opened, and releases everything that was stored in its area of expectations regarding how things should be or how they should occur.

However, bear in mind that not all such experiences are pleasant ones. Usually, people talk and write only about the so-called positive, pleasant and transforming ones. You don't hear too often, if at all, about the negative ones. Who would want you to know if they had a very unpleasant experience during that time? On the other hand, in most cases of this nature, no recollection exists about anything that happened

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

during that time. So, here you have at least three possible scenarios and recollections: The positive one, the negative one and the comatose one, during which, nothing is remembered or experienced. How do you explain these striking differences? By the above mentioned principle of expectations or self-fulfilling prophecies — if you want to call it that way. Let us take, for example, the negative experiences, of which you don't hear too often or not at all. How many books have been written about them? Almost none. So, what does this tell you?

Take, for example, someone who was raised in the Catholic Church and who, because of identifying and accepting that church's dogma into their life, believes in hellish punishment in the literal fire of Hell and who is full of guilt for the real or allegedly sinful things he/she committed during his/her life on planet Zero. What kind of experience do you think that person will have in that pre-entry area following his/her clinical death? A very awful one; full of darkness, with demonic and ugly faces; at the end of the tunnel, a burning, unquenchable fire with sinners sizzling and crying in it with the most horrible cries and with these demons trying to drag him/her into that fire. This type of negative experience happens very often to the followers of the Catholic Church and to some others with similar doctrines. Just remember, what do you see in their churches when you enter them? What kind of pictures do they hang or paint on their walls?

On the one hand, there are those nice pictures with angels and their version of Jesus Christ with Mary, Mother of God presiding and radiating light and brightness; on the other hand, pictures of the Last Judgment with all those ugly, miserable, unworthy, putrid and rejected sinners being dragged down into the Hells, into its eternal literal fire, by those ugly, awful looking and bizarre demonic figures, with the devil and Satan in charge. You see these types of pictures from your early childhood to the very time you are having the near-death experience. Or even if you only saw them, let us say, once or several times when you were brought to church by your parents; or when, during your travels as a tourist, you go to visit all those pompous churches which are full of such pictures that are able to impress your conscious and unconscious mind to such an extent, that they will trigger within you anything that you think you deserve to experience during your possible near death experience. So, if you think that you deserve to experience punishment because of your guilt, for whatever reasons, I can assure you that your experience during that time will be a very unpleasant one. And vice versa: If you think that you have nothing to be afraid of, you will have a very pleasant one. However, if it doesn't matter to you either way, if you

are not impressed by any such stories, depictions, rumors, books or pictures, you will experience nothing.

Let Me illustrate this situation obliquely, by the experience that you, Peter, had a few months ago with a former client of yours. Although this is not a case of a near-death experience, but of actually dying, it can be useful in understanding this concept more properly. In order to preserve the confidentiality of this case, let us call her Nancy. Nancy was dying of a metastasized cancer that spread out to her entire body and to all her bodily organs. And no one understood, even her physician, why and how she was being maintained alive. One day she called you and begged you to come to see her, in order to put her in a hypnotic trance for the purpose of better controlling her awful pain. Although at that time you no longer practiced in your field, because of your compassion, you decided to help her. When you arrived at the hospital where she was confined, you saw a terrible picture of the suffering and the ravished body, and you knew at first glance that there was no way she could survive for too long. So, you put her in a trance and allowed her to experience My presence and the presence of some members of her spiritual family. At that time, through her, I told you the very obvious fact that she had to face the inevitable death of her body within two months or less.

Following that first visit with her, she was released from the hospital to her home, because there was absolutely nothing they could do for her in the hospital any longer. Upon her request, you visited her at home three or four times, shortly before her actual physical death. Personally, you wondered about what it was that was keeping her alive; or why she was so desperately clinging to this life, if there was nothing in her that would be able to sustain that life. At one point of your work, with her in trance, she confessed to you that she was absolutely horrified of dying and of being dead. So, being a cool clinician, as you have always been, Peter, you proceeded to explore with her why she was so afraid to die. Very reluctantly and with great shame, guilt and embarrassment, she finally admitted that many years ago, while being married, she had a one-night sexual affair with a man. And now, after all those years of carrying all that guilt within her, being a so-called good Catholic, she was afraid that she would have to go to Hell, and that she would suffer eternal punishment in the fire of the Hells for her one time adultery. What do you think, Peter, what kind of near-death experience would Nancy have?

Peter: The negative one, of course.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Exactly, Peter. Due to the fact that she was expecting to be eternally punished for her so-called adultery, her

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

expectations would have come true during her stay in that pre-entry area. Fortunately for her, she had you to help her ask Me for mercy and forgiveness — as if there was anything to forgive in this particular case; and, because of that, she did experience My giving these to her; as well as that she was able to forgive herself for whatever she did or thought she had done. After that, following two days, she died in peace.

Peter: But what about the so-called positive experiences of this nature, which result in alleged profound changes and transformations upon the return of those individuals? Do they have any lasting results?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Such claims are made not only with positive experiences but also with negative ones. People get so scared and horrified by them that, under the influence of such negative experiences, they stop doing bad and negative things and become very charitable in the community, especially to their respective church. The Catholic Church, for example, loves and encourages such negative experiences because for that person, they confirm the rightness of the church's doctrine, regarding eternal punishment in the burning Hells. At the same time, they make that person a faithful and loyal member of that church, or of whatever charity or organization to which he/she belongs. Does such conversion, change or transformation have any lasting effect from the true spiritual standpoint? Look at the situation this way: Under what condition did these changes or whatever, happen? Under the condition of impositions by one's own expectations. An experience of that nature comes from the externals. It was imposed on that individual by the inevitability of that experience, which gave her/him no choice in the matter but to change.

As you know from My New Revelation, any change or transformation, or whatever happens under the condition of imposition, duress, miraculous experience, threat of eternal punishment, or similar imposing factors — whether good or bad, whether pleasant or nightmarish — does not take hold in one's internals, where it counts. Because of this, individuals like that will still have to go through the process of making final choices upon arriving in the spiritual world; that is to say, after they really die by crossing the line beyond which no return to this life is possible any longer.

Peter: In that case, why are such experiences permitted to happen?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, Peter, look at it this way: What does that kind of experience tell them? That there is more to life than what they know about human life. In other words, it is a reminder that life is not

limited to what they know about it or what human life is all about; but that there is something more, and even more realistic than their human life. It is a kind of first tangible introduction to the spiritual reality of life, be it in the positive sense or in the negative sense, respectively. And even though such experiences are spiritually not binding, because they are by imposition, nevertheless, they can be utilized as a reminder when they arrive in the spiritual world proper. These can serve as a helpful introduction into the reality of the other and different life, of which they had very little, or no proper information. Don't forget, Peter, that the pre-entrance area into the other life — where they find themselves during their near death experience — is real; and you do see some things there that are representations of the forms and appearances of the real things, albeit in a somewhat distorted manner, distorted by the factor of imposed expectations. What they see has a corresponding counterpart in the true reality of the other worlds.

To be more precise, the expectations projected by them make the reality of that world appear in a manner that can be familiar to them, either in a positive or a negative sense. They are like temporary orientation points on which they are able to fall back and have some semblance of recognition as to what they knew, experienced or learned during their life on planet Zero. Otherwise, nothing would make sense to them. So, for that reason, regardless of how distorted and skewed their perception of that reality is, it is still a valuable experience because it provides them with the certainty of being alive and somewhat in control — whether they are consciously aware of that or not. At the same time, when they come back, that experience is utilized as a constant reminder that human life is not the only factor that has validity and tangibility; and that there is much more to it than what it can or may provide for them, than what they know and experience by their external sensory organs, or by what their science tells them or what they learned about it from any other sources. In this factor, and only in this factor, the near-death experience has some value. Don't put more than that into it, and don't be taken in by it either.

Peter: I appreciate Your explanation very much. And now the second part of my question. As you know, Heather, Dan and I, and some others, are curious to know if it would be permitted for anyone of us, especially for those that are so close, who are in love, have very close ties, or whatever, to communicate or to be consciously in contact with each other after any one of us is recalled to the spiritual world.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Excuse us for laughing, Peter. You and all of us were laughing when you asked the second part of your question. And

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

the reason we were laughing was because we have known about that curiosity of yours all along since it came into your minds. We know about your eagerness to have such contacts and communications.

Now, look at it this way, Heather, Dan, Peter, and everyone else interested in this issue: No matter how close you are to each other, in whatever form of your relationships, what do you know about anything that was chosen and agreed upon between Me and each of you individually and personally?

How much can you ascertain if continuing such relationship beyond your tour of duty on planet Zero is feasible, appropriate or needs to continue?

What do you know as to what extent your relationship — no matter how close, no matter how beautiful, no matter how exemplary it was — has exhausted its usefulness, served its purpose, set up the example that it needed to set up; and that therefore, how do you know if continuing in it beyond planet Zero would still be useful and beneficial to you and to all? It could be that way or it could be a totally different way.

Due to the fact of the total individualization and personalization of this factor, and because it is between Me and each one of you, the answer to this question is that, in some cases it might be permitted and in some cases it would not be permitted. It all depends on the nature of your mission, assignment and the need to have such communication.

So, because of that, it would be advisable for you not to expect anything; not to give each other promises that, if you go to the spiritual world first, by all means, you will make contact with each other.

You have no notion about what you have to go through or what is going to happen to you, or how busy you will become, or whatever state you will be in, that may or may not put you in a position to be able to make such contacts. So, simply stated, always keep your mind open to any possibility in this respect.

To accept humbly whatever the outcome will be regarding this issue; to rely on My decision and My Will for each one of you; to recognize that only I know in an absolute sense what the best is for you in all situations, states and conditions of your life — this is what a wise agent of My positive state will do. Nothing more can be said about this issue at this time. And now, I would suggest to finish for today.

Peter: Thank You very much for this explanation.

Sixteenth Dialog

January 11, 1999

Peter: Well, our friends from Slovakia, Marko and Michal, left us this morning. It was a nice and productive visit. Before asking my own questions, I would like to ask You if You have anything to add or wish to make comments about anything You feel that needs to be brought to our attention.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter; and, yes, it was a good and fruitful visit. Very nice young men, devoted to Me and to My New Revelation.

My comments this morning relate to your own state of mind, Peter, as related to the outcome of these Dialogs. You are somewhat afraid, almost anxious, whether or not these Dialogs will be accepted by the readers for what they are. At this point in time, over 30 people are or will be reading them. And you have no idea how many more will be reading them after they are translated into Spanish, Russian, Czech and Slovak, respectively. You are concerned that, perhaps, a few readers will reject their contents, proclaiming that you are being deceived by someone who claims to be Me — The true Lord Jesus Christ but who, in fact, is not.

Let us assume, Peter, that there will be a few readers who will come to that kind of conclusion. And not only that, but, let us assume that as a result of that reading, they will make the choice to reject the entire content of all other books of My New Revelation after initially accepting, supporting and practicing their principles for a while. What do you think that kind of adverse decision would signify on their part? It would simply mean that they would have fulfilled the obligation they had up to this point with My New Revelation, and that now they need to proceed to do or to be engaged with something else which is also an integral part of their mission. If such things happen, it signifies that these Dialogs are the means by which such rejection is triggered.

Don't forget for a minute what the shift that is currently happening, denotes. One of its important aspects is to put everyone into the position, state, condition and place that they need to occupy and in which they need to be engaged in certain important activities required for this particular time. If such activities require them to temporarily reject these Dialogs, and maybe even My New Revelation in its entirety, then they are doing exactly what they are supposed to do. So, these Dialogs have served a very good purpose in their case as well.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

On the other hand, don't overlook the positive feedback that you have received up to this point from some readers of these Dialogs. They were profoundly thankful, grateful and appreciative to Me and to you for making these Dialogs available to them. And, as one of the readers put it, they helped him immensely to get back on the right track, from which, he temporarily sidetracked.

You see, Peter, this is one of the most important functions of these Dialogs: to help many of you to get back on the right track; to give support and encouragement to all of My agents connected to My New Revelation; to reinforce everyone's determination to continue in their mission and assignment, which they have from Me, for a little bit longer — until everything about the negative state is fulfilled and completed, and the new life in the fullness of the positive state begins; and to bring into alignment and placement all the factors that are instrumental to this most significant task. Consciously, you have absolutely no idea what the current shift really entails.

Peter: You are right. I have no idea on this level, with the exception that somehow I know intuitively that it is very significant and important, maybe one of the most important ones that have taken place up to this point.

The Lord Jesus Christ: It is so, Peter. And now you may ask your questions.

Peter: Talking about intuition: As You know, yesterday evening I received an E-mail from a gentleman in Slovakia in which he asks an interesting question, related to the issue of intuition. He asks if it is possible for a reader of Your New Revelation to have a conversation with You without having a developed intuition ('the small voice within') and without having any other access to obtain information of any kind. Interestingly enough, such a question, particularly about intuition, was asked by several other readers of Your New Revelation in the past. That question was not properly answered, or to be more precise, as I recall, it has never been properly asked. So, I am amending this oversight and asking You that question now: First of all, how do You define intuition? What is intuition, exactly? And secondly, at the present time, under the existing conditions, is there any other way to communicate with You but through intuition?

The Lord Jesus Christ: The reason why this question has not been properly asked so far, is because it has not been time for it to be answered until now. As you know, Peter, everything has its own time

and place, or state and condition. The question that Mr. Beneš of Slovakia is asking indicates two things: One, that it is time to discuss this issue; two, it indicates a shift for you personally, Peter. As you know, in the second part of December, Mr. Beneš made an inquiry whether it would be proper and appropriate to ask you some questions of general interest and not of a personal nature. His inquiry to you was an indication that it is time for you to reactivate that part of your mission from Me which entails answering those types of questions by means of these Dialogs. Of course, at that time, the form that answering questions of that nature would take was not exactly clear in your mind. You answered that he should wait until you retired. So, you have retired; and now you are working full-time for Me and My agents connected to My New Revelation, situated not only on planet Zero but also elsewhere. Don't think for one second that these Dialogs are only limited to those few readers who are on your planet. You would be surprised to learn how many and who else reads them or listens during our dialogs.

But to go back to the question posed by Mr. Beneš and others in the past. It appears that some people think of intuition as something tangible, sitting somewhere within your brain, guts or heart; or as if some little creature is situated somewhere within you whispering into your inner ear and telling you what to do and how to do it in response to your questions. That way of conceptualizing intuition is totally off. From the spiritual standpoint, **intuition can be defined as the state and process of one's mind which discerns, ascertains, understands, comprehends and apprehends events and occurrences that take place in the inner and outer world without the need to analyze, rationalize or seek proof whether it is so or not.** In other words, intuition is a state of inner knowing, without any external proofs, whether something is right or not; whether something is proper or not; and whether someone means it or not. In a more outward scientific way, **intuition can be defined as a sudden, unexpected insight into how most effectively and most correctly to solve a problem or find a solution to the pressing design that needs to be implemented for proper, effective and correct function; or to get the right answers to your questions.**

As you see from either definition of intuition, it is always something which comes from within and never from without. It is a state of internals that radiates all the answers to your questions from My presence, and gives the impetus for all great scientific, and other types of discoveries to come to fruition. Even from the standpoint of a general scientific consideration, and from the standpoint of the typical human understanding of this issue, it is obvious that all true knowledge

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

originates from one's within and not from without. Except that they don't want to admit this fact.

This function of intuition, as well as the ability to intuit, stems from My presence in everyone's ability to choose and to change. I am the sole source of its occurrence, manifestation and function. This is the reason why in all the books of My New Revelation it was emphasized so much and so frequently that everyone should rely on their own intuition. Relying on your own intuition, in this context, signifies relying on Me within you. Because I am present in everyone's ability to choose and to change — otherwise no one would be able to survive for a fraction of a second — everyone has the potential ability to intuit. It is a matter of degree, depth and extent, as well as of perception, recognition and the proper application of intuitive discernment which determine how much or how little one is able to utilize its properties in one's life and what it has to offer its carrier.

Because of this particular function, it was intuition that became one of the major targets of the negative state. The forces of the negative state placed all kinds of blocks and barriers in the human genetic makeup, in and around the human mind, for the purpose of making it extremely difficult for them to activate the gift of intuition within themselves. In essence, it is an attempt to block them from Me or to access Me. As you know, nowadays, under the extreme condensation of the negative state, the majority of humans have lost the ability of intuitive discernment. In actuality, they haven't lost it entirely but, under the promises of the forces of the negative state, they have turned away from it. Instead, they are listening to someone or something else; in most instances, to what the negative state tells them.

On the other hand, you, My agents, connected to the New Revelation, under its influence, were able to activate that gift even more so than before. You are able to utilize it at all times. In answering Mr. Beneš' question, let Me illustrate the workings of intuition in the following example: When you read My New Revelation, its Updates and these Dialogs, and ponder about their content and principles, you know for sure, you feel it in your guts, so-to-speak, that what is proclaimed in them is true and correct without any doubts; and that they contain My True Word. You don't desire, need, demand, require, expect or seek any external, tangible or convincing proofs whether what is contained in them is true or false. You simply know that it is true. And if, for some reason or other, such proofs come your way from external events or means, as foreseen or warned about in My New Revelation, you simply acknowledge them, with the realization that even if they were not

available to you, it wouldn't change anything a bit about your attitude and acceptance of the principles contained in My New Revelation.

So, it is very obvious that, if someone reads and accepts My New Revelation, such a person, including Mr. Beneš, has a well-developed intuition. Otherwise, he or she would not be able to accept it or practice it. The acceptance and practice of the principles of My New Revelation always come from Me, within everyone who reads it. Due to this fact, it is obvious that such a person is in the process of communicating with Me whenever he or she reads, ponders, thinks about and practices what I teach in My New Revelation with the inherent knowledge that it is the right thing to do because it contains My Divine Truth from the Divine Wisdom of My Divine Unconditional Love.

By doing what was mentioned above just now, he or she is being continuously inspired in knowing, recognizing, sensing, feeling and doing what is right for him or her to do in his/her own individualized and personalized life. In this respect, one doesn't need or require, unless there was an initial agreement between Me and the prospective individual to have some kind of miraculous vision of Me, a personal appearance in front of his/her eyes in order to tell him/her what to do and how to do it; or giving him/her the expected answers to his/her questions in an authoritative and impressive voice. Only the negative state likes such fancy arrangements.

So, if someone agreed to accept a mission from Me on planet Zero, during which he/she also agreed not to have such experiences with Me directly, visually or in any other tangible mode, then it means that he/she also agreed to illustrate and demonstrate to everyone everywhere his/her devotion and loyalty to Me without any such direct input from Me. That person agreed to rely solely on My New Revelation by coming to accept it by purely rational and logical means and not by some kind of miraculous conversion or fabulous experience which gives him/her the absolute certainty that he/she is communicating with Me. In the view of the negative state, that would be too easy.

However, to repeat again and again, bear in mind that anyone who reads, accepts and practices My New Revelation, by these factors, is in the process of continuous communication with Me. The sole reason for this indisputable fact, is that I am constantly and continuously present in My New Revelation.

For that reason, if anyone thinks, feels or senses that he/she does not have a direct access to Me in order to obtain any needed or necessary

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

information, he/she has to remember the following fact: The only way he/she can be sure of anything in his/her life, is by constantly checking all his/her behavior, actions, decisions, thoughts, feelings, emotions, intentions, motivation, will, relationships, involvement, enterprises, businesses, determination, or whatever he/she has, against the content of My New Revelation in its entirety and against all its principles, precepts, ideas, concepts and laws. If at any time he/she finds any inconsistency in his/her mode of life, as outlined just above, as far as the requirement of My New Revelation is concerned, then his/her intuition is telling him/her that he/she is not following the path agreed upon in his/her life on this planet. In other words, it is telling him/her that he/she has stopped communicating with Me. On the other hand, if he/she, after checking everything in his/her life with My New Revelation, finds full consistency with and corroboration of everything in his/her life with it, his/her intuition is telling him/her that he/she is in continuous communication with Me. In that case, he/she will know what to do, how to do it, why things are happening the way they are; and he/she will properly ascertain all other things of interest and importance to him/her.

Take, for example, Mr. Beneš' statement that following this New Year, he, as well as all connected to My New Revelation in his city of Zilina in Slovakia, feel or sense a greater degree of difficulties, heaviness, more depressive states and melancholy. And he goes on asking the question whether those states of mind don't have something to do with some kind of development on planet Zero and with My plans in this respect. What does it tell you and/or him? Mr. Beneš' intuition is telling him that, yes, something is really going on with this planet; and, yes, it somehow relates to My plans regarding the destiny of planet Zero and everything else.

Mr. Beneš' intuition reflects the very dense condensation of the negative state in his area, as well as everywhere else on planet Zero and in the entire Zone of Displacement. How do you think that such a dense condensation of the negative state is manifested? Among other things, in the lives of people who are aware of these facts by their intuition, even though, very often, they cannot put their finger on it, figuratively speaking; it is manifested by the intensification of negative feelings, thoughts, states and conditions; by oppressive, depressive and melancholic brooding; by seeming helplessness, hopelessness and despair; and similar very negative feelings and experiences.

After all, what do you expect from the nature of the negative state? Some kind of pat on the back, with a reward of riches, happiness and contentment? Yes, some of their own agents and human slaves will be

temporarily rewarded by these kinds of gifts during this dense condensation. However, don't expect that to happen to My agents. Because of their intuitive awareness of the current state of affairs in the domain of the negative state and on this planet, they will reflect the opposite of what the agents of the negative state and human slaves experience.

However, in order not to fall into the traps of the negative state's densely condensing effort, it is advisable for you, My agents, to look at the entire situation in a different way. If you feel depressed, heavy, hopeless, helpless, melancholic and desperate, you are allowing the negative state to invade you. After all, such feelings, emotions, states and thoughts are all of a negative origin. They are of the negative state. To allow them to take hold of you, in essence, means to allow the negative state to influence and dominate you.

In that case, the agents of the negative state, especially the renegades, will tell you: "Aha, you see, you are no good; you are a weakling; you are a coward; you are no better than any other of our human slaves. What is different about you? Absolutely nothing! And you want us to be like you? Come on, man, don't tell us that this is the way your precious positive state is. Why should we ever even consider a notion or a thought to convert to the positive state if you are like that? If you are a true and exemplary representative of the positive state, we don't want anything to do with it — ever. We are happy in our negative state. After all, it is only negative from your miserable standpoint and not from ours. Your positive state is negative if it allows you to experience such bad, unhappy and negative feelings and states."

So, as you see from this possible scenario, if you allow yourself to succumb to such negative feelings and states, if you are too preoccupied with the negative state and what it does, you are a very poor representative of My positive state. You are not setting a good example of how it is to be My agent.

Due to these facts, you are advised to concentrate on Me, on the positive aspects of your life; on your understanding of the real meaning of all these events that are taking place during the current shift; as well as always. Ask yourself please, how many of you on planet Zero are privileged to be a part of My New Revelation, to have the true knowledge of the pseudo-reality of the negative state and everything else related to human life and to your mission and assignment in being My representatives on planet Zero? The awareness of these important facts should effectively nullify any such negative feelings and states.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Concentrate on that and not on the negativity of the negative state. Everyone knows that the negative state is negative. You don't need to pollute your life with it. Instead, open your mind and heart to My New Revelation, to Me and to My positive state which reside within you. Preoccupation with the negative state and allowing it to impose such negative feelings and states on you, may effectively block you from experiencing My presence within you. In that case you could really be cut off from experiencing anything positive contained in My New Nature. If this were to happen, you would likewise lose access to your intuition. Do I need to say more about this issue?

Peter: No Sir, it is clear as a bell.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Very well, Peter, in that case I would recommend to stop here and to continue either tomorrow or whenever you feel like.

Peter: Thank You very much for this great opportunity to serve You.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. Have a nice afternoon.

Seventeenth Dialog

January 12, 1999

Peter: During my early morning meditative walk, the issue of dying, death and near death experience was raised again. Does it mean that You would like to offer some further clarification on this issue? Some other questions came to my mind related to this issue and to some statements in the Bible related to it, as well as Swedenborg's experiences in this respect. Should we address them in this Dialog?

The Lord Jesus Christ: By all means, Peter, by all means. The question in your mind is about the possible discrepancies that exist between the common features in the process of death and subsequent resurrection, and My statement about the personalization and individualization of this process.

In this respect, you have to distinguish between three factors: The first one relates to the mode or manner by which one dies on your planet. It is in this mode or manner that the individualized and personalized factor is manifested the most. How and in what manner people die, depends on the agreement between Me and them. As you know, some people die of old age, some, through a prolonged physical illness; some, in some type of accident such as an auto crash, airplane crash, earthquake, fire, assassination, shooting, wars, execution and in many other similar ways. The other point in this first individualized and personalized factor is the unique experience that everyone goes through in the process of dying. Not one person exists who would have the same subjective or inner experience in this process. The reason for this part of the discussed factor is that each individual manifests unique experiences in the process of dying, which are recorded in the Universality-of-It-All, or Guardian-of-Forever, for the purpose of everyone learning from all the nuances of that process and what it means, or how it feels to have such experiences.

The way you have to understand this statement is that the process of dying and death is an unknown factor for those inhabitants of the positive state and Creation in general who have never incarnated on your planet. As you know, death and dying are the invention of the negative state. They are integral components of the nature of the negative state. Such a phenomenon does not exist anywhere. The specificity, uniqueness and all the minutest details of the process of dying and death reflect a very important factor of life in the negative state. Due to the fact that the nature of the negative state has to be manifested in almost infinite varieties of manners and ways, and

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

because, it is likewise individualized and personalized in its manifestation and actualization, it was necessary to allow this unique, unusual, unrepeatable and non-duplicable manner in which humans experience the process of dying and death itself. That way, an important aspect of the true nature of the negative state is being continuously manifested and provided for the learning of all in the entire being and existence.

It is said above that the nature of the negative state has to be manifested in almost infinite varieties of manners and ways. The word 'almost' indicates the fact that the negative state is relative, transient, temporary and perishable. It does not have the option to continue forever. However, in the process of manifesting all aspects of its nature, it requires the gradual exposure of all facets of its ugly face. As mentioned in My New Revelation, sudden exposure of its entire nature would cause an unbearable and insurmountable burden to all in being and existence. Because of their relative condition, they could not take in the entire experience of what it means to be negative, evil and to live in distortions and falsities. In that case, they would cease to exist. This is the reason why it is taking so long, almost millions of years in your planetary time, to illustrate and demonstrate everything about the nature of the negative state.

The second factor of this issue relates to the process of resurrecting someone who has just died. It is during this process that some commonalities may be found. These commonalities relate solely to the fact that resurrection means the infusion of new life. Due to the fact that life always generates from the Source of The Absolute Life — Me, The Lord Jesus Christ, it is I Who resurrects humans either personally or through a specially appointed contingent of angels who are trained and assigned personally by Me to provide such important services. As you know, the process of resurrection is a process of the positive state. Only in the positive state, and by the positive state, true life may occur and be fully manifested and experienced.

However, the commonalities of this factor end right there. The experience, perception, feeling, thoughts, sensation and all other factors of that process are always unique, individualized and personalized. No two experiences are alike in this respect.

The third factor of this issue relates to what happens after the resurrection is completed. This is the factor that has the least things in common. There are so many possibilities and varieties of experiences that it would be futile to attempt to describe them. Each individual goes

through his/her own, very personal and unique, experience in this respect. This is the state of one's personal Last Judgment. Its results determine the choices and subsequent placement of the respective individual into his/her own state and condition.

Peter: What about Swedenborg's description of the process of dying and resurrection, as well as the description of the mode of life following that process? Is it still valid?

The Lord Jesus Christ: As you know, Peter, Swedenborg was put into a seeming state of death with the preserved ability to consciously observe and record that experience. The angels who performed that process on him were made to believe that he had actually died. The process in itself, as experienced and described by Swedenborg, is a good approximation of what happens during that time, in some cases, but not in all of them. Nowadays, with all those tremendous and fundamental changes, things can be very different. So, in this respect, we cannot make any generalizations either. However, what Swedenborg experienced is in concordance with what was said above about this issue — I am the One, either personally or through My special types of angels, Who performs the act of resurrection. In his case, it was My angels who did it. Basically, Swedenborg's description relates to the process of bringing the breath of one's lungs, the beat of one's heart and the awareness of one's brain into alignment with the sphere and atmosphere of the intermediate world or, what he used to call, the World of Spirits. Don't take the words 'lungs,' 'heart,' and 'brain' literally. Those are not the physical entities that are perceived and understood by your physical conceptualization, or as being physical in nature, which reside within your body. They are spiritual correspondences of something in the World of Spirits which approximates that which is known to you as the physical lungs, heart, and brain.

However, his description of what happens afterwards has changed considerably. In fact, nothing is the same as it used to be during his time. On the other hand, if you carefully analyze the lifestyle of that World, the way Swedenborg described it or as it really was at the time of his description, you will notice an interesting parallel between what was happening there at that time and what happens during the so-called 'near death experience' — as described by some humans. In both instances it is a state of expectations. The inhabitants of that World, as well as the persons with the near death experience, lived in the illusions of their expectations. From their personal expectations they built a lifestyle and their own personal environment, congruent to their expectations, believing that they were living in the real world and that

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

no other existence was possible or conceivable, except what their expectations provided for them.

At the time of Swedenborg, the World of Spirits, or what is now called the Intermediate World, had that function — to allow humans to manifest and experience a mode and style of life in accordance with their expectations. As you know, after their own Last Judgment, which Swedenborg witnessed, the nature of that world changed completely. No longer can anyone live there in accordance with their human expectations. The factor of expectations was shifted to the pre-entrance area, as perceived and manifested in the near death experience. The only difference is that, whereas at the time of Swedenborg, the life in the expectations could last for many centuries (until Swedenborg's time), in the pre-entry area it is very brief, lasting only to the moment when the just died person crosses the line beyond which no return is possible.

As you know, Peter, it is beyond this line where no one knows what is going on or what is happening. The reason why it has never been permitted for anyone to come back after crossing that line, is in the fact of the absolutely individualized and personalized experiences that everyone goes through. If someone were to return after crossing it, and describe the experiences that took place there, it would negatively condition humans to expect the same type of experiences or events. They would be imposing their expectations on that process, impeding the works of My Divine Providence which relate to their future destiny; and would be interfering with the revelation of who they are and why they were in the human life on planet Zero in the first place; effectively and unnecessarily prolonging their placement into their ultimately chosen state and condition. There are some other vital and most important reasons why such a return is not possible after crossing that line. However, they are of an absolute nature which cannot be revealed to you because of your relative condition. No relative mind could fully grasp why it is so.

As you know, Peter, one of the most vital and crucial works that takes place after one crosses that line of no return, is the most essential discovery of one's true nature, stripped of all the impositional factors that were acquired during life on planet Zero and from living the so-called human life. All roles, masks, layers of attachments, wrong identities, wrong self-concepts, wrong self-images, wrong self-perceptions, wrong self-acceptance and wrong self-understanding; and similar inappropriate and unreal factors about oneself, have to be removed and eliminated so that the original nature, as it was created by Me, or fabricated by the forces of the negative state before incarnating on planet Zero, whatever

the case may be, could be re-acquired, properly manifested and put into the position of further important choices. Such work, because of its complexity and importance, may take a long time from the standpoint of your planetary conceptualization of time. The length of this work depends on the degree and extent of how much one identified with all those roles and other impositional factors of the human life. The more and stronger the identification, the more intense work that needs to be done and the longer it takes. And vice versa: The less and the weaker identification, the less work that needs to be done and the faster it is completed.

At this point of one's condition after death, one is given a choice either to undergo this vital and crucial process in the New School — which choice indicates joining the positive state — or somewhere else (a better word to use in this respect would be 'some state else' in order to avoid the spatial-temporal connotation of its meaning). In that case, the temporary choice was made to join, for the time being, the negative state in some of its Hells.

A somewhat different situation exists with the agents of My positive state, incarnated on planet Zero, who are not connected to My New Revelation overtly during their tour of duty on it. Also, a somewhat different process takes place with those of My agents on planet Zero who are connected to My New Revelation overtly.

In the case of those agents of the positive state who are not overtly connected to My New Revelation, their overt connection to it has to be established first. From that position, from the acquired knowledge of its content and its principles, by that knowledge and by those principles, all contamination, pollution, poisons, and everything else of the typical human nature that clung to them during their pseudo-life on planet Zero and which they brought with them to the spiritual world, are detached and removed; their original memories, true identities and agreements they had with Me are revealed, and they join the home base from which they originated and from which they incarnated on planet Zero.

Those of you who are overtly connected to My New Revelation, and who are privileged to have all the knowledge about these issues and about everything else contained in My New Revelation, are put into the position of being decontaminated from everything typically human. Your memory is opened to everything else of which you didn't have any conscious awareness, such as, for example, your true identity, the nature of the world from which you incarnated on planet Zero, and similar important matters. During that time, a determination is made as to what

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

extent your life on planet Zero was congruent with what you knew and were aware of and how much you adhered to the principles of My New Revelation during your tour of duty on your planet.

By and large, those of you who are overtly connected to My New Revelation, have a much more shortened period to go through in this important process and in finishing it than anyone else. In some cases, that process could be as short as a few hours or a few days, depending on the degree and extent that you identified with and clung to the attachments that you brought with you from planet Zero; or how much you liked being in your human life. Does anyone of you like being in your human life? What a question! We are joyfully laughing — all of us.

Talking about laughter. Perhaps, some sensitive individuals, in their typical human attitude, might perceive our laughter as something inappropriate, even offensive. In the positive state, laughter always means joy, delight, pleasure, happiness, elation, and similar very positive emotions expressed through it. It never means laughing at someone or something, or putting someone down, or ridiculing someone. Such negative emotions are unknown to anyone in the positive state. It never even enters anyone's mind.

But to go back to the experiences of My agents connected to My New Revelation after they are resurrected. As mentioned on numerous occasions, many things that apply to the majority of individuals, very often don't apply to you who are connected to My New Revelation. Things can be much different for you. Don't ever underestimate what you know, what is available to you, and what your position is on planet Zero. No matter how outwardly you look the same as anyone else, no matter how you feel about yourself from the position of your external self-perception, no matter what kind of position you occupy in human life, no matter how important or unimportant you seem to be to other humans or even to yourself, due to your connection to My New Revelation, if you practice its principles, laws, ideas and concepts in your life for their own sake without expecting anything in return, you are able to bypass many things which otherwise would be inevitable for you to go through. So, don't ever generalize or apply or expect anything to happen to you that can and may happen to others in this respect. Some of it may happen that way and some of it may happen in a totally different, even unexpected, way.

After you go through the process of resurrection and through what was described in your case as My agents connected to My New Revelation, it is at this point that a decision and a choice is made whether it would be

beneficial and useful for some of you to become members of someone's spiritual family. Those of you who are strongly connected by love, affection, deep friendship and similar important factors, and, of course, most importantly, by My New Revelation, and who served Me on planet Zero in the roles of exemplifying and demonstrating life in accordance with the principles of the New Revelation, will become members of the spiritual family of that person who remained behind on planet Zero.

It is logical and prudent to assume that this type of connection which existed on planet Zero between some of you, may need to continue, even after one of you is recalled, in order to maintain the line of work which was undertaken from the position of planet Zero, and which needs to proceed from a different angle, on a different foundation, with a different content, involving active participation from both directions simultaneously — from the spiritual world and, at the same time, from planet Zero. Remember what I told you in one of the Updates in the ***Corollaries...***? You will also be helping from that position — from the other side — in the process of eliminating the negative state. How do you think such help is procured? Among many other things, it happens after you are recalled by your becoming a member of the spiritual family of the one who stayed behind.

It is in this role, as a member of someone's spiritual family, that you will be able to communicate with each other on a continuous basis — in whatever mode such communication is available to you. As you know, Peter, such a connection, from both ends, may already happen while you are still in the human life. For example, you, Peter, because of your multiversal connection and your unusual position, are serving in that capacity for many who are involved, in some way or another, with My New Revelation on planet Zero and elsewhere. How much more such a connection will be maintained by all of you who will be engaged in the work of eliminating the negative state after you are recalled! Do you see now why it was emphasized that a different situation exists with those agents of My positive state who are connected to My New Revelation on planet Zero than with anyone else?

When we were talking about this issue at the end of the Fifteenth Dialog, we were talking to the entire being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, as well as to all humanity through their unconscious awareness. Because of that, it was very important to say things about it as they were said in that Dialog in order to convey to everyone everywhere the idea of not expecting things to happen the way their imposed expectations would want them to happen. The fulfillment of such expectations would be very spiritually dangerous for all. Those

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

statements, as well as all others — and we are repeating this again!— should never be taken personally or applied to one's personal situation. In a personal connotation, they may or may not be that way. On the other hand, when we are specifically talking about My agents on planet Zero, connected to My New Revelation, their situation may be quite different because of their specific choices and assignments. Don't forget an important fact: Why did the pseudo-creators decide to recede from their intent to destroy planet Zero? Primarily and most importantly because of you, My agents connected to My New Revelation. They pointedly noticed that there was something very different about you, something that didn't fit into their image of how a typical human should be. So, you see, you are not typical humans. Because of that, many things don't apply to you. At this point I would suggest that we continue with this topic tomorrow — if possible and feasible.

Peter: Yes, with gladness, we may continue tomorrow. Thank You very much for this information.

The Lord Jesus Christ: As always, you are welcome, Peter. Until tomorrow then.

Eighteenth Dialog

January 13, 1999

Peter: Are we ready to continue with the discussion of yesterday's topic contained in the Seventeenth Dialog?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, we are.

Peter: In that case, talking about communicating with the departed ones, in whatever mode or manner, could You elaborate on the phenomenon of mediums in the séances of the so-called spiritists, when a medium is used through whom one can allegedly talk to a departed one? What does really happen during such séances?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Let Me go a little bit into the historical perspective regarding spirits and communicating with them from your human position — before answering your question directly.

As you know, Peter, before My First Coming to planet Zero, it was not uncommon for beings from the spiritual world — both from the positive side as well as from the negative side, respectively — to appear or to walk on your planet. At that time, many humans were able to see them and talk to them, whenever the need arose. The reason for this phenomenon could be found in the position in which humankind was at that time. Planet Zero was ruled by the pseudo-creators and their minions. The pseudo-creators also had full access to the positive state; and of course, to balance things out, the inhabitants of the positive state had full access to planet Zero and elsewhere in the Zone of Displacement. The factor of this access was founded in the condition of inevitability and no freedom of choice for humans. Because of this factor, anyone could and would influence their lifestyle. For a time, this human situation was permitted by Me in order to illustrate to the entire Creation, what life would be like if it were not based on freedom of choice but on imposition and inevitability. Of course, it was an awful life. In the process of illustrating other types of lives, before the fullness of the positive state can be activated and put into motion, the very first mode of life which is activated is the life of impositions, inevitability and no freedom of choice. After the completion of this phase of manifestation, the second type of life which is activated and put into motion is the life in which the negative state is chosen by free choice and not by imposition.

As you know, Peter, My First Coming to planet Zero heralded the end of the first type of illustration and the beginning of the second one. In the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

process of the first type of life, because of its impositional nature, the appearance of beings from both sides had to be permitted in order to exert influence on human behavior and their lifestyle. For that reason, humans not only could see, hear and interact with such beings, but many of them were severely possessed by demons.

However, there is another point to this issue. In order to make possible such a phenomenon as seeing, hearing and communicating with beings from other dimensions, the wiring of the brain and the human nervous system was somewhat different than it is now. At that time, the human brain was not as developed as it is now. The brain's so-called gray matter, the seat of rationality, logic and intellect was limited in scope and function. A better way to put it is to say that certain areas of the human brain were not fully activated — those related to the function of the gray matter. On the other hand, those areas of the brain which enabled humans to have such experiences were fully activated. This is the reason why it was so easy to influence humans by beings that were able to manipulate the perceptive and receptive abilities of their brain. The lifestyle of impositions and inevitability required such an arrangement. During My First Coming to planet Zero, I initiated a shift in the human neuro-physiological condition by the gradual closure of those areas of their brain through and by which they could be imposed things contrary to their freedom of choice. You have to understand, Peter, and all who read these words, that all these activities and efforts, whatever is described here, is accomplished by rearranging the spiritual correspondences which relate directly to the brain function we are talking about. This is not done by some kind of surgical or other type of physical procedure. It is done by spiritual means, which have a cause and effect on the respective areas of the brain and the nervous system. In other words, by closing one area of the brain and opening some others. Because this process takes place from the non-temporal and non-spatial continuum, when it is applied to planet Zero, it yields to the laws of time-space which rule the events in human life. Because of this factor, such changes are gradual, slow and take time.

For that reason, the impact of that closure didn't happen overnight, so-to-speak. In your time, it took many years before the process was completed. Because of that, some people were able to initiate such communication with spirits from other dimensions even after the complete closure. As time went by, the occurrence of such communications became less and less until the prohibition of these types of contacts set in completely. Only very few humans were allowed to continue having some semblance of such contacts. At this point in time, only severe mental illness may open those areas in question and, of

course, young children may still have such an ability for seeing and hearing things in other dimensions before they yield to the requirement of their culture, and before fully developing their brain functions. The reason why it was prohibited to maintain such contacts, or to be possessed by demons as the manner was before My First Coming, was in the fact of the abolishment of impositional factors and inevitability, and the institution of a lifestyle by freedom of choice. You cannot very well have such freedom if you are influenced by entities who far surpass you in all aspects of your life.

Once the full condition of this new lifestyle was established and set in, and once the choice-making effort by free will and choice was fully manifested for the learning of all, another shift took place. The nature of that shift — which began during the development of the principles of your spiritual hypnosis, Peter, — required reopening the doors to the other dimensions in order to bring to some humans' awareness the existence of other realities and their connection to them. The first contact in this respect was made at that time (late seventies of this century). But notice please, the difference between the former mode of contact and the one that you developed and instituted, Peter, with My blessing, of course. Whereas in the first instance, in most cases such contacts were by sole imposition — especially in cases of possession — in your approach to this matter, the procedure was based on asking your true Spiritual Mind — in which was My presence — for permission and to establish the appropriateness, need and suitability of such contacts and communications. At the same time, such communications and contacts were only limited to the members of one's true spiritual family who always functioned from the position of one's freedom of choice and of no impositions. In order to assure that you were in contact with them and no one else, elaborate security checks were developed for that purpose.

The major reason, albeit not the only one, why it was necessary to reopen the doors to access the other dimensions, was in the nature of the shift itself which was taking place at that time. The shift was for setting up the conditions to prepare for the completion of My New Nature; for the release of the pseudo-creators and their return to planet Zero; for the condensation of the negative state in order that it should win temporarily on your planet; and for the preparation of the final phase of My Second Coming. It was also for a gradual reintroduction of some selected humans to the reality of the spiritual world — which reality they had lost; as well as for activating My agents on your planet who would be connected to My New Revelation, which was in the process of its very first installments; as well as activating My other agents; and in order to trigger in them the awareness of the assignment and mission which they

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

received from Me before incarnating on planet Zero — to be a bridge and translation in both directions, from and to the positive state and elsewhere, and from and to your planet. Obviously, if you are not aware, or have no experiential perception that such worlds and their sentient entities even exist and are connected to you, you cannot very well be a bridge or translator to or from them. However, bear in mind please, that such openings not only apply to My agents, whether they are or are not connected to My New Revelation, but also to the agents of the negative state and their minions who were reawakened from their dormant condition and reactivated to do the work and assignment that they accepted from the rulers of their respective Hells. This effort is an integral part of the dense condensation of the negative state.

At this point we can close our short detour into the history of this issue and return to your question, Peter. As you know, the issue was always very controversial with mediums and their contact with departed ones, or with whomever. This was widely practiced before My First Coming. As you know, it was prohibited within the Israelite nation; and the humans of that nation who practiced it were put to death. The reason why such a harsh punishment was instituted in Israel at that time, was due to the factor of representation, which the Israel of that time had. It was the only nation that had My Word. It was necessary to establish a comparison between someone who relies solely on My Word and someone who relies on the imposition of spirits.

As you know from the history of the very first king of Israel — Saul, first, he destroyed or killed all such mediums and soothsayers and then, when he was in serious trouble he sought out one who was hiding in the underground in order to bring out his teacher and spiritual leader — Samuel. But look at the direction from where Samuel appeared to the woman-medium. It was from below, from the lower earth, meaning, from the negative state. He clearly told Saul that he and his sons would be joining him on the same day in the Hells for all their evil deeds and for what they had done to the nation of Israel. The direction from which the so-called Samuel appeared clearly indicates that in the process of a séance, the spirits who appear, speak and take on the role of departed ones, in most instances are negative.

This is the reason why it has never been advisable to participate in such séances with mediums. It puts you in danger of listening to negative spirits under the guise of being someone whom you loved and cared for. That way you could be misled and become your own self-fulfilling prophecy by listening to what they have to say instead of listening to your own intuition and common sense. Again, this is impositional,

violating and taking away your freedom of choice. And not only that, but such communication closes the doors to Me and to the members of your true spiritual family. When you decide to make contact through a medium and ask for advice from someone whom you think is your beloved departed one, for example, by that act, you are opening the doors to the forces of the negative state. Instantly and with great delight, they take over and provide you with all kinds of convincing and 'beautiful' experiences and plausible predictions, based on telling you, in a verifiable manner, events about your past, and in that way, very effectively replacing Me and all members of your spiritual family with their own crew who will act, behave and look like Me and the members of your true spiritual family. Don't forget that they are very accomplished actors and role-players. Once something like this happens, you become a slave of their bidding. You lose your way from the influence of the positive state.

So, do you see why it is spiritually very dangerous to make contact by such means?

If you compare these types of experiences with the ones that occur in near death experiences, no physical manifestation or materialization takes place during séances. In near death experiences the person comes back into his/her own physical body and continues to live in it until he/she actually dies. During a séance, a totally different method is used. A medium goes into a deep spontaneous hypnotic trance. In that condition, a door to the other dimension is opened, while at the same time the awareness to the external conscious world is closed. The moment this happens and a call is made for the requested spirit to come through, that spirit invades the medium's consciousness and brain and is able to communicate with the inquirer. No physical materialization is possible through such means. So, it is not as if that spirit appears to the inquirer in a physical body or comes back from the dead. He/she has to rely on the medium in order to hear the spirit's response to the inquirer's questions by utilizing the medium's vocal cords and speech.

So this, as any other experience of this nature, only confirms the fact that no one may or can come back after he/she crosses the line of no return. This is also true about your mode of communicating with Me and the members of your spiritual family. In your formal and informal state of inwardness, a few of you are able to communicate with us by visual and auditory means. Because such communication is direct, without the use of a medium, and this happens from your minds to our minds in an individualized and personalized manner, without using general blanket-type methods or practices, so common to the negative state, it bypasses

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

the awareness of the negative and evil spirits and gives a high level of probability that you are in contact with the right source. The issue of probability is tied-in with the intentions, motivation and purpose for which you are approaching your contact and communication with us. The less contamination by your human expectations, wishful thinking, selfish reasons and inappropriate requests, the more probability exists that you are on the right track — in contact and communication with us. And vice versa, of course. The more of that, the more probability exists that you either get no response or sense of proper contact, or you become a target for the forces of the negative state, who may temporarily invade you — until you straighten up — and cause you all kinds of doubts, uncertainties and various other typical human problems.

Peter: Talking about death, dying and communicating with departed ones, I would like to ask for Your comments on one of Your statements recorded in the Gospel According to Matthew 24:40-41, *‘Then two men will be in the field: one will be taken and the other left; two women will be grinding at the mill: one will be taken and the other left.’* And on Apostle Paul’s statement recorded in his First Epistle to the Thessalonians 4:13-18, especially in verse 17, *‘Then we who are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them (meaning, with the dead ones who will be resurrected at that time — my interpretation) in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air. And thus we shall always be with the Lord.’* If I understand Paul’s statement correctly, he, as most of the Christians of Paul’s type, believe that whoever had died up to that point would still be dead, and that all the dead ones will be resurrected only at the time of Your Second Coming. So then, if anyone of us is still alive on this planet at the time of Your Second Coming, we would not experience physical death, but some kind of transfiguration of our physical bodies will occur and we will join You and all those of a positive nature who will be resurrected at that time, in some kind of air, etc. Is there any substance to these claims?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Let Me first address the issue of My own statement, which I made during My stay on your planet. As you know, Peter, whenever I spoke to the multitude or to My disciples or to anyone else, I didn’t speak only to them but also, **and most importantly**, to all other worlds, dimensions, para-realms and their pseudo-counterparts in the Zone of Displacement. First of all, in the literal sense, that statement denoted the situation which was about to occur with the inhabitants of Jerusalem after they rejected Me as their true Messiah and after My crucifixion.

As you know, by rejecting Me and crucifying Me, they brought upon themselves an external type of punishment and retribution. This was a form of visitation that resulted in Jerusalem's siege by the Roman armies which lasted for a long period of time and ended in the total destruction of Jerusalem and its famous temple. As a result of that siege, most of its inhabitants perished. However, some of them, those who accepted Me and My principles, were hidden by Me and, in a sense, disappeared from the vision and awareness of others — as if they didn't exist at all. This is what those words meant in their literal sense.

However, as you know, My statements were also meant in a purely spiritual sense, related to events of a purely spiritual nature and to the future fate of the intermediate world (World of Spirits), where humans gathered, forming their own societies, not much different from what they had during their life on planet Zero. During the Last Judgment, when the human era was ending there, those humans who were of a positive inclination and nature, shortly before the Last Judgment, were suddenly lifted from their positions and states, leaving others behind. They simply disappeared from that world and were placed elsewhere (in the Old School, which was New at that time). Those left behind, following the others' rapture, then faced the consequences of their evil and negative deeds and were thrown out into one of the Hells. This is what that statement signified. It was for that time and for those events. Their present significance relates more to what was said in one of the previous Dialogs. It was stated there that just before the completed full pseudo-victory of the negative state on your planet — the Great Tribulation — should you still be on your planet at that time, you will be bypassed by those who will execute and implement its occurrence. It will be as if you don't exist. No other meaning should be ascribed to that statement.

As far as Paul's statement is concerned, he erred in two respects: First, his assumption that the dead ones will be dead until My Second Coming as though they are asleep and then awaken from their sleep is completely wrong. Paul, as well as his numerous followers in the Christian world, disregarded what I said about it, *'I am the resurrection and the life. He who believes in Me, though he may die, he shall live. And whoever lives and believes in Me shall never die.'* Of course, here I was talking about spiritual life and spiritual death. But at the same time, I indicated that there is no such thing as real death, so that anyone who physically dies is shortly resurrected and lives either in the true life of the positive state or the pseudo-life of the negative state, called the real death.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Second, Paul's assumption that the bodies of those who will be here at the time of My Second Coming will undergo some kind of transfiguration is also wrong. A relative body from relative elements in a relative being cannot be transfigured because it has to yield to the laws of its own nature of decay. Such transfiguration is possible only from the original state of The Absolute, when It clothes Itself with the relative and by infusing Itself into it, Its Absolute repudiates the condition of its natural decay — as it happened with My physical body. A process of this nature is impossible to comprehend by your relative human mind. However, we may address this issue at some other time if needed and feasible.

Peter: Thank You so much for Your explanation. Should we finish for today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, it would be advisable. We may continue tomorrow if you feel like it and if some other things will not require your attention. In the meantime, have a very pleasant afternoon.

Nineteenth Dialog

January 14, 1999

Peter: Why do I have a feeling that we have not yet finished our discussion on the issue of the Christian concept of rapture and on what happens immediately after one's death, as derived from Paul's statements in the quoted verses at the end of the Eighteenth Dialog?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Because, Peter, some further clarifications are needed regarding these issues. First, let's take the issue of Paul's claim, and of his loyal Christian followers, that anyone who dies will stay dead until My Second Coming — as if they fall asleep and then I wake them up to join Me in My appearance on the literal clouds in the air. If you take into consideration the axiomatic fact, unconditionally accepted by Paul and his followers likewise, that I am the only source of life, being that I am life in, by, of and from Myself, and that all life generates from Me and that without My Absolute Life, which is being unceasingly radiated into everyone, keeping them alive, no one could survive for a fraction of a second, then Paul's conclusions in this respect are totally illogical and they don't make any sense.

One of the major problems that Paul had, which was also his downfall, was that he had no concept of the nature of spiritual correspondences or what a true spiritual life was all about. From his statements about this and many other issues, it is obvious that in contradiction to all other statements that he made, he assumed that the spirit and soul of the human body somehow depend on that body and not the other way around — that the body's life depends on the spirit and its soul. So, when the body dies, what happens to that spirit and soul? Are they placed in some kind of limbo, or wherever, where they are kept in suspended animation until I execute My Second Coming? To assume that, means to assume that I am also dead or in some kind of suspended animation. At one point in time, something stirs in Me and I wake up and, out of the blue, I decide to begin with My Second Coming. Why is it that I would also be considered dead or in deep slumber or sleep — if Paul's illogical statement were to be correct? Because if you admit that I am the life, and the life of everyone is from Me, and that I am in that life, then, from this logically follows that whenever someone dies, losing his/her life, I also die because I am that life in him/her. Of course, if such a thing were possible, the entire being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, and all their respective sentient entities would also cease to be and exist.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

On the other hand, if the spirit and soul of the dead individual are put in some kind of suspended animation until My Second Coming, everyone's entire life would likewise be in such a condition because of the factor that I am the life of his/her spirit and soul. However, let us assume for a moment that something like that is possible. Can you imagine what a terrible waste of life force energy, sleeping somewhere in suspended animation or in total dormancy, not being utilized for anything productive, useful or fruitful? Such a situation is utterly impossible. My life in everyone and everything is continuously and unceasingly active, dynamic, progressive and constantly alive in the condition of full wakefulness and productive actions within everyone's spirit and soul. It is only the physical body of humans and of some other creatures that sleeps and/or dies because it has no life in itself or by itself. So, in this respect Paul's assumption and the assumption of some of his Christian followers, is totally off. Everyone's spirit and soul, after their human physical body dies, continue to live forever in an active, fully functional condition and mode with the full preservation of their 'I am' and full conscious awareness of being alive. Based on this factor, the second assumption, assuming that your physical body will be transfigured at the time of My Second Coming — if you are still alive on planet Zero at that time — in a process called 'the rapture' by some Christians, is likewise off.

Once again, Paul was too literal in this respect, disregarding the spiritual factor of this process and to what it corresponds. Although he was aware that there were different types of bodies, besides the physical type which is made out of matter, nevertheless, he assumed that this matter-type of body could be fully engaged in the process of the rapture and stay alive at the same time. Of course, as you know from the principles of your elementary physics, such a body could not survive in space somewhere up there in the clouds in the air without some protective devices. However, Paul assumed that some kind of transformative process would take place in that body, making it immune to disintegration and decay. According to him, this would be an instantaneous occurrence.

If such a thing were possible, then the human body I had, and which I took with Me after My resurrection, could have also been changed instantaneously and the process of its transfiguration into an immortal entity wouldn't have taken almost 20 centuries. As you see from this factor, none of the physical laws can be broken. Because of its nature, the physical body is subject to space-time continuum laws. This is the reason why My New Nature was not made overnight, so-to-speak, but it took a long period of time, from your conceptualization of time, to accomplish

this goal. Of course, in the non-spatial, non-temporal state, the factors of time and space are totally irrelevant. If it were possible for a relative human physical body to undergo such transfiguration and change, as it happened to My physical body from the position of My Absolute State, Condition and Process, it would have to take many centuries to complete such a process, just as it took Me to accomplish it. In that case, it could not happen instantaneously, as Paul assumed. Of course, no such thing is possible for a relative human body, which clothes a relative human being. The word 'relative' in itself denotes the temporality of its condition. Because of that, the human physical body cannot forever serve that purpose for its spirit and soul. After it serves its purpose, it is put aside — in other words, it dies — and the respective spirit and its soul acquire a different type of external body, adjusted to the condition and state in which they will reside afterwards.

So, let us assume, what would happen to your body if some of you, My agents, are still on planet Zero at the time when either the negative state is in a total pseudo-winning position, or at the time of the final phase of My Second Coming? Several things could happen: Either you would physically die by so-called natural causes, or you would continue to live in that body until your mission is completed; or you would be placed in a special situation, during which, your human physical body would be put aside and a new body would be created for you, congruent to the needs of your new spiritual assignment and mission. It is impossible for your human mind to comprehend at this particular time the kind of process it takes to accomplish this creation. There are some other possibilities in this respect but they are of an absolute nature and impossible for you to grasp. Some aspects of it will be possible for you to understand after you are out of your human life. Because of that, at this point nothing can be said about this issue. Therefore, we should close this subject for now.

Peter: Thank You very much for this explanation. As you know, last night in my telephone conversation with Dan and Olga, an interesting issue was raised. It related to the abandoned children in Russia and Russian orphanages, as well as to the conditions of children in Africa, South America and in some other countries in Asia, and their unimaginably bad situation and suffering. The question is, why is such a phenomenon permitted with children?

The Lord Jesus Christ: First of all, it is a very good sign that you feel compassion for their condition. One of the reasons that such awful conditions are permitted with children, is to trigger feelings of compassion in humans. Experiencing such feelings has a positive connotation. Because of that, it will have redeeming qualities in humans'

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

final judgment and assessment of their spiritual state and makeup. The way you have to understand this statement is in the fact of human nature itself. If you carefully analyze the true human nature, you will come to the inevitable conclusion that humans, left to themselves, without any external prodding or examples, are incapable of experiencing any positive emotions. After all, they are in the externals of the externals. Also, they were fabricated in such a way, so that they would not be able to have such positive emotions in, from and by themselves. Due to the fact that humans are in this accursed position, in order to enable them to have such positive feelings, external examples are set up for them which function as a triggering, or to use a better word, inducing, device for such emotions and feelings. Otherwise, they could not experience anything positive. In that case, they would have to perish eternally. Such an outcome of human destiny and fate would be inconceivable to My Absolutely Merciful, Forgiving and Compassionate Nature. So, an agreement was made with some sentient entities to incarnate on planet Zero for the purpose of going through such horrible experiences — horrible from your typical human standpoint — in order to enable humans to have such positive emotions. In the past, before July 1, 1988, such volunteers came both from the positive state and the negative state, respectively. Nowadays, especially after that date, they incarnate on planet Zero only from the negative state.

This is one important aspect of such permission. There are several other aspects, as important or even more important than the first one. Don't forget that these children are children only from your human standpoint. They are not children from our standpoint. Their spirit and soul are fully adult trapped in a child's body, brain and nervous system. Therefore, they are fully responsible and accountable for the choices they made in this respect. Also, don't forget what kind of parents and environment they chose to incarnate into on planet Zero. In most instances, those are the children of prostitutes, drug and alcohol addicts, psychopaths, mentally ill, and similar individuals with insurmountable physical, mental, economic and other types of problems, who have very little, if any at all, remorse, guilt, consideration or sense for anyone or anything. This is especially true about children in Russia and some other countries. On the other hand, African children and children in some Latin countries don't suffer that much from the abandonment issue but more from civil wars, insurrection, famine, poor economy, poor management, poor physical and mental health, poor supplies of commercial goods and from similar external factors.

At this point you can ask: Why do they put themselves into such a horrible condition or why do they want to incarnate on planet Zero to

such parents? First of all, do you remember what was said in My New Revelation about incarnating into human life? Everyone who incarnates on planet Zero, without exception or exclusion, incarnates with problems acquired in the special intermediate world as preparation for such an incarnation and, at the very same time, everyone incarnates into the problems inherent in the very nature of the human life. So, how much knowledge do you have about the kind of problems they brought with themselves and, most importantly, what they did and how they did it to acquire such problems in order to deserve to be incarnated into such a harsh and miserable condition and/or situation? How do you know if their choice to be incarnated into such a life was not for the purpose of redemption and/or for the purpose of bearing the consequences of their former actions by which their respective problems, or whatever, were acquired? Or for any other very important spiritual reasons which might be beyond your comprehension and understanding? Do you think that I would tolerate or permit anything of this nature to happen if it were not to serve some very good purpose or if these individuals were not to take upon themselves an assignment to illustrate that specific aspect of the nature of the negative state and the human life? Of course not.

So, if you take into consideration these as well as many other factors, the children in question might not be as innocent as they look or as you think they are. One negative aspect of this situation with children is that it is utilized by some so-called Christian charities and other similar organizations to engage you financially in their effort to save these children from their predicament. And although some of these organizations do some good work in this respect, it is not uncommon that in some instances, a substantial portion of your money goes into their own pocket under the cover of overhead expenses. As you know so well, in human life, anything can be utilized to enrich your own pocket, so-to-speak. And what is a better way to do that than through human misery and suffering and in the name of God? How many endeavors of this nature have enriched the leaders and other members of such organizations? They are masters of playing on your guilt feelings. Remember please, guilt is a very negative emotion. To fall for that may mean that you are playing right into the hands of the negative state.

Just look at the numerous advertisements they put on your television screen regarding the suffering and misery of children in your world! They purposefully show the most afflicted children in order to make you feel guilty, ashamed and embarrassed that you live such a comfortable and pleasant life — relative to their miserable conditions. They almost force you to take out your checkbook and write them a check for a substantial amount of money. That way you assuage your own guilt feelings and

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

other unpleasant emotions related to this situation with children. Has it ever occurred to you that by doing that you might be preventing someone or something from experiences which need to be experienced by the child in question for some extremely important reasons, and that this was a chosen destiny to illustrate something from which everyone can benefit in the ultimate outcome of such choices? Do you remember the advice given to you in Update 15 in the ***Corollaries...***, that you need to learn to look behind the scene and not at the scene because the truth for everything happening in human life is behind it and not in it? If you could look for a moment behind the scene, you would learn the most beautiful lessons regarding the reasons for these kinds of experiences with children, as well as for everyone and everything else, and also regarding the outcome of all these events and how they fit in My Grand Plan for the Salvation of all from the clutches of the negative state and preventing that such things will ever happen again.

Now, this situation with suffering children and any other similar adverse situations that take place on a continuous basis on your planet, lead many humans to proclaim that I either don't care any longer, or that I am a cruel, punishing and inconsiderate God, or that I don't exist at all. Some of them get so frustrated with this type of injustice — in their view — that they rebel against the impotence of various social and political systems' inability and/or unwillingness to do anything about it, and they become instigators and/or supporters of various revolutions, upheavals, terrorism and similar actions, very often leading to the overthrow of existing governmental systems. After that, they establish their own brand of social justice and political systems that are no better, if not much worse, than what they overthrew.

So, the problem continues regardless of their effort to prevent it or to eliminate it. The reason it continues is because they are unable to see the reasons behind the scene why such suffering and misery are permitted to happen and perpetuate in human life. They are not aware of the myriad choices that need to be made in order to exhaust the usefulness for which the negative state was allowed to come to fruition in the first place — with all its abuses, perversions, suffering and abominable adversities. The awful condition of children on your planet is a contributory factor in this respect. And no matter how difficult it is for you to see their suffering and misery, or to be aware of it, nevertheless, it serves its ultimate positive purpose and it is happening by prior agreement and by their own free will and choice. On the other hand, looking at the entire situation regarding the suffering of children in an objective manner and from the typical human standpoint, why do humans breed so much? Who is forcing them to have so many children if they are unable to take care

of them and be responsible for their upbringing? This is especially true in the countries where food is scarce, where famine and all kinds of epidemics are a matter of daily life, where sanitary and other environmental conditions are poor, where basic physical health is very bad and overpopulation is rampant. No excuse exists for having children under those kinds of adverse conditions. There are all kinds of birth control measures available to avoid such a necessity. Of course, this factor doesn't take into consideration the spiritual reason and need for this to be happening. So, let no one be upset about why, for what and for how long this situation on planet Zero will continue to be that way.

Peter: Thank You very much for this explanation. Even though it is extremely difficult and painful to accept children's predicament on this planet and be aware of their suffering, at least some of it, or that part of it which is accessible to us, makes perfect sense to me personally, with Your explanation. I have another question, which is somewhat out of context in the presently discussed dialog. It was asked by Michael M. from Massachusetts. After reading one of our Dialogs which addressed the issue of prayers for others, he would like to know if the same rules apply to the customs that some religiously minded humans (especially Catholics) have by asking their elders when first meeting them and then when they say goodbye for 'la bendicion' (God's blessing) and when they respond with 'Dios te bendiga' or 'God bless you!' How appropriate is this in the light of that Dialog?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Although at first glance, from a typical objective and human standpoint there is no harm in such a request, from the spiritual standpoint no real value exists in its response, as well as in saying to someone 'God bless you' when he/she is sneezing. Those are empty habits, meaningless human traditions and customs perpetuated for many centuries. They are from the externals to the externals. Because of that, they can't take hold in one's internals where it counts. Children should be taught to ask My blessings on their own. I don't need any mediators in order to be able to provide My blessings to them and to all of you. I am present in everyone's internals and from them also in everything else of which they consist. From that presence, everyone has a direct line of communication with Me. Through that line, everyone is welcome to ask for My blessing. However, should anyone choose to do it by mediation, either through an elder or through the clergy, the fact that it is asked from the externals closes the doors to his/her internals and prevents him/her from triggering a proper response. The factor of mediation violates the fundamental law of Creation — that everything proceeds from within to without. You can't be someone else's within. In the position to the other one, you are always without (outside) of him/her.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

How can you initiate anything useful from that position? So, in answering Michael M.'s question, yes, what was conveyed to you in the Dialog on prayer fully applies to the issue he raised. Thus, such things should be avoided in order not to impede that person's ability and willingness to become responsible for his/her own life and for receiving My blessings.

Peter: Thank You very much for Your response. Is this all for today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes. It is My pleasure to respond. Have a very pleasant afternoon, Peter.

Twentieth Dialog

January 16, 1999

Peter: Before proceeding with some concerns I have as a result of the letter I received yesterday, I would like to ask You, is there anything You would like to clarify regarding the issues of the Nineteenth Dialog or anything else?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you Peter; and yes, I would like to make some additional clarifications on the issue of childhood and adulthood as conceived on planet Zero as well as in the positive state. It was indicated in that Dialog that from the standpoint of the positive state's perception, they are, relatively speaking, not children but adults. The way you have to understand this statement is as follows: The moment the respective spirit and its soul enter the chosen fetus in the mother's womb, by that factor, they limit themselves to its developmental stages by suppressing all conscious memories of their previous experiences and knowledge. And not only that, but they yield to the requirements of the pseudo-laws of human nature which require them to be totally dependent on the physical development of the child's brain, nervous system and physical body in general. In other words, the physical body, brain and nervous system are the only instruments through which and by which the respective spirit and its soul may and can manifest on planet Zero. Because of that, their expressions are totally dependent on the impressions acquired by the developing brain of the child from the externals. The external events which are being continuously imposed on the child's perceptive, expressive and impressive faculties of his/her brain from without, serve as a triggering means for the spirit and its soul to gradually and slowly come through and manifest in the child's life. So, in this sense, the spirit and its soul are unable to function to their fullest possible extent while the child's brain and nervous system are in the process of developing. They are adjusted and dependent on the process of the brain, nervous system and other physical organs' growth and maturation.

The other aspect of this issue is the issue of age and aging. As you know, Peter, there is no age or aging in the positive state. As a matter of fact, there is no age or aging per se anywhere or anywhen. The factor of age and aging is typical of the human life, and only of the human life, during humans' residence on planet Zero. It relates only to the human body, its organs, brain and nervous system. Two reasons exist for this arrangement. One, it is the result of My Mercy and Compassion in order to limit the suffering, limitations, restrictions and misery in which

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

human life is embedded. This was by prior agreement before permission was granted for the negative state to be activated. Two, the full nature of the negative state is being exposed in gradual increments which last many, many millennia. One individual can manifest its nature only in a limited way, limited to his/her chosen aspect for this manifestation. Because of the gross relativity, limitations and restrictions of the human body, it can take only so much, and not more than agreed upon. As the process of the chosen aspects of the negative state — or some other aspects for the agents of the positive state — are being manifested and continue, its impact on the physical body is devastating. As a result, the body ages and wears out. In other words, it ages and subsequently succumbs to this process or it dies. However, the spirit and its soul are immune to this process and they don't experience age or aging. This is the reason why it was said that children are children only from the standpoint of your human life but not from the standpoint of the positive state or any other state.

However, the respective child's spirit and soul do influence the development of the brain, nervous system and physical body in general in order to bring them into alignment with the chosen and agreed-upon assignment. So, it is not exactly or entirely true that only external events and upbringing are the decisive factors of how a child's behavior and attitude will develop and be manifested during his/her maturation and in adulthood. The truth of the matter is that the child's spirit and soul, from the very first moment of conception, choose such parents, environments and all other experiential factors, which contribute to the development of the child, which are in full concordance with the chosen destiny. In other words, the respective child's spirit and soul place that child in various conditions, situations and experiences leading to the establishment of a lifestyle which would enable all their choices to come to fruition — either in a positive or a negative sense, respectively. This is one of the major reasons why I stated in our previous Dialog that children are not as innocent as they seem to be or as you think them to be.

The reasons for the suffering of children on your planet applies in the same degree and manner to the so-called homeless and insane humans. The need to provide some help and comfort for them, if your intuition tells you to do so, stems from the issue of compassion, previously mentioned. Because of that, it is appropriate to help them by whatever means are available to you. However, be very careful in cases like that and very thoroughly explore your desire and need to help them so that they don't stem from your own guilt feelings or from some other ulterior motivation. Also, don't forget that sometimes helping them may prevent them from fulfilling their own mission or that your help is utilized by

them for inappropriate reasons (for example, buying alcohol, cigarettes or similar negative goods). At this point you may proceed with addressing your concerns, Peter.

Peter: As You know, yesterday I received a letter from one of the readers of our Dialogs. To preserve the confidentiality of the letter's writer, I won't mention that person's name.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Of course, Peter. It is appropriate to do so.

Peter: Although the letter in question addresses some important issues which need to be addressed, and sincere gratitude is expressed in it for receiving the Dialogs, at the same time, it harshly criticizes the English grammar and the alleged editor's oversight in not making proper, or making improper corrections.

The Lord Jesus Christ: As you know, Peter, one of the many purposes for which these Dialogs are recorded and disseminated to selected others, is in order to trigger a desire in them to ask questions of multiversal significance. Whenever such questions are asked, the timeliness factor is involved. It means that the multiverse is ready to receive answers to such questions or that they need to be answered at this particular time. As mentioned before, it is your assignment from Me to provide such answers in the form of these Dialogs.

Now, to address the issues raised in the letter in question. First of all, the word 'harsh' is a little too harsh, Peter. Even though it sounds that way to you, it is not meant to be that way by its author. The author of that letter is very thankful and appreciative for receiving them. Don't forget your own inferiority complex, which you have as far as the English language is concerned. Your native language is not English. Therefore, any criticism regarding your English writing or speaking triggers resentment, shame and embarrassment in you. You are afraid that the readers of your books, and of these Dialogs, will reject their content because of the numerous violations of the rules of English grammar. But why do you think it was necessary to select someone like you, whose native language is not English, to transmit My New Revelation? Some of these reasons were hinted upon in My introduction to ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***: It was in order to break out of the constrained and restrained grammatical rules of any language to properly convey and express the spiritual ideas which otherwise would have been hampered by those rules. Do remember please, what was mentioned very clearly in Update 15 of the ***Corollaries...***: That in the positive state, The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ is not in

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

written book form but appears as a beautiful idea which is constantly being renewed, regenerated and updated. On your planet, as well as in some other realms, at this time, it needs to be presented in the written form, in the form of a book. No other means are available to you and some others.

One of the reasons for this situation with your English, Peter, is to direct the prospective readers' attention to the very ideas and principles contained and expressed in My New Revelation. In a sense, it is a test of the motivation and intention with which that reading is approached. If one gets bogged down in analyzing the grammatical forms of how it is written; or how many or how few semicolons or commas, or typographical errors, or whatever it contains, instead of concentrating on its beautiful ideas as they do in the positive state; and if because of that one rejects with disgust the ideas and principles contained therein, it is quite possible and conceivable that the respective reader's intention and motivation with which he/she approached his/her reading, are not proper.

On the other hand, do you remember what happened after you finished writing ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ?*** Several people edited it. It was edited numerous times. At that time you were amazed to see that the editors, each an expert in English grammar, had very different ideas on how words, sentences or punctuation should be expressed. Very often, to your surprise, one editor would reverse the corrections made by some other editors. All in all, no consistent consensus existed among any of them. So, you were almost disgusted with the complexity and wild jungle of interpretations of the English language that they offered to you. The same thing is happening with the editing of these Dialogs. For this reason, you correctly felt that it would be a much better idea to leave things as you originally wrote them, even if they do not exactly adhere to the rules of English grammar, and to limit corrections only to obvious typographical errors, and maybe to the word sequence whenever a sentence sounds too non-English, if we may say so. Now, we are talking here in a general sense. It doesn't mean that the writer of that letter is in this situation. It only means that the writer is putting unnecessarily too much in the formality of expressions in these Dialogs. So far, no other readers have complained about it. Just the opposite: The majority of them are elated that finally something like the Dialogs have become available to them. Again, the issue is in the timing.

On the other hand, Peter, don't omit mentioning the content of your telephone conversation earlier yesterday morning before the arrival of the above mentioned letter. You talked with our co-worker, helper,

supporter and one of the individuals most devoted to our cause, Lyudmila Savelieve in Moscow, Russia. What did she tell you? First of all she expressed her deep gratitude, appreciation and thankfulness for receiving these Dialogs and for how helpful and uplifting their content was for her. As you know, she is an expert in English grammar, yet, she didn't mention a word about how many commas, semicolons or typographical errors they contained. She was properly concentrating on their ideas and what they contain. But, most importantly, she told you a very important thing. During your recording of our first few Dialogs (1-8), without having any knowledge from you about the type of questions you were asking or what kind of answers you were getting from Me, Lyudmila was asking Me, in her own state of inwardness, the same type of questions. After reading our Dialogs, she became aware of the striking fact that the answers to them, which she received directly from Me, matched those you recorded in our Dialogs word for word, Peter. This is a beautiful confirmation of the verity of the content of our Dialogs. I specifically provided this experience for your own benefit, Peter; for your own confirmation. Your major problem in this respect is your occasional severe doubts. Very often you are afraid that what you are receiving is not from Me.

Peter: Yes, I am. And yet, sometimes these doubts are torturous. I don't want to be in the position of misleading anyone by telling them or by claiming that things are coming from You while they are coming from the imagination of my own foolish heart and mind. I don't want to find myself in the position of being a false prophet, as some religious groups have already named me.

The Lord Jesus Christ: I understand; and it is prudent to continuously check with Me on all content of the written material. However, at the same time, don't become a target to the negative state by excessively doubting who you are and what your mission and assignment is from Me in this respect. By doubting so much, the negative state is able to block you from your productive work in My services, sometimes for days, weeks and even months. Don't give the forces of the negative state such a pleasure.

Peter: I'll do my best. You mentioned above that the written form or the book form of ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ*** is needed somewhere else in addition to the humans on planet Zero. Something like that was also mentioned in Update 15. Is it possible to get some clarification on that statement?

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter. There are parallel worlds and physical dimensions which approximate the condition of human life, both in the positive and negative sense, respectively. Do you remember from My New Revelation the allusion to the pseudo-creators' process of activating the negative state? It was mentioned there that in that process, they experimented with the fabrication of various sentient and non-sentient life forms which were either too positive or too negative for their own scientific purpose, until their effort culminated in the fabrication of humans. Those sentient life forms, with their non-sentient counterparts, could not be destroyed. They were placed in various sections of the universe, in the case of the too positive ones; and in the pseudo-universe or Zone of Displacement, in the case of the too negative ones. They populated and spread out to the various planets and solar systems of their respective galaxies or pseudo-galaxies. Because these sentient entities were fabricated from various external means and from genetic material that emphasized the need for external input, their need for the written material is obvious.

However, there is another spiritual, as well as scientific, factor which required this arrangement. In any scientific design, several parallel groups are placed in an experiment which would have the same rules of acquiring knowledge, but with different conditions. This setup is needed for comparison. In one group, the positive one, which populated various planets in the universe proper, the written material is presented in order to determine to what extent its members are able to understand and apply what is contained in the written material without any distortions or misunderstanding, as compared to humans. In the other group, the negative one, which populated various planets in the pseudo-universe, to determine how far its members can go in totally distorting, falsifying, perverting and butchering what is contained in the written material, as compared to humans. This setup gives the pseudo-creators and others a clear answer to their question about the issue of objectively verifying the validity of any knowledge acquired by such unusual external means.

Peter: Thank You very much for this explanation. And now I would like to address some issues contained in the letter I received yesterday. First of all, how do You react to that letter's addressing You not as The Lord Jesus Christ but as TLJC?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, Peter, it is a violation of the important spiritual correspondences to which the full pronouncement of My Name, or each of My Names in that configuration — The Lord Jesus Christ — corresponds. TLJC doesn't correspond to anything. It has no meaning and no sense. Such abbreviations should never be used, especially as far

as My Name is concerned, as well as some other spiritual concepts or names are concerned. TLJC is not capable of triggering the most important avenue for establishing an effective communication with Me. Even if it is applied in the written material, it takes away the important spiritual meaning imbued in My Name. It wipes out the significance and impact of My Name for the one who writes it down as well as for the one who reads it.

Peter: Understood. I have never felt comfortable with any type of abbreviation. As You know, it took me several years to memorize what they mean in my professional job. I guess, this was one of the reasons for my ineptness in this respect.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Definitely, Peter. This example only confirms that your position and experiences have always had some important spiritual meaning connected in some way or another to your being the transmitter of My New Revelation.

Peter: Another issue raised in that letter is the issue of Christmas and the way it is celebrated on this planet. The writer of the mentioned letter questions the validity of that date as far as Your physical birth is concerned. Also the letter reflects the writer's disgust with the pagan connotation of that date and all the rituals connected with its celebration.

The Lord Jesus Christ: The reason that date was mentioned in one of our Dialogs is to countermand the negative connotation that the present form of celebration takes. It is truly disgusting to see what it has been turned into by the forces of the negative state. As you see, an all-out effort was made by them to eliminate the true meaning of Christmas as much as possible. And they succeeded in this respect. It has turned into a commercialized, meaningless, money-spending, gift-buying enterprise to keep your economy going and to make children and some adults happy. So, Christmas has lost its true spiritual significance. Don't forget the fact that due to such a gross devaluation of the meaning of Christmas, this time of year also has become a most devastating problem for many humans who are unable to fulfill what they think is their obligation — for whatever reasons. This is a reason why during the time of the holidays, you have one of the highest rates of suicides.

Besides serving to countermand this negative connotation of Christmas, our mentioning it reflects the issue of timeliness. A very important spiritual correspondence exists in why this particular date was chosen to celebrate My birth and the acquirement of My New Nature. It does not

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

matter whether I was born on December 25, or January 7 or on some other date. What matters is that I was born into the human life at all and that I acquired My New Nature. In projecting this factor into the human life, it was necessary to choose a time which would be closest to the corresponding proximity of the spiritual situation that existed at the time of My Birth and My New Nature. Consider this factor: The end of December and beginning of January in the Northern Hemisphere, where I chose to be born, are the darkest, coldest, deadliest months. Daylight is the shortest. Nights are the longest. Nature is barren, almost dead. To what kind of condition does that correspond, spiritually speaking? To devastation and the lack of any proper spiritual life. This was the situation on planet Zero at the time of My birth. In fact, among many other things, it prompted My birth on your planet. A similar situation existed at the time I completed the acquisition of My New Nature. At that time, the negative state completed its effort in taking over planet Zero. The process of its condensation began. All energies were shifted from establishing its dominance on this planet and elsewhere, to its condensation in a last-ditch attempt and effort to destroy the positive state.

This is the reason why the end of December and beginning of January have important spiritual significance related to Me Personally and should be remembered specifically in addition to celebrating them every day — as the author of that letter indicates and suggests. Let the writer of that letter take this factor into consideration and not disregard the spiritual correspondence of these particular dates.

Peter: The other point that the writer of that letter raises is about the statement that ‘Real Absolute Truth must be true in an absolute sense.’ The writer thinks this is circular reasoning.

The Lord Jesus Christ: The writer is forgetting about the paradoxical inference used in logic and in the reasoning process whenever it is necessary to prove a certain point. It is a philosophical construct. In this case, this statement is made to countermand the pseudo-creators’ pseudo-logic in claiming that there is no Absolute Truth. In their view, and in the view of their scientific minions on planet Zero and elsewhere, only relative truth exists. The paradox of this false assumption is as follows: If there is no absolute truth but only relative truth, then the absolute truth is that there is no absolute truth. Therefore, everything is relative. To countermand this falsity, you need to state that Real Absolute Truth must be true in an absolute sense, because their so-called absolute truth is false. Otherwise, you would have to admit that two Absolute Truths exist. Such an existence would be mutually exclusive.

Peter: The writer of the letter thinks that You are stereotyping when You stated that ‘the media is known to be notoriously distorted, incorrect or even false’.

The Lord Jesus Christ: The facts need to be stated the way they are because they are facts. It is not a matter of judging or condemning but a reflection of the situation which exists on your planet. Your media plays a most significant role in promoting the falsehoods of the negative state. Yes, it is their role and mission to do that but this fact needs to be stated in order for you not to fall into their trap. There is a tendency among some of you to accept at face value everything they convey to you. In that case, you would accept distortions and/or falsities in your life. As a consequence, you would become a target for the negative state. Statements like that are meant as a preventive measure.

Peter: Another issue raised in that letter is the issue of sexuality. The author is concerned that You limited the experience of true sexual intercourse to the process of a penis being in a vagina, excluding the spiritual aspect from any other mode of sexual involvement.

The Lord Jesus Christ: The writer of that letter disregarded the spiritual correspondences of this, as well as of many other issues. As mentioned before, and this is a reminder, a penis in a vagina — in! — corresponds to the state of internals or being within. All proper knowledge is always acquired from the state of within. Because, in a general sense, sexuality is one of the most important tools for acquiring such knowledge, the state of a penis in a vagina reflects this important factor. Now, this does not mean that all other modes of sexual involvement that happen between two consenting adults are not valuable or not spiritually uplifting — if approached with positive and good intent. However, all other modes of such involvement have a different significance and meaning.

The conveyed statement about sexual intercourse only meant that from the spiritual standpoint, oral sex, for example, or any other type of sexual involvement, cannot be considered true sexual intercourse, which would be able to trigger the same meaning or become the same source of experience or knowledge as sexual intercourse by the means of a penis being inside a vagina. The clue word here is ‘inside.’ You are not inside or within by any other mode of sexual involvement. These other modes have a totally different connotation and meaning and they trigger totally different spiritual correspondences.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Impotent men, non-orgasmic women, men incapable of ejaculation, artificial implants and similar factors, reflect serious spiritual, mental, psychological and physical problems. For some important spiritual reason or other, in cases like that, the choice was made not to allow themselves the pleasure of having such experiences as a means to illustrate and demonstrate, for the learning of all, what happens if someone puts himself or herself in the position of not having such experiences. This is an illustration of another aspect of the nature of the negative state and human life.

However, in the case of the agents of the positive state, some exceptions to this rule may apply. In their cases, the issue is what it is that they project into their sexual practices — whatever they are or may be. Also, to what extent they allow Me to participate in their sexual involvement by whatever modes or ways and, of course, for what purpose. This is a crucial distinction. So, it would not be a good idea to apply this type of generalization to agents of the positive state in this respect. Your personal and individualized sexual practices should be between Me and two of you who are engaged in them. Always ask Me, by whatever means are available to you, especially through your individual intuition, what would be the best for you in this respect. That way you can never go wrong.

Peter: Thank You very much for Your explanation of all these issues. Is there anything else that should be asked today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome. No, Peter, we should wrap up for today. I wish you a very pleasant afternoon.

Twenty First Dialog

January 17, 1999

Peter: Today, I don't have any specific questions. Rosemarie has a general question regarding pets and animals and Dr. Ardyth Norem has a question regarding energy shifts in general and their impact on human bodies/minds and on the agents of the positive state. I believe Dr. Norem's question was answered to some extent in the Sixteenth Dialog. But, before answering these questions, would You like to comment on anything else or have more clarification on any issues that we have discussed so far?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, Peter, don't you think that first we should address some other concerns raised by the author of the letter, whose content we discussed yesterday?

Peter: In that case, let me spell them out. The author of that letter mentions something about the author's manuscript ***Cosmic Sea*** and ***Holy See***. From the letter it is obvious that it is assumed that I have read or am familiar with that manuscript. To tell You the truth, I don't have the foggiest idea what the author of that letter is talking about. It is the first time I have heard about it. The only manuscript that I read was the first one, which the author wrote several years ago and which talked about a Texas preacher and how he converted to the positive state under the influence of Your New Revelation. But to go back to the other issues raised in that letter. The first question relates to the possible sexual intercourse with a negative entity that assaults one sexually in a dream or a vision or similar setup. Could it become an enjoyable experience which may lead that negative entity to convert to the positive state? The issue relates to the terms used in Demonology — 'incubus and succubus.' Incubus refers to an evil spirit who supposedly descends upon sleeping women and has sexual intercourse with them. On the other hand, a succubus allegedly is a demon in female form, said to have sexual intercourse with sleeping men.

The second issue relates to the term 'common people.' The author of that letter doesn't know in what connotation it is being used. The author assumes that the word 'common' carries some tinges of prejudice with it. The third issue or question relates to the Marian dogma. The author asks what Marian dogma is. And finally, since we call someone 'psychic,' what do You call them? I hope I have covered all the issues raised in that letter. So, the floor is Yours, if I may say so.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

The Lord Jesus Christ: You may, Peter, you certainly may. Well, let us begin with the sexual issue and then proceed to other concerns. Following that, we'll address Rosemarie's and Ardyth's questions.

As you know, Peter, sexual issues are one of the most sensitive, misunderstood, misconceived, misinterpreted, misinformed and most inappropriately practiced issues in human history and in the history of the Zone of Displacement. To use your figure of speech: It is a loaded gun, a barrel full of powder ready to explode at any minute. No matter how much you explain or interpret the issue of sexuality, it will never satisfy everyone. It will always stir bad blood within many, so-to-speak, rage and many other negative emotions — should your interpretation and offered explanation of sexuality contradict their own understanding accepted under the influence of whatever belief system they cling to or believe in.

It is almost futile to discuss this issue because the same thing that can please one person, can turn off someone else. And such a turn off can even happen to the point that such respective person rejects the entirety of My New Revelation — as the case has been in the past on several occasions. But let's get to the point. Do such evil spirits or demons as incubus and succubus really exist as independent entities specializing in the sexual seduction of men and women while they are asleep? Are such things possible? And if by any chance you perceive that such a sexual assault is taking place in your dreams, should you succumb to that experience, making it an enjoyable one which might help that entity convert to the positive state? There are no such specific entities per se as incubus and succubus.

However, don't forget one important thing. Sexuality is one of the most cherished and utilized tools in the hands of the forces of the negative state to influence, seduce, corrupt, mislead, confuse, pervert, block and destroy humans, and everyone else in their domain, and their proper conceptualization and practice of sexuality and proper understanding of spirituality and everything related to life in general and in specific. For that reason, there is a contingent of evil spirits and/or demons that specializes in sexual matters in order to impose on humans and others the acceptance of the life and nature of the negative state. This contingent may be called incubus and succubus — if you wish.

The question, of course, is what should you do if one of the members of that contingent comes to you in your dreams and tries to sexually assault you — as it happened to the author of that letter. The procedure the author described is a good one. You instantly call upon Me, pouring out

My and your love, compassion, mercy and forgiveness and, at the same time, ask that entity the purpose and reason for which it approached you. Is it for a negative purpose, as described above? Is it a trap to get you into the negative state under the pretense of great pleasure from having sexual intercourse? Or is it being utilized to give that entity an opportunity to convert to the positive state? Don't forget that some members of that contingent do want to convert to the positive state under the general call for conversion provided in the Hells by My outposts. You have to understand that because these members function only through sexuality — it is their only tool — they don't know any other way to approach you for that purpose but by imposing sexual intercourse on you during your vivid dreams while you are asleep. So, it would be your duty and responsibility to determine what factor is in place during such an event.

However, if such an approach is for the purpose of destroying you and impeding your services for Me and for My positive state in general, your duty in this respect is to get rid of that entity in My Name. However, before you do that, you are to read that entity the rights and privileges it has from Me and offer it the option to convert to the positive state. If the entity agrees to convert, it is then sent to the appropriate region where it will be taken care of. If not, then you send it back from where it came. Remember, no entity, no matter how powerful it seems to be, has any hold over you or can impose anything on you unless you allow it to do so by your wrong attitude, inappropriate behavior, negative desire or by some other factor stemming from your selfish needs. Only such negative characteristics are able to open the doors to the influence of the negative state, through which such evil entities may enter you, causing you all kinds of problems or sexually assaulting you.

So, you are advised to always explore your state of mind and your desires, behavior, attitude or whatever, in order to determine the reasons for potentially or actually having such experiences. Talking about sexuality, let's touch upon a question not asked by the author of that letter. Its author did ask about humans who have no possibility of having sexual intercourse in the obvious manner — penis in a vagina — for whatever reasons and/or problems. But what about humans who choose not to have, ever, any sexual experiences? Take for example, priests, monks and nuns in the Catholic and other religions who are prohibited from having any sex by the dogmas of their respective religions. Or people who specifically and consciously have made some kind of solemn promise or vow to avoid sexual experiences for the rest of their human life. These humans, by their own free will and choice, consciously volunteered to enter such a restrictive type of life. They have their own

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

private and personal reasons why they made such a choice. Sometimes such a choice is made for positive and good reasons — in their view, to help the world and humanity by spending all their lives in meditations and prayers. In view of the previously described usefulness of such prayers, they are useless and futile, leading nowhere. What a waste of positive and productive energy which could be used for much better causes! Others enter such a condition because they believe that sex is a sinful, dirty, filthy, ungodly and disgusting act tolerated only for procreation and only within the marital bonds. And because, in their view, a life without sex much more readily leads to admission into the bliss of Heaven after physical death, they think that by entering such a sexless lifestyle, they will be eligible to receive a ticket that will place them in a much higher position in the heavenly hierarchy than anyone else. This is spiritual arrogance, of course.

So, what do you think will happen to humans like that upon arriving in the spiritual world? As you know, because of their sacrifice in this respect, they expect to be rewarded with some very unusual and elevated position in Heaven. To their greatest surprise, they find themselves in a very peculiar position. By choosing a sexless life while living on planet Zero, they repudiated from their spirit and soul any tolerance of anything even remotely related to sexuality. So, when they experience the heavenly atmosphere, they find it absolutely unbearable and suffocating for the simple reason that the heavenly atmosphere is charged with purely positive sexual energy. By their adopted attitude and lifestyle, such atmosphere becomes poisonous for them.

So, what do you do with humans like that? As you know, Peter, Swedenborg was the first one who noticed this situation with such humans. In his time, for those priests, monks and nuns, and similar humans who entered that state — because in the purity of their heart they believed in the truthfulness of the doctrines of their respective religion or churches; and who had no other hidden agenda or ulterior motivation in this respect, — a special region was created, separated from the positive and the negative state, respectively, and a special atmosphere was induced in that region in which they could breathe without any difficulties. Others, with hidden agendas and negative ulterior motivation and intention, when they learned that Heaven is charged with purely sexual energy, they became so furious and enraged that they cursed God and chose to go to one the Hells where similarly minded creatures resided.

Of course, as you know, Peter, many changes have occurred in the spiritual world since the time of Swedenborg. The region in question was

abolished. Instead, a special division in the New School was established which specializes in the affairs of these types of humans who entered a sexless life with positive and good intent, and for no other ulterior reasons. You have absolutely no idea, Peter, the kind of efforts, insurmountable difficulties, complex and lengthy procedures, spiritual genetic restructuring and similar means that need to be utilized in their case, in order to reverse their accursed condition. Others, who refuse to enter the New School, choose to go to one of the Hells where they are gradually and slowly introduced into some semblance of a sexual life, albeit a negative one. In some ways, it is better to be sexually involved in whatever mode and by whatever means, as long as it does not hurt anyone, than to have a totally sexless life by one's own choice and desire.

To conclude this issue, let Me tell you or remind you that there is nothing more individualized and personalized than sexuality and how it is practiced in your own private and intimate life. In your case, as My agents, it is even more so. Therefore, it is ultimately between Me and you. So, you are advised to approach Me personally and ask Me how sexual life should be practiced, experienced and manifested in your own private life. No general rules can be given in this respect that would be applicable to all in a blanket manner. For that reason, I would prefer it if questions about sexuality are no longer asked in a general sense but are directed to Me directly during your own private and intimate communication with Me or through your own intuition, or any other mode available to you, in case you don't have a sense or perception of such communication.

Peter: Thank You very much for this explanation. I hope that the author of that letter, as well as anyone reading this, will do so.

The Lord Jesus Christ: I hope so too. However, don't count on it. It is like opening a can of worms, as you say it; or as opening Pandora's box. And now, let's proceed with the other concerns raised in that letter.

The term 'common people' is not used in the same sense as the author of that letter perceives it. To use the word 'prejudice' as applied to Me is to misconstrue the character of My Absolute Nature which doesn't contain any negative human types of emotions or attitudes. The author is projecting the typical human understanding of this term unto Me. Common people are those on planet Zero and elsewhere in the Zone of Displacement who have very little interest in deeper spiritual and life issues, or similar issues, and who go about their everyday business and activities without considering any causative factors for anything going on in their everyday life. It simply doesn't enter their mind. They don't

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

concern themselves with any such questions or issues. They simply bypass their awareness. And if they listen to something like that in their church, or in any other place, whatever they hear in this respect enters in one ear and goes out the other without triggering any interest or desire to ponder about it any further. If you look around, you will find that the majority of humans fall into this commonality. Hence, common people. They are differentiated from those who are outside of this commonality. Such as, for example, My agents and some others interested in such issues.

The term ‘Marian dogma’ was coined by the Catholic Church. It is a pseudo-spiritual concept which requires Mary to be placed on an equal footing, if not higher, with Me, her alleged Son. It means that Mary should also be considered a redeemer, savior and mediator for humankind, together with Me, to My God-the-Father. It is an abomination of the Catholic Church. The term ‘psychic’ is used by humans. In the conceptualization of the positive state, this term doesn’t have any merit because it assumes seeing or feeling something by one’s intuition or insight into one’s own universal consciousness, triggered by the presence of someone or something else and, in most instances, under the influence of the negative state. For that reason this term has a negative connotation. Because of that, it cannot be used in the positive state. Instead, they are called humans who are sensitive to the inputs from the emotions, desires, wishes, expectations and projections of others or their possessions and objects, and who attempt to derive from them the past, present and future events as related to any particular person consulting such a sensitive human. The need to know these events stems also from the negative state.

Peter: I think we’ve exhausted responding to the issues raised in that letter. What a letter!

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter. However, don’t forget, and I am repeating this, that one of the important functions of these Dialogs is to trigger in their readers the need to ask questions that may have multiversal significance. The reason for this need can be found in the factor of timeliness mentioned previously, and in the fact that any knowledge about anything which derives from the Absolute Source — Me, can be conveyed to you only in certain well-defined increments. Also, don’t forget the factor of each respective individual’s position. From their position, questions are being asked which can be asked only and only from their position and from the position of that area of the multiverse — their spiritual home base — from which they incarnated on planet Zero.

This factor is very important and needs to be taken into consideration — if you wonder why so many questions.

Peter: Yes, I see Your point clearly. Should we now proceed with answering questions raised by Rosemarie and Ardyth?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, we may proceed with them. Let's take briefly the issue of pets and domesticated animals and the feelings of love and compassion they evoke in people. The issues of compassion and love can be applied to pets in a similar fashion as with abandoned children. This is one positive function of such pets. However, there is more to it than that. As you know, most pets, although not all, such as, for example, cats and dogs, are negative spiritual correspondences. They represent the fact that in order for the negative state to exist and to flourish, someone has to love it and take care of it. Otherwise, the negative state could have never come to its adverse fruition. So, humans who love and care for their pets represent this factor. As you see from this fact, it's a mixture of a positive and a negative connotation, so typical for human nature. The problem with having pets is not in having them, but in some humans' unreasonable and damaging attachments that they establish with their pets, even to the point that they make them the sole inheritors of their estate. In this sense, the pets become idols and rule their life force in which they vest the meaning of their life. In this case, your entire life revolves around your pets as though nothing is more important in life than that. Once you arrive at this point, you fall into the clutches of the negative state. Because of this danger, you have to be very careful for what purpose, reasons or why you keep pets in your home. Again, as always, ask Me whether it would be a good idea to have such pets in your particular case. Even in questions like that, it is a matter of personalization and individualization without any generalities.

And finally, in answer to Ardyth's question: As you know, the nature of the current shift, among many other significant things, represents a significant distribution of energy which goes into the ultimate condensation of the negative state, especially on planet Zero. For the agents of My positive state, situated on planet Zero, it may feel as a depletion of their personal positive energy, which they agreed to share or to release to the negative state for that purpose — but ultimately to the positive state, because the more condensed the negative state becomes, the closer it is to its end and elimination. Some sensitive individuals among My agents, especially those who chose to reflect various occurrences by their bodily and/or mind functions, feel that this process weakens their physical, mental and mind functions. The result of this condition is their temporary state of physical and mental tiredness —

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

even despair in some cases. In order to prevent this from setting in for too long, they would be advised to concentrate on My presence in them and replenish their lost energies from the Absolute Energy that radiates from Me unceasingly. All they need to do is ask. It is constantly available. The issue here is again the same as was indicated in the Sixteenth Dialog. If you are too much or for too long preoccupied with the negative state, it increases its negative influence on you and you feel its presence in a much greater degree than otherwise would be the case. To avoid such a potential, concentrate instead on Me and on the positive aspects of your mission, which you have from Me.

Peter: Thank You so much for giving us these explanations and clarifications. Is there anything else today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: As always, you are welcome, Peter. And no, this should be all for today. Have a pleasant afternoon.

Twenty Second Dialog

January 18, 1999

Peter: Before beginning with my own questions — not that I have any for today — I would like to ask You if You would like to make any comments, clarifications or anything at all, this morning?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, I would like to do so. Several issues exist that need further clarification and explanation. The issue is, once again, timeliness. Certain things need to be clarified further because the proper climate and condition were established for this to happen. Also, because the issues have to be presented and elaborated upon in progressive steps in order to reflect the development and implementation of the shift currently occurring. As the shift is being manifested further and further, so are the needs to clarify, explain, elaborate and discuss its various aspects. In the sense of spiritual correspondences, these needs are manifested in the questions and answers, and in their gradual recording, which reflect the nature of this shift.

So, to simplify, as the shift is progressing from one level to another, and from one step to another, so are these Dialogs and what they contain. The shift presently occurring has a somewhat different connotation than any previous ones. Whereas during the previous shifts, there always was a sense of their beginning and ending, and the setting in of the period of their rule, implementation and impact, the present shift has a progressive and continuous nature without the anticipation of it ending soon. We have here a synchronous occurrence and parallel manifestation of the nature of this shift and of what it entails. This situation somewhat bypasses the law of cause and effect; meaning that first there is a cause and then there is a subsequent effect. In our case, with this shift, the cause and effect are not of a sequential manifestation, but parallel, synchronous and simultaneous. So, as the shift is moving on forward and onward, so is its impact, influence and rule without a waiting period for it to set in at each point of its occurrence. It does set in but without this waiting period. However, in the moment we need to bring to your attention some other clarifications regarding the discussed issues, it is necessary to yield to the sequential requirement of human nature because of its inability to perceive or understand things in a synchronous, parallel and simultaneous manner. Hence, the need for clarifications in steps.

The first brief clarification needs to be made on the term ‘common people.’ The way its definition was offered in the previous Dialog could

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

give an incorrect impression to some readers that common people might be less valuable, less needed or less important in the scheme of the manifestation of the nature of the negative state. The reason why someone agrees to incarnate in the life of so-called commonalities, is for the purpose of illustrating the nature and character of a life without any particular interest in deeper spiritual issues and similar important factors of life in general. In other words, the question is, what would life be like if it were to be devoid of any, or have very marginal and superficial interest in the issues that really count and are the most important factors of any life? Is such a life possible? And if it is, would anyone be able to survive it for too long without any stimulation or interest in such issues? What is being illustrated here is another important aspect of the nature of the negative state as well as of some aspects of the nature of human life. It is an illustration and demonstration of a life of boredom, emptiness, meaninglessness, purposelessness and similar negative factors inconceivable in the positive state. It is a clear-cut demonstration of what happens, or what is the outcome, if life has no proper spiritual foundation, no deeper meaning, but instead, is rooted in superficiality, preoccupation with external events, without any, or very little awareness of the inner, internal or within factors of life and their spiritual origin and correspondences.

So, in assessing the value of common people, you need to realize that by agreeing to exhibit and demonstrate this type of life, they provide very important and valuable services for the entire Creation, contributing very vital information to the cache of multiversal knowledge. Thus, it would be very improper to underestimate their role or to look down upon them.

The second clarification relates to the issue of the grammatical structure or to the formal expression of the ideas recorded in My New Revelation and in these Dialogs. The major reason, although not the only one, for choosing someone like you, Peter, to be their transmitter was to parallel the way things are being presented to the inhabitants of the positive state. As you know, in the positive state, or in the Spiritual World proper, everything is presented to them as ideas. In order to train readers of My New Revelation to concentrate on ideas and not on the external form of their expression or how they are written, it was and is sometimes necessary to violate the grammatical rules for expressing such ideas. You look for ideas and by doing that you bring yourself into alignment with the positive state. This alignment establishes a line of direct communication with the Spiritual World, enabling you to be in direct contact both with Me and the members of your spiritual family

and other inhabitants of the positive state. This mode of connection makes it possible for you to be bridges and translators in both directions.

On the other hand, if you are bogged down in the formal, external expression of those ideas, their proper meaning may elude you, and because of that, the line of communication cannot be established. You have remained in the externals. No true spiritual meaning was acquired. This situation has another drawback. If one puts too much into the external formal expression of ideas and things, upon arriving in the spiritual world, one has tremendous difficulties understanding what is being presented or required from him/her. In that case, such an individual needs to undergo a somewhat lengthy training and decontamination from the habit and attachment to such a mode of externalization. So, by training yourself to perceive My New Revelation and these Dialogs, which are becoming an integral part of it, as spiritual ideas rather than grammatical constructs, you are being trained in the manner and mode of life in the positive state and My Creation in general. That way you will avoid wasting time, effort and energy on the process of decontamination and retraining in that manner and mode. Don't underestimate this process and don't be upset whenever you encounter some grammatical problems in these recordings.

Talking about attachments, habits and addictions, this brings us to the third issue that needs clarification — the issue of attachments.

The issue of attachments doesn't relate only to pets, trinkets and similar minor conveniences. One can be attached to many things, including grammar and various daily rituals. However, one can also become attached to a relationship. Strong attachments can become dangerous habits and/or even addictions. At one point in time, you can find yourself in a situation when life becomes unbearable and even impossible without them. When it gets to this point, the situation with one's attachments becomes spiritually very dangerous. Take, for example, a strong attachment to one's dog or cat or whatever animal. If that attachment graduates to the point that you find yourself saying, 'I can't live without my dog or cat,' your attachment has been internalized, embedded into the structure of your personality, and it becomes an integral part of your self-identity. And here comes the spiritual danger of that situation from the standpoint of your life, following your departure from planet Zero. You take all such attachments with you. When you arrive in the spiritual world, your very first impulse is to seek out the subject of your attachments. After all, you did internalize the factor that you can't live without them. So, you have an immediate tendency to establish their corresponding factors in order to continue in your life of attachments. As

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

you know, each attachment has corresponding representations in the spiritual world. You seek out the state and condition where such corresponding representations of your attachments are manifested. Imagine please, your attachment to a cat or a dog. Because their corresponding representations can be found only in the Hells, your strongest pull would be to go in the direction of the respective Hell where they are manifested or reside.

Unfortunately, this is true even if someone is basically of a positive nature or is an agent of the positive state. This situation illustrates the possible trap set up for you by the forces of the negative state through such attachments in order to get you into one of their Hells so that they can torture you or sway you to their cause while you are looking for the subjects of your attachments in one of their Hells.

However, let us take another example, a more dangerous one, the result of which could last for a long period of time, causing much unnecessary suffering and pain. Take, for example, someone who is an agent of the positive state and sexually or maritally involved with an agent of the negative state while living on planet Zero. In the process of such a marital, sexual or deep friendship type of relationship, a very strong bond, attachment and mutual interdependency is established, to the point that it becomes symbiotic and addictive. In essence, they almost become like one. In this case, a setup is established in which both partners in that relationship internalize and identify themselves with their symbiotic relationship to the point that they proclaim that they can't live without each other.

Let us assume that the agent of the negative state dies first, followed by the death of the agent of the positive state. What do you think is going to happen? Upon arriving in the spiritual world, the first thing the agent of the positive state will desire to find will be the subject of his/her attachment and symbiotic relationship. After all, he/she can't live without his/her partner. At least that's what he/she thinks. But because his/her partner is in one of the Hells, being that he/she was an agent of the negative state, the agent of the positive state has a very strong pull to go after his/her partner. Again, a trap has been set up by the forces of the negative state through their agent in order to corrupt or get the agent of the positive state into one of their Hells, where they can perform all kinds of unimaginable things on him/her for the purpose of making him/her their slave and follower.

I can assure you that it takes much longer and it is much more painful to get out of the Hells for such a respective agent in a situation like this, in

comparison with someone who is looking for his/her animal attachments there. What you have to understand about this particular example, is that an agent of the positive state who is in such a symbiotic relationship with an agent of the negative state, will choose to go the respective Hell where his/her partner is, not only because of the dependency on his/her partner, but also because of the inherent nature of the agent of the positive state which is rooted in mercy, forgiveness and compassion. He/she will go to the Hells in order to save his/her partner and to bring him/her out of the Hells. Little does he/she know what will be expecting him/her there.

As you see from these examples, the situation can be very complicated by such attachments, habits and addictions. A heroin addict for example, at the very first moment of arriving in the spiritual world, will look for a source of supply that can assuage his/her craving. So will the user of nicotine products and drinker of strong coffee, alcohol or any other addictive substances; so is anyone who is addicted to anything. The withdrawal symptoms from such addictive agents are much worse in that world than on planet Zero because of the spiritual correspondences of such chemical agents and their negative spiritual roots.

Why is it that such strong attachments, habits and addictions, if internalized to the point that they become an integral component of one's self-identity, are so spiritually dangerous? Consider this: When you become attached, habituated or addicted to someone or something, you become dependent on them. All your thoughts, feelings, emotions, behavior, attitude, motivation, intentions and all other aspects of your mental faculties will revolve around your attachments. (Do you remember what happens to you when you fall in love with someone?) You won't be able to live without them. Your life will become extremely uncomfortable without them. You really become, to the fullest possible extent, your own self-fulfilling prophecy rooted in your statement, 'I can't live without you.' In that case, your independence, your true individuality, personality and self-identity will get shattered and replaced with something artificially imposed on you from the outside. In the moment this happens, the door to the Hells is fully opened, and you are invaded by a host of negative and evil spirits who feed on such conditions. Gradually and slowly, without you becoming aware, they will take over your life and will rule all aspects of it from the position of the negative state. In that case, you would lose your freedom and independence. And if this becomes a fact in your life, you would lose your direct contact with Me and with the true spiritual reality. You would become a slave of the forces of the negative state.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

One of the reasons why it was indicated to you in Chapter 20 of ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ*** to avoid as much as possible getting involved sexually or otherwise with someone who is not of the same spiritual orientation as you are, or who does not accept My New Revelation as My True Word, was in order to give you a preventive option or to save you from developing these kinds of attachments and symbiotic relationships which could lead you into a trap, ending up in the way described above. You should never underestimate the potency, power, pseudo-creativity and cunning of the forces of the negative state who are very inventive in setting up all kinds of traps for the agents of the positive state on planet Zero in order to detour them from their mission and assignment, and lull them into one of their Hells upon their recall from your planet.

This warning became especially timely and acute during the process of the current shift. As the negative state's condensation becomes denser and denser and intense, so does its efficiency in enabling their traps to become more effective to work on you, especially and particularly through your attachments, habits, addictions and similar factors. A spiritual war is going on and the weapons of the negative state have become more sophisticated and effective in their assaultive properties. This is permitted to happen in order to bring about the negative state's pseudo-victory on your planet and elsewhere. However, if you are careful and take to heart these warnings and rely on Me and My New Revelation, you will be protected from falling into such traps. For that reason, I would humbly advise everyone of you to carefully examine your attachments, routines, habits or addictions, or whatever you might have in this respect, in order to determine their nature (how negative they are — if at all!) and how much or how far they have taken hold of you, to the point of totally depending on them; so that you may get rid of them. That way you will avoid falling into the negative state's traps.

Peter: I appreciate Your warning very much. As You know, the human tendency is to establish all kinds of attachments, develop all kinds of habituations and become addicted to many things. But is there anything like good and positive attachments and habituations?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, it depends on what they are. For example, a good habit is to read My New Revelation on a daily basis, to meditate, to communicate with Me and the members of your spiritual family or to exercise in order to maintain your physical body in a healthy condition so that your spirit and soul can fully manifest their functions without impediment or restriction. What is the purpose of attachments and habits as these? To be a better human being, a more spiritually,

mentally and physically healthy human being, a more positive human being, more loving, wiser, effective, efficient, useful, fruitful and more and more as and like I am, relative to My Absolute Condition and Nature. The purpose here is positive and because it is positive, it stems from the internals or from the positive state, or ultimately from Me. In the true reality of their nature, they are not true attachments, habits or addictions but an orderly and lawful maintenance of your life in a healthy condition in the midst of the sick, insane and unhealthy negative state in order to avoid being contaminated, polluted and poisoned by its atmosphere and environment. Can you see the difference?

The other types of strong attachments, as enumerated above, are of a negative origin because they don't have any positive connotation and they are of an external nature only. They don't lead you to your within. Or if they do, as with mind-altering illicit drugs, it is a false or pseudo-within where the negative state resides or is rooted. The weaker aspects of such attachments are either neutral or have some positive connotation in triggering in humans the ability to experience compassion, etc. — having dogs and cats, for example, but without any deeper attachments or internalization.

And, finally for today, I would like to make a brief comment about one aspect of your telephone conversation with Dan yesterday. It directly relates to My New Nature and how it is being accommodated or changed in the process of humankind's development throughout the ages. Although the full nature of this process is impossible for you to understand, comprehend or apprehend, because it happens in and from the Absolute State and Condition, the way you have to conceptualize this process is as follows: Any changes that happen at all anywhere, and not only in the process of humankind's development, are the result of My Absolute Change. This is an absolutely dynamic process. As you know, nothing is ever the same at each moment or state of progression. This situation reflects changes in the Absolute which are subsequently conveyed to the relative. As a result of those changes being released from the Absolute into the relative, the relative subsequently changes also. So, to be more specific: In human history there has been a progression from the early ages of obscurity, to the Dark and Middle Ages, to the Renaissance, to the Industrial Revolution, to the present advanced technological accomplishments, etc.

All these stages have profound spiritual correspondences and they reflect or are the results of the release of some new information from My Absolute Nature which impacts everyone, including those in the negative state and on your planet. Without them being released from Me, no

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

changes or progression could ever occur anywhere whatsoever. At the same time, simultaneously and synchronously with these changes in My Nature, I accommodate Myself to the perceptive, receptive and impressive abilities of all sentient entities, humans and My agents on planet Zero and, also to you, Peter, personally, as the transmitter of My New Revelation; and relate to all of them and to all of you from this new level of accomplishments and changes. This is the reason why you see so clearly how I relate to you differently or in a different mode of conveying My Word at each junction of such changes.

The present situation and shift reflect a further degree of change with the subsequent need to accommodate Myself and you to the present mode of conveying My information and communication to you, as reflected in this particular form — in the form of Dialogs. It all has a very deep spiritual meaning. Do you see, Peter, how all these things have a tremendous significance reflecting the progressive changes in the fabric of being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence?

Peter: Yes, Sir, very clearly. And thank You very much for this explanation. Is there anything else today that You would like to clarify?

The Lord Jesus Christ: No, Peter, it is sufficient for today. Go and rest. Your physical body is somewhat tired. Have a very pleasant afternoon.

Twenty Third Dialog

January 19, 1999

Peter: Two issues are on my mind this morning. I would like to bring them to Your attention and You decide whether it would be useful to discuss them; or whether it is timely to do so — as far as these two issues are concerned. The first issue relates to the preoccupation, anxiety and fears about what is going to happen to humankind with the year 2000 computer glitch. I realize that this question might be calling for a prediction of the future and therefore, it would not be appropriate to ask it. The second issue was raised by Dr. Ardyth Norem. It relates to our collaboration with the pseudo-creators and to what extent it is still needed or in what way it should continue, if at all. So, here it is.

The Lord Jesus Christ: It is a well-known fact that human nature has the tendency, in its programming, to be preoccupied with future events and especially with doomsday and/or with subjects about the end of the world. Just look at the history of humankind. From the very first awareness that human life was not a continuous phenomenon but that it will be ending permanently somewhere along the line of its being and existence, myriad attempts have been made to predict the possible dates of such an ending and of various doomsday events. Even My own disciples, following My departure from your planet, continuously warned their followers about the near, as a matter-of-fact, very near ending of this world and about My Second Coming which is tied-in with this ending. In fact, some of them believed that it would happen during their lifetime.

Any time some kind of sign appeared in the skies, such as comets, for example, or some other unusual astronomical and/or astrological phenomena were noted, or whenever some disaster struck, war began, a devastating epidemic, famine or similar events took place, humans talked about the end of the world. And not only that, but they calculated the dates when this would happen. At the end of the first millennium, humankind was expecting the end of the world to occur at the moment the year 1000 began. And yet, none of these predictions have ever come true. Sure, there have always been some local events, even Great World Wars, and various large scale disasters, which ended in the death of many millions of humans. However, they never resulted in the end of the world as conceived by the apocalyptic prophecies.

At least two things are wrong with such predictions. One, they disregard the spiritual factors of such possible occurrences and evolvments in

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

other worlds not of your dimension. Because humans have none, or an extremely limited access to the events in other worlds, they assume that whatever the prophecies are predicting, primarily and only relate to the destiny of humankind and of this planet. But because any events of such multiversal significance are accompanied by some external signs — as a result of their spiritual correspondences influencing the external manifestations of such events, they erroneously apply them to their own destiny and outcome. This is one of the reasons why all such precise dates of impending doomsday never come true or they come true only in a very limited, localized and insignificant way never resulting in the predicted outcome. Take for example, the appearance of the most devastating weapons of mass destruction, such as for example, nuclear devices. Never has a situation like that existed during the history of humankind. Humans have never had in their possession these types of weapons which could annihilate the entire planet within a few minutes, if not seconds. How many predictions have you heard about the annihilation of this planet since the time such devices became available to various countries on your planet? How many times were you told that this was an entirely different situation, a totally new situation, and because of that no one could have, even in their wildest imagination, the foggiest idea what such a new, unusual availability would cause for humankind. 'Now we can say for sure that the end of the world is coming because of this totally new situation.' And this was said many times! And yet, nothing of that nature has happened as of yet.

Sure, you can say, 'it has never happened yet, but it may happen in the near or far future'. Of course it could happen! But do I need to remind you what I told you about this issue on October 11, 1993 as you recorded it at the very end of Update 15 in the ***Corollaries...***? Let me refresh your memory, and that of every reader of these Dialogs, and I quote: *'On the other side of the coin, is also the possibility that transition out of planet Zero and the actual dissolution of planet Zero, and reestablishment of the proper hierarchy and order of all elements in the physical, the natural and the most within, can happen in the most simple terms; and in the most gentle terms as well.'* In other words, the end of your world, or, to be more precise, the ending of the human era also on planet Zero, as it is ended elsewhere, can happen without all those fancy and spectacular mind-boggling disasters, cataclysmic and apocalyptic events with which humans are so preoccupied. Don't be disappointed if things do not end as everyone is expecting them to end. As it was already revealed through Swedenborg and confirmed in My New Revelation, the prophetic and apocalyptic predictions recorded in the Bible, for example, in most instances don't relate to events that happen now or might happen in the future on planet Zero, but instead, they relate to the Intermediate World

of Spirits. Yes, the consequences of those events that take place in that world do have a reverberating effect on the events on your planet in the form of a reaction to an action taken there, but their application was and is limited to the form of visitations that have more of a localized, rather than an all-inclusive planetary reaction or effect.

However, as you know, Peter, that world, the World of Spirits or the Intermediate World, was cleaned up and the Last Judgment was conducted on all their inhabitants. The first phase of that Judgment was initiated at the time of Swedenborg's life. It was fully completed at the time of your writing ***Messages from Within***, Peter. After that, and at this point in time, everything has been shifted to the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero. The situation is starting to be more interesting for you because now it is happening or will be happening in your own backyard, so-to-speak. But does it have to happen in such a disastrous, cataclysmic, apocalyptic or whatever way? Not necessarily! It can really happen in a totally unexpected way for all of you. Don't forget that the pseudo-creators are on the scene and that the renegades are also on the scene. The outcome of their civil war may determine the type of ending for the typical and specific human era or human life, or the form that the end of this world and the entire visible pseudo-universe will take.

And this brings us to the second point. As mentioned in one of the previous Dialogs, the factor that is not being taken into consideration is the choices that all the involved are facing. Don't forget also the most important factor, the factor of My agents' involvement on planet Zero, in the Zone of Displacement and of all inhabitants in the entire positive state in all their respective dimensions in the entire multiverse. This factor will determine what the outcome will be in this respect. I can safely tell you one secret: **An all-out effort is being made by all involved — with the exception of the renegades and their respective minions and some other minorities — to execute this ending in the most gentle, peaceful, kind, harmonious and positive way.**

So, will the year 2000 and its computer glitch bring a total collapse of all human systems as predicted by so many, who like the doomsday scenario? And is it really going to happen that way because humankind has never experienced anything like that and the entire function of all human systems and affairs depend solely on computers or machines? But how many times have humans faced, throughout their entire history, something which had never been experienced by them before? So, in brief, it might or might not happen that way depending on all those

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

choices that we have just discussed above. Should you do anything about it if the outcome is as predicted by the doomsday scenario? It depends entirely on you and your intuition. If you feel like buying all kinds of food supplies and similar commodities and prepare other similar things, if it makes you feel safer and secure, by all means, go ahead and do it. No harm would be done by such provisions. After all, even if nothing happens in the manner predicted by some, or if it happens only in some limited and localized fashion, not influencing the course of everyday normal life functions too much, you can still use the prepared goods for your own everyday needs. So, the choice is yours; so are the consequences.

However, what you hear about this whole issue, what you are being told about it or how there are not enough people or enough time to resolve that computer glitch, might not be the way it is being presented to you. It would be wise and prudent not to buy too much into their claims. Don't be surprised if you find out somewhere along the line that there may be a hidden agenda behind all of these predictions. Humans, perhaps, are being set up for something that could and would never happen, in order to manipulate their lives and behaviors. How do you know if this entire setup is not some kind of experiment in the scheme of the negative state's domination of humankind permitted by Me for some very important spiritual reasons? So, don't be taken in by any of these predictions and expectations but, as always, keep your mind open and be prepared for any possible surprises, relying on Me and on your personal and private intuition. These two factors will determine for you what to do, what to expect and how to proceed in this respect. As you see, even in such a global and all-planetary issue, for you, as My agents, everything is individualized and personalized. My wish and desire for you is that you feel safe, secure, protected and calm under any condition, no matter what will or will not happen in this or in any other respect.

You can fully apply to this prediction the same conclusions that were made in our Third Dialog regarding the Third Secret of Fatima and the prediction for The Third World War for July 4, 1999. The above clarification leads us directly to the issue of the pseudo-creators raised by Ardyth. What is their situation and your present involvement with them as My agents? To what degree and extent is your synergetic work with them still in place, as was indicated to you in Update 20? As you know, that information was given to you five years ago in your planetary time (to be exact, it will be five years on February 25, 1999). Since that time tremendous changes have taken place in the fabric of the entire being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. Nothing is the same as it was at that time. A totally different positioning and

repositioning of spiritual and cosmic energies has occurred. You have no conscious idea what all these changes mean or signify. Your work with the pseudo-creators at that time, and subsequently, was an important contributory factor enabling these changes to take place. However, because of the successful completion of your work with the pseudo-creators in that particular area — answering their questions from the right side of the bridge and translating to them in their own understandable language and terms what was happening on the other side of the bridge, the side which is situated in the positive state — it is now necessary for you to reevaluate your role and position regarding not only the pseudo-creators, but anyone and anything else.

This is a crucial factor. A new beginning is in place for all of you. The availability of these Dialogs, as they are being recorded by you, Peter, can be considered a breaking point, a most significant milestone, an indication that something entirely different is required from not only all of you but from everyone else, regardless of whether anyone is consciously aware of this fact or not.

As far as your synergetic work with the pseudo-creators is concerned, a new form of collaborative effort is being established as of now. As you know, thanks primarily to your work with them, they were able to come to the other side of the bridge and establish a permanent line of communication with the positive state. They are in the process of acquiring all the proper answers to their crucial questions. Because of that, you are no longer needed in that position. Instead, you are to combine your energies with the pseudo-creators' in helping them to defeat the renegades and their minions and to bring about the end of the negative state and the human era on planet Zero.

The renegades became a wild card in this whole setup. They are extremely unpredictable, vicious, arrogant, aggressive, inconsiderate, ruthless and violent. They are the true embodiment of the negative state. In their attitude, they represent the worst and the most ultimate expression of the nature of the negative state, beyond which nothing more is conceivable or can be manifested. They are the very end of the line in the life of the negative state, so-to-speak. No words exist in your human vocabulary which could describe the true nature of the renegades even remotely. For that reason, they truly represent something that can be considered the final culmination of the illustration and demonstration of the entire nature of the negative state beyond which nothing exists which could provide anyone any more lessons about life in the negative state or the life without Me and My true spiritual principles.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

The pseudo-creators are fully aware of their responsibility toward containing the renegades because they were the ones who predisposed them to become what they are now. To tell you the truth, Peter, even the pseudo-creators didn't expect that the renegades would develop into something so extremely evil despite the fact that they gave the impetus for the renegades to become that way. The pseudo-creators were tremendously surprised to see how far the renegades had gone in their evil nature since the time of their lockup until now. So, knowing that, they feel rightly responsible for bringing the end of the renegades' dominance on this planet and in some other places.

Your duty in this respect is to provide the pseudo-creators with the energies available to you in their effort to put an end to the renegades' chaotic and unruly lifestyle.

What are the ways for you and the pseudo-creators to do that? First of all, you consciously address them with your offer to assist them in any way you can in order to bring about the defeat and lockup of the renegades until the final phase of the Last Judgment. Secondly, and most importantly, you need to shift your attention and, mainly your awareness, from the negative aspects of the events taking place all around you to the positive within you. This was already mentioned in previous Dialogs although in a somewhat different connotation. The problem with paying constant attention to negative events on this planet and elsewhere, as well as to all those doomsday predictions, as described above, is in the fact that it sidetracks you and your energies right into the negative state. By this factor of sidetracking, you are actually and unwittingly contributing to the cause of the renegades. You are not helping the pseudo-creators.

Consider this: If you are constantly preoccupied with the misery of the negative state and human life, and if you have very little time and/or energy for anything else, you get so tired, frustrated, depressed, heavy, jittery and desperate that nothing is left in you to dispense or to share with anyone or anything else. Remember please, one of the renegades' most potent weapons against you is to flood you with an unimaginable degree of all kinds of adverse, miserable and lousy thoughts, emotions, feelings and senses that would totally deplete your entire cache of positive energy that you have from Me. This is how they are able to influence you and get to you. Believe Me, they are masters of inducing such evil and negative states. They have had almost two thousand years to practice in this effort and to improve tremendously in their abilities to do so in this respect.

Whereas up to this point, before the renegades' current repositioning, it was tolerable and sometimes required from some of you to reflect these adverse conditions and events of the negative state and human life, and interpret, as well as translate them to the positive state, this is no longer required from you. For that reason, all your efforts and the positive energies that accompany them, which you possess from Me, should now be redirected in your life to place emphasis on the nature of the positive state in all aspects of your behavior, attitude, thoughts, will, intention, motivation and all other spiritual, mental and physical faculties.

The renegades cannot stand seeing you not responding to their assault by means of the evil and negative events all around you. They become furious when they see that you are not responding as they want you to — by being depressed, unmotivated, miserable, discouraged, frustrated, irritable and devoid of positive energies. However, due to the fact that your response is from the positive side of the fence, so-to-speak, by purely positive means, they become totally impotent to do anything about it. Your positive attitude, rooted in your ability to forgive, to show mercy and compassion, to understand, to be kind, considerate and respectful, not to be taken in by anything that you see or experience around you, and by similar states of your mind, sends out a clear message to the renegades that no matter how much or for how long they try in their evil effort to undermine your life, and ultimately the life of the positive state, they will never, ever succeed, no matter what.

At one point in time, the renegades will have to realize that all their efforts in this respect are futile and that such efforts are not leading them anywhere. Once they come to this realization, the choice that they will make at that point will lead them to a decision to convert to the positive state. That would be the end of the negative state for good and forever. Your help to the pseudo-creators is primarily rooted in this type of attitude, behavior and lifestyle.

Now, I am not telling you or promising you that this will be an easy, smooth and comfortable task without difficulties. After all, when you constantly see so many atrocities and abominations of the negative state around you, it is very difficult not to be influenced by them and not to react to them by your own adverse feelings. But do you see the problem here? If you react like that, you are only feeding the negative state, giving the renegades more fuel to continue committing even greater atrocities and abominations.

So, take heed and train yourself in reorienting all your life energies to the purely positive states of your mind, behavior, attitude and

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

awareness. Simply stated, reorient all your energies on Me. Such a task is not impossible to accomplish.

Peter: Well, I think this is something that we can all take to heart. Thank You so much for all Your input. Is there anything else today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: It was My pleasure, Peter. This is all for today. As always, have a very pleasant afternoon.

Twenty Fourth Dialog

January 20, 1999

Peter: Before proceeding with my own questions, is there anything that You would like to add or clarify on any issue that we discussed yesterday or previously?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for asking Me this question. Yes, I would like to add something to our important discussion yesterday on the changes in your role and position. As you know, it was mentioned several times during our dialog that everything has either changed or is in the process of fundamental change. Nothing is the same. This statement fully and extensively applies to your position, role and lifestyle as well. Here I am primarily talking about those of you who are connected to My New Revelation, meaning, those who read, accept and most importantly, practice it in their everyday life.

Up to this point, as a matter of fact, until today, you were called My agents, or agents of My positive state, or agents of our positive state, as Olga Barba of New York likes to say. Your designation as My agents, in some way paralleled that designation with the agents of the negative state. Thus, in both cases, the same word was used. This designation has a deeper spiritual correspondence and meaning. The reason why the same word was used for both, you and those who came from the negative state, was in the fact of your placement and position on planet Zero in the midst of the rule of the negative state. In your case, it is primarily connected to the role you have been playing up to this point. As you remember, your role in this respect was to be situated in the midst of the human life, with the humans and agents of the negative state who exemplify the life of the negative state, being its end product, and to translate, interpret and convey everything from that life to the rest of Creation and to the positive state in general.

Your position up to this point was from the negative side, facing the negative side, and being in the negative side. Because of this factor, you were called agents of the positive state as compared to the agents of the negative state. This is the mentioned parallel process. Its sense is derived from the fact that both you and they were situated in the same position — in the midst of human life — but with a very different agenda.

However, as mentioned yesterday, this situation with you has changed entirely. Any such important change requires repositioning the spiritual

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

correspondences and their formal expression or, to use a better word, their designation or the way you are called. As you know, each word used by you or anyone else always has a deeper spiritual correspondence and meaning. It always contains and reflects the function, role and assignment that its designator carries. Because of this situation, it is no longer appropriate for you to be called My agents or agents of the positive state.

As of now, as of this very moment, you who are integrally connected to My New Revelation and have devoted your life to the acceptance and practice of all its spiritual principles, and only those of you and no one else, will be called My representatives, or representatives of My positive state. This designation reflects the repositioning of your roles, assignments and positive energies. You have been resituated back to the positive state in the sense that you are turned in the direction of the positive state, functioning from the positive side and reflecting the life of the positive side back to the negative side. The word “representatives” reflects your new designation and function.

Whereas during your previous role as agents, you translated and interpreted everything back to the positive state from the position of the negative state, in your new role as representatives, you will be reflecting everything back to the negative state from the position of the positive state. The manner and mode of this reflection was described in yesterday’s Dialog, and will be touched upon from time to time, as we continue in our dialogs. Here there only needs to be a reminder that in this new position, the emphasis will be more than ever before on the fact that from now on you will be doing everything from, by, of, through and for Me. This is particularly true in your work with the pseudo-creators, helping them to deal with the grave situation of the renegades. Is there any other possible way of doing that and everything else, except only from, by, through, of and for Me?

This repositioning and designation shouldn’t lead you, even remotely, toward any tendency to develop an elitist attitude or behavior, thinking that with this new designation, as My representatives, you have become more special, more valuable, more needed, more deserving, or whatever, than anyone else. It only means that your role has changed — and nothing else. It is good to remind yourself from time to time, that everyone plays as important a role as you do in the scheme of role playing on the scene of human life and in the life of the negative state in general. The importance of the roles is the same, but they are entirely different. In essence, a true representative of My positive state, by this new designation will become more modest, more humble and more a

man/woman of true humility. This is what it means to be a true man/woman of God.

This is all that I would like to add this morning. At this point we may address some of your questions, Peter.

Peter: During the past few years, many readers of Your New Revelation frequently asked about situations in some of their lives in which their respective spouses were not involved in The New Revelation or were outrightly against it. The question was: What should they do? There are two possible scenarios: One is when a spouse doesn't read Your New Revelation and has very little interest in it or in any other spiritual issues, but doesn't oppose it and doesn't interfere with it; and in some cases is even enthusiastic about his/her spouse's involvement in it. In cases like these, the spouse who is connected to The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ feels somewhat unfulfilled, especially in the area of sexuality as reflected in its important spiritual aspects and components. It may create sadness from the lack of something that is most important for the respective spouse but which is not provided by his/her partner because it can only be accomplished if his/her partner would be involved to the same degree, or at least to some degree, in and with Your New Revelation. The question is, how feasible and needed is it to continue in such marital relationship?

The second scenario is a more problematical one: It relates to some of Your representatives (formerly Your agents), who may be married to someone who is most obviously and demonstratively an agent of the negative state and who is so evil and negative that he/she manipulates his/her spouse by all kinds of threats, through children (loss of children to the negative and evil spouse), financial considerations and by the factor of social standing and any other type of dependency. Again, should such a marital relationship continue or should it be terminated regardless of the children involved and any other considerations?

The Lord Jesus Christ: No simple answer exists to this question, especially regarding the first scenario. The issue in any relationship, not only the marital one, is to the extent that such relationship has exhausted its usefulness, served its purpose and is no longer tenable. Not only it wouldn't be tenable, but to continue in it would be spiritually dangerous, impeding any progress, growth or betterment of My representative in consideration. And this is true regardless of any children involved. Don't forget the fact, mentioned in our Nineteenth Dialog, that for some of their own important spiritual reasons, children chose to be in that kind of predicament. Inwardly, they expect you to

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

leave your marital partner, if it is time and there is a need to do so, despite how much they are outwardly opposed to such separation or how much they would seem to suffer from that split in outward behavioral terms.

The problem here is again in the typical human inability to look behind the scene instead of at the scene. Your human judgment derives, in most instances, from your external observation of the external reactions and behaviors of the individuals involved in this first scenario. You disregard the internal choices, inner needs, spiritual considerations, inner predisposition and similar important factors which ultimately determine what is the best for all involved. If and when such a separation or divorce is really indicated, in an ultimate sense, such a step is the most appropriate for all involved, no matter how much suffering and turmoil happens in the interim. Later on, you will clearly see the wisdom of such a decision.

Of course, the most important question from your standpoint is how to determine whether any such marital relationship, or any other similar intimate relationship, has really exhausted its usefulness, served its purpose and is no longer tenable, and to continue in it could even be dangerous for all involved. No general rule exists for such a determination. This is something that has to be decided by each individual who is presently in a relationship of this nature. Each individual should turn himself/herself to Me, asking for inspiration, illumination, insight and enlightenment about this situation and for receiving a strong intuitive discernment for making the most proper and spiritually appropriate decision in this respect, as well as in any other respect. Each case is different. No one case can be judged to be the same or requires the same solution with the same outcome. What is proper in one case might not be proper in another case. This is the reason why I cannot give you any specifics for the resolution of these types of situations. Ultimately, it is between Me and the individuals in question. Always go by your intuition and by turning yourself to Me, asking what is the best for all involved and how to properly balance whatever the outcome might be in order to cause as little damage, suffering and resentment as possible for all involved, even though sometimes it is inevitable to go through such negative experiences. If you do this with positive and good intent, for the right reasons, because you really want to do what is proper, correct and right for the sake of principle, without anything ulterior or selfish, then I can assure you, you will not go wrong and things will end up in the most appropriate way for all concerned — no matter what the interim situation might be.

Let us look now on the second scenario in which we are dealing with marital partners who are physically, mentally and otherwise abusive, evil and very negative. Here we have a totally different situation. First of all, in cases like this, one should very carefully explore why an agent of the positive state (let's say presently a representative of the positive state) got involved with a person like that. What were the motivating factors, conditions and circumstances under which such an adverse marital relationship was established? Don't disregard also the psychological factors of the battered woman's syndrome in cases where the agent of the negative state is a man. Why was the choice made to have such a heartbreaking, painful and desperate relationship? What kind of need is it fulfilling? Is there a guilt factor, brought to this life from something that happened before incarnating on planet Zero while in that special Intermediate World, or was that guilt acquired from the time of his/her upbringing by his/her parents or significant others? Is this a form of self-punishment to assuage that guilt because the individual in question unconsciously feels that he/she deserves to be punished by being in a marital relationship of such adverse nature? Or are there some purely spiritual reasons independent of any of the above mentioned factors? Did that individual choose to enter that relationship in order to illustrate for the learning of all what happens if an agent of the positive state gets involved in a marital relationship with an outright agent of the negative state and together they become a means through which certain types of children are born?

Of course, there is always a mutual agreement before coming to this world to get involved not only with each other but also with the prospective children who would be born during their marriage on planet Zero. Sometimes the only possible way to come here for a certain contingent of entities in other worlds who choose to incarnate on planet Zero, is through the combined agreement of one agent of the positive state and one agent of the negative state in order to illustrate a very different aspect either of the positive state, if the entity was coming from the positive side (before July 1, 1988), or a very different aspect of the negative state if the entity was coming from the negative side (which is always the case at the present time). Such a specific illustration is possible to achieve only if you have a marriage or sexual relationship between those two.

In most instances however, in these particular cases, a relationship of this nature exhausts its usefulness and fulfills its purpose either at the moment shortly after children are born or when the realization comes to one's conscious mind that no matter what, the relationship will not work. And not only that, but to continue in it could be dangerous at all levels of

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

one's life — the spiritual, mental, social, physical or any other. Many murders have been committed by the continuation of such relationships.

Don't forget the factor of learning and illustration. How long does it take to learn important lessons from this situation or for how long does the illustration need to continue? Let us assume that the choice was made to help the agent of the negative state realize his/her negativity and to set up an example for him/her of a life in accordance with the principles of the positive state. However, in some cases, no matter what, the agent of the negative state not only is not learning anything, or doesn't want to learn anything, but becomes more negative, more evil and more abusive. He/she takes advantage of the meekness, kindness, longsuffering and similar positive attributes of his/her partner and manipulates him/her to his/her sadistic pleasure or for whatever other negative reasons. When it comes to this point, it is obvious that to continue in such a relationship would be futile and only supporting the negative state, becoming its slave. And not only that, but by such an attitude, the positive partner reinforces the evil and negative behavior of his/her negative partner, setting him/her up for more and longer punishment and retribution, following his/her return to where he/she came from.

As far as children are concerned in this situation, once again, they agreed to whatever the outcome of such a complicated and brutal relationship is. So, because of that, they should not be a decisive factor in staying in that kind of relationship. Very often, it is for their benefit if it is terminated in a timely manner. Procrastinating in this respect may only lead to their greater suffering, being witnesses to a very unpleasant relationship. And not only that, but very often, they learn bad behavior from their abusive and evil parent, internalizing such negative behavior. When they grow up and become married, they most certainly will tend to treat their marital partner in exactly the same way as they learned from their parent. So, as you see, this is a vicious cycle of perpetuating the nature of the negative state. You don't need to be supportive of this kind of relationship or stay in it, no matter what.

Of course, as always, you need to ask Me to help you make the right decision so as to not prematurely violate the articles of your agreement and illustration. Once again, each case is different and no generalizations are possible or wise to make. Some relationships need to stay as they are or until the time when your partner decides to terminate it. Some need to be terminated as soon as possible. Only your intuition and relying on My presence in it, can lead you to the most needed and proper choice in this matter. Because of this, nothing can be said about it at this point.

Peter: Thank You very much for this explanation. The next question was posed by a young man, Your follower and practitioner of Your New Revelation, from the Czech Republic. He is somewhat confused by the claims of Yogananda, an Indian swami who was allegedly visited by his former teacher who died some time ago and who described life in the so-called astral realm to the swami. The teacher, who was allegedly enlightened and knew God, continued to claim that some people need to reincarnate back on planet Zero so that they may discharge their Karma and return back to the astral world from which they proceed to a higher level where they merge with God. The young man doesn't understand how someone who knows God and is enlightened can make such claims. Any comments for his benefit?

The Lord Jesus Christ: First of all, it should be very obvious that the teacher in question was 'enlightened' by a false god who may have set up experiences for him which would have confirmed his false and distorted belief systems. Secondly, the astral world is that area of pre-entrance to the real spiritual world where all of one's expectations are fulfilled and confirmed. The above mentioned claims were made at a time when the special Intermediate World, where the teacher arrived, was the world of expectations and temporary fulfillment of his desires to confirm his belief systems. Thirdly, any negative and evil spirit may and can take the form of flesh and blood — symbolically speaking, of anyone, in this case of the teacher in question — for the purpose of continuously feeding their followers the distortions and falsities they support and to which they cling. The negative state has no desire for anyone to recede from their false and distorted belief systems. They can and may set up all kinds of situations and shows which can present themselves to the followers of those teachers in such a convincing manner so that no doubts can enter their mind, that what they are being told, conveyed or what is experienced by them or what is being shown to them is absolutely true, genuine and authentic. This is one of the most favorite ways of the negative state to perpetuate its cause.

In order to avoid any contamination, poison and pollution by any such stories recorded in the many books of that nature, one would be advised not to waste time on reading them or pondering about their content. If you are privileged to have My New Revelation, what other books of that nature do you need to read? Unless it is indicated that you read them for the purpose of comparison or as a reference or a quote to illustrate their falsities and distortions, which they abundantly contain, you are advised to avoid reading them. Of course, as always, the choice is yours. So are the consequences.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

The problem with the young man in question is that he unconditionally bought the teacher's claim that he was enlightened and knew God. The young man didn't doubt or question the verity of that claim. The way the young man formulated his question in his letter to you, Peter, very clearly indicates that he never doubted for a minute that the teacher was a true man of the true God. This is the problem. One should never take anything of that nature on its face value. It is always very wise and prudent to verify such claims with Me, through your intuition, with the principles of My New Revelation, its Updates and with what is conveyed in these Dialogs. Otherwise, you can end up believing all kinds of distortions and falsities.

Peter: Thank You very much for Your explanations and answers. Is this all for today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, it is all. Have a very pleasant afternoon.

Twenty Fifth Dialog

January 21, 1999

Peter: May I ask You this morning to further elaborate on the differences between being agents of the positive state and being representatives of Your positive state, respectively, and what should the behavioral differences be from being Your representatives instead of Your agents?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Gladly, Peter. I see a slight confusion in your mind about the statement that during the time of your being My agents, you were translators and interpreters of the events from the negative state to the positive state, and from the positive state to planet Zero. At this time however, as My representatives, you are reflecting the nature of the positive state to the negative state. The confusion stems from misunderstanding the issue of positioning and the mode of how this is being done. You are thinking, Peter, in terms that if, as agents of the positive state you were translating and interpreting also from the positive state to planet Zero, and not only from planet Zero to the positive state, then no difference exists between that form of translation and the present form of reflecting as My representatives. After all, in essence, you are doing the same thing — as far as planet Zero is concerned.

Two things are wrong with such thinking: First, is the issue of positioning. It is an entirely different story to look upon things, to understand their meaning, to experience their impact, to conceive their implication and to feel their influence from the position of the positive state, being in the midst of it, rather than when you are looking at and experiencing the same things from being positioned in the negative state, being in the midst of it. The view is totally different. Have you ever gone for a drive into nature? Driving one way, you had an entirely different perspective and impression of the scenery than when you drove back from the opposite direction. The same analogy applies here. It is true that being in your human skin, sometimes, or even very often, it will be somewhat difficult to have a conscious realization of the differences between these two positions. However, that would be your typical human view. Looking on this factor from the position of your spiritual selves, you will have an entirely different impression and sense of experience, as well as understanding. Yes, granted, it is not too simple to switch from the typical human perspective to the typical non-human, genuine and more realistic perspective. But it is not an impossible task either. It is a matter of training yourselves to look at it that way.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Second, the quality of reflection is different from the one of translation and interpretation from the position of the human life and the negative state, and the one from the position of the positive state. Don't forget a very simple fact: What have you been translating and interpreting to the positive state up to this point? — the nature of the negative state in general and of human life in particular. The content and the meaning were always negative. You don't need to translate and interpret anything to the positive state which is of a positive nature because they already have it. On the other hand, what were you translating and interpreting to planet Zero from the positive state? In essence, making positive things ***available*** to humans and others on planet Zero and elsewhere and setting up a foundation on which, later on, when the time comes, certain factors will be triggered in their mind, leading them to convert to the positive state and to the eventual elimination of the entirety of the negative state. The crucial word here is ***'available.'*** As of this moment, everything they need for their ultimate salvation now is available to humans and others on planet Zero and elsewhere. Because it is available in its totality, you no longer need to be in the role of — ***making available.*** To continue to be in that role would be redundant, wasting your precious energies which need to go into something entirely different.

On the other hand, the members of the positive state, as of this moment, thanks to your effort, have learned as much as they could about the nature of the negative state and the human life — **from your position, and by your translation and interpretation.** That learning made it possible for them to establish a direct line of information flowing to them from the negative state and planet Zero so that, first of all, they no longer need interpreters and translators of their language from anyone of you; and secondly, they will be learning about their nature firsthand — **from their own position and by their own understanding.**

This is what you have been doing until now in the role of being My agents, or agents of My positive state.

Let us look now on the way things are being set up for you in your new role as My representatives or as representatives of My positive state. What is it that you are reflecting to planet Zero and how is this being done? First of all, your new role is not only limited to this crucial reflection. One of the most important works in which you are participating, as of this moment, and as it was mentioned a few days ago, is to combine your energies with those of the pseudo-creators', for the purpose of defeating the renegades and bringing about the ending of the negative state in general and the typical human life in particular. When we are talking about the pseudo-creators and working with them, we are

talking about that contingent which has either converted already to the positive state — and their number is substantial — or those who are, or will be soon, in the process of conversion. The far right branch of their contingent, although also determined to defeat the renegades, is still in the position of believing that they can accomplish their negative goals and get their answers from the direction of the relativity assumed by them. Of course, it will lead them nowhere. Working with them requires caution and protection from Me, doing that work only from, by, through, of and for Me.

Let us go back to your role as reflectors of the nature of the positive state, from the position of the positive state. As you know, the members of the negative state and the majority of humans proper, who became its agents, have either no idea about the nature of the positive state or their ideas about it are totally distorted or totally false. How can you conceive any notion of converting to the positive state, or express a desire to do so if your ideas about its nature are totally off, without matching even the minutest grain of what the true nature of the positive state is? Let us assume that someone in the negative state and/or in human life expresses the willingness to experience life in the positive state in order to make a decision as to whether to convert or not, without having the proper illustrative backing about its real nature. Without such backing, the prospective convert would have to rely on his/her own ideas about its nature. What do you think will happen in the process of acquiring such an experience? The cunning and sophisticated forces of the negative state will provide an experience for such a person which will fully and exhaustively match his/her ideas about the nature of the positive state which are, of course, negative.

Due to the fact that such ideas are distorted and/or false, the prospective convert will get a very wrong impression about life in the positive state. To get wrong, distorted and/or false impressions about anything, by virtue of them being very wrong, puts him/her right back into the negative state. Now the prospective convert will start to evaluate the nature of that which he/she thinks is the positive state but which, in fact, is the negative state. Under this setup, what do you think, Peter, will be his/her conclusions about the nature of the positive state?

Peter: The conclusion will definitely be that no difference exists between the positive and the negative state, respectively.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Exactly, Peter. And not only that, but he/she will tell himself/herself that if there is no obvious difference between those two, then what is all that fuss about converting to the positive

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

state? He/she will conclude: 'No reason exists to waste my time or effort to do so.' This is the inevitable conclusion from such a cunning setup.

Your role in this respect is to provide the right answers to planet Zero and elsewhere or give them the proper and correct ideas about the true nature of the positive state by reflecting it to them in your relative condition and in your daily behavior, from the position of the positive state and from My Absolute Nature Personally. This is the reason why, as of now, you are being called My true representatives and no longer My agents or agents of the positive state. It is impossible to properly and correctly reflect this nature from the position of the negative state and from your identity being typically human. Such a reflection would be tainted by their adverse nature, giving humans and others the wrong impressions and incorrect ideas about the true nature of the positive state.

For that reason, while still on planet Zero, a few of you connected to My New Revelation are being placed — by our prior agreement and by your own free will and choice — into the midst of the positive state, turning your face from the direction of the positive state toward the direction of human life and the negative state in general, so that you may reflect the nature of the positive state into their direction, providing them with the right ideas about its nature. Before that, you were turned toward the positive state from the direction of the negative state and human life, being in their midst, providing the positive state with the right ideas about the negative state and human nature. Are you able to ascertain the fundamental difference between these two positions and roles?

Peter: Yes, I can do so clearly.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Very well, Peter. In that case, let us go into answering the second part of your question about the behavioral differences between those two roles and especially about your concerns regarding the style of life you should have in the new role as My representatives.

Consider this: When you are constantly preoccupied with human life on planet Zero and with the nature of the negative state in general, when you are bogged down in all their details, when you have to go through the personal and private experiences of all their atrocities and abominations for the purpose of translating and interpreting them to the positive state, how much energy is left in you for anything else? Very little, or none. In that case, the positive aspects of your original nature, hidden behind your human nature, have very little chance to shine or come through.

This situation was required to be in place in your life because of your roles as agents of My positive state. After all, how do you translate, interpret or illustrate something like that? By verbalizing it without any experiential input by experiencing it on your own skin, so-to-speak? If that were to be the case, the members of the positive state wouldn't understand what you were talking about because your human language, by the means of verbalizing something, is not able to penetrate the area of their comprehension. They would totally miss the point. The only language they understand when something is conveyed to them from the position of human life and from the negative state in general, is the language of the experiences reflected in your personal and private life. This is the way it was set up to be. Otherwise, they would have to be in the negative state themselves. So, what would be left over from the positive state? Nothing, because everyone would have to be in the negative state. In that case, potentially, only the negative state would exist. Of course, it is impossible to conceive such a life by itself and in itself, because even the pseudo-life of the negative state and the human life, as you know so well, Peter, totally and absolutely depend on the being and existence of the life of the positive state, and ultimately on My Absolute Life. For that reason, if something like that could happen, the possibility of the negative state's pseudo-being and pseudo-existence would be absolute zero.

This is the reason why volunteers were sought out and they agreed to incarnate on planet Zero; so there would be no necessity for everyone else in the positive state to have such negative experiences, and to prevent the positive state's annihilation by the factor of that necessity. The agents of My positive state were such volunteers. They temporarily sacrificed their comfortable, productive, creative, beautiful and delightful life in the positive state in order to incarnate into human life and provide by experiential mode, on their own private and personal human life, lessons to all in the positive state about what it is like to be an integral part of human life and the negative state; and not only that, but allowing the members of the positive state to be attached to them for that purpose, to build a permanent and very safe line of direct access to life on planet Zero and human life, in order to prepare all necessary conditions for their permanent closure and elimination.

So, as you see from the above discourse, in that position, all your energies and efforts went into providing the positive state with that type of information by experiential mode. Because of that, not only did you have very little time left for any other aspects of your nature to be manifested in your own life, but very often you were not even aware of their existence. In other words, some of you didn't even suspect that you

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

were agents of My positive state. This was a necessary arrangement in order to give a chance for the human aspects of your personality to be fully actualized, realized and manifested with the above mentioned purpose in mind.

At this point in time, this portion of your duties and assignments has been fulfilled and thanks to your effort, the members of the positive state have successfully completed building a direct access to everything that is happening on your planet and in the Zone of Displacement without any further need for your mediation; just as they have learned as much as possible about the human life and everything related to it from your individual standpoint and input. Thus, you are no longer agents of the positive state. Instead, you are its representatives.

What does it mean to be such a representative in behavioral and experiential terms? No simple answer which is all-inclusive and applicable to all, exists in this respect. However, some general considerations can be conveyed to you with the understanding that it is not exhaustive or the only one possible.

First of all, you are advised to shift your awareness from being typical humans to also being representatives of My positive state. Remember please, when you incarnated on planet Zero, a special type of wiring was included into your spiritual, mental and physical makeup, in addition to your human one, which is fully aligned with the positive state in general, and connected to Me directly, in particular. At the same time, you are to be aware of the fact that your typical human nature is a mask, behind which, is hidden your true nature created directly from Me. Because of that, it would be advisable for you to strongly avoid any permanent or even temporary identification with that mask — your human nature. Consciously and otherwise, strongly and with determination proclaim to yourself that no matter what, no matter how you feel being a typical human with all its negative and unbearable characteristics, you are not that way. Your true nature is something else entirely.

Whenever you feel discouraged, depressed, miserable, anxious, angry, melancholic, depleted, hopeless, helpless, unfulfilled, misunderstood, lonely, guilt-ridden, ashamed, or in a very bad mood, — and it is not possible under your presently existing conditions not to feel that way occasionally — immediately, or as soon as possible, tell yourself that these types of states, feelings, thoughts, or whatever, are not yours or part of your true nature, but are coming from your mask on which they are being imposed by the nature of the negative state itself and by the nature of that mask. Don't forget that having that mask and being

continuously bombarded by those kinds of feelings, emotions, thoughts and states without interruption, it is inevitable to feel their impact on you. It is not a matter of being entirely free from experiencing them from time to time, but, it is a matter of being able to recognize their source and not allowing them to take hold, penetrate, pollute or poison you to the point that you wish to give up. As mentioned previously, direct all your thoughts, feelings, attention, awareness, or whatever you have, on Me specifically, on the positive state particularly and on what is behind your mask.

Concentrate on the positive attributes of your endowment — on your ability to love, care, forgive, be merciful, compassionate, empathetic, non-judgmental, patient, enduring, full of hope, able to laugh, to have fun, be joyful, positive, optimistic and on similar states of mind and on your psyche in general. Radiate these states around you and into the human life and its negative state. If you make an all-out effort to produce such states as much as possible, it means that you are in the positive state, right in the midst of it, reflecting its nature to human life and to the negative state in general. This means that you are representing Me, My Absolute Nature in your relative state, and the nature of the positive state in general.

As I was saying these things, Peter, it crossed your mind fleetingly, that this is something that is not so easy to accomplish or implement, being in the state that you are in on planet Zero.

Peter: Sorry, Sir, You are very right.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Tell Me, Peter, who knows better than I, who experienced human life and the negative state in the Hells in their utmost totality, how really difficult it is? In no way am I implying that this will be an easy task. But, consider this: Has it been easy for all of you at any time to experience human life, the negative state and all their atrocities and abominations? And yet, you endured, you are alive, you continue in your life, you have not given up. If it was possible to accomplish this almost impossible feat, how much more would you be able to accomplish projecting something that is more inherent in your nature than the other stuff embedded in your mask? Do you see My point? It is a matter of training yourself to be this new way. Don't forget that you are habituated in the old ways, the typical human ways, your mask's ways; it is almost like some kind of addiction to be that way. However, any addiction can be broken by determination, consistent practice and exercise, by your willingness to be willing to represent Me and My positive state; and by training yourself in the new mode of

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

thinking, feeling, reacting and behaving. It won't happen in one day, or in one week, or even in one month. It will take time, a lot of time. But it can be done and you can do it because you were equipped like no one else with these attributes. It is time for you to trigger them, to put them into motion, to utilize them and to manifest them in all aspects of your life. Don't allow them to remain dormant, buried deep behind your mask. By making an all-out effort to be that way, you will truly be My true representatives. This is your new role and assignment.

Peter: Well, the way You presented these facts is almost poetic. Thank You very much for this beautiful suggestion. Is there anything else for today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: I am also a Poet, Peter. I would recommend to stop here. Also, I would suggest to take a break tomorrow. Have a nice day, Peter.

Twenty Sixth Dialog

January 23, 1999

Peter: Yesterday was a hectic day and somewhat troubling in its morning outcome. Do You have any comments about it or about anything else?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, your mind was preoccupied with some personal issues which you thought were resolved a long time ago. Don't forget that in your particular case, because you are constantly being watched very closely not only by the members of the positive state, but also by all branches of the pseudo-creators, renegades and their various contingents, an attempt is constantly being made by certain cohorts of the negative state to disrupt your life as much as possible. This is done specifically for the purpose of preventing you from doing your very important work for Me. Although during our dialogs, they don't have any notion about what is transpiring between Me and you; after what you record is read by someone else, they realize the significance and importance of your work. So, a special group of the negative state's forces was assigned to you, in order to trigger any possible discomfort within your mind, which derives from some of your past personal problems, events and experiences.

The main attempt here is to cause you severe states of anxiety and the previously mentioned doubts about your position and role. Their target is your continuous questioning and fear about whether what you are recording is truly coming from Me or from your own fantasies, and whether sending this material to other people constitutes deceiving them in My Name.

So, yesterday a certain minor misunderstanding was utilized by that group to establish a state of anxiety and induce troubling thoughts and feelings within you, related to your role and assignment from Me. Excuse Me, but being in the typical human skin, you are questioning My Wisdom in some ways for choosing someone like you to be the transmitter of My New Revelation and for talking to you in the form of these Dialogs. The forces of the negative state are whispering in your ear that I would have never chosen anyone like you to be in such an important role. After all, 'look,' they say, 'you can't even get rid of your fears and anxieties and you so easily feel rejected and uncertain about yourself. You even get panicky when Dan of New York, or anyone else reading the Dialogs starts to question some of your statements (like in the previously mentioned letter), or need further clarifications, being troubled by their own doubts

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

or uncertainties; and you question whether you are not deceiving them. 'Do you really believe that someone so insecure, uncertain, doubting, insignificant and full of human problems would be chosen by The Lord Jesus Christ to be in the position and role that you foolishly think or assume that you are? Don't kid yourself, man! You are a fraud! You are a fake! You are nothing! We have your game-plan!' And similar thoughts and words this respective group is sending your way, Peter. Even right now you have very clearly heard in your mind their whispers of this nature. It is not like hearing voices or something like that, or the way it is depicted in your psychiatric books. It is more like an awareness that these things are being conveyed to you by your own self. This is how that group works.

It is time for you, Peter, to accept the fact that your questioning in this respect and your state of mind also serve a positive purpose, apart from its negative connotation. It is a preventive measure from falling into the arrogant and spiritually dangerous attitude of being more special, more unique, more important, more needed or more valuable than anyone else because of your role and position as the transmitter of My New Revelation and all matters related to it. It is also a preventive measure from becoming a guru of some sort or something like that. In the moment you would stop questioning the verity of your role and position, you would become a much greater target to the forces of the negative state than you are now. You would fall into an attitude of infallibility, self-exclusiveness and self-righteousness which would blind your proper perception and understanding of what is being conveyed to you directly by Me. In that case, instead of receiving these ideas from Me, you would be receiving them from the negative state — in My Name, of course. Do you see My point, Peter?

Peter: Yes, Sir, and I accept the need for this type of questioning. I really don't want to mislead or deceive anyone, including myself.

The Lord Jesus Christ: I know that, and I can assure you that because of your sound and proper attitude in this respect, it can serve as the strongest confirmation that what you are receiving, and have been receiving up to this point, is really coming, and has been coming, from Me — The True Lord Jesus Christ. It might not be a strong, or any confirmation from your standpoint, or perhaps from the standpoint of any other reader of these Dialogs, but it is so from the standpoint of everyone in the positive state. So, continue in your effort to do your best under these unusual circumstances to which you are exposed, because of who you are and what you do for Me. This is inevitable as long as you are on planet Zero in the human life. It will not be easier for you in this respect. This is the way it is supposed to be, in order to preserve the

integrity of all ideas which are being conveyed through you by Me. At this point, it would be very difficult, if not impossible, for you to understand by your human mind why your situation in this respect contributes to the integrity and preciseness of My ideas conveyed through you. Suffice it to say that it relates to important spiritual factors which are beyond your comprehension as long as you live on planet Zero. Also, some security measures are in place. If further spiritual reasons were to be made available to you as to why this is so, it would give very potent means to the forces of the negative state to disrupt our work together.

Peter: I fully and humbly accept this need. Are there any other clarifications or comments that You feel like making today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter; and thank you for asking. I would like to return for a moment and expand on your (I mean everyone's, not only your personal role, Peter) role that you were assigned by Me as being My representatives and no longer My agents. As you remember from the Twenty Fourth and Twenty Fifth Dialogs, you were advised to work together with the pseudo-creators on the containment and restriction of the renegades; and at the same time, and most importantly, to work on the realization of working from the position of My positive state and from Me personally. All your energies should be spent in that direction. Such work was to be accomplished by your special spiritual attitude toward everyone and everything in general and by your mode of thinking, willing, feeling and other mental faculties in particular.

In order to accomplish this, you are advised to eliminate your tendencies as much as possible in being unnecessarily preoccupied, troubled or concerned with any political, economic, social or similar events and happenings that continuously occur on planet Zero. Yes, it is proper and right to register them and even briefly discuss them but not to be bogged down in them. Don't waste your energy, even in a minute degree, on spending any of it on such preoccupations, concerns and troubles. Your energies should go entirely into being My representatives and what it all entails in your everyday life and behavior.

However, there is another issue here regarding your new role and position which so far has not been mentioned but which was touched upon briefly in your telephone conversation with Dan of New York yesterday. It concerns the members of the New Universe, their role and position and your involvement with them. This will be a third, very important aspect of your new assignment. The members of the New Universe have a very significant, crucial and most important role in the whole process of working with you, the pseudo-creators and the entire

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

positive state, in bringing about the containment and defeat of the renegades and in the elimination of the negative state in its entirety, as well as in the closure of this cycle of time.

As you remember from a brief discourse in the ***Corollaries...*** regarding the members of the New Universe's involvement with you; they represent and embody the Absolute New Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ and My Divine Human in their relative condition. Because of this representation, by its factor, they are the only true humans in a purely positive connotation. The way you have to understand this statement, is that their pure humanness does not derive from the human nature as manifested on planet Zero — that would be redundant and negative — but from My Divine Human Nature which does not contain anything of the negative, evil or adverse or of the typically human in its negative connotation. By exemplifying this type of humanness, the members of the New Universe are setting up a very important condition for the rest of humanity to be freed from all negative, evil, distorted, false and any other adverse conditions with which humans are so abundantly infested. At the same time, they are setting up a condition for all of you, who have become, as of now, My true representatives, to be able to acquire and experience all aspects of the nature of being My true representatives while physically residing on planet Zero and while being in the human skin, so-to-speak. The question here is, what is your part in this collaborative effort with the members of the New Universe? What do you do and how do you do it?

First of all, by your own free will and choice, with My support, consciously, turn yourself to the members of the New Universe who are assigned to each one of you personally (**as of now, every one of you has been assigned several members of the New Universe for this important purpose!**) and, whether you are consciously aware or not aware of their presence with you, by your conscious human mind, invite them to participate in all aspects of your life from this moment on. Invite them to combine their energies with your personal energies, not only for the purpose of the very important work that needs to be done regarding the outcome of the negative state and human life, but also for the purpose of helping you to establish a lifestyle consistent with being My true representatives — as outlined in two previous Dialogs.

Once again we are going to use the word 'synergy.' By combining these two sources of energies, working together hand in hand with the members of The New Universe, you will be able, as never before, to multiply your abilities to manifest the true nature of the positive state and its impact on your human life and on everything else.

However, we are going to go one step further. At this time not only will you be combining your energies with those of the members of the New Universe who are assigned to you for this purpose, but also, at the very same time, with those of the pseudo-creators' and those of the members of My positive state in My Spiritual World. So, here you will have a compounding and tremendously additive effect — your energies, the members of the New Universe's energies, the members of My positive state's energies and the pseudo-creators' energies. It is a seven-way combination: You and the pseudo-creators; the members of the New Universe and the pseudo-creators; you and the members of My positive state; the members of the New Universe and the members of My positive state; the members of My positive state and the pseudo-creators; you and the members of the New Universe; and the combined energies of all these clusters; and above all and everything, I and all of you in all the mentioned combinations. Such situation as this has never been in existence before. It is being set up by Me in order to accomplish the tremendously important goal of My Grand Plan of Salvation of all who are trapped in the clutches of the negative state. It also places at our disposal the only possible means of how to restrain, contain and limit the influence of the renegades.

The problem with the renegades is very serious and beyond anyone's comprehension. As you remember, several years ago in your time, it was indicated to you that I had created a New Universe. At that time, to countermand this important creation and to balance out the Zone of Displacement, the pseudo-creators, after a while, succeeded in fabricating their own new pseudo-universe with all their own creatures in parallel with the entities created by Me and placed into My New Universe. Well, as you know, Peter, the renegades, by their cunning nature, are in constant competition with the pseudo-creators. Whatever the pseudo-creators have come up with up to this point, the renegades immediately imitate everything that the pseudo-creators do. This is so for the purpose of convincing everyone, but most importantly themselves, that they are able to do the same things, in the same ways, and even much better, than what the pseudo-creators do.

So, in this effort, the renegades have been trying their worst to come up with some of their own fabrications, comparable to that of the pseudo-creators' new pseudo-universe. As of now, they have succeeded in fabricating a quasi-new pseudo-universe, with many monstrous types of creatures, which they are about to utilize in their war against the positive state and the pseudo-creators. They needed to accomplish something like that in order to open two fronts simultaneously in the wars they are waging — one front against the pseudo-creators; the other, against the positive state and the New Universe in particular. The

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

renegades are especially concerned with the New Universe because they sense that from that direction comes the greatest danger for the successful implementation of their plan for their takeover and dominance of planet Zero and the entire Zone of Displacement.

The renegades believe that if they can succeed in taking over these two areas, they will be in a better position to make an all-out assault on the forces of the positive state and on My representatives on planet Zero. The members of the New Universe have something at their disposal that no one can either know, or understand what it is that will make them so effective and successful in their effort to defeat the renegades. Even now, the nature of this secret weapon or what it is cannot be revealed. The renegades are very afraid of it and are doing all their worst to harass and attack the members of the New Universe in any way they can.

Of course, the greatest danger for the renegades is in the new alliance formed with the members of the New Universe, the members of My positive state, My representatives on planet Zero and the pseudo-creators under My direct auspices, charge, presiding and rule. This is something that no one had ever been able to foresee. By this alliance, and the way it is being realized, a very crucial and important foundation is being laid to not only defeat the renegades but also for the final elimination of the negative state. You have no idea in your human mind how immensely significant this alliance is and what kind of role it is playing in My Plans in this respect.

In the meantime, the activities of the renegades will be more and more obvious to you on planet Zero. They are instigators of all kinds of wars, such as in the former Yugoslavia, the Serb faction being one of their most cherished tools. However, do understand please, that one of the renegades' weaknesses is their inability to work together for the same cause. They have too many pretenders for the throne. Each pretender has its own cohorts and followers and they fight among themselves in addition to fighting the pseudo-creators and others. However, in fighting the pseudo-creators and others, they are able to get together and combine their forces for that purpose. Their local squabbles are manifested on planet Zero in such fights as took place between Serbia and Bosnia and now between the Serbs and Kosovo — all being their representatives. There are many other hot spots on your planet where their influence and dominance is being manifested, in addition to the economic turmoil which you have been experiencing lately.

Lately however, they have begun to realize that unless they unify their forces and combine them with the quasi-creatures whom they fabricated in that quasi-new pseudo-universe of theirs, they will not be able to

succeed. So, an all-out effort is being made to overcome these differences among themselves and to combine their forces in order to countermand the newly formed alliance. A small contingent of their forces is assigned the role of continuously harassing events on planet Zero — to spite the pseudo-creators and humans — manifested in various events in the Balkans, Iraq, Iran, Palestine, Israel, Russia, Asia and many other places on your planet.

The described situation is heralding the pseudo-victory of the negative state on planet Zero and the appearance of the pseudo-creators on it — of their far right faction — during which, thanks to the combined energies and alliance, they will be able to put an end to the mess created by the renegades, lock them up and proclaim themselves to be absolute rulers and gods. All humans and other creatures who will still be present on planet Zero and elsewhere will accept them as their creators and gods, and by that factor, they will repudiate from their minds and lives anything properly spiritual, true, authentic and genuine. This is one of the possibilities of how the negative state will pseudo-win. **Of course, it is not the only one.**

The reason why the alliance is being formed, despite the fact that it will lead to the eventual pseudo-victory of the negative state on this planet, is in the fact that it will very effectively accelerate this process, essentially cutting very short the time during which, this pseudo-victory of the negative state will last. The way you have to understand this statement is that by accomplishing their goal, the respective contingent of the pseudo-creators will find itself at a dead end in seeking a final answer to their existential question. Once they come to this point, the sudden realization and insight will come to their mind that their logic is circular and all the proofs for which they have been searching, are leading nowhere by the methods they have been utilizing during this search. In that case, they will draw the inevitable conclusion that they were totally wrong in their assumption that true life is possible without The Lord Jesus Christ and His/Her spiritual principles. Therefore, because of that, no true or genuine life of the positive nature is possible by their own assumptions and pseudo-spiritual principles. It only leads to what human life and life of the renegades and their monstrosities are all about — which is no life at all. For that reason, the only way to go, is to convert to the positive state.

As mentioned previously, the lifestyle of the renegades is the ultimate expression of the nature of the negative state, beyond which, very little remains to illustrate, demonstrate or learn. The redemption of the renegades themselves is rooted in this fact. They are the ones who, by their ultimately evil lifestyle, will finally convince the mentioned

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

contingent of the pseudo-creators that there is no way that true life is possible without The Lord Jesus Christ and His/Her spiritual principles.

Your position and role in this respect as My representatives is very crucial. By being an integral part of this alliance, by your new lifestyle and attitude, by working from the position of the positive state, concentrating on the positive aspects of your nature, overcoming its human aspects and allowing Me to be a part of your life, you are truly contributing to the positive outcome of all these events.

Peter: Thank You very much for this information. Is there anything else You would like to address today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: My pleasure, Peter. No, it should be enough for now. We can address further aspects of this issue at a later time. Have a nice afternoon.

Twenty Seventh Dialog

January 24, 1999

Peter: To tell You the truth I am a little concerned with the first part of the Twenty Sixth Dialog. It seems to be too personal and private. It's like I am exposing myself and my problems.

The Lord Jesus Christ: I appreciate your concerns, Peter. However, take into consideration the factor of the importance of your mission and assignment that you have from Me. Because of them, anything that you experience and feel has some multiversal significance, reflecting something that is of interest to everyone. This is especially true when your concerns relate to something that goes on during our dialogs at the present time, and during your transmission of My New Revelation and its **Corollaries...** in the past. So, because of that, unfortunately for you, but fortunately for us, your so-called private matters cannot be considered too private. Of course, there are certain aspects of your private life that cannot be discussed with anyone but Me. They have a totally different significance.

Moreover, don't disregard the possibility that in bringing your personal concerns, doubts and uncertainties to everyone's attention, as related to this issue, may very well trigger some important awareness in the readers of these dialogs, which may be important for them to realize at this particular time. As you see, everything may and can serve a good purpose.

Peter: Very well, Sir, in that case should we continue discussing further yesterday's topic, as reflected in the second part of the Twenty Sixth Dialog?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, we should. However, before we take up that subject, I would like, if I may, to discuss something else first. Yesterday in your E-mail from the Czech Republic, and in a subsequent telephone conversation with the author of that E-mail, an inquiry was made about who may or may not receive and read these Dialogs. This issue was raised before, and some answers to it were given then. Some more elaboration on it is in order, however.

First of all, it is obvious that the only individuals who should read it are those who read and practice My New Revelation and its **Corollaries...** . It makes logical sense to require a prospective reader to fulfill this crucial condition. These Dialogs are an integral and important

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

component, as well as an extension of My New Revelation. In a sense, they are completing a significant cycle of its transmission for the present time. Reading them first, without knowledge, understanding or acceptance of the previous portions of My New Revelation could not only be meaningless for a prospective reader, but also very spiritually dangerous. So, this is the first requirement.

However, the concerns that were raised in that E-mail, and that you, Peter, also have, are not that much with someone who would read these Dialogs without prior knowledge and acceptance of other portions of My New Revelation, — the likelihood of that is very remote — but with someone who has its knowledge and acceptance but whose lifestyle and observable behavior are not in concordance with its principles and requirements. In your estimate, some readers seem to be weird, perhaps mentally unstable and even mentally ill; some are mixing the ideas of My New Revelation with ideas of the so-called New Age concepts and practices and some are approaching or using it for some of their own personal and ulterior reasons without any regard for doing things by the principles themselves.

The question is, how should you proceed in cases like that? Take for example, individuals who are playing both sides of the coin, so-to-speak; meaning, they read and admire ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ*** but, at the same time, they are heavily involved in New Age practices, propagating its cause at large and even selling its products to others. How many times were you, Peter, approached with such products by others who read and claim practicing what is contained in My New Revelation? Individuals of this nature don't realize the spiritual danger to which they are exposed by such a combination. The so-called New Age movement was a reaction and a rebellion against the Judeo-Christian religions, and in some instances, to the Islamic religion, and to their empty rituals, externalization, literalization, dogmatization and restrictions. However, in its practice, this New Age movement went to an even greater extreme of externalization, ritualization and similar foolish and empty practices which lead nowhere except to pseudo-spirituality and to the full dominance of the negative state in the life of their followers and practitioners.

So, to combine anything like that with the internal, meaningful, lively and purely spiritual ideas and concepts of My New Revelation is like mixing cream of milk with the tar of brimstone. What happens when you put such tar into the cream? The cream becomes inedible and poisonous to your system. On the other hand, what happens if you put cream into tar? The tar will absorb the cream without being influenced by it in any

significant manner. You, Peter, like to use the analogy of the barrel of honey and a spoon of tar. If you mixed that spoon of tar into the barrel of honey, the honey becomes useless and unusable. However, if you put a spoon of honey into a barrel of tar, nothing happens to the tar. It is still as usable as before.

This analogy tells you a very important thing. Mixing ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ*** with such New Age, and other similar practices, will eventually lead to the corruption, poison and abandonment of My New Revelation. An individual like that will end up being under the total influence of the negative state without even realizing that such is the case. The consequence of such a mix can be very unpleasant.

So, what do you do with individuals like that? Do you give them these Dialogs to read? I want you to be very clearly aware that certain things have changed even from the time when the very first Dialog was recorded. The change relates to some of you no longer being My agents but instead, becoming My representatives. This change requires differentiation, repositioning and newly established loyalties, either to My cause or to some other cause or to someone else. If it is not My cause, then logically it is the cause of the negative state in some form or another. The present spiritual situation requires that this differentiation be made regarding those individuals who will become My true representatives on planet Zero and an integral part of the Great Alliance, from those who will choose to stay in their own negative conceptualization of what spiritual life is all about or how it should be like.

These Dialogs will serve a very good function in making such a differentiation. Therefore, as of now, they should be given to everyone who read and originally accepted My New Revelation but who, in your view, show some deviation from it, or are sidetracked from it, or who are simultaneously practicing and propagating with it New Age ideas or any other similar concepts.

In one important sense, these Dialogs will give such questionable readers an opportunity, an important final choice, either to recede from their adverse practices, no matter how much they think their practices are consistent with or at least, not contradictory to the principles of My New Revelation, or to completely dissociate themselves from them. Either they will amend their ways, or they will reject My New Revelation, giving preference to something else. In either case or outcome, these Dialogs would serve their important purpose.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

We are standing at a very important crossroad, at a crucial junction and in an immensely significant time. Everyone is facing a vital decision and choice about which direction he/she will go. At this point in time, the decision and choice has to be either to become My true representative on your planet or to join the forces that oppose the Great Alliance and My ultimate cause.

And this brings us to the issue of the subject discussed in the second part of the Twenty Sixth Dialog. It relates to the activities of various clusters of the mentioned Great Alliance and the renegades, as well as of the various factions among them.

An important reminder needs to be brought to your attention. Being that you are in your human skin, so-to-speak, and being that you still have a tendency to perceive and evaluate things from your external human position, a dangerous conclusion could be made that whatever is being revealed in this respect, primarily and exclusively will take, or is already taking, the form of an external manifestation on planet Zero. In other words, it could be taken literally and externally and not spiritually and internally.

First of all, let it be clearly stated that the majority of events of this significance, — all aspects of the mentioned wars, all activities of the Great Alliance, any other activities of the factions of the renegades, or whatever you have in this respect, — primarily and in their entirety take place and are being accomplished in other dimensions and not on planet Zero. Very often you will be surprised to perceive that not that much is happening on this planet or externally in your own personal lives. The reason for this is in the fact that planet Zero has not been assigned the role of originally initiating anything in particular, especially not something of this magnitude. Everything in this respect is being played out in the non-physical dimensions where a different approach is used than what you are accustomed to see or apply on your planet.

Yes, definitely, some important reactions to the actions taking place elsewhere will be, and already are, manifested in the events happening on planet Zero and in the behavior, attitude, relationships, reactions, lifestyle, or whatever you have, of its inhabitants. But the major combats, the most important aspects of the discussed issues are taking place beyond the reach of humans' conscious awareness and perception. If you could perceive by your human conscious awareness, the magnitude and extent of all factors involved, how they evolve, what type of means and weapons are used in the process, who is involved in all of this, what is the true meaning and significance of all of this, or anything else about

this whole setup and procedures; you could not survive for a fraction of a second. Simply stated, in your present condition, your human mind is not even remotely equipped with anything by which you would be able to perceive, understand or recognize anything that takes place in those dimensions.

For you, as My true representatives, it is sufficient to know that such things are happening and that you play a very significant role in all of this without your conscious awareness or, to use better words, without your conscious perception. By your developed intuitive discernment you are able to sense and be aware that something extremely important is happening or taking place in those dimensions, without an actual, visual or any other type of perception stemming from your human consciousness. It is for your own protection that you are unable to perceive the entirety of the process of the other dimensions' events as related to the discussed issue.

I can assure you that in order for you to be successful in your personal contribution to this important cause, it is not necessary for you to be consciously aware or perceive with your human conscious mind anything that takes place in the mentioned dimensions. However, your other part, the part that stems from Me and is not of your typical human endowment is fully cognizant of all details that take place in the process of these events' manifestation.

Peter: I am curious about the role of the creatures originally fabricated by the pseudo-creators in the process of their pseudo-creation of the new pseudo-universe.

The Lord Jesus Christ: As you know, Peter, originally they were fabricated to countermand the members of the New Universe who were created by Me, specifically and particularly from My New Nature. Their role at that time was to undermine the activities of the members of the New Universe by all possible means available to them. This was not an easy task because something entirely new, and unavailable up to that point, was utilized in the creation of the members of the New Universe. So, how do you go about countermanding something like that if the new components utilized in this process are totally immune to the influence or to the assaultive properties of any old methods or weapons used by the negative state and by the pseudo-creators before their lockup?

In the process of My creation of the members of the New Universe, a special combination of various components from My Divine Human and Human Divine were utilized and a special element of a special idea was

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

derived from the totality of My Absolute Nature and imparted on the members in question. This combination and the condition under which they were created, gives them a special type of immunity against anything that the negative state is able to use in their effort to nullify the activities of the members of the New Universe.

So, as you see from this description, the pseudo-creators faced a truly formidable task at that time. However, as they noticed the difference that existed then between My agents on planet Zero and all others, they realized that perhaps they could circumvent the difficulties in coming up with something comparable to the nature of the members of the New Universe. So, in the process of fabricating these new creatures, they decided to experiment with the new material made available to them by you, My agents at that time. In the ultimate result of that experiment, they were able to fabricate creatures that were entirely different from anyone and anything that they had been able to fabricate before their lockup. This gave them some possibility of being effective in undermining the works of the members of the New Universe — to a certain extent — so they believed.

However, as their situation changed, so too was the role of those creatures changing. First of all, during the pseudo-creators' split into three major groups and their numerous sub-groups, the respective creatures were likewise divided into three groups and assigned to assist each respective group of the pseudo-creators. So, whatever each respective group of the pseudo-creators is engaged in, the creatures assigned to them assist in that particular work.

One of the tasks that these creatures originally had, was an assignment comparable to that of the members of the New Universe, that is, to be attached to various humans and agents of the negative state on planet Zero in order to 'protect' them from the influence of the members of the New Universe and to infuse into them a new type of falsities and distortions related to the understanding of My New Nature, the nature of the New Universe and the transcending nature of the positive state.

What you have to realize, Peter, and all who read these words, is that the nature of the positive state, as mentioned before, is in a constant mode of transcending any of its previous states. So, when the pseudo-creators were released from their confinement, they were shocked out of their wits, so-to-speak, to realize that the structure of the positive state was not the same as it used to be before their lock-up. In fact, they were totally unable to recognize anything that they used to know. Nothing was the same and everything was different beyond any recognition.

In producing the creatures of their new pseudo-universe, they needed to take this factor into consideration. It was necessary to establish a special condition in them that would take into consideration the factor of this transcendence in the nature and life of the positive state. So, new types of falsities and distortions were invented and given to their respective creatures, with which, they were sent to planet Zero for the purpose of attaching themselves to the various inhabitants specifically chosen for that purpose. These inhabitants would then implement such distortions and falsities into the external life of planet Zero, effectively countermanding in their mind anything that would come from Me and My New Revelation. Also, to block the activities of My agents, who are now My valued representatives.

However, because of the formation of the mentioned Great Alliance, these particular creatures are no longer in that role. They are now supporting their respective group of pseudo-creators in their war against the renegades.

Unfortunately, in this respect, the situation is not easier for you in any manner. In some ways it could even be somewhat more difficult — not that it would deter you in any way from your significant work. As you remember, the renegades, in their foolish effort to imitate everything that the pseudo-creators did and now do, fabricated their own quasi-creatures. They gave them exactly the same assignment that formerly belonged to the creatures of that new pseudo-universe. This assignment is to block you, to undermine your work in all its aspects and especially to impede as much as possible your collaborative effort with the members of the New Universe who have been assigned to you recently for that purpose. Their methods in this respect can be much more brutal and unbearable than what was used against you by the pseudo-creators' creatures. Of course, it doesn't mean at all that these brutal methods are more effective than those used by other creatures. In fact, because of the renegades' much lesser sophistication in this respect, these creatures, in their ultimate effort will become much less effective. So, don't be afraid of their impact on you, no matter how bad it would appear.

Peter: Thank You very much for this information. Is there anything else You would like to add today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Not on this subject. We are done for today in this area of discussion. However, for the fun of it, for laughter and relaxation, I would like to share with the readers something that happened a few mornings ago. As you took your usual brisk walk and exercise in the early morning, during which, we dialogue intensely; your

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

next door neighbor, who likewise runs and walks that early, passed you by. And as you greeted each other, he said to you, 'Here is a man of leisure,' referring to your retirement. We had a hearty laugh about his statement. All of us who were with you at that time thought, 'if only that young man were to know the type of Peter's leisure, what it is like, or what he does for us! He is busier than he was before the so-called non-leisure time.' Well, this is just to have fun. You can go now, have your meal and do other things which need to be done. Have a very nice day and visit with Alan Jacobs.

Peter: Thank You very much. Yes, it was funny to hear that from my neighbor. But in some way, it feels to me like I am having a really great time.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Of course you are, Peter. And this is the way it is supposed to be. So, enjoy it and have a good time.

Twenty Eighth Dialog

January 25, 1999

Peter: Before going into the questions, I would like to express my personal gratitude to You for inspiring Olga and Dan Barba of New York, Rosemarie Fitzpatrick of Astoria and Tom Oudal of Texas for giving me such nice encouraging words after they read the Twenty Sixth Dialog regarding my concerns and anxieties.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You see, Peter, their reaction or response only confirms what I told you about your personal problems, and sharing them with others. They are not as personal as you may think, and they may be very helpful to other readers by triggering understanding, compassion and acceptance in them or whatever positive emotions and thoughts they may have.

Don't forget a very important prerequisite for any follower and practitioner of My New Revelation — sharing. The whole concept of My Personal Need to create My Creation is founded on the principle of mutual sharing. Do you share only your positive, pleasant and delightful feelings and thoughts? Very often, your adverse state of mind may contribute to others in understanding their personal life issues more than the pleasant ones. After all, communicating with Me is always a pleasant event. Everybody expects it to be that way. So, never underestimate the need for such sharing.

Let Me bring to your attention one of the members of your spiritual family who is not of human origin but who was assigned to you from a place and state which is far out of the reach of your comprehension. Do you remember what he/she represents in your state of inwardness? I quote, 'with unconditional love and discerning wisdom to share everything that I am and that I have with everyone who wants to share and reciprocate, without imposing anything on anyone but also without throwing pearls before the swine and giving what is holy to the dogs.' To clarify for your memory, as indicated to you in My New Revelation, 'swine' has a spiritual correspondence to someone who is identified with evils (devil and evil spirits) and 'dogs' to someone who is identified with falsities (Satan and negative spirits). Of course, in some ways, it is almost an insult to the poor swine and poor dogs to make such a comparison because they can never be the way the minions of the Hells and their human counterparts are. Swine and dogs go by their instincts, and not by freedom of choice, and they do what is proper and right for them to do because it is integrally contained in their nature to be that

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

way. On the other hand, the agents of the negative state and their human minions have freedom of choice and they do evil deeds because they want to do them by their own free will, which swine and dogs don't possess.

So, as you see, when you are sharing something with those who are My representatives, or with those who, in your intuitive perception, are eligible for such sharing, you are fulfilling one of your most important obligations in being My representatives, reflecting the true nature not only of My positive state but, most importantly, of My Absolute Nature, rooted in such sharing and reciprocation. After all, what is the purpose of life, any life? — to share, to give, to receive, to reciprocate and to do all that without expecting anything in return; that is to say, to do it for the sake of principle itself. Even the negative state likes to share its own evils and falsities. How else could it sustain its own pseudo-life?

Your obligation as My true representatives is to illustrate and demonstrate this principle of sharing from the position of My positive state. It needs to be compared with the sharing of something which is positive and good — deriving from My Absolutely Good and Absolutely Positive Nature — and with the sharing of something that doesn't stem from Me but from the relative negative state and its evils and falsities.

Peter: Thank You, Sir, for this timely reminder. Sometimes, such important issues have a tendency to skip our mind. We know about them but we don't think about them too often.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, Peter, this is the typical condition of your human nature. Why do you think it is necessary, from time to time, to remind you of various issues, to repeat the same statements numerous times, to restate certain important principles again and again, and many other things? Don't forget that your human brain and nervous system were specifically and genetically wired in such a way so as to make it very difficult for you to retain in your conscious mind anything related to these kinds of issues. How else could the negative state take hold and be fully manifested in human life and elsewhere? Tell Me, Peter, what is it that humans so easily remember and are able to recall instantly? Or what is it that they first learn in any other language while easily forgetting some other words or sentences? How many times have you been amazed to discover that you clearly remember some stupid, insignificant and meaningless words or phrases, or the words that are used for cursing? And then you are frustrated because you so easily forgot and are unable to recall something very important, contained, for

example, in the Bible, or in My New Revelation or in something else which is very significant and important.

You see, Peter, this is a good illustration of the negative state's wiring of your brain in order for you to remember clearly, in most instances, only those things that are of a negative nature and easily forget those that have a positive connotation. It takes much more effort to learn something that has this positive connotation than something that has a negative connotation.

This is one of the major reasons why so many repetitions and reminders are contained in My New Revelation, its ***Corollaries...*** and these Dialogs. So, don't complain if you find Me repeating or reiterating many things during our dialogs. It is very necessary and needed in order to circumvent the original wiring imposed on you by the nature of the negative state and human life.

Peter: I perfectly understand the need for this. Talking about wiring, it reminds me of the question posed by Dan of New York during our telephone conversation last night. In changing the roles and positions from being Your agents to becoming Your representatives, is there any rewiring happening, related to these significant changes?

The Lord Jesus Christ: As you know, Peter, any change of such proportions requires repositioning everything contained in your nature and in the physical frame that corresponds to it. The way you have to understand this process is not that something surgical is being done — in the typical physical sense, but in the sense that certain areas of your mind, and their corresponding localization in your brain, are being opened or activated, and others are being closed or pushed into the background of your mind. As you remember from the ***Corollaries...***, in your particular cases, in addition to your typical human wiring, a different type of wiring was superimposed on it. This different wiring was placed in you directly by Me. A substantial area of My wiring in you was dormant or suppressed in order to give a chance to your typical human nature to be established first. Only a small portion of it was active in order to give you a sense of what it is like to be My agents or agents of My positive state. This smaller area functioned also as a protection against being totally corrupted and subsumed by the negative state by the means of your typical human nature.

You have to remember very clearly, that if you had been left entirely to your human nature without having this peripheral wiring superimposed on your human nature, you would have totally and completely

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

succumbed to the negative state. You would have been taken over without any thought that anything else was possible or that you could be any other way. That wiring, or smaller portion of it, functioned as a constant reminder to you that something else, truer, more real, better and more just, etc., exists, than what you have and experience in your typical human life. Without such knowledge, or at least this intuitive sense, you could have never come to such an important conclusion. In that case, you would have become full-fledged slaves of the negative state.

The above description can be considered a definition of your being agents of the positive state. It was a basic and fundamental function of the agents of the positive state to be aware of this fact, the fact that there is more to life than the life in and of the negative state. You, as My agents until recently, were a constant reminder, among many other things, to all humans and other creatures elsewhere, that there is a different life, and that the life of the negative state is not the only life in being and existence, but that it is transient, temporary and, in its essence and substance, unreal and illusory. Your role in this respect was absolutely necessary in order to establish this awareness in the human consciousness, in most instances in its unconscious parts, so that at one point in time it could be utilized to bring humans out of their accursed life.

However, as of recently, your role as agents of My positive state has ended. With the ending of this role, that area of your wiring that was placed in you by Me, has been in the process of deactivation and it is being put into a dormant state; and the other, larger area of that wiring related to your becoming My true representatives, is being activated and put into a dominant active mode.

You experienced this process recently, Peter, in your own personal life when suddenly you became aware of things that could have never crossed your mind before. This awareness, or to put it in better words, this activation, made it possible for you to establish a new type of relationship with Me, leading to these important dialogs and the recording of what transpires between Me and you. Or also recently, when Dan and Olga experienced the factor of being taken out of the time-space bound condition into a spiritual-state condition.

Experiences of this nature will be, and already are manifesting with some of you in your sudden awareness of how remote, strange, alien and unreal other humans are, and how puny, unimportant, insignificant and meaningless their everyday concerns and hassles are. This experience

doesn't signify that you are going to put them down, ridicule them or avoid any association with them. It only means that you will be more and more aware of the real state of affairs of the human life in particular and the life of the negative state in general. The reason why this will be the case, is because, remember please, no longer will you be looking on human life and the negative state from their own position, in which you were as My agents, but from My position and the position of My positive state, into which you are being placed as My true representatives. The view will be entirely different.

In some ways, this new view will be more difficult for you to bear than it was before. However, this difficulty will manifest itself only if you approach it from the position of your human nature. Should anything like that happen, and it most certainly will, you are to immediately switch to your newly activated area, activated by Me, which relates to your being My representatives.

Now, I want you to be aware that the activation of that area and putting it into a dominant active mode in your life is a lengthy process. It will not happen instantly or in one day. It is a slow and gradual process. In some ways and with some of you, it will be an almost imperceptible process. It will take time, a long time. The instantaneous full activation of that area within your mind would be dangerous to its human portion. As humans, you could not survive such an instantaneous or rapid activation. The impact of the full disclosure of its content and the tremendous surge of positive energies contained in it and released during this activation, would instantly kill your human brain. You would physically die. Such an outcome would not be desirable from our position because you are very much needed in this new role while you are still on planet Zero and in your human life.

So, be very patient and don't despair or have doubts — should no outward perceptible changes be taking place in your life for a long period of time. Different individuals among you have a different endowment, a different stamina, a different level of awareness, different needs and a different level as to what extent the human portion of their mind and brain dominate their lives for whatever purpose or reason. Because of that, a different time frame will be needed for each particular individual within which this activation will take place.

However, in the majority of cases, with the exception of a very, very, very few individuals among you, you will not experience any outward changes in your life. Most of these changes will happen at your inner, spiritual level where it not only counts but where it is needed the most.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

This arrangement is also needed for the purpose of your own protection and for security reasons. One reason is that if you were to be fully aware of all these important internal changes with your human conscious mind, your life in the human life of planet Zero would become totally and completely unbearable. The full impact of all the atrocities and abominations of the negative state and its human life — remember, to their fullest possible extent — would hit your human portion with such a tremendous force that it would kill that human portion. Why? Because of the tremendous guilt of being human, and behaving in a human way throughout all of your life on planet Zero, and about everything you have ever done or haven't done in its process; this would overwhelm you to the point that you would feel totally and completely unworthy of My Mercy, Forgiveness and Compassion. In that case, you would not be able or even willing to accept it. Such a fate would be contrary to My Will. Therefore, I am constantly protecting you from anything of this nature to happen to you — ever! — by arranging things in such a manner so as to give you either enough time to adjust to any changes that are happening during this process of activation or to conceal from your human conscious awareness, to the needed extent, their impact on the internal level; and to have you feel very little of its impact in your outward human behavior and your human mentality in general. The only thing that some of you would be able to feel is a greater degree of desire to be more positive, loving, wise, kind, considerate, forgiving, merciful, compassionate, understanding and more and more accepting of others the way they are without expecting anything from anyone. And this is exactly what is needed from you as My true representatives.

Peter: Thank You very much for this beautiful and meaningful explanation. And this brings us to the question posed by Tom Oudal of Texas. He, as well as I, would like to know the extent, if any, of our involvement with the renegades and what form it should take.

The Lord Jesus Christ: The situation with the renegades is considerably much more complex and trickier than any of you can imagine. Never underestimate this factor. You don't know what you are dealing with. Don't forget what you were told yesterday, as well as previously, that the renegades represent the final, most evil and most negative face of the negative state in its entirety beyond which, nothing will exist in the nature of the negative state that hasn't been exposed yet or that needs to be exposed. Because of this factor, you can be assured that this phase of the exposure of its nature can be considered the most spiritually dangerous and brutal. It is this phase of the exposure of the nature of the negative state which is called the Great Tribulation in your biblical terms, Peter.

The renegades are the embodiment of this phase. Due to this fact, during the time of this exposure and learning, all of them need to be at the place where they are now. For that reason, as long as this phase is in its process of manifestation, none of the renegades will be eligible to convert to the positive state — not that they even want to, or show any desire to do so at this time.

Oh, yes, they will come to you, and in some instances they already have, and ask you to help them convert to the positive state. Don't be taken in by it for a second. They never mean it. It is a cunning deployment on their part to insinuate themselves into your life and the life of the positive state, which you represent and from which you function, in order to, first of all, disrupt your life as much as possible; and secondly, to learn as much as they are able about the way the positive state functions, what kinds of weapons and tools it uses; so that they can take this information back to their leaders with the purpose of finding an effective way to nullify the effect of those tools and weapons on them and their cause. Thirdly, they want to know how many, how strong, how dangerous and how potent the members of the New Universe who are assigned to be with you are, so that they can match them with their own numbers in order to block or make it very difficult for them to collaborate with you. These renegades can be considered scouts or spies on behalf of their respective contingents who pretend their willingness to be converted to the positive state in order to gather the above described information.

The only role you have in this respect is to lovingly, wisely and firmly remind them that you know exactly what their purpose is for being with you and that you choose not to give them any information, and to not be taken in by any of their threats. Instead, you read them their rights and privileges and your rights and privileges to be free from their influences and subsequently, you refer them to the members of the New Universe who are with you. They will take care of them and remove them from your spiritual sphere and atmosphere.

At this point I would like to bring the following fact to your attention: The ending of the last phase of the exposure of the face of the negative state is a lengthy process from the standpoint of your conceptualization of time because of its extremely dangerous content. Also, the way of its ending could be very surprising. One option could be that the appearance of the pseudo-creators in one part of planet Zero could be accompanied by the appearance of the renegades in another part. You have absolutely no idea what could happen if this particular option is chosen by all who will be in the position to choose. It could really lead to a devastating physical

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

war of unthinkable and unimaginable proportions. If this were to happen, all My representatives would be withdrawn from planet Zero shortly before it would come to that point. Another option is that only the pseudo-creators will appear. It would mean that the renegades would have been successfully defeated and locked up. Still, another option is that only the renegades would appear. It would mean that all the pseudo-creators had converted to the positive state.

There are many other options which could be implemented. However, there is one option which I keep in reserve, and the nature of which cannot be revealed because of its Absolute Nature. The only thing that can be said about it is that it would be like something that could never enter your mind even in your wildest dreams and imagination. It would be something so totally and utterly surprising that no one ever anywhere could even think about what it is — no matter how spiritually advanced that individual would be. And this is all that can be said about it or about anything else today. Have a nice day, Peter.

Peter: This was a very interesting dialog. Thank You very much for everything.

Twenty Ninth Dialog

January 26, 1999

Peter: Would it be appropriate this morning to ask You to expand, if possible, on the topic of the Twenty Eighth Dialog — its last paragraph — which deals with several options of how the ending of the negative state and typical human life might occur?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Only to a certain point. However, before going into that topic, let us address some issues raised by Dan in your telephone conversation. First of all, we'll address the issue of, how dangerous is it for you to work with the pseudo-creators, specifically with the far right group and what is its status at the present time? The group in question has a considerable number. They are still bent on domination and taking over everything everywhere, including the positive state. However, some changes in their agenda have occurred. They are beginning to realize that the destruction of the positive state is not feasible or possible and therefore, to direct all energies in that direction is a waste. Due to that, the major goal of their effort was redefined. Instead of concentrating on this destruction, they redirected their energies on desperately trying to prove that the good and positive life is possible without The Lord Jesus Christ and His/Her Spiritual Principles — parallel to the life of the positive state. In order to do that, as you know, Peter, they are in the process of trying to fabricate creatures comparable to the sentient entities residing in the positive state with whom, they hope, they can accomplish their goal. So far, although several different types of creatures were fabricated and placed in their new pseudo-universe for the purpose of testing their hypothesis, none of them have come even close to anyone in the positive state.

So, they are trying. However, as you were previously informed by Me, their effort is tremendously hampered by the civil war with the renegades. All their efforts and resources, at the present time, are going into defeating and locking up the renegades. Because of that, their experimentation in this respect was put on hold. The sooner they are able to succeed in their struggle with the renegades, the sooner they may resume their experiments.

Your role in this process is to help them, through your participation in the Great Alliance, with defeating and locking up the renegades. It is to your advantage likewise, if they are able to resume their experimentation as soon as possible. The sooner they complete it, the sooner they will come to the realization that life of the positive nature is

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

truly not possible without The Lord Jesus Christ and His/Her True Spiritual Principles. No matter what you do, how much effort you put into it, how many varieties and numbers of creatures you fabricate, without Me and My Spiritual Principles, you end up exactly in the same situation and predicament as with humans on planet Zero — although this time the outcome would be much worse and much more devastating than with humans proper because of the use of different genetic material extracted from the former agents of the positive state.

So, as you see from this situation, in order to accelerate the time needed for this purpose, it is crucial and vital to help them in this respect, so that this important realization comes to them as soon as possible and that, subsequently, the elimination of the negative state can be successfully completed.

Knowing that your cooperation and support in this effort is very important, this group of the pseudo-creators will not interfere with your other activities of a positive nature because it is clear to them that it is also to your advantage to get the final and decisive answers to their existential question. After all, the sooner they get their answers, the sooner the negative state can be eliminated. To repeat again, it is impossible to eliminate the negative state until such final answers are obtained and established once and for all.

Therefore, because of this factor, and because you are working closely with the members of the New Universe under My auspices, charge, presiding and guidance, you are in no danger by working with them on this important task. In fact, you have been working with them all along for some time now without your being consciously aware that this is the case (on the human conscious level).

The second issue, raised by Dan, relates to the practices you were advised to do in the past. This advice was recorded in ***Corollaries...*** (in the conclusion of Update 20). It relates to the need for retransmuting the negative energies, following your purification and cleansing from them, into positive ones and reapportioning them back to the positive state from which they were originally stolen. The principle which is being referred to here, and which is one of the most important principles in the totality of My New Revelation, is the law of continuous progression, change, growth, modification, updates, upgrades, adjustments, removal and similar factors inherent and embedded in the very structure and nature of the positive state. In other words, to what degree are you still advised to continue doing so, if everything has changed and nothing is the same?

There are two aspects to this issue. One relates to your different positioning and role as My representatives. The other relates to your still being in the human skin and being influenced by the artificial human nature. In the first instance, being that you are positioned in the midst of the positive state, you no longer need to make an all-out conscious effort to undertake the process of retransmutation and reapportionment because it happens automatically by itself, by virtue of the fact that **you are in** the positive state. Anything that you bring with you from your human nature, is being taken care of by surrounding you with the lights of My positive state and by My engulfing you with My New Nature specifically for that purpose. This process in itself, and how it is being done, cannot be revealed to you or comprehended by you as long as you are in your human skin.

In the second instance, being in your human skin and having that artificial human nature, subjects you to a continuous bombardment by various thoughts, feelings, emotions, behavior, etc., which are of the negative nature and inconsistent with anything of the positive nature. Don't forget that your human nature was fabricated from the ideas of evils, falsities and all kinds of distortions. Because of that, it attracts evil and negative spirits who feed on it. The process of that feeding is experienced by you as fear, anxiety, doubt, uncertainty, confusion, guilt, depression, heaviness, tiredness, helplessness, hopelessness, misery, irritability, anger, hostility, and many other similar negative states and conditions. Whenever you are experiencing these types of states of mind and life, you can be assured that these negative and evil spirits are feeding on your human nature.

In this case, you have to take responsibility to actively and consciously differentiate what is happening in you by the process of the mentioned feeding, from that which is My endowment in you — your true nature. Do you retransmute and reapportion anything of that nature? Although originally, the energies that were utilized in the process of activating the negative state came from the positive state, once the pseudo-life of the negative state was established, it started to produce its own energies apart from anything contained in the original energies of the positive state. Thus, the pseudo-life of the negative state, by the process of its pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, discharges its own energies, utilized to produce the adverse states mentioned above. The original energies of the positive state, transmuted into negative ones and apportioned to the negative state, are now being taken care of by Me personally, as you are positioned in the midst of My positive state. The other energies, which we may call pseudo-energies, are not usable for anything positive because they are the result of a secondary production and derivation for

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

the purpose of maintaining and perpetuating the negative state's pseudo-life. They are to be discarded into the cesspool of the negative state until that time when the negative state is eliminated. Because these pseudo-energies are integral to the nature of the negative state, they have only temporary pseudo-value which will disappear with the disappearance of the negative state.

So, whenever you become aware within your mind and your human psyche of these negative emotions, thoughts, feelings, or whatever, utilize My Light to engulf you, and push them back into the above mentioned cesspool where they belong. Actively and consciously pronounce that they are not yours, that they are pure impositions and that you will not allow any negative or evil spirits to feed on them only because of having this artificial human nature. 'That nature,' you may say, 'is unreal and has no life in itself and by itself and therefore, it is an illusion to even think that anything can be derived from it that would have any semblance of true life and able to maintain and perpetuate the pseudo-life of the negative state in any form or shape.'

Following that, very strongly reaffirm, reconfigure and reestablish your identity as My true representatives and your commitment to be embedded in your genuine and original nature which stems directly from Me.

In this process you will be assisted by the members of My New Universe, who are very well-versed in doing this type of work effectively and successfully. It is in their nature to do so. One of the reasons why they were assigned to you is to help you in this process. The problem here is that when you are in the midst of experiencing the impact of their feeding on your artificial human nature, it is difficult to be aware of anything else but what you experience — which is negative. During times like that, you tend to lose the perspective of who you really are, and there is a strong identification with your human nature and not with your true nature. After all, when you have such strong negative emotions, how can you even consider that you are someone else but what you experience at that moment?

This is how the negative state gets to you. It tells you something like this, 'you fool, how can you even consider that you are not one of us, if you are so pronouncedly and painfully having such typical human experiences?' These are the times when you have to be on guard and bring to your conscious awareness that you are in My Light, in the light of the positive state and, specifically and particularly, in the light of the New Universe, radiated into you through its members who are assigned

to you for that purpose. This is also the answer to the third issue raised by Dan, regarding your involvement with the members of the New Universe to help you be true and genuine humans without the negative connotation of the typical human nature. In other words, to be like them as much as possible because they reflect My Absolute Nature in their condition which includes the human nature in its positive connotation as well.

The difference between the old ways and the new ways is in the fact that, whereas in the old ways you had to pray for this to happen, or ask for help so that it would happen on a continuous basis; in the new ways, you need to shift your conscious awareness to Me, My positive state, the members of My New Universe and to your true nature; and to the fact that you are now positioned in the midst of the positive state. By doing it in this new way, you reaffirm the fact that you are My true representatives.

During your former roles as agents of My positive state, being that you were positioned in the midst of the negative state, and embedded in your artificial human nature, it was necessary for you to actively ask Me for help and protection by your own free will and choice. Because of the nature of that position and role, anything that would be given to you without asking, would be by imposition and not by freedom of choice. As you know, the negative state is rooted in no freedom of choice and impositions. In your case, as agents of the positive state, you needed to illustrate a lifestyle which is by freedom of choice without any impositional factors. Otherwise, in the view of the negative state, if you didn't ask for it, but it was imposed on you, then what is the difference between the positive state and the negative state, respectively? After all, they both function on the principles of impositions! Do you see the fundamental difference?

Peter: Very clearly.

The Lord Jesus Christ: On the other hand, once you are positioned in the midst of the positive state, by its very nature, being that the positive state is the state of the very freedom, independence and choice in itself and by itself, by virtue of that fact, you no longer need to ask for anything but simply be aware that you are right in the midst of it. Being in the midst of the positive state, constitutes an automatic response to anything that you need in any respect, and it is provided for you whenever you need it and if you need it. Here is the factor of total and unconditional reliance on Me and My provisions for you of everything you need in all aspects of your life. Once you establish such a reliance within

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

your mind, you no longer need to ask anyone or anything for any help because it is constantly there available to you at any time you shift your awareness to it.

Peter: Thank You very much for this clear and concise explanation.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. Let us now address your question, Peter, expanding on the possible scenarios and options that exist for ending the negative state.

One possible scenario and option was not mentioned yesterday. It entails that neither the pseudo-creators nor the renegades would physically appear on this planet, as expected by all of you. The consequence of this option would be that a very peaceful, painless, kind and gentle transition to the positive state of all involved in the negative would be accomplished. In that case, no physical need would exist for such an appearance. The Zone of Displacement would become the Zone of Placement within the true Creation without any outward turmoil or holocaust.

One alternative to this possible option exists and could be chosen. Neither the pseudo-creators nor the renegades would physically appear on planet Zero but the turmoil, holocaust and Great Tribulation would take place in other dimensions, especially within their domain in the Hells, in other regions of the Zone of Displacement and in their new pseudo-universe, and the new quasi-new universe of the renegades. From that position they would be able to impact the events on planet Zero and in the human life in such a manner so that the winning of the negative state on your planet would happen by a direct pseudo-spiritual influence into the humans' minds without the need for their physical appearance. The factor of their physical appearance would be a secondary consideration in this scenario if they could take control of all human affairs from their own level. In some way, they would prefer doing it this way.

Let us look now on the possible alternative that entails that both the pseudo-creators and the renegades would appear on your planet physically, or in some other tangible and perceptible form. What would happen then? The renegades, let us say, would appear in Russia, for example, and in the lands of its faithful allies, such as for example, Iraq, Serbia and some other Arabic and non-Arabic nations and in the former Republics of the defunct Soviet Union. On the other hand, let us say that the pseudo-creators would appear in the USA and in the lands of its faithful allies in Europe and elsewhere. Now, because they fiercely fight

each other in their own civil war, they would immediately engage those countries in their cause. In that case, a devastating war would plague this planet with such an unimaginable outcome that it is quite possible that no one would survive it. This is one way how the negative state would win on this planet — by total destruction and doom. After all, it is in its very nature to be that way. Some sensitive individuals on your planet who are able to plug into some aspects of the events happening elsewhere, have been reading into this possible scenario and outcome, and are predicting this to happen. Having this information from the negative state, they are able to predict only disasters and a doomsday. They don't see anything else. Hence, the prediction that a Third World War would start on July 4, 1999, with Russia, Iran, Iraq and others on one side, and the USA and its allies on the other side.

The other scenario which is being considered is the appearance of only the pseudo-creators in a physical mode, or visible by human physical eyes. As mentioned yesterday, such an appearance would denote that the renegades were taken care of and that the pseudo-creators are now in full control of all regions in their domain. In case this scenario is chosen, the appearing pseudo-creators would come as gods and creators of humanity, refuting the existence of any spirituality or God or The Lord Jesus Christ or any other supernatural being or deity. In fact, from their own ranks they would produce fakes of these divine personages. By accomplishing this, and by convincing humans of the truthfulness of their claims, the negative state would win on planet Zero.

Still, another scenario could be chosen in which only the renegades would appear physically, or in any other visible or tangible form. If this option would be chosen, it could mean two things: The pseudo-creators had lost and are confined back in their respective Hells — an extremely remote possibility! Or that they all converted to the positive state and let the renegades complete the cycle of the negative state's pseudo-being and pseudo-existence and the final manifestation of its ugliest, most putrid and most despicable face — a somewhat likely scenario.

In this case, with the renegades in full control here, all aspects of the content and meaning of the Great Tribulation of apocalyptic proportions would be fully triggered and manifested on planet Zero. They would rule this planet and humans in the most brutal, dictatorial and bloody way you could imagine or actually, you couldn't imagine it at all — that's how terrible it would be. The only thing I can tell you about this scenario or option, is that, pray that it would never happen or be chosen.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

And finally, the most mysterious, secret and hidden scenario and option, I keep in My personal reserves, so-to-speak. As mentioned yesterday in the Twenty Eighth Dialog, this scenario can't be revealed because it is of an Absolute Nature. Because of that, even if it were possible to describe some of its minor aspects, your mind, or the mind of any relative sentient being, could not comprehend or apprehend any of it, no matter how hard it would try. However, if this option were to be chosen, in the process of its manifestation, once it is in place, you would begin to understand its nature and why it was necessary and vital to choose it. The best thing about this option would be that it is of such a wonderful nature, that nothing exists in anyone's mind that would even remotely approximate what it is and how it would look. So, let us finish at that.

Peter: Thank You so much for this explanation. Should we continue or should we finish for today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: I would recommend to finish for today and resume, if needed and feasible, tomorrow with the Thirtieth Dialog. In the meantime, have a very nice rest of the day.

Thirtieth Dialog

January 27, 1999

Peter: As you know, our last Dialog (29th) caused a lot of confusion. Actually, the part of that Dialog that caused Dan and Rosemarie confusion, was the statement about various scenarios of the ending of the negative state. Obviously, this is a touchy subject. According to Dan, the scenario of neither the pseudo-creators nor the renegades appearing physically on this planet refutes or is contradictory to what was stated about this issue in Chapter 7 of ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***. In that Chapter, it was clearly stated that the physical appearance of the pseudo-creators is a must, in order to fulfill certain necessary requirements for the elimination of the negative state and the execution of the final phase of Your Second Coming. Moreover, Rosemarie has a question about the meaning of the last scenario, which excludes all others and which stems from Your Own Absolute Consideration of how things should end. These are questions that, as I told You previously, are causing me so many excruciatingly painful doubts and panic reactions. In moments like these, I wish, first of all, that I never would have agreed to be in my position and role — being the transmitter of Your New Revelation; and secondly, that people who have such inquisitive, but valid questions, could be placed in my skin and experience what I go through each time they come up with something like that. Am I recording something in these Dialogs that is the result of my own wishful thinking or imagination, or a fantasy of my own foolish heart and mind? How are we going to reconcile this problem? As Dan says, are we missing something?

Wasn't it much nicer for me when we were in the period before the Dialogs started, and when everyone was supposed to ask their own questions and get their own answers without my direct involvement? This is too easy for them. And I think, 'let them struggle with getting their own answers, and having their own doubts and uncertainties about whether what they are getting is true or not.' Right now, I am even afraid to type Your Name in the next paragraph in response to these questions, so that it would not be assumed that You are the One Who is answering them, if by any chance it is me who's coming up with them in accordance with my own foolish assumptions. I am very sorry for all of this, and if I am wrong in any assumptions in this respect, I am asking for Your forgiveness.

The Lord Jesus Christ: And you have it, Peter. In determining whether it is Me or not Who is dialoging with you, everyone has to make

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

their own decisions based on their own personal and private intuition. The responsibility to determine this important factor lies with each prospective reader. Of course, no one is forced to believe, including you, Peter, that it is Me — The Lord Jesus Christ — Who is dialoging with you. However, your reaction in this respect is understandable and is noted.

Still, they can and should continue asking their own questions and getting their own answers, but due to their position and role and what each of them represents from the other levels, such answers would be limited to only their sphere and only to what they represent and agreed to do. They wouldn't include any other levels. Therefore, their answers wouldn't have multiversal significance. This factor is very important and should never be left out of your consideration. As you see from your momentary physical symptoms, by falling into this trap, Peter, you have slightly opened the doors to a group of negative entities who is assigned to you to impede your dialogs with Me and their being recorded. Because of that, right now you are experiencing physical vertigo and nausea. Of course, it will pass soon, together with the passing of their attacks by the means of your current physical condition.

Let us now address the issue of contradiction. Are you missing something? What you are missing is the statement and subsequent important awareness, also made in ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***, that there are infinite varieties of choices and possibilities that are available for all to choose. To have some choices but exclude some others would logically limit, restrict and hamper the sentient entities in their choice-making efforts. All choices must be present in the Universality-Of-It-All in order to assure the total freedom of choice and free will, as well as independence, of all involved in this choice-making process. Everyone's life depends on this factor.

Now, this doesn't mean at all that all choices will be actualized, realized or taken up in the outward reality. Don't forget that everyone who is in place for this choice-making decision is also equipped with logical and reasoning processes that are telling them which choice is not feasible or needed. But you do have to give them these fully exhaustive possibilities. Otherwise, something would always be missing. The inquisitive mind of these entities, as you said, Peter, would immediately recognize that something is lacking in the cache of all available choices. Of course, in that case, not all available choices would be present. If this were to happen, the sentient entities would end up making no choice at all because they could not make a proper decision in this respect without knowing if some other choices that are not available, would be logically

more appropriate or feasible to choose than those which were available. In that case, they would be constantly bombarded by the awareness that some other choices are out there, which would be more appropriate to make than what they have.

So, in talking about scenarios or options, as to how the ending of the negative state might take place, it is necessary to also mention those that could never be chosen because it would be totally illogical, irrational and unreasonable to choose them, leading not to the elimination of the negative state but to its reconfirmation.

However, for the sake of argument, let us assume for a moment that the choice would be made by both the pseudo-creators and the renegades to not appear on this planet physically or in any other tangible or visible form — a very improbable scenario. In that case, some other setup would be initiated that would fulfill the necessary requirements for the elimination of the negative state and execution of the final phase of My Second Coming, as delineated in the mentioned 7th Chapter of **The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ**. For example, access to the Universality-Of-It-All would be opened and be made simultaneously accessible to all. Everyone would be placed in the midst of the very process of the activation of the negative state, from A to Z. In this case, everyone would fully reexperience on their own skin, so-to-speak, how the negative state was activated. Everyone would become fully cognizant of all aspects of its process and development, of the nature of the pseudo-creators, of their lockup, of their release, of how they would assume their experimentation, of what they have done up to this point as we are recording these Dialogs, and everything else, including their so-called second coming and how it would be manifested and what its outcome would be. All these factors would become obvious to you not only verbally or as though you are watching a movie, but you would be living them in the most realistic manner, having the experiences of the **here-and-now**. Following these experiences, the last phase of My Second Coming would be executed and the elimination of the negative state would be accomplished.

Please don't forget a very important fact: In the Universality-Of-It-All neither time nor space apply. Past, present, future and all **possibilities, as well as their manifestations and outcomes**, are fully contained in it and they can be reexperienced in their full manifestation as if you were right in the midst of them. In actuality, it is not 'as if,' because, when you are placed in the Universality-Of-It-All, you are a full participant in all those events, and not as if they were happening outside of you. In fact, they are real occurrences. It is like time travel. You travel into the past

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

in order to become an experiencer of all its events not only as an observer but as a full-fledged participant. Then, you travel into the future and experience all needed events and all their possibilities in all their many possible modes of realization, actualization, manifestation and outcome; again, not as an observer but as a full-fledged participant.

This concept of acquiring experiences non-spatially and non-temporally, which are needed to fulfill the logical requirements of what was described in Chapter 7 of the Big Book, as you call it, will be extremely difficult to grasp for some of you. The human mind is limited to thinking in spatial-temporal concepts, in the linear mode and not in the mode of states occurring simultaneously and synchronously. However, this concept is familiar to some of your more advanced theoretical physicists.

So, as you see from this description, even if this particular scenario were to be chosen, it would neither violate nor refute the requirements in Chapter 7 of ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***.

A similar example can be applied to all other possible and impossible scenarios and options. No matter which one would be chosen, it would never violate or refute or contradict anything required for the proper, logical, rational and the most appropriate sequence to end the negative state and all factors involved. Each of the possible and impossible choices would be accommodated in some mode or manner to these requirements. Again, there are infinite possibilities in such modes and manners, from which you can choose to actualize, manifest and realize this important need and requirement.

So, relax everyone, and don't be afraid that I would violate any of My Words. Of course, as you see from this example, the form of manifestation or appearance of all these events is fluid and not fixed. Do the pseudo-creators need to appear to humans in all their pseudo-glory, with 'pomp and circumstance?' It may or may not happen that way — as also indicated in the same mentioned 7th Chapter, where it was clearly stated that it is only one of many possible scenarios.

You would be surprised to learn, all of you, that in actuality, many pseudo-creators, as well as many renegades, are already walking on planet Zero, anonymously, incognito, and without anyone's awareness of who they really are. They are behind the scenes, clandestinely and quietly influencing and setting up all events on your planet in preparation for their actual appearance. From their gathered experiences, they will decide the mode, method or the form in which they should overtly appear to humans. You can clearly discern their presence

in many factors of human life, such as for example, in cloning, computer science, television programs, movies and in all other aspects of human life. You are clearly witnessing an unusual surge of all kinds of technological accomplishments, which would have been unthinkable only a few years ago. I can assure you, Peter, that without their presence, involvement and influence, humans would have never been able to accomplish anything in such a short time span.

So, as you see from all this, nothing is happening the way it shouldn't be happening. However, you need to be trained to think as My true representatives and not as typical humans. In the process of this training, you are exposed to various options, scenarios, possibilities, as well as impossibilities, so that you may learn to think as the true inhabitants of My positive state do, and not as humans think in their one-sided, narrow and limited way.

It is very dangerous to be stuck in only one mode of perception regarding the possible outcomes of anything, without realizing what else is involved, or how many levels of the entire being and existence, as well as pseudo-being and pseudo existence, are involved in the decision-making and choice-making process.

And this leads us to Rosemarie's question. Her question is whether I, as the absolutely knowing Absolute Being, know which choice would be made for the ending of the negative state, and the outcome of all this with the pseudo-creators and the renegades. Of course, I do. What a question! I would strongly recommend to refresh your memory by rereading the Law of Divine Providence recorded in Chapter 10 of ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***. It clearly defines how such Absolute Knowledge of Mine works.

However, let us assume that I would be inclined to reveal in advance the choice that would be made in this respect. Can you imagine the immediate results of such a dangerous revelation? First of all, I would instantly invalidate all the results of the experiments in the life of the negative state. In that case, no proper and ***final learning*** about its nature could be accepted by anyone because no reasons would exist to continue in it — if you know the outcome in advance. Everything would stop without giving a chance or opportunity to other, perhaps even more important, aspects of the negative state to be exposed and learned about.

Secondly, I would put everyone in the choice of no choice because, who wants to refute what I say, foresee or predict? Who can dispute anything being conveyed from the Absolute State? The impact of that which comes

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

from the realization that it is from the Absolute Knowledge, without being able to come to it by one's own effort, would nullify everyone's creative endowment. In that case, everyone would become impotent to do anything productive, constructive, inventive or creative, sitting around, waiting for Me to spoon-feed them as small children; and not only that, but it would take from them any incentive for living at all. Thirdly, this would be perceived by everyone as an imposition, without any chance to make any steps on their own by their own free will and free choice. And there would be many other possibilities of tremendously devastating and freedom-killing outcomes. As you see from this brief explanation, such an occurrence would be contrary to My Nature, rooted in Absolute Freedom and Absolute Independence.

As far as Rosemarie's request to give some analogy in human terms to what would be the nature of the scenario which I have in My Absolute Reserves, no analogy exists, not only in the human perceptual and experiential mode but in no one else's, anywhere or anywhen. Otherwise, it would not be Absolute.

However, I can assure you of one thing, that even this unusual and wonderful mode would include everything needed, in order to fulfill the requirements of how the elimination of the negative state and My Second Coming has to take place — as described, for example, in the 7th Chapter of ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***.

I hope that the foregoing explanation will take away your panic and anxiety, Peter, and will satisfy the inquirers as well.

Peter: I don't know about them, but I feel a little calmer and quieter, although I still experience vertigo and slight nausea. I know it will pass soon. I have another question from Dan, but also from me, which I would like to ask. May I?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Of course, Peter, go ahead.

Peter: Is there any reasonable and reliable way to distinguish or recognize who is who in the process of communicating with members of our true spiritual families during which, many negative entities may appear for all kinds of positive but also, very often, very negative reasons?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, Peter, in some ways that question was answered in your telephone conversation with Dan. However, for the sake of other readers, let's expand on this issue. The most important tool for making such a differentiation is, of course, your intuition. In this

respect, those of you who are now in the role and position of being My representatives, are being put into a state of a far greater enhancement of your intuition than previously has been the case. With this new enhancement you will have no difficulties in recognizing who is who and what they really want from you or their purpose for appearing to you. However, there are some other signs in order to recognize who they are. As you know, many varieties of negative entities or spirits exist. First of all, you have the pseudo-creators, the renegades, the various other representatives of different groups and factions of both the pseudo-creators and the renegades, the various other creatures of the Hells belonging to one or another respective group, and finally there are the so-called rogue spirits who don't belong to any particular group, but roam around making trouble for anyone or attaching themselves anywhere they can in their effort to feed on the negativity of all the individuals available for that purpose.

Each of these groups, as well as the rogue spirits, have a somewhat different impact on your psyche, with a slightly different appearance for those who are able to visualize their presence. The pseudo-creators and their respective minions no longer induce any terror or fear in anyone — as they used to do shortly after their release. They simply watch and communicate, if needed, in a cool, scientific and detached manner. The renegades and their various minions and followers like to appear as fierce, brutal and threatening, but sometimes also as very cunning and in devious forms, inducing such states as terror, fear and confusion. The rogue spirits usually induce feelings of anxiety, uncertainty, perplexity and various physical symptoms which accompany anxious states. There are other various subtleties with which they manifest themselves that are inherent in the differences of their own unique nature and in the policy requirements of their various groups and factions.

So, in essence it is your enhanced intuition that will tell you exactly from which group or faction they are coming to you. Your duty in this respect is to question them without fearing them or being rejective toward them. Don't forget that many of them are coming to you for the purpose of being converted to the positive state. However, because they don't know any other behavior or approach but what they have and what they acquired from their fabricators, they come to you in a typical negative manner. This manner is determined by the nature of the group, or faction, or respective Hell to which they belong or are coming from. For this reason, if they appear to you in a somewhat threatening manner, it is not always as if they want to threaten you, as in some other cases, but because they don't have anything else in their behavioral repertoire. In cases like these, once you start to question them, it becomes very obvious to you

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

that their appearance is for the purpose of conversion, regardless of what their outward behavior may be.

In other cases, when it is obvious that their intention in appearing to you has nothing good or positive, and if they are trying to threaten or intimidate you in whatever manner, you don't have to be afraid of them whatsoever, but simply experience yourself being constantly, 24-hours a day, under the wings of My protection and under the shield of My safeguard, and you simply refer them to Me. I will take care of them. I can assure you that no one from anywhere of their domain can cause you any harm, especially now in your position as My true representatives.

At this point, Peter, I would recommend to finish it for today because it was a very difficult day for you. Go into the sun, meditate and relax. We'll talk later, if necessary.

Peter: Thank You very much. I will take Your advice very gladly.

Thirty First Dialog

January 28, 1999

Peter: First of all, I feel a need to apologize to You, to Dan and to Rosemarie for my state of mind and for my reaction yesterday toward Dan's and Rosemarie's questions. At the time, I felt that I needed to get it off my chest.

The Lord Jesus Christ: It was appropriate to get it off your chest, Peter. Otherwise, you would keep it within you, by which state you would be giving a much greater and much more damaging opportunity to the group of the negative entities assigned to you for that purpose, to completely shut you off from our dialogs and cause you unnecessary mental anguish. In that case, you would escape into your solitude, as you like to do on such occasions, effectively closing the door to your state of inwardness, and ceasing to communicate with your friends both in this world and in your world. You see, Peter, this is exactly what those negative entities would like to accomplish with you. Unless you talk about what you feel in this respect, specifically as related to the issues of My New Revelation and these Dialogs, they would succeed in blocking you for a long period of time. We don't want this to happen, by any means. As you used to say to your professional students, 'a normal reaction in an abnormal condition is abnormal,' meaning, that it is normal to react to an abnormal condition in an abnormal way.

In our case, a serious problem was looming over you, related to a possible discrepancy, or even contradiction, between what was conveyed to you in **The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ** and in these Dialogs. If that were the case, if such contradiction were to really exist, of course, you would panic because you would immediately assume that either the statements in the Big Book were not from Me or that the dialogs are not with Me. Can you imagine the consequences of that if it were true? It would be devastating for you and for everyone else who has accepted My New Revelation as My True Word.

On the other hand, look at what would happen if your reaction would be something like 'so what, big deal, I am not going to worry about it. Let them resolve this problem without my bothering about it. I am not going to waste my time on questioning or checking the verity of this statement. I'll just continue as if nothing happened.' In this case, you would effectively succumb to spiritual arrogance and as a result, you would instantly fall under the influence of that negative group assigned to you for that purpose.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Thus, it is very important that everything being said and recorded during our dialogs, as well as during any other of our interactions, is accompanied by a simultaneous continuous check in order to assure the verity, authenticity and genuineness of its source. And not only that, but that every respective reader of these Dialogs does the same thing through his/her intuition. It is every reader's spiritual responsibility to do so.

If you look, Peter, on the outcome of yesterday's event, you can see very clearly how important it was to bring the issue of a possible contradiction and discrepancy to your attention. It allowed for a very crucial, multiversally important clarification and explanation to be offered for everyone involved at all levels and in all dimensions. What was stated in the Thirtieth Dialog put everything into proper perspective, in essence, nullifying any doubts about the possibility of contradiction and discrepancy. And not only that, but it clearly delineated the absolute necessity of having infinite varieties of choices in order to assure everyone that whatever they choose would be the right choice to make, because every other choice would not lead to the same most desirable, logical and reasonable outcome.

I can tell you very clearly, Peter, that because all sentient entities, no matter where they are situated, no matter how far they have spiritually developed, are not absolute but relative, and even they need occasional reminders of this nature. This is not only humans' prerogative. Of course, being what humans are, they are almost in a constant need of being reminded about everything, and especially about spiritual issues.

So, there are questions and then there are other questions. To clarify: The questions, as posed yesterday by Dan and Rosemarie, have multiversal significance. They need a response which would include and satisfy everyone and not only humans, or in this case, Dan, Rosemarie or you, Peter. Because of the nature and magnitude of their meaning, they have to be answered through you, Peter. After all, you are the one who is recording and conveying them to all interested parties. For that reason, it is only logical and proper that you take responsibility for answering them.

On the other hand, for example, take a question posed three days ago about the relationship that may exist between you and your employer. Is it proper to use the time and resources of your employer for your own personal, private needs, unrelated to your assigned job? Now, these kinds of questions don't fall into the above mentioned category of multiversal meaning. It is something which is between you and your employer, as

well as between Me and you. Different situations, different employers, different agreements and different possibilities exist which have a totally different connotation from one case to another, depending on the adopted policies of the respective employer. The spiritual significance of your behavior, while you are in your place of employment, is totally individualized and personalized so that only you can answer that question through your own discernment and intuition and direct communication with Me — by whatever mode is available to you. Because of this factor, questions of this type cannot be answered through you, or anyone else for that matter, but only through the inquirer himself/herself.

This is the reason why it was emphasized so many times how important it is for every one of you to learn to ask your own questions and get your own answers, by whatever mode is available to you, and not to rely on you, Peter, or anyone else. We don't want anyone to be dependent on what you say, Peter, or what I say through you, because it would end up in the total passivity of the inquirer and his/her spiritual impotence, as well as shunning the responsibility that he/she has in this respect. To end up like that means to become subsumed by the negative state. Only questions related to the issues of My New Revelation and to the content of these Dialogs, as well as questions that have multiversal significance, are proper and need to be answered through you, Peter, because it is your role and assignment to do so. In previous Dialogs we have already explained why this is so.

Peter: Talking about questions, how do You like a comment made this morning by Dr. Ardyth Norem of Arizona in her E-mail about my addressing You as 'Sir?' She feels that, perhaps, by addressing You as 'Sir,' I neglected the feminine aspects of Your nature by emphasizing instead Your masculine aspect. Of course, on my part, the way I felt it at the time, it was more of a habitual response as though I was talking to my male superior who is well above me in a typically human connotation. No disrespect or intent to de-emphasize Your feminine aspect even remotely entered my mind when I called You that.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Although it is true that from your personal standpoint it was a kind of habitual response, in reality, in the true reality, the reason you were almost compelled to address Me like that was because, first of all, it was like one man talking to another man; and, secondly, the connotation within which it occurred required you to perceive Me as your Heavenly Father. At the same time, the logical and intellectual discourse of the Dialogs made it more comfortable for you to address Me as 'Sir,' because it is of My typical Absolute Masculinity's

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Nature. However, let it be known to everyone, that in the process of this discourse, the Absolute Equalization of My Absolute Masculinity and My Absolute Femininity has always been and always will be in place, no matter in what manner I am addressed. This is also true regarding how I am perceived in your mind, Peter.

So, no offense to Ardyth, and it is good that she reminded you of this fact; although I can assure her that in your mind, Peter, there has never been any inclination, desire or tendency of neglecting or putting down or seeing the feminine aspects as less valuable or less important than the masculine aspects. The opposite is true: I can attest to it that you, Peter, were very progressive in this respect many years back (46 years ago), while still confined in the former Soviet Union. Do you remember what you wrote in your personal philosophical diary, which was seized by the KGB — the Soviet Secret Agency? With tremendous passion you proclaimed and defended the issue of total equalization for men and women, and how equally valuable and needed they are, and how one gender shouldn't ever be put over the other. And do you remember, Peter, how during your trial those passages were read and how three judges in the tribunal — all male, of course — ridiculed you in that you could come up with such a foolish notion? Only a recording secretary, who was female, in a very shy and trembling voice, quipped in your defense on that issue. As you know, in those days, no one ever questioned the so-called superiority of males over females. So, even in this respect, you were well ahead of your time, Peter.

Peter: Anyway, Ardyth is right, and I, most certainly will be more careful from now on. At this point, would You like to address some other issues as indicated to me during my early morning walks, meditation and dialogs with You?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter. The issue that needs to be further addressed today relates to the concepts of predictions and possibilities.

A tendency exists in human nature, and in the nature of the negative state in general, to perceive everything as permanently fixed, unmodifiable and unchangeable. We are reiterating this issue here because it needs to be reminded in order to avoid any possible negative reactions if things don't happen the way everyone expects them to happen because they were either predicted or implied. So, don't complain about redundancy or repetition in this respect.

Take for example, the biblical predictions by prophets in the Old Testament and by the Apocalypse in the New Testament, as well as some

of My own predictions as recorded, for example, in The Gospel According to Matthew, Chapters 24-25 and elsewhere. Whoever reads them takes it for granted that they will be literally fulfilled at some time or another on your planet and nowhere else. After all, if God — Me, predicts something, it has to be that way no matter what, as though God — Me, were unable to change His/Her or Her/His mind, and consistently, without any regard for anyone or anything, follows through with whatever He/She predicted or ordained. My disciples, for example, were so sure that everything I said, predicted or designated would come true during their life on planet Zero, that when they came to the spiritual world and realized their error in this matter, as well as in many other matters, they were shocked out of their wits, so-to-speak, and it took them some time to adjust to the fact that things are not always what they seem to be.

In that case, you may ask, why would you want to make any predictions through anyone? The importance of those biblical or similar predictions of the past, is in their function and not as much in what they contain or say. They were meant as warnings in order to give a chance to all involved to amend their ways, to recognize the necessity for change and to establish a different mode of life which would make it possible to avoid or entirely nullify the need for predictions to come true.

As you know from previous statements, each behavior or choice that one makes for an established lifestyle, by the spiritual laws, bears its consequences, results and outcomes. By the Absolute Law of My Absolute Unconditional Mercy and Forgiveness, it is necessary, first of all, to delineate all possible results of any behavior or choice and, at the same time, to give various different alternatives for the different behaviors or choices that could be taken in order to avoid or entirely nullify anything that was contained in such predictions. This is the way it is, period. This is the way things are set up in the entire being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence.

So, in this sense, you do have to look at any predictions as possibilities which may or may not come true, depending on the alternative choices that could be taken by those who are being addressed, or to whom such predictions are being addressed. This is one of the most important reasons why in My New Revelation (as in its Chapter 7, for example) such predictive or foresightful statements are always accompanied by the statement that this is one the many possible scenarios of how things could happen and that there are many other possibilities in which such things can be manifested or appear. Therefore, based on this factor, never, ever cling to only one of the possibilities that are being offered to you only as an example of how things might happen and not whether

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

they will happen exactly the way they are being described. They may or may not happen that way.

As you said some time ago, Peter, if something is being given to you as an example of how things will happen, in our particular case, of how the ending of the negative state will happen, you suspect that it will not happen that way. By the multiversal factor of it being said that it will happen that way, in the non-spatial and non-temporal state and continuum, it is already being fulfilled. If it is being fulfilled in some way or another, and placed into the Universality-Of-It-All, then it is obvious that some other scenario or choice is being considered which hasn't taken place yet. You have to understand a very important rule here, which will be very difficult to grasp by the human aspect of your mind: Any time something is being conveyed to you in the form of predictions or foresights, and such predictions or foresights are accompanied by a descriptive example of how it could happen, by the factor of it being uttered, in the non-spatial and non-temporal dimension it really happens that way. As I said, this statement will be very difficult for you to conceive.

On the other hand, what you do have to realize clearly, and this is something that eluded even My own disciples while they still lived on planet Zero after My departure, is that whenever statements of this nature are made, they relate to a multidimensional state of affairs and very rarely do they have any physical external relevance to anything on planet Zero. Usually, the impact on planet Zero doesn't happen that much on the physical level but more on the mind level of humans and their lifestyle. So, the impact is spiritual and mental in nature rather than physical and external. The physical and external aspects may change as a consequence of the spiritual and mental changes but they always lag behind — sometimes even for millennia.

As you know, unfortunately for humans, their external conscious mind was completely disconnected from all other levels of their mind, especially and particularly from their spiritual level. For that reason, they are unable to perceive any events, occurrences or the state of affairs of all other levels and dimensions of the multiverse. Yet, by the various aspects of their multileveled mind, they are connected to all of them without consciously realizing that such is the case. And not only that, but they fully participate in all events in other dimensions without having even the slightest suspicion that this is the case. The reason for this unawareness is rooted in the fact that it was necessary to disconnect their external human conscious mind from having any link both to the other levels of their mind and to other dimensions as well.

As mentioned several times before, this was done for the purpose of placing humans into a position of freedom of choice, so that the necessity to be negative by imposition from the forces of the negative state would be nullified. Instead, they may choose to be that way, or any other way, by their own free will and choice. If the link from their human conscious mind to everything and everyone else were to be left intact, being that humans are structured to be inherently dependent on someone or something else, they would be under the constant influence of others, from the other dimensions, who, in their view, have far more superior knowledge and ability than they do. So, humans would do whatever they would be told to do and not what they would want to do by their own freedom of choice. In that case however, nothing of their doings or deeds could be appropriated or attributed to them because, ultimately, these would not be theirs. In that case, humans would forever stay impotent to make their own choices by their own free will.

Should something like that happen, the negative state could never be eliminated because somebody out there — humans — would not be in the position to make any choices on their own. Due to the fact that the nature of the negative state is rooted in the life of impositions, you would have to entirely eliminate humans from any modes of life, without the possibility of saving them in order to bring the negative state to its eternal end. As long as there is any life by impositions, the negative state thrives and expands. This is one of the main reasons why it was necessary to sever the human external mind's connection to everyone and everything else in other dimensions. As you know, this was primarily accomplished during My First Coming. As you remember, before that time, humans were able to see beings from other dimensions walking among them.

And this brings us to another possibility of how things would be arranged, should the choice be made that neither the pseudo-creators nor the renegades would physically appear on planet Zero. Once it is perceived that humans are firmly embedded and rooted in the life of their freedom of choice, you gradually and slowly, so as to avoid dangerous shock, reestablish the connection of their external conscious mind with the rest of their mind and with all other dimensions, by building a permanent straight line to all of them. In this new condition they would be able to not only perceive everything that is going on there but they would be able to actively communicate with all their respective inhabitants. Thus, a physical connection would be established with other worlds, and planet Zero would become engulfed in their sphere. In that case, humans could observe and learn how the pseudo-creators, renegades and their respective minions did what they did; how the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

activation of the negative state happened; how they were fabricated; who their actual 'creators' were; and all other things related to this issue.

The pseudo-creators would come to humans in this particular mode, reveal themselves to humans, convince them that they are the only creators and gods, etc., without an actual physical appearance on planet Zero. However, because now planet Zero and the human external conscious mind would also be engulfed in the sphere of other dimensions, by that factor, they would be able to fully participate in the final phase of the second coming of the pseudo-creators. Following that, by the same mode, they would be fully participating in the final phase of My Second Coming. Thus, all factors would be in place for the fulfillment of all requirements for the ending of the negative state as depicted, for example, in Chapter 7 of ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***. Do you see, Peter, and all of you who read these words, how it would be possible to accomplish everything which needs to be accomplished in this respect? And how it is possible to have many different scenarios without violating or refuting any requirements for this to happen? And I gave only two examples: one yesterday and one in this Dialog. I can assure you many others are possible. But for now, these are sufficient for your proper understanding of this issue. For that reason, I would recommend to finish for today with the wishes for you to have a very pleasant day.

Peter: Thank You very much for Your clarifications. I enjoyed them very much.

Thirty Second Dialog

January 29, 1999

Peter: I don't have any specific questions or concerns this morning. However, I would like to humbly ask if You have anything to convey to us?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for asking. Yes, I do have something that I would like to discuss. Most of it will be in the form of a reminder and restatement. However, I don't want you to feel as though I am repeating Myself. Any such restatement has some important significance, primarily on the other levels and not only on the human level due to humans' fragile, unreliable and forgetful memory.

Let's begin with the issue of the importance of anything that is said during our dialogs. Sometimes, at first glance from your human perspective, certain statements could seem to be of minor importance to you. A good example of such perspective is the first impression that anyone could have after reading the Thirty First Dialog. Of course, after carefully rereading its content, as Dan pointed out so aptly, you realize what a profound, revolutionary meaning it has.

However, let's assume for a moment that from your human perspective, some statements in these Dialogs are of minor importance or of no importance at all. Only humans can conceive them to be that way. Why? Because, as mentioned many times before, their perspective is grossly limited in the scope of what they are able to discern, to see, to hear or to sense. They are limited to perceive only what their external sensory organs are allowing them to perceive and/or receive. Anything above and beyond them, completely eludes humans. So, humans are deprived of perceiving and receiving things that happen elsewhere in other dimensions.

Consider this: When I, The Lord Jesus Christ, communicate, speak, or converse with you, Peter, in the process of our dialogs, due to your position, role and assignment as the transmitter of My New Revelation, all dimensions in the multiverse, as well as all their respective worlds, are involved in listening to what I say. Whatever I say, no matter how it is perceived by your human external mind — whether of minor importance or of no importance at all — to the perception and scope of understanding of other non-humans, every single word, every single dot and every single tittle has tremendous importance and significance. They

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

look at it not as humans do in their singular ability, limited to their own external world, but in a multiversal, multilevel and multistructural way.

However, there is another very important point to this issue. It relates to one extremely important aspect of the currently occurring shift. What is the impact of these dialogs in particular and the entirety of My New Revelation in general on the inhabitants of the Zone of Displacement and on all their respective pseudo-worlds and Hells? This also relates to the issue of the need for restatements and repetitions.

As you know, Peter, our dialogs are going on in a conversational manner, like two people sitting down and quietly talking to each other, discussing various topics of common interest. This is something new not only for everyone in My Creation and its Multiverse but also for the members of the negative state in its entirety. Although some elements of this type of conversation appeared for the first time in the ***Corollaries...***, the uniqueness of our dialogs is in the fact that no external mediator is used in this process. I am not using anyone's vocal cords, mouth or speech to talk with you as the case was in the ***Corollaries...***, at least in some of their Updates (Third, Fifteenth, Twentieth and two Private Conversations). At this time, it all happens in your mind. Even as you are recording this conversation right now, you can clearly hear Me in your mind talking to you.

What is the significance of this type or manner of conversing without directly involving anyone in its process or as it is happening? It is only Me and you. Everyone else is carefully listening without interruption or interference. On the other hand, such conversation eludes the members of the negative state as it happens in the here-and-now. However, as you carefully reread each Dialog several times, or as Dan of New York very carefully rereads them several times for the purpose of editing; in that process, the content of these Dialogs becomes likewise available to them.

However, because of the conversational form of these Dialogs, as you are rereading them once again, My voice clearly sounds in your mind as though it is happening here-and-now. This factor is very important, more important than any of you can imagine. What happens when you are rereading them and the totality of all members of the negative state is hearing the read material? My voice, which they now fully recognize as the voice of The Lord Jesus Christ, sounds directly in their minds likewise. It is not as though you are reading it, Peter, or Dan, or any other reader is reading them, or as though they are reading them in book form, but it is a direct mind to mind communication in My personal voice. Because of this monumental factor, no one in the Hells or

elsewhere in the Zone of Displacement, is able to interfere with this process or impose any distortions on whatever they hear.

This vital and crucial factor builds a final foundation to introduce everyone in the negative state to the true nature of the positive state and, most importantly, to My True New Nature. As you know, the members of the negative state have been kept in thick darkness regarding My Nature and the nature of My positive state. Yes, they had My New Revelation and its Updates available to them; but their true undistorted and non-falsified content was hidden from the common folks in their domain by the leaders of their respective Hells. Instead, a rewritten version in which every word was turned into pure falsities and distortions was presented to them. So, they didn't have any direct access to the genuine content of My New Revelation. At that time, whatever was being transmitted in My New Revelation didn't sound in their minds in the form of My Divine Voice. As you know, at that time, the information contained in My New Revelation needed to be made available to, and read by the members of My positive state first. In the meantime, the members of the negative state were kept in darkness about anything happening anywhere.

However, with the current shift, My positive state is being positioned directly in the midst of the negative state in a very different mode than it has been since the time when My outposts were set up in the Hells. This new mode of positioning is being accomplished by means of these Dialogs which enable the members of the negative state to hear Me right in their minds without any interference. Due to this factor, when something in these Dialogs is being repeated, restated or reiterated, it is done so not only for your benefit, but primarily and most importantly, for their benefit. Different regions, different groups and different societies of their domain are involved in this process at different times. The word 'times' is a very poor approximation of what I am talking about in this respect. Their different state and positioning allow them to be plugged-in to this process at a very different level. When you transpose that level to your human level, at your level it is manifested as a difference in time. Hence the need to repeat, restate or reiterate from your human level.

The former tendency of the rulers of the Hells to hide from their followers anything that came from the positive state, subsequently distorting and falsifying everything they presented to them, has an analogy to the Catholic Church on your planet. As you know, for many centuries the Catholic Church prohibited its members from reading the Bible, under the penalty of expulsion or even a death sentence by fire. Whenever a priest read anything from the Bible, it was read in Latin so

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

that the common folks would have no understanding of the read material. Instead, they were given the Catechism, which contained nothing but distortions and falsities about My Nature and about everything else related to the positive state. That was the way the Catholic Church kept its followers in darkness. No other translations of the Bible but Latin and Cyrillic were available for a long period of time, both out of the reach of common folks.

It was not until Luther initiated the Reformation Movement that the Bible also became available to others and not only to priests. It was Luther who for the first time translated the Bible into German. Following his example, gradually, a plethora of translations of the Bible appeared in other languages. However, even now, the Catholic Church only grudgingly allows saying mass in their churches in an understandable language with the reading of the Bible's verses in the language of the land. On the other hand, the Pope still says his masses in Latin. So, as you see, it tells you very clearly who is in charge of the Catholic Church.

In other non-Catholic denominations of the Christian Churches, the negative state had to take a totally different approach. Due to the fact that the forces of the negative state were no longer able to keep humans and others from reading the Bible in their own language, they circumvented this problem very effectively and successfully by inducing humans and others to perceive everything contained in the Bible and similar so-called Holy Books in an external literal sense. That way, everything related to the true nature of the negative state, as well as to the true nature of the positive state and My true Nature, continued to be hidden from them. As you know, from the spiritual standpoint, the literal sense has no sense at all. Thus, in the perspective of the forces of the negative state, no harm was done by allowing various translations of the Bible to take place. In actuality, they realized the tremendous potentials which such translations were giving them. The contradictory statements of the Bible and other similar books were utilized to further dissect, split and fractionalize all religious systems existing on planet Zero.

However, the current situation is entirely different. The currently occurring shift allows a totally different approach to all issues of life and especially to spiritual issues. Because of the form in which these Dialogs are occurring — the conversational form — even though they are still being written down for the sake of humans and some others (who the others are was explained in one of the previous Dialogs), their content, ideas and whatever they say, sound in My voice directly in everyone's mind, without apparent mediation from anyone. As you, Peter, hear Me

responding and talking to you directly in your mind, so is everyone else in the positive state and in the negative state. And it happens simultaneously and synchronously with everyone in the positive state at the very moment we are talking; and in the negative state as you are in the process of rereading them when My voice sounds in your mind again. This important phenomenon will also be experienced by every prospective reader on this planet. Any time you read My responses, statements, clarifications or elaboration to any questions posed to Me either by you, Peter, or through you by anyone else, they will sound in your mind, in My voice, accommodated to the personal, unique and individualized structure of your mind. Whenever you experience such a mode of conveyance, at the very same time, everyone present with you from the region or sphere of the negative state's influence, will be hearing it in My voice in their own mind.

The importance of rereading these Dialogs, and subsequently rereading ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ*** and its ***Corollaries...***, over and over, and again and again, is in the fact that every time you do so, a different group of the members of the negative state will be attached to you, enabling them to hear what is being said in their own mind in My voice. The combined reading of all three sources of My New Revelation is crucial at this point in time. Before this time, no foundation was laid for undertaking this reading in this mode. Although during your prior readings of ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ*** and its ***Corollaries...***, members of certain groups of the negative state were also present with you, they read it with you and through you, and in the process, they didn't hear My voice in their mind. Because of this factor, they could interpret the read material either from the position of your understanding, or from the position of imposition by the hellish translators who turned it into pure falsities and distortions.

However, at the present time, because of this totally new factor, from your position of reading these three sources of My New Revelation as My true representatives, this will enable you to discern My voice in your mind, so that it is not the read material which is telling you these things, but it is directly I who is saying them to you in the midst of your own mind. At the same time, My voice will very clearly reverberate in the minds of all negative spirits who will be attached to you for that purpose at each time of your reading. Thus, they will be hearing Me and not you or anyone else from their domain. Can you see the tremendous importance of the nature of this shift in this respect? Gradually and slowly, the members of the negative state in their totality will no longer be receiving only falsities and distortions — as the case has been up to this point, but for the very first time they will be receiving the pure

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Truth in its undistorted and non-falsified condition. This will be a monumental accomplishment. As you see from this fact, it will lay the foundation on which the possibility and potential of everyone's conversion in the negative state and the eternal elimination of the negative state itself, will become an actualized reality.

From this discourse you will also be able to deduce the difference between your being My agents in the past and being My representatives in the present. As long as you functioned as My agents from the position of planet Zero and the negative state in general, it was necessary to provide the negative state with all pertinent information about any significant spiritual occurrences by the mode of your external behavior and input, without My direct tangible involvement, and only in a peripheral sense. At that time, this was a necessary condition because your primary function was to provide important information about life in the negative state and in the human life to the members of the positive state. At this time however, your role is reversed. Now, as My true representatives, you are providing information about the nature of the positive state and My True Nature to the members of the negative state. For that reason, your reading of the three sources of My New Revelation, as My representatives, has a totally different significance, meaning and connotation than at the time you were reading them as My agents. At this time, this will provide a direct input of its content, ideas and principles directly into the minds of all members of the negative state in My personal voice, accommodated to their perceptive and receptive abilities. Thus, this new condition will completely bypass any possibility of anyone in the negative state interfering, for the purpose of blocking anyone's proper understanding of what they hear and their need to accept it and apply it. Due to this factor, for the first time, the members of the negative state will be able to compare the life and the meaning of the positive state with their own life and with the meaning of the negative state, which has no meaning. And you know very well, Peter, where such a comparison will lead. I don't need to tell you.

Peter: What a beautiful revelation! Thank You so much for it! I am always surprised to learn how much more exists to be revealed than I thought existed. Every time I start these Dialogs, I think, 'this is it. Nothing more exists that can be revealed'. I am so glad that this is not the case. My foolish limited human mind always expects some kind of ending.

The Lord Jesus Christ: This is a good example, Peter, of how things will be in the positive state, after its full activation. There will never exist a condition or state in it during which you could come to the

conclusion that, 'this will be it, and there could be nothing more'! End of story! Such things are totally inconceivable in My positive state.

I would like to offer, if I may, a few more brief clarifications. One of them relates to the important issue of change, as related to My Own Nature. The possibility of the foolish assumption that I am unable to change My mind or decision, is propagated by the negative state itself, in order to keep its members forever in its domain. If this assumption were true, no states, no conditions, no changes, no modifications and nothing else could ever take place. Everyone and everything would be locked in one condition, state and situation forever without being able to come out of it or to modify it. In that case, you may as well commit existential suicide because there is no hope in changing anything no matter what you do or don't do. Do you see the foolishness of this assumption? If I am unable to change My mind, or whatever, no one else would be able to do it. After all, from where would anyone be endowed with the ability to choose and to change if not from Me? From some other source? That would assume the existence of some other Absolute Being. In that case, the Absolute State would be nullified. If I don't have something, how can I give it to anyone created by Me? After all, I created My sentient entities from Myself and by Myself. I gave them, into their relative condition, only that which I contain in My Absolute Nature. If they are able to change their minds, modify their behaviors and reverse their decisions, that ability is coming directly from Me, reflecting My Absolute Ability to do so whenever I deem it appropriate. Do I need to remind you of the story of Jonah and the big fish?

And finally for today, I would like to remind you of something that was indicated to you in My New Revelation and was somehow forgotten when the issue of a possible contradiction between what was said in one of the previous Dialogs and Chapter 7 of ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ*** was raised. It relates to the issue of predictions and their validity. At the beginning of Chapter One of the same book, at the very end of page 8 and in pages 9-10, in point 2, as it compares the differences between the Old Revelation and The New Revelation, it is stated there, and I quote, '*The Old Revelation, in its symbolisms and correspondences, was foretelling the future development of the step initiated by The Lord Jesus Christ... . On the other hand, The New Revelation deals with the future only in the sense of the consequences and outcomes of activating the negative state. They are foreseen only as possibilities that may or may not materialize themselves.*' It would be a good idea to reread the entire point No. 2 of that chapter to refresh everyone's memory. That statement was made right at the onset of the transmission of My New Revelation contained in the Big Book, in order to warn every prospective reader not

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

to fall into a trap or into the habit of expecting everything to happen as it is being described in the form of various scenarios. They are always given only as possibilities and not as an immutable absolute necessity for them to happen that way. Remember this important factor.

In conclusion of this Dialog and in response to some readers' worries and guilt that they have stopped reading the Big Book, ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ*** and its ***Corollaries...***, because all their time is presently taken up by reading these Dialogs, I would like to assure them that reading these Dialogs constitutes reading My New Revelation. They are My New Revelation likewise. At this point in time, it is a good idea to concentrate on reading them in order to be totally familiarized with their content and to set up a condition to implement their ideas in their personal lives and give the opportunity for the members of the negative state to hear My voice in their minds while you are doing your reading and hearing My voice in your mind. Once you are firmly embedded in the meaning and content of these Dialogs, the reading of the three sources of My New Revelation should be resumed. The reason for this need was outlined above. So, this is all I have to say today. Have a nice day everyone.

Peter: Thank You very much for Your input in all these matters.

Thirty Third Dialog

January 30, 1999

Peter: You know, it is a funny thing how our human nature is. Yesterday, after I finished recording the Thirty Second Dialog, I was elated over its content and how beautiful it sounded to me personally. Of course, to some other reader it might not sound the same way. But that's not the point. Early this morning however, when I got up, I was full of concerns, fears, anxieties and uncertainty about the content of that particular Dialog. The way our communication or dialogs are being described there, and also the way it suggests to other readers to proceed during their reading, it sounded too much like hearing voices. From that, someone may conclude that I am out of my mind, becoming mentally ill or something like that. How do You like that?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, Peter, this is a side effect of your clinical training and work for many years as a clinician in the mental health field. If someone makes conclusions that you are mentally ill, or hearing voices, and that you are also imposing on other readers to follow your suit so that they can become mentally ill as well, it is their prerogative to feel or to think that way. It only would mean that they had completely and totally missed the whole point of what is being conveyed to all of you, not only in the Thirty Second Dialog, but in all of them.

If you carefully analyze the content of that Dialog, and how I said what I said in that respect, you will notice a tremendous difference between someone hearing voices and someone communicating from mind to mind. When someone hears voices, for that person it seems as if the sound in his/her ears is coming from the outside. For example, why do you think that when a paranoid schizophrenic hallucinates and hears voices, he/she tends to plug his/her ears in order to avoid hearing them? In our case, the situation is entirely different. The words sound in your mind. It is something like whenever you think deeply or ponder about some important issues; it happens deep inside your mind. You hear your own voice in your mind talking in words or ideas, giving you answers for making important decisions, or whatever the case may be. It is like being preoccupied with something that concerns you very much during that time. You don't consider this state of yours to be a symptom of some kind of mental illness. This is a normal occurrence in everyone's daily life. Otherwise, no one could ever make any sound decisions or come to the required conclusions. It is in these states of mind when your intuition is working the best.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

When you are paying attention to external events occurring outside of you, your pondering and intuition are somewhat suspended for that time. However, the moment you turn yourself inward with the purpose of analyzing the meaning of such occurrences, your intuition is fully activated and it may speak to you in your own mind. It comes through as a small voice in your mind, a voice that may sound like your own voice. You don't hear it with your ears but with your mind. This is the fundamental difference.

In your case, Peter, being that in your life you have been used to being constantly inward most of the time, you have always tended to think in your mind and hear every response in your mind rather than from the outside. You were born like that in order to rely solely on what comes from within you rather than from without you. That way, your intuitive discernment was developed to the fullest possible extent. This was a necessary and vital training in order to prepare you to become the transmitter of My New Revelation. Our conversation has always been from mind to mind. This mode of communication is extremely vital in the process of dialoging because it bypasses all the awareness of anyone in the negative state and it prevents anyone from putting anything of their own in your mind.

When you are concentrating on Me, on My presence in your mind, in your Spiritual Mind, and from that position also in all other levels of your mind — from within to without, you hear Me very clearly telling you all these things. In the moment you stop concentrating on Me and divert your attention to some external tasks, which need to be taken care of, My voice recedes into the background of your mind, in order to give you an opportunity to take care of the pending external business.

So, the issue here is the ability to shift your attention in your mind, from solely concentrating on Me and My presence within you as needed and necessary, to something not related to our involvement in this dialoging, for example.

How does this issue apply to any prospective reader? It was suggested that while they are reading these Dialogs, when they are reading those portions which contain My answers, they are advised to concentrate on Me and My presence within their own mind. That will facilitate their ability to discern that it is Me who is talking in their minds during their reading. In the process of their concentration, I will accommodate Myself to their own unique, personalized and individualized perceptive, receptive, expressive and impressive ability and level so that My voice will sound like their own voice. In some cases, to those who also have a

visual and auditory access to the state of their within, I will sound in a totally different but very familiar, kind and friendly voice. Either way, it will be Me who will be talking to you, conveying what is recorded in these Dialogs. Of course, from now on this situation will apply not only during the reading of these Dialogs but also during your reading of ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ*** and its ***Corollaries...***. This is a new requirement, as a result of the nature of the current shift, in order to give an opportunity to all members of the negative state to participate in this process for the purpose that was clearly outlined in the Thirty Second Dialog.

Now, the ability to establish such a mode of communication with Me through these three sources of My New Revelation, will vary from one reader to another. Some of you will be able to do so almost instantly without any difficulties. Some others will need to have some time to get used to this mode. With others it will take a lot of effort and training to accomplish this important task. But no matter what it takes, it will be possible to accomplish for every prospective reader who is willing to do so. Don't forget please, that I am present in everyone. Otherwise, you couldn't live or survive. All you have to do is to willfully concentrate on My constant presence in your mind.

Some people, by the nature of their extroverted personalities, are habituated to always look outside themselves. With people like that, a consistent training needs to be undertaken in order to effectively teach themselves to also pay attention to what is happening within them and not only without them.

If no other, more internal mode of communication can be established with some of you, in that case, all you have to do while reading My New Revelation is to think about Me and My presence in you. I can assure you that during such reading, if you approach it with positive and good intent and for the sake of principles, My presence will be with you very pronouncedly. Your intensive thoughts about Me and My presence during such a time will have exactly the same effect on the listening groups of negative entities attached to you for that purpose, as if you were hearing My voice within your mind. In this case, your thinking will be projected into their minds as My voice, which they will be able to hear very clearly. So, as you see, you don't necessarily need to have any visual, or auditory or any other mode of experience of My presence within and with you in order to be able to serve in this very important capacity as My true representatives, when you are helping in the process of conveying My undistorted and non-falsified Truth to the groups in

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

question. Everybody is fully able to learn to do this. All you have to do is show your willingness to be willing to serve Me in this crucial capacity.

Of course, whatever is being suggested to you in this respect shouldn't be considered as something being imposed on you. No one is forced or expected to do anything they don't want to do. This is the reason the emphasis is on the willingness to be willing to do so. The only feasible approach to any of these suggestions is, as always, by everyone's own free will and choice to accept or to reject them.

However, bear in mind please, you are at one of the most important crossroads in the entire history of the activation and manifestation of the life of the negative state and human life. The situation is such in this respect that it requires a new position in the scheme of events of everyone everywhere and everywhen. Everyone is facing the need to make the most important choice of their lives.

In your particular case, you are facing the choice to be or not to be My true representatives. I cannot impose this new role on you unless you choose to accept it by your own free will and choice. Otherwise, it wouldn't work. If some of the prospective readers feel uncomfortable to be in this important role, they are not required to take it by any means.

However, be aware that you cannot continue to be in your previous roles as agents of the positive state, either. That function and role, as clearly indicated in one of the previous Dialogs, has ended with the onset and continuation of the current shift. To continue in it would be redundant and no longer useful. So, either way, you are in a position which requires you to make some kind of choice. I am offering you the choice to become My true representatives and to serve Me in that capacity in the manner and way described in yesterday's Dialog, above and before. But accepting this new role and position has to be by your own free will and choice. Otherwise, nothing of the results of being in that capacity could be appropriated or attributed to you because of the multiversal law of freedom of choice for the sake of principle — as defined in ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ*** in Chapter 10, page 262. That law cannot be broken.

However, in order to make a proper choice, you need to know what is at stake, as well as which other alternatives are available to you. If you are no longer needed in the position of being agents of the positive state and if you choose not to accept from Me the role and position of becoming My true representatives, what other choices do you have? You may revert to becoming a typical human, going about your everyday business of

surviving on your planet. In that case, you will become a slave of the negative state. Or you can join the agents of the negative state and follow its bidding until the time when the negative state is no more and you are saved from its clutches with everyone else. Whatever you choose in this respect will be fully and unconditionally accepted and respected by Me without any judgmental or condemning attitude on My part. In actuality, whatever your choice may be, will clearly signify that you are needed in the position of your choice.

The necessity to make a fresh choice doesn't apply only to you. May I remind you about My New Revelation, in which it was clearly indicated that any time a crucial new step is coming, or any time you find yourself at a junction on the spiritual road that you travel, you, as well as everyone else, are placed into the position of making a choice on which way to go? Between the outgoing step and the incoming one, there is an interim period during which these choices are made based on all available information about the nature of the choices and what their consequences, results and outcome might be. No one anywhere or anywhen is excluded from this process.

The incoming new step, or new period or era, whatever the case may be, cannot be implemented or put into motion unless the proper choices are made by all concerned and who are involved in life in general and in their individual lives in particular. By that factor, they validate the need for this new step, era, epoch, or whatever, to come to fruition.

You are in the midst of this transitional period as reflected in the ongoing shift. The process of shifting cannot be completed until everyone in being and existence, in pseudo-being and pseudo-existence and in human life, finalize their choices by their own free will and free decision, in the spirit of unconditional freedom and independence, without any impositional factors from anywhere or anyone. This rule applies multiversally. Once everyone completes this choice-making effort, a new quality of life is triggered and put into the process of actualization, realization and implementation.

In the negative state and human life on planet Zero, this transitional period is manifested in the deterioration of all the values and conditions of their pseudo-life which indicate to its members and humans, that things cannot go any longer as they have been going up to that point. Everyone is aware that something needs to happen. Of course, no one knows for sure what it is that needs to happen, or how it is going to happen.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

This situation generates a tremendous amount of surmises, suppositions, guesswork and various psychic predictions. Will the year 2000, with its computer glitch, disrupt the normality of all aspects of human life, to the point of total disaster? Will a Third World War start, initiated by the Arabs, for example, or by whomever it will be triggered, causing the end of human life as you know it? Will some other natural disaster strike which will remap all existing continents into some kind of landmass unable to support any life at all? Will alien races appear in their starships to save humanity from this ultimate doomsday and total disarray of all human systems? Will the Christian Jesus Christ, or Jewish Messiah, or some other spiritual leader of Islam, Buddhism or Hinduism, etc., appear and put an end to all this mess that everyone is experiencing and feeling in their bones, so-to-speak? Or will something else happen that no one could even guess what it would be, but that will either save everyone or end human life as well as any life on planet Zero, once and for all?

No one knows with certainty. But they do know that something must happen, because it is clear to everyone that things cannot continue the way they have been going up to now. These are all signs of the very crucial initiation of something that has never been experienced by anyone, either in the positive state or in the negative state or in human life on planet Zero. At this point in time, during this transitional period, no one may know what that something is, what it entails, what its nature may be, how it will manifest itself and what its outcome, content and quality will be.

The obvious reason for this unknown is in the fact that everyone is now in the position of an ultimate choice, as related to this 'something.' The choice-making process in general is defined as something which has to be decided for or against the life in the positive state; for or against the life in the negative state; and for or against the continuation of the human life on planet Zero and elsewhere. Before the final decision can be made in this crucial and vital choice-making effort, a thorough evaluation of all aspects of the positive state's life, the negative state's pseudo-life and the typical human life has to be completed. This evaluation is done for the purpose of determining the degree of usefulness that each particular life and pseudo-life serves. Is there anything useful left in any of these modes of life in order to justify their continuation? Are they still able to serve some kind of purpose or be good subjects for learning? Is it possible to utilize any of these modes of life for something that would serve everyone for their growth and betterment, as well as for spiritual progression in general?

Once this evaluation is completed, then and only then, the nature of that new ‘something’ can be revealed, brought to everyone’s attention, chosen by everyone and put in motion in accordance with the law of spiritual progression. The magnitude and importance of this evaluation, and the need to exhaust all its aspects, require a long period of time from the standpoint of spatial-temporal requirements, as conceived by humans, for example. For that reason, it was clearly stated previously, that the shift you are experiencing at the present time is not something that will end soon. It will be a long ongoing process until that evaluation is completed to the satisfaction of all.

During this period of time, I need you to be in the position of My true representatives, if you choose to be so by your own free will and choice, in order to make My Absolute Truth available to everyone in the negative state in its undistorted and non-falsified condition, so that the members of the negative state can make a proper and correct choice, based on the knowledge of what the real Truth is. Once they know what the real Truth is, the obvious choice would be to convert to the positive state, not by any imposition but by their free will and choice, founded on the objective comparison of the life in the positive state and their pseudo-life in the negative state. Without such crucial knowledge and comparison, they could not make a proper choice. In that case, they would choose to continue in the pseudo-life of the negative state.

The way you can accomplish this goal was described in the previous Dialog and above. To repeat: By projecting your thoughts onto Me, during your reading of the three sources of My New Revelation, and by that process enabling a mind to mind communication between Me and you, you will make it possible for the members of the negative state to hear Me and My voice right in the midst of their mind. This is one of the most potent ways with which they will be able learn the real Truth without any distortions or falsification. And that will put them into the position of making the right choice. Do you see this, Peter?

Peter: Yes, I do see it clearly. To me, it makes perfect sense. Is there anything else today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: This will be all for now. What I would like to suggest however, is to take a longer break, maybe a few days or even a few weeks or longer, in order to give everyone who reads these Dialogs an opportunity to study them thoroughly, to assimilate their content and implement whatever needs to be implemented in their lives as a result of that reading. Also, to give time to begin their translation into other languages. In the process of studying them, the readers will be put in the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

position of needing to make their own choices on becoming My true representatives, as well as accepting or rejecting these Dialogs as an integral part of My New Revelation. At the same time, in the process of reading them, it may trigger some other questions of multiversal significance that can then be answered in the second part of these Dialogs, which may commence at a future time. However, should the need arise to continue with these dialogs sooner than it is indicated above, we'll resume them as soon as possible.

In conclusion to this first part, I would like to express My personal appreciation and gratitude to you, Peter, to Dan, and everyone who reads these Dialogs, as well as to any future prospective readers, for all your effort in this respect and for your willingness to be willing to do My Will in all aspects of your lives. Please, do accept My Unconditional Love for all of you.

Peter: Thank You so much for all Your beautiful and meaningful Words.

Thirty Fourth Dialog

February 4, 1999

Peter: I would like to bring to Your attention some questions asked by Dr. Beth Ann Voien. Her first request is for a clarification of the concepts of “attachments” and “addictions.” From her professional standpoint, she would like to know the differences between those two concepts, if any.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Although this request stems from her professional interest, nevertheless, the question has multiversal significance. It relates to the issue of the structure and dynamics of the typical human nature and how it was wired in the process of fabricating the human brain and its nervous system. From the onset of this discourse we can agree with the definition offered by Beth Ann which indicates that addictions are extreme forms of attachments.

Let’s elaborate more on this issue. Attachments may or may not lead to addictions, depending on the nature and object of attachment. On the other hand, addictions always end in some form of either mental or physical dependence, or on both. The spiritual factor here is in the fact that humans were fabricated in such a way so as to easily develop some form of dependence on external inputs, leading them away from discovering anything internal that stems from their own within. It was necessary to establish such a condition in order to activate the fullness of the negative state and its lifestyle, which is rooted in external dependence.

As you know, Peter, the word “addiction” is no longer used in the Diagnostic Statistical Manual, Fourth Edition (DSM-IV), issued by the American Psychiatric Association. This is not by coincidence. Although little did the authors of DSM-IV know the spiritual implication of the change in these terms, they do reflect the spiritual shift that was occurring during the time of that change. The term “addiction” doesn’t fully reflect its full meaning and spiritual danger as compared with the term “dependence.” Although the DSM-IV only talks about chemical substances and their abuse and dependence, in our conceptualization of this term, it is not only limited to such habit-forming substances. It has a much broader meaning. One can develop a dependence on many things and not only on chemical substances, such as, for example, alcohol, opioids, nicotine (cigarette smoking), stimulants, depressants or whatever you have in such abundance on your planet. Dependence can also develop regarding other people, pets, food, sex, watching television, the Internet and on many other external factors.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

No matter what type of dependence one develops, its spiritual implication is very clear: It leads one away from self-reliance and the sense of one's independence and inner freedom. One becomes a slave of an external object which rules his/her life in all its aspects and details. The trap has been set by the negative state. The door was closed to the awareness of the true spiritual reality of one's life and life in general. Or, in some instances, under the influence of mind altering drugs, the door was shut from the true spiritual reality and opened to the false or pseudo-spiritual pseudo-reality.

The issue of which you need to be aware in this respect, is that any artificial external means by which one attempts to seek the meaning of life in general and one's own life in particular, leads to the closure of the doors to the true answers originated in the positive state and to opening the doors to the false answers originated in the negative state. This rule applies multiversally. This is the way the structure of Creation was formed.

As you remember from My New Revelation, in the process of activating the negative state and putting it into dominance, it was necessary to come up with something that would be opposite to anything on which the positive state was built. So, if the positive state was founded on the principle of freedom, independence, self-reliance and deriving all knowledge from one's within, where My seat is, that is, ultimately from Me, the negative state needed to be established on the principle of dependence and reliance on someone or something external, on slavery and deriving all knowledge from one's without and not from Me. In order to accomplish this goal, it was necessary to invent all kinds of external attractive objects of various diversities in order to trap humans into believing that the meaning of life is not in the inner spiritual reality but in those attractive objects or substances.

For example, if you watch television programs most of your free time, you will receive all information and knowledge about anything from it, and not from Me in you. If you seek answers to life issues, or if you are trying to avoid those issues, or avoid problems in your life by altering your consciousness by means of some types of drugs which are put into your system from without, you lose your ability to listen to the answers that are contained within you.

Human life was purposefully and genetically structured in such a way so as to make it very easy for humans to turn their attention to only external factors and at the same time, very difficult to pay attention to internal factors. Because of this structural conditioning, if anyone out

there would like to discover anything that happens in his/her within, a setup was established to make such a journey possible by external means through the use of mind-altering substances. That way, humans who do so are led into the convincing illusion that they are in the true reality of their within or that they have discovered the spiritual reality of life and the most pleasurable and delightful life of the positive state. Having such an artificially induced pleasure and discovery, after coming down from the influence of the used substance/drug, and finding themselves once again in the reality of their typical human life, they will intensely desire to reexperience their former state. This situation leads to the vicious cycle of wanting to have such experiences more and more. At the same time, as you know, Peter, following a prolonged use of such substances/drugs, the brain cells of the user stop producing the chemicals necessary for the normal functioning of the human body and psyche. Now they rely on input from the outside instead of from within themselves, as the case was before. Do you see the spiritual correspondence here, Peter?

Peter: Yes, very clearly.

The Lord Jesus Christ: If such use or abuse continues for a longer period of time, this condition — the brain cells ceasing the production of those chemicals — may become irreversible for the rest of the user's life on this planet. In that case, he/she has no recourse but to continue in his/her life of total dependence on the respective substance. The moment he/she stops taking it, he/she develops such severe symptoms of physical withdrawal and mental anguish that life becomes totally unbearable for him/her. Many of them commit suicide at such times.

Here we are talking about severe cases of addiction or dependence. But what about the so-called seemingly 'harmless' or 'benign' habits, attachments, addictions or dependencies? One of the most dangerous conditions that all of you have, is a tendency to fall into the habit of considering something in your life so pleasurable, delightful, normal, appropriate and necessary that it never, ever crosses your mind to question its possibly negative impact on your spiritual, mental and physical well-being.

Have you ever considered the addiction and even true dependence that the majority of the members of humankind have fallen into? Take for example, their habit to have several cups of strong black coffee, full of stimulation-producing caffeine on a daily basis. At one point, if they drink it for a longer period of time, they find themselves unable to function normally without having their caffeine fix. As you know, Peter, the researchers on this issue on your planet have clearly established the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

fact that if you drink two and a half cups or more of strong black coffee on a daily basis for a long period of time, you develop a physiological and psychological dependence on it. The moment you stop drinking it you will experience similar symptoms of withdrawal as in heroin addiction. And cigarette smoking establishes the same condition in your brain as using cocaine.

At one point in time, you find yourself unable to live and function without them. You have become a slave of your habits. The negative state got to you by the means of such habits and addictions. So, in this respect, humanity on planet Zero can be considered to be addicted and dependent across the board on something or someone. For everyone in being and existence: Here is the spiritual factor of learning about a life that is totally and completely dependent on external factors without any input from within.

The problem with this situation is in the fact that once you establish this type of life, it gradually and slowly atrophies your ability to go inward, or if you try to go inward while you are using such substances, or anything else for that matter, you will find yourself in contact with the false pseudo-within and with entities who come from the negative state. Unfortunately, very often your experiences in this respect can be seemingly positive. Initially, they are set up to be like that so that you are trapped into being addicted to your dependencies, and lose your true spiritual awareness, replacing it with a false one. At that point, you find yourself under the illusion that nothing is wrong and that you continue to be in contact with your true Spiritual Mind, with Me and with the members of your true spiritual family. If you find yourself at this point — and I can assure you that by continuously using such means, you most definitely will — your genuine and initial ability to commune and communicate with Me will be lost.

Here, the principle you often hear from people applies, ‘if you don’t use it, you’ll lose it.’ If you stop using the proper means to go inward by your own effort, without depending on anything or anyone and without any influence by any substance use, you will lose your access to Me and to My positive state. Thus, you lose your way to your true self, or your true nature.

Why do you think you were strongly advised to restrain yourself from drinking alcohol, smoking cigarettes, drinking any strong drug-laced drinks and to be unreasonably attached to anyone or anything? Because such things, no matter how harmless or benign they seem to be, are dangerous traps set up for you by the negative state in order to sidetrack

you from your proper spiritual path. Under the presently existing conditions, during the current shift, this trap will be used by the forces of the negative state, especially by the renegades, to make it impossible for you to function properly, effectively and successfully in your role of being My true representatives.

The situation is extremely sensitive in this respect. Don't underestimate the potency of any such means used by them to deter you from your mission and assignment as My true representatives. The renegades will use anything available to them to block you in your proper function in this respect. For that reason, during this time, as the shift is going on, the things, habits, attachments or anything else of this nature that used to be really harmless and benign, are no longer so. They have become a potent tool in the hands of the renegades to adversely influence your life by their means. Take for example, the habit of drinking strong black coffee. It is not by coincidence that in the spiritual world, black coffee is called a 'demonic drink.' Here is a spiritual correspondence of the meaning of black or dark. Spiritually speaking, everything in the negative state is in pitch darkness and blackness. Because of this spiritual correspondence, by its means, when you imbibe coffee, your spiritual, mental and physical condition may be adversely influenced by it. The door can be left wide-open for the renegades to exert their influence on you, without your being consciously aware of such an undesirable influence. This is true about any such seemingly benign and harmless habits you may have.

Do you remember, Peter, many years ago when Gloria and you visited Fiji, a South Pacific island, the conversation you had with the front-desk lady at the hotel in which you were staying? In a conversational manner, she told you that she had to go and make sure that all guests from England were provided with their strong tea drinks at three o'clock in the afternoon, because if they didn't have it, they would get 'cranky'? In other words, without their strong tea, they became irritable, jittery and moody. If you look at the color of brewed tea, in the mild to moderate brew, it has a golden tinge to it, which condition gives it some positive connotation. However, the stronger you make it, the darker it gets and the more it will approximate the condition in coffee, becoming addictive and demonic.

Some of you, perhaps will complain that I am trying to take away from you your daily pleasures in human life. Well, if such things as that are the only possible source of pleasure you are able to experience in your everyday life on planet Zero, then there is something very wrong with your spiritual state of mind. In that case, you are still under the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

influence of the negative state or of your typical human nature. What could be a greater pleasure than going inward, studying, pondering and meditating on My New Revelation, being in contact with Me, with members of your spiritual family and with the reality of My positive state? If you need any external physical pleasures in the form of drinks, for example, you have all kinds of excellent herbal teas, healthy 100% fruit juices, decaffeinated or mild teas, non-alcoholic beers or wines, and similar substances which are not habit-forming and can be as pleasurable as the other ones, but which don't lead into dangerous dependencies and into opening the doors to the negative state, giving an opportunity to its forces, especially to the renegades, to adversely influence your life.

Think about it. In your roles as My true representatives, you need to rethink your life in all of its aspects in order to get rid of everything — no matter how harmless or benign it looks or seems to be — which would effectively impede your abilities to do My work on your planet. I would like very much for you to realize the importance of what I am saying in this Dialog, regardless of how insignificant it may seem to you during its reading. You may say, 'so what is the big deal talking about drugs, attachments, coffee, tea and similar minor things?', etc. Don't underestimate the importance of this subject. I repeat, what used to be insignificant and unimportant before, in the scheme of things and on the stage of human life, has become very important at the present time, during the currently occurring shift. For that reason, everyone who is reading these words is advised to change their daily routine and habits in order to get rid of everything that could be potentially or actually a means for the members of the negative state to block you from the roles, assignments and missions that you have from Me. Unless such things are medically necessary for you to use, due to some kind of medical condition that requires you to use them, you have no reason whatsoever to continue using them.

Don't forget the spiritual correspondences of all these requirements. The less dependent you become on any such external factors, the less danger for you to be influenced by the forces of the negative state. And not only that, but the freer you become from any such external factors, the less noticeable you will be to the renegades and their minions. Please be aware that nothing attracts them more than such external factors. With them, you will stick out like a sore thumb, like a bright light that attracts a moth, in this case, the negative state.

Peter: Thank You very much for this input. And this brings me to the second question posed by Dr. Voien. It relates to the issue of intuition. To

quote her, 'How may we, as therapists or friends, encourage individuals to use their intuition or to listen within, as they may, to the good of their understanding, when intuition may be unavailable to them or they may be in contact with erroneous sources of information from their within?'

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, Peter, in essence, Beth Ann properly answered her own question when she pointed out in her letter to you that it seems to her that her own intuition may guide her in this respect.

However, there is another point to this issue. It also relates somewhat to the issue discussed above about being attached, addicted, habituated or dependent on external factors. As you know, some time ago you were informed by Me that under the influence of these external factors, and with the condensation of the negative state on your planet and elsewhere, the ability to intuit had been blocked from the majority of humans. As they became more and more dependent on input from the outside, that is, essentially from the negative state, as in chemical substance dependency, their intuitive discernment was gradually atrophied and, after a while, stopped functioning at all. No more input is coming their way from that source. It was necessary to establish this condition in order to give the negative state an opportunity to win on this planet and elsewhere. As long as there is some degree of proper intuitive awareness in the human mind, it would be very difficult for the negative state to win completely. Only My representatives — you, are being privileged not only to continue having this ability, but as mentioned before, your intuition is being constantly enhanced and further developed. Of course, in the eyes of the negative state, you don't count, because you are not typically humans. So, your situation doesn't interfere with the process of the takeover by the negative state.

As far as your help to other individuals is concerned, no general rule exists in this respect because each individual is different and will require a different approach. However, please bear in mind that unless they ask you for help, or unless they seek the truth for the sake of principles, it is their personal choice to be in the position of being either completely shut off from their intuition or to be under the influence or in contact with the wrong source. In that case, your attempt to straighten them out could be perceived as an imposition, which would give the forces of the negative state the opportunity to harass you personally.

Don't forget about the choices that each individual has made in this respect. On the other hand, if someone comes to you and asks for help, in that case it would be your spiritual and professional duty to bring to the attention of the inquirer all available choices, alternatives and

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

possibilities that exist in this respect. Thus, showing that individual all possible ways out of his/her predicament. The method, approach and mode of treatment to be used in this case will be different from one individual to another. It is in this situation when you, as My true representative, ask Me to take over your mind in general and your intuition in particular so that I may lead you toward finding out and applying the most appropriate and effective way to help such an individual, depending on his/her needs in this respect. However, remember that it is entirely up to each individual to respond positively, or not at all, or even negatively, to your intervention. Because of this important individualized and personalized factor, nothing more can be said about it at this time.

Peter: Thank You for Your input about this issue and about everything else.

Thirty Fifth Dialog

February 5, 1999

Peter: This morning I feel somewhat frustrated because I still have not received the edited Thirty Second and Thirty Third Dialogs from Dan. Of course, one never knows if it is something with the Internet or with E-mail problems which would cause some delays and the Dialogs might be lost somewhere in cyberspace. Talking about dependencies, what do You think about my dependency on Dan for editing, for example, or on anyone or anything else in this or in any other matter? Then there is the question about some comments in the Dialogs being possibly incongruous with the topic addressed. This leads me to the second, more troubling question: Is there anything at all in any of the Dialogs, when You are allegedly responding, that is not from You but either from someone else or from my own imagination, myself putting forth my words or ideas or concepts or whatever, claiming them to be Yours? It was indicated to me by one of the readers of the Dialogs that certain words or claims or behaviors didn't sound like You.

The Lord Jesus Christ: As you know, Peter, nothing is happening by sheer accident. Whatever you are experiencing, or whatever others are experiencing during their reading of these Dialogs, has some important significance and meaning. It points out some issues that need to be discussed or brought to your mutual attention. Again, the timeliness factor is involved; meaning that it is time to address whatever is troubling you personally or whatever is on other readers' minds.

Let us begin with your question of being dependent on someone, in this particular case, on Dan, for editing these Dialogs, and your subsequent frustration if you don't receive them on the designated time. First of all, from a typical human standpoint, this is only an illustration and confirmation of the fact that a typical human life is vested in mutual interdependencies. No matter which way you look, there is always something in your human life that depends on some external factors, seemingly beyond your control. This is the way it is, and this is what you agreed to experience when you incarnated into human life. As mentioned in the previous Dialogs, this is the typical setup of the negative state.

However, as mentioned above, this is the typical human view on this issue. A totally different connotation exists if you look at it from a typical spiritual view, or from the view of the positive state. How is the term 'dependence' defined in the positive state and, of course, in the negative state, respectively? What is the meaning of this term in both

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

conceptualizations? In the negative state, as well as in human life, the term 'dependence' has an entirely different meaning than in the positive state. In the negative state, this term always denotes that the true life can be derived only from the external factors which determine all conditions for such a life to be manifested and actualized. Thus, to be dependent means to live. And vice versa, to live is to be always dependent on someone or something outside of you. No other conceptualization of life, or what life is all about, exists within the frame of understanding in the negative state and in human life.

On the other hand, in the positive state the term 'dependence' is used in the connotation of being dependent on the Absolute Source of Life — Me, The Lord Jesus Christ, with the understanding that one cannot be alive or be in being and existence without My being the Absolute Life and being Absolutely Alive. Due to the fact that life in everyone is from Me, and, most importantly, due to the fact that because it is My Life, I am present in everyone's life, sustaining that life within them on a continuous basis. Thus, I am within everyone. This assertion leads to the inevitable logical conclusion that in the positive state everyone is dependent only and only on their own unique within where I am always present with My life, sharing it with each individual. No dependency on the external factors is conceivable in the positive state.

This statement leads us directly to the positive state's concept of 'sharing.' In the positive state, instead of mutual interdependency for whatever needs one has, there is a delightful, uplifting, joyous and happy sharing of everything one is and has without any impositions, demands, expectations, projections or indebtedness. So, in essence, in the positive state, the term 'dependency' doesn't exist in the typical human connotation and understanding. Instead, here you have mutual sharing whenever it is needed and desirable.

Your frustration, Peter, about the delays, for whatever reasons, enabled us to discuss this important issue in order to show a clear distinction between the concept of dependency as conceived in the negative state and human life, and as conceived and understood by everyone in the positive state.

Due to the fact that as My true representatives you are now functioning from the position of the positive state, it is very crucial to recognize this factor and look upon your situation not as dependency but as a mutual opportunity to share your responsibilities related to My New Revelation in general and these Dialogs in particular. At the same time, recognizing the fact that the forces of the negative state will utilize any of your

physical and/or mental conditions in order to delay or to impede your important work, as well as to make you feel frustrated and impatient.

So, these states of yours, Peter, are by impositions of the negative state playing on the human side of your nature in the same manner as they were playing on Dan's medical condition. However, as you see from our conversation about the issues of dependency and sharing, their effort in this instance was completely nullified by turning it into something useful and positive. This is a very good illustration of how everything negative and human in nature, in the lives of My representatives, can be turned into something very useful and positive. These things will work out just fine, Peter. Moreover, as mentioned above, your collaborative effort with Dan gives both of you the opportunity to share your responsibilities in this respect.

Peter: At this very moment, as we have just finished this discussion about differences in the conceptualization of the term 'dependence' and 'sharing,' as it exists in the positive state versus in the negative state, my telephone rang and surprisingly, Dan was on the phone, letting me know that he has just E-mailed me both the Thirty Second and Thirty Third Dialogs. I was very much surprised to hear from him because at this time of the day, he usually is in deep sleep. He told me that he worked most of the night on editing. How do you like this so-called coincidence?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, Peter, as you know, there are no coincidences. It was very important for you to address the issue of dependence and your frustration about it in order to address the discussed differences. If early in the morning, when you fired up your computer, and checked your E-mail, you had found the edited Dialogs as expected by you, you would have never asked Me your question about this issue. In that case, this discussion would have been bypassed and you would have gone into something else when choosing the topic of our conversation. At this point in time, from the spiritual standpoint and the timeliness in question, it was very important that the above clarification about the discussed terms be offered right now, this morning. The spiritual atmosphere in the spiritual world and elsewhere and the nature of the currently occurring shift, urgently required that this clarification be given for the benefit of all.

Due to the fact that the presently existing spiritual requirement is such that it requires a different approach in taking a stand on various spiritual concepts and terms, and in order to avoid any imposition on My part, or anyone else's, it was vital to set up a condition that would give you an opportunity to ask this particular question and receive this

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

particular answer directly from Me. If at any time I were to impose My clarifications on you about anything, and not only about this particular issue, without your asking Me first to do so by your own free will and choice, it would be instantly utilized by the forces of the negative state for the purpose of attacking the conceptualization of the nature of the positive state.

Please don't forget, and I am repeating Myself again, that now you are functioning from the position of the positive state. It signifies that only positive means are being utilized to convey to you any information about anything. In the positive state everything is now being offered in a conversational manner — as far as any explanation or clarification of any concepts, ideas and terms is concerned. You ask your questions first and then you get your answers as required and needed. This is the reason that from your position on planet Zero, being that at the same time you are spiritually positioned in the positive state, you have to ask your questions first in order to get any answers from Me. Or if you or any respective reader don't have any specific questions, you always ask if I have anything to add, convey or to share with you at any particular time. In this respect, your request allows Me to proceed and to clarify or add or convey to you anything that is needed and timely for the benefit of all. Due to the fact that it is your, or any respective reader's request, offered to Me by your own freedom of choice and free will, My response, even in a situation like that, doesn't violate your free will and choice and therefore, it is in no way by imposition. Otherwise, it would be concluded by the members of the negative state that no difference exists between them and the members of the positive state because I am utilizing their methodology, the methodology of the negative state, by imposing My answers on you without being asked to do so by you, by any respective reader or by the members of My positive state.

This is the reason why for some time now, since you had recorded the Updates in the ***Corollaries...***, you were being prepared very diligently and with great emphasis to learn to ask your own questions and to get your own answers. You see, Peter, by learning and doing that, you are approximating how things are in the positive state, establishing a foundation on planet Zero from which it can be reunited, once again, with the positive planet Earth when the time is ripe, becoming its integral reflection as it used to be before it was separated and moved to a different dimension.

What is being conveyed to you here as a result of your questions and concerns, Peter, is extremely important beyond your present grasp of why it is so. This is the reason why sometimes it is allowed for you to feel

frustrated, doubting, uncertain, anxious and discouraged during the recording of these Dialogs. These states of mind are being effectively utilized to lead you toward asking all these questions so that you can get answers that have tremendously important multiversal significance and implication. I know very well that these states of mind are not too pleasant for you to experience but they are the means by which something very useful can be accomplished for the benefit of all. So, be patient and endure to the end.

Peter: I'll do my best. What about the mentioned possible incongruities in some statements and the possibility that in some cases it is not You who are talking with me but someone else or that it is my own fantasy?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Of course, this is a very serious allegation. In some ways it relates to the above discussed issue of how some words, ideas or concepts are perceived, understood and behaviorally expressed in the positive state on one side, and in the negative state and human life on the other side. As you noticed from the above explanation, the same word or expression can have a totally different meaning if looked upon from the view of the positive state or from the view of the negative state or from the typical human view and understanding.

In response to your concerns, as well as the possible concerns of others, whether it is I Who is always speaking with you at each particular instance, I can assure you that it is always I, no matter how it may sound as if it is not I. Of course, as always, it is everyone's prerogative to accept it as true or not true. Also, as always, it is each reader's personal responsibility to verify this fact through their own intuition, logic, reasoning process and intellect, or whatever mode is available for them to accomplish this important task of verification.

Let Me remind you, as well as every reader of these Dialogs, about what was conveyed to all of you in this respect in the Introduction to **The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ**. For very important reasons, I chose to transmit My New Revelation, Peter, by the modes, manners and means of your specific thinking, ideas, words, concepts, understanding, behavior, attitude, lifestyle, and everything else. Because of that, Peter, the way you think, talk, express yourself, convey your ideas, write or whatever, is being utilized by Me to the fullest possible extent during our conversation at the present or during your transmission of My New Revelation in the past.

On the other hand, very often, as indicated above, the way some of the readers understand certain concepts or the content of the words — and in

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

what connotation they are being utilized, or what they really mean — is totally different from the way they are conceptualized and understood in the positive state.

Take for example, the word ‘laughter,’ the one that raised so much concern and led one reader to assume that it didn’t sound like Me talking. What kind of meaning do humans put into that word? It has many connotations. It can be simple laughter as the result of hearing some jokes. It can be the laughter of ridiculing someone or something. It can be the laughter to hide one’s own embarrassment about someone or something. It can be an expression of one’s good mood or accomplishment. It can be the result of having some kind of fun and many other reasons. So, as you see from these few examples, laughter can have either a positive or a negative connotation, respectively.

In the positive state, the term ‘laughter’ signifies a state of inner disposition which gives an opportunity to rejoice about something or someone. This is the reason that whenever in the Dialogs, or in My New Revelation in general, this word is used, it signifies a tremendous delight, pleasure, joy and elation that certain events, behaviors or explanations are taking place which contribute to the happiness and learning of everyone involved, at their level.

So, when joyous laughter is being expressed by the members of the positive state about My statement, which I made in a humanly joking manner, which said, ‘who would want to agree to become a human?,’ it gives them a sense of tremendous gratitude, joy, happiness, satisfaction, delight and elation that someone would really agree to incarnate into human life for the purpose of providing very important feedback to them about life in the negative state and on planet Zero. No other connotation to the term ‘laughter’ exists in the positive state, especially and particularly in the above mentioned passage.

However, there is another point or two to this issue. If I am using Peter’s mode of conveyance, expression, language, behavior and everything else he has, to express My ideas or what I am talking about or how I am saying what I am saying or how I am behaving; then in that case, to the outside observer or reader it would naturally sound like Peter is talking, behaving, etc., wouldn’t it? After all, don’t ever forget that these Dialogs are taking place in a homely atmosphere, as one member of the family talks to another one and as when two people are sitting down and having a good, meaningful, relaxing and quiet conversation about issues of mutual interest. So, although it would sound to you as though Peter is the one who is talking and behaving in his manner of behavior; in

actuality, whenever a response to your question is offered, it is I Who does so in Peter and through Peter.

Why do you think I acquired human nature and incorporated and fused it into My Absolute Nature, making it Divine, — Divine Human and Human Divine? Among many other things, for the purpose of being able to come down to your level, accommodate Myself to be like one of you so that I could speak with you on an equal footing, so-to-speak, as one equal individual to another equal individual, using your own language, your own expressions, your own mode of thinking and perception; and anything else that you have in this respect; and not as someone remote out there who is totally incomprehensible, unapproachable and far above you, with whom you wouldn't have any hope of being able to establish any meaningful communication.

At the same time, this mode of communication, as well as being so much as you are, on your own human level (of course, without any negative connotation of a typical human nature), establishes an important foundation, on which your own perception, understanding and acceptance of My true Nature is not only being built but, at the very same time, it gives you an opportunity to correct your own prejudices, biases and expectations about Me and What My true Nature is. When I speak like you, in this case, like Peter, it may trigger in you your old, inappropriate, distorted and even false perceptions of My Nature as derived from your religious, or any other human upbringing. Based on them, or on your own expectations and projections, you determine and project your own subjective expectations of how God, I, The Lord Jesus Christ, should be, how I should behave, what kind of words or expressions I should use or what kind of entity I am. If My communication with you, or in this case, with Peter, doesn't fit within your own frame of projected expectations, you tend to make the conclusion that it is impossible that it is I who is speaking because, after all, The Lord Jesus Christ, Me, would never use such words or expressions, laughter, behavior or whatever you have.

It is time that as My true representatives on planet Zero, you get rid of this spiritually dangerous notion about Me or about how I should relate to you, talk to you, appear to you, etc. The danger of clinging to your own notion in this respect because it is inappropriate, and in some instances can even be totally false, gives an opportunity to the forces of the negative state, especially to the renegades and their minions, to target you by supporting your notion as correct, so that you would not be able to establish a proper relationship with the true Me.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

What happens here is that by this type of attitude, you open the door to them in the negative state, and they may be able to convince you that these Dialogs, and consequently My entire New Revelation, are not from Me, and that I would never speak like that because, after all, I am an Almighty God Who could never lower Himself (I am purposefully omitting 'Herself') to the level of the stinky human perception or understanding and Who could never be able to accommodate Himself to the human level of life.

So, in some ways, you could end up like some of My so-called disciples on planet Zero during My incarnation there, who were not able to stand hearing Me talk about eating My flesh and drinking My blood. Taking it literally, they concluded that I was some kind of crazy guy and not the true Son of God, as I was claiming to be. For that reason, they fell away from Me and from My other disciples and no longer walked with Me.

The members of the negative state, and especially the renegades, would like nothing better than to see you end up exactly like those so-called disciples of Mine did. In order to prevent you from such a horrid destiny, sometimes it is very necessary to purposefully use some concepts, or words, or behavioral expressions, which in your view may be offensive or incongruous, but which are giving you an opportunity to make corrections in your inappropriate expectations and projections of your own personal ideas of how I should behave, act, talk, relate, or whatever. Whenever there is a need to use them, or whenever it is perceived that some remnants of your old, inappropriate or even false perception of Me, in particular, and of the reality of the positive state, in general, is still present in you or that you are laboring under them, it would be necessary to continue using them in order to bring them to your attention and give you a chance to amend them.

So, don't be upset about them and don't fall into a trap by the renegades, or whoever in the negative state, in thinking that it is not I who is talking or joyously laughing with everyone else in the positive state. Allow Me, please, sometimes to be also as you are — in your purely positive but, nevertheless, human connotation. It gives Me great pleasure to occasionally come to your level and be like you are. Don't deny Me this pleasure by your own subjective expectations and projections.

Of course, as always, it is entirely up to you, up to your own freedom of choice to accept Me in this mode of My chosen expressions of being like you or to reject Me. I will fully respect your choice in this matter, as well

as in any other matters, without being rejective, judgmental or condemning you for any of your choices.

Peter: Thank You for this explanation and reassurance. I needed that. Now, I would like to offer a question on behalf of Pearl McCallum of La Jolla, California. As you know, she volunteers her time working at the San Diego Hospice with the terminally ill and dying individuals.

Naturally, in her position, she would have a question related to the issue of euthanasia and physician assisted suicide in the case of terminally ill, suffering people. I join her in her request for Your clarification on this issue, and I would like to add to it the question about capital punishment. Her question is also whether this situation may lead some people to commit assisted suicide without their prior agreement to do so before incarnating on planet Zero; and whether laws should be passed permitting physician assisted suicide as in Oregon, for example; as well as the situation with Dr. Kevorkian who was the first one in this country to help terminally ill people commit suicide.

The Lord Jesus Christ: First of all, from the onset of answering both of your questions, let Me state very clearly: It is an utter impossibility for anyone to do, to experience or to agree to anything without prior agreement before incarnating on planet Zero, including assisted suicide. This fact was already emphasized very strongly in Update 3 of the **Corollaries...** . It was also pointed out there at that time that an agreement was also made to agree to experience something which was not originally included in the initial agreement but that would be necessary to experience, illustrate and demonstrate, should such need arise or be required during one's tour of duty in human life on planet Zero. Such an agreement, which included this important clause, was a necessary arrangement in foresight of the many important shifts that would be taking place during one's life on planet Zero that would require accepting additional assignments and duties in this respect.

This statement relates particularly to modern times, the times in which you live, because it is the most crucial and decisive time in the history of humankind. A few decades ago, it would have been unthinkable to talk about or consider anything even remotely approximating something like assisted suicide. Those were different times, requiring a different approach to human life and events taking place on planet Zero. The illustrative phase of human life was in full swing, so-to-speak. Under those conditions, it was necessary to consider human life as something sacred, needed to be preserved by all means. Therefore, in some States,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

even a regular non-assisted suicide or attempted suicide, was considered a felony and one could get a prison term for trying to commit suicide.

However, as the illustrative phase of the nature of human life is coming to its finale and ending, and as the negative state's condensation is accomplishing its final degree and is in its final phase of pseudo-winning on planet Zero, it is necessary to take a totally different approach to understanding what human life is all about.

As you know, Peter, many religions, (especially Catholics) in their dogmatic and fanatical approach toward human life, and in their hypocritical emphasis on the need to preserve human life by all means, no matter what, were utilized very effectively by the negative state to proclaim human life as something unusual and sacred that has the only true value in comparison with any other type of life — as though no other life is conceivable or possible. This is in total contradiction to their own teachings about life in the heavens and the hells — hence their hypocrisy. This consideration was permitted to flourish in order to give a chance or opportunity for important lessons to be learned by all sentient entities in being and existence about the nature of a life that didn't initially originate in Me and My positive state.

As mentioned previously in these Dialogs, these lessons are now in the process of completion. Very soon, nothing else will remain to be learned about this type of life. For that reason, preparations are being made to end the illustrative phase of human life and to change it into a non-illustrative life, chosen as an ultimate choice — which is the pseudo-winning of the negative state.

Whenever something like this is about to happen, it is preceded by reevaluating the meaning of human life, leading to the very unpleasant awareness that not only is it not a life that is the only one valuable and possible, but the only one which is the least valuable and meaningless, and the only one that doesn't make any sense in its ultimate expression. This awareness in human consciousness leads to a very strong realization that human life is actually full of suffering, misery and unhappiness and, in essence, it is not a true life. Once you arrive at this realization, it is necessary that some volunteers on planet Zero agree to illustrate this factor by becoming terminally ill solely for this purpose, by which, they justify their need to seek out a physician for assisted suicide.

At the same time, this realization and conclusion about human life may lead some individuals either to a total denial that any other meaningful life exists, and therefore, that there is no reason to continue in this 'fool's

joke' called human life, or that there must be some other different life which is meaningful, fulfilling, satisfying and real, and therefore, is a true life.

However, there is another point to this issue. Take for example, humans who are in a coma and who, in actuality don't live but vegetate without any awareness, and whose breathing is maintained only by artificial external machines. Is it possible to call such a condition, life and living? From the true spiritual standpoint, what is this situation telling you?

There are basically two things that are clearly discernable from this situation. One, the negative state is making an all-out effort to preserve its life in any human no matter what and no matter by what means. It desperately clings to this type of life, knowing very well that it is ultimately dying. It is only a matter of time when it will eternally die. But nevertheless, it is in the process of dying. This unpleasant awareness leads the negative state toward inventing all kinds of artificial, external means, such as you see in hospitals' so-called life support machines, for the purpose of sustaining life in the human body. This is a metaphorical depiction of the situation that exists with the ultimate destiny of the pseudo-life of the negative state and its human life.

Two, from the standpoint of the members of the positive state's understanding of this situation, any life which is founded on the external, non-spiritual or false spiritual factors, in its essence and substance, is nothing more than what they can see in the condition of someone whose bodily life is supported by external artificial means. Thus, the conclusion, based on such experiences, is very clear: The life of the negative state and its human life, based on these external premises and factors, is a life which is artificial, meaningless, futile and void of any true reality, leading nowhere but to what the mentioned illustrative condition of the comatose individual is. In that case, it is not a true life and therefore, it should never be chosen as an alternative to the life of the positive state. The outcome of this illustration gives everyone a clear living answer about what shouldn't ever be chosen by anyone as an ultimate choice.

However, as mentioned above and before, this illustrative phase of human life is in the process of ending. The ending factor of the human situation releases certain energies which make it possible to take a different approach toward human suffering and the issue of dying. Because the human unconsciousness is aware of this factor, it allows the initiation of considering the possibility and feasibility of ending a human life, should it find itself in a condition of extreme suffering, terminal

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

illnesses, comatose conditions and the artificial maintenance of bodily life by all those external machines.

This is the reason why in the last few years you have been hearing and experiencing all kinds of arguments for and against assisted suicide, ending bodily life by switching off all those machines and by other similar means. And not only that, but because of this awareness, nowadays the hospitals require, or at least strongly recommend, that you obtain some kind of legal document that would allow them to take you off those machines should it come to such a condition in your own life. All these arguments and requirements are only a reflection of the state of affairs that have currently established themselves in human life on planet Zero, which have never been experienced before. They herald an entirely new situation and understanding into which humanity as a whole is being placed. They precede the ending of the negative state and its typical human life.

Because of these important factors, in answering Pearl's question from the purely spiritual standpoint, yes, it is appropriate to have such human laws which would permit you to terminate bodily life under well-defined guidelines in order to prevent any abuse or misuse in this respect. As you know, anything in human life can and may be abused and misused. This is how human life was structured. For that reason, as long as they are in human life, in the life of ultimate externals, they need to have such laws which would regulate how things should be done in this respect.

You may draw the same conclusion about discontinuing life support machines on someone who is in an irreversible coma or who only vegetates. In these particular cases you have to be aware that, in actuality, no true life of an internal nature exists in individuals who are in that condition. It is a pseudo-life, a caricature of the true life supplied from the externals by artificial machines.

As far as Dr. Kevorkian is concerned, he is an embodiment and representation of this new situation with human life on planet Zero and its ending phase. He volunteered to be a pioneer in this respect. His endeavors reflect the need to terminate the negative state and its human life due to conditions which are miserable, sick, decaying, rotting and full of suffering, as reflected in all those terminal illnesses, so typically human.

What you have to understand in this respect — and let Me tell you something which will be very difficult for some of you to accept — is that in the present state of affairs with the typical human life, there is no

longer anything positive about the way human life is being lived and manifested. As of now, as of this date, as these words are being recorded, human life, in all its aspects, has been completely and totally subsumed by the forces of the negative state. This situation reflects the reality that the negative state is in its final phase of pseudo-winning on planet Zero.

As you know, Peter, the pseudo-winning of the negative state on your planet has several major phases. It proceeds in certain steps, each step reflecting a further deterioration of all human systems, values, style of life and relationships. If you evaluate the situation on planet Zero from the position of these phases, then the negative state actually has already pseudo-won on your planet. However, from the position of completing this process, the positioning of the entirety of the negative state, in all its aspects, cannot take place in a simultaneous manner or at the very same time. If it were to try to do that, no one could survive the totality of its manifestation for a fraction of a second. In that case, the negative state would lose on all fronts, so-to-speak, and could not complete the entirety of its purpose for being activated and put into the process of manifestation in the first place. There would be no one left to exemplify the nature of its pseudo-life. Due to this fact, some further, more important lessons could not be learned and therefore, the full activation of the life of the positive state could never commence.

For these important reasons, the negative state's full pseudo-winning on planet Zero has to be in several phases. There are twelve such phases. Each phase, from the position of the space-time continuum, as reflected on your planet, takes a certain time. As mentioned above, you are now at the beginning of the very last phase of the negative state's pseudo-winning on your planet. How long in terms of your time this phase will take, cannot be revealed. The only thing that can be said about it is that it will be the longest time as compared to all other phases. The reason why this phase needs a much longer time than others, is because in this phase the nature of the negative state is revealed in its utmost and ultimate evil, putrid, despicable and ruthless condition. In order to survive it, you need to release this nature in bits and pieces, so-to-speak. This way, it gives everyone on planet Zero enough time to adjust to this phase without any danger of succumbing to its overwhelming, insurmountable and unbearable manifestation.

So, this is the reason why it was mentioned above that nothing exists in human life any longer that would have any positive connotation. The only exception to this rule is the presence of My representatives on this planet. However, because as of recently they are functioning solely from the position of the positive state, they are no longer considered to be part

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

of human life proper. Although they still have a human body on them, their spirits and souls are residing directly in the positive state. From the position of their bodies, My representatives will continue to experience the typical human emotions, states and conditions but these will no longer be able to deter them from whatever they are to do for Me on planet Zero. The establishment of this current situation on planet Zero and in human life, and the realization of these facts in the human unconsciousness, as well as in its consciousness, was preceded, and is now embodied in human life by the factor of assisted suicides by physicians, by the passage of the law in Oregon permitting such assistance and by giving permission to physicians to discontinue life support machines from terminally ill individuals. These factors are all illustrations and reflections of the fact that life in human life on planet Zero, and the way it is proceeding at the present state of affairs, is no longer tenable or tolerable.

In answering your question, Peter, about capital punishment for individuals who have committed hideous crimes, it is obvious that they agreed, before incarnating on planet Zero, to this mode of departure and then entering the other life, after human life. This is one of the many choices in human life that need to be illustrated and demonstrated concerning the consequences, outcomes and results of a behavior that has no place or conception in the positive state. In fact, the death sentence illustrates the ultimate expression of the negativity which is imbued in the life of the negative state and its human life, leading ultimately to the loss of life. This is an important warning that unless one amends one's ways, that is to say, unless everyone in the negative state and in human life chooses to recede from their pseudo-life and convert to the positive state, it may result in a permanent loss of life as depicted in the death sentence on your planet. In some ways, the agreement to illustrate such a mode of losing life through the death sentence, serves as a deterrent from this to ever happen in an eternal sense. Therefore, such sentences are **permitted** to take place for the purpose of this important and crucial illustration and warning. Their justification is rooted in this meaning. It is not as though I will any of what was outlined here and above, but, certain things are permitted to happen in order to accomplish this ultimate goal for the sake of the salvation of all. Remember that.

Peter: Thank You so much for granting us these meaningful explanations. Is there anything else for today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: It was a pleasure, Peter. And no, this will be all for today. I hope Pearl will be satisfied with these answers. Have a nice and pleasant day.

Thirty Sixth Dialog

February 7, 1999

Peter: Something has been on my mind for some time now, an event which happened seventeen years ago in the process of completing ***Fundamentals of Human Spirituality***. When I think about it, I am still tremendously embarrassed and ashamed. I believe that because it is still troubling me, perhaps it is time to find out why it happened, what the meaning of that event was and the kind of learning that could be derived from it. Also, why is it coming to my mind right now, at this particular time? Is it appropriate to bring it to Your attention and to make it a subject of our Thirty Sixth Dialog, even though it has such a private and personal connotation?

The Lord Jesus Christ: If you take into consideration again that no coincidences exist, then, isn't it obvious that this issue needs to be brought to the open so that the chapter on that event can be closed permanently? I know exactly what is troubling you. But, go ahead and outline in your own words the event that's troubling you.

Peter: When I was finishing the recording of ***Fundamentals of Human Spirituality***, at the very end of its writing, I was receiving strange messages while in the state of inwardness, that following the completion of that book, I would be recalled from this planet. In other words, at that time it was indicated to me that I would die soon. And yet, seventeen years later I am still here. Unfortunately, I spoke about it to my close associates who were connected with me at the time, asking them to confirm from their own state of within whether my message was correct and whether it would really happen. They all received the same message. Because of that, I believed it to be true. Do you see how something like that, if it wasn't true, would be embarrassing, deceitful and shameful?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, it is understandable. However, let's look at that situation in the view of the presently existing shift and situation in your life and what all this means. First of all, don't forget that at that time the revelation which you received from Me, and contained in the mentioned book in all its entirety, was shocking and unbelievable. No one before had ever come up with any such conclusions about human life and its meaning, origin and purpose as was indicated in that book. You experienced tremendously torturous doubts about its content, fearing that perhaps, you were deceiving others. You had no backing, no confirmation from any other sources, no parallels and no resources that

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

would have given you some degree of certainty about the truthfulness of that particular revelation.

As you know, at that time, you were still laboring under purely human scientific tendencies, which require from any writer of books of that nature to have ‘zillions’ of references, confirmations and similar resources in order to be acknowledged and accepted as scientifically valid and true. But nothing of that nature was available to you at that time or at any other time. Because of that, you experienced a tremendous need for some kind of confirmation and verification of the truthfulness of the claims contained in that book. In your understanding of that situation, you came to the conclusion that the only way anything of that nature could be verified, was if you could have been recalled and had come to the spiritual world where you could have acquired the desired knowledge of whether you were right or wrong.

At that time, the forces of the negative state capitalized on your adverse mental condition and tried to eliminate you from being among the living on planet Zero. They wanted to retaliate against you very desperately for exposing and disclosing the secrets about their origin, the origin of humans, the origin of the negative state in general and everything relating to them in particular. So, they assigned the most vicious demons to you, who tortured you for approximately six months in your planetary time, imposing all kinds of negative feelings and states on you so that you would desire nothing more than to die. At the same time, they utilized the fact that you weren’t dying, in order to place into you in an even greater degree of doubts and uncertainties about anything revealed in that book, as well as about anything concerning your life, your destiny and your assignment from Me. You told yourself that if your message about being recalled was not coming true, then everything else that you had received and was contained in that book must have been false and not coming from Me, as well as anything else related to all other messages you were receiving in your state of inwardness. These severe doubts were fed into you by those demons.

At that point in time, after the completion of your book, the forces of the negative state began to suspect that something very important existed about your mission on planet Zero which required them to make an all-out effort to destroy you, if not physically, then at least psychologically and socially, undermining your professional reputation and standing, by trying to convince everyone that you were a fake and a fraud; and that everything you were teaching your students and followers was not true. After all, if you were telling them this, and very soon after, you had been recalled and then it didn’t happen, then you must have been a

misleading false prophet. Although the forces of the negative state always suspected, from the very first day of your birth on planet Zero, that something about you was not exactly usual and common, as with all other humans — and throughout your life they did try many times to destroy you — the full impact of what it might have been didn't hit them until you finished writing your second book.

You didn't have the slightest idea, Peter, what a tremendous battle was going on in the spiritual realm between the members of your spiritual family and those demons, in order to sustain your life on planet Zero so that you would be able to successfully complete your mission and transmit ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ*** proper, as reflected in the Big Book, its ***Corollaries...*** and these Dialogs.

However, there is another point to your situation at that time. You are still incorrectly perceiving that at the time, your message of dying soon was false because you didn't die physically. And yet, those messages contained a certain degree of truth. Your interpretation of those messages was incorrect but not their content and spiritual meaning. At that time you were in the process of being trained and prepared for your true mission as the transmitter of My New Revelation. Because of that, you were in a transitional period during which you still had some notions that messages of that nature could be taken literally.

So, the message about your dying soon was very much correct in a spiritual sense. Yes, everything concerning the way you had been up to that point, — your understanding of your own life, your lifestyle, your perception of the true reality and pseudo-reality, of human life, of spirituality, your Baptist upbringing, of My Nature, of the nature of the positive state, the meaning of the negative state, and everything else you considered normal and proper, but was not, — was really dying. If you look back at that time and compare your state of mind, life and everything else, with what you are and what you have now, nothing of the Peter of that time exists any longer. That Peter died a long time ago.

Your tendency of that time to disregard the spiritual meaning and implication of these factors, and taking them literally in a physical sense led to another problem, utilized by the forces of the negative state. Based on your incorrect assumption, the forces of the negative state very resourcefully and craftily designed a setup by which they implanted someone seemingly significant into your life in order to reinforce your belief in your upcoming physical death. Your collaboration with that person and producing a book with him, led you to believe that he was the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

one who would replace you and continue in your mission, being your heir in this respect.

Fortunately, we intervened in the negative state's design to replace you with their own fake. As you know, Peter, you taught him your methodology of spiritual hypnosis. After you listened to one of his audio tapes, in which he recorded his sessions with a client, as well as after you had a very troubling experience with him when you put him in a deep trance, it became very much obvious to you that he was an implant of the negative state for the purpose of contaminating, polluting and poisoning all your work and your life endeavors. It was at that time that you were asked by Me to stop awaiting your physical death and to resume your work for Me. You accepted My request which immediately produced your fourth and fifth book.

Of course, the consequences of your collaboration with him on the mentioned book unfortunately were very unpleasant for you personally, Peter. You were expelled from membership in the American Psychological Association, and later on, you were almost fired from your professional job (six years later you were reinstated in your membership and you successfully avoided being fired from your job).

At that time, your life was complicated even further by the fact that following the completion of ***Fundamentals of Human Spirituality***, without your conscious awareness, you accompanied Me on a very special mission to the Hells of the pseudo-creators. It was the first time that anyone at all had been allowed to enter their domain after I had locked them up. Your mental condition during that time, for approximately six months, was one of almost paralysis and a deep state of melancholy. That state reflected your intense work in the Hells of the pseudo-creators. Because of this important work on that level, on your physical level on planet Zero (of course, at that time you didn't know that it was planet Zero; you still thought of it as planet Earth), you were put in a state of total inactivity and mental emptiness. It was the only way for you to survive during your stay, in your spirit, of course, in the Hells of the pseudo-creators.

Peter: Forgive me please, this is all nice and dandy, but why do we need to talk about it now and even to make it such an extensive subject of this particular Dialog? I feel like I am exposing myself, or being exposed.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Your concerns are very much appreciated. However, I would like to remind you of something that was indicated to you in Update 20 of the ***Corollaries...*** . It was said there that some

important and troubling events that happened in the past, at the time that they happened, don't have such a significant and potent meaning as they will have some time in the future, when they are brought to your attention again, even after you have forgotten about them. This factor points out the fact that certain events in your life take place regarding the needs for the future rather than for the needs of the time when they are happening in the here-and-now. Thus, their significance becomes obvious only from the standpoint of the present time and not from the standpoint of the time of their occurrence. Don't forget please, that here we are talking from the position of multiversal significance and in a non-time, non-space connotation. Your experiences of that particular time were needed to illustrate and demonstrate something that needs to be learned for this particular time, during this particular ongoing shift.

The first important lesson here for everyone is that, frequently, the events and experiences of one's life, no matter how important or unimportant they are, may not make too much sense at the time that they occur. Such events and experiences are allowed to happen only because they will be needed, appreciated, understood and accepted only within the frame of events at some future time or, very often, only after your departure from planet Zero.

This is one of the major problems of humanity. Humans have very little understanding of why things happen the way they happen. This is especially true about tragic events, the unspeakable suffering of children, misery and desperation, continuous bad luck, as they call it, falling terminally ill, and many other similar adverse events. When they are in the midst of experiencing them, these events don't make any sense to them. They have very little explanation, insight or understanding why they are happening. Some curse and blame God for their predicaments, some talk about acts of God, some simply don't even try to come up with any reasonable or acceptable answers for them. And yet, these adverse experiences all happen because of some important needs which will be manifested either in the near or far future or after leaving this planet. Once they are at a point in their life, whether here or there, when their past experiences are needed to be activated in their memory, then it is brought to their attention and understanding why they chose to have such experiences in the past and what their significance and meaning are in the present — at the time of their reactivation.

In your case, Peter, everything that you were experiencing at the time being discussed in this Dialog, relates to the presently occurring shift. As we are talking about and remembering those events and experiences, different groups from both the New Universe and the new pseudo-

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

universe are being introduced to them. These groups were not functional or involved at that time because they were not in existence, but they need to learn something very important from your past experiences at this time. Many groups are involved right now and many more will be continuously involved as you, and every other reader, will reread these Dialogs in general and this particular Dialog specifically.

Peter: In that case, why are those experiences not happening here-and-now so that we could accommodate them on the spot, so-to-speak?

The Lord Jesus Christ: The very simple reason for this particular timeliness is that you are now in an entirely different position, on an entirely different level of spiritual evolvement, at an entirely different understanding of life issues and in an entirely different mode of relatedness to Me and to My positive state than you were at that time. Because of that, if it were allowed for you to go through those experiences at this time, they would not only interfere with your present role, function and position, but they would successfully and entirely block any possibility for the two of us to communicate or to converse in the way we are doing right now, for example. You have no idea what a tremendously negative ramification this would have not only for you personally but for the entirety of My New Revelation and its position both here in the positive state, and there on planet Zero. On the other hand, at that time, when you were going through those negative experiences, the situation was totally different. It was very much conducive to have such experiences without any real danger for you or anyone else involved — no matter how much you felt that it was dangerous and unbearable at the time. Of course, you couldn't have known then that the value of your experiences related only to this time and not to that time. It would have been very spiritually dangerous for you and all involved to have known that you were setting up something that would be utilized for some very important purposes, 17 years later.

Your experiences of those times have a direct relevance to the final phase of the pseudo-winning of the negative state on planet Zero, and to the permanent ending of the negative state and human life in its present manifestation. As mentioned above, various groups of the mentioned New Universe and the new pseudo-universe are going through those experiences right now. Those that are from the negative side are put into the position of realizing that no matter what the negative state tries to do, no matter how much inventiveness they are able to produce in order to undermine or even destroy anything related to the positive state, its representatives and members, they cannot succeed. This will bring them to the obvious and logical conclusion that all their efforts in this respect

are totally futile, ending in absolute doom. It will become obvious to them that they have absolutely no hope in winning.

No, they are not at that point yet. But they are learning from your experiences and from the experiences of all My true representatives on planet Zero. The more that you and all other readers read these Dialogs, My New Revelation and its ***Corollaries...***, the more this awareness will penetrate their minds and the more the realization will hit them that no matter what, they cannot win and it is a waste of time to continue in this futile effort. Because of that, you will be experiencing a massive conversion of those groups to the positive state. And don't forget that with each rereading of the three sources of My New Revelation, different groups will be attached to you for that very purpose. So, as you see, the importance of the issue discussed here is enormous. It also gives you a very obvious hint of how the ending of the negative state and the transition of human life from the negative state to the positive state can also be very peaceful, gentle and kind; without all those gory, violent, apocalyptic and cataclysmic events with which humans like to be preoccupied so much and which are so profusely depicted in their movies, television programs, in various other media and in the Bible.

On the other hand, the groups that are attached to you from the New Universe and other places, are in the process of learning from your experiences about the climate within which you were operating and functioning at that time. They need to know the difference between the nature of the groups from the negative state who were operating then, and the ones that are operating right now. From your experiences and reactions to them, and how you handled those situations at the time, as well as from your present state of mind and spiritual standing, they can read out the tactics and applications of various methods utilized by the forces of the negative state, and based on that, they can develop the most appropriate and proper approach to very effectively and successfully handle anything with which the negative side would come out against the positive state in general and against you, My representatives, in particular. Now, how all your experiences from the past can be utilized for these important purposes, would be difficult for you to understand at the moment. However, soon, very soon, you will know some aspects of it. Later on, it will become more and more obvious to you how all these things occurred.

One more important aspect exists for your recall of those negative and embarrassing experiences of your discussed past. Your way of handling those situations and the very intensive work on yourself that you were doing intimately with Me, paved the way for many on planet Zero, and

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

especially in the negative state of the Hells, to convert to the positive state. As you know, Peter, it was not until you started to write ***Messages From Within*** that anyone from the Hells was able to convert to the positive state. At the present time, a different contingent of the members of the negative state is in operation — especially those from the new pseudo-universe, who need to have a vivid example of the way and the means by which they may convert to the positive state. Your past experiences and efforts — which you contributed by working on yourself and on your own problems, on negativity and all else related to some inappropriate and very often false spiritual ideas, with a direct involvement with Me for that purpose as your only therapist, if I may use that word; and how you were able to eliminate all that and overcome all assaults of the respective demons, — are giving them a road map for getting out of the negative state permanently. And remember, before that time, no one had ever had such experiences working directly with Me on the resolution of their problems as you did, Peter. So, as you see, what you experienced at that time has a very positive meaning and a good utilization at the present time. Therefore, don't feel bad about it any longer. And have a nice day.

Peter: I appreciate very much Your putting all that into the right perspective.

Thirty Seventh Dialog

February 8, 1999

Peter: For some time now I have been wondering if it would be possible to dialog with You on the nature of the ongoing shift and what it contains, as well as what the ramifications of it are for the entire being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. By the way, this question was also asked by some readers in Europe. If possible at all, may we have some summary on this issue from You? We do have some bits and pieces about it throughout these Dialogs but no consistent description of its true nature.

The Lord Jesus Christ: First of all, the vast majority of the aspects of this shift would not be comprehensible to you from the position of your human conscious external mind, under which, you operate on planet Zero. Because in these Dialogs, as well as in everything else written and talked about in the typical human language, we are using the human mode of expression, impression and conveyance of any ideas, which are the subjects of our discussions, you are blocked by the limitations put on your human mind by the original endowment imposed on you by the pseudo-creators at the time of the fabrication of humans. This is the reason why many things that would be of great value and significance to you as a whole, are beyond any possibility for you to apprehend and comprehend. Thus, if I were to talk about them, or in this case, about at least ten aspects of the nature of the ongoing shift, they wouldn't make any sense to you. Unfortunately, this is the way you are structured on the human level of your mind and this is to what you agreed, before incarnating on planet Zero.

However, on an intuitive level, or on the inner level of your true mind, especially at its spiritual level, you do have an awareness and understanding of most aspects of the currently ongoing shift.

But don't be discouraged. Some aspects of this shift can be described for you at this time because their nature can be grasped by your typical human mode of perception and understanding. We are going to summarize them for you, or devote the content of this particular Dialog to this issue.

Let's begin with a reminder of what was said about My New Nature in Chapter 2 of ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***. At the time My New Nature was acquired or completed, it was stated in that Chapter that, I quote, ***'The consequences of this act for the entire***

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Creation and for the Zone of Displacement are incalculable and will rock the foundation of the entire being and existence for eons to come.' I would like to ask you to pay special attention to the words ***'will rock the foundation of the entire being and existence for eons to come.'*** Why was it necessary to put such an unusually strong emphasis on the outcome of My New Nature?

As you know, everything in being and existence, as well as in pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, is sustained by My Absolute Nature. In an ultimate sense, anyone's and anything's life absolutely depends on My Absolute Life. I am constantly generating, projecting and emanating that life from My Absolute State and Condition to all relative states and conditions. Because of this Absolute Truth and its Absolute requirement, any time I change My Nature, the process of that change and its outcome impacts all sentient entities and everything else in the most profuse and most significant way, no matter where or when they are situated or positioned — from the highest Heavens to the lowest Hells, so-to-speak.

Now, for your reminder and better understanding, let Me repeat the fact that the changes in My Nature are always of absolute proportions. However, these changes cannot be released to relative beings in their entirety because they could not take in their totality and, at the same time, survive. Therefore, I release the nature of My changes to them in small steps, or, as you like to say it, Peter, in bits and pieces. Because the nature of My changes is Absolute, all aspects of it are inexhaustible and therefore, something always new is going to be released and imparted on all relative sentient entities unto eternity. This is the reason why it was said in the Second Chapter of the Big Book, that the consequences of acquiring My New Nature will rock the very foundation of everyone and everything for eons to come. When you say something like 'for eons to come,' it essentially means for good and forever.

How does this reminder relate to the presently ongoing shift? It is during this shift that I am releasing something very crucial and important from My New Nature directly related to the human aspects of It, which I incorporated into the totality of My former Nature. These aspects specifically and particularly relate to and are needed for the final phase in the process of eliminating the negative state, the salvation of all, the transformation of humans, the conversion of everyone in the negative state, and activating the fullness of life in the positive state.

In the process of engulfing all members of the positive state and all their respective environments, spheres and atmospheres, — that is, all their Heavens with all their states and conditions, by the new aspect released

from My New Nature, which has not been available up to this point, — the totality of the positive state is in the process of undergoing a transformation, unimaginable for you to conceive even remotely. The positive state, with all its sentient entities and all their states and conditions, is acquiring a transcending or a totally new and different nature that they have never experienced before. This new state, condition and nature is being fully aligned with that aspect of My New Nature that was released for that purpose and which is in preparation for ending the pseudo-life of the negative state and all its manifestations, as described above.

This is the first crucial, significant and important aspect of this shift. The second aspect relates to the positioning of the positive state and all its members, relative to the positioning of the negative state and its members. This positioning stems from the newly acquired transcending nature of the positive state as a reflection of the newly released aspect from My New Nature, particularly and specifically from its Human aspect. With this new aspect, all members of the positive state are being insulated by a special type of insulator. This insulator functions as a special type of protection going in two directions. It protects them from any harm they might sustain during their needed and necessary interactions with the members of the negative state and humans proper, and at the same time, it protects the members of the negative state and humans proper from being hurt or harmed by the purity of the nature of the members of the positive state. As you know, formerly, any interaction by the members of the negative state with the members of the positive state was experienced by the members of the negative state as painful and intolerable. Because of this insulating factor, this will no longer be the case.

As you remember from Update 20 in the ***Corollaries...***, this insulating factor was originally introduced between you, as My agents at that time, and the pseudo-creators, so that no harm could be sustained either by you or them during your synergistic work with them. By the way, let Me remind you that when Dan of New York raised the question regarding the danger in working with the pseudo-creators, both of you had totally forgotten about the statement and reassurance in Update 20 that no harm could be done to either you or to the pseudo-creators. Do you see now why it is so important to repeat certain things in the form of reminders? At that time, a different aspect of My New Nature was released which related to the issue of the pseudo-creators and you, for the purpose of your working together and helping them to build the bridge of translation to the positive state.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

During this particular shift, this factor of insulation is extended to all beings and existences and pseudo-beings and pseudo-existences, and to all their respective inhabitants. So, with this new ability in their new nature, the members of the positive state are being positioned in a special type of condition and state within the negative state and human life, in such a manner so as to enable the ending of the negative state and human life, in its negative connotation, with the least possible harm and damage. This is the special type of invasion factor mentioned previously in the Big Book.

As you remember from the Big Book, the only possible way to eliminate the negative state is from the very within of the negative state. You can't do it from the without of the negative state. At the same time, you can't eliminate the negative state by the negative state. Only the positive state can do it. This is the reason why it is necessary to equip the members of the positive state with a special condition and state that will enable them to be positioned in the midst of the negative state for that very purpose. This process of positioning is going on right now, as a result of the released aspect of My New Nature, from the area specific to the portion of My Human Nature. It is an integral part of the currently ongoing shift. It is one of its most important aspects.

The third aspect of this shift relates to the members of the New Universe. Because they are the ones who in their relative condition reflect any changes in My New Nature, especially those that relate to and stem from its Human aspects, their role and positioning is in the process of change as well. Whereas the other members of the positive state, not of the New Universe, are primarily concerned and are entrusted with the state of affairs in the Zone of Displacement and all its Hells, the members of the New Universe are assigned a similar role as related to the destiny of humans here on planet Zero as well as in the various Hells, in the Intermediate World and in the New School. As you know, Peter, the specific human life is an extremely unusual phenomenon which doesn't exist anywhere else and which had never been experienced before its fabrication by the pseudo-creators. Because of this unusual factor, humans' salvation from being typically human requires a very different and special means.

For this reason, during this shift I am in the process of releasing a special type of aspect from the Human portion of My New Nature which has not been available up to this point, and I am imparting it on all members of the New Universe in order to prepare and enable them to commence with this extremely difficult task when the time comes to do so. You have almost no idea in your mind what it takes to modify the

original human nature into something that can approximate life in the positive state. Believe me, it is not an easy task at all. Humans need a special type of work and a totally different approach which need to be utilized in the process of their salvation. This is the reason why the members of the New Universe, by being endowed with My newly released aspect, will be in the best possible position to accomplish this task effectively and successfully.

The fourth aspect of this shift relates to the pseudo-creators and their own positioning. Since the time of their release, they have undergone significant changes in their own nature with a subsequent change in their attitude and behavior mode. They are not the same as they used to be. This is in the process of becoming true also regarding the members of their far right faction. During this shift, they are being endowed from My New Nature with a special type of protective sphere and further type of insulation which is enabling them to have access to the positive state. As you remember from their history, before their lockup they had full access to the positive state and they were freely communicating and interacting with the members of the positive state with only one purpose in mind — to subvert and corrupt the members of the positive state as much as possible and to convince them to join their cause in the war against Me personally.

During this shift, after you helped them build the bridge of translation to, and connection with the positive state, with the additional special type of insulation, their access to the positive state is being restored. From now on, they will be able to join the members of the positive state and freely interact and converse with them. However, at this time, their intention and motivation for being able to do so are entirely different compared to the time before their lockup. No longer will they have any desire or tendency to subvert, corrupt or convince anyone in the positive state about anything, but instead, they will want to learn as much as possible from the members of the positive state about their view on the issue of Absolute Truth. Because of the additional special type of insulation which is built-in their nature, stemming directly from My New Nature, no danger will exist either for the members of the positive state or for the pseudo-creators from this important and crucial interaction. And not only that, but under the influence of the special aspect released by Me from the Human portion of My New Nature, the pseudo-creators will not be in any position to have any thoughts about wanting to do anything negative or evil to anyone in the positive state.

The importance of allowing the pseudo-creators to have direct access to the positive state for the purpose of interacting and communicating with

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

the members of the positive state, can be found in the fact that only from the position of the positive state will they be able to come to the right answers to their existential question. Only from the position of the positive state will they be able to reject the Null Hypothesis. At this point in time, they have learned one important lesson: No matter where you go, no matter what you do, no matter how many different methodologies you utilize, no matter how many experiments you conduct, no matter how scientific you are and no matter how many different creatures you fabricate, they are not able to give you the right answers.

So, in order to provide a proper foundation for the pseudo-creators to find their answer in a true and convincing manner, a new situation is being created for them which enables them to enter the positive state and learn what the Absolute Truth is. Also, don't forget the fact, and I am repeating this again, that the positive state is not the same as it used to be at the time before the pseudo-creators' lockup. For that reason, seeing the tremendous difference in the very structure of the positive state and seeing how far the positive state has gone since that time, and everything that has been accomplished in all dimensions of Creation, as well as in the pseudo-worlds of the Zone of Displacement, the pseudo-creators are no longer able to claim that they know everything about how things are in the positive state and elsewhere.

Because of their immense curiosity and scientific mind, they desperately want to know how all that progress, which they have been witnessing since their release, has been accomplished. And this is the glitch of which we were talking about in Update 20. In that sense, it is their downfall as pseudo-creators and rise as co-creators.

For that reason, as an integral aspect of the presently ongoing shift, the pseudo-creators are given a special protection with which they are allowed to access the positive state in order to learn all about it. Once they establish their relationship with the members of the positive state, they will be exposed to all kinds of situations, which will help them realize that the only true answer to their existential question can be found only and only in the positive state from My Absolute Presence in it. They will fully realize that only from within the positive state, and not from without it, can they receive the desired and correct answers. In the moment they are at that point, the end of the negative state will be inevitable.

And finally, the fifth aspect of the currently ongoing shift relates to the formation of the Great Alliance as described in the previous Dialogs, and to the positioning of the renegades, as well as to the change in the roles

and positions of My former agents into becoming My representatives. The renegades are positioned in the scheme of all these events in such a manner so as to allow the final and ultimate exposure of the nature of the negative state in its concluding phase. Only the renegades, by their behavior, striving, purpose, goals and efforts are able to provide this final lesson which needs to be learned by all sentient entities everywhere and everywhen in order to enable them to make the final and most decisive, as well as most important, choice of their lives, which needs to come to its fruition — the choice about not only eternally rejecting the life of the negative state and its derivatives in any form or shape, but also the choice to eternally reject that idea from their mind which tells them that they may deny Me at any time, as well as deny the fact that all life stems from My Absolute Life, rooted in My Absolute Nature.

Don't forget a very important fact stated in the Big Book, that as long as that idea is present in everyone's mind, the negative state cannot be eliminated and the Zone of Displacement cannot become the Zone of Placement. That idea, in essence and paradoxically speaking, by its repulsed energies, maintains the life of the Zone of Displacement and its negative state. For that reason, the ultimate reason for everything that has been going on, and will be going on until the very end of this cycle of time, was and will be, to set up a condition in which the most crucial learning can occur in order to enable everyone to decide to get rid of that idea permanently by choosing not to have it any longer in their minds or in their lives, for good and forever.

Once I perceive that everyone is choosing not to have that idea any longer, I will release from My Absolute New Nature, from the totality of all of its aspects, something very unusual and special, not comprehensible by anyone, which will permanently extract that idea from everyone's mind and nullify its existence in such a manner so that there would be no need to maintain in existence a place into which it could fall out, as the case had been up to that point. It would simply be no more.

The accomplishment of this most important task in the history of the entire being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, will enable the beginning of building the fullness of the New Positive State, which has never existed before. Those will be the most exciting times for all of you.

These are the aspects of the nature of the currently ongoing shift which you will be able to grasp and understand. All other aspects remain hidden until the opportune time. So, go in peace and have a great time.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Peter: I want to express my gratitude to You again, my Lord Jesus Christ, for all that has been conveyed to us in this and all other Dialogs.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Nothing pleases Me more than this opportunity to dialog with you, Peter, and that you are able to share them with all interested people. Thank you again for your willingness to be willing to do so.

Thirty Eighth Dialog

February 9, 1999

Peter: Today, I would like to ask You two questions. The first one was posed by Victor Dokukin of Moscow, Russia (Lyudmila's husband). The second question comes from me. Let me start with Victor's question first and then proceed with my own. Victor is asking for an explanation of the reason why the Islamic religion was initiated in the same geographical region where You Yourself incarnated and did Your important work.

The Lord Jesus Christ: As you know, Peter, each geographical region, as well as any city, town, village, or any place on planet Zero, has some important spiritual correspondence either of the positive or negative nature, respectively. Very often, such correspondence could have both meanings — positive and negative, depending in what connotation it is being addressed and what it represents at each particular time in its historical development. The reason for such important spiritual correspondences is in the fact that anything in being and existence, as well as in pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, derives its function, whatever it may be, from its ultimate spiritual or pseudo-spiritual source. This spiritual factor enables these functions to occur. Without it, nothing could exist or be.

In order for planet Zero to sustain its function in any of its manifestations and mode of life, certain areas of its geographical designations have correspondence to the positive state, that is to say, to the heavens. Without such positive correspondences, planet Zero could not function or survive.

The land of Canaan, situated in the northeastern part of Africa, before and at the time of My incarnation on planet Zero, had such a correspondence to the positive state of the heavens. As you remember from Update 9 in the ***Corollaries...***, because of this specific positive correspondence, and because of My incarnation in the Jewish nation, the only nation that had My Word at the time, it was possible for Me to appear on this planet without any danger for it to be annihilated by the factor of My Absolute Goodness and Positiveness. The fact of that positive correspondence sufficiently tempered anything of that nature from happening.

But there is another important factor why My incarnation and the origin of Christianity and of the Islamic religion occurred in that particular geographical area. This factor, once again, is connected with the above

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

mentioned spiritual correspondence to the positive state. In an ultimate sense, the positive state is the state of the most within. That state is the only source or origin of anything related to the spiritual ideas, concepts, movements and establishments related to Me. Thus, because of this important spiritual requirement, such movements as Christianity and Islam, which have ideas in their teachings relating in some way or another directly to Me, were incapable of originating or taking hold in any other place on planet Zero but the one which had such a positive correspondence to the spiritual world of heaven, or the most within of Creation. On the other hand, all religious movements which have no reference to Me as the only God Indivisible, and which worship some other false gods, originated in different geographical locations that don't have such spiritual correspondence as the discussed region.

As you know, the Koran, the so-called Holy Book of Islam, refers to Me and to My birth on planet Zero almost exactly in the same words used in the Gospel According to Luke. Basically, the Islamic religion constantly refers to the need of leading a life in accordance with the lives of Abraham, Moses, Jesus and Mohammed — in its conceptualization, the greatest prophets of all time. The difference between the Christian conceptualization of My Nature and the Islamic one is that Christians consider Me to be the only begotten Son of God, acknowledging My Divinity, whereas Islam's conceptualization of My Nature limits it to My being one of the great prophets who doesn't have this divinity.

However, there is another important spiritual reason why Islam was allowed to appear on this planet, and specifically in that particular geographical region where I was active during My life on planet Zero. As you know, the Islamic religion was initiated approximately 600 years after My resurrection and departure from planet Zero. By that time, Christianity was not only fully established but had become totally corrupt and taken over by the negative state in its entirety. This factor was already revealed through Swedenborg. What happened here was that the Christian religion dogmatized the concept of the Trinity — the abomination of the negative state, which assumed the existence of God in three persons. This interpretation of the concept of the Trinity, by the illogical, irrational and paradoxical assumption of three gods in one person or one God in three persons, respectively, whatever the case may be, put the spiritual life on planet Zero and the entire humanity, in the gravest possible danger of being annihilated.

The problem with such a conceptualization is that, once you recede from accepting God as the only One Who is absolutely indivisible, and once you come up with the false idea of god in three persons, you destroy any

connection to the true spiritual reality of being and existence. The result of such disconnection is the end of any life on the planet which accepts such a concept on a planetary scale, because any life is sustained by accepting the concept of One God Indivisible as the only source of life.

This was the situation 600 years following My departure from planet Zero. In order to avoid that such a horrid destiny would befall humanity on your planet, My Divine Providence arranged an Islamic movement which, in the strongest possible terms, proclaimed that there is absolutely only One God Indivisible and none other. By the proclamation of this idea and the establishment of a religion based on it, humanity's life could be preserved. The reason why it was necessary to establish this religion in this respect in that specific and particular region where I was incarnated, is because it was and is directly connected to Me. I am identified with that region not only in humanity's conceptualization but also in My entire Creation's. So, whenever you say the word 'Allah,' because that word signifies that there is only One God and none other, and because it relates to that particular region, which now corresponds to My Divine Human and Human Divine, it, in actuality, confirms that I, The Lord Jesus Christ, Am that One God Indivisible and that there is no other. It doesn't make any difference that the followers of Islam, on their conscious level, don't perceive Me as being their Allah but only as His prophet. All others in all other dimensions of My Creation perceive it that way. From the position of that perception and by the tremendous spiritual energies emanating from that perception, they maintain the possibility of any life on planet Zero and elsewhere.

In this fact, and only in this fact, the Islamic religion played an important positive role. Unfortunately for its followers, because of this important role, it was the subject of the greatest possible contamination, pollution and poison by the forces of the negative state. These forces realized how dangerous it was for the negative state if humanity would accept the fact that Allah is none other than The Lord Jesus Christ — Me. For that reason, they convinced the followers of Mohammed, the prophet of Islam, to take everything that is written in the Koran literally, and to deny that Jesus Christ was a true God and the only God in being and existence, putting Him on an equal footing with their Mohammed; and placing the meaning of spirituality in various most ridiculous external rituals which in a true spiritual connotation are empty notions without any meaning. However, no matter how falsified, distorted and vicious Islamic ideas are, the most important spiritual idea contained in Islam about One God Indivisible, is fully preserved in humanity's consciousness. This idea will be utilized in the process of ending the negative state and for the salvation of all followers of Islam.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

On the negative aspects of Islam, as well as of all other major religions on planet Zero, you can read about them in Chapter II of ***Major Ideas of The New Revelation***. It is not necessary to repeat them here because this Dialog has a different requirement.

Peter: Thank You very much for this explanation. I hope Victor will be satisfied with it. Allow me now to humbly ask You my question. In the Gospel According to Matthew, in Chapter 5, verse 48, You say, and I quote: *‘Therefore you shall be perfect, just as your Father in heaven is perfect.’* How would You interpret this statement? It seems to me that Your requirement was unrealistic. After all, who can be as perfect as You are? It refutes any logic and statements in Your New Revelation about the issue of perfection. May I ask You to shed some light on this statement?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Very gladly, Peter. As you see from the above example, the literal sense of all statements of this nature in the Holy Bible don’t make too much sense, do they? This is a major problem with humanity. If you take this statement literally, you could end up in the very dangerous predicament of not being able to fulfill your obligation of being as perfect as your Father in heaven. In that case, you would fail in your spiritual efforts and, as a consequence, you would be doomed to eternal habitation in some of the Hells because you could never reach the same level of perfection of the One Who is absolutely perfect. After all, you wouldn’t be able to enter the heavens if you wouldn’t be as perfect as your Father is in heaven.

However, let’s look on this situation from its purely spiritual connotation and meaning. In order to do that, it is necessary for us to recognize in what situation, where and when this statement was made. As you know, Peter, this statement is an integral part of My extensive teachings recorded in the entire Chapters 5, 6, and 7 of Matthew. Some readers of those three chapters have correctly concluded that if I were to say nothing more than what is contained in them, it would give the foundation to establish a religious movement in My Name — that’s how important My teaching was, as recorded in them.

If you carefully analyze the setting in which that teaching occurred, you will find a very interesting spiritual correspondence. Before I opened My mouth to say anything of this tremendous significance, I left the multitudes and went up on a mountain, and when I was seated, My disciples came to Me. Only after that, I opened My mouth and taught them, saying all those beautiful things. What does this careful arrangement tell you? First of all, I left the multitudes; meaning, I left

the negative state to which the multitudes correspond. Secondly, I went up on a mountain; meaning, I went back to the positive state. However, the top of a mountain also corresponds to the most within of everyone's mind; meaning, I also situated Myself in the most within of everyone. Thirdly, only My disciples approached Me; meaning, the only individuals who were allowed to participate in My lectures were My agents on planet Zero, for the purpose of becoming My followers in order to be an exemplification and illustration of the nature of the positive state for the rest of humanity, essentially placing it in the position of free choice and not of imposition.

How do you introduce the nature of the positive state to someone who has no notion of what the positive state is all about? By placing them in the midst of the positive state and showing its nature to them and by outlining its basic and most fundamental principles to them. After all, at that time, no one on planet Zero had any proper knowledge about the nature of the positive state or about God's. So, if you want to establish a different alternative for humans to choose differently from what they had up to that point, which was no choice at all, you must reveal to them that, first of all, there is such a state as the positive state, and secondly, you must explain to them what is the true nature of the positive state. With such a revelation and explanation, you place them into the position of comparing the nature of that in which they were, of which they had no idea of it being negative, with that which is being offered to them as a viable alternative to choose from and which is of a purely positive nature. In this particular connotation, My disciples who approached Me on the top of a mountain represent the entire humanity in their external or without position, where no proper knowledge or understanding of anything about anything exists. In order to acquire such proper knowledge and understanding, they had to approach Me on a mountain, that is, in the state of their most within.

As mentioned above, a mountain corresponds both to the positive state in general and to everyone's Spiritual Mind in particular. I, sitting on a mountain, signifies My presence both in the midst of the positive state, being that it is My extension and process, as well as in everyone's Spiritual Mind. From that presence of Mine, all proper, correct and true knowledge derives. So, anyone approaching Me on the mountain, signifies turning one's attention to the state of one's within, to My presence in it, and to My positive state. Once you establish yourself in this new, different and proper position, by that factor, you allow Me to begin teaching you about all matters of the spiritual life, about My positive state, about your true nature, the nature of your Spiritual Mind, and about all spiritual principles that underlie the nature of My entire

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Creation. At the same time, by the factor of comparing your life before acquiring proper knowledge about all these things, with what you had or knew before, you realize that your prior knowledge and everything that you had in this respect, is nothing but an illusion which has no bearing on any known reality. As you see, Peter, we have built a proper foundation for answering your question about verse 48 of the mentioned chapter. In order to understand properly what the meaning of that verse is, it was necessary to forward it with the explanation offered to you above.

In the connotation of the quoted verse, the words ‘your Father’ don’t relate to your spiritual Parent — God. It doesn’t have a parenting connotation. Notice, please, I didn’t say ‘our Father’ or ‘My Father’ but only ‘your Father.’ This is not by any coincidence. Do you remember what I said to those who brought to My attention that My father, mother, sisters, brothers, etc., were standing outside wanting to talk to Me? I told them, pointing to My disciples, that those who do My will and keep My words are my father, mother, sisters and brothers. Why would I say that? I said that in order to emphasize the fact that only My positive state, and what it contains and does, has true reality. Because I was referring here to those who do My Will and keep My Words, by the factor of spiritual association and correspondence, I was talking about My positive state and its inhabitants. After all, they were the only ones who, at that time, did My Will and kept My Word. Because all of them were derived from Me for the purpose of inhabiting My positive state, they became My relatives. Here is the spiritual correspondence of the word ‘relative.’ Paradoxically speaking, they are all relative **and relatives** to My Absolute State. In this sense, they are truly the only relatives I have (mother, father, brothers, sisters). Anyone who comprises My positive state becomes relative to Me. So, the meaning of this paradox is clear: Being relative to My Absolute State, based on the factor that each such relative is the extension and process of My Absoluteness, makes you My relative.

The words ‘your Father in heaven,’ in the connotation of the discussed topic, also point out the originating source of your life. In each particular individual, where is life coming from? From what source do you live and function? What is it that makes you who you are? Being in heaven signifies being in your most within Spiritual Mind where My presence constantly and continuously is. Your Father Who is in that heaven, that is, in your Spiritual Mind, signifies the essence and substance of your unique life imparted on you by My Absolute Essence and Absolute Substance. Everything else derives from it, and it makes you who you really are. Due to the fact that it was I Who, from My Absolute Essence

and Substance, established and put into motion your own unique essence and substance, making you who you are, in this sense, you are My everything. Because I am Absolutely Perfect, and because everything that you have and who you are is Mine, in that sense, your relative essence and substance, that is, your Father in heaven, that is, in your Spiritual Mind, are also perfect by the factor of this logic and derivation. For that reason, what you are being told in the quoted verse is not that you have to be perfect as God is, which is an utter impossibility and a totally unrealistic requirement and expectation, but to be perfect as your Spiritual Mind and the essence and substance of your personality are, relative to My Own Absolute Perfection.

This is one specific connotation of the meaning of the quoted verse. A more general connotation can be found in an additional spiritual correspondence in the words 'your Father in heaven.' 'Heaven,' in this particular instance corresponds to My Creation in its entirety. 'Father in heaven' corresponds to the global Most Within Spiritual Mind-Dimension of My Creation. It is the initiator and originator from Me of everything that is and exists in My Creation, as well as all its events and happenings. Because My Creation derives from My Absolute Perfection, it is perfect, relative to Me only. The requirement of the quoted verse in this particular, as well as in a general connotation, is to pattern your personal life and everything in it, in accordance with the nature of My Creation and specifically with its Global Spiritual Mind-Dimension. Because My Creation and that Mind are perfect, relative to My Absolute Perfection, you are to strive to be perfect, relative to their perfect state and process. This is what the true meaning of the quoted verse signifies. Nothing else and nothing more should be put into it.

For your information, notice, please, what happened when I finished My teaching on that mountain. Afterwards, I came down from the mountain (Chapter 8, verse 1-3 of Matthew), back to great multitudes, that is to say, back into the negative state, where I was greeted by a leper who worshiped Me and asked Me to make him clean. In the connotation of the discussed topic, the leper represents the external level or degree of the positive state which at that time was being overrun by the forces of the negative state and by the pseudo-creators particularly. Their presence on that level had a contaminating effect on all inhabitants of that level. It was making their life unbearable and unclean. However, because they refused to compromise or to give in to anything the forces of the negative state were offering them, they petitioned Me and My Absolute Free Will, from their own free will and choice, to free them from that condition and to make them clean again. This fact is signified by the words 'a leper came and worshiped Him.' By worshiping Me, they reaffirmed their

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

devotion to Me as the only source of their lives, and their determination not to be swayed or corrupted by anything offered to them by the forces of the negative state.

The presence of the forces of the negative state within their domain was eroding their perfect state relative to My Absolute Perfection. By petitioning Me from their own free will and choice to restore their perfection to its original state and condition, they enabled Me to free and to clean their domain from the presence of the negative state, and to lock up the pseudo-creators, giving them back their purely perfect positive state. The leper asked Me if I was willing to clean him. My answer was that yes, I was willing. This denotes very clearly that I am always willing to clean anyone from the influence and poison of the negative state, if I am asked to do so, and to bring them back to the state of their own relative perfection relative to My Own Absolute Perfection. Does My answer to your question satisfy you, Peter?

Peter: Very much so. It makes perfect sense to me. Thank You very much for Your answers. Is there anything else we need to discuss today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: No, this should suffice for today. Have a nice day, Peter.

Thirty Ninth Dialog

February 10, 1999

Peter: As You know, in my telephone conversation yesterday with our Rosemarie, she mentioned something about seeing a book in a bookstore titled 'Conversations with God.' When she opened the book, it had exactly the same words as we have here — 'Dialogs with God.' How do You like that? Would You like to make any comments about this phenomenon?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, I would. Thank you for asking Me. Of course, as you know, it is not by coincidence that, first of all, such a book was written or even that it has already been published, and secondly, that it has been brought to your attention at this particular time. You feel somewhat dismayed that books of that nature get so quickly and so easily published and read by multitudes, even becoming bestsellers, yet, the books of My New Revelation have never been published by a 'reputable' publisher, outside of the TNR Foundation. You either had to publish them yourself, with monies taken initially from your own pocket, so-to-speak, or, later on, with your friend's and brother's — Ernest Hickson — monies. Still, during the latest years, you did your own desktop publishing without any involvement by outside printing companies, utilizing either your money for that purpose or money donated by several other readers, especially by Dr. Beth Ann Voien. It has always been on your mind why books of the above mentioned nature are so easily published, widely read and accepted by humans, whereas the books of My New Revelation have such few readers, and even fewer who accept their ideas and content.

The major reason for this factor can be found in the content of the books written by various authors out there and in the content of the books of My New Revelation. Because you live in a world which has been completely subsumed by the negative state, it puts out the messages contained in such books, which are initiated and conveyed from the position of the negative state. Due to the fact that books of this nature contain pure distortions and falsities, as related to the description of My Nature or the nature of God in general, as well as to the description of the nature of the positive state, the nature of human life and all other ideas related to these issues; the forces of the negative state — being that it is their world or domain, and being that these books contain their ideas, concepts and guidelines — promote, advertise, support and publish such books with great delight, pleasure and success.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

If you take into consideration how human nature was initially structured, then it becomes obvious why humans would have such a tremendous proclivity and pull toward accepting as truth anything contained in books of that nature. As you remember, the structure of their mind was fabricated in such a manner so as to naturally incline to receive and accept distortions and falsities in a much easier and comfortable manner than anything that stems from the positive state and which is the real truth. This is one of the reasons why it is so difficult for humans to accept My New Revelation.

Let Me tell you something, Peter, and it will be a reiteration of what was indicated to you before in the Big Book. My New Revelation is being offered primarily to the members of the positive state, to all other inhabitants of different dimensions and universes and to a very few humans who have the privilege now of either being My true representatives or who will become such later on, or who are given an opportunity to make some important choices or conclusive decisions in their lives. For the majority of other members of humanity, as well as for the members of the negative state, My New Revelation is in the mode of **availability**. This mode indicates to you that for these particular contingents it is not time yet to read it, support it or accept it. These contingents need to fulfill their purpose for being who they are and for doing whatever they have to do in the process of the full exposure of the nature of the negative state.

In this process, because of the importance of the mentioned exposure, these contingents need to have their own support, feedback and to be convinced about the rightfulness of their cause. For that reason, they produce all kinds of books of the above mentioned nature, the ideas and contents of which give them the strongest possible impetus not only to continue in their effort and cause, but to also give them the sense that they are absolutely right in everything they say and do, and how and why they behave the way they do. So, in this sense, Peter, they need to be fed by incentives to continue in their effort to do their work in the process of exposing the nature of the negative state. Among other things, these types of books provide them with such incentives.

Another reason for the rise of the publishing of such books on your planet, is to countermand anything that you write and publish, Peter, as My New Revelation, in order to nullify the effect that My New Revelation might have on the members of the negative state and on the majority of humans, and to block their awareness from realizing that My New Revelation even exists and is available to all.

In this particular case, the above mentioned book was published as the process of our Dialogs has been taking place and as you have recorded them, even before any of their formal publishing is planned or considered. The reason for this factor is that the forces of the negative state are fully realizing how dangerous the content and ideas of these Dialogs are and how influential they could become in their own realm and in humans' minds. Don't forget the fact that was described to you in the previous Dialogs; that during your reading and rereading of the three sources of My New Revelation and especially these Dialogs, anyone from the negative state who is attached to you, will hear My voice in their mind telling them that everything contained in these Dialogs, and in other books of My New Revelation, and which will be perceived by their mind for the first time as coming directly from Me, is nothing but the pure truth.

For that reason, the forces of the negative state are hastily coming up with their own version of dialoging with the so-called God in order to present their own members with an alternative explanation of all factors contained in My New Revelation and our Dialogs. They hope that by their own version of these facts, they will be able to suffocate My voice sounding in the mind of those who are attached to you for that purpose.

Don't be surprised if many more books of this nature are published, widely read and accepted by the majority of humans. This phenomenon reflects the fact, mentioned previously, that the negative state's pseudo-winning on your planet is in its final phase. The content of such books will be a contributory factor in the process of this pseudo-winning. The more readers of those books who will accept the ideas contained in them, the more the negative state will be in position for its pseudo-winning and the closer its end will be.

Let us discuss this issue a little further. When we are talking here about the time factor relating to the last phase of the negative state exposing its nature and pseudo-winning on planet Zero, with its subsequent ending, we are not talking at any time about a time frame, as conceived by your external human mind. It was indicated to you a few days ago that this last phase will be the longest in duration. The reason for this need was also explained to you at the same time. What does it mean 'the longest in duration?' From the typical human standpoint of conceptualizing time, it could take months, years, decades, centuries or even millennia. In other words, it will take as long as necessary in order to complete this process to the full and complete satisfaction of all and everything.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

From the standpoint of the spiritual world and all other dimensions, the factor of time, as conceived by humans, has no relevance whatsoever. Don't forget please, that in their perception of the duration of this phase, in comparison with yours, whatever is very long for you, can be very short for them, and vice versa: Whatever is short for you, can be very long for them.

So, when we are talking about the Great Tribulation, and how its time will be shortened in order to give a respite to all involved in it, it is not meant in the physical time of the temporal-spatial continuum but in the multiversal one. In the multiversal conceptualization, when you compare the existence of the negative state against how long the existence of the multiverse has been in place, even in your time measurements, it is of such a short duration as though it almost doesn't exist. In this sense, the last phase of the negative state's pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, or in biblical terms — the Great Tribulation, is really a very short one. However, in your human terms, it may or may not last for many centuries or even many millennia.

I am asking you, please, don't fall into the same error as some of My disciples/apostles did when they expected that the ending of this world and My Second Coming would happen during their lifetime. Some of you might have the similar idea that all these things will be happening during your lifetime on planet Zero. Don't be under the influence of your own wishful thinking. I know very well how much and how strongly you yearn and desire for this most expected and wanted ending to take place. Such an attitude may open the doors for the negative state in order to target you. It will bring all kinds of events and happenings to your attention which will be convincing almost beyond the shadow of a doubt that the ending is near and that it will happen in front of your physical eyes. I don't want you to be disappointed when things in this respect don't work out the way you expect them to work out or how you would like them to work out. Yes, it will happen during your lifetime, and it will happen during the lifetime of My disciples/apostles, but not necessarily during the lifetime on planet Zero. Their error was not in the perception that it would happen during their lifetime, but that it would happen while they still lived on planet Zero. After all, they and you will all be alive and living at the time of the ending of the negative state and during the final phase of My Second Coming. It doesn't mean that you would be living on planet Zero at that time. You may or you may not. It is totally irrelevant.

In actuality, from the spiritual standpoint, there is or will be, a global perception of the ending of the negative state, and there is or will be its

individual perception. You, who are My true representatives on planet Zero, and in the negative state in general, upon your recall from planet Zero and upon your entrance into My positive state, by the factor of being extracted from the negative state and placed back into the positive state, will be experiencing the ending of the negative state in your own personal life. As a matter of fact, in some internal and spiritual sense, because as of recently, you have been and will be functioning only from the position of the positive state, the negative state has ended for your spirit and soul. Only for your physical body, being that it was formed from the elements of the negative state, the reality of the life of the negative state and its human life continues to have real tangibility. As long as you are experiencing yourself in your physical body, whenever you step down into your human skin, so-to-speak, the existence of the negative state will continue to be a tangible reality. However, this will no longer be the case for your spirit and soul. Of course, only if you choose it to be so by your own free will and choice.

Peter: Talking about time and the ending of the negative state, and how long the final phase of the pseudo-winning of the negative state on planet Zero will continue, I can see Your point on the irrelevance of time. If our astronomers are correct in their assumption that the visible Universe has been in being and existence anything between 15 to 20 billion years or so; in comparison with that time, what is a few millennia or even a few million years? It is like a day in one year.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Of course, Peter, you see My point. However, don't forget how your astronomers came to their conclusion about the age of the visible Universe. They estimated the distance between the farthest galaxy they can see and their planet, by measuring the time during which light can travel between these two points. So, by converting the light years into regular years, they made the conclusion that the Universe began approximately 15 billion years ago. But, as you know, they are continuously changing this number. As their observation instruments-telescopes become more advanced, they are able to see much farther than before, discovering many galaxies of which they have no idea they existed at all. But what do they know about anything which may be far beyond the abilities of their telescopes to detect? How many more galaxies, or whatever, exist out there that no matter how advanced their telescopes are or will be, now elude or will completely elude them? Do you see how 'precise' is your science? No wonder that your scientists had to come up with the principle of a self-correcting necessity for any scientific conclusions because they are never sure whether any current knowledge about anything will be sustained or refuted somewhere along the line of the new discoveries. So as you know, just recently the Hubbell

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

telescope was able to discover a new galaxy, many more light years away than scientists could imagine. This discovery pushed back the time during which the visible Universe began its being and existence. How much more will such future discoveries push that time even farther back into the past?

Peter: Talking about scientific discoveries, may I ask You humbly to shed some light on the new theory proposed by some astronomers, that in the view of the new discoveries, perhaps the visible Universe might not collapse after all as expected, but will continue to expand forever, because no sufficient gravitational pull exists that could reverse this process of expansion? Are they correct? This would refute what was stated about it in The New Revelation.

The Lord Jesus Christ: It depends from what point of view you look at this claim. Let's elaborate on this issue a little further. What do your scientists see or observe out there? Do they have real access to the real Creation? They don't. First of all, their instruments of observation are made from materials which are unable to detect anything in the true reality of the true being and existence, that is, in the true Creation. Those materials are taken out from the elements of which planet Zero and the Zone of Displacement consist. Because of that, the only thing they are able to detect, if anything at all, is something which is conducive to that material. Thus, in view of this fact, they only see a pseudo-universe and not the real universe.

You may ask, Peter, and I see this question in your mind, what is the genesis of this pseudo-universe? Although some of these factors were described throughout the books of My New Revelation, certain very original steps in this process have not been described yet. So, let's shed some light on this issue. As you know, in the process of activating the negative state, it was necessary to come up with the idea to fabricate something which would be comparable to the true Creation but that would be totally different from the nature of the true Creation. At that time (at non-time!), just before the condensed matter was about to be pushed to expansion, forming the physical dimension of the multiverse with all its universes, galaxies, solar systems, planets and various other celestial bodies, the pseudo-creators were allowed to separate one big 'chunk' of that matter, restructure its components, elements, particles and sub-particles, and by a special type of combination of all of them, cause an unimaginable (to you) explosion (the Big Bang Theory!), giving rise to the pseudo-universe with all its respective galaxies, solar systems and planets. This process happened in a parallel manner to the creation of the real physical dimension of Creation. As you know, the creation of

the physical dimension was preceded by the creation of the spiritual and intermediate dimensions, respectively. The pseudo-creators followed this parallel, but with a simultaneous displacement of their pseudo-creation from the real one. Hence, the Zone of Displacement, which is patterned and structured in the same manner as the real Creation, but in an upside-down position.

If you look at pseudo-creation as an upside-down reflection of the real Creation, you may conceive the idea that the visible Universe will expand forever because, according to the spiritual factor which underlies Creation and reflects the Absolute Nature of The Creator, Creation has always been, is and will be. In that sense, and only in that sense, the eternal expansion of Creation is assured. And because the pseudo-creation is a pale reflection of the real Creation, it also reflects this factor of unceasing expansion, assuming it to be its own. From these facts, your astronomers assumed the possibility that no reversal of matter will occur and that therefore, the visible physical universe (actually, the pseudo-universe) may expand forever.

However, in the true reality of this supposition, the pseudo-creation cannot expand forever, because it didn't originate in the Absolute State, that is to say, it didn't originate from Me directly. Relative beings gave birth to it, implanting pseudo-laws and pseudo-principles into it which can be nothing else but only of a relative nature. Because of this relativity factor, the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the pseudo-creation is only relative, in an absolute sense. Therefore, at one point in time, when everything about the negative state and the pseudo-life of the pseudo-creation comes to fulfillment, the visible physical pseudo-universe will collapse, or fall in on itself, and the original 'chunk' of matter which was extracted from the mentioned condensed matter, will join itself to its original source, becoming an integral component of that state, fully participating in the creation of the new physical dimension, parallel to the creation of the spiritual and intermediate dimensions corresponding to it. This is how you may perceive that the Zone of Displacement could become the Zone of Placement.

Looking at the above described process (**one of the many possible scenarios!**) from the global standpoint of the structure and dynamics of this occurrence, and most importantly, from the spiritual standpoint, you can say for sure that the universe will be expanding forever. Looking at it from the localized standpoint of the structure and dynamics of this occurrence, and from a typical non-spiritual approach, you can say that the universe will most certainly end in collapse.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

So, Peter, this is the reason why I preceded this explanation with the statement that it all depends from which point of view you look at that claim. I really hope that My answer, in response to your question, brings you some awareness of how things could happen. The problem with your question, Peter, is that an exhaustive answer to it is extremely difficult to give in your typical human words and language. This process is very complex for your human mind to fully grasp. However, intuitively and on your spiritual level it will be possible for you to understand the meaning of the described process.

Peter: Yes, I can feel it and I can sense it but I am unable to describe it in my human terms. Anyway, no matter what, I am profoundly thankful to You, my Lord Jesus Christ, for everything that You are offering to us. Is there anything else You would like to address today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: It was My pleasure, Peter. No, this will be all for today. Have a nice sunbath. You need it.

Fortieth Dialog

February 11, 1999

Peter: With the total pseudo-winning of the negative state on this planet looming ahead, I am curious about the issues of agreement and free will in the case of humans after they choose to side with the negative state or after they accept the negative state as the only viable alternative. Will anything remain from their ability to make free choices by their free will after that date?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, Peter, the answer to your question should be clear to you by now. First of all, the agreement was made well before the human life in all its aspects was permitted to come to fruition regarding the choice to go through an experience of this nature. Otherwise, nothing of this nature could ever happen. You have to understand one important principle in this respect. No one anywhere or anywhen would ever be in being and existence or pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, and in the position anyone was, is and will be, without a prior agreement to participate in anything that has been and will be going on, no matter what it has been or will be, and no matter how good or bad it has been or will be.

Secondly, before anyone was created and/or fabricated, one of the most important principles was permanently established and put into the foundation of any creative or pseudo-creative effort. The principle was that there would be no other possibility to create and/or fabricate anyone of a sentient nature unless the prospective sentient entity, whether positive or negative, would agree to be and to exist — no matter by who he/she would be created or fabricated. Because of this fundamental principle, any effort to circumvent it would always end in a total failure to create or fabricate anyone.

Thirdly, as you remember from My New Revelation and its Updates, before the pseudo-creators became the pseudo-creators, that is, before the negative state was activated, certain important ground rules were established and agreed upon which clearly defined the conditions under which any production or fabrication of any sentient life forms could be permitted or even could take hold in any life. These rules allow the creation and/or fabrication of any sentient entity or humans, or various other negative and evil entities, only under the condition that they would all agree to come to their own personal and private life; and that if they were to choose not to agree, they would not be created or fabricated. At the same time, the agreement was made that any time anyone would try

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

to bypass these rules, because of their prerequisite for establishing such life forms, the effort of those individuals or groups would be unsuccessful and they would not produce anything unless they would follow these rules. Simply stated, these rules were embedded into any creative or pseudo-creative effort.

Fourthly, the agreement was also made that the pseudo-creators, or anyone else for that matter, would have no conscious memories about these rules and their acceptance as a prerequisite for their pseudo-creative effort. The reason for agreeing not to remember anything about it was in order to make the pseudo-life and human life in particular, and the experiment in the negative state in general, genuine, authentic and fully valid in order to avoid the possibility of its being *as if* and not *as is*. As it was mentioned in My New Revelation, the valid and fully genuine learning about any other life other than the life of the positive state, cannot be obtained unless the non-positive life is set up in such a manner so as to give it a sense of being a true life, independent of any input from anyone but only from those who fabricated or established it. The important thing here is to realize that it was not only necessary to permit this particular setup for establishing and manifesting the pseudo-life and the typical human life, but, at the very same time, it was necessary to remove from the fabricators, as well as from their fabrications, whoever they may be, the conscious awareness that it was given by My permission. So, at that time, and during the entire time of the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the pseudo-life and human life, no one has been aware, until the transmission of My New Revelation, that these types of pseudo-lives were allowed to be established and to proceed with their respective manifestations by My sole permission, given by Me for very important spiritual reasons. Up to that point, it was assumed that they were created either by Me, or in the view of the atheistic scientists, that they appeared from the cosmic stew without any outside involvement.

Due to the fact that at the time of transmission of My New Revelation, the negative state and all its participants, as well as human life, in essence, had reached their pinnacle, it was possible to reveal the main reasons for its activation, as well as for the process of its manifestation; as well as to bring to everyone's attention that it was put into motion by My sole permission. In the current position and state of the negative pseudo-life and human life, the way they are now, the knowledge of these important factors can no longer interfere with or impede the genuineness and authenticity of the learning process about their nature.

In actuality, shortly before the very last phase of the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the negative state and human life is entered, and during the beginning of establishing the very last phase, it is very vital and crucial to reveal about the factors of permission, original agreement and free will and choice. The initiation of the permanent and eternal abolishment of the negative state and its typical human life cannot take place without such revelation. If such abolishment were to happen without this important revelation, it would lock-in all participants of this pseudo-life into a state of inevitability and no freedom of choice. Don't forget that they chose their current state by their free will and choice and by prior agreement. If you were not to bring to their attention the important factors of how and under what conditions the negative state was activated and put into motion, you would be violating everything on which their pseudo-life was built. And not only that, but you would put them into the position of not being able to make the choice to convert to the positive state because, after all, they chose the negative state by their free will and choice. You cannot choose anything else contrary to your original choice.

Before you are able to make any different choice, once again by your own free will and choice, all conditions, factors, principles, and everything else under which you made your choice for the negative state in the first place, are needed to be brought to your fullest possible attention first. If you have no conscious idea why you made such a choice, and if your idea about it is that it was done so by your own free will and choice, or by your prior agreement to participate in such a pseudo-life, you cannot establish any foundation or acquire any incentives, desires or wishes to change or modify your original choice. In that case, the negative state couldn't be permanently abolished.

Let's assume for a moment, that I would forcefully abolish the negative state without revealing the above mentioned conditions why I permitted its pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. What do you think would happen in that case? By taking away from the participants in the pseudo-life of the negative state the only means by which they can and may feel being alive and living, rooted in the fact that they chose by their free will and choice to be in that particular mode of being alive and living, I would eternally kill them. If anything of this nature were to happen, by that inconceivable act, I would nullify the Absolute Principle of My Absolute Nature, rooted in My Absolute Free Will and Independence. The nullification of this fundamental principle would nullify the entire sentient life in My entire Creation. Don't forget that their life, as the life of everyone else, is possible only by having their own free will, choice and independence. This fundamental principle is constantly and unceasingly

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

being emanated from Me to all of them. However, in the moment of its nullification, they would stop receiving it into their lives. Because of that, not only everyone in the negative state and in the human life, but also in the positive state and in My entire Creation, would eternally perish. For anything of this nature to happen is totally and absolutely inconceivable to My Absolute Nature. For that reason, before commencing the abolishment of the negative state, it is preceded by My New Revelation, regarding all these factors.

Basically, there are two steps in the process of this revelation. In the first step, everyone is being informed, through My New Revelation, about the genesis and manifestation of the negative state and its human life. This information is needed not only by the members of the negative state and humans proper but also by the members of the positive state. Most of the aspects of the activation and manifestation of the negative state and of the typical human life, and most of the principles on which they were permitted to come to their adverse fruition, were not consciously available to the members of the positive state either.

This was a necessary setup, in order to give a chance to the pseudo-life and human life to be manifested and to become an illustration and demonstration for the learning of all how it is to be in such a strange life. Should such full knowledge be available to them prior to the activation and manifestation of such pseudo-life, the availability of that knowledge in their consciousness would automatically enter the Multiversal Consciousness from which it could be easily read out by the pseudo-creators and their fabrications, effectively and successfully nullifying the validity of their experiment. In that case, no one could learn anything about the nature of any other life other than the life of the positive state. If this were to happen, the fullness of life in the positive state could never come to its delightful and most desirable fruition.

Once all this knowledge is revealed through My New Revelation, and once it becomes available to anyone anywhere, it is registered in the Multiversal Consciousness and put in a state of **availability** to the individual consciousness of everyone. It is said here that 'it is put in the state of availability to the individual consciousness of everyone.' This statement indicates that the majority of humans on planet Zero, as well as many other entities elsewhere in the Zone of Displacement, will not be **consciously** aware of these facts. However, in the process of the transmission of My New Revelation — as it has been becoming available through the influence of the Multiversal Consciousness, to which all minds are connected in some way or another — it enters their mind at its unconscious level. So, it becomes the permanent property of their mind.

Only the members of the positive state and you, My representatives, have become fully and consciously cognizant of these important facts.

At this point in time, before the very last moment of the very last phase of the pseudo-winning of the negative state on planet Zero and elsewhere, it is still premature to put such knowledge in everyone's conscious mind with the full conscious awareness of its content and impact. The factor of this availability is a preparatory stage for the second step to be taken. The reason why the members of the positive state, as well as the pseudo-creators and My representatives on planet Zero, are allowed to fully know these facts at their conscious level, is because they are instrumental in working with Me on ending the negative state and its human life. You can't very well be in the position of helping Me if you don't have the full knowledge of these important factors. You would be blind in your effort. Being blind would not only not serve My purpose, but it would impede it because you would constantly be hesitating on what to do, how to do it and on why to do it.

On the other hand, the reason that, for the time being, this knowledge will still remain on the unconscious level for the rest of the people, is in order to give them the opportunity to finish their job in this respect without any interference from their conscious efforts.

However, once the last segment of the last phase of the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the negative state and its human life comes to its ending, at its very end, the second step is activated. It is in this step that the full conscious access to this information and knowledge will be opened. And not only that, but all their memories about their voluntary status in participating in the life of the negative state and its human life will be opened as well, and they will fully recognize why and for what reasons permission was granted by Me to proceed with the experimentation in the pseudo-life and human life.

The reason why this process has to take two steps, is because without the prior availability of such knowledge in everyone's mind on their unconscious level, the full immediate access to such knowledge on their conscious level would be so shocking and unbearable, that they could not survive it. Its availability on the unconscious level cushions this fatal shock sufficiently enough so that it protects them from succumbing to such a horrid fate. What happens here is that knowing something on the unconscious level of their mind makes it familiar to them the moment you bring it to the conscious level of their mind — as if they always knew it anyway but couldn't put their finger on what it was. So, when that

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

knowledge enters their conscious mind, they feel very familiar with its content and its familiarity prevents them from falling into a fatal shock.

As you know, Peter, and as it was mentioned before in Update 15, human life, as well as anyone's life in the negative state, is vested in seeking out familiar ground, so-to-speak. This becomes orientation points for humans and others, which help them to be comfortable and at home in their own environment. In order to help humans and others realize all these facts, and in order to build a foundation and establish a safe ground on which they can make a proper choice to convert to the positive state, you first place all these factors into their unconscious mind by and through the means of the availability of this information. It prepares them to make this conclusive decision. My New Revelation, in its three sources, functions in this most important role.

This is the reason why it was constantly emphasized throughout My New Revelation that the function of The New Revelation for humans and others is not so much in their reading and applying it, at least for the time being, but in its availability. If it were unavailable to them, nothing in their entire mind would be present that could prepare them to face the reality of these factors. In that case, everything related to the discussed issues would be totally unfamiliar to them, and they would not be able to make a choice for the acceptance of these facts and for the subsequent conversion to the positive state. Should something like this happen, they would be placed into a position of choosing only that which is familiar to them — the negative state and the human life. In that case, the negative state and its human life could not be eliminated, because it would be chosen by their free will and choice as the only viable and familiar option. For that reason, the fullness of life of the positive state could not commence either — ever, and the pseudo-life of the negative state and human life would have to remain forever.

So now you know, Peter, and everyone who reads these words, why it was so vital to transmit My New Revelation, despite the fact that very few humans have conscious access to it and so very few read, accept and apply its principles and ideas.

This conversation of ours, Peter, as recorded in this Dialog, brings us obliquely to answering your question, posed at its beginning. In the present state of affairs of life on your planet, do humans still have their free will and choice preserved in them? What is their status in this respect?

As you remember from the previous conversations about intuition, it was indicated to you that most of humanity had lost their ability to be intuitive. The reason for this loss was explained likewise (see the Thirty Fourth Dialog, for example). When you make the decision to disregard the voice of your intuition, and instead, listen to and accept what is coming to you from without, at that moment, *by your own free will and choice*, you have given up or have relinquished your free will and choice to the external dependencies, in this case to the negative state. Now the negative state is your life. And because the negative state functions on the principle of impositions, it is unable to tolerate anything even remotely indicative of free will and choice. In this sense, the majority of the presently existing humans on planet Zero don't have any free will. However, because it was by their own choice that they chose to be dependent on the negative state, by their own free will, they freely made the choice not to have it; of course, under the illusion that they have it. So, the responsibility for this state of affairs in their life lies solely on their shoulders. No one else could be blamed for their choice.

It was necessary to establish this arrangement in order for the last phase of the pseudo-life of the negative state to come to its actualization and realization. As long as you have some semblance and awareness that you have free will and free choice, it would be very difficult, or even impossible to commence this last phase.

However, because everyone participating in this phase is doing so by prior agreement with Me, based on their free will and choice, from the spiritual standpoint, they are still in their free will and choice. This is a paradox, Peter. The choice not to have free will but to give it to someone or something else is by free will and choice. Therefore, in this sense, they have it. On the other hand, because the choice not to have this free will was executed on false foundations and premises, from the logical construct of this paradox, they have never lost their free will and choice because their decision in this respect was false. Anything based on falsities is not real. Therefore, it is not binding. It is only an illusion believed to be reality. Once you remove this false belief, this illusion disappears and you are right back into your own free will and choice.

This discourse gives you a full understanding why the negative state and its human life is only an illusion and why it is called a pseudo-life. Anything based or founded on falsities cannot have a true life for the simple reason that falsities are not true. Otherwise, they wouldn't be falsities. Because life in the negative state and human life is founded on falsities, they are only an illusion of life, that is, they don't have true life.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Once you eliminate all these falsities, the illusion disappears and the pseudo-life of the negative state and its human life is no more.

My New Revelation, in all three of its sources, brings this vital knowledge to everyone's awareness either directly or by availability. Because of that, it is My New Revelation, and everyone who accepts it as My True Word becomes a major tool for exposing these falsities, thus, in this sense, for the ultimate elimination of the negative state and the negative aspects of its human life. Does this clarification answer your question, Peter?

Peter: Perfectly. This clarification seems extremely important to me. Was this the reason that today I felt initially blocked before approaching My dialoguing with You?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Definitely, Peter. The forces of the negative state didn't want you to record this clarification. But, as you see, they haven't succeeded. Now I would recommend to finish for today and do some other work for a few days.

Peter: Thank You so much for this information and revelation.

Forty First Dialog

February 14, 1999

Peter: Many things are going through my mind this morning, but nothing that I can put my finger on in a tangible manner in order to ask You any specific questions. For that reason, I would like to ask You if You wish to contribute anything this morning from Your own position.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for asking Me this question and for giving Me this opportunity to contribute whatever is on My Mind this early morning — of course, early morning for you, Peter, but not for us here in the positive state.

I would first like to address the issue of human ego. As you remember from My New Revelation, the human ego, since it was fabricated from elements of pure evils and falsities, tends to always be in opposition to your true self and to My Will. Why am I bringing up this issue once again and at this particular time? It relates to your personal training in becoming My true representatives and relinquishing the role and position of your being My agents but, most importantly of being typical humans.

If you are positioned in the midst of the positive state, you cannot function properly and effectively should you still be laboring under the influence of your human ego and your human nature in general. They are contradictory to the nature of the positive state.

As mentioned in the Thirty Fifth Dialog, from time to time, I use some words in our dialoging, Peter, which may sound either offensive to someone's ears or offend their expectations, or it could be assumed that it was not I who spoke those words. In that Dialog, we already mentioned the word 'laughter' and what it provoked in some readers of these Dialogs.

Other words which were intentionally used for that purpose, designated some, if they were named by their names, as 'My loyal, faithful and devoted servant.' Do you remember, Peter, when I used that designation for the first time, what entered your mind immediately?

Peter: That some readers of these Dialogs, who are named by their names, but without such a specific designation, will feel that they are less loyal, less faithful, less devoted, less valuable, less needed, etc. In other words, that they are not on a par with a person designated as such.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

The Lord Jesus Christ: Exactly, Peter. Your professional training as a clinical psychologist kicked in, so-to-speak (excuse Me for that expression), and you instantly perceived the problem it may raise. However, at that time it was not yet appropriate to bring that issue to anyone's attention. It was necessary to give the readers an opportunity to react to that designation in order to help them realize from what position they are responding from within their own mind and feelings to it. In other words, it was necessary to trigger their typical human ego state in order to help them work on themselves and to get rid, as much as possible, of their tendencies to function, respond, react and look at everything from the standpoint of their human ego.

So what happened in this case, as you foresaw it, Peter, was that some readers who were not designated as such, felt left out and almost depressed. In other words, they responded from the position of their human ego and not from the position of being, or to use a better word, becoming My true representatives.

What does such a negative attitude tell you, Peter, from the standpoint of multiversal significance? A very spiritually dangerous tendency is set up which would indicate that I am capable of preferential treatment and that I discriminate, considering some people or humans, or any sentient entity anywhere, more valuable, more deserving, more needed, more loved, more cherished, or whatever, than some others. In other words, this tendency would portray My Nature in a totally distorted and false manner. You would look at Me as someone Who treats you in the same manner as humans treat each other.

This is exactly how the negative state wants you to perceive Me. And although I know very well that intellectually you recognize the fact that I am not that way, nevertheless, emotionally, on the level of your typical human ego, you react to such designations or similar words as any negative entity or a typical human would.

It is necessary, once and for all, to dispense with any such tendency even if it is remotely present within you. As I mentioned above, this is a training period for you, helping you to realize to what extent such reactions are possible for you to have, and to motivate you to get rid of them permanently so that you can assume your new role and position as My true representatives.

Unfortunately, this is not an easy task. Neither will it be accomplished overnight, so-to-speak. Don't forget please, that an attitude of this nature was engrained into you in your inherited genes.

However, a much more serious implication stems from our consideration of this issue. It leads to the assumption of a duality or dichotomy in the true Creation, or of My positive state on one side, and the Zone of Displacement or the negative state, on the other side. Unfortunately, this duality or dichotomy is supported by the literal assumptions of such books as the Christian Bible, the Islamic Koran and some others. In the so-called Indian holy books, at least, it is fallaciously assumed that one will be continuously reincarnating on the hell-hole called planet Earth (planet Zero in our conceptualization) until one discharges one's Karma, following which, one enters some kind of Nirvana-paradise, from which, one will then go into a transcendent state, during which one merges with some kind of God, losing one's unique individuality and in fact, ceasing to be a unique self-aware spirit and soul.

This Indian philosophy's conceptualization is a confusion between losing one's typical human ego, which is an illusion, having no true reality in itself and by itself, and how one's spirit and soul are perceived, understood and relate to this Absolute God.

It is correct to assume that this ego will permanently disappear once you transcend your human life. It is a total falsity to assume that your self-aware unique spirit and soul could merge with some kind of God with a total loss of conscious awareness of your 'I am.' If such a thing were possible to occur, it would withdraw from My Creation the awareness of that aspect of My Absolute Nature which was placed in everyone of you from the position of My Absolute State to the position of your relative state. In that case, as one by one of you would be absorbed into Me, totally losing your conscious awareness of anything related to your 'I am,' eventually all knowledge and awareness of Me would also disappear. (After all, how do I manifest the knowledge of My Absolute Nature, or the availability of My Nature to the relative beings? Through and by the individuals' 'I am.')

So, gradually and slowly the entire Creation would disappear with all its sentient entities, and I would be left alone to regurgitate My Creation, because, in other words, it would mean that I had devoured My entire Creation. Something like that is nicely depicted in Greek mythology, in which, Saturn is described devouring his own children.

What kind of God would I be if such foolish, illogical and irrational assumptions were to be true? Do you see My point?

Peter: Yes, I do very clearly.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

The Lord Jesus Christ: On the other hand, in the Christian and Islamic conceptualization, if one is evil, one will go to hell and spend his/her life there to eternity in the most miserable tortures and suffering. Only some very good and virtuous individuals would escape this horrid fate and be admitted by Me in My heaven, which I would have prepared for them. And this situation would last forever, without any chance or possibility to change it or amend it. At least in the Indian conceptualization you would be lost forever without any suffering or misery. Of course, in some ways, this is not too much of a better deal than what Christians and the followers of Islam offer you. In one case, there is no loss of life to eternity, in the other case there is a loss of self-aware life to eternity.

Peter: If I were only given the choice between these two alternatives, I would, of course, choose the Indian alternative. It is much better not to be at all than to be painfully aware of one's miserable and suffering pseudo-life to eternity.

The Lord Jesus Christ: And you would be right in choosing that alternative, Peter. Fortunately, neither of these alternatives are available as ultimate choices because both of them are totally and completely false if seen from the proper spiritual perspective and from their eternal continuation. In some limited respect, these two alternatives have validity only on a temporary and transient base. One chooses to go to one of the Hells in order to learn something important or to bear the consequences of one's negative and evil deeds whatever they may be. Because the results of such deeds have only temporary and relative value, — after all, they were committed by a relative individual, in a relative time — so is the retribution and punishment, because they have a temporary and relative duration. It would be a total and the ultimate unfairness and injustice to punish someone who is relative with eternal condemnation for something that was done in a relative time and condition by relative and temporary means as well as temporary manifestation.

In the other alternative, one may lose one's conscious self-awareness on a temporary basis if the situation warrants it, for the purpose of illustration and learning about the futility, uselessness and unproductiveness of such states; or if there was some kind of prolonged illness, its spiritual correspondence requires a cure that can only be accomplished in a state of total temporary unawareness — until this cure lasts.

But let's continue with the discussed issue. So, how does this conceptualization of My Nature portray Me, and what does it assume? First of all, that I am a God who discriminates and gives preference to some certain individuals who do what I command them to do, and I forever reject and condemn into eternal punishment in the Hells some other individuals who don't do what I command them to do. And because both states are designated as being established to last for eternity, without any change in their status-quo, in that sense, logically speaking, there is a duality or dichotomy in being and existence. Such a false logical assumption leads to the conclusion that the negative state is real, eternal, equal and absolute in the same manner as the positive state. For that reason, no matter what, it cannot be eliminated, ever.

These assumptions have been fed into humanity and all creatures of the Hells and the Zone of Displacement for several thousands of years or longer. Humanity and all other creatures have been brainwashed by the negative state into believing this falsity for so long that it has been taken for granted that this is the way it is or is going to be, to eternity. And because it was proclaimed, and is being constantly proclaimed, in My Name, as though it is My will for it to be that way, that no other conceptualization or understanding of this fact is possible or even conceivable.

Unfortunately, this false assumption, whether Christian, Muslim, Indian or whatever in origin, because it has lasted for so many centuries, has become genetically encoded in all the genes of humanity and other creatures elsewhere. For that reason, it will take an insurmountable effort and a long time to eliminate it from their lives.

Peter: I understand this situation very well. However, if this is the case, why did You permit it to become the foundation on which the negative state operates and influences its followers and humans?

The Lord Jesus Christ: For a very simple reason, Peter. Can you imagine a scenario in which everyone who participates in the negative state would know in advance that, first of all, they are in it on a voluntary basis, that it will not last forever, that it is only an experiment and that no matter what they do, they would never be lost, or condemned to suffer and be tortured to eternity? What kind of an experiment would it be? How valid would the outcome of it be? What would anyone learn from that kind of situation, a situation in which everything would be based on **'as if'** or **'let us pretend?'** It would be game-playing, a fake situation in which everyone would know exactly what the outcome would be in advance, without any chance to learn anything valid and impactful

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

that would give them an indisputable, convincing and firm foundation on which they could reject the life of the negative state and choose life in the fullness of the positive state.

Secondly, any learning at all which has a lasting effect, and which gives you a full sense of something on which you can build a solid foundation for your spiritual development and choices, must be based on valid and real premises that give you an assurance that what you are learning is derived from the reality of its being and existence and not from some kind of a fake setup, or game-playing, or pretentious conditions.

Peter: But what about now? The negative state and its human life are still real, at least in their view, and if they are learning from Your New Revelation about these facts and about the outcome of Your original permission for them to come to their adverse condition in the first place, wouldn't this prevent the validity of this learning?

The Lord Jesus Christ: The situation is entirely different now, Peter. Don't forget that their false assumption, fed to them by all those so-called holy books and their respective religions, has been engrained into their genetic code. The many centuries of brainwashing to which they have been subjected all this time are not as easy to eliminate as you would like to believe. When you have such a firm belief about the rightfulness of your assumptions, no matter what they are, and if it is part of your genetic makeup, you will have the tendency to disregard anything that contradicts them and you would outrightly reject anything different from them.

It is only in the initial setup of the experiment, before anything of this nature is in place, that the knowledge of the conditions — under which the negative state is permitted to come to its adverse condition — is obliterated from everyone's conscious memory. It is put into the deepest possible unconscious part of their overall mind and made totally inaccessible until the opportune time.

At one point in time, when the life of the negative state and its human life enters the very beginning of its last phase, or shortly before its last phase is about to commence, My New Revelation, which reveals all these facts to everyone everywhere and everywhen, is granted to everyone. In some places and states this revelation becomes a property of their full conscious mind; in others, for the majority of humans and some other creatures elsewhere, it is brought to the accessible part of their unconscious mind. The reason why this knowledge is brought to everyone's attention or made available to everyone in the negative state

and to humans at this particular time, is because, first of all, the negative state has entered its last phase and the learning about it has almost exhausted its usefulness, and secondly, because a revelation of this nature has to be firmly embedded in everyone's mind so as to make it a means by which the false assumptions about its being and existence (pseudo-being and pseudo-existence) are completely and totally nullified.

Everyone who will hear My voice in their mind during your rereading of these Dialogs, will hear this truth very clearly. As they are hearing what we are talking about in this respect, the subject of our conversation will contradict anything that they had learned or known about it. Gradually and slowly, this new knowledge and its truth, will effectively undermine and erode the previously believed false assumptions that they had in this respect, and eventually, it will replace it permanently.

However, because their prior false knowledge and assumptions in this respect are an integral part of their genetic makeup, perpetuated for many millennia, it will require a long period of time for this new correct and true knowledge to nullify the effect of the old false knowledge and assumptions, and for the new one to take a permanent effect. Hence, the reason this is being revealed at this particular time — to give enough time for this to happen.

But let's go back to the issue of discrimination and preferential treatment. From everything that was revealed about the discussed issue above and throughout My New Revelation and its Updates, it is obvious that everyone in the being and existence of My Creation, as well as everyone in the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero, has equal value, need, consideration and role, or whatever they all have. Because of the very important services they render in any position and role they are in at each particular time, — and I am repeating this many times — they are all equally valuable, needed, respected, loved, cared for, accepted, recognized and appreciated. And you all, as My true representatives, are equally My loyal, faithful and devoted servants. Such terms and suppositions as discrimination and preferential treatment, or placing anyone over someone else, could never enter My Mind to eternity. It is the nature of the negative state and human nature to do so and to ascribe it to Me as well.

Because of these facts, if you continue harboring these types of feelings or thoughts, you would still be under the influence of the negative state which gets to you by the means of your typical human ego. You are being humbly asked by Me to stop functioning from the position of your human ego, and take an example from Me, from the way I look upon everyone

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

and everything. Otherwise, no difference would exist in your attitude in this respect and the attitude of everyone else in human life and elsewhere. I need you in your role, as My true representatives, to help Me set up an example by your own life, how it is to relate to everyone from the position of My positive state and from Me personally. In ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ*** you were asked to surrender your human ego to Me so that I can take care of it for you. Now is the highest possible time to do so. Now this requirement needs to be implemented to the fullest possible extent and abilities you have in this respect.

This is the reason why this issue is being discussed at this particular time and why certain statements, seemingly offensive to some of you, were being made in these Dialogs and why the reasons for making them in such a manner are being brought to your attention. As you see, everything has its place and time. Nothing is without reason why it is being presented to you or why you are being reminded about it at this particular time.

Up to this point, or until My New Revelation brought these facts to everyone's attention, it was necessary to permit many to think in terms of the negative state, as well as in terms of your human nature and its ego, in order to illustrate the difference between the way the members of the positive state function and the way humans and other creatures function. The members of the negative state and many humans always assumed that everyone in the positive state, including Me, look down at them as dirty, filthy and inferior; and with total contempt, rejection, condemnation and a judgmental attitude. These terms are, of course, their projections because this is the way they ultimately feel about themselves. But because they are incapable of admitting to themselves that they feel that way about themselves, they project those feelings onto Me and onto the members of My positive state.

One of the aspects of the nature of the currently ongoing shift, is bringing this factor to everyone's attention in the negative state. As they are being informed about this issue, the members of the negative state will begin to feel about the negative state exactly the same way as they are projecting it onto the positive state and Me. It will enable them to develop an aversion toward the entire negative state and all aspects of its nature. Instead, they will start to yearn and desire to experience the life of the positive state. At the same time, the moment this very important shift occurs in their perception regarding the true nature of both the positive state and negative state, respectively, it will be possible to transfer the available knowledge about everything revealed and disclosed

about these issues from the unconscious regions of their overall mind, to its fully conscious external region. At that point they will fully realize the voluntary status of their participation in the life of the negative state, of their choice to be illustrators and demonstrators of a different lifestyle than the lifestyle of the positive state, in order to establish a valid and firm foundation for everyone's ability to choose the fullness of life in the positive state.

With this realization, the members of the negative state and humans proper will finally accept the fact that in My eyes they have always been as valuable, as needed, as loved, as appreciated and as respected as everyone else in the positive state and everywhere. At that time, such terms as discrimination, preferential treatment, bigotry, racism and everything related to them, will disappear from everyone's mind for good and forever.

Peter: To tell You the truth, I can't wait for this to happen. Sometimes I feel so tired, constantly being on alert about what I write or say or how I write it or say it to other people in order to avoid making them feel rejected or put down, or offended or whatever.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Unfortunately, as long as they have a tendency to look upon anything you say or write, or what I say and you write down, from the position of their typical human ego, no matter how we say it or write it, someone will inadvertently feel offended by it, or feel inferior and unwanted. It is inevitable for this to happen if they involve their ego into it. Why do you think we have devoted this entire Dialog to this particular issue? To warn everyone who reads this not to fall into the trap of their negative human ego. To repeat: This is an integral part of their training in becoming My true representatives.

If you carefully analyze what was said above, from it you can deduce another possible alternative about how the negative state could or may end permanently. By providing proper and truthful knowledge to all members of the negative state on a continuous basis, and by transferring the original agreement about all these issues and factors — from the deep inaccessible regions of their mind to its accessible unconscious regions and subsequently, with the help of My New Revelation and your rereading its three sources into their external conscious awareness and recognition — you gradually replace all the falsities and distortions which were the base and feeders of their pseudo-life. At one point in time, all that pseudo-knowledge would be erased and totally eliminated and replaced with true knowledge, coming from the true reality of the true life of the positive state and Me personally. Having such new

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

knowledge would make it possible for them to convert to the positive state.

This particular alternative, if it is taken at all as a means for eliminating the negative state, would play an important role anyway, even if some other alternative would be chosen. At the end of implementing any other possible alternative, this one would be utilized to eliminate all false and distorted knowledge and information and to replace them with the correct and true ones.

And this will be all that I would like to offer you for today in this respect. Have a nice and pleasant day.

Peter: Thank You very much for this offer.

Forty Second Dialog

February 15, 1999

Peter: This morning I have a couple of questions. However, before proceeding with my questions, I would like to ask You if You have anything to add or to clarify regarding anything You wish.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for your kind offer. Yes, I do have something to add to the topic of our discussion yesterday. It relates to you personally, Peter. You have always wondered why, during the time you were writing your books containing My New Revelation, you had never been put into a position that would have allowed you to devote your full-time to your task in this respect. During all that time you had to attend to your professional job on a full-time basis. No matter how much you asked Me to provide you with some type of financial resource (for example, winning a lottery) in order to avoid being bogged down in your regular full-time job, your request was never answered or granted.

An important spiritual reason existed why you were put into such a stressful and burdensome situation. It relates to the issue of preferential treatment, discussed in the Forty First Dialog. The first reason relates to the exemplification of the fact that although you are My true representative, who is in a particularly special position as the transmitter of My New Revelation, I don't treat you differently from anyone else. The negative state would have no recourse or reason to point a finger at you, saying that because of who you are, I prefer you to all others. If My treatment of you were different, more preferential and more considerate, and if I were to listen to you and arrange for you to win that lottery, for example, the members of the negative state would immediately conclude that I am like them. After all, it is they who established such a mode of treatment. In that case, what would be the difference between them and Me and the members of My positive state? For that reason, in some ways, your life, Peter, has been much more difficult than the life of some other people. That way, no one could blame Me or you for giving you preferential treatment. I and you agreed to this arrangement before you incarnated on planet Zero.

The second reason relates to a typical human sanity issue. During the transmission of My New Revelation, you were employed full-time. In your employment, you provided continuous clinical supervision for many professional people. You taught, advised and guided them in their clinical work with seriously mentally and emotionally afflicted people. As a professional person, you were highly respected, listened to and sought

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

out. Your logic, reasoning, understanding, patience, the kindness in your approach and the way you treated them were an exemplification of clarity, cohesiveness, logic, reason, stability, balance and maturity. None of these traits would have indicated to anyone that you were insane, delusional or mentally ill. All these professional people, whom you supervised, are a living attestation that you are not some kind of a crazy, insane guy who is unable to recognize the difference between right and wrong, between reality and delusions, between sanity and insanity and between rationality and irrationality, etc. Because of that, no one could or can accuse you that you were or are a mentally ill person and that therefore, all your writings are the fruits of your insane mind. An insane mind would be unable to function in the so-called normal world for a minute, especially the setting in which you were working during those times. The nature of your work required you to be highly objective, clear-headed, rational, intelligent and fully cognizant of the reality of the world and environment in which you worked and functioned.

If I were to put you in a situation in which no one out there could witness these important traits of your personality, Peter, it would be easily concluded that you are a mentally ill person with religious delusions and delusions of grandeur. In other words, they would diagnose you either as someone suffering from delusional disorder or paranoid schizophrenia. That would discredit the verity of your books and their content as being My New Revelation. This way no one in the negative state or on planet Zero or anywhere else has any reason to label you in such a manner. This is especially true about the inhabitants of the Zone Displacement and of some other dimensions. With the human situation it is a little different. Regardless of anything, they could still consider you a mentally ill person. Such is their nature.

The present situation with you, Peter, is different. You have reached the legitimate retirement age. Like anyone else, you worked to the very end of the legal age when you could retire. Again, no one can say that you were treated preferentially by Me, because I didn't provide you with anything extra that would have allowed you to retire at an earlier age. Again, I and you agreed to this arrangement before your incarnation on planet Zero.

This is all that I would like to add to the discussed issue. You may now ask your questions, Peter.

Peter: My first question relates to the acquittal of President Clinton and the spiritual significance of this act from Your standpoint and the

standpoint of the members of Your positive state and the New Universe. In other words, what is behind the scenes?

The Lord Jesus Christ: As you know, Peter, any such act has an important spiritual correspondence. In this case, it is not that much President Clinton who matters personally, but what his position and role represents, as President of the United States, and to what the United States themselves correspond and represent in the scheme of events and happenings. Not all aspects of these factors could be revealed at this time. The situation behind the scenes is still volatile, unstable and explosive, although a step was taken in the right direction. From the onset of My answer to your question, Peter, I want to make it very clear that the issue here is not whether President Clinton was guilty or not guilty as charged but the spiritual implications of the whole process as it unfolded during that time.

In some ways the entire process reflected the situation that existed and was taking place in relationship between the pseudo-creators and the renegades. It would be easier for you to conclude that President Clinton represented some faction of the renegades. However, you would be wrong in your conclusion. No matter what kind of a person President Clinton is, or how bad or good he is, in his position as the President of this country, he represents the entire United States, which is under the control of pseudo-creators. Because of this fact, his acquittal signifies or represents the acquittal of this country from the accusations of the renegades and their claim to take it over. In this sense, the renegades sustained their first serious defeat. You may ask, Peter, and I see this question in your mind, of what did the renegades accuse the United States?

In order to answer this question, you would have to know to what the United States of America spiritually corresponds. As you know, Peter, in most instances, each such correspondence is two-fold. One has a positive connotation, the other has a negative one. In the positive connotation, the United States of America represents or corresponds to that region of the spiritual world and its inhabitants which embodies freedom, independence and everyone's right to be themselves, with the privilege for self-determination and for the unique expression, impression and manifestation of their creativity and incentives. In other words, this is a country of unhindered opportunities for everyone to be productive, creative and inventive.

In the negative connotation, the United States of America represents or corresponds to the false spirituality on which the pseudo-life of the negative state is founded. This false spirituality is rooted in money and

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

commercialism on one side, and in fallacious religions and their numerous sects on the other side. No other country in the world has so much material riches and so many diverse and numerous fallacious religions and their respective sects as this country does. They undermine and destroy in humans any sense of true spirituality as the proper foundation for the true life.

Due to these factors, the renegades accused the pseudo-creators and, symbolically speaking, the United States of America in the person of Clinton, of double standards and hypocrisy. The renegades say that the presently existing lifestyle in this country is more congruent to their nature than to the pseudo-creators' and that therefore, they have the right to be in control of this country and all the regions in the Zone of Displacement to which this country corresponds.

And here comes the issue of President Clinton's acquittal. Following his acquittal, President Clinton made a brief statement in which he apologized to the people of this country, admitting his wrongdoings. Once again, he asked for forgiveness and expressed his deep sorrow for putting this country through so much suffering. By doing that, because of his representation and spiritual correspondence in his person, the United States of America and all other regions of the Zone of Displacement to which it corresponds, refuted any claims that the renegades made against them.

In this particular connotation, it doesn't make any difference if President Clinton was sincere or not in his own personal inner self about the feelings or words he expressed. This is not the issue. The issue is that such important words and feelings were expressed. Because they were uttered to the face of the entire population of planet Zero, they set up an important foundation on which the renegades' claim in this respect could be refuted and they could be defeated on this particular front.

Peter: Half of the population of this country, as the polls show, believed that he was sincere and the other half that he was not; although a majority expressed satisfaction that he was acquitted.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Look at this situation in the following manner, Peter. Spiritually speaking, one half represents the view of the negative state, the other half, the view of the positive state. The members of the negative state are totally unable to accept that anyone can be sincere about anything. They judge it from their own nature, which is founded on insincerity. The members of the positive state always want to accept that whenever someone asks for forgiveness, he/she is always sincere about it.

Do you remember what we said before in one of the first Dialogs? That it is better to err on the positive side than on the negative side. Don't forget this rule — ever.

In a typically psychological frame of interpreting this phenomenon, the half of the population which didn't believe in President Clinton's sincerity projected their own tendency to be insincere about some things. Because of that, they don't like to admit that anyone else can be sincere in this respect. That way they assuage their own guilt, which they would have if they were to admit someone else's sincerity.

But there is another issue to this entire situation. Look what happened at the very end of President Clinton's brief speech. When he turned around, leaving the podium from which he addressed the press, someone shouted a question at him. He stopped, hesitated and came back despite the fact that his aides, who were standing in the background, were indicating to him not to turn back because they were afraid that he would say something which would spoil the whole outcome of his well-rehearsed speech. However, he disregarded their advice and in a totally spontaneous manner, responded with one of the most-needed-to-be-heard phrases, indicating to the entire world that if you are forgiven, you should also forgive others.

It doesn't matter whether President Clinton really meant it or not within his own mind — that is between Me and him. What matters is that the entire world, as well as the entire Creation and the Zone of Displacement, heard his important message. These words were desperately needed to be said by someone in the position occupied by President Clinton and to what his position spiritually corresponds. If President Clinton would have been a representative of the renegades, as some of you surmised, he would have never been able to utter such words. This would be contrary to the very nature of the renegades. However, the pseudo-creators would be able to say such and similar words because, many of them, in their present state of mind, are really sorry for what they unleashed on the entire Creation. They asked for and received My forgiveness. And because of that, they are also able to forgive.

The reason why it was so important that someone like President Clinton said those words without any preparation, spontaneously and coming from his own volition, was because this world has more than enough bloodshed, vengeance, retaliation, violence, non-forgiveness, rejection and all kinds of misery and suffering. It was time that something entirely different was put into the mind of humanity — the need to

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

forgive and to be forgiven. This is the reason why I said above that the acquittal of President Clinton was a step in the right direction. If he had not been acquitted, such words ***from his specific position and to what it corresponds*** — and this is very important to emphasize — would have never been uttered, and humanity and all mentioned regions elsewhere would be taken over by the renegades. In that case, some of the very unpleasant scenarios for the ending of the negative state, as described in the previous Dialogs, would have to be chosen. I can assure you that you don't want to make such a choice.

So, as you see, the fundamental issue here is the issue of **unconditional** forgiveness. The negative state and humanity is still lacking it. They are still bent on punishment, cruelty, vengeance, retaliation and retribution. But now, thanks to the entire setup with President Clinton, they heard something they didn't want to hear, but which registered in their mind, nevertheless. And this is important.

Talking about unconditional forgiveness and also mercy, which precedes forgiveness, I would like to remind you of two events from My life on planet Zero which happened during My First Coming. Actually, one was an event, the other was a parable.

The first case relates to a woman who was caught in the very act of adultery (John 8:3-11). So, the Pharisees and the scribes brought her to Me and asked My opinion about her situation. They hastily pointed out to Me that Moses, in the law, commanded them that such should be stoned to death. Do you think that they really wanted to know My opinion? They wanted to catch Me contradicting their laws so that they might have something with which to accuse Me. They were hypocrites. So, what did I tell them? *"He who is without sin among you, let him throw a stone at her first."* In the terms of My New Revelation, we would say that he who is without problems, let him/her be the first to condemn her. Hearing these words, being convicted by their conscience, they all went out one by one, beginning with the oldest down to the last. But the most important part of this event is when I was left alone with the accused woman. I asked her, "Woman, where are those accusers of yours? Has no one condemned you?" She answered Me that no, no one had. Then I told her, "Neither do I condemn you; go and sin no more."

Here is a beautiful illustration of My True Nature. Everyone on your planet and in the negative state in general, represented here by the hypocritical scribes and Pharisees, by rigidly clinging to their literal laws, would like to condemn to death anyone who, in their eyes, is a breaker of their laws. In this case, President Clinton. Of course, it would

be the death of his career and not his physical death. And that could be much worse than physical death. Unfortunately, even some of you, My representatives, were bent on punishing him and removing him from office without really understanding the entire setup for why his behavior was brought to light for the entire planet, not to mention to all other regions of the Multiverse. In doing so, for that moment you inadvertently and unintentionally sided with the negative state, in this case, with the renegades.

Your spiritual duty in this respect would be to respond the same way as I responded to the situation with the mentioned woman. Because President Clinton was found not guilty as charged, in that sense, the accusations against him were nullified, and he stands before Me without his accusers. For these reasons, neither I accuse him of anything. The only thing I can tell him is, “Go, do your job, and don’t repeat the same mistake again.” Thus, giving him another chance to make amends and to correct his mistakes. Whether he will do so or not is a different story. The choice is his.

As My true representatives, you are being asked right now, by Me, in all humbleness and humility, (***of course, as always, only if you choose so by your own free will and choice, and in no other way!***), to reflect My attitude in your own life, behavior and attitude in this case, as well as in any other situations and cases, so that you can become a beacon of bright light of **unconditional** mercy and forgiveness in a world where no such concepts are recognized or retained. And if there is any tendency to forgive, it is only conditional, accompanied by some strict demands, requirements and conditions, as reflected, for example, in your probationary judicial sentences. That way you will be able to set up a condition for the entire humanity, from which it will be able to derive and establish the ability to be forgiven and to forgive in the life of humans. These two concepts are inseparable. Forgiveness can be meaningful only under two conditions: One, that it be unconditional without any strings attached; two, to be forgiven and to forgive at the very same time — as was indicated so nicely by President Clinton; and of course, throughout My New Revelation, the existence of which, he has no conscious awareness.

What would happen in a case when someone is forgiven but, in turn, doesn’t offer forgiveness? This situation is nicely described in the parable of the Unforgiving Servant, as recorded in Matthew 18:21-35. This parable depicts a servant who owed his master ten thousand talents. In the value of this time, let’s say \$100,000 dollars. But as he was not able to pay, his master commanded that he be sold, with his wife and children

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

and all that he had, and that payment be made. The servant fell down before him, saying, 'Master, have patience with me, and I will pay all.' So, the master of that servant was moved with compassion, released him, and forgave him the debt without any strings attached. But what does the forgiven servant do? He goes and finds one of his fellow servants who owed him a hundred denarii (probably a few hundred dollars in your time), takes him by the throat and demands to be paid what is owed to him. The fellow servant fell down at his feet and begged him to have patience and said that he would pay him. But he would not forgive him and he went and threw him into prison until he should pay the debt. So when his fellow servants saw what had been done, they were very grieved, and came and told their master all that had been done. Then his master said to him, 'You wicked servant! I forgave you all that debt because you begged me. Should you not have had compassion on your fellow servant, just as I had pity on you?'

What were the consequences of that servant's inability to forgive, after he himself was forgiven? He was delivered to the torturers (in our words, to the Hells) until he should pay all that was due to his master. Or in our words, until he bears all the consequences of his unwillingness to forgive no matter what. And the warning that I gave following My presentation of this parable, was very clear: The same thing will be done to you if each of you, from your heart, do not forgive your brother his trespasses, whoever he is. In this case, President Clinton. Here is the caveat: Unless you are willing to forgive unconditionally, by that attitude, you will be unable to receive or to internalize My unconditional forgiveness. Your unwillingness to forgive, blocks you from or closes the doors through which My unconditional forgiveness can enter you and perform the necessary work to eliminate the negative state from your life. This is the way it is and there is no other way in this respect.

Let Me tell you something, Peter: My role is never to be a prosecutor of anyone no matter what they did or didn't do. I am always in the role of someone who defends. It is the nature of the negative state to prosecute. The members of the negative state like nothing better than to prosecute either their own members or, even with greater delight, the members of the positive state or you, My representatives. In some ways, metaphorically speaking, you can conceptualize the entire negative state as being a prosecutor of the positive state and of My entire Creation and Me as their defender.

In the case of President Clinton, because of the spiritual correspondence of his position and role in the scheme of things, his prosecutors were, in fact, the renegades. I defended him because it was My role to do so. It is

an integral part of My Nature to be in that role no matter how much or how little any prosecuted person is guilty as charged, in your view.

Remember please, the foundation of the entire positive state stands on unconditional mercy and forgiveness. It reflects My Absolute Unconditional Mercy and Forgiveness which is being constantly and unceasingly generated from My New Nature and emanated into everyone in My positive state. Because the nature of the positive state is rooted in this condition, which is one of the most important conditions, anyone who is unwilling to forgive unconditionally or to accept My unconditional forgiveness, is unable to enter My positive state. Even if such an individual were to enter My positive state, he/she could not survive its sphere and atmosphere. It would not be conducive to the survival of such an individual.

The key word here is ‘**unconditional.**’ Why is it that we put so much emphasis on this word? From the position of your typical human nature you look at things very differently than how they are looked at by Me and the members of My positive state. In your human view, from the position of being in the midst of the negative state — your prior position — you are habituated to evaluate everything in human life and in the negative state in general as something very evil, bad, putrid, unforgivable, despicable and intolerable. Thus, the need to judge it and to reject it. It is appropriate to reject it but it is not appropriate to judge it. Don’t ever forget for what purpose the negative state was permitted to come to its adverse fruition. Don’t ever disregard the services it provides for all in the process of their learning about its nature. Don’t reject the fact that by the nature of its pseudo-life it will make possible for everyone to make the right choice for the fullness and completeness of life in the positive state. And even more, don’t ever forget that all participants in the negative state volunteered upon My own request to illustrate and demonstrate such putrid, evil, negative, despicable or whatever, pseudo-life.

What does all this tell you? As mentioned in My New Revelation and its Updates, they agreed to partake in illustrating such a life only under one condition, which I offered them personally: They will be forgiven **UNCONDITIONALLY** for whatever they would do no matter how horrible, inconceivable, evil, negative, putrid, terrible or insane it would be — ***after illustrating and demonstrating all consequences, outcomes and results of such deeds.*** Only one reason exists for the Hells’ pseudo-being and pseudo-existence — to illustrate such consequences, results and outcomes. You can see from this logic that once this illustration and demonstration is completed, no need will exist for

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

the continuation of the Hells and their negative state. At the moment of the closure of this illustration and demonstration, My unconditional mercy and forgiveness will set in and will bring everyone out of the Hells and any other places throughout the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero.

So, as My true representatives, you need to learn to stop looking at the negative state from within its pseudo-being and pseudo-existence — which puts you into the position of judging and condemning it, and to look at it from My position and the position of My positive state — which puts you in a position of showing mercy to it and unconditionally forgiving everyone who partakes in it. Look at it as an experiment and not as something that has any other meaning or significance.

It is time for everyone to realize how false and distorted is the conceptualization of the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the negative state and its outcome, as offered by the human religious systems, their holy books and everyone else. It is time to break down their accursed explanation and brainwashing about its nature and the purpose for which it was permitted to appear. It is time for you to take My position and accept My explanation about all these issues and factors related to the negative state and human life. This is not an easy request. You have been in the opposite position for so long that it became a habit for you to look upon it from the commonly accepted position held by everyone, or most of everyone on planet Zero and elsewhere. Unless you are willing to change your position and accept My explanation and position in this as well as in all other respects, you won't be able to serve Me as My true representatives. The revelation about these factors and their acceptance by you as related to the nature of the negative state is an integral part of the currently ongoing shift. And in one limited sense, the situation with President Clinton is a test set up for you to see on which side you will place yourself — on the side of the prosecutors or on the side of the defendant. You have a choice in this matter. This is very important, more important than you can surmise at the present time.

Peter: Thank You very much for bringing this to our attention. I feel that I should postpone asking my second question to some other time. Am I correct?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, you are correct. We may continue tomorrow if needed and feasible. In the meantime, have a nice day.

Forty Third Dialog

February 16, 1999

Peter: After I finished recording the Forty Second Dialog, it was obvious to me that, perhaps, You would like to add something else to the topic discussed in that Dialog. Am I correct?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, you are correct. Once again, I would like to bring the issue of judging others to your attention. I don't mean it in the sense of the judicial system's rendering judgment in criminal or civil cases. Instead, I mean it in the sense of how humans evaluate or look upon their fellow humans in their everyday encounters or interactions with them. The issue here is how you treat each other and from what position or stance you do that. Up to this point, the tendency in this respect has been to concentrate on or seek out the negative aspects of your personalities and behavior. Being in the human skin, and looking on this issue from the position of life in the negative state, it is much easier and 'natural' to recognize or to be influenced by the negative aspects of each others' behavior and attitude. On the other hand, it is much more difficult to ascertain, accept or recognize any positive or good aspects of such behavior and attitude. This is the way it was set up to be in the negative state and in human life.

Knowing that this is the case, and seeing how humans treat each other, during My life on planet Zero, I concentrated very pronouncedly and empathetically on this issue. I outlined for them the proper mode to relate, and how to treat each other. Take for example, My statement, as recorded in Matthew 7:1-2: *'Judge not, that you be not judged. For with what judgment you judge, you will be judged; and with the same measure you use, it will be measured back to you.'*

What is this statement telling you? The responsibility for the outcome of any treatment you receive from others is ultimately determined by how you treat others. At first glance it will be difficult to recognize this to be so, because outwardly you may be treating other individuals very well and in a cordial manner and yet, in return you receive a totally different, opposite or even very negative treatment. In that case, you are totally amazed by this treatment and you ask yourself why they treat you that way, because in your eyes you gave them no cause to relate to you in that way.

This is a totally external evaluation of this situation, coming from without. In this type of evaluation, the spiritual factors as well as

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

subliminal factors, are not being taken into consideration. What you have to understand about this situation is that your mutual interaction is taking place not only on the external human level but also simultaneously and synchronously on the spiritual and subliminal level. To put it in other words: Your interaction has a multidimensional occurrence and you relate to each other not only on the external human level but also on an internal spiritual level, as well as on a multidimensional mode. Take for example, Peter, a conversation you are having with Dan or anyone else. In your conscious awareness you have no other impression or experience but that you are interacting on the level of planet Zero; Dan is sitting in New York and you in Santa Barbara. You have no access or awareness that your conversation and interaction is going on, at the very same time, on other levels of being and existence, in other dimensions, and especially and particularly in those regions from which you originated and to which you are connected on a 24-hour basis. Also, as of recently, on the level of the New Universe.

Because of this important factor which underlies any of your interactions, and because the reactions to any actions or behaviors are always determined by inner dispositions, attitudes and subliminal cues, the response to your treatment is never determined by how your treatment of one another looks like on the external level. So, you might be very nice, kind and cordial to another person on the external level but internally you might have negative feelings, thoughts or dispositions about him/her. In that case, the other person's reaction to your treatment would not be based on its outward signs but on your internal attitude and subliminal cues, and especially how it is manifested and perceived on the other levels.

On the other levels, no discrepancy is possible between your external behavior and the treatment of each other, and your internal, factual attitude and the way you feel about each other. Subsequently, the true expression of this genuine, real and unpretentious treatment on that level is projected into the external reaction of the other person's treatment of you, which is incongruent with your expectations, based on your conclusions that, 'I am treating this person so nicely and kindly and look at how he/she responds.'

So, when I told My listeners not to judge so that they are not judged in return, and that it will be measured back to them with the same measure they use, I was primarily talking from the multiversal levels of understanding of the mutual relationships, warning them to be very careful how they relate to each other, not only from the external position and behavior but most importantly, from the internal and spiritual level.

In your case, you have to be very careful how you perceive, think, feel and relate to other individuals on the other level and on the level of your within in order not to trigger responses of a negative nature in them. This is one of the reasons why you were advised throughout My New Revelation to concentrate on the positive aspects of each individual, on My presence within them — in their ability to choose and to change, and not on the negative ones. After all, remember, and I am reiterating this, no one is absolutely evil. There is no such thing as absolute evil. Only Absolute Good exists.

For that reason, even the most evil person you could think of that has ever existed in the history of planet Zero and human life, or even in the history of My entire Creation and the Zone of Displacement, has some remnants of goodness from My presence, buried somewhere deep in the furthest recesses of his/her mind. You are advised to concentrate on those remnants instead of on his/her evil side because, at one point in time, those remnants will be utilized to build a foundation for that individual on which he/she will be able to relinquish his/her evil nature and acquire the positive one. Why do you think I retain those remnants in each individual, including in the so-called devil and Satan? Even the devil and Satan, or what those words represent and correspond to, are not absolutely evil because they are not absolute. Your assignment from now on is to switch from concentrating on the negative aspect of anyone's personality and behavior, no matter how repulsive it is, to concentrating on his/her remnants which are of a purely positive nature and in which I am present. That way you will be helping to prepare the above mentioned foundation on which their liberation from the evilness and negativity of their lives will be accomplished. Up to this point, before you became My representatives, and were My agents, it was appropriate to notice and to translate their negative aspects to the positive state for the purpose of learning and comparison. However, this is no longer required from you because your role has totally changed in your position as My true representatives.

However, there is another point to this issue. If you judge someone, if you measure someone by your own measurements or in other words, if you project your own external opinion on how others are or what they are, or what position they are in; and if you project your own expectations of how they should be, or how they should behave or relate to you or to anyone else, by the factors of your attitude and expectations in this respect, as a consequence, you are setting yourself up to receive the very same type of attitude and treatment from others. The way you have to understand this statement is that by your own projections and expectations, you send out a subliminal message to others, which

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

message they perceive and understand on their internal level as your desire and need to be treated exactly in the same manner as your projections and expectations demand. In other words, they would conclude on their inner level that you don't want to be treated or related to in any other way but what you are projecting onto or expecting from them.

This is what My words *'judge not, that you be not judged; and with the same measure you use, it will be measured back to you'* really mean and signify.

Why am I bringing this issue to your attention at this particular time? Two reasons exist for this need. One, you need to be trained, as My true representatives, to align your internal attitudes, behaviors, dispositions, reactions and relatedness with your external ones. Otherwise, you could not properly function from the position of your placement in the midst of the positive state. Such discrepancies are possible only from the position of the negative state and human life. It is their nature to be that way. As long as you were positioned in the midst of the negative state and human life, such behavior was the only possible and feasible one. Otherwise, it would have been difficult for you to survive.

However, with the currently ongoing shift, your repositioning requires a different mode of behavior and attitude. An alignment has to be made with how things are set up in the positive state. Because it is being brought to your attention how all kinds of interactions take place on many levels of being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, and how the ultimate cause for any external reactions is anchored in those other levels, by the factor of this information, you are being given a means or tools by which you will be able to gradually train yourself in accomplishing this important alignment. It will take time, a lot of time. It will not happen overnight, so-to-speak. The result of your life-long training on this planet to be the other way, habituated you to be in misalignment between your internal states and your external behavior, or how you manifest yourself externally in the eyes of other people. You need to overcome this bad habit.

Two, from the above interpretation of My Words, which I said at that time, it is obvious that many of My statements of that time relate to this time and not to that time. One of the reasons why it was permitted that no one on planet Zero has taken My Words of that nature seriously, as well as many other Words I said at that time, and why humans have continued to be judgmental and unforgiving, was because the need to implement them is now and not then. As My true representatives, by

your own free will and choice, and only by your own free will and choice, you are being put into the position to implement, illustrate and demonstrate those Words.

In view of these facts, it is not by coincidence that Christianity, in most instances, had disregarded My Words, and instead, put Paul's rules and regulations into the foundation of their doctrines, as recorded in his Epistles. If you carefully analyze the content of his Epistles, you will notice how much of the wrath of God, judgmental attitudes, elitism, preferential treatment and similar negative factors are contained in them. At the very same time, parallel to those, and in contradiction to them, you will find likewise a lot of very loving, kind and considerate words. In a logical construct, when you put together such contradictory statements, you nullify the meaning of the positive ones, retaining only the meaning of the negative ones. This logical construct yields to the law on which human nature was fabricated and stands. Whenever negative aspects are emphasized in such statements, and if they are accompanied by positive ones, the tendency of human nature would be to disregard the positive ones and to concentrate on and accept only the negative ones. This is the reason why most of the time, preachers like to preach from their pulpits about the wrath of God, fire and brimstone, the Judgment of God, the preferential treatment of certain well-chosen individuals-saints, and about similar negative attitudes of God toward those who don't obey His commandments.

This Christian conceptualization of the nature of God, based on the Old Testament and Paul's teachings, completely blocked out the awareness in the human mind of the true spiritual reality of the positive state and of My Nature. As mentioned above, this was permitted to happen in order to give an opportunity for the illustration of a lifestyle based on a distorted and falsified understanding and acceptance of Who I am, what My True Nature is and what the positive state is all about. At the same time, this block was utilized for the purpose of timeliness in bringing about the fulfillment of everything that was contained in My Words, uttered at that time. In other words, it was not time to fully implement them until now.

You have to understand one important thing: Some of My Words, spoken at that time, were addressed to the inhabitants of other worlds, and only to them. Some of them had relevance only to that time and to no other times. Some of them were meant for the current time, during the shift currently going on and not for that time or any other time. And finally, some of them were meant for all times and for all inhabitants of all dimensions and pseudo-dimensions as well as for all humans.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

At this point in time we'll emphasize My statements from that time, which are applicable for this particular time, and specifically for you as My true representatives. As you see, you are being put into the position of fulfilling them. This is the major reason why we are talking about them now.

One of the spiritual dangers of misunderstanding what My Words meant, to whom they were addressed and to what times they should apply, is that their untimely application or implementation may lead to a total failure on the part of those who are improperly applying them on themselves, during their own time. In order to avoid this extreme danger from happening on an all-out scale, it was permitted for Paul's teachings to take precedence over My Words, spoken at that time, so that humans and others would be prevented from falling into the traps set up for them by the forces of the negative state in this respect.

Peter: It makes perfect sense to me why this is the case. It also clearly indicates why certain things have to be brought to our attention at this time even though they happened or were said a long time ago.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Exactly, Peter. It also tells you that time and place, from our standpoint are totally irrelevant. It is only in your world and in your mode of linear thinking that the factors of time and space become reality. Up to this point, you have been functioning from their perspective and not from our non-time, non-space perspective. As you see, the issue here is not when or where it was said or implied but that it was said or implied at all. In its application it may be projected either sometime into the future, or to the present or even into the past. And this leads us to another question, derived from your telephone conversation yesterday with Dan and Olga of New York. The question was: What did I do before My Creation was created and before any sentient entity was conceived?

As you see from the way this question was formulated, the factor of time was applied to it. The word '*before*' indicated that there was a before time and then there was an after time. It improperly assumes that I was creating in time and space. As it was mentioned in My New Revelation, in the Big Book, in Chapter 21, time and space were the end product of My creative efforts and not their beginning or building blocks. They were introduced only in the final phase of My creative effort at the conception of the occurrence of the physical-matter dimension of My Creation. This process is extremely difficult to explain to your human mind. Look at the words we are using here and how limited they are by the time-bound sense. We are using such words as '*at the beginning,*' '*the end product,*'

'conception,' 'occurrence,' etc. No matter what, to your mind they are time-space bound. Nothing exists in your mind which would even remotely approximate how all these things happened and what I was doing *'before'* the very first sentient entity was created. Was I really alone and, in some ways, lonely? If you look at it from the standpoint of the process of creation, then, yes, I was alone but not lonely.

However, if you look at it from the standpoint of My Absolute State, apart from its Absolute Process, then in My State, the answer is, 'no,' I have never been alone or lonely because in My Absolute Mind, which is not time-space bound, you were all present as My unique ideas with whom I was in the process of interacting on a continuous basis, planning out how things would be from the standpoint of time and space as well as from all other non-temporal and non-spatial conditions. So, in that State you have always been present as My exquisite ideas and their potential manifestation in the outwardness of My Absolute Attention. What you have to understand about this situation is that there is a state of inwardness and a process of outwardness. In the state of inwardness you all existed as My ideas and as potentials for becoming the process of outwardness or outside of Me. While in the state of inwardness, I was in constant communication with you as My ideas. It was during this state of your existence when you were asked the most important question of your life, whether you wanted to be and exist as a unique manifestation of those ideas in the state of outwardness, outside My Absolute State, and as unique individuals in whom I put the same attributes as I have, only in a relative condition.

Once you agreed to become your own being and existence, before it happened, together we planned out and entered into a mutually binding agreement about all conditions, situations, lifestyle, relationships and everything else related to your own unique manifestation at any level of My Creation (and later on, in the pseudo-creation) in which you would be needed and placed.

Do I change My Nature in the process of these events or do I evolve in a similar manner as you do or as any sentient entity does? Any time something new is conceived, My Nature changes accordingly. The Absolute State of My Nature never changes. It always is, meaning 'I AM' always is in an Absolute sense. This condition can never change. However, the process of My manifestation is always in the state of change and evolvment. Whereas in My Absolute State of 'I AM' I am always the same, in the process of My manifestation, as the process of My State, I am never the same. The state of life is always 'is.' The process of life always proceeds. Because of the dynamic nature of this

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

process, nothing can ever be the same at each moment of its proceeding. Only in its state, because it always is, that 'is,' by its always being, can never change its mode of being. However, the mode of its existence is always changing and therefore, it is never the same. As you see from this very difficult discourse, the state is equated with being, whereas the process is equated with existence.

So, in answering your, and Dan's and Olga's question, it is obvious that both conditions are fully applicable to My Absolute Nature: I never change but, paradoxically speaking, I am also in a constant change. Can you understand this paradox and how it applies to everything?

Peter: With difficulties, but intuitively I am remotely grasping it. Talking about timeliness and time and space, my original personal question, which I already wanted to ask You yesterday is, why is it that during my scanning the fourth chapter of ***Who Are You and Why Are you Here?*** into my computer I felt such a tremendous, almost physical aversion toward its content, toward all those steps, procedures, prescriptions, rituals in the security checks as well as toward the words 'spiritual hypnosis and spiritual self-hypnosis' with a subsequent strong aversion toward my professional work as a clinical psychologist and everything related to it, until the time of my retirement?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Isn't it obvious, Peter, from what we discussed above and in all other Dialogs? First of all, that type of position and the work related to it exhausted its usefulness and served its purpose. You cannot go back in time. However, the major reason for this aversion is in your possible temptation to revert back to that type of work for purely financial reasons. You are afraid that you will not be able to survive financially with your retirement allowances. This is the reason why you wanted to maintain your professional license in California. You were telling yourself that, 'well, if anything happens, I will always be able to go back into making money as a clinical psychologist.' So, an aversion was induced into you about your past work in your professional field in order to prevent you from ever going back into it. In your case, Peter, it would be a spiritual regression. There is nothing for you in that life to manifest or to exemplify any longer. It would be a futile waste of your time and precious energy. You are needed now in a totally different role and position.

Also, all those methods described in the fourth chapter of that book or in the fifth chapter of the Big Book, are no longer necessary or needed. At that time, when the positive state was, symbolically speaking, very remote from or had no connection with the negative state, in order to

circumvent that condition, it was necessary to design such steps. Don't forget please, that at that time, the road to the state of your within and to the positive state was very narrow, difficult, arduous and almost impossible. Many roadblocks were in place, guarded by various demons and evil and negative spirits whom you needed to encounter and deal with. They were placed there in order to discourage you and make it very difficult for you to proceed on that road and to reach your destination. Because of that, complicated and very precise security checks and rituals had to be developed in order to countermand the efforts of those demons and spirits, as well as of your own pseudo-mind.

At the present time however, when the positive state was put right into the midst of the negative state in an insulated and protected condition, things were simplified in this respect. All you have to do now, is to shift your attention and your awareness to its presence and to My personal presence with you and within you. Because of that, all those procedures and rituals became totally obsolete and unnecessary. And not only that, but they became subsumed by the negative state so that if you were to try to use them, they would bring you in contact only with the negative state and its inhabitants, who would pretend to be and appear like Me and the members of your true spiritual family. Your response to that situation, Peter, brings an appropriate aversion within you in order to warn you to never again go back to using those methods or to practicing spiritual hypnosis or spiritual self-hypnosis or any other form of psychotherapy in which you used to be engaged. Does this answer your question, Peter?

Peter: Yes, thank You very much. Is there anything else we should discuss today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, perhaps we should touch upon another topic of your discussion with Dan and Olga of New York. It relates to the issue of why I, having incorporated Human Nature within Me, would not come to your level *physically* and speak to you in the physical speech, and not in mind speech as we are talking right now, Peter. The three of you correctly answered that question. However, for the sake of all others, let's relate those reasons. As long as you are in the human body, and because with that body you are still positioned in the negative state, even though your spirit and soul are no longer there, you cannot be in the state of your ultimate choice. Should I appear to you physically and talk to you in the external human speech, I would lock you forever into the ultimate choice, the choice which you are currently manifesting. In that case, no other choices would be available for you to make. Thus, under these conditions, My appearance to you in this manner would put you

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

into a position of imposition and of no further choice. In that case, you would lose your freedom of choice and you would be excluded from making any further choices. For the final all-inclusive choice to be made, you need to have all participants in a position of freedom of choice. If someone out there is in the position of not being able to make any further choices, ever; in that case, no one else could make that ultimate all-inclusive choice either. Someone's choice would be missing from the cache of everyone's choices. In this case, your choice would be missing from it.

As long as the negative state exists and as long as human life in its present condition exists, My physical appearance, even if it were limited only to My representatives, would lock the negative state and human life into their condition forever without any possibility of getting out of their condition. The illustrative and experimental mode of their pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, the only source of their pseudo-life, would be violated and cancelled by My physical presence. In that case, without having any other alternative, and without being properly prepared for life in the positive state, they would eternally perish. Such an outcome would be very negative in itself. In that case the negative state would ultimately win because I would endorse it by My sheer physical presence in the externals where the negative state was originated and put into motion in the first place. Don't forget, Peter, that under the presently existing conditions, there are still many more choices to be made by all of you. Even though now you have chosen to be My representatives and/or followers forever, because of those numerous choices facing you, you still can make a different choice, as needed, if needed and if feasible. Your presently existing choices are made in the condition of the transition which is going on during the spiritual shift currently happening. Anything which is chosen during a transitional period, cannot be appropriated to you in an ultimate sense. However, My physical appearance to you would prematurely put an end to this transitional period, when neither you nor anyone else is ready to exit it because you are not yet facing the ultimate choice. So, this is the way the situation is at the present time. Once you are in the position to make such an ultimate choice, then and only then My physical presence could be manifested in your personal lives. And this is all for today, Peter.

Peter: Thank You very much for Your beautiful explanations.

Forty Fourth Dialog

February 17, 1999

Peter: Although some questions are on my mind, I would like to ask You first if You have anything to clarify or add to anything You wish.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for asking Me to do so first. I do have some additional comments primarily related to the topic of our discussion in the Forty Third Dialog.

The first comment relates to the issue of discrepancies that you might have in your manner of treating other individuals between your external, outward behavior and your internal, private thoughts and feelings about them. If you have some negative opinion about someone, and internally in your own thoughts and feelings you express your dislike about them, considering them to be negative, maybe even evil, but externally you behave nicely and cordially toward them, you are setting yourself up for being treated in the same manner as your internal disposition is toward them.

The way you have to understand this statement is that it is not necessarily the same individual who will reciprocate your internal treatment of him/her. It may or may not be the same person. What happens in cases like that is that all your negative thoughts, feelings, attitudes, behaviors, etc., which you have about anyone on an internal level, and on the level of your interactions in the other dimensions, are captured and registered in a region of the negative state's pseudo-universal consciousness which specializes in gathering such states from various human minds. From that region they can be released and imparted on someone else who would fulfill the requirements of *'with the same measure you use, it will be measured back to you.'*

A good example of this situation can be found in the experiences you might have in your various encounters with other people. Take for example, the workshops you were conducting for professional people at the University of California in prior years, Peter. You were always baffled why someone in the workshop would take an intense dislike to you and your methods of teaching without any apparent reasons. Or why when you entered the classroom, without saying a word, you would find yourself instantly disliking someone or you were instantly disliked by someone. You had never met that person before, you had never talked to or interacted with that person, and externally, objectively, you had no reason, nor that person had a reason to have such a seemingly

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

unexplainable attitude. Yet, there you are, you simply cannot stand him/her or he/she cannot stand you. And no obvious or clear explanation is available to you for why this is the case.

As you see from this example, your negative internal attitude and state of mind about anyone, if it is discrepant with your external behavior, can be triggered unexpectedly during your interaction with some other individuals toward whom you don't have any apparent or hidden negative feelings, thoughts or attitude. In other words, your internal disposition toward that person is congruent with your external behavior. And yet, despite the fact that you are so nice and kind toward that particular person, both internally and externally, that person treats you very negatively. And you wonder why, because you gave him/her no reason whatsoever to treat you that way. Now you know why. Your prior internal, negative and inappropriate thoughts, feelings, attitudes and behaviors, expressed toward someone else on another level, were put into the position of repaying back to you, by someone else, in the exact same manner and mode as you exhibited sometime in the past.

Peter: Thank You so much for this explanation. For the first time, I am able to understand why this was the case so many times in my life. At that time it really didn't make any sense.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter. The reason I am bringing up this issue again is to help you realize this fact so that you may train yourself to have congruency between your inner states of mind and their external expressions. This is a requirement which needs to be put into the foundation of your role and assignment as My true representatives. By learning to harmonize those two, you will be able to effectively empty the cache of such negative states that your mind kept in the above mentioned region of the Zone of Displacement, to which, you are likewise connected. That way, there would be nothing there from you personally which could be utilized to repay anything negative back to you.

At the same time, you have to realize that any such negative states of mind may be very effectively utilized by the forces of the negative state, especially by the renegades, to target you and make your life miserable; thus, impeding your work for Me as My true representatives.

I want you to be aware that the present state of affairs with the renegades, as related to your position and role during this shift, is such that they look out for anything at all they can find to harass you and interfere with your work. The obvious and crude methods of such interference are no danger for you because you can instantly recognize

what types of games they are playing with you. The ones that are not so obvious, and which are disguised and hidden, could become a problem for you.

If you carefully examine your life, the way you think, feel, act, react; things you do, things you like or dislike, etc., you can find something in them that could be very effectively utilized by the renegades to target you. As mentioned previously in one of our Dialogs, the most spiritually dangerous situation exists in those conditions, habits, thoughts, concepts, ideas, attitudes, or whatever you have which are considered by you to be normal, appropriate, positive, good, innocent and godly, but are not. However, because you consider them to be so, it could never enter your mind to question the validity and appropriateness of their nature and how they really influence all aspects of your life. For that reason you exclude them from the process of your self-examination and you never consider them to be any danger to you in any way.

It is these types of characteristics of your life and behavior which could become a means for the renegades to target you very successfully. Finding out what they are, the renegades would be able to utilize them in such a way that subtly and imperceptibly, you would put the most prominent emphasis on them, making them the most important aspects of your life. By doing that they would effectively redirect your spiritual, mental and physical energies into them so that you would have nothing left to perform your most important work in the role and position of being My true representatives. Because you consider them to be normal, proper, positive, good and godly, it would never occur to you that you could be completely off your spiritual path. Should anything like that happen, you would lose your way and the renegades would get to you.

So, it would be advisable for you, if you wish and choose it by your own free will and choice, to turn yourself to Me, asking Me to help you to bring to your attention if there is anything in your life, attitude, behavior, thoughts, feelings or whatever, which you consider proper, positive, good, appropriate and godly, but is not so. And not only that — and this is very important — but also, if there is anything in your life which you consider improper, negative, bad, wrong and ungodly, but it is not so. Either situation may be utilized by the renegades to target you. After all, either view on those factors is false or distorted. Anything false or distorted becomes the renegades' property. By that view and consideration you could inadvertently invite them to enter your life and to exert their influence on you.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Peter: This is a very timely warning. Especially in view of the fact that it would never occur to us that something in us, or in our attitude, views, opinions, behavior, habits or whatever, could be considered either proper, positive, good and godly, or, on the other hand, improper, negative, bad and ungodly, whereas neither consideration is correct.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter. This is the reason that I urge you to undertake such an exploration in order to make everything in your life, right. That way, the forces of the negative state will have no recourse in interfering with your work or in influencing you in an adverse manner.

Peter: Are there any other comments You would like to make?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you for asking, Peter. Yes, I would. It relates to the issue of the possibility of My physical appearance to you as My representatives while you still reside in your bodies on planet Zero. From what was said about it in the Forty Third Dialog, it is obvious that if someone from the spiritual world would physically appear to any one of you, or to anyone on planet Zero besides you, and if that someone would claim to be Me or any of the members of your spiritual family, or any other entity disguised as someone holy or a saint, or an angel, archangel or whoever of a highly respected position, such an entity would be an imposter, a fake, a deceiving spirit who acquired this ability from the new pseudo-universe for this type of physical manifestation. No matter what such an entity would claim, no matter what he/she would say or do, no matter how many miracles he/she would perform, the role and the purpose of such an entity for a physical appearance would be to mislead, contaminate and divert you from your spiritual path and to impede your work for Me.

Remember please, as long as the negative state is active and functional, and as long as you are in the human life, such a physical appearance could never take place on My part or on the part of anyone from the positive state. The reasons for this impossibility were explained in the above mentioned Dialog.

It is quite conceivable that such physical appearances would be arranged by the forces of the negative state. This effort on their part is an integral component of their takeover and pseudo-winning on your planet. To tell you the truth, in actuality, they are frantically working and experimenting on establishing a tangible possibility for such physical appearances to take place. After all, what are the most potent and convincing methods but those, especially if they are accompanied by all

kinds of miracles performed publicly in front of all humanity? Being that humans are so hungry for miracles, in their gullibility and desperation, they would buy into them without any hesitation or questioning their true source.

However, you are being forewarned that such things could happen very easily and they would be so convincing that you could fall into this particular trap. Believe Me, it wouldn't be difficult not to buy into such convincing methods, especially if you see immediate positive results. But here is another caveat: Never look at what is happening on the scene but look behind it. The reality is not on the scene but always behind it. In other words, consider the real source of those happenings and not the happenings themselves. Also, consider the purpose for which those happenings were set up and not their manifestation or outcome.

Unfortunately, human nature is such that it takes everything on face value, from its external position, by judging its nature from its manifestation and outcome and not from its purpose, goal and intention, and from the reasons why it is happening at any particular time. In other words, in their nature, humans consider only those things to be real which are presented to them on the scene. In their presently existing condition they are unable, as well as unwilling, to recognize the fact that what they are looking at, what they are watching on the scene, what they consider to be reality, is, in fact, only an illusion which has no place in any known reality. However, that's the only thing which is familiar to them and therefore, at the same time, the only thing which is acceptable to and accepted by them. Everything else, which is real and is behind the scene, eludes them.

On the other hand, you who have the privilege to have and to know this vital and crucial information, are put into the position to discern, distinguish and understand that which is real and which is not, what is on the scene and what is behind it, what is from the deceptive game-playing of the forces of the negative state and what is not, etc. Therefore, you have all the necessary training and abilities to avoid any such traps or being attracted to any such seemingly positive, good and beneficial results offered to humanity by the forces of the negative state. And very often, they even do it in, and under, My Name.

So, be prepared for any such events to materialize themselves on your planet during your life-span there. In your particular case, you may be tempted by the renegades with some kind of very harmless means, seemingly having no negative but only beneficial effects. A good example of those is something which you see in the lives of the so-called New Age

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

people who use all kinds of external means, medicines, herbs and practices which are considered healthy and harmless, but could lead toward you being contaminated by the ideas of pseudo-spirituality, on which they are founded. Be aware and beware of such possibilities!

Peter: Thank You very much for this warning. At this point I would like to bring to Your attention a concern expressed by Dan and me about the spiritual correspondence of dark and very black coffee. The symbolism of blackness and darkness may be perceived by some African nations and African-Americans as racist and discriminatory against them. May I ask You humbly to elaborate on this issue?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Gladly, Peter. Your and Dan's concerns are proper and need to be addressed. The issue here is the proper understanding of the spiritual correspondences of how, why, where and to what they apply, and from what source they originate. Take for example, the discussed strong black coffee drink. It was said that a dark and black color has some correspondence to the negative state in the sense that the negative state has no light or proper understanding of anything. In this sense, the negative state keeps itself in total darkness. It hides from the light of the positive state in order to conceal its true nature. Thus, its favorite color is black. For this reason, it is not by coincidence that even in the typical human art works and various shows, movies, television programs, etc., anything negative, evil, hellish, etc., is depicted in dark, black colors. On the other hand, everything positive, heavenly, good, kind, etc., is usually depicted in white, bright colors. The positive state is light itself, because it is enlightened about all things and has understanding about all things from Me Who can be conceptualized in this connotation as the Absolute Light. Thus, nothing is hidden from Me.

As you see from this description, correspondences don't derive from non-sentient forms, such as for example, animals, plants or inanimate objects. Instead, they derive from the sentient mind. The state, condition, dynamics and process of the sentient mind produces ideas of itself or its nature which are projected from the state of its own within to the state of its without. In the without they appear as solid objects, in the forms of animals, plants and inanimate entities, reflecting the nature and content of that mind — whatever it may be. Thus, in this sense, you cannot ascribe to any sentient entity, no matter what color of skin he/she has, anything of that nature reflected in the without. The producer of correspondences cannot be also its receiver and reflector except as their feedback of how those correspondences are manifested in the external environment. Only non-sentient forms can be that way. Any sentient

entity is in a state of self-awareness of his/her own 'I am.' That state is the originator and producer of any correspondences by virtue of its dynamic process and continuously emanating energies which carry the specificity and unique expression and impression of that 'I am.' Because of that, a sentient entity, in its own unique and unrepeatable and unduplicated nature, cannot be its own correspondence at the same time as he/she sends out his/her ideas about that nature in an outward direction, where it appears in some solid animated or inanimate form.

The black and dark people or humans are sentient entities. Because of that, their skin color doesn't depict any type of correspondence and it cannot have any negative or positive correspondence. It is what they project from their own unique 'I am' which has either a negative or positive correspondence, respectively, or to put it also in a different connotation, what they, or any sentient entities regardless of the color of their skin, perform or do with such correspondences. Let's take for example, the same coffee we were talking about. Coffee comes from the seeds or beans of the coffee plant. The coffee plant is a tropical evergreen (not black or dark) shrub or small tree of the genus *Coffea* of the family Rubiaceae. In their natural state, those beans are green. So, what happened to that green color which has either a positive or a neutral connotation? By the process of human technology, it was roasted. By that process it was turned into a dark, black color which has a negative connotation. What does this situation tell you, Peter? What was done here with something that originally may have a positive or neutral connotation or correspondence but was turned into something that is its opposite? This metaphor is very clear: Humans and members of the negative state take anything positive and turn it into negative. This is a depiction of the process of the activation of the negative state: Take everything that the positive state has and turn it into everything negative, bad, putrid, falsified and distorted.

However, in order to make it acceptable and desirable, it is presented to everyone as something pleasing and stimulating to the eyes, taste, smells and all other senses. Otherwise, it would not be accepted and consumed with such fervor. And here is the catch: By the process of roasting those coffee beans, when you brew them, you turn them into a highly addictive substance, containing numerous cancerous and other types of unhealthy chemicals, on which you become so dependent that you cannot take a step without them. When you are at that point, you have become a slave of your dependencies. You have lost your freedom and the negative state got to you. You have become a slave of your own negative correspondences. Now you are really dark and black regardless of the color of your skin. It is not your skin as such that counts here but your

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

attitude and dependencies on the external non-sentient factors that count, and are such.

As you see from this example, Peter, the factor of the existence of all correspondences derives only from the sentient life forms. The external non-sentient life forms cannot exist without them. Thus, in this sense, it is what the sentient entities do with those non-sentient life forms which makes them reflect various states and desires of their mind either of the positive or the negative nature, respectively. By their own choice, the sentient entities, in our case, humans, very often enslave themselves to their own correspondences, becoming totally dependent on them.

Peter: Thank You very much for this explanation. Is there anything else You would like to add or discuss today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: No, Peter, this will be all for today. Have a nice day.

Forty Fifth Dialog

February 18, 1999

Peter: After I finished recording the Forty Fourth Dialog, and after thinking about that part which talks about the proper understanding of the meaning of correspondences, I became very confused. My confusion led me to my usual doubting about whether what I wrote is really coming from You. My doubting led to the usual nonsense that I go through every time it happens. Because of that, before asking some other question, may I ask You in all modesty, humbleness and humility, to clarify for me that part of Your explanation which relates to the origin of correspondences and to what, to whom, and under what circumstance they apply?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Your confusion, Peter, is not by coincidence. If you were not confused, you would bypass this issue and you would go straight to the question which is on your mind this morning. And yet that question of yours has a direct relevance to the issue of correspondences and how to understand and apply them.

Your confusion stems from the misunderstanding of the source, origin and projection of correspondences and their reflection in the outside environment. Also, from the statement that a sentient entity cannot be his/her own correspondences because he/she is their originator and projector. However, in your mind, you assumed that every object and subject corresponds to something or someone on all levels of being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. The assumption that there are corresponding factors to everything in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, is correct in essence. The assumption that objects and subjects are such correspondences in themselves and by themselves, is incorrect.

The confusion is between the function of those objects and subjects, and the objects and subjects as objective entities themselves. It is not the objects and subjects that are correspondences but instead, it is their function, representation and the purpose for which they were put in their own state in the first place that have correspondences.

As you see from this differentiation, there is a state of any object and subject, and there are their function, representation and purpose. Take for example, such an object as a diamond ring, so much cherished by humans. In its state as such, in its chemical components, it has no meaning. Because it has no meaning in its state, it doesn't correspond to anything. However, the role, position, function and purpose, which are

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

solely ascribed to it by the human mind, all have very significant spiritual correspondences. This is a good example of how correspondences originate and how the function of external objects is determined by the sentient mind. If no such determination would be forthcoming from the sentient mind, no one would ever pay attention to the meaning of the objects and subjects in themselves, because they would have none.

Furthermore, your confusion, Peter, also relates to the discussed black or dark human skin. In this sense, it relates to the human body in general. The question is, does the human body and its organs have spiritual correspondence or any correspondence at all? You have always assumed that it does. As you know, Swedenborg and many other mystics ascribed many prolific correspondences to it. However, in My statement yesterday, I indicated to you that skin color doesn't depict any type of correspondence and that it cannot have any negative or positive correspondence because its carriers are sentient entities. This statement would contradict anything that was revealed through Swedenborg in this respect. The contradiction is a seeming one. It is not the human body, its organs and its skin that correspond, but their function, role, purpose and the services they provide for the human spirit and soul, or the human mind in general.

In this sense, it is not the color of the skin that has any meaning, but its function and the reason why the black or dark color of the skin was chosen to manifest in the external world. From this standpoint, both suppositions are correct. Looking at the human skin and its color from the position of the function ascribed to it by the human sentient mind, it has a very important spiritual correspondence. Looking at it from the position of its being an object as such, without any projected purpose by the sentient mind, by itself and in itself, it has no such correspondence.

Here we have two objects. One is the human skin and the other is the human body in general. What are their spiritual correspondences? It can be derived only from the function they perform during the life of one's spirit and soul on planet Zero. The function of the skin is to hold all bodily organs together and to protect them from the contamination, poison, harshness and pollution of the external environment. In other words, it keeps the bodily organs together and in a healthy condition. Thus, it has a protective and preventive function. This specific function of the human skin has a spiritual correspondence to the physical multiverse which functions in the role of such a protector and preventor and which holds together the entire Creation. In other words, the physical multiverse is the skin of My Creation. In a higher sense, the

function of the skin corresponds to My Absolute Role as Absolute Protector and Preventor from any harm to be done or sustained by anyone anywhere or anywhen in being and existence, and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, and for holding together My entire Creation in one cohesive, orderly, lawful, elegant and meaningful mode.

On the other hand, what is the function of the human body in general, and its spiritual correspondence in particular? In its function, the human body can be considered a very specific environment formed from its spirit's and soul's ideas for the purpose of providing them with a suitable form in which they would be able to manifest themselves, to function in the external planetary conditions and to become tangible and solid. The human body is a means through which that specific spirit and soul discharge their life in a condition where no other means for such a discharge exist. The human body spiritually corresponds to all the means through which and by which any sentient mind is enabled to manifest its unique and specific life. In a higher sense, it corresponds to any environment in being and existence, and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, in which, sentient entities are able to manifest their lives and function properly in accordance with their purpose, goal, mission and assignment.

In the highest spiritual sense, the human body corresponds to My sphere, atmosphere and environment, from which I function and manifest Myself to My Creation.

Of course, as you know, all such correspondences as depicted above have their negative meaning as well. Nevertheless, they are spiritual correspondences and they all derive from the functions of sentient minds, no matter where they are situated or reside — in the positive state or in the negative state, respectively.

So, to summarize our discussion about black or dark human skin, we can reiterate for sure that its color, as such, doesn't constitute any negative or positive correspondence, respectively. However, looking at that color from the standpoint of its original function and from the standpoint of the purpose for which it was chosen by the sentient mind in the first place, we have a significant correspondence. In the original human life setup, the dark skin functioned as a protection from strong sun rays. It prevented the skin from sustaining painful burns, among other positive functional things. So, as you see, in this sense, this color or its function, had a positive connotation and correspondence. Later on, as anything else in human life, it was turned into something negative, giving rise to discrimination, bigotry and racism. Similarly, as with the mentioned

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

coffee beans, which originally were of a green color, and subsequently, by human endeavors turned into the black and harmful one; the human black or dark skin was ascribed inferior qualities, leading to the enslavement of African people and giving them and their black color an unjust and very negative connotation.

Of course, a more important spiritual issue here is not what the function of black skin is, but why anyone would have chosen to incarnate on planet Zero into such a condition. The positive purpose of this choice can be found in the illustration and demonstration of the fact that no matter what kind of external environment and outward form of manifestation one chooses, they are not the most important and decisive factors in determining his/her spiritual orientation, inclinations and directions, but his/her inner dispositions, character and nature. Therefore, anyone, no matter what color, shape or form, has an important role to play in the destiny and outcome of sentient life in general, and human life in particular.

The negative purpose for this choice can be found in the illustration and demonstration of the fact of how such insignificant and unimportant external factors can become a means for the most cruel, harsh and sadistic treatment and what happens when these insignificant and unimportant factors are considered to be the most significant and important. The learning here is very clear: Never ever consider anything different than what it is in its essence and substance because otherwise it will lead you into the same situation and condition that the human life has been manifesting throughout its entire history.

Does this answer eliminate your confusion, Peter? Or do you need any more clarification and explanation?

Peter: Yes, it does; and I thank You very much for bearing with my stupidity and limitations.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. However, I wouldn't consider it your stupidity. Maybe limitations, which are inherent in the structure of your human mind. So, don't be so harsh on yourself. Okay, you may ask the question which has been on your mind.

Peter: My question relates to one of the statements which You made during Your stay on planet Zero and which, in its literal sense, doesn't make any sense. It seems so cruel and unreasonable that I wonder why it was said at all. At the same time, my question is whether the meaning of that statement has any relevance to the currently ongoing shift and to us personally, as Your representatives. The statement in question is

recorded in Matthew 5:29-30. I quote, *‘And if your right eye causes you to sin, pluck it out and cast it from you; for it is more profitable for you that one of your members perish, than for your whole body to be cast into hell. And if your right hand causes you to sin, cut it off and cast it from you; for it is more profitable for you that one of your members perish, than for your whole body to be cast into hell.’* You know, this statement also gives a lot of problems to all those fanatics who cherish the literal sense of the Bible so much. They don’t know what to do with it. Sometimes, they grudgingly and unwillingly have to admit that maybe, you didn’t mean it literally. Otherwise, they would have to walk around with plucked out eyes and cut off hands. Would You be so kind so as to shed some light on that statement?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Gladly, Peter. This is an excellent confirmation of the fact that in most cases, the literal interpretation or understanding of the Biblical statements has no sense. Not only does it not have any sense but it can lead to some very harmful consequences. And although none of the mentioned religious zealots ended up literally plucking out their right eye or cutting off their right hand, in some very rare cases of mental illness, particularly in schizophrenics, it did happen that way. You have to look at that statement of Mine in the context it was made. It relates to a statement made in a previous verse, verse 28, and I quote, *‘But I say to you that whoever looks at a woman to lust for her has already committed adultery with her in his heart.’* The interpretation of the true meaning of verse 28, you can find in ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***, Chapter 20, pages 633-634 (English version, Second Printing). Any reader of this Dialog would be advised to reread those pages or even the entire Chapter 20. It is not necessary to repeat it, because here we will be dealing with a different aspect of the statement recorded in verses 29-30.

The relationship of verses 29-30 to verse 28, is nicely illustrated in a story by the great Russian writer, Tolstoy, in which he describes a saint-monk who lived in a cave and had frequent visitors from aristocratic circles who came in order to hear his pearls of wisdom. One such visitor was a beautiful lady who was making an all-out effort to seduce him and have sexual intercourse with him. Feeling a very strong sexual pull toward her and knowing that he would not be able to resist her seductions, he took an ax and cut off his finger in front of her. His act horrified her so much that she never again tried to seduce him or to come back to see him.

But was it really necessary for him, or anyone else for that matter, to take such an extreme measure in order to avoid the sexual feelings he

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

experience toward her based on her seductions? From this example, you can clearly see the kind of consequences to which the inappropriate understanding and interpretation of My Words may lead.

Now is the time to correct this misunderstanding and misinterpretation. Let us look at the real meaning of that statement and its relevance to the presently existing situation during this shift.

Notice please, that the emphasis was placed on the right eye and the right hand. What are the functions they perform in your life, and especially on the right side? The obvious conclusion is that the eyes enable you to perceive things in your external environment, and the hands enable you to manipulate things in your external environment. However, because here we are talking about the right eye and the right hand, the issue is much deeper than that. Your ability to see, recognize, understand and accept the real truth is depicted in the positive connotation and correspondence of the function of the right eye. In other words, it is your ability to distinguish between right and wrong, and between the true reality and the false one, or between falsities and distortions and the real, pure and uncontaminated truth, or in the highest sense, between Me as the only True One God Indivisible and all other false gods.

If you put yourself into the position of being tempted to disregard the true reality of the being and existence of the positive state, and in a higher sense, of My Absolute Being and Absolute Existence, and if you choose to accept your human life as the only reality in being and existence, and that, life, any life, is not generated from My Absolute Life, but from someone or something else, then you are advised to get rid of such a tendency, symbolically depicted here as plucking out your right eye, in order to avoid the possibility of condemning yourself to hell. In a more symbolical way, this suggestion indicates the need to get rid of that idea implanted in everyone's mind, that they have the right (***right eye!***) to reject Me as the Absolute Source of their life — or of any life at all. In that case, it is better not to have that idea in your mind (***your right eye!***) than to be in danger of accepting it as the only reality, and as a consequence, to find yourself in the negative state with everything else contained in your mind, represented here by the words '*your whole body.*'

After all, if you were to take it literally that your body could be cast into hell, it would mean that your physical body could survive to eternity. Such a conclusion refutes the logic of the reality of your body's limitation to only your physical life during your stay on planet Zero. Everyone knows that their body is either burned and turned into ashes or buried in

the ground, where it disintegrates into dust or its elemental particles. So, it is obvious that I didn't speak about the human physical body but about its function and purpose as in the manner described above, before you posed your second question, Peter. This is the reason why I mentioned before that your confusion about correspondences and how to interpret and understand them has a direct relevance to your question, Peter.

On the other hand, the function of your right hand corresponds to the factor of power, determination, vitality, potency, vigor, life force energy and strength, which underlie your ability to do things, perform various tasks and succeed in all your endeavors. Because it is the right hand, it clearly indicates that such power, determination, strength, vitality, vigor, potency, energy and everything related to them is rooted in the being and existence of the positive state. In the highest sense, it indicates that power, strength, vigor, determination, potency, life force energies, and everything related to them, derive from, and are made possible by My Absolute Power, Potency, Strength, Vitality, Vigor, Determination and Life-Force Energies and everything related to them.

Should you be tempted to reject these facts, and should you ascribe any of them to any other source other than to its true originating one — that is, to Me and to My positive state — then it would be better for you if you get rid of accepting such a tendency; or symbolically speaking, it would be better for you if you cut off your right hand than choosing to accept something which would deprive you of all your power, determination, strength, vitality, vigor, energies and everything else and place you into hell with everything else you have.

This factor also relates to that idea, contained in every sentient mind, that they may choose to reject Me as being the only source and emanator of those characteristics which correspond to the function of your right hand.

On the other hand, the function of the left eye and the left hand has a similar correspondence in relationship and position toward the negative state.

However, there is another point to the discussed issue. Because of the literal interpretation of My statement at that time, everyone assumed that I was talking about a literal physical human right eye, a literal physical human right hand and a literal physical human body. And yet, in that statement or requirement nothing even remotely exists that would relate to anything physical in nature, or to the nature of the human physical body and its organs.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

The question is then: What was I talking about? First of all, during those days, because of the spiritual conditions that existed at that time, I was simultaneously talking to the members of the positive state who were in contact and interacting with the pseudo-creators and their minions. As you remember, at that time, before their lockup, the pseudo-creators had full access to the positive state, to its outward degree or sphere. A tremendous effort was put out by the pseudo-creators and their agents to recruit the members of the positive state of those regions to their cause. Many in that region of the positive state were hesitating, being tempted to consider the pseudo-creators' offer, thinking that the pseudo-creators' ideas might be right. In other words, they were looking at the promises and offers of the pseudo-creators as something feasible and possible.

If you take the meaning of the preceding verse in Matthew 5, verse 28 into consideration, their hesitation and potential for being seduced by the pseudo-creators was establishing a condition within them which would give rise to lust for the negative state in their hearts, depicted in that verse by the word 'woman.' In that case, they would commit spiritual adultery. As a consequence of such act, they would fall out into the Zone of Displacement, into one of its hells.

My statement functioned as a warning for them not to fall into that condition and not to be seduced by anything which was offered to them by the forces of the negative state. When I spoke about their right eyes, right hands and their bodies, this designation has an entirely different meaning than what you understand it to be. First of all, the members of that region of the positive state that we are talking about, as well as everyone else in the spiritual world, have their own specific bodies with the specific organs relevant to them. Those bodies and their organs are not subject to decay as are human bodies and their organs. For that reason, whenever anyone was seduced by the pseudo-creators and accepted their offer (and it did happen on several occasions!), that individual was thrown out into hell with his/her body and its organs intact.

Secondly, cutting off the right hand and plucking out the right eye signified for them getting rid of the spiritual infection that was blinding their proper perception of the pseudo-creators' real purpose and goal and weakening the power of their will to resist them and to stand up to them. So, they were recommended to undergo a spiritual surgery which would remove this affliction and restore their proper perception and the power of their will.

You have no idea, Peter, what type of cleaning and restructuring was necessary to undertake after the pseudo-creators and their minions were removed from that region. It took a long time, from the standpoint of your planetary time, to accomplish that goal. It is impossible to describe for you in understandable terms what that process of cleaning and restructuring entailed. Suffice it to say that the healing of all involved was accomplished, and everyone who didn't succumb to those promises of the pseudo-creators, was cured. In a symbolical depiction, this process of getting rid of all the mess which was induced by the pseudo-creators and their minions in that region, can be described as plucking out their right eyes and cutting off their right hand, so that they would not be in danger of being thrown out into hell with everything they had and possessed — signified here by their bodies.

How do these factors relate to the presently ongoing shift and to you personally as My true representatives? Everything and everyone is being put into the position of making a decisive and final choice to reject that idea from their mind permanently. This is the reason why My statement of that time relates both to that time and to this time. At that time, it was related primarily to the situation that existed in the mentioned region of the positive state. It had no relevance to anything human or human life. Any attempt to apply it to human life, as you've seen it, Peter, ends in total nonsense.

For this time, during the time of the currently ongoing shift, symbolically speaking, it is time that you all think about plucking out your right eye and cutting off your right hand, should you still have any doubts about the true reality of everything that is being presented to you. In your particular case, you are encouraged to train yourself to get rid of the above mentioned idea in order to prepare yourself for what is to come and for the purpose of setting up an example which would indicate to everyone in the negative state and in human life, that it is possible to take the first steps in that direction while you are still in your human body and on planet Zero.

Peter: Thank You very much for this explanation. It makes perfect sense to me. One more thing I would like to mention. During my breakfast break, when I was reading today's newspaper, an article was published there about You. A group of 200 scholars proclaimed that You were one of the first stand-up Jewish comics, a homeless, rule-breaking iconoclast who mocked authority and never claimed to be the Messiah. They also claim that only 18 percent of the New Testament sayings attributed to You appear to be authentic, and that only 16 percent of the stories told about You in the gospel appear to be true. How do You like that?

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, Peter, we have already discussed this issue in one of the previous Dialogs. It only confirms what was said about it at that time. Isn't it obvious how much the forces of the negative state are trying to discredit anything that I said or did during My First Coming? This is an integral part of the establishment of the final phase of the pseudo-winning of the negative state on your planet. This is a sign of an all-out effort to convince everyone that I am not what I appear to be. The purpose of such articles is to destroy any correct notion in the human mind about My True Nature. Once it is destroyed completely, the negative state pseudo-wins.

Peter: Once again, thank You very much for Your input in these matters. Is there anything else You would like to convey today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Not at this time, Peter. Unless there are some important questions that would come your way or initiated by you, Peter, I would recommend for you to take a few days break. Until then, have a very pleasant time.

Forty Sixth Dialog

February 21, 1999

Peter: Well, I had two days off without recording any Dialogs, although we have been in an almost continuous mode of talking about various things. For some reason I feel like I am always missing something whenever I don't record anything. Today however, I have two questions derived from my conversation with Dan of New York and Tom of Texas. Because my discussion with Dan preceded my discussion with Tom, I will ask my question related to my discussion with Dan first and then proceed with the other one, derived from my discussion with Tom, if I may.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You may, Peter. It is the proper way to proceed.

Peter: So, here it is. Actually, the first question is not that much of a question as a request to further elaborate on the issue of repayment or on Your statement about '*with the same measure you use, it will be measured back to you.*' The question was related to the issue of initiating any negative thoughts, feelings or behavior toward anyone and how it contributes to the individual setting himself/herself up for retribution and to his/her individual and personal cache in the region where such negative characteristics are stored and made available for anyone's use.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, Peter, of course, there is always someone who first initiates such negative or bad thoughts, feelings or behaviors. But how do you respond if someone exhibits such bad or negative characteristics toward you? The problem starts when you respond in exactly the same way as in that person's attitude toward you. In that case, you start to build your own individual and personal cache in the mentioned region of the Zone of Displacement.

However, things are not as simple as that. The question is: Are you, as My former agents, and presently as My representatives, able to first initiate such bad and negative thoughts, feelings or behaviors toward others without having any apparent reasons for doing so?

Let's elaborate on this issue a little deeper. As you know, by your own free will and choice, you agreed to incarnate on planet Zero into the typical human life. By the process of that incarnation, you acquired a typical human nature. From the position of your typical human nature, not only were you able to initiate such negative and bad thoughts, feelings and behaviors toward others, but it was inherent in your genes to do so. This is the way human nature is. So, it wouldn't be prudent and wise to think that only the agents of the negative state and humans proper are able to

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

be the initiators of such thoughts, feelings and/or behaviors toward you. Yes, they are the primary source of such adverse characteristics. They were put into the position for such initiation and to build up that cache. However, you were also able to do so from the position of your typical human nature.

As you remember from Update 15, it was indicated there for the first time that before your incarnation on planet Zero into the human life, you were peripherally wired by My personal endowment with something which clearly distinguished you from typical humans as well as from the agents of the negative state. That wiring allowed you to be designated as My agents or agents of My positive state. However, at that time, how many of you really understood properly what it meant to be wired like that, or peripherally wired like that? Because the wiring was peripheral, your human nature remained dominant. From the factor of that dominance, you were very easily and ‘naturally’ able to be judgmental, rejective, inconsiderate; and very easily you were able to have bad, negative or adverse thoughts, feelings and behaviors toward other human beings who didn’t measure up to your expectations or for whatever other reasons.

It was not until later that these things were brought to your attention, primarily through My New Revelation, and that such treatment of others and each other should be avoided because it contributes to the factor of retribution and retaliation against you.

Please don’t forget one important factor in this respect. As the former agents of My positive state, you were in the position of translating all aspects of the typical human nature and the quality of the typical human lifestyle to the positive state. Once it was brought to your attention that you were agents of My positive state, the issue of illustrating how you had been coping with that kind of strange life was put into the foreground of your behaviors and actions. During that entire time, because of your condition as typical humans, it wasn’t uncommon for you to not only respond with a negative attitude to someone else’s negative attitude toward you, but also to initiate it from yourself. This was the setup of your human nature. The other part, the peripheral part, stemming from Me, remained in the background of your mind.

In the process of reading My New Revelation and applying its principles in your life, the peripheral portion of your nature was slowly and carefully brought up to the foreground of your life. More and more you were able to avoid that type of negative behavior and the way you treated other people.

However, it was not until the Twenty Fourth Dialog was recorded on January 20, 1999, when the spiritual situation and the nature of the

currently ongoing shift allowed it to happen, that you ended your role as My agents and being typically human, and were shifted into the role of My true representatives. Up to that point, that type of typical adverse human behavior was tolerable and understandable because of the original purpose for which it was set up. But, as this new role is being initiated and instituted in your life, such negative behavior toward and treatment of others is no longer appropriate for you to exhibit. The renegades can't wait for you to behave like that or treat others like that in order to target you and make your life miserable and unbearable.

Of course, this process of becoming My full-fledged representatives doesn't happen overnight. Right now, you are in the process of transition from your former role and position, toward your new role and position. Because of this transitional factor, occasionally, you may still respond from the position of your previous roles. In the process of this transitional period you are being trained in the new mode of thinking, feeling, behaving, acting and treating others and each other. This new mode is congruent to the lifestyle of My positive state, as well as to My True Nature, which, from this point on, you are to illustrate on planet Zero. As long as you have the tendency to cling to your old mode of behavior and treatment, you will be the subject of severe targeting by the forces of the negative state. They would effectively and successfully utilize everything of the negative nature, stored in your individual and personal cache in the mentioned region, to get back at you through their own agents and other humans — their minions.

So, how do you go about emptying that cache? Or in the past, what was the difference between your actions, reactions and behaviors and those of the typical humans and the agents of the negative state? Being that you were and are in the human skin, so-to-speak, it was, is and will be inevitable for you to occasionally have such negative or bad thoughts, feelings or behaviors toward each other, but especially toward the agents of the negative state and other humans who are obviously very negative with or inconsiderate of you. The issue here is not that you were, are, or will be able to completely avoid having such negative characteristics but for how long and to what extent you have been and will be holding onto them.

Let Me take an example from your own attitude and behavior, Peter. Since your life is a representation of many important factors that are needed for such an illustration, they set up important examples. Sometimes you get very angry, upset, or disgusted with the behavior or attitude of others, especially with the ones close to you. During these types of moments, you have all kinds of negative thoughts, feelings and even behaviors. You raise your voice, you even say some bad words, or you

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

say something that in actuality, on your inward level, you don't mean at all, or you feel like smashing something in your momentary anger. However, a few minutes later, or an hour later at the most, when those moments have passed, you feel very sorry, ashamed, embarrassed, guilty, remorseful and miserable for behaving like that. You wish you could go back in time and make amends or respond in a much different way, congruent to being the transmitter of My New Revelation. Following that, you ask for My forgiveness and the issue is resolved.

Now, by this type of reaction and by the subsequent remorse and asking for forgiveness, your negative thoughts, feelings, words, behavior or whatever, didn't have time to register and be retained in your individual cache. Their impact didn't last long enough for them to be taken up into that cache. You successfully avoided the need for receiving a similar type of behavior from others in return.

However, what would happen if you were to hold on for a long time in your mind, sometimes even for years, to those kinds of negative and bad thoughts, feelings, behaviors and attitudes toward others, no matter who they were? By such an attitude you would embed them into your personal and individual cache and they would be in constant readiness to be utilized against you in the same measure as you exhibited them toward others. And then you would be very much surprised if some individuals and acquaintances would consider you an awful or bad person, and it could even come from someone toward whom you had never exhibited such negative behavior, feelings or thoughts.

In order for you to avoid such possibilities as to how you are being treated by others, and in order to empty your personal cache from them, so that they can no longer be utilized by the forces of the negative state against you, you are advised to do the following things (of course, as always, only if you choose to do so by your own free will and choice and no other way!): Explore very thoroughly all your thoughts, feelings, emotions, attitudes and behaviors toward all other people with whom you've had contact up to this point in your life and about whom you still think, feel and behave in such a negative adverse way and manner. In your mind, in My presence and in the presence of all members of your true spiritual family, and especially in the presence of the members of the New Universe assigned to you, ask all those people's minds for their forgiveness. Tell them in your mind that you are sorry and feel remorseful for the way you have thought, felt and behaved toward them. Following that, ask for My mercy and forgiveness, as well as from the members of your true spiritual family and the members of the New Universe. Ask for being engulfed and penetrated by My brilliant white light, symbolizing My Absolute Unconditional Divine Love, Divine Wisdom, Divine Mercy, Compassion and Forgiveness,

for the purpose of making you free, liberated and purified completely and forever from all such thoughts, feelings and behaviors and from everything related to them. By accepting My unconditional forgiveness, forgive yourself for holding on to them for such a long period of time.

Once this process is completed, with great gladness, pleasure and delight, I will personally empty your cache completely from all those negative thoughts, feelings, attitudes and behaviors and from everything related to them. That way, nothing will remain in that cache to be utilized by the forces of the negative state against you. However, you do have to remember that in your position as My true representatives, you will occasionally experience such negative, hateful, intolerant, bad, spiteful, envious and similar types of behaviors from the forces of the negative state and other humans, who are their minions. If you want to maintain your personal cache empty and void of anything adverse and negative, you should never respond to such behavior in a similar fashion. You will be tempted to do so. It would be very easy to respond with negative, bad and adverse thoughts, feelings and sensations, even if externally you would not behave that way. Unfortunately, as long as you are in the human skin, externally, you will experience such thoughts, emotions, feelings and sensations. Let's be realistic and not demand absolute perfection from you. Such things are impossible for you to accomplish. However, what you can do in cases like that, in order to avoid internalizing them or holding onto them for too long, giving an opportunity for them to be registered in your personal cache, is that, immediately after having such thoughts, feelings and sensations, you reject them from your mind, proclaiming them not to be yours but of the negative state. You give them to Me, asking for My forgiveness and mercy, and I will dispense with them in the most appropriate manner. That way you will not give them enough time to be placed in your personal cache. This will be the most effective way of keeping your personal cache empty and void of anything negative.

Remember please, in your present role, position and condition, you will be under the scrutiny of the renegades and their minions for the purpose of finding any possibility to seduce you into having such negative thoughts, feelings, sensations and behaviors or whatever of that nature. They will send your way all kinds of individuals who may treat you in such an adverse way in order to trigger in you the need — from the position of your external human nature, to respond negatively to any such provocation. Don't fall into their trap in this respect. I am giving you a tool to effectively deal with situations of this nature so that you don't succumb to their provocation. Use it at all times you find yourself in such situations.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Peter: But what about Your statement, as recorded in Matthew 5:22, and I quote, *“But I say to you whoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of judgment. And whoever says to his brother, ‘Raca!’ shall be in danger of the council. But whoever says, ‘You fool!’ shall be in danger of hell fire.”* By the way, what does the word ‘raca’ mean?

The Lord Jesus Christ: The word ‘raca’ can approximate something like an empty, useless, lazy, good-for-nothing person. The reason why it was indicated that to consider anyone of being that way could result in some kind of legal difficulties was that, from the position of everyone’s agreement to be the way they were, everyone’s place, lifestyle, position and choice were needed for some important spiritual reasons. Therefore, by calling someone ‘raca’ one was making a false assumption of that person’s role and assignment. Any proclaimed falsity puts that one into the position of a spiritual and legal bind and the need to prove the verity and rightfulness of such a proclamation. Because this falsity has none, the consequence could be punishment and retribution.

On the other hand, if you are angry at someone without cause and no reason exists for such a negative emotion, you are producing something which, from the position of the uniqueness of your mode of expression and feelings, has not been in being and existence or pseudo-being and pseudo-existence up to that point. That way you are feeding the negative state’s cache with something that had not been there before, compounding and enhancing its state and process. By doing that, you are inviting a judgment upon yourself for supporting the negative state’s cause.

The issue of ‘cause’ was telling them at that time that they were allowed to be angry at someone with cause without the danger of judgment. The reason why at that time it was permitted to have justifiable anger at someone who caused you to experience that anger, was because of the impositions that ruled the human life in those days. By the factor of impositions, humans were prevented from having any free will and choice and were forced to do only those things which were commanded to them. Any commanding and imposing factors violate the fundamental nature of all sentient entities rooted in their life of free will and free choice. To deprive people of those most essential factors of life, justifiably leads toward feeling and expressing anger. Such feelings and their expressions are permitted to occur in order to help them to get rid of such impositions, commandments and restrictions and to return to the state of free will and free choice. No other justification for anger existed or exists.

To say to someone ‘you fool’ and to be identified with that thought or saying may lead one to hell fire. ‘Hell fire’ in this connotation means establishing a burning self-love which excludes from its sphere any

consideration for the well-being and acceptance of the needs of anyone else. In a higher sense, to consider someone to be a fool means to consider Me a fool, as though I don't know what I am doing at each moment of any state and time. The reason why in this case it is I Who is considered a fool is because My life is in everyone alive and My unique element is present in that person. Because I am present in each of My elements in the fullness of My Nature, it is ultimately I who is called 'fool.' The consequence of such consideration leads to hell fire or to self-love which is the essence and substance of the negative state's pseudo-life. Because of that, by the factor of identifying with such a pseudo-love, that person automatically chooses to go to hell.

However, at the present time, the situation is entirely different. From the time of the establishment of a different foundation for human life, rooted in their own free will and choice, no justification has existed for any negative feelings, thoughts, attitude or behavior toward anyone for anything. Therefore, they may lead to a build up of your personal cache with these negative characteristics which could be utilized against you. In order for this not to happen, any time you are exposed to a situation in which the human aspects of your nature are experiencing them, you are advised to proceed to do what was suggested to you above.

Peter: Thank You very much for this explanation and advice, and for making available to us the mentioned tool for dealing with this issue. And this brings me to the second question derived from my discussion with Tom. I am curious how appropriate and timely it is to ask it and to have an answer to it. It relates to Your life during Your physical incarnation on planet Zero. No one knows anything about Your life from Your physical age of 12, to the time You started Your mission at Your physical age of 30 or so, in Israel, Jerusalem and the regions now called the Holy Land. Your time between age 12 through 30 is shrouded in great mystery and no one knows or has recorded anything about Your life during that time. Is it possible and appropriate for us to know anything about it, and does it have any relevance to the currently ongoing shift and to the changes in our roles from being Your agents to becoming Your true representatives?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Of course, Peter. Very important reasons exist why My personal life during that period, as well as during the period recorded in the Gospels, was carefully concealed. Also, nothing was revealed to anyone about the process of My upbringing and My childhood years. The only event of My earlier life, recorded by Luke, describes My encounter with the teachers in the temple of Jerusalem at the age of 12; and that following that event, I went back with My so-called parents to Nazareth and was subject to them. Nothing else is available in this respect. However, some Gnostic Gospels exist which contain some

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

information of this nature, but the way they describe it are pure falsities and distortions. So, they are not a valuable or credible source of information about My personal life.

The reason why all details of My personal life could not be revealed even now, and why no credible, objective and so-called scientifically verifiable proofs exists not only about My personal life during all those years but also whether I existed at all; and if I existed at all, whether what is attributed to My teachings and My deeds, as recorded in the four Gospels, is true and even if it ever happened, is because the full knowledge of all these factors, to their fullest possible extent, would put everyone in the position of imposition and no freedom of choice. This is a very important statement. Such full knowledge would force everyone to accept Me as a true God imposed on them by the external factors and unusualness of My personal life and not by their internal disposition. In that case I would lock everyone into a permanent unchangeable state from which they could never come out because the path to their internals would be shut off forever. If you force people to accept something by the external events of your life, it is concluded that all truth and reality is anchored and rooted in the externals. Therefore, nothing exists in the internals with any value. Hence, a permanent closure to the internals where all true knowledge resides and where My presence always is. Should any such things happen, the negative state would win because its life is rooted in the externals. If I impose on people through the events of My personal life, which are externally observable, the acceptance of Me as the true God, I am using the negative state's methodology and therefore, I am of the negative state. Thus, no positive state exists. It is only an illusion. In this case, an eternal upside-down position would occur which would rule the life of all sentient entities.

For that reason it was necessary to conceal all details of My personal life and instead, record only certain, well-selected statements that I made, as well as describe some healing on certain selected individuals, which I did because of My Absolute Compassion; and on certain so-called miraculous works that I performed. However, if you carefully analyze how I performed those types of works, it was solely based on people's requests and on their faith in Me that I could do that. Because they were always by request or by faith, no imposition was in place. Requests and faith are a matter of one's internals and always come from one's internals.

The entire purpose of My mission on planet Zero, as revealed in My New Revelation, was only marginally related to the situation on planet Zero itself. My mission primarily related to the situation with the pseudo-creators and the positive state itself and the need to take over the entire Zone of Displacement from the hands of the pseudo-creators. But most

importantly, it was for the purpose of conquering all evils and falsities and subjugating all the Hells in order to cancel their imposing rule over their domain and planet Zero. On planet Zero it was also necessary to abolish the imposing factors on humans and provide them with a totally different alternative, as previously described.

How do you go about conquering all evils and falsities and subjugating all the hells? As you know, My Absolute Essence cannot come in direct contact with them because in the moment it would, all those who participated in them would eternally perish. In order to avoid this from happening, it was necessary to separate that Essence from such contact. Only human life could provide Me with such a possibility. In the process of that separation, as I was experiencing human life as any human would, I related to that Essence as to My Father. In order to accomplish My goal in this respect, during that separation and during My being typically human, it was necessary for Me to gather all human experiences which were available up to that point and include all of them in My experiential mode. For that purpose I undertook extensive studies of all human religious, pseudo-spiritual and any other systems, as well as everything else, in order to familiarize Myself — as a typical human in separation from My Father-Essence — with all aspects of the end product of the negative state and acquire a means for entering the domain of the negative state itself — all its hells. I accomplished this goal by extensive traveling and visiting all continents of planet Zero, spending time with various teachers, masters and representatives of all existing systems. Between the ages of 12 and 18 I was in so-called obedience to My human parents, following their requirements. At age 18 I left them and traveled to India and other countries of Asia, America, Europe, Australia and various islands in the Pacific and Atlantic. On each mentioned continent I spent several years. At the age of 30 I returned to Jerusalem and did what was described in the four Gospels.

As you know, in those days no one knew anything about the existence of the Americas or Australia or the Pacific Islands and most of Africa and Asia. But I knew of them and I needed to gather everything available from everyone who lived at that time in all those locations. I traveled to all those locations by means available only to Me at that time — something resembling the term teleportation in your understanding. The reason why I needed to visit all those places and gather all available knowledge and experiences of human nature and human life from the position of being a typical human Myself and in separation from My Essence-Father, was because it provided Me with the possibility of a firsthand contact with everything contained in the nature of the negative state, how it functioned, what its methodologies were, how it had been developing and spreading and what its impact on humans and the entirety of the Zone of

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Displacement was. Only from the position of the end product of the negative state — humans — could I acquire such full knowledge because the nature of the end product is such that it contains within itself everything summarily inherent in the totality of the negative state. Thus, human nature in all its aspects, as represented by the various inhabitants of the mentioned continents on planet Zero, provided Me with the tools necessary for My experiences regarding the entirety of the negative state and for finding the most appropriate and proper ways for conquering all its evils and falsities and for subjugating all the Hells and the entire Zone of Displacement, as well as for the lockup of the pseudo-creators.

The more mystical, mysterious and unusual reasons for such experiences, which in no way could have been revealed at that time for security reasons, were in preparation for The Most High-Father — My Essence, to acquire the New Nature becoming the fullness of The Lord Jesus Christ. As you know, the term ‘The Lord Jesus Christ’ signifies or denotes someone who does not lack anything and who incorporates within His/Her Nature — **experientially** — everything in the entire being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. Only from that position could the negative state be put under My control for the purpose of directing its destiny toward its final goal — providing important learning about a life other than the life which originated from Me, and for its eternal elimination after it exhausts its usefulness and serves the mentioned purpose.

The other reason for gathering such experiences and knowledge about human nature and human life in all its aspects as manifested in the various continents of planet Zero, was for the purpose of setting up favorable conditions for executing the Last Judgment when the time comes. As you clearly remember from ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***, Chapter Eight, a just judgment cannot be rendered by direct experiential mode without having Absolute Knowledge about the all-inclusive aspects of everything and everyone in My Creation, in all its dimensions without exception or exclusion, originated from Me directly, and because of that I had full absolute experiential knowledge about all of them and about their nature, function, progression and development as well, this was not the case with the negative state. As you know, the negative state didn’t originate from Me. Neither humans nor various creatures of the Hells and the Zone of Displacement directly originate from Me. Because of that, as The Most High, I lacked such a direct experience with any of them and the nature of their life. In order to rectify this situation, and set up proper and absolutely just conditions for the Last Judgment, I chose, by My own free will and choice, to incarnate into the human life, acquire from it all necessary means which would allow Me to enter all other regions of the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, and

include into My Nature the experiential mode of their knowledge and understanding in an absolute sense.

However, there is another reason for My need to visit and study all human systems on the various continents of planet Zero. As you know, Peter, each continent, as well as each country, corresponds and has connection to some other regions both in the spiritual worlds of the positive state and the pseudo-spiritual worlds of the negative state, respectively. My visit to those continents was necessary in order to set up certain conditions there which would give an impulse to their development and which would set up proper and effective grounds for illustrating and demonstrating the specific nature of the human life in its various manifestations for the learning of all. The ways such conditions were established by Me could not be comprehended by your limited human mind. They were very unusual and not available to any relative being. (A note on the understanding of the term 'unusual' and the way it is sometimes used in My New Revelation. This is in response to Dan's concerns about its proper usage. In My New Revelation this term very often, although not always, is used in a different connotation than its typical English definition or designation. In our use, the term 'unusual' is defined as a description of something which does not exist elsewhere or elsewhen and which is not possible in any other mode or manifestation but only in the one which is being described or attributed to in the context of the discussed topic about someone or something).

At the same time, from the position of those continents, through their reflection of and feedback to the worlds to which they corresponded at that time, I was able to set up certain important conditions in them for their own development and progression, and for manifesting their own unique life and nature. Without the establishment of these proper conditions from the position of their reflections and correspondences, they could not accomplish this goal. The way you have to understand this statement is that the end results of everyone's endeavors can be manifested only in their reflections in the worlds which are in a corresponding position to each other. Those continents provide the necessary, crucial and vital feedback on the endeavors that were produced in those corresponding worlds. It is like a cause and effect connection. The causative factors are produced in the other dimensions while their effects are experienced in and reacted to in the most outward worlds, in this case in the continents of planet Zero which function in the role of carrying these effects and providing feedback to those worlds where the causes are initiated.

So, most of My private life between the ages of 18 and 30 was spent in this important work. As you see, that work had many multidimensional aspects and was performed simultaneously in many dimensions, in many

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

worlds and on all continents of planet Zero. After I finished that portion of My important work, upon returning to My birthplace, I prepared Myself to enter all the Hells and particularly the Hells of the pseudo-creators. Now I had all the proper means for such an entrance to take place, fully insulating Myself and the negative state, as well as all its inhabitants from causing any permanent damage or destruction to anyone or anything in its domain. By acquiring the full knowledge and understanding of the human nature and the nature of the negative state, from their own position, and only from their own position, I was able to build a very effective insulation for all of us involved.

In response to your question as to how all this relates to the present time and your own positions as My true representatives; first of all, I am able to extend that insulation to all of you who read these words, as well as to the pseudo-creators and all others involved in the Great Alliance. Secondly, and most importantly, this information is being provided for all in the negative state who will be hearing it during your rereading. It will help them to understand the most important factor for their eventual conversion to the positive state which will indicate to them that I will be coming to them from their own position, as one of them, in the sense that I subjected Myself to their life in order to see it and experience it as they did. And not only that, but, most importantly, that I was able to subjugate all their evils and falsities from their own position and turn everything within Me from their pseudo-life into true positive life. By accomplishing that, I paved the way for them to do the same when the time comes for them to convert to the positive state. By those experiences I provided all of them with proper and effective means to accomplish this most important goal, leading to the eternal abolishment of the negative state. There are many other aspects of My private life during the discussed period. However, they cannot be revealed at this time. Some of them are of such an unusual, absolute and incomprehensible nature that they cannot ever be revealed. For that reason nothing else can be said about this issue. I wish you a very pleasant day, Peter.

Peter: Thank You very much for this extensive information.

Forty Seventh Dialog

February 23, 1999

Peter: This morning I am really very concerned and worried. After I finished recording our Forty Sixth Dialog, I received some E-mail, as well as some regular mail, with 16 different questions. Two of those questions came from the East Coast of this country and the rest of them came from the Czech and Slovak Republics. What makes me concerned and worried is the content of some of those questions. I am truly overwhelmed. Not only am I overwhelmed but I have severe doubts about whether recording these Dialogs and sharing them with others was such a good idea, after all. To what extent do they foster a spiritually dangerous state of dependency on me and Your answers through me? This is not good at all. It looks to me like some readers are developing a very inappropriate tendency to shun their responsibility to ask their own questions and get their own answers without any mediation through anyone. What is happening here?

The Lord Jesus Christ: These are legitimate concerns, Peter. The issue you properly raise here is everyone's responsibility and accountability for their own life and thus, ultimately, for asking their own questions and getting their own answers by whatever mode is available to them — through direct contact with Me, through their own intuition, through the processes of their own intellect, logic, rationality or reasoning; or simply by analyzing their own situation and the condition in which they find themselves at each particular time. Some of the questions asked are really very inappropriate and they should never be asked through you. They are either too personal or they relate to some practical family issues which are confined within their own family system or personal decision. An example of such a question is asking about the amount of life insurance that should be provided for one's family members. Such questions have no relevance to anything multiversal but are limited in their scope to the particular person who is asking it and therefore, answers to them should be determined by the factors of his/her own family's needs. It's too narrow and has no spiritual significance in a general sense.

The questions that came from the Czech and Slovak Republics, respectively, from four different people, in some instances have already been answered in the process of recording these Dialogs. The problem with two of those four individuals is that they had read only the two Dialogs that have been translated so far. In cases like that, it would be advisable to hold off from asking any questions of any nature until they

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

have an opportunity to familiarize themselves with the rest of the Dialogs.

However, there is another important issue here why such questioning is permitted to occur. As you know, Peter, and as it was mentioned in the previous Dialogs, one of the many important functions of recording and reading these Dialogs is that they may trigger certain personal problems which readers might have and which need to be resolved on a personal and individual level without your involvement. Don't forget an important fact, of which we spoke about before: You are all in a transitional period, from the time when you were My agents to the time when you are becoming My true representatives. This transitional period entails the important factor of training you to acquire a different lifestyle, congruent to your new role and position. During this training period, these Dialogs also function as something that brings out the old habits of your typical human nature that need to be eliminated permanently.

One such bad and spiritually extremely dangerous habit to which you are all prone is to rely on someone or something else to discover your own problems, to establish the means to get rid of or to correct them, and to make important or even less important decisions in your everyday life's needs and struggles. There is a tendency to almost be paralyzed without taking any action until someone tells you what to do and how to do it.

If any such tendencies or problems are triggered in anyone by reading these Dialogs then it only means that they are being given an opportunity to correct or to get rid of such dangerous tendencies. As you can surmise, Peter, from those 16 questions you received yesterday, unfortunately, such tendencies still exist among some readers. For that reason, although some of their questions do have multiversal significance and should be answered, the other ones, which are more of a personal, private, intimate and practical nature, are asked not to be really answered but for the purpose of bringing to the attention of the inquirers the problems they have in this respect. To repeat again, they are being given an opportunity to recognize these problems and to work on getting rid of them. No one can or may become My true representative while holding on to such problems or tendencies. Such tendencies are of the typical human nature and the nature of the negative state in general.

On the other hand, some questions were posed in the form of a request for further and more detailed elaboration on some issues that have already been discussed in previous occasions. In some instances such detailed elaboration is proper. In that case, it is granted. In other cases it is not appropriate because it deviates from a general consideration and

explanation and goes too much into its personalized and individualized aspects. A good example of such a request is one you received yesterday, Peter, which asked for a more detailed explanation on the causes of human obesity. In one of the previous Dialogs, we provided such an explanation in a more general sense. It was accompanied by an example of one of the many possible causative factors for such a human condition to appear. It related to a lack of love. But did you see the danger of giving such examples? The person who asked that question immediately tried to conclude that I was talking about her. And yet, how many times have we indicated and asked not to take personally anything contained in these Dialogs?

What would happen if I were to grant Mr. Beneš' request and give him all the details for why some humans develop obesity? Any prospective reader would take one, or a few, or all revealed causative factors and apply them onto himself/herself without any consideration for his/her own individualized, personalized and private reasons. In that case, the individual in question would believe falsities about the reasons for his/her obesity. Such a belief would put him/her even deeper into the negative state and into his/her problem of obesity. After all, the negative state is rooted in falsities. For that reason, when we are talking about human problems in general, we can only give you general answers about their origin, purpose and reasons for their occurrence. From them, it is the responsibility of each individual to determine on his/her own all other details why such problems were accepted by him/her, why it was agreed by him/her to have them and, most importantly, whether the purpose they served in his/her life has exhausted their usefulness and therefore, are no longer needed or required. Many reasons exist why someone agreed to develop problems, in this case, obesity. Because it is such an individual, private and intimate problem, its cause and reason can only be properly determined by that respective individual himself/herself. From the spiritual standpoint, it is between that individual and Me. Therefore, spiritually speaking, and on the spiritual level, that individual is responsible and accountable for asking his/her own questions and getting his/her own answers without any mediation from anyone. Otherwise, he/she may find himself/herself believing falsities.

Peter: What about the question that was asked by his wife, Alena? She wants to know whether it is appropriate, under the presently existing spiritual conditions, to utilize one's abilities and endowments to create something that would be beneficial for everyone.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, the answer to that question should be very much obvious from a general understanding of the principles of My

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

New Revelation. If someone was given certain abilities or creative endowments, he/she was given them with only one purpose — to use them under any conditions. Otherwise, he/she would not have them. Here again we face the issue of responsibility and accountability. But in this case it is a two-way street, so-to-speak. Let Me personalize this: You are responsible for fully utilizing and actualizing all your abilities, gifts, talents and endowments for the benefit of all, under any conditions, regardless of how they are received by others. Others, who are on the receiving end, are responsible and accountable for how they respond to them and to the extent that they are willing to benefit from them. Your own responsibility and accountability is limited only to utilizing and presenting your creative efforts to others, whereas others are responsible and accountable for deriving benefits from them. Whether they do or not, is no longer your responsibility. You do your best under any conditions and in any circumstances with everything you have, without worrying about whether anyone will or will not benefit from them.

Peter: Alena also asks, how such objects, created with love and good intention, influence others, especially under the general negative conditions which exist on this planet?

The Lord Jesus Christ: In some instances their impact is overtly positive, especially with individuals of a positive inclination who were My agents, and in some instances, covertly, with the majority of humans. Don't forget one important fact: Even if your creative effort doesn't show any impact or exert any influence on anyone at their conscious level or during the current time in the here-and-now, your good, loving and caring works contribute immensely to the cache of positive and productive buildup in the general consciousness of the entire humanity. They will be utilized later on for the benefit of all at the time of the ending of the life of the negative state and of the typical human life in all its purely negative aspects. For that reason, I would like to strongly encourage Alena, as well as all of you, to continue in this positive effort and to utilize all your gifts, abilities, talents and endowments to their fullest possible potentials for the benefit of all; and to do this with the understanding in your mind that the results of your good works have multiversal impact and are not limited only to your own locality or even to the entire humanity.

Peter: Thank You for Your explanation of this issue. I hope Alena will be satisfied. And now, back to this country. Any comments on the claims of alien abductions as depicted the other day, for example, in a television program on one of the major networks and as commented on by Michael M. from Massachusetts?

The Lord Jesus Christ: The meaning of those claims is a distortion of the true reality in this respect. Those kinds of claims derive from the general awareness in humanity's unconscious mind about the pseudo-creators' and the renegades' experimentation and genetic manipulation in the past and in the present, during which they tried and are trying to fabricate certain creatures for the purpose that we described elsewhere. What this means is that they did in the past and do at the present, utilize some human genes to fabricate hybrids of their own design.

We have already touched upon this subject in one of the previous Dialogs. As you remember, for many centuries, humanity has been visited in a covert manner by various contingents of the pseudo-creators, even at the time of their lockup, during which, they extracted various samples from the genetic endowment of unaware humans and put various implants in them for the purpose of recording their development and evolvment. They have been doing the same since the release of the pseudo-creators. So, in essence, such programs about alien abductions and the fabrication of sentient hybrids in the form of children, in which they utilize human genes, stem from these facts. All these events and happenings are taking place behind the scenes of the conscious awareness of the majority of humans. You have no idea what is going on in this respect in their own domain. That domain is not accessible to you. For you, as My true representatives, I would recommend that you not be preoccupied with such reports. Your role and assignment are now different and they don't require you to be concerned with such events or happenings.

Peter: And now, back to Europe or the Czech Republic — to some questions asked by Roman and his friend, Monika. I believe some of them have already been answered in the previous Dialogs. One question relates to Herbalife and the other was too personal.

The Lord Jesus Christ: The answers that were given in the Twelfth and partially in the Thirteenth Dialogs fully apply to the issue with Herbalife. The spiritual danger of an involvement with such programs is obvious. Those are very convenient traps set up by the negative state to exert influence on anyone who shows interest through such harmless substances as herbs, vitamins and minerals. The pseudo-spiritual philosophy which underlies their products is a poison for the human mind and an enslavement into a dependency on them. Don't be taken in by any of their claims. Roman would be advised to wait for the two mentioned Dialogs and study them carefully before making any decisions regarding accepting employment from that company. On the other hand, this is a private issue and Roman is advised to direct his request to Me

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

personally and rely on his own intuition in this respect. Also, his second question about self-realization and how it relates to the present time is of a purely personal nature and cannot be answered through a mediator. The concept of self-realization is a purely individualized and personalized issue that is between Me and any respective individual.

Peter: And now, to Monika's questions. Her first question is whether it is still safe to use spiritual hypnosis from a spiritual standpoint to discover and remove the sources of one's problems, especially those from very early childhood or from the time of fetal development. I believe this question was already answered in one of the previous Dialogs.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, it was. However, let us briefly reiterate what was said about it before. This particular method, personally developed and implemented by you, Peter, unfortunately for all of you, was subsumed by the forces of the negative state. For that reason, to use it for the purpose of age regression and treating one's problems could be spiritually dangerous. The danger doesn't stem from the methodology itself but from the ability of the various negative entities to influence the process itself in such a manner so as to feed you all kinds of falsities and distortions about the source of your problems and to implant false memories in your mind. Unfortunately, those false memories will impress you so much that you would have no other notion but to think that they are real, authentic and genuine and that what they are telling you really happened in your past. Because this is not the case, you would believe falsities about yourself and your experiences. That way, you wouldn't resolve your problems but you would feed them more fuel for their continuation; or you would develop substitute problems which could be worse than the ones you were able to eliminate. This is the way the forces of the negative state are able to trap people into believing that they can provide a cure for you. Yes, they might be able to free you from some problems but, because you accepted their falsity under the guise of their being true and genuine, you would end up substituting them with much worse problems than those you previously had.

To utilize this method nowadays is especially dangerous for someone who reads, accepts and practices My New Revelation. Spiritual hypnosis was a general tool, applicable to all at a time when nothing else of that nature existed and when such general tools were effective and useful. However, with the negative state's factor of condensation on planet Zero, all such general, blanket-type practices were completely taken over by the negative state.

As mentioned previously, to countermand this situation, the agents of the positive state had to change the way they were to deal with their own issues or problems. Instead of this general all-inclusive approach, the shift went entirely toward an individualized and personalized approach. Therefore, any attempt to use the old approach by My representatives would put them in considerable spiritual danger. By using it, they would inadvertently open the doors for the renegades and their minions to corrupt them and to make their life even more miserable and unbearable.

So, the advice in this respect is to seek out your own individualized and personalized method which would be applicable only to you and no one else. Again, this issue is between Me and you. If you are unable to have direct tangible contact with Me, you have to use your intuition or any other resources personally available to you (insight, logic, reason, intellect, rationality, inner sense, etc.) Moreover, reading and practicing My New Revelation for the sake of principle, without any strings attached, and concentrating on My presence in you, even if you don't have any obvious sense of that presence; asking Me to help you get rid of your problems — if it is time and proper to be freed from them — may function even better than any other old methods. At this point in time you don't need anything else.

Peter: Her next question is an interesting one. Is it possible for my (her) spiritual and mental states of a positive nature, or sometimes even of a negative nature, to influence meteorological conditions and processes in the physical realm, as they are influenced in the positive state?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes and no. This is an ambiguous answer. On planet Zero, because of its position and function in its role of ultimate externalization, any individual's state of mind, whether positive or negative, in itself and by itself, is unable to directly exert such an influence. This is the 'no' portion of the answer. However, humanity as a whole, can, may and does influence meteorological conditions on planet Zero. The more negative humanity is, the more adverse the meteorological conditions become. Your individual contributions to its general cache, in which the negative and adverse states of everyone's mind are stored, function as a compounding factor to the entire climate in which humanity operates. In this sense, you do influence meteorological conditions on your planet. This is the 'yes' portion of the answer. Your positive contributions, if enough people were to make such, may temper the adverse meteorological conditions. However, as the negative state reaches its most condensed condition on this planet, the positive inputs are minimized, or presently almost gone, and the negative ones are maximized. This process is subsequently reflected in

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

more and more severe meteorological conditions on planet Zero and elsewhere in the Zone of Displacement, where the factors that correspond to them operate.

Peter: Monika's next question relates to the sexual intercourse of two partners who are of Your New Revelation. She would like to know that if the result of sexual intercourse — which takes place simultaneously on the spiritual and mental levels — is the birth of an idea utilized by You to create a new sentient entity, wouldn't it be a violation of the fundamental spiritual law that everything proceeds from within to without? What would be the consequences of such an act for planet Zero, the Zone of Displacement and everywhere else?

The Lord Jesus Christ: It would be advisable for Monika and everyone else to carefully reread the twentieth and twenty second chapters of ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***. It is obvious that almost nothing which takes place in the positive state in this respect is applicable to human sexual intercourse. This is also true regarding the sexual engagement between two persons of the opposite sex who are My true representatives. No matter what, they are still human and they use their human body for such an involvement. Therefore, they are limited in their sexual expression and they are blocked from the ability to produce all the consequences of such sexual acts in a similar fashion as it happens in the positive state. You cannot apply the same rules and the same meaning of sexuality to planet Zero as they apply in the positive state.

To clarify more on this issue, let us reiterate the major purposes for the function of such sexual intercourse. As you remember, sexuality, in its general conceptualization, was considered to be a major tool for sharing. In this sense, it is not limited to sexual intercourse only. Its function is much broader. However, this primarily applies only to the positive state. In human life, due to its genetic rewiring, it was limited — in the scope of its function — to childbearing and the external expression of its process, purely on the physical, and, in a limited sense, also on the mental level. Very little or almost none of its spiritual aspects were allowed to be included in sexual experiences. Take into consideration the most vital and crucial role of sexuality for all: **First**, it is for acquiring a greater and more profound knowledge of Me, others and yourself. **Secondly**, it is for the birth of new and unique ideas to be endowed with a unique sentient life. **Thirdly**, it is for delight, pleasure, joy, happiness and relaxation; and to have an opportunity to share yourself with someone of the opposite sex by mutual consensual agreement. In the

human life, another purpose was added, or basically limited to the physical birth of another unique human being.

To be engaged in sexual intercourse at any level doesn't necessarily mean that all these three functions will be triggered, or that the result of any sexual intercourse will end up in producing all its three factors. It may or may not produce them. In most instances, especially in the sexual intercourse between two humans of the positive nature, of two of My representatives of the opposite sex for example, will be for the purpose of the third factor. Very rarely will it produce all three. Because of that, in the past, if any sexual intercourse ended in its second function, it resulted in the birth of sentient entities at all levels, including a human being on this level. From two positive humans, My agents, usually, but not always, positive sentient entities and humans were born. From two negative humans or humans proper, either an agent of the negative state or a human proper was born. However, the situation has changed completely at the present time. On planet Zero, no more positive agents or humans proper are born. The reason for this setup was previously explained. For that reason, any sexual intercourse between My representatives, as long as they are in the human life on planet Zero, will be limited to the first and third factors. The second one, the birth of new sentient entities and humans, unless there are special circumstances for it to happen, has been excluded from their sexual intercourse.

This explanation would also answer Monika's question about four scenarios of sexual involvement in a variety of situations and with diverse motivations, needs, approaches and orgasmic experiences. No matter which scenario is being considered, under the presently existing spiritual conditions, nothing is born from such an involvement while living on planet Zero. If the motivation, intentions, needs and approaches for sexual intercourse are positive and harmonious on both sides, then the first and the third factors are triggered. Otherwise, it is either neutral or it has negative consequences, such as dissatisfaction, empty feelings, misunderstandings and similar states. This can also happen between two sexual partners who are both My devoted, loyal and faithful servants. The reason why it could have such an undesirable outcome even for them, is because they may be from entirely different spiritual levels, and they may have an entirely different understanding and acceptance of My New Revelation. At this point in time, nothing can be said about this issue. We may return to it in the future — if needed.

Peter: Her next question relates to music. The answer to this question is obvious. It relates to what kind of music can be considered positive and what kind negative, respectively.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

The Lord Jesus Christ: Primarily, classical music is positive. Also soft, relaxing, gentle, quiet and soothing music. Contemporary music, which is atonal and discordant, as well as modern rock in its various forms, are a production of the negative state. Folk music, country and western music, may have some positive connotation. In most instances however, they are neutral. Because of individualized and personalized tastes in this respect, everyone should go by his/her intuition in choosing music or any type of entertainment for himself/herself. Consult your intuition and My presence in it.

Peter: Her last question relates to the correspondence of aromatic incense burning, aromatic sticks, censers and similar practices.

The Lord Jesus Christ: All of those are external rituals. Because of that, at the present time they have only a negative connotation and correspondence. In some cases, especially with you — My representatives, they may evoke very unpleasant states signaling the presence of negative spirits who are attracted to such aromas and fragrances. However, for those humans who are of a negative disposition and who delight in distortions, falsities and external rituals, such incense burning and aromas can give them a pleasurable experience because they give them a false sense of peace and security. You are advised to avoid them.

Peter: I believe this should be all for today. Thank You very much for Your input.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome. Yes, this should be all for today. Have a nice and pleasant day, Peter.

Forty Eighth Dialog

February 24, 1999

Peter: Before asking my own question, I would like to ask You if you have anything to add or to clarify regarding anything that has been stated or revealed so far.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for asking Me to talk first. Yes, I do have something to add and to further elaborate on the topic discussed yesterday as recorded in the Forty Seventh Dialog. Yesterday you were physically too tired and emotionally upset and very much concerned about all those questions pouring at you. You were becoming too afraid, almost scared, that some readers of these Dialogs were becoming too dependent on you and our dialogs instead of taking responsibility and being accountable for their own life and for asking their own questions and receiving their own answers from their own within. Because of that, I chose to stop our dialog yesterday without further comments in order to give you enough time to cool off and to look at this situation from a more objective perspective. Now we may continue in our discourse.

One point about this whole situation which was not mentioned yesterday, was that the forces of the negative state are able to use some readers of these Dialogs, their typical human tendencies and expectations to be told what to do and how to do it, to get back at you, Peter. By using your legitimate and proper concerns about the factor of some readers' needs to be dependent on your input, the forces of the negative state very much hope to be able to disrupt and terminate our dialogs and your recording them for the benefit of all interested. They are using your fears, planting in your mind considerable doubts and anguish about whether it is appropriate to continue in this effort. And not only that, but whether it was such a good idea to undertake these dialogs at all. The forces of the negative state, once again, are bringing to your attention the statement that I made several years ago in the **Corollaries...** that no more updates would be coming your way and that no written material would be allowed to be dispensed or shared with anyone. Of course, they are conveniently omitting what I said in My statement about the validity and applicability of its content only to the here-and-now; that is to say, only for that time but not for this time.

So, you may dispense with your fears, anxieties and concerns about these issues and continue in our dialogs whenever needed and if needed.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Moreover, should anyone ask you to direct questions to Me through you, for those questions which are totally inappropriate or too personal in nature, you may simply, quietly and peacefully bring to their attention the inappropriateness of their requests. They'll understand and accept your kind admonishment. Hopefully, after reading this Dialog, they will stop doing that. However, don't count on that. Human nature is too stubborn and unpredictable in order not to try asking inappropriate and personal types of questions again. Should something like that happen again, you may simply explain to them once more why it would be spiritually dangerous for them individually if you were to mediate from Me the answers to their questions.

Peter: Thank You for this explanation. I understand and I'll do exactly as You suggested. Is there anything else You would like to bring to our attention before I ask my question?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, there is. We need to further elaborate on Monika's questions. Because of your tiredness and concerns, they were not fully answered. I am talking about her four scenarios that may happen in the course of sexual intercourse between two agents of the positive state on planet Zero. Also, about the possible violation of the multiversal law of everything proceeding from within to without.

Let us start with the possibility of this violation and then go to the explanation of the outcome of her four scenarios. Monika should be aware by now from My New Revelation that the negative state and its end product — human life, were founded on violation of all laws and on the establishment of their own pseudo-laws which rule their own life and all their establishments. Because, as you know, sexuality was a major tool for establishing, conveying and implementing these pseudo-laws in human life and in the life of the negative state in general, it was in sexuality itself that the spiritual law of the multiverse was violated the most. Whereas in the positive state, in the process of sexual intercourse, everything goes from the double within-within to the double without-without (two sexual partners of the opposite sex!), in the negative state, and especially in human life, rooted in the most externals, everything is upside-down, that is to say, in the process of their sexual intercourse everything goes from the double without-without to the double without-without. Because of this setup of the human life and the negative state in general, any ideas that might be produced by such an act, were utilized either for the birth of a negative entity or a human proper. At the present time however, as you know, only negative and/or evil entities are born from such ideas. The birth from those ideas is either of a totally new negative and/or evil entity, or such a sexual intercourse is utilized by

someone in the Hells to incarnate on planet Zero. Either way, that entity is always negative and/or evil. No humans proper have been born on planet Zero for some time.

Because of this setup in the negative state and human life, it would be difficult to talk about Monika's concern that a possibility exists for violating the mentioned law. Such possibility is inconceivable to occur in the positive state.

Before the time when agents of My positive state, as well as humans proper, were allowed to incarnate on planet Zero, the agents of the positive state, situated on your planet, were utilized very often, through their sexual intercourse, for generating either positive ideas or human types of ideas. The positive ideas gave the means for the birth of a positive agent, and human types of ideas for the birth of a human proper. Depending on the selected genes and on the spiritual disposition during sexual intercourse, such a human could have either positive or negative inclinations, respectively.

However, the situation with My agents on planet Zero has completely changed since the time when no one from the positive state has been allowed to incarnate on planet Zero any longer, and no humans proper have been allowed to be born either. This change is even more pronounced with the current situation, during which, you are in the process of becoming My true representatives, relinquishing your former roles and positions as My agents or agents of the positive state.

And this brings us to Monika's four scenarios. Before the first scenario is described, let's consider the following one: Both sexual partners of the opposite sex, who were My agents and now are My representatives, approach each other for sexual intercourse with proper, right and only positive motivation. What is the outcome of such an act? Are there any ideas produced from it which could be utilized for the birth of a sentient entity and if there are, what type of a sentient entity is born from them?

As mentioned above, in the past, such an act was utilized for the birth of either a positive entity or a human proper. At the present time, this is not the case. A sexual intercourse of this nature is utilized either for the first factor — acquiring greater knowledge and understanding of My nature, others and one's own; or for the third factor — pleasure, delight, joy, relaxation and sharing; or for both the first and the third factors. Because of the prohibition for the birth of anyone from the positive state, as well as humans proper on this planet, the result of this type of sexual

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

intercourse no longer generates ideas that could be utilized for such births.

Monika's **first scenario**: If two agents of the positive state, connected to My New Revelation, approach each other for sexual intercourse and both of them approached it, for some reason or other, with the wrong motivation and intention, could such an act produce ideas for the birth of a sentient entity? And if it could, what kind of an entity would it be?

Depending on the nature and content of such negative intention and motivation, either it would end in the spontaneous abortion of any such ideas, or no ideas would be generated; or in some rare instances, if both their intention and motivation were extremely negative, and if they were not careful, that is to say, if they didn't use birth control measures, the forces of the Hells could utilize such ideas and impose the birth of a negative entity on them.

The second scenario: The same as above but, in this case, one sexual partner approaches this act with a positive, good and right intention and motivation, and the other one with a very negative, inappropriate, unclean and carnal intention and motivation. Are there any ideas generated from such an act and if there are, what kind of a sentient entity would be born from such an act?

This would be a case when any ideas generated from such an act would end in their spontaneous abortion. The partner with positive intention and motivation would have some limited sense of My presence within her/him and some limited feelings of satisfaction, but such senses would be contaminated and become ambiguous due to the other partner's negative and inappropriate approach.

The third scenario: Both former agents of the positive state, connected to My New Revelation, approach each other for sexual intercourse with only pure and positive intention and motivation, but one partner reaches orgasm sooner than the other one, and thus, they are unable to have a simultaneous orgasm. Can anyone be born from such an act? And if such a birth is feasible, what type of a sentient entity would he or she be?

In the past, such an act could produce ideas which were utilized for the birth of either a positive sentient entity or a human proper. Don't forget one important fact: On the spiritual and mental level, and thus, in the spiritual world, the factor of a temporal-spatial requirement is not an issue. The relevance is only that such orgasms occurred. Whereas on planet Zero, which is bound by temporal-spatial requirements, a

sequential experience of the orgasm may take place, in the other dimensions they are perceived as synchronous. So, it doesn't make any difference in what time frame the orgasms occurred. Moreover, in the context of the typical human sexuality, it is not uncommon for the male partner to reach orgasm sooner than the female partner. In older males, they may have the orgasm later than their female partners. This is the way human anatomy, physiology, biology and the mentality of sexuality were originally conceived. At the present time however, no ideas are being generated for the second purpose of sexuality — for the birth of any type of sentient entity. Instead, the first and the third factors of sexuality are triggered (knowledge and pleasure).

And finally **the fourth scenario**: The same as above, but one partner is able to have many orgasms during sexual intercourse, while the other has only one. From this situation, how many sentient entities are born, if at all?

First of all, the ability to have multiple orgasms during any current sexual intercourse, is a female prerogative only. It is extremely rare that a male is able to have multiple orgasms in sequence, in the same manner as a female. In the vast majority of cases a male can have only one orgasm during any particular sexual intercourse. At a very young age, sometimes a teenage male can have two orgasms during one session. The older he gets, the less likely that a man experiences such an occurrence. Males need to have some break time in between sexual intercourse in order to be able to achieve another orgasm. The older he gets, the longer the times required for that to happen. Again, this is the way human sexuality was structured by the pseudo-creators.

Of course, at the present time, no ideas are being generated in the process of this particular act for the birth of any sentient entity, unless of course, both partners approach such an act with a totally wrong, negative, improper and bad intention and motivation. In that case, as indicated above, the forces of the negative state may use such an act for their own adverse purposes. In the past, from these types of acts, either a positive entity or a human proper could be born, depending on the needs that existed at the time. Regardless of how many orgasms were experienced, it is not the numbers that counted in this respect but the fact of sexual intercourse itself and the purpose for which it was approached and undertaken. Thus, in most instances, only one sentient entity was born on planet Zero from this particular act.

However, all these births were occurring in the past as a result of the ideas produced by the two positive agents on planet Zero. But even in the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

past, the rules for these acts to occur on planet Zero were different than in the positive state. Thus, you are advised not to try to transfer or apply the rules of the positive state to the conditions under which you were at that time on this planet and under which you operate at the present time. Because of the specificity, uniqueness and intimacy of such sexual acts, and because in your particular case, as My true representatives, such acts are strictly individualized, personalized and privatized, it is a matter for you to establish, from the position of your own intuition, the kind of outcome that any of your sexual involvements would, could and should have. Because of this fact, nothing more can be said about this issue.

Peter: Thank You very much for this explanation. I hope that Monika, of the Czech Republic, although originally of the Slovak Republic, will be satisfied. And now, if You don't have anything else, I would like to ask my own question.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Go ahead, Peter, with your question. For now, I am done with My elaboration on the requested issue.

Peter: Although many things were revealed concerning the false concept of reincarnation in the books of Your New Revelation, I would like to go back to this issue with You. The reason for this request is in one incident that so far has never been properly explained or revealed. Tom Oudal of Texas and I discussed this issue in a private conversation. It relates to Your statement about John the Baptist, in which, You indicated that he was Elijah-the prophet. The followers of the concept of reincarnation utilize this statement of Yours as the strongest proof that there is such a thing as literal physical reincarnation. May I ask You humbly to shed some light on this issue?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Most certainly, Peter; I would be glad to do so. Although your explanation to Tom about Elijah and John the Baptist fully and properly explained this issue, for the sake of other readers of these Dialogs, let Me elaborate on it again.

From a general standpoint regarding the false concept of reincarnation, if it were true and such a thing as literal physical reincarnation were to exist, and if I were to use your expression to describe My attitude about this issue, which I often do, Peter, then I would have to say that believing in such a false concept is an insult to My Absolute Creative Effort. Consider this: What are the major factors behind this concept? A need to have retribution and/or reward for whatever you did during any of your previous reincarnations into the life of planet Zero. Do you really

believe that planet Zero, with its human life, would be able to provide anyone in a just and objective manner, with conditions that would fulfill the requirements of the so-called personal Karma? Such a supposition is totally and completely wrong because one would be constantly reincarnating into a life of further problems, with which human life is imbued. Thus, one would be bringing back his/her old problems and acquiring new ones, compounding those problems ad infinitum. And not only that, but by doing that, one would be contributing toward building up the negative state's cache, from which, it could be supplied by all those compounded problems to continue in its pseudo-life, also ad infinitum. After all, the negative state lives and functions by them. One of the reasons why I don't allow anyone to physically and literally reincarnate on planet Zero into human life, is to prevent this from ever happening. Instead, there are other places in the multidimensional mode of being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence where one is able to accomplish the goals of rewards or retributions without the need to go back into something which only would make it far worse for him/her.

But let's get back to the issue of Elijah and John the Baptist. First of all, what I said was that John the Baptist was functioning or performing his work in the spirit of Elijah. In no way does that statement denote that he was the literal physical reincarnation of Elijah. Secondly, both Elijah and John the Baptist were prophets. Because of that designation, they shared a common line established for that purpose from the spiritual world to planet Zero. Thus, they were in a similar mode of functioning.

However, let us assume for a moment that John the Baptist was the true incarnation of Elijah. Notice please, I am using the word 'incarnation' and not 'reincarnation.' Why is that? Because no one knows that Elijah has never actually incarnated on planet Zero as a typical human. He was a powerful spirit from Me, who was able to materialize himself on planet Zero into a human body without going through the typical human animalistic process of birth in a mother's womb, in order to do some important work on My behalf. Due to the fact that he was not born in a typical human fashion, neither was he subjected to typical physical human death. As you know, he was taken away into heaven in a chariot of fire in front of the eyes of his disciple Elisha. Thus, neither did he experience human birth nor human death. For that reason, even if John the Baptist had been Elijah, his coming back could not be considered a reincarnation. Moreover, when John the Baptist was interrogated by the priests and Levites about his origin, he flatly denied that he was Elijah, or Christ or any other known prophet. Thus, he completely refuted the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

possibility of being a reincarnation of any of them. John the Baptist was sent by Me to prepare the way for My incarnation into human life. The baptism by water which he performed on the inhabitants of that region where I was to be incarnated was a symbolical depiction or spiritual correspondence for the purification from evils and falsities and the acceptance of truth. In an absolute sense, I am the Absolute Truth. Thus, by baptizing people with water — with the pure truth — and in that process getting rid of their evils and falsities, the way was prepared for the Absolute Truth — Me. That way, the contact with Me could not result in their annihilation. Besides some others, this is one symbolical meaning of the function of John the Baptist.

Peter: Thank You very much for Your explanation. Is there anything else that needs to be discussed today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Not today. I would like for you to take a rest now, Peter. Have a nice and pleasant afternoon.

Forty Ninth Dialog

February 25, 1999

Peter: Interestingly enough, after all that flooding of so many questions two days ago, everything seems to be quiet and no one is asking anything. Yesterday we were talking about John the Baptist. Unless You would like to make some additional comments about anything You wish, I would like to ask You, if I may, in connection with John the Baptist, to comment on Your statement regarding him, as recorded in Luke 7:28, and I quote, *“For I say to you, among those born of women there is not a greater prophet than John the Baptist; but he who is least in the kingdom of God is greater than he.”* This statement is somewhat confusing. If John the Baptist was the greatest prophet of all, why is it that he who is least in Your kingdom is greater than he? What does it actually mean?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Before answering your question, Peter, I would like to add something to what we discussed yesterday. It relates to the fundamental law of Creation which states that everything proceeds from within to without and that this law cannot be broken. As you know, Peter, in order to activate the negative state and its specific lifestyle, as well as its end product — human life, it was necessary to deviate from that law. As long as you consistently follow all procedures and creative efforts in accordance with the requirements of that law, it is impossible to activate and to put into motion any other type of life.

On the other hand, it is utterly impossible to initiate any type of life other than the positive, within the domain of the positive state, by trying to avoid application of that law in the process of your creative or, in this case, of pseudo-creative efforts. Any attempt to break or to avoid that law would end in total failure.

In order to succeed in this pseudo-creative effort, it was necessary to separate from the sphere and atmosphere of the positive state a certain contingent of sentient entities, as well as a certain amount of very specific energy, and place them all in a state totally different from that of the positive state. Once separated, a great gulf was fixed between the positive state and the negative state so that for a long time, no one was able to cross it in either direction. The crossover couldn't happen until all conditions for the establishment of pseudo-life and human life were achieved, and different types of pseudo-laws were applied and instituted that totally opposed the multiversal law of 'from within to without,' as

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

well as any other laws of the positive state. If crossovers were to be possible during the time of activation of the negative state, its activation would totally fail. The reason for this failure would be in the fact that the mentioned multiversal law would prevent it from happening because it would exert its influence through the line that would connect it to the positive state.

However, within the domain of the positive state, that law has never been violated. As you know, the positive state consists of its own spiritual dimension, intermediate dimension and physical dimension. All causes are initiated in the spiritual dimension, proceed to the intermediate dimension and end in the physical dimension where they have their effects. From there a feedback is provided which goes back through the intermediate dimension to the spiritual dimension where the impact and effect of its causes on all dimensions are registered and utilized for initiation of further causes. This is how everything has been occurring, at all times, in the positive state.

Because of the above described factors, nothing of this nature can be applied to human life and how things have been proceeding in it, as well as in the negative state in general. One of the major reasons why so little is known to humans and everyone else in the Zone of Displacement about the true nature of life of the positive state, is to prevent them from trying to utilize any methods or lifestyle of the positive state in their own domain. Incongruency and discord of the two systems is of such tremendous proportions that if humans and other creatures were to mix, it would be like mixing together matter and antimatter. Such a mixture would result in a spectacular explosion that would annihilate the entire humanity and everyone else in the negative state without a trace.

This is one of the reasons why, up to this point, such a mixture was not possible and why the entire positive state was kept, symbolically speaking, far away from the negative state. However, from the beginning of transmission of My New Revelation conditions were set-up for shortening the distance between the two states and bringing them closer and closer together until during the currently ongoing shift, the positive state was placed in the midst of the negative state.

As was revealed in the previous Dialogs, this positioning is required and is very essential if eternal elimination of the negative state can take place. It was also revealed that I built a special type of insulation placed around the members of the positive state, the members of the negative state, and humans proper so that their mixture would cause no harm to

anyone or anything. Now we have here a setup that has never been in existence before. Within each state, the insulation factor prevents any seepage of each others' laws and lifestyles so there is no contamination and poisoning of each others' spheres and atmospheres. For that reason, regardless of how close they are to each other, or in the midst of one another, they still function within their own parameters. As long as the lessons and learning are continued, the negative state and human life have to follow their established pseudo-laws and pseudo-rules.

These facts are brought to your attention, or rather, it is a reminder to you to not expect any apparent or obvious changes in the structure and dynamics of life of the negative state and human life as far as their pseudo-laws and pseudo-rules are concerned. You were warned previously that as the condensation factor of the negative state is becoming more and more dense and intense, its apparent manifestation in human life will become progressively more negative and evil. You have already been a witness to this happening in your own localities.

However, because of the special insulation that I placed around you, and because by your spirit and soul you were positioned in the midst of the positive state, you, as My true representatives, by placing all your trust and hope in Me, and surrendering your will and your entire life to Me, will be fully protected from any adverse effects from the results of the negative state's condensation process and from the poisonous atmosphere of the human life.

At the present time during the currently ongoing shift, your duty and responsibility, by your own free will and choice, is to radiate into human life and into the negative state in general, from the position of your unconditional love and wisdom, the state of peace, calmness, serenity and tranquility and, most importantly, non-judgmental attitude, mercy, forgiveness, acceptance and the full understanding of the fact that everyone is situated in a position where they are supposed to be; that everything serves some positive and good purpose in its ultimate outcome. No matter where you are, no matter what type of work or job you do or hold or, in some cases, you don't do or hold, no matter with whom you are involved or how you are involved, you are there because you are needed there in order to provide to that place, condition, state, situation, or wherever you find yourself at each point of your current life, these characteristics of the positive state. By doing that, you will be establishing a very important foundation on which transformation of the typical negative type of human life into a positive type of human life will be accomplished, as exemplified by the members of the New Universe.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

In this process, your collaborative effort with the members of the New Universe is very crucial. It is with these members of the New Universe who, with your help and cooperation, will be able to build this foundation. After all, human life as such, because of its sentient character, cannot be destroyed. However, it can be transformed from its purely negative connotation to its purely positive connotation as manifested in the lives of the members of the New Universe. The possibility of this transformation, as you know, Peter, was established by the process of making My Human Divine after I made My Divine human. I am purposefully not capitalizing the word 'human' after the words 'I made My Divine...' in order to emphasize the important fact that I chose, by My own free will and choice, to lower Myself to the level of humans, becoming one of them. However, once I made that human within Me Divine, following that process, it is being designated as Human — with a capital 'H.'

The importance of this process, of making My human Divine, cannot be emphasized enough. On the successful accomplishment of that act, not only did I completely change My Nature, but I made it possible for humans to be saved from the negative aspects of their nature, placing them into a condition of transformation into purely positive aspects. My New Nature enabled Me, also, to create My New Universe that reflects, in its relative condition, this Absolute Act and provides for humans this important possibility.

Your position and role in this process, as My true representatives, is therefore, very crucial and significant because most of this work will be done through your behavior, attitude, understanding, acceptance and manifestation of all positive attributes contained in the members of the New Universe and made available to you by them. In an important sense, you will become very effective mediators of those attributes from the members of the New Universe. Of course, as always, only if you agree to do so by your own free will and choice.

Whatever has been conveyed to you up to this point in this particular Dialog, leads us, obliquely, to the answer to your question, Peter, about My statement relating to John the Baptist. At the first glance, there seems to be no connection between My statement at that time and what I have been saying to you up to this very dot. In that statement, which I made during My First Coming, is contained the mystery of positioning various forces within the positive state as well as within human life on planet Zero. The issue here is lowering yourself to the level of human life which is considered to be a manifestation of the most extreme externalization. The word 'lowering' is not a good expression or

description of this process. The more appropriate expression to use could be something like coming out from the state of internals to the state of ultimate externals to the point of losing any contact with, and in some cases even awareness of the internals, or that they even exist at all.

The process here is described how such positioning can be accomplished and how it compares to the state of internals designated here by the words 'kingdom of God.' The only way one can relinquish the state of internals, or, in this case, the kingdom of God is by being born through a human woman. She provides such possible means through her womb. The positioning in her womb accomplishes a total separation from the state of internals or the kingdom of God and places one into the state of externals without any apparent connectedness to his/her original source.

Because in the connotation of the discussed case, woman does not represent a female gender, but the negative state in its totality; to be born of women in general, signifies to accept the conditions of the negative state and human life in particular.

If you compare this condition with the conditions that exist in the kingdom of God, then anyone there would be in a greater degree of knowledge and understanding than anyone born of women. Being born of women, because of the negative connotation of this process, means to be limited in all aspects of one's life.

This condition, as you know, is very specific to human life. However, if an agent of the positive state chose to be born into human life, and if he/she had a very special mission from Me to become someone who prepares the way for My entrance into the human life, in this case, John the Baptist, he would be considered the greatest prophet of all times for the simple reason that no one else had been in that particular role before him and no one else would be in that role after him. However, regardless of how important that role was from the human standpoint and from the standpoint of the situation which existed and still exists on planet Zero, because of the gross limitations into which human life is embedded, even if anyone in human life would have the greatest possible abilities, gifts, talents, understanding and knowledge, as well as mind control, as many prophets of those times had, he/she would still be in their much lesser degree than someone in the kingdom of God. For this reason, *'he who is least in the kingdom of God is greater than he.'*

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

The issue here is the relativity of one's condition. The more remote one is positioned from a state of internals, the greater degree of relativity one acquires. If you find yourself positioned in the state which is totally separated from the internals, and your entire being is placed in an ultimate state of the externals, your relativity would be of the most extreme nature. Because human life is the embodiment of this extreme condition, anyone incarnating into human life would be suffering the problem of the extreme relativity to anyone or anything not in that position.

So, within the confines of this extreme relative condition one would be able to accomplish only as much as the limitations of that extremeness would allow him/her to reach.

However, even in this condition there are differences in how much one can accomplish or how far one can go with what is available to him/her. Someone, who is able to fully utilize all available potentials of this condition, would be considered much greater in comparison with someone who is not able to do so. The more awareness of the existence of the internal states, the more utilization of the available resources in the external states. And vice versa, of course.

On the other hand, in comparison with what can be accomplished in the positive state, designated here as the kingdom of God, the accomplishments of one who is positioned in the extreme externals, seems like nothing. But if you look at his/her accomplishments from the position of human life, in comparison with someone in the same position, he/she would be considered the greatest among equals, so-to-speak.

This is the perspective in which My statement of that time needs to be seen and understood. In essence, I was describing, obliquely, the nature of the positive state, the nature of the human life and the situation with someone who chooses to incarnate on planet Zero through a woman's womb but whose origin was in the positive state.

Even I, during My separation from My Essence-Father on planet Zero, was in the state of limitations which wouldn't allow Me to do more than was appropriate within those limitations. As you know, I had to wait to be asked by other humans to do something for them before I could do anything for them. And even then, they had to have faith in My ability to do so. Otherwise, it wouldn't work.

Of course, under those conditions, to do something more than the defined limitations of human life would cause tremendous damage because it would take away from humans the familiar ground on which their life is built. In order to prevent that from happening, I had to confine My works to familiar grounds.

My so-called miraculous works didn't violate in any way those requirements because humans of that time, in that particular region where I did those works were very familiar with the miracles from My prophets whom I provided for them during the history of their existence. Why do you think such provisions were made? All those famous and powerful prophets were sent to them by Me in order to provide such familiarity to humans so that they would be prepared for My appearance among them. Because at that time, in the majority of the people's view I was considered to be a powerful prophet, therefore, it was expected of Me to perform such miracles. So, from this position, no crossing of the boundaries of their gross limitations occurred.

What relevance does all this have for you in your present condition? Some of you are perhaps frustrated in the limits that you are experiencing in your current life on planet Zero, as well as in your position, work, job, unemployment, physical or mental health or in whatever you are experiencing and going through. These limitations could be very unpleasant and might cause all kinds of personal problems and adverse mental states, such as depression, anxiety, fears, uncertainty, irritability, indecisiveness and similar states of mind.

In view of the revealed facts, it is obvious that you have to function with what is available to each one of you without expecting or wanting or desiring more.

No matter how difficult it seems to be on the external level, if you accept your condition for what it is, knowing that this is the way it is supposed to be, and knowing that you do your best under any conditions, and that you make an all-out effort to utilize as much as possible everything that is available to you within the gross limitations of your human life, you are fulfilling your mission and you are illustrating your ability to properly cope with all situations which are put before you. By doing that, you are becoming My true representatives.

Peter: Thank You very much for Your clarifications and answer to my question. Is there anything else today that You would like to add?

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. No, not today. There are some other things that you need to do. So, go and do them. Have a pleasant afternoon.

Fiftieth Dialog

February 26, 1999

Peter: This morning I would like to bring to Your attention some issues raised by Dr. Beth Ann Voien in her letter to me, as well as claims of some readers of these Dialogs that they are unable to experience the state of inwardness or to have any access to You or to the members of their spiritual families.

The Lord Jesus Christ: I would recommend addressing Beth Ann's questions first and then proceed with your request, Peter.

Peter: Thank You very much. Beth Ann is asking if, at the present time, there is anything more to elaborate on the phrase in the Bible, "there shall be no night there." (Apocalypse Chapter 21, verse 25).

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, that issue was nicely elaborated upon in ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***, Chapter 18, page 573. Perhaps it would be a good idea to reread that Chapter to refresh your memory. From the position of the currently ongoing shift, because night is equated with the activation of the negative state, as well as with the life of the negative state, that statement clearly indicates that nothing of the negative state will ever again be in its pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. You have to understand that before the negative state was activated and put into motion, no nights, even in the physical connotation of that word, had ever been in existence. I, as well as all members of My positive state, reside in constant light because in an Absolute Sense, I am the Absolute Light. However, in the spiritual connotation of that word, the word 'light' also means to always be enlightened, with total clarity of any sentient mind in the positive state of My Creation about all aspects of their lives. This is the reason it is said that all members of My positive state reside in constant light and that I am the Absolute Light. It also means that nothing is hidden from Me — absolutely nothing.

In order to activate the negative state, it was necessary to get out from under that light. As long as you are in that light, no possibility exists for any such activation. In this sense, light is the knowledge of all consequences, results and outcomes of anything that is being considered for activation and implementation. With such knowledge, being in its light, it would be impossible to proceed with such a plan. Therefore, as you remember, a certain contingent of sentient entities, known to you under the name of the pseudo-creators, went out of My light,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

symbolically speaking, so that no such knowledge of consequences, results and outcomes of their planned actions could be discerned or recognized by them. Otherwise, they could do nothing about their plans.

Once you turn yourself away from that light, by that process, you establish darkness and night. In the spiritual connotation of the words ‘darkness and night,’ you have a state of total ignorance and no proper knowledge of anything (no light to enlighten you about anything!). Because of that you end up in fabrication and acceptance of distortions and falsities about anything. Thus, in this connotation, ‘night’ signifies no knowledge, no understanding and no perception of any truth and good and replacement of them with falsities and evils. Because such things are predicated only about the nature of the negative state, it is the negative state that is in total pitch darkness and blackest possible night. So, whenever you make a statement that, “there shall be no night there,” it obviously signifies that nothing of the negative state and its pseudo-life will be plaguing My Creation for good and forever.

As you know, shortly before the negative state — the night and darkness — is eliminated, just before the dawn strikes with its first sunrays, the night and its darkness become the blackest and most pronounced. This means that the negative state will become more negative, more evil, and more powerful than it has ever been before. You are in the midst of witnessing this process. It is a sign of entering into its final phase, as was indicated to you in one of our previous Dialogs. During this time of pitch darkness and blackest night, you, as My true representatives, remain the only shining light available to humans on planet Zero. Your life and your presence on this planet is the only connecting link to the positive state which allows this planet to sustain its life. If you were to stop shining that light by means of your positive attitude, nothing would remain here that would have any trace of anything of My Truth and Good. In that case, total darkness and night would set in, causing all inhabitants on this planet to become totally blind.

Fortunately, your presence on this planet and the availability of My New Revelation in its three sources established a condition for everyone here to eventually be healed from their blindness and for heralding the upcoming dawn with its bright light which totally dispenses with all remnants of night and darkness, no matter how pitch black it was. So, from this you clearly see how important your role and position is as My true representatives.

Peter: Yes, it is clear. Beth Ann's next request is for clarification of the issues of femininity and masculinity and the purpose for omitting in the Thirty Fifth Dialog, page 300, the word 'Herself.'

The Lord Jesus Christ: Some of this issue was addressed in the Thirty First Dialog, pages 263-264. Perhaps, it would be a good idea to reread that statement in order to dispense, once and for all, with any concerns that in our Dialogs or during our conversations we are neglecting or underestimating the feminine principle or placing above it the masculine principle in any mode. Such concerns should never again enter anyone's mind after reading and accepting My New Revelation. It is based on a total unification and equalization of My Absolute Feminine and Masculine Principles. Please understand it clearly, that without such equalization and unification, I could never be able to acquire My New Nature or become what I Am. And not only that, but without it I could never be able to conquer the negative state and subjugate all evils and falsities. Don't forget, please, the negative state's life is rooted in separation, disunion, disregard and slavery of one principle over another. Therefore, if those principles within Me were to be in such a condition, inherent in the life of the negative state, I would be the negative state and I couldn't be Absolute. Anything of this nature happening or being is totally inconceivable. So, don't think even for a minute that we are disregarding the importance of equal emphasis of both principles. Otherwise, we would be supporting the negative state.

The reason why I purposefully omitted the word 'Herself' in the mentioned Dialog on page 300 should be obvious from the content of that Dialog. Look in what context it was said. It was said in the context of refuting humans' conceptualization and understanding of My Nature and their tendencies to expect Me to be the way they project: How I should be, how I should behave, what I should talk about, how I should talk, what kinds of words I should or shouldn't use, how I should express Myself and similar nonsense, as you, Peter, like to say. In the false and distorted conceptualization of the majority of humanity I am perceived as an Almighty God, Father of all, etc. The word 'Almighty' and similar designations of My Nature, relates to My Masculinity, whereas such concepts as love, goodness, compassion, mercy, kindness and similar attributes, relate to My Femininity. Because, in the view of humanity, the emphasis is on My Masculine side, and because the way I am depicted in all of their foolish religions is as a male figure, in order to reflect the falsity and total inadequacy of their perception of Who and How I am, I purposefully omitted the word 'Herself' so that the ridiculousness of such a conceptualization of My Nature could be exposed. No other purpose exists for omitting the word 'Herself.'

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Peter: Thank You very much for this elaboration. Could I ask You now to elaborate further on the issue that I raised?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Most certainly, Peter. Let us proceed. Although to some extent this issue was covered in the Sixteenth Dialog, and in some other places, it is appropriate to raise it again. You are concerned, Peter, that some readers of My New Revelation have been telling you that they have no access to Me or their within or even to their intuition. You are afraid that because of that they are unable to fulfill the requirement, so often emphasized in My New Revelation, for their own verification of the genuineness, truthfulness, authenticity and source of these Dialogs and two other sources of My New Revelation. You are also afraid and anxious that because of this alleged inability, they would eventually recede from or would totally reject My New Revelation. This is especially troublesome for you, Peter, because of the promises of the beautiful experiences that everyone could have if they would only follow the procedures as described in the fourth chapter of ***Who Are You and Why Are You Here?*** and in the fifth chapter of ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***.

When the readers of those two books started to report to you that they are unable to experience anything, no matter how faithfully and consistently they followed the procedures described in those two chapters, you got almost panicky. We already mentioned the reasons why those methods and procedures were no longer working. They were replaced with a totally individualized and personalized approach and with everyone's reliance on their own intuition or their own feeling, logic, reason, intellect and similar factors.

The question then is: Is there anyone out there, who is a reader and practitioner of My New Revelation, who doesn't have any access either to Me directly or to the members of his/her spiritual family or to his/her intuition? Is such a thing at all conceivable?

Here we are dealing, once again, with the issues of expectations and projections. There is a very strong human tendency to expect things to happen the way each individual portrays it in his/her mind or expects it to happen or to be experienced. Again, they are looking for commonalities and familiarities in how this process needs to be accomplished or to take place. Because of that, they would like to have an exact prescription, in the minutest details, of how such an access should be achieved and established.

As mentioned before on many occasions, all methods and practices in human life, which have such a blanket, all-inclusive, one-fits-all application, were totally and completely subsumed or taken over by the forces of the negative state. As you also know, this was permitted to happen in order to give the negative state a chance to condense itself for the purpose of its pseudo-winning. Because of this fact, unless you had such an access before that time, and unless there was a prior agreement to have such an access under all conditions, no matter what, for your own protection you are being prevented from having this access *by the means and modes* as described in the above mentioned chapters.

Does this situation signify that you really don't have any access to Me, or to the members of your spiritual family, or to the members of the New Universe, or to your intuition, or to the state of your inwardness? It depends from which direction or from what position you look at it. If you look at it from your typical human position, or from the position of expectations, prescriptions or familiarity or what type of access other readers have, in that case, you don't have that type of access. However, if you look at it from your own individualized and personalized position you have always had access to Me, to the members of your spiritual family, to the members of the New Universe, to your intuition, to your within. How do you objectively recognize that you truly have such an access?

Consider this: If you read, ponder and think about My New Revelation and make an all-out effort to practice its principles, by that factor itself, you are in constant communication with Me and with all of us. I can assure you of one very important thing: If I were not present with you and communicating with you by means of My New Revelation, you would never be able not only to understand what is contained in it but also never be able to accept it as My True Word. The factor of acceptance of My New Revelation and the effort to practice it for the sake of principles, constitutes My communicating with you. It also means that your intuition is working properly and effectively because, if it were not, you would never be able to recognize or determine that what My New Revelation contains is the real truth in an absolute sense. No matter what you think, no matter how much you deny that you have no intuition, or that you are unable to access Me and all others assigned to you by Me, by the factor of reading, understanding and accepting My New Revelation, you very obviously have everything you need in order to accomplish anything at all. It is only a matter of recognizing and accepting what you have and to use it without looking at what others have and trying to adopt methods and practices which are working for them but which would be totally ineffectual in your particular case.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Another point to this issue that needs a reminder is that for some very important spiritual reasons, applicable only to you personally, I and you mutually agreed to the fact that you will have no overt or obvious sense about having such an access. At the same time, everyone of you was endowed with certain abilities, talents, gifts, logic, reason, intellect and proper perception that would allow you to function properly and effectively in your human life and would lead you toward discovery, reading, understanding and accepting My New Revelation. Without being equipped by Me with these special sensors, you would never be able to do so.

However, let's look at this issue in a different way. In order to establish a desirable mode of communication with Me and the members of your spiritual family and of the New Universe, as well as with your within, you should recognize and accept the following fact: If you, by your own free will and choice, accepted My offer to become My true representatives on planet Zero, then you are functioning solely from Me and from the position of My positive state. How does it work from a practical standpoint? Consider this: Whenever you do something, whenever you are facing some important decisions, whenever you think about someone or something, whenever you are in the process of undertaking some enterprise or anything at all, no matter what it is, without any exception or exclusion, if you, at the very same time, do all that and everything else, with Me on your mind, with the members of your spiritual family and of the New Universe on your mind, then, in that case, everything happens by My will. And no matter what the outcome is of any of that, that's the way it is supposed to be. If, in this process, you clearly state and if you truly mean your statement in your heart and mind that My will be done in your life always, and if you continue thinking about Me and all of us present with you at any particular time, everything in your life, no matter what it is, no matter how puny it seems to you, will be derived from My Will. By this factor, you have full access to Me and all others assigned to you from the spiritual world, no matter how much or how little or not at all you are consciously aware of our presence and our work with you in this respect.

Every time you do that, as outlined just above, you are doing, thinking, feeling, willing, acting, behaving and whatever you have, from Me, by Me, with Me, through Me, of Me and for Me.

On the other hand, if during any moments of your life in all your spiritual, mental and/or physical activities and undertakings, thoughts or feelings, no matter what they are, or how significant or insignificant you think they are, you neglect to think or to consider Me and the

spiritual factors of your life, the members of your spiritual family and of the New Universe, as well as of your state of inwardness, in that case, you are functioning from the position of the human aspects of your nature. Because of that, during such times, you are in the state of discontinuation of your access to Me and to all others present with Me in you. Your decisions, or whatever it is, and all their outcomes would be inappropriate and inconsistent with My will for you. You will be doing that, or whatever, from your own ego state, that is, as you know by now so well, in a direct opposition to My will and to your true self.

Whenever you are in the realization that you are My true representatives, and if you keep this important fact in the foreground of your mind at all times, no matter what, no matter how little or no conscious awareness you have about having such an access to us and to your true spiritual self, you are in constant interaction with all of us. After all, you are now positioned in the midst of the positive state. Remember that.

Peter: Thank You very much for this beautiful reminder. Is there anything else You would like to comment on today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Just a brief comment on the issue that Dan of New York mentioned a few minutes ago when he called you on the phone about Islam and the Jewish religion. The Jewish religion, which strictly adheres to the concept of One God, existed long before Islam was established. So, why did I need to allow another religion to come to its fruition that would emphasize so strongly the concept of One God? Wouldn't such an act be redundant?

At the time when Islam was established, the Jewish nation, as such, was non-existent. All inhabitants of its country, together with their religion, as predicted by Me and other prophets, were dispersed and scattered around the known world at that time (Diaspora). This happened to them as a consequence of their choice to reject Me as their true Messiah. Do you remember their shout to Pilate, "*His blood be on us and on our children.*"? By saying that they brought upon themselves a terrible retribution.

So, at that time, for all practical purposes, there was no such thing as the Jewish religion because there was no state or country or large community which could sustain a unified and consistent ideology of One Indivisible God. And not only that but by the factor of their dispersion in various places in the world, they formed many diverse and contradictory concepts within their own religion. Moreover, they were constantly

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

persecuted by Christians and others, and for that reason, most of their religious rituals, dogmas, teachings and practices were kept underground and in secrecy. Under those conditions, their concept of One Indivisible God could not enter humanity because humanity looked at them as the ones who killed their own God, bringing upon themselves a well-deserved retribution (in their view), as depicted in the above quoted verse. Also, because of that, at that time, they looked at their religion as something bad, putrid, evil, and to be despised and rejected.

So, because of these facts, it was necessary to bring about a more coherent, unified and consistent religion which would sustain the concept of God as someone who is One and Indivisible. Islam served that purpose well. As you see from this comment, your conclusions about this issue, in your telephone conversation with Dan, were not exactly right. And this is all I would like to contribute to this issue. Perhaps, Peter, it would be a good idea to take a longer break and prepare yourself to do some traveling. Should any need arise to continue in our dialoging, we would do so as needed and if needed. In the meantime, have a marvelous time.

Peter: Thank You so much for Your comments and all these dialogs.

Fifty First Dialog

March 3, 1999

Peter: I would like to interrupt, if I may, our break in dialoging in order to bring to Your attention some concerns expressed by one of the readers of these Dialogs and my inappropriate reaction to these concerns. May I?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Of course you may, Peter. It was clearly indicated at the very end of the Fiftieth Dialog that if a need arises to interrupt this break, it should be done. So, go ahead.

Peter: Thank You very much. Actually, there are two concerns and, of course, my stupid reaction to them. The first concern relates to the statement in the Forty Second Dialog about the results of the poll which was conducted shortly after President Clinton's apology following his acquittal by the U.S. Senate. It was stated there that half of the polled population didn't believe in his sincerity. Based on that factor, the psychological indication was made that those people were responding out of their own guilt for not being sincere themselves. The reader of that statement took it somewhat personally because he is Your representative and he believes that he did not act from that type of psychological position. I think the issue here is that You sweepingly proclaimed everyone in that category as insincere themselves. The other concern expressed by the same individual was that, somehow, nothing is mentioned about wisdom but only about unconditional mercy and forgiveness. In his conceptualization, wisdom requires justice in order to balance things out — as was pointed out so many times throughout Your New Revelation. And of course, my reaction to these concerns.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Let Me address your reaction first, Peter. Any time someone expresses such concerns, *in the manner and by the words used for expression of such concerns*, and this is important, it triggers many times over your doubts about the true source of such statements, in this case, whether it is I who said that. For many years now you have been asking for resolving that problem and for being able to restrain yourself from such inappropriate, in your view, reactions. However, as of this date, your request has not been granted. You still have a tendency to react like that. There are important spiritual reasons why, no matter how hard you have been trying to get rid of such reactions, so far you have not been successful. These reasons cannot be revealed at the present time. Some requests of this nature can be granted either much later during your life on this planet or only after you leave human life. Eventually though, your problem will work itself

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

out and you will be free from it — maybe not here and maybe only after you come home to the spiritual world, but nevertheless, it will be worked out.

Peter: All I can say is that I am disgusted with it. I wish I would be able to restrain myself better in situations like that.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Be patient, Peter. Don't forget that everything ultimately serves some good purpose. No matter how burdensome or troublesome it seems to be at each time such reactions are triggered, they do serve something that is needed at this time. And concerns that such reactions of yours, Peter, may discourage the readers from asking you their questions or raising some important spiritual issues with you, are understandable, but I can assure you and all the readers of these Dialogs, that it wouldn't happen.

However, let us go now to the expressed concerns. The first concern, which addressed the issue of insincerity, stems from the misunderstanding of the context in which it was said. We were talking about the representatives of the sample of that poll and not about the entire population. The sample was purposefully chosen, from our side, without the poll-taking individuals' knowledge or conscious awareness, to represent only those in the population who, in their own lives, are prone to be insincere themselves. This was done for the purpose of comparison and illustration of how humans approach such important spiritual issues. It was not meant to be understood as a sweeping generalization applicable to all. We were concentrating solely only on those in human life who, on one hand, have the same type of tendencies to be insincere as they project on someone else and, on the other hand, those who are willing and able to believe that the person in question was sincere.

Because you, as My true representatives, are not considered to be typical humans, even though some of you may side with those who thought that the person in question was insincere, or unwillingly and unwittingly sided for that moment with the renegades, to you such statements are not applicable. Your siding, in this case, was used to bring to your attention the need to recognize the limitation, inadequacy and inappropriateness of the human judgmental attitude and how the factors of projections distort things and place them into a totally wrong perspective. The issue here is to train yourselves to look upon everything from the position of their internal causes — spiritually, and not from their externals — non-spiritually, as the majority of humanity does. This is not discrimination but differentiation.

Therefore, the major and most important issue in that particular case was to train you, as My true representatives, in looking at and accepting things of that nature the way I and the members of the positive state do.

Your preoccupation with the need for justice is more congruent with your former role as agents of My positive state. In that role, it was appropriate to look at everything from the position of the need to bear the consequences of any choice, decision, state of mind or behavior. At that time, the emphasis was on the law of cause and effect or actions and reactions or choices and consequences. In that setup, justice was prevailing above everything. And even though many individuals, in your view, could get away with murder, for example, some crimes of that nature required a different brand of justice than your human criminal justice system, or whatever human system, was able to provide. In that case, justice was done elsewhere, beyond your planet, where more appropriate means exist to accomplish such a goal. So, as you see from this example, the human expression that someone can get away with murder, or whatever, is totally wrong. It tells you very clearly how limited and narrow the human perspective is. No one has ever been getting away with anything. It was only a matter of time and place. You are being asked to dispense with this type of totally inadequate and wrong human perspective. Once again, this is an issue of training you in taking a much broader, more realistic and real perspective than that with which human nature is able to provide you.

You can see from the above description what could happen if some of My statements, or anyone's statements, are taken out of context of the entire topic discussed in the mentioned Dialog and narrowly applied to any particular individual. Once again, our repeated statement that nothing should be taken personally in any of these Dialogs, was somewhat disregarded. Unless otherwise noted, or unless specifically related to you as My true representatives, whenever we are talking about events in the negative state and human life on planet Zero, or anything related to their nature, it is not applicable to you. Remember this. However, if you take it personally and apply it to yourself, it only means that you still have some problems related to that portion of your human nature of which you need to be aware and which you need to get rid of, or, at least, to learn how to control.

Peter: What about the issue of lack of wisdom in that Dialog and maybe in all these Dialogs? What happened to the issue of balancing?

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

The Lord Jesus Christ: Again, this is a misperception and misunderstanding of relatedness among certain concepts used in our Dialogs. At the same time, it is indicative of the nature of the currently ongoing shift. As you noticed, in the process of our dialoging, the shift to and emphasis on **unconditional love, mercy, compassion, empathy, understanding, acceptance and forgiveness** has been prevailing above everything else. This is not by coincidence. If you are placing the entirety of the positive state and its membership in the midst of the negative state and its end product — human life, in order to prevent them from being eternally and justly condemned for what they unleashed on the entire Creation, as the wisdom of justice would require, and as the presence of the positive state itself, by its very nature, would require, you need to insulate all involved from that to happen.

Of what do you think the insulation factors or their spiritual materials consist of or are? They are or consist of **unconditional love, mercy, compassion, empathy, understanding, acceptance and forgiveness**. Without them, no one could survive in the negative state or human life. But bear in mind please, that without them no one in the positive state could survive either for the simple reason that such an outcome would be inconceivable for anyone in My Creation or to Me personally. You have to understand very clearly that life in the negative state and human life, or life in the Zone of Displacement and all its Hells, is punishment and retribution in itself and by itself.

Do you remember what was so strongly emphasized in the last paragraph on page 365 of the Forty Second Dialog? That **unconditional love, mercy, compassion, empathy, understanding, acceptance and forgiveness** are applicable only after illustrating and demonstrating all consequences, outcomes, and results of any evil, wrong or bad deeds. In other words, after everyone bears and experiences all consequences of such deeds. This statement signifies that only after the wisdom of just dues being fulfilled, such categories could be applied and attributed to anyone who is asking for them.

However, because all participants in the negative state and human life are already in their own hells, and because the punishment and retribution portion for the activation of the negative state has been going on for many millennia, during the currently ongoing shift, the emphasis needs to be switched from the justice and retribution portion of wisdom to **unconditional love, mercy, compassion, empathy, understanding, acceptance and forgiveness**. How else do you expect Me to eliminate the pseudo-life of the negative state and its human life in its negative aspects? By totally destroying it — as your understanding

of the concept of wisdom would require? That would equal elimination of the negative state by the means of the negative state, which would end, not in the elimination of the negative state, but in its further establishment and confirmation of its rights to stay forever. Are you at all able to deduce the unimaginable consequences if such a scenario were to be taken?

So, the nature of the currently ongoing shift is rooted in the establishment of a special condition which would place in everyone's mind, not the issue of justice, punishment, retribution and just dues, which have been going on up to this point, but the issue of **unconditional love, mercy, compassion, empathy, understanding, acceptance and forgiveness**. And this is the very *wisdom* of such a new setup.

However, if you carefully analyze these concepts, what kinds of conclusions would you draw from them? How do they relate to My Absolute Love and Absolute Wisdom with their subsequent application into the relative conditions?

Mercy, compassion and empathy are of pure love; whereas, understanding, acceptance and forgiveness are of pure wisdom. This is the truth of the matter. Because of that, from this understanding, we have never excluded, or neglected or put on the back burner, so-to-speak, wisdom and all its attributes. It has always been present and emphasized whenever we mentioned the words 'understanding,' 'acceptance' and 'forgiveness' and similar attributes. Love always works in cohort with its wisdom; and wisdom always works in cohort with its love. They are inseparable. It is a matter of which aspects of love and its wisdom and wisdom and its love are being put into the foreground and which into the background. From each situation and ongoing shifts, as it analyzes their nature, wisdom always determines for its love which aspects need to be put into immediate application or brought to the obvious and tangible surface.

In order to implement these factors in your life in their practical terms, your position as My true representatives requires from you to shift your awareness from and preoccupation with those aspects of wisdom which, up to this point, emphasized justice, punishment, retribution, condemnation and rejection, to those which emphasize understanding, acceptance and forgiveness founded in unconditional love, mercy, compassion and empathy. When you understand clearly why I permitted the negative state to come to its adverse fruition in the first place, then you accept the necessity for such an act. Once you accept this necessity,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

you are able to forgive. From this chain of sequences you will be able to experience the states of My unconditional love, compassion, mercy and empathy. It was because of My Unconditional Love and Wisdom that I permitted the experiment of the pseudo-life of the negative state and human life to take place. It was because of the ultimate choice for the fullness of the positive state to be chosen and activated by everyone that all these things transpired. No other purpose for it exists.

So, in view of these facts, it would be wise for all of you who read these Dialogs to make proper adjustments and changes in the mode of your thinking, feeling, behaving, acting and relating, as well as in your attitude toward and in the way you look at and analyze the entirety of the negative state and human life in general, and your individual lives in particular. Remember please, what was proper, appropriate, right and correct up to this point, may not be so at present or tomorrow. As mentioned previously, you are in a transitional period. The nature of this particular transitional period is such that it provides you with an opportunity to be trained in these new modes and manners of life. During this period you are given a chance to get rid of your various habits, attachments, dependencies and attitudes that would impede your spiritual progression and your becoming the fullness of My true representatives. Clinging to the old modes of thinking, concepts, ideas and lifestyle, or whatever you have in this respect, which have been an integral part of your everyday function, is no longer tenable. Not only is it not tenable but it would place you into the spotlight, becoming very much visible to the renegades for targeting you and interfering with your normal and healthy spiritual, mental and physical function in whatever role, position or choice you are.

As far as the issue of balancing is concerned, as you remember from Update 20 in the ***Corollaries...***, the energies utilized for balancing the positive as well as the negative state, respectively, were tilted toward the pseudo-creators, in helping them to find the right answers to their existential questions. However, during the ongoing shift, these energies are no longer required to provide such balancing, or given only to the pseudo-creators, because it now goes into the total pseudo-winning of the negative state on planet Zero. In this process, the entirety of the negative state is seeking the answers for the meaning of its pseudo-being and pseudo-existence and for the establishment of understanding within its own sphere about its ultimate purpose and outcome.

Because of this all inclusive expansion, and because of an entirely different positioning of the positive state and the New Universe, your energies, as well as the energies of the entirety of the positive state and

the New Universe, are no longer required for balancing out the positive state on your planet and elsewhere. Instead, they will now go into providing all members of the negative state, and not only the pseudo-creators, with the proper answers about its meaning and purpose, as well as about its ultimate outcome and the needs it served for the entire being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence.

The only way you will be able to work with the members of the negative state in providing them with proper answers, is if you adopt this new role and position, as My true representatives, rooted in My **unconditional love, mercy, compassion, empathy, understanding, acceptance and forgiveness**; thus, as defined above, only if you will be working from the position of the spiritual unification and integration of love and wisdom, goodness and truth and positive works and faith.

The wisdom of the current situation on your planet and in the entire Zone of Displacement requires from you a full-fledged commitment to be in, to exhibit and to manifest such **unconditional love, mercy, compassion, empathy, understanding, acceptance and forgiveness**. At the very moment when you are able to do so, you will become My true representatives in all aspects of your life.

The concepts of objectivity, righteousness, justice and judgment, which are other attributes of wisdom and its love and love and its wisdom, have already been established. They are no longer your concern. They have already been taken care of. Now is the time for the other aspects of love and its wisdom and wisdom and its love to be in full manifestation and application. For that reason you are being asked in all humbleness and humility to stop being preoccupied with them and, instead, to concentrate on the acquirement and implementation of My **unconditional love, mercy, compassion, empathy, understanding, acceptance and forgiveness**. By doing that and by being that way, you will provide proper and truthful answers to all members of the negative state. By doing that, you will prepare them for conversion to the positive state. By doing that, you will fulfill your mission for which you agreed to be incarnated on planet Zero. By doing that, you will become truly wise.

Do I need to say anything more?

Peter: Not for me. I am deeply thankful to You for this elaboration and explanation. Is there anything else You would like to add today?

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. No, not today. I think all of you have sufficient food for your thoughts. Go, rest and relax for the rest of today and take care of some other business.

Fifty Second Dialog

March 5, 1999

Peter: Interestingly enough, today I would like to present for Your consideration, two questions. I have been pondering one question for some time but it was not until yesterday when I received an E-mail from Mr. Beneš, in which he was asking a very similar question, that it became obvious to me that I should present it to You. The second question, which has been asked for some time now by Heather of Rochester, Minnesota, has a totally opposite connotation although it is somewhat connected to the first one. I look at these two questions as two extremes of the function of life and death. The first question relates to the issue of ending one's life voluntarily (not a physician-assisted suicide which we discussed previously) and whether such a voluntary ending happens, or is possible, in the positive state, as well as in the negative state, in a similar fashion as it occurs sometimes in human life on planet Zero. Heather's question relates to the issue of organ transplants in order to preserve human life or to continue in it for some additional time. Both issues relate to free will and freedom of choice either to end one's life or to continue in it. If one is 'condemned,' so-to-speak, to eternal life, does one have the right and privilege to end that life for good and forever? In other words, can anyone choose not to be and not to exist in an absolute sense after he/she agreed to come to his/her individual and personal life?

The Lord Jesus Christ: The first question about the possibility of choosing to end one's life eternally, or not to be and not to exist in an absolute sense, following one's agreement to come to one's life, stems from the misunderstanding of the concept of life itself, in general. As you know, I am the Absolute Life in Myself, by Myself, of Myself and from Myself. Because of this axiomatic factor, any life, no matter what kind it is, in its originating point, may and can derive only from Me. No other state and process of life, as well as its manifestation and actualization is possible under any conditions. As you know, even the pseudo-life of the negative state and human life are possible only because of My Absolute Life. This life energy, which continuously and unceasingly emanates from Me, makes it possible to produce any other derivatives of life from which, also, the pseudo-life and human life were produced.

How does an individual, unique, non-duplicable and personalized life, as reflected in every sentient entity, whether positive or negative or human, come to its fruition? As you remember from our discourse in the Forty Third Dialog, in My Absolute State all ideas of any life are produced and maintained, including the secondary ideas which would be produced in

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

the future by sentient entities, in this case by the pseudo-creators, specifically and particularly the ideas of humans and other creatures of the negative state.

Before those ideas are shifted from their state of being unique ideas to the process of becoming actualized and realized in their own sentient life, a condition is set up to enter an agreement to be and to exist to eternity. This agreement is executed on one important foundation or premise. The prospective sentient entity, in the form of special ideas, is shown in every possible detail in non-time, non-space and non-place condition, the entire unique and specialized content of his/her future life which is to last to eternity.

Thus, any such sentient entity knows precisely what it is that he/she will be facing and what the meaning of his/her life will be. During this illustration the sentient entity is facing his/her ultimate choice to become or not to become, to be or not to be, to exist or not to exist in his/her own individualized, personalized and unique being and existence.

Once the choice is made for being and existence, it is made with the understanding and acceptance of all conditions for such a unique life to come to its eternal fruition. In other words, the prospective sentient entity agrees to be and to exist to eternity without having any desire to recede from his/her unique life. If the original idea of that prospective sentient entity doesn't agree with these set forth conditions, it does not proceed toward its becoming its own unique, individualized and personalized sentient life. So, in this respect, it is totally inconceivable for any sentient life to have a notion or a desire to end one's life in an absolute sense.

However, there is another point to this issue. Because any sentient life in its unique conglomeration is possible either by a direct endowment from Me in the form of a special element taken out from My Absolute Nature and placed into a relative condition, or by derivatives of My Life Force Energies utilized for production of the pseudo-life and human life, in an absolute sense it is My Life, no matter how you look at it. By the factor of its being My Life, I am present in that life, no matter in what form, shape, state, process or condition it is. Due to this presence of Mine in everyone, such thoughts as ending one's life in an absolute sense, cannot enter anyone's mind. It would be as if I am making a decision to end My Absolute Life for good and forever. Can you imagine the consequences, results and outcomes if such a scenario would be possible to execute? In that case, the entire Creation with all its dimensions and multiverse and with all their respective sentient entities would also cease to be and to

exist for good and forever. And because even the pseudo-life of the negative state and human life live and are alive and are possible only by My Absolute Life, they would perish eternally as well.

Because I am Absolute, and My Absolute Life is anchored in My Absolute 'I AM,' and because I always Am, by definition and logic of this Absoluteness, it is impossible for Me not to be and not to exist. At the same time, by the logic of this setup and condition, for any sentient entity who contains My life and who lives by it and is alive, it is impossible not to be and not to exist likewise. By the factor of this interrelatedness, it is utterly impossible for any sentient entity to have an idea, or even a desire, in his/her mind to end his/her life for good and forever. The life force in any sentient entity is such that, ***by its very nature***, it produces on a continuous basis nothing else but an absolute desire to be and to exist for good and forever, no matter what. Simply stated, no other desire or wish or tendency may or can enter one's mind to eternity. These are the conditions of the sentient life's being and existence.

Still, there is another point to this issue. Your question, Peter and Joseph, derives from the position of your human life. The structure and dynamics of the typical human life are such that it may and can produce such states as boredom, misery, suffering, a sense of futility, meaninglessness, and similar adverse states and processes. If someone has this type of experience, it can produce in one's mind a desire to end such a life. However, ending this type of life, as you know, doesn't end the uniqueness of that life as such. Only its human portion can be ended by choice, but not the portion of true life which is contained in the human life. Don't forget that the true life contained in human life makes human life possible at all. Because the portion of true life in human life stems from My Absolute Life, it is subject to the same conditions and setup as any other sentient life in the manner as described above.

Your problem in this respect is that you have absolutely no notion whatsoever, how life in the positive state is structured and upon what kinds of conditions it is based. Your ideas, if you have any at all, of how life in the positive state is, are totally wrong and don't come even remotely close to the reality of that life. Because you have no reliable or true knowledge of the content and manner of life in the positive state, you have a tendency to project into it the same states, processes and conditions that are inherent in your human life. So, it is only from the position of your human life that such a question of the possibility to end one's life can ever enter your mind. No one in the positive state has ever wanted or would want to exercise such thoughts, wishes or desires. After

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

all, they all agreed by their own free will and choice to not have them to eternity. Otherwise, they would never come into their own unique, personalized and individualized being and existence.

The lack of any experiential or theoretical knowledge about the true structure and dynamics of the positive state's life was purposefully established in your mind so as to not terminate your agreement to participate in human life. In essence, as it was indicated to you before in these Dialogs, it was for your own protection. If you were to know what life in the positive state is like or is all about, you would not be able to fulfill your mission on planet Zero and to do your important work for Me while staying there. It is much easier for you to endure human life if you have no such knowledge. Otherwise, your human life would become so unbearable and intolerable that you would really tend to terminate it. In that case, you would fail miserably in your mission.

Because you have no tangible or realistic comparison between your human life and any other type of life, your human life, for the time being, becomes the only reality that makes any sense to you — at least up to a certain point. That way, you are able to accept more readily whatever is happening in the process of your participation in your human life. Only since you were granted My New Revelation were all these facts made available to you and you know now what human life and the negative state are all about. However, for your own protection and for the successful completion of your mission, on your human conscious level, you still are not cognizant about the true nature, structure and dynamics of the positive state's life. Only on your inner spiritual level, as My true representatives, are you able to discern them. However, for the time being, until your mission is completed, it does not enter your human conscious mind. The point here to realize is that the nature of the positive state is such that it provides all its inhabitants with infinitely exciting, productive, creative and innovative possibilities for their development and evolvment which give them unceasing incentives to continue to progress in their lives to eternity. Because of that they can never experience a sense of exhaustion, boredom, futility, tiredness, idleness, meaninglessness and similar emotions, for example, so obvious and pronounced in human life, which would lead them to the conclusion that their life has no meaning and no sense and therefore, should be terminated.

It was not until the negative state and human life were allowed to come into their pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, that such thoughts, feelings, wishes and desires were permitted to be exercised. There is an obvious reason why they were permitted to spring in human life in

particular and in the negative state in general. Such states as these reflect the illusory and unreal conditions on which their life is based and founded. When you live in an illusion of life, when you have no experience about the nature of the true life and what that life is it all about, in this condition, it is conceivable, to produce an idea to end that type of pseudo-life. But look at it this way: What do you, in reality, desire to end? A real life? A true life? No way! It is the illusory, unreal life that you desire to end.

This desire to end the illusory life reflects the temporality of its condition. Can you imagine a scenario in which human life and the pseudo-life of the negative state were to have the same conditions and setup as the true life? No one would ever want to terminate such life. In that case, the negative state could never be eliminated because it would be chosen to be and to exist forever. Also, in that case, the fullness of life of the positive state could never come to its fruition.

Do you remember the conditions under which the negative state was allowed to come into its own pseudo-being and pseudo-existence? The conditions were to illustrate *on a transient and temporary basis* another type of life other than the life stemming directly from Me. This was a binding agreement among all of us. It was with this binding agreement with which those of you who volunteered to take part in that life would not remember that such an agreement was made or that you entered into it by your own free will and choice. Because of the transience and temporality of the negative state's life and human life, the need for its termination was placed into the minds of everyone who participates in that life — also by the binding agreement and choice — so that no notion to continue in it for good and forever could ever become reality.

If you consider the logic of this setup, and if you accept the fact that the negative state and typical human life are, in actuality, an illusion of life and not life in themselves and by themselves, then what are you terminating? You are terminating only an illusion but not life in itself and by itself. Are you able to discern the logic of this situation?

Peter: Definitely. And it makes perfect sense. But what about voluntary suicide?

The Lord Jesus Christ: From the spiritual standpoint, all forms of suicide, as well as in some ways, homicide, derive from the notion of temporality of human life and the negative state's pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. If the notion of illusion of life but not of the real life is

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

contained in the human mind, and if there is no experiential knowledge and understanding of the real life available to humans, as well as to all other creatures in the Zone of Displacement, then such life is in the process of its continuous devaluation. In that case, life, as you know it, becomes valueless and not worth living or, in the case of homicides, can be dispensed without any remorse. After all, what are you killing? In an ultimate sense, nothing. You are killing only an empty notion, a meaningless illusion. This is the way humans rationalize in their unconscious, and very often even on the conscious level, their homicidal and suicidal tendencies. These tendencies are nothing more than a reflection of the true nature of the negative state and its end product — human life. If they were not to serve some important learning, as depicted in the needs of everyone to know the differences among various forms of lives and pseudo-lives, such pseudo-lives would be really valueless and meaningless. As mentioned many times throughout My New Revelation, they clearly show to anyone what not to choose, how not to be, how not to think, how not to feel, how not to behave and how not to live life. Only in this depiction is their true value.

Talking about suicide, in the human culture, with some meager exceptions, suicide has always been considered as something negative, inappropriate or even evil. The judgmental attitude toward suicide has always been somewhat harsh. From the spiritual standpoint, as in everything else, the motivational and intentional factors with which suicide is committed determine whether such an act for terminating one's life, no matter what type of life it is, is condemnable or not. If suicide is committed as a means to get back at someone, to punish them or to make them feel guilty, or for similar selfish and negative reasons, by that act the person committing suicide condemns himself/herself to one of the Hells in order to bear the consequences of such inappropriate, selfish, negative and/or evil intentions and motivation. Other types of suicides, similarly, as with the physician-assisted suicides, are either neutral or they illustrate something important about the nature of human life and the negative state. In that case, one is given an option to enter a special division of the New School that specializes in these types of affairs.

Of course, the ending of one's human life by the means of suicide, no matter what motivational and intentional factors underlie such an act, is always by an agreement. In some cases it is permitted to happen in order to illustrate and demonstrate the consequences of such factors and how not to end one's life. Because of the individualized and personalized issues, as with everything else which underlies such acts, it is obvious that it is between Me and each individual who commits such an act.

Therefore, it would be inappropriate for you to judge anyone in this respect or to try to say more about it at this particular time.

Peter: But what about organ transplants?

The Lord Jesus Christ: In some ways, this issue is the same as discussed above. In fact, it is the other side of the same coin. If you take into consideration that human life is the only life which is available to you, and if you have no notion about any other type of life or how it is structured and lived, or if it exists at all, paradoxically speaking, you would have both tendencies in your mind — termination, as well as extension of your life for as long as possible. On one side, you have this sense of futility and unrealness of your human life, while at the same time your human body clings to this life because it knows that it is the only life it has. So, it yearns to extend it for as long as possible.

However, there is another paradox here, as well as an important spiritual lesson. As you know, each bodily organ's function, as well as the body's function in its entirety, has some crucial spiritual correspondence either of the positive or negative or both natures, respectively. The cessation of some bodily organ's function reflects the fact that the function which any particular organ has served, for some important spiritual reasons, exhausted its usefulness and served its purpose and it needs to be either replaced or terminated. In the case of replacement, something different or new needs to be acquired and implemented in the life of the person in question. By a prior agreement with another person who suddenly dies or who chooses to donate one of its duplicated organs, the transplant of his/her organ or organs is appropriate and feasible. The function of that organ which is coming from the dead person or from the person who donated his/her organ, needs to continue in a different environment or condition. Otherwise, it would be a waste of the precious function provided by that organ.

However, here comes the paradox: The human body wants to survive by any means available to it, but at the very same time, it vigorously and tenaciously tends to reject any organ which is not of its making, no matter how much the organ in question would help that body to continue in its life. Why is it so? As you know, each individual's spirit and soul is uniquely and infinitely different. This uniqueness and difference stem from My unique element from which they were created. Because of that, they are for themselves and by themselves in the conglomeration of all their specific and unique faculties which are non-duplicable. Due to this factor, the spirit and its soul choose a very specific and unique body congruent to their specific and unique nature. Any admission of anything

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

foreign which did not derive from the conglomeration of all elements of which they consist, is considered to be a gross violation of this specific unique individuality and personality. In other words, your body and its organs are a closed system.

Once again, from the spiritual standpoint, this is the issue of personalization and individualization of one's being and existence. The human body reflects this important spiritual factor. Therefore, despite the fact that any such organ could save its bodily life, it cannot take in something that is not of the original genetic material from which it was originated by its spirit's and soul's design. For that reason, you have to feed that body with all kinds of special medications that would considerably lower its tendency to reject the organ in question. And this is true even with some very familiar organs which have somewhat similar genetic structure. Although it is similar, it is still not the same.

Another issue with the failure of some bodily organs to perform their functions, and connected with them the need for transplants, relates to a very specific spiritual correspondence that each organ has. As mentioned above, such correspondence may have both positive and negative connotations. The way you have to understand this statement is that if any particular person who is responsible for his/her life in all its aspects — spiritual, mental and physical — neglects or doesn't take proper care of it, or does everything which impedes and defies underlying spiritual factors responsible for these functions, the organs in question will begin to malfunction. By such an attitude the person in question destroys the positive spiritual correspondence of an organ's function and opens the doors for the negative one to set in. In that case, at one point in time, unless there is an amendment in that person's attitude, at some point in time the organ in question stops functioning entirely. Hence, the need for a transplant.

In this particular connotation, the organ transplant has a negative meaning. On the spiritual level it signifies replacement of the genuine and original function with an artificial one which comes from without. Because the within factors were neglected — and this is a purely spiritual issue — any organ which is ***within the human body*** has a tendency to atrophy or get diseased. In this sense, the organ transplant is an illustration of the replacement of the within factors with the without factors. However, because no true life is possible to sustain by the without factors, whenever you place an organ into that body from without, or in this case, from someone else who is outside of you, the body will have a tendency to reject it. For that reason, you have to deceive that body by feeding it with all kinds of external medications

which would take away or, at least, considerably weaken the body's ability to reject anything that comes from its own without.

The spiritual implication of these facts is very clear. Unless you follow the proper spiritual procedures — from within to without — you end up destroying the shell that serves for your spirit's and soul's manifestation. And not only that but, most importantly, by your inappropriate spiritual life, you undermine the proper spiritual perception of any reality. In that case, the true reality is replaced with an artificial one in the same manner as a genuine bodily organ that is within your own body, and is replaced with something that doesn't belong there and which came from the outside. This is the spiritual correspondence of the physical organ transplant.

From this explanation you can deduce very clearly that any physical illness, no matter what kind it is, has spiritual roots.

I see in your mind, Peter, a question whether there is any positive connotation to the physical organ transplant and/or any physical illness.

Peter: Yes, You are right. I am curious about it.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Because any malfunction of anything, regardless of whether they are spiritual, mental, physical or organic, caused by negative pseudo-spiritual correspondences, it is obvious that their connotation can be only negative. However, the positive aspect of any such malfunctions is not in malfunctions themselves but in the illustration of the coping abilities of individuals and in finding a cure for them, or in how to eliminate them. In essence, these abilities demonstrate that, no matter what, the negative state cannot win in an absolute sense because regardless of what it comes up with for the purpose of undermining the true spiritual factors of any life, effective countermeasures can be found to nullify its efforts in this respect. Yes, from time to time, it can win this or that battle, but not the war.

In your particular case, as My true representatives, your ability to cope with or to overcome any such adverse medical conditions, inherent in your physical makeup, is setting up an important precedent for the negative state and humans. By not yielding to temptations of the negative state, to give up, and by accepting the fact of the inevitability to have, from time to time, such malfunctions, it illustrates to everyone that no matter how much the negative state tries to destroy you by all those adverse external physical conditions, it cannot succeed. You will continue in your work even better than ever before. And this would be true even if anyone of you were in need of having an organ transplant.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

In this illustration, demonstration and setting up an example is the positive connotation of any such adverse conditions.

There are some other issues related to this question but it is premature to reveal them. For that reason, we'll end our dialog right here for today. Have a wonderful time, Peter. I would recommend that you prepare yourself for your trip to New York so that you may spend some time with My people there.

Peter: Thank You very much for Your answers.

Fifty Third Dialog

March 15, 1999

Peter: Well, I am back from my visit with Your people in New York and Massachusetts. I had a very good time and it was a pleasure to see them again and to meet Michael Maldonado whom I have known only through mail and phone conversations. Before going into the questions, I would like to ask if You have any comments or clarifications about anything or about my visit with our people.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for asking Me first to offer My comments about your visit and about what was experienced during your stay there. The major purpose of that visit was two-fold. First of all, to give you a very needed respite from continuously recording our dialoging, as well as for giving opportunities for others to study and reread the available Dialogs. We don't want them to be flooded with continuous information coming their way without giving them a chance to have enough time for getting properly familiarized with the content of these Dialogs.

Another purpose of the visit was to give an opportunity to everyone who was willing to come to see you or to be with you to share with you, not only what they think and feel about the content of these Dialogs and how it influences their current life but, most importantly, by their physical proximity, to trigger any other spiritually and multiversally important issues which would give everyone a better understanding of the importance of the meaning of My New Revelation.

Look what happened in this respect: During one of your numerous conversations with Dan and others, a clear indication was conveyed to you by Me about certain very important spiritual correspondences that My New Revelation, in its three sources, has. As you know, up to this point, and before the possibility of having these types of Dialogs with Me could enter your mind at all, Peter, it was premature to reveal anything about such correspondences. After all, if I were to talk about them before that time, it would undermine your ability, Peter, to accept the need for such Dialogs to take place at all, the reason being that the spiritual situation in all spheres, areas and dimensions of My Creation and pseudo-creation was not conducive for having such knowledge. In other words, certain events needed to happen, certain conditions needed to be established and certain works needed to be done at all levels of being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence before anything of this nature could be considered and revealed.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

If you were to know in advance about these needs, before they all would have been fulfilled, by the factor of your personal knowledge, Peter, the forces of the negative state would also know them. In that case, they would devise such an impossible means to circumvent the possibility of our dialoging that they would effectively undermine or, at least, postpone or make it extremely difficult for them to happen. They would cause you all kinds of trouble at all levels of your personal life which would make it very difficult for us to proceed with our dialoging.

For that reason, any possibility of this nature happening at all, was carefully concealed both from you and everyone else. However, once all the factors that needed to be accomplished and established in this respect were put in place and firmly grounded, our Dialogs could be resumed. As you see, Peter, here we are again facing the issue of timeliness. Everything has its own time and place. And now it is time to talk about the spiritual correspondences of the three sources of My New Revelation for the benefit and understanding of all.

As you know, the three sources of My New Revelation consist of **The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ**, **Corollaries to The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ** and **Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ**. All previous books, containing the ideas of My New Revelation, were considered to be a preparation for and introduction to these three major sources. If you carefully analyze the style of these three sources, you will notice a tremendous difference in the way they are presented and what they contain. The Big Book, or **The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ**, was transmitted by Me through you, Peter, without any personal involvement on your part with the exception that you were recording My Words that were coming into your spiritual mind and subsequently translated into your human language or the language of your external mind. No questions were asked by you or anyone else from anywhere or anywhen. At that time this was a necessary arrangement because the spiritual situation then was such that, without prior revelation about everything contained in the first source of My New Revelation, no one could ascertain the true meaning and purpose for the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the negative state, the Zone of Displacement and a typical human life. Under those conditions, because of this factor, before allowing or needing to ask your own questions and getting your own answers, it was necessary to first establish a proper foundation on which such questioning and answering could be conceived or could be put into motion.

Moreover, the content of the first source of My New Revelation — the Big Book — has a purely spiritual connotation related to the spiritual

structure of My Creation as well as to the pseudo-spiritual structure of the pseudo-creation (the Hells, the Zone of Displacement and human life). Because of this spiritual structure, the Big Book reflects and corresponds to the Spiritual Dimension of My Creation and to everyone's Spiritual Mind, no matter where they are situated, including all humans. On this level you don't ask questions from your external mind because answers come almost automatically, directly into your Spiritual Mind before you ask them. The way you have to understand this statement is that in the Spiritual Dimension, as well as on the level of the Spiritual Mind of its inhabitants, the possible questions are foreseen in advance, so-to-speak (it is very difficult to talk about this mode in your human terms because they are time-space bound. This is not the case in the spiritual world or on the level of your Spiritual Mind. So, the word '*in advance*' needs to be taken with reservation and with the understanding that it is not of time and space). A better way to put it would be like something which is happening in a simultaneous and synchronous way or before a question could pop into one's mind, it is preceded by its energies. In the moment that energy is emanated or occurs, the answer to it becomes discernable in the Spiritual Mind.

The transmission of My New Revelation, as contained in its first source — the Big Book — reflects and corresponds to this setup. Although on the conscious level of your external and interior or intermediate mind, you were not aware of any questions coming into your mind, Peter, on the level of your Spiritual Mind, without any conscious awareness on your part, the need to have answers to the zillions of questions which have been accumulating in your mind throughout your entire life on this planet, or to be precise, the energies preceding those questions, triggered the response contained in the Big Book. Again, don't understand this statement in the time and space categories. It is of non-time and non-space.

However, there is another point to the meaning of the first source of My New Revelation. Certain spiritually very important factors of the entire setup which underlie the structure, the meaning and the purpose of My Creation, as well as the permission factors of the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence and human life, had not been available for consideration to anyone, anywhere or anywhen before the transmission of My New Revelation. These factors were of the Absolute Nature, unable to be conceived by the relative sentient mind. Because of that, no questions related to them could come into anyone's mind, no matter at which of its levels. In order to bring them down to the level of being understood by the relative sentient mind, it was necessary for Me personally to come down to the relative level of any sentient mind,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

including to the level of the most limited human mind, and acquire from them their specific language in which I could reveal those factors of My Works, and everything related to them, which could not enter, even remotely, their mind.

The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ contains such information. Therefore, it had to be written in such a way that My Words were coming into your mind, Peter, without any prior knowledge on your part about what it was that would be coming next just before writing each new sentence. Simply stated, at that point in time, neither you nor anyone else could know what to ask for. Once all information contained in the Big Book became available to everyone everywhere and anywhen, the shift, in this respect, could take place and a different style, relevant to the nature of that shift, needed to be instituted. Once the Spiritual Mind of all concerned received the desperately needed information, and it became fully cognizant and satisfied with all factors in question, as related in the first source of My New Revelation, a foundation was built on which the shift to the intermediate dimension of My Creation, as well as to everyone's interior mind, could take place.

This shift is reflected in and corresponds to the style and content of ***Corollaries to The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***. As you know, the style and content of that book is very much different. You can conceive them as a reflection of the typical transitional period from one state and process to another state and process. Or you can also conceive it as a bridge of translation from one level of Creation and sentient mind to another level. Because of that, this book, and what it contains, has a character of the *here-and-now* applicable to the temporality of any state and process. In other words, once the building of the bridge is completed, and everything for the proper flow from one level to another is firmly established, it comes out of the transitional period and assumes a totally different role and function. By the nature of its transitional condition, it prepares the way for asking important questions and getting important answers from which everyone can benefit immensely. ***Corollaries to The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ*** are of such a nature and purpose. Therefore, they correspond to and reflect the interior or intermediate dimension of My Creation as well as everyone's interior mind. For that reason, the content of this book — the second source of My New Revelation — speaks primarily, to everyone's interior mind. Because the interior mind reflects everyone's very specific and unique mentality, its emphasis is on the need to individualize and personalize one's life and everything related to it. Only from this position of individualization and personalization can one learn properly about how to ask and what to ask for.

Once everyone is firmly grounded or rooted in the condition of an individualized and personalized lifestyle, then and only then, the next most important shift can be triggered. Now the way is prepared for establishing a most personal, intimate and private, but at the same time, the most multiversal mode of interaction between Me and all of you, as well as between all levels of My Creation, its multiverse and all other modes of pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, including the human mode. Now you can ask any questions you want and you can receive answers to them directly from Me. This mode reflects and corresponds to My External or Physical Dimension and to everyone's external mind. **It is the nature of these Dialogs to reflect, represent and correspond to this mode.**

However, there is more to this mode than that. Not only does it reflect and correspond to the nature of the external or physical dimension and to everyone's external mind but it also integrates and unifies everything that is contained in the spiritual and intermediate dimension, respectively, as well as in both the Spiritual Mind and the interior mind of every sentient entity. Thus, **you can conceive these Dialogs as an integrator and unifier of everything that has been revealed so far and which is contained in the previous sources of My New Revelation.**

The interrelatedness of these three sources is a reflection of and a correspondence to the structure and dynamics of the New Universe. As you remember from the Big Book, this Universe was designated as having a multimodal, multilevel and multidimensional, or interdimensional and interuniversal, nature. It integrates and unifies all aspects of My Creation in a completely cohesive and harmonious oneness, totality and wholeness. There is no more separation and enclosure of various levels of the multiverse in their own spheres and atmosphere, which made it impossible or very difficult for them to interact with each other. As you remember, such interaction was achieved by the means of correspondences or, as in some instances, through special types of mediators. My New Universe transcends this old setup and establishes, through its own structure and nature, a very important link and bridge to everyone, everywhere without exception or exclusion.

In an ultimate sense, My New Universe, in its relative condition, reflects and corresponds to My Absolute New Nature which, in an absolute sense, integrates and unifies all and everything in being and existence and, through the human portion of My New Nature, everything in pseudo-being and pseudo-existence as well. (In pseudo-being and pseudo-

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

existence this statement has to be understood in the sense of having total control of everyone's destiny and outcome of their positioning there).

So, from this standpoint, you may conceive these Dialogs as a reflection of and correspondence to the function of the New Universe and, in an ultimate sense, as a reflection of and correspondence to My Absolute New Nature. From this understanding of the placement of the three sources of My New Revelation, you can clearly deduce the enormity of their importance in the scheme of events taking place at all levels of being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, as well as in human life and in your personal lives as My true representatives.

This is very important. As My true representatives, by understanding and accepting this role of the three sources of My New Revelation, you become, in your relative condition, reflectors and correspondences of the nature of My New Universe and, through it, of My Absolute New Nature. One of the most important reasons why a greater number of the members of the New Universe than previously were assigned to you several weeks ago, was to help you to establish a lifestyle which would reflect and establish these important factors in your personal lives on planet Zero.

As you know, you cannot eliminate the negative state from the position of separation, split and disunion. It is the nature of the negative state to be in such a position. As mentioned in the Big Book, you cannot eliminate the negative state by the means of the negative state. Any attempt to do so from this position would only reinforce the pseudo-life of the negative state and not eliminate it. For that reason it was necessary to establish a condition on planet Zero, in human life — the end product of the negative state's pseudo-creative effort — that would reflect the state and process of integration, unification and oneness of all aspects of any sentient mind, as well as all levels of My Creation, and which would make it possible — from this position — to begin the process of this important elimination. This position is the position of the positive state. As you remember, through you, the positive state was placed in the midst of the negative state in order to begin this process.

However, nothing could have been done, in this respect, until all these important factors were established first. Thus, as you see from this description, it was first necessary to acquire My New Nature; from it, it was necessary to create My New Universe, which would incorporate this New Nature; secondly, it was necessary to transmit the first source of My New Revelation — the Big Book — which reveals all these things; thirdly, it was necessary to connect all levels of My Creation and their

sentient minds, as well as all levels of pseudo-creation and their sentient minds, by establishing a bridge of translation amongst all of them and preparing the way for their integration and unification. This step was reflected in the ***Corollaries...*** . And finally, it was necessary to bring about these Dialogs which reflect and correspond to the completion of this process and to the change of your roles and positions, becoming My true representatives who would be able and willing to reflect in their own personal and individualized lives all these crucial and important factors. By establishing this new lifestyle, as reflected in your new roles and positions, you are building a solid foundation on which the elimination of the negative state will become a true reality.

In order to accomplish this most important role, you are advised to work very closely with the members of My New Universe who were assigned to you for this purpose. It doesn't make any difference whether you are consciously aware of their presence with you or not. As long as you talk to them in your mind, and as long as you think of their presence with you, no matter what you do or don't do; if you do it at all times, their influence and impact on you will become obvious. By doing it this way, you will also intensify My personal presence with you. Why? Don't forget that you are still humans. The members of the New Universe are also rooted in the human nature but only in its positive connotation which they have from My Absolute Divine Human. The human portion of your nature, at this point in time, is not yet of purely positive nature. It still contains too much of its purely negative aspects. By concentrating on the members of the New Universe, in the process of this concentration, you are dissociating yourself from the negative aspects of the human portion of your nature and instead, emphasizing only its positive aspects, as reflected in the nature of the members of the New Universe which they have directly from Me. By that emphasis you are allowing Me to be in a much closer proximity to you as one positive human to another positive human than otherwise would be the case.

You have to understand that here we are talking about a totally different interaction between Me and you than the interaction that happens on the level of your state of inwardness. This is a totally new interaction, the interaction of one positive human to another positive one — exactly as it happens with these Dialogs and as it will be happening to everyone who will read these Dialogs and will accept their content as My True Word. It will be a very personal, intimate and unique interaction which will give everyone an opportunity to know Me in My New Nature from its Divine Human position. It is very crucial to have such knowledge for the ultimate elimination of the negative state and for ending the human life in its negative aspects.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

This knowledge, and subsequent experience of My New Nature in its positive human aspects, will give everyone in the negative state a sense of familiarity with someone who is close to their own nature. If I were to appear to them in My previous Nature — if such a thing were possible in the first place — I would be very unfamiliar, incomprehensible, unapproachable and intangible to them, someone with whom no reasonable relationship could be established. After all, how do you relate to someone who is of such a nature? No meaningful relationship can be established under those kinds of conditions. And yet, in order to eliminate the negative state and give everyone who is positioned in it an opportunity to convert to the positive state, it is absolutely necessary that everyone be able to establish such a relationship with Me. After all, everyone's life depends on this possibility and ability. Without the proper and correct knowledge of who I Am and what My Nature is and without subsequent establishment of a personal, intimate and individual relationship with Me, based on such proper and correct knowledge, no one could be saved or converted to the positive state.

This is the reason why it was absolutely necessary for Me to incarnate into human life and consequently, into the negative state and acquire this New Nature so that I could become familiar to all who are in the negative state. Why is it that it was necessary for Me to acquire the human nature for this purpose and no other type of nature? One reason for this necessity was revealed in My New Revelation. It relates to the fact that if I were to incarnate in some other nature, in that case, humans would be excluded from knowing Me, understanding Me, and accepting Me. For that reason, humans would never be able to be saved from their typical human life in all its negative aspects. If that were to be the case, then the negative state could not be eliminated either. If the negative state could not be eliminated, neither could the fullness of the positive state ever be established.

As you see from this chain reaction, everything in some way depends on everything else. There is an interconnectedness among all levels of being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence.

Another reason why it was human life into which I needed to be incarnated was that, as you remember, human life is the end product of the pseudo-creative efforts of the forces of the negative state. The fundamental nature of the end product is such that it summarizes everything of which and from which it was created or, in this case, fabricated. In other words, the end product contains, in itself, all aspects of everything that leads to this type, or any type of creation or fabrication, respectively. Because human life is the end product of the

negative state's pseudo-creation, it is this life that becomes most familiar, most comfortable, most approachable and most comprehensible to everyone in the negative state. After all, it is in the human life that everyone can find some aspects of his/her nature, no matter where and who he/she is. For that reason, it was only human life that could provide Me with the most necessary and needed foundation on which I could build My New Nature and that could become a foundation on which everyone without exception or exclusion could be eternally saved from the negative state. Because of these factors, in My New Nature, particularly and especially in Its Divine Human Aspects, I will become, for everyone in the negative state, very familiar, comprehensible, acceptable, approachable and tangible.

This is one of the most profound and mysterious reasons why it was necessary for Me to acquire a human nature. On the understanding of these important reasons depends the understanding of everything else. Once again, the issue here is the interconnectedness of everyone and everything. In My New Nature I am the absolute link to this entire interconnectedness. As you remember, this was a missing link. Because it was missing, each level of My Creation with all its dimensions was a closed system, separated and isolated from each other and able to communicate with one another only by means of correspondences and symbolical representations.

However, thanks to the establishment of this missing link, which My Divine Human provides, this is no longer the case. Not only does it connect everyone and everything, everywhere and everywhen in My Creation at all its levels and in all its dimensions, but it also provides the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence and human life with this link so that they can become familiar with the true nature of My positive state and My New Nature. Once you are familiar with something, it is much easier to accept and incorporate it into your life.

This missing link, which is no longer missing, is generated by Me from My Absolute State and Process by means of the relativity of the New Universe which is positioned in a special type of non-temporal, non-spatial, as well as temporal and spatial condition, from which it is able to provide such a link to all and to everything positioned in the relative condition, including the negative state and human life. In human life, this link will be transmitted and established through you, My true representatives. This is why it is so important for you to understand and to accept what is revealed in My New Revelation, in all its three sources, about these issues.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

As you see, Peter, your visit in New York and Massachusetts triggered the need for this particular Dialog, and what it contains, to take place and to be recorded for the benefit of all. The importance of this content is enormous, perhaps far beyond anyone's present ability to comprehend on the external level. Internally however, you can intuit it clearly.

Peter: Yes, I understand and concur. Is there anything else that You would like to add or to comment on in connection with my visit on the East Coast?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, Peter, there is, but I would recommend to continue in our dialoging tomorrow because it would be too much for one day.

Peter: Very well then, let it be so. I thank You very, very much for everything and especially for the content of this Dialog.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. Have a wonderful afternoon. Normally, I would say go and sunbathe but today you have a very rare rain — so much needed, desired and welcomed. So, relax in a different way.

Peter: I'll do as You suggested. Again, thank You very much.

Fifty Fourth Dialog

March 16, 1999

Peter: May we continue this early morning with our conversation related to yesterday's topic, as contained in the Fifty Third Dialog?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, we may. As you know, one of the most important issues related to the eventual elimination of the negative state and to the preparation for the establishment of the fullness of life of the positive state into one cohesive and harmonious oneness and wholeness, is the issue of integration, unification and interconnectedness of all levels, steps, degrees, aspects, dimensions and everything else imaginable in the entire being and existence, as well as in pseudo-being and pseudo-existence and human life.

The way you have to understand the portion of this statement related to the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence and human life, is that their life, by which they flourish and function was, at one point in the very distant past from your time perspective, separated from My Creation and utilized for the establishment of a different lifestyle. That life, after it is freed from all pollution, poison and contamination by the typical evil and false lifestyle of its carriers, has to be brought back to the sphere and atmosphere of My True Creation and integrated into its totality. It is not the negative state, in itself and by itself, as well as the typical lifestyle of human beings, which will be brought back into the cohesive wholeness of My Creation, but the original life force energies which were utilized for activation of the negative state and fabrication of humans. As long as there has been some degree of separation, disunion, self-containment and lack of a continuous uninterrupted flow, the negative state and its human life could flourish and spread out without any difficulties. Such states as these are very supportive of the pseudo-life of the negative state and its human life.

Peter: The question, of course, is why was it necessary to create in such a manner, placing all basic three dimensions of Your Creation — spiritual, intermediate and physical — into separate entities without any direct connection among them and their various levels? Why was this connection limited to correspondences and symbolical depictions or representations with a special type of language that nobody could understand directly but only through a special type of interpretation by specially enlightened individuals for that purpose?

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

The Lord Jesus Christ: The answer to your question, Peter, is contained in My New Revelation in a somewhat indirect manner. It is hidden in the statement that life of the positive state, in its fullness and completeness, could not be activated as long as all other forms and manners of life were allowed or permitted to manifest themselves first for the purpose of learning for all what type of life not to choose. If you don't allow those types of lives or pseudo-lives to be manifested first, you give no choice in the matter to anyone but to be only in a certain very specific and well-defined mode as imposed on them by My own ideas of how their life should be. Such an arrangement would be contrary to My Nature rooted in Absolute Freedom and Independence. In that case, no meaningful, satisfying and fulfilling relationship with the members of My Creation could be established. They would be only My slaves doing my bidding without any creative incentives or inspiration.

However, the main reason for such an initial setup in the structure of My Creation was that if I were to create in the manner and way which would allow such a direct interconnectedness among all dimensions and their various levels, My Creation would be in the state of complete unification, integration and oneness. Because such states are of a purely positive nature, the only type of life which could be established under those conditions would be the fullness and completeness of life of the positive state. In that case, no other choices would be available to anyone. Again, such a situation would put everyone in a state of inevitability and no freedom of choice.

You have to understand very clearly, Peter, that if My creative effort were to begin with such a unified and integrated approach, no other type of life could ever be activated and put into motion. It is impossible for any other type of life to take hold under the existing conditions of unification, integration and oneness of all and everything. By establishing such a life, you are excluding all other manifestations of different lives which are not built on these types of conditions. This type of life is very specific to the life of the ultimate positive state. At this point in time, as you know, Peter, the positive state is not in its ultimate condition and manifestation. As long as other types of lives are still in place, providing important learning for all of what not to choose, the fullness and completeness of life in the positive state cannot be activated. If I were to do that, by the factor of this activation, all other types of lives would cease to be and exist in a blink of an eye. However, in that case, the learning of the various choices could not be completed and the members of the positive state would still be burdened by questions about the possibilities of other forms or types of lives. Here is the paradox: Putting into motion the completeness and fullness of the positive state's life,

before the completion of manifestation of other lives, would eliminate the learning process prematurely. The premature elimination of this necessary learning would impede the members of this life to enjoy that life in its fullness and completeness. Because any life depends entirely on the state of mind of its carriers, what kind of life would it be? Theoretically speaking, you would have the fullness and completeness of the positive state's life but, practically speaking, because of dependency factors of any life on the state of mind of the sentient entities who occupy that life, such life could not be full and complete. This is the paradox of this hypothetical situation. Do you see it, Peter?

Peter: Yes, I see it and understand it clearly.

The Lord Jesus Christ: So, in your creative effort, how do you give an opportunity to other types of lives to come to their own fruition? You start your creative effort with building separate dimensions and their respective levels, putting them in a closed, self-contained loop and connecting them only by means of symbolical and corresponding depictions with a special language which would assure some degree of connection among all of them. This connection, of course, is indirect but it is sufficient to maintain the proper function of My Creation in a unified goal-direction for the purpose of a buildup toward the final completeness and fullness of the positive state's life. At the very same time, because it is indirect and symbolic, it doesn't impede the necessary manifestation of other types of lives, giving everyone an opportunity to learn what not to choose and what not to incorporate in their future lives.

More and more, as these important lessons are being learned, you bring your creative efforts closer and closer toward the ultimate goal which ends in the ultimate establishment of the complete and full life of the positive state. In the process of this buildup, gradually and slowly you begin the process of direct connection, unification and integration of all levels and degrees of My Creation's dimensions and all their aspects and steps. The final act, in this respect, is the total elimination of separation, disunion and isolation that has been in place up to that point, leading automatically toward the abolishment of the negative state and all its products.

This is how the process of My creative effort proceeds. In order to accomplish this most important goal, in the process of this buildup, it was necessary to take several important steps. First of all, it was necessary for Me personally to physically enter all other types of lives in order to experience those lives the way all sentient entities do in their own unique lives. This entrance was not limited only to human life and

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

life of the negative state in all its respective Hells and the Zone of Displacement. It included, also, all other types of lives which exist throughout My Creation in their infinite varieties of ways and manners. It is impossible to accomplish the needed unification, integration and direct connection among all of them without having such a direct experience in a practical sense. In the process of gathering My practical experiences of all mentioned lives, I established in them conditions which would enable them, when the time is right, to come out of their separation, isolation and limitation and reconnect with all others, becoming a unified, cohesive and integrated one whole.

Secondly, for that purpose, I changed My Own Nature completely in order to accommodate Myself to the level of all sentient entities in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, as well as to humans. It would be impossible to accomplish this process from the position of My Old Nature because no one could discern, comprehend and know properly, what My True Nature is. If you are unable to know it, you are unable to establish with Me any meaningful and fulfilling relationship which could lead toward your own unique unification and integration with Me. In that case, the state of separation would have to exist forever because I, Who, in an ultimate sense, am the only possible Integrator and Unifier of all and everything, would be in some state, condition or place which is unapproachable, incomprehensible and impossible to discern. If this were to be the case, the status quo of all and everything, no matter where or when, would have to stay indefinitely. In that case, everyone would be locked forever in their own condition and state without any hope of coming out of it to eternity. Can you imagine what kind of life it would be?

In order to avoid this kind of impossible outcome, I chose by My Own Freedom of Choice to experience directly all forms of lives manifested in their respective sentient entities. I became one of them so that I could relate to them on their level, making it possible to know Me directly without any mediation. The necessity for such important knowledge and experience is rooted in the fact that it is impossible to begin the process of unification, integration and interconnection from the position of being outside of them. You have to be inside their own life to establish such conditions for future unification, integration and interconnection. The outside attempt to do so cannot take hold because of the multiversal law which requires that everything begins from within and proceeds to without where it completes its process of manifestation. This law is the foundation of any creative effort or any life at all. It cannot be broken under any condition. Its breaking led, as you know, toward activation of the negative state and fabrication of humans. So, because of that, if I

were to try to do this important process from without, or outside of their lives, the only thing I would be able to accomplish is to reinforce their lifestyle and give license for the negative state and human life to stay forever in their own disjointed, non-unified and non-integrated condition. This would mean that the state of separation, isolation and closed loop of all and everything would also stay forever without any possibility of any change. As a consequence of such an act, the fullness and completeness of life of the positive state could never come to its desirable, and expected by all, fruition.

From what was revealed so far, in this respect, you will be able to intuit the extent of My Works in the process of My incarnation into the various forms and conditions of lives of sentient entities everywhere and everywhen and why it was absolutely vital and necessary for Me to do so. As you see from this discourse, My incarnation was not limited only to your planet and into your human life and the negative state's Zone of Displacement and all its respective Hells, but it was undertaken in all other states, conditions and places in the multiverse. How this incarnation was accomplished in other places, states and conditions of all sentient entities, cannot be described in your human terms at this particular time. You would not be able to understand it. It is sufficient for you to know the reasons for My needs to incarnate into them — as described above.

Thirdly, as you know, Peter, after I acquired My New Nature which incorporated all gathered experiences from all states, conditions and places of My incarnation, especially and particularly from the incarnation into human life on planet Zero, I created a New Universe as described previously. As you see from this revelation, the New Universe in its structural nature, reflects, in its relative condition, My Absolute Absolutely New Nature. At this point, it is time for you to know that the structure and nature of the New Universe is not limited to only containment of My Divine Human aspects, but it also contains all other aspects derived from My experiences with living amongst all other forms of lives. Thus, for the first time in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, a creation came to its fruition which structurally incorporates, in its nature, all elements of everything and everyone in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, as well as all aspects of the typical human life in its purely positive connotation, as contained in Me personally.

In some ways, you can consider this creation — the New Universe — as the final act in the process of establishing a condition from which the unification, integration and interconnectedness of all and everything can

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

and may begin. The New Universe can be considered a means through which, and by which, I will accomplish this final act, the act that is the most crucial, the most desirable and most expected one by all concerned. As you know, Peter, in My Absolute State, which is now rooted in My Absolute New Nature, due to its absoluteness, it would be impossible to accomplish this goal without, first, having a relative condition that fully approximates My Absolute New Nature. A relative being can comprehend and accept only something which is of its own relative condition. It cannot embrace and, subsequently, incorporate into himself/herself something which is outside the scope of his/her experiential mode. And yet, in order to accomplish this goal of unification, integration, and interconnection to and with all, it is very vital and crucial for every sentient entity to have such an experience. By being able to comprehend the nature and structure of My New Universe, and what it entails, every sentient entity has, or will have, the full grasp of what My New Nature is all about. Once this grasp enters his/her mind, the condition is set up for such unification, integration and interconnection to take place. And not only that but, most importantly, the condition is set up for everyone to accept Me in My New Nature. Once this acceptance happens, the process of unification, integration and interconnection will be fully established and the negative state, as well as its end product — human life, in its purely negative connotation will be no more. Following the completion of this process, the establishment of fullness and completeness of life of the positive state will begin.

As far as your role and position are concerned, as My true representatives on planet Zero, you are to work toward this unification, integration and interconnection within your own selves. As you remember from yesterday's Dialog (53rd Dialog), you were informed about an important spiritual correspondence that the three sources of My New Revelation have. The first source relates directly to your Spiritual Mind and to the Spiritual World. The second source relates to your interior mind and to the intermediate world or World of Spirits. The third source — these Dialogs — relates to your external mind and to the physical world. It also relates to the state of unification, integration and interconnection of all aspects of your mind, as well as those worlds. By continuously reading, accepting and practicing what these three sources contain, you will be able to build a foundation within your own personalized and individualized life for initiation and establishment of your own unification, integration and interconnection of all aspects of your mind, as well as your participation in the same connected, integrated and unified mode with all the mentioned worlds. In the process of this buildup, you will be able, more and more, to get rid of the purely negative aspects of your typical human nature. Consequently, you

will be able to get rid of the negative state in your own life. By doing that, you will be able to contribute immensely toward the ultimate elimination of the negative state and its end product — human life, and toward the building of the positive state in its complete and full nature and manifestation. At the present time, this is your primary goal as My true representatives. In whatever position, work, job, assignment, etc., you find yourself at each moment of time in your life on planet Zero, no matter what it is or is not, as long as you strive to live your life in accordance with the principles of the three sources of My New Revelation, you will be doing your work for Me and you will be able to effectively and successfully accomplish this goal and fulfill your mission which you have from Me. Of course, as always, only if you choose to do so by your own free will and choice.

Peter: Thank You very much for this beautiful explanation and revelation. Is there any other comment You wish to make at this time?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Just a brief comment on your experience with Dan Barba during your participation at the concert in New York's Carnegie Hall. There are some important spiritual correspondences contained in the music to which you were listening. The concert was given by the Vienna Philharmonic Orchestra, under the direction of Riccardo Muti. Two pieces of music were played, with one additional encore. The first piece was Schubert's Symphony No. 3 in D major, D.200; the second piece was Tchaikovsky's *Manfred* Symphony, op. 58; and the encore was one of Johan Strauss' waltzes. This was an interesting selection of music, as was its interpretation by conductor Riccardo Muti.

In some ways, you can compare that music with the evolution of a different life than the life of the positive state. It also can be compared to the search for meaning of that life. Schubert's Symphony No. 3 reflects the beginning of that life which is full of hope and exuberance of the youthfulness of that life which assumes to have a purpose and meaning in itself and by itself. For that reason it is light, full of delight and pleasure without any worries about the future outcome of such a life. But here comes Tchaikovsky's *Manfred* Symphony, which reflects the full consequences, outcomes and results of such a life, different from the life of the positive state. It is life full of tragedy, darkness, brooding, turmoil, uncertainties, misery, pain, suffering, desperation and futile hope in being able to find some kind of reasonable meaning for its being and existence, in itself and by itself. The final realization comes, that life, in itself and by itself, has no meaning and purpose other than to provide one with the understanding that life of this nature leads nowhere and

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

one has to transcend it in order to find the true meaning and purpose of any life. This transcendence was reflected in Strauss's waltz, the encore, which, in its simple, uncomplicated and delightful manner, conveyed to you that the meaning of life is not in a complicated, convoluted, tremendously complex and difficult nature, but in something that totally lacks these characteristics. So, as you see from this understanding, one starts one's life with the hope for the best, loses that hope in the process of the manifestation of that life, learns not to expect to find any positive meaning in that type of life, in itself and by itself, and finally, after establishing this fact, one ends in the new hope of being able to find the true life and its true meaning. Of course, there is more to this music than that but it is sufficient for now.

Peter: That was a nice explanation and interpretation. Thank You very much. Is there anything else today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: No, nothing else today, Peter. Take care of other business and have a nice day.

Fifty Fifth Dialog

March 17, 1999

Peter: Before asking my own questions, as well as some questions by others, I would like to ask if You have anything to add or to comment on anything at all?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for asking Me to talk first. I have only one brief elaboration on the issue of My incarnation into the relative conditions throughout My Creation, on planet Zero and in the Zone of Displacement via planet Zero. Your understanding of this concept has to be expanded. Up to this point, the majority of humans and others in the negative state assumed that I incarnated only on planet Zero. No one knows anything about My special type of incarnation into other levels of being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. My incarnation on planet Zero, and via planet Zero in other regions of the Zone of Displacement, can be considered as a final, most significant act that culminated in the completion of the process of the acquirement of all tangible or practical experiences of all lives and pseudo-lives of sentient entities everywhere and everywhen. The reason for the need to have such direct practical experiences was explained in the previous Dialog. And although, in My New Revelation — in the Big Book — there is a hint about My incarnation elsewhere, at that time it was not proper to give any further explanation about that act. The only thing that was mentioned in the Big Book was that, before incarnating on planet Zero, I undertook a special type of visit to all other physical dimensions where I acquired the necessary experiences, in this respect, and established a certain condition that would prevent the reoccurrence of the activation of the negative state at that level.

At this time, it is important for you to realize the full impact of this particular revelation to come out of your limited understanding of the act of My incarnation elsewhere. As explained in yesterday's Dialog, any knowledge, understanding and acceptance of My Nature, and subsequent establishment with Me of a very private, intimate and personal relationship, can be acquired only from everyone's unique position and nature. Because that position and nature are relative, they are unable to fully grasp the Absolute Position and Nature. If I were to fail to come down to the level of the relative sentient entities, and become as one of them, they could never be able to establish such a vital, crucial and life-giving relationship. In that case, they would eventually all succumb to the negative state and the negative state would eternally win. You have to understand very clearly, Peter, and all who read these words, that

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

inability to establish such a relationship with Me automatically results in the activation of the negative state. If you were unable to do so, you would ultimately end in the denial of My Absolute Being and Existence. Such a denial leads to the production of the negative state. In order to prevent this from ever happening, it was necessary for Me to incarnate in all forms, states, conditions and places of the relative sentient entities and to establish a relationship with them **from their own position**. Only from within everyone's personal, individual and private position can any meaningful, loving, fulfilling and lasting relationship be established. There is no other way. And this is all that I wanted to comment about this morning. You may now, Peter, ask your questions or questions of others.

Peter: Thank You very much for this important explanation. The first question comes from Rick Gonzalez of Miami, Florida. Some aspects of his question were answered previously in other Dialogs which he hasn't yet had an opportunity to read. He is asking whether those pseudo-creators who are present on planet Zero in physical form know who they are and how they got here? Or are they taking control of humans proper to do their work on planet Zero? Moreover, he is asking whether the pseudo-creators and renegades know who Your representatives on planet Zero are; and if they do, are they closely establishing themselves around us in many ways for the purpose of not only keeping us from our mission, but also to keep Your New Revelation from spreading throughout planet Zero and the negative state?

The Lord Jesus Christ: The presence of the pseudo-creators on planet Zero is manifested in three ways. The first way is from their own dimension where they are presently positioned and established. By a special type of manipulation of correspondences, and some other means, impossible for you to comprehend at the present time, they are able to observe, watch and exert a direct influence on all events on planet Zero. This particular way doesn't require their direct physical presence. Most of their work and influence is done from this particular position. The reason for this setup is in the fact that this particular position is not hindered by the limitations of the human physical form. As you remember, it was indicated to you previously that the pseudo-creators were in the process of experimenting with the development of a special type of physical human body which would look exactly like a human but which would not be hindered or impeded by typical human limitations. In a limited degree, they came close to fabricating such a body. It gave some of them an opportunity to appear on this planet in this new form, indistinguishable from any other human. This is the second way they appeared here. The third way is by the process of a walk-in. Some

humans, by their own previous agreement, allow their bodies and minds to be used by a select number of pseudo-creators who occupy them and do all their works through them. Because in all three ways they are in full control of everything they do and what they experience, the pseudo-creators have full knowledge of who they are and what their purpose is, in this respect.

As you know, the renegades function on a level of 80% of the power and abilities of the pseudo-creators. Because, as mentioned before, they are in constant competition with the pseudo-creators, they are doing everything in their power to duplicate everything the pseudo-creators do. However, the renegades' position and purpose is very much different from that of the pseudo-creators. It was explained in one of the previous Dialogs.

From the standpoint of the establishment of the Great Alliance, which was elaborated upon previously, it is obvious that the pseudo-creators know precisely who you are. They have known this from the very beginning. After all, by observing and experimenting on you, shortly after their appearance here, they restrained themselves from destroying humanity and planet Zero. You cannot observe and experiment on someone if you don't know who they are. Also, you cannot enter into an agreement, as depicted in the rules of the Great Alliance, if you have no idea with whom you are entering into such an agreement and alliance.

As far as the renegades are concerned, because they are in opposition to the pseudo-creators and, of course, to the Great Alliance, their access to you and to the knowledge of who you are is limited by the factor of their separation and being outside of the mentioned agreement and alliance. You can compare their situation with the conditions that existed during humans' World Wars and the Cold War. You don't know all the details of the strengths and weaknesses of your enemy. However, you establish a well-designed system of intelligence and spying in order to gather as much information about your enemy as possible. Because of this factor, they derive their knowledge about you from this type of source. You can consider it guesswork. They are guessing who you are but they don't know exactly whether it is precisely you or not. On the other hand, even if the renegades were to know exactly who you are, and based on that knowledge, if they were to try to impede or to interfere with your work for Me, they could do nothing to you in the negative sense because of the insulation factor, as well as counterintelligence, which was described by Me before in one of the previous Dialogs. This insulation factor works both ways and it is also the foundation of your work with the pseudo-creators. So, don't be concerned about any danger for you in this respect.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

The only time you are vulnerable and may become a target for the renegades and their minions is if you continuously function only from the position of the negative human aspects of your nature, forgetting to concentrate on Me, on the positive state, on the members of your spiritual family, and especially on the members of the New Universe. In that case, the renegades and their minions may become fully aware of who you are and from that position, interfere with your work and cause you some serious trouble. This possibility tells you clearly how vitally important and crucial it is for you to constantly concentrate on our presence with you and have all of us in your thoughts, feelings and in everything else in all aspects of your life, and to function only from the position of the non-human aspects of your nature which you have directly from Me. That way, the insulation factor cannot be penetrated and you will remain safe.

The reason why My New Revelation is not being widely read and accepted by humans on your planet and how its availability is, nevertheless, registered in their unconscious mind, and how it will be utilized for their benefit later on, was explained in previous Dialogs, to which Rick, and all others, are referred.

Peter: The next question is an interesting one. You know, I was very curious whether anyone would notice some discrepancy between Your statement as recorded in the Bible and the same statement, as entered in one of the previous Dialogs. And behold, a young man in the Czech Republic by the name of Radomir Bazala, noticed it and is asking for the reasons behind this discrepancy. It relates to Your statement recorded in the Gospels about your mother, sisters and brothers. In that recording the word 'father' is omitted. However, in the Dialogs, the word 'father' is added to the words 'mother, sisters and brothers.' I was very well aware of this discrepancy but knowing the reasons for this, I restrained myself from asking that question directly. Also, I wanted to see if anyone would notice this peculiar omission. So, this young man, being that he is so perceptive and thorough, is wondering whether the Czech translation of that statement is imprecise and the word 'father' was inadvertently omitted or whether there are some other reasons for this discrepancy.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Of course, Peter, as you know, in the recording of the Gospels in the Bible, the word 'father' was purposefully omitted. Although no mistakes **in this respect** are in any biblical translations, regardless in which language, nevertheless, it was permitted by Me that the word 'father' would not be included in the original text until now in these Dialogs. Don't forget that during My incarnation on planet Zero, most of the time I was functioning from the position of being The only

begotten Son of God (see Chapter Two in ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***). That God was defined as being My Heavenly Father. So, because of that, at that time, it was absolutely spiritually essential that everyone would perceive My origin as coming not from an earthly father, but from the Heavenly Divine Father as the only One Indivisible God. Also, don't forget in what kind of society I was positioned at that time. The masculine principle of fatherhood was emphasized above all and everything. Under those conditions, if I were to include the word 'father' in My response, it would be perceived by everyone who was listening to Me (not only by humans but by everyone else in all other dimensions of My Creation) that I am rejecting My heavenly origin — My very Essence, contained in the meaning of the word 'father;' as well as I would be violating the fundamental setup on which that society was built, and on which it functioned at that time.

On the other hand, at that time, and in the connotation of the meaning of the words 'mother,' 'sisters' and 'brothers,' which were used by Me, the origin of My human body and its human mentality, full of the characteristics of the negative state, were being rejected as having no part of My True Nature. It was not that I was rejecting My so-called physical human mother, sisters and brothers, but what they represented at that time. They were representing all humanity in all its negative, evil, falsified and distorted aspects. In essence, I was rejecting the negative state in its totality by not admitting into Me anything of its nature. Here is a very important factor: By refusing to see them, symbolically speaking, I was refusing the negative state to enter Me or to exert influence on Me. Instead, I pointed out at My disciples who were representing, at that time, My positive state in their persons, considering only the positive state to be My true relatives, because only the positive state which stems from My Absolutely Positive Nature, can be admitted back into My Nature.

At the present time, however, because I am functioning from the position of My New Nature as the Only One God Indivisible, it is necessary to include in that designation the word 'father' in order to clearly delineate the difference between a human type of father and what the word 'father' means as related to Me personally. In the present connotation of that word, as well as the words 'mother,' 'sisters' and 'brothers,' it is necessary to reject any other types of fatherhood, motherhood, sisterhood or brotherhood other than My own because I am the only true Father, Mother, Sister and Brother to all and to everyone in an absolute sense, that is to say, I am the only true Absolute Relative to all, and all are relative to Me. This is a unifying and integrative principle on which the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

true life of the positive state, as well as any other life, stands. Without it, no possibility of the sustenance of any life would exist.

The point here that needs to be realized again and again and again, is that there is only One Source of Life — My Absolute Life in all its aspects. The reason why we are emphasizing this principle so much is that on the rejection of this fact, the negative state and human life were built. Thus, in order to bring the negative state and its human life to their ultimate end, it is necessary to bring to everyone's attention that no other source of life exists. To admit someone else as being your mother, father, brother and sister, or any other relative, means, in essence, to deny the only true source of life and ascribe its origin to someone or something else which doesn't have such a prerogative or ability. In that case, you are admitting pure falsities into your conceptualization of the origin of life. Admitting and living in falsities means to be in the negative state. This is the reason why, during our dialoging, it was necessary to include the word 'father' in that Biblical text in order to bring to everyone's attention this important spiritual fact. As you see, Peter, our Dialogs also function as a corrective device for some statements that were made at that time, and recorded in the Gospels, but which are needed to be properly understood at the present time.

Peter: Thank You very much for this explanation. I have my own question which, I believe, was extensively explained in the course of transmission of Your New Revelation but which popped up once again during my reading of an article sent to me by Dr. Beth Ann Voien. That article contained an interview with a doctor who claimed some marvelous successes in healing whenever she or other people prayed on behalf of sick ones. The question is not about the effectiveness of prayer, which has already been answered by You in one of the earlier Dialogs, but about that doctor's statement that You are the source of both good and evil. To justify her claims, that doctor quoted Your statement recorded in the Old Testament, in Prophet Isaiah, Chapter 45, verse 7, and I quote, '*I form the light and create darkness, I make peace and create calamity; I, the Lord, do all these things.*' This text is taken out by me from The New King James Version of the Bible. Her quote is somewhat different as far as the word '*calamity*' is concerned. Her quote reads like this: '*I make peace and create evil.*' I am not sure whether it is her own interpretation or whether she quotes some archaic version of the biblical translation (such as, for example, the old King James Version of the Bible). Of course, it doesn't make any difference because the word '*calamity*' in itself and by itself may denote some evil act. Do You wish to elaborate on this issue?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, I do wish to elaborate on that statement. Although the reason for these kinds of statements in the Bible were extensively and properly explained in My New Revelation, some additional comments would be beneficial to make in this respect. Besides what was revealed about this issue in My New Revelation, which related to the need to use the language of the negative state and the language of humans, that is to say, the need to speak in their own language — the language of projections and expectations, the following additional information is offered to you and to all readers of these Dialogs: In order to keep the entire Creation, the Zone of Displacement and human life intact and functional, despite the fact of the separation, isolation and closed-in mode of their lives, it was necessary to derive all events of their lives, no matter what it had been, from one unifying and integrated source. Someone had to be made responsible, in an absolute sense, for everything which had been happening in the entire being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence and on planet Zero. If more than one source of such events in an absolute sense were to be considered, it would lead to a spiritually extremely dangerous conclusion that there is more than one Absolute Source. By this assumption, because we are talking here about the origin of evil or calamity, everyone everywhere and everywhen would be locked in their condition for good and forever. The confusion, stemming from such an assumption, would be of such great proportions, that it would undermine the life of every sentient entity and, subsequently, they would commit existential suicide. In order to prevent this from happening, I chose, by My own free will and choice, to take that responsibility and proclaim Myself to be the only source of all events and happenings. This statement is not that far off from the reality of the discussed situation. After all, if you take into consideration the important factor of My permission for any event or anything else to happen, then nothing can happen at all without My permission.

As mentioned many times before, a crucial distinction has to be made here between willing something and permitting something. It is not in My Nature to will anything of an evil or calamitous nature. However, for the sake of important spiritual learning, as we have emphasized several times before, I permit many things to happen to give an opportunity for such learning to occur. This is all part of an illustration and demonstration of other types and modes of life which didn't originate in Me directly, but which were permitted by Me to be established in order to provide everyone with the opportunity to make choices to eliminate the idea from everyone's mind that they have the right to reject Me as being the only Source of Life, etc. On the other hand, if I am considered by everyone in the negative state to be the source of their predicaments,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

calamities or evils, then, by the logical conclusion of that assumption, I am also the only one who will be able to save them and bring them out of the negative state. Should someone else be considered such a source, and I, the source of Good and Positive only, then, again, by the logic of this assumption, no one would be out there who could change anyone's current status to eternity. The assumed different source of evil would never want to relinquish its powers or recede from its evilness. In that case, no change in anyone's status could occur.

However, if you have control and power over all states and conditions, you are the only one who is able to change anything at all. By permitting anyone in the negative state to consider Me the source and causative factors of both good and evil, and by using their own negative language in describing this situation, I established a firm foundation on which I will be able to change their status from being evil and negative to becoming good and positive. With this understanding, the above quoted verse will make better sense to any prospective reader of these Dialogs. And this is all that we need to discuss today. Prepare yourself to greet our arriving Lyudmila Savelieva from Moscow, Russia. It will be a very productive time with her. Have a nice day and visit.

Peter: Thank You very much.

Fifty Sixth Dialog

March 19, 1999

Peter: Yesterday I received some interesting and stimulating questions from Roxanne Hardwick of Longview, Texas. Some of those questions are in the form of practical suggestions. Others are questions of spiritual and multiversal significance. I would propose, if I may, to first discuss the practical issues and following that, we can address the spiritual issues. Is it appropriate to proceed this way?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, it is appropriate. Let's begin with the practical suggestions.

Peter: A legitimate concern is expressed about the financial situation of the TNR Foundation and the enormity of the cost that printing, mailing, disseminating and telephoning that these Dialogs and other matters require. Yet, as you know, at this point in time, only Tom Oudal of Texas and Gloria and I make any substantial financial contributions to the TNR Foundation's cause. As these funds come in they are rapidly depleted because of the mentioned cost. In order to rectify this grim situation, it was suggested that we should consider putting certain books of The New Revelation on the market for sale. What is Your opinion about this suggestion?

The Lord Jesus Christ: This suggestion was given with the right and positive intent. However, let Me tell you something about this issue. There are certain things in and about My New Revelation that have a permanent validity. Because of that, they can never be changed or modified. A good example of such a permanency is the absolute requirement that no church, organization, spiritual movement, or whatever of that nature could ever be established based on or founded on the principles of My New Revelation. This requirement will always be true to eternity, no matter who says what and no matter how it would be backed up by all types of miracles and convincing proclamations — even if such an individual were to resurrect someone from death in front of your eyes. This will be true not only about the current New Revelation but, also, about any succeeding one in the future. Now, the same thing is true about any possibility, now or ever, of selling the books of My New Revelation. My New Revelation contains My Word. My Word is not for sale. It must be made available to everyone without a price tag. Besides that, you have absolutely no idea to what tremendous spiritual danger you would be exposing not only My New Revelation but also your personal lives — should such an attempt be made to place them on the market for sale. All of you would become an instant target of the renegades and their minions and they would destroy you.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Don't forget please, that selling My New Revelation would equal selling Me out for thirty pieces of silver by My so-called disciple, Judas Iscariot. So, please, no matter how good your intention is, in this respect, dispense with that idea once and for all. Purify yourself from such ideas because having them may cause you to become a target for the renegades and their minions. Such ideas come from the human side of your nature. This is the reason why it might attract the renegades to target you.

It is suggested, therefore, that a different approach be taken to resolve the financial situation of the TNR Foundation.

Peter: The second practical suggestion, which I, personally, appreciate very much, is an offer for assisting me personally with the distribution of the books of The New Revelation and especially with these Dialogs. This is suggested to free my time which I spend on printing, mailing, telephoning and similar chores related to the business of the TNR Foundation, in order to devote all my time solely to the recording of these Dialogs and working with You. What is Your input about this suggestion?

The Lord Jesus Christ: At this point in time it is essential that you continue doing things as you have been without any change. Basically, two-thirds of your time is devoted to these Dialogs and working with Me and for Me directly, both on your planet and in the other dimensions. From the standpoint of your spiritual, mental and physical health and balancing, those external chores serve as respite and rest from your important and time-consuming spiritual duties. The only assistance that you need, in this respect, is editing these Dialogs and financial assistance. Dan Barba is helping you with this editing. However, because of his medical problems, I am suggesting to you and to Dan that, in addition to his editing, you should accept Betty and Heather Oudal's offer to help you with this editing likewise. It is suggested, in all humbleness to Dan, that it would be very beneficial from our standpoint that he spend more time on translation of the Dialogs into Spanish and on the final editing of ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ*** and ***Corollaries to The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***. It is spiritually very important and crucial that this work be done as expediently as possible and as Dan's medical condition would permit. This is so without putting any pressure on Dan or on anyone else.

As far as financial assistance is concerned, it is provided by Tom Oudal and yourself, Peter, and Gloria. Your assistance, Peter, in this respect, has to be limited because of your retirement. Some additional resources either will be provided by someone else or you would have to be satisfied with what is available and manage within the current financial constraints.

Peter: The next more or less practical question relates to our habits to do things in a certain way. This question relates to our routine lifestyle, to our somewhat automatic behaviors regarding such seemingly small and insignificant things as using the same cologne or perfume, the same toothpaste, the same brands of foods, buying at the same stores, reaching for the same products, and similar everyday habits. How may these tendencies negatively influence our lives? Should we recede from them at all?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, Peter and Roxanne, it is a matter of common sense how and what to do regarding these things. In your practical everyday life you have to distinguish between convenience, habits, attachments, addictions, dependencies and legitimate individual needs and preferences. Any attachment, addiction and/or dependence may cause you serious spiritual problems. If you cannot live without them, if they become a ruler of your life, obviously you became their slave and your life energies are wasted on them. However, such things as convenience, preference and individual needs are in a totally different category. They are not enslaving. In fact, they are helping you to manage your time better, as well as to be your own individual selves. Take for example, such a seemingly unimportant preference as to prefer a certain type of fragrance in perfume or cologne or in food. Here is an important spiritual correspondence. As you know, each individual is infinitely unique and different. This factor is correspondentially reflected in the very unique and specific body chemistry that you all have. This is the reason why the same fragrance of perfume and cologne smells very different on each individual's body. So, you prefer to choose the one which is more congruent to your personality and individuality, reflected in your specific body chemistry. The same thing is true about food and other small things of this nature.

As you see from these examples, such things do have very important spiritual correspondences and they do reflect your personal and individual needs. Because of that, they cannot be considered negative or habit-forming in the same manner as the enslaving attachments, addictions and dependencies.

However, despite the fact that they are not, don't forget about one very important spiritual fact. It is prudent and wise to have a variety of experiences, preferences, and involvements, to not restrict or limit yourself only to any particular one which suits you best at each particular time of your life. It is a good spiritual policy to try many different things and to be open to many different experiences in all aspects of your life even though you will always have some things which will always be preferred and desired by you because of your unique personalized and individualized specific needs. And these are appropriate to have.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Peter: All other questions are of purely spiritual nature. Let me start with the one which can be designated as frustrating. It relates to the issue of spiritual progression and to the never-ending movement toward the Absolute. Because of our relative condition, it is obvious that we can never reach the goal to become as and like You are, in an absolute sense. This can be accomplished only in the relative sense. The issue here is the limitations that our relative condition puts on all of us, no matter where we are located or whatever life we are situated in, at any given moment. Are the feelings of frustration and awareness of these burdensome limitations possible in the spiritual world as they are here in our human life?

The Lord Jesus Christ: In one of the previous Dialogs we were discussing the issue of the possibility of ending one's life by suicide because of boredom or the never-ending life in the positive state. Whatever was said there about that issue fully applies to the current question. Two aspects exist to this issue. One relates to the structure of each sentient entity's mind and to the agreement under which his/her individualized and personalized unique life could become reality. The structure of each sentient mind in the positive state is such that, by its very nature, it desires nothing else but to be in a continuous state of progression toward the absolute state without ever having a desire to become this absolute state. This was an agreed-upon arrangement. It is only in human life that such frustrating feelings may occur for the same reasons as was indicated in the mentioned Dialog about the possibility of suicide while living in the positive state. We are not going to repeat them here. Please, carefully reread that Dialog. Don't forget that human life is in a state of the most unimaginably restricting, limiting and ignorant condition possible of any other known or unknown life. Because of that, only from the position of your specific human life can these types of questions, concerns and ideas enter your mind.

The second aspect relates to the issue of the infinite varieties of experiences that are being provided by this particular arrangement. If you face eternal progression toward My Absolute State, because of the nature of its absoluteness it contains infinite varieties of possibilities and creative and incentive stimulation which inspire the sentient mind to strive to know more, to understand more, to apply more and to accomplish more. By the fulfillment of these needs, in a continuous and progressive mode, there is a base and foundation for constant change in the structure and dynamics of one's own life and in one's personality and individuality. In the process of this most desirable progression, one becomes always different and more unique. That way one is able to approximate My Absolute Nature more and more. At the same time, this arrangement provides everyone with the utmost assurance that never will there be a condition during which one would come to the end of one's development, growth, and progression, being

prevented from becoming always different and more unique. Thus, in this respect, this is the most desirable setup that exists for life in the positive state.

What you have to understand, in this respect, Peter and Roxanne, is that before any sentient entity came to his/her unique, individualized and personalized life, in their ideas contained in My Absolute State, I and all My sentient ideas were very carefully exploring all possibilities under which their life could become external reality apart from being only My ideas. In the process of that exploration, the best possible and most desirable mode of life was found and established which is founded on continuous spiritual progression. Because we all unanimously agreed that the selected mode of life was the only one possible and the only one feasible for the eternal benefit of all, it was that life which was put into motion or which was chosen by all of us. At the same time, any need or desire to come to some kind of ending of this process or reaching the Absolute State, and from there going nowhere, was eliminated from the content of every sentient mind in the positive state.

It is only in human life and in life of the negative state that such a desire exists. This condition in human life and in the negative state stems from the temporality of their pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. Because of their unconscious desire to end that kind of pseudo-life, a need was implanted into their mind to come to some kind of ultimate conclusion, or reach some kind of ultimate goal in order to get out of their miserable life. Can you at all imagine what would happen if all of you in human life and in the life of the negative state were to have exactly the same conditions as people have in the positive state? Can you see clearly that, in that case, no one ever would want to get out of their human life and life of the negative state? Once again, and I repeat, the negative state could not be eliminated, and human life with all its atrocities and abominations would have to stay forever. As a consequence of this impossible outcome, the fullness and completeness of life of the positive state could never be instituted to eternity. In that case, everyone in the positive state really would want to terminate their lives for good and forever. Such things are impossible to ever happen. By the above mentioned agreement, it was provided that only the above described arrangement would be in place and that only in human life and in the life of the negative state such negative ideas could occur for their own sake, so that they would not be bogged down in their miserable pseudo-life forever.

Peter: The next question relates to the spiritual correspondence of your 12 disciples. We know only of Peter, James and John and to what they correspond (Peter corresponds to Your Divine Truth and Wisdom, John corresponds to Your Divine Good and Love and James to Your Divine

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Positive Works and Faith). What about others? Is there any relevance to the 12 dimensions? What about other dimensions?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Similarity exists between the correspondences of My twelve disciples and the twelve tribes of the children of Israel. Some of these correspondences were properly described in the book, ***Reality, Myths & Illusions***, pages 503-505. It would be a good idea to familiarize yourself with that description.

However, there is another spiritual correspondence as related to My disciples. The number twelve or twelve disciples, signifies and corresponds to the totality of all remains of good and truth, with all their derivatives, that were hidden in the farthest recesses of everyone's mind, in its deepest unconscious region, and from which everyone lived and was alive on planet Zero in the typical human life. That I was, in most instances, always accompanied by My disciples signifies that I functioned only from the position of the positive state rooted in My Absolute Divine Good and Truth. The fundamentals of the positive state and My Nature are Divine Love and Divine Good, Divine Wisdom and Divine Truth and Divine Positive Works and Faith. In the old conceptualization of the words 'Positive Works,' we used to say 'charity.' As you know, the word 'charity', under the presently existing spiritual conditions, is no longer appropriate to use. In human terms, it has too much negative connotation. Very often it applies to giving support to the negative state and to some human organizations which are of the negative origin, with an obscure selfish purpose in their design. Therefore, it was replaced with the words 'positive works'.

The above mentioned fundamentals and essentials of My True Nature were represented by My three disciples — Peter, John and James. The various infinite derivatives of these most important fundamentals and essentials are represented by the rest of My nine disciples. At this point in time it is not appropriate to go into the details of what specific derivatives each disciple represents. From the functional standpoint, they are of similar nature as described in the above mentioned book, pages 503-505.

However, as you know, in the initial setup, one of the twelve disciples — Judas Iscariot — betrayed Me. Later on, by the cast lots, a new disciple was chosen — Matthias — to replace Judas. It was necessary to do so in order to continue in the representation and preservation of unity and integration of the positive state as projected to planet Zero.

The original setup with My disciples has an entirely different spiritual correspondence which has so far not been revealed. It corresponds to the original state of My Creation before activation of the negative state. In that state, no effort was made to put into an active mode or to actualize and

realize the idea of rejecting Me as the only source of life. However, as the development of all sentient entities continued and as they learned more and more about all aspects of their specific life (this learning is represented by teaching My disciples about various spiritual issues during My incarnation on planet Zero), gradually the question about any other type of life other than the life of the positive state, entered their mind. This entrance is represented by Judas' willingness to sell Me out. In this respect, Judas Iscariot represents the pseudo-creators who decided to answer that question by fabricating the other type of life, or pseudo-life, to be exact. Thus, by doing that, Judas was cut off from being My disciple, as the pseudo-creators were cut off from My positive State and thrown out into the Zone of Displacement where they established the proverbial Hells. Judas' voluntary ending of his own life by hanging himself represents total and irrevocable termination of the negative state — once it fulfills its purpose. That he felt remorse and recognized the fact that he betrayed an innocent blood signifies that all originators of and participants in the life of the negative state and human life will eventually recognize the foolishness of their endeavors and will accept the fact that the only true reality is in the life of the positive state. Therefore, as Judas voluntarily terminated his life, so will they voluntarily terminate the life of the negative state and the evil and false aspects of their own negative life. Symbolically speaking, they will hang that life so that it could never be reactivated again.

No one knows that by Judas' admission of his guilt and by acknowledging My innocence, he eventually was redeemed by Me. I forgave him on the spot. However, it took a very long time, in your conceptualization of time, for him to accept My forgiveness and, in turn, to forgive himself. He recognized very clearly the need to bear and to illustrate the consequences of his evil deed. Thus, he was his own judge, prosecutor and executioner. But once that illustration completed its course, he was able to accept My forgiveness and forgive himself and he returned to My fold.

From the standpoint of the structural nature of My Creation and pseudo-creation, My first three disciples correspond to the Spiritual Mind and its three degrees and to the Spiritual Dimension and its three degrees; the second three disciples correspond to the interior mind and its three degrees, as well as to the intermediate dimension and its three degrees; and the last three disciples correspond to the external mind and its three degrees, as well as to the physical dimension and its three degrees. This is the significance of the number twelve in the discussed connotation only. Judas Iscariot in this respect corresponded and represented the most outward degree of the most external level of the external mind and physical dimension. This represents the fact that only in the most external degree, and no other, any need to activate the negative state through the betrayal of the positive state, and put it into dominance, could occur.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

The twelve dimensional factors as they are conceived in the space-time continuum through which the physical universe discharges its being and existence, have no relevance to the discussed issue. They have a totally different meaning. At this point in time you are not ready to know more about them. Certain things need to be accomplished and established first before any light could be shed on their function. In your present condition, being that you are in the human skin and living on planet Zero, such knowledge could be detrimental to you. Should anything change in this respect, you will be informed accordingly.

Peter: The next question relates to the ‘exact’ place of Your birth on this planet and to The Via Dolorosa, said to be the traditional pathway designated as the way You carried the cross, as depicted in all those commercialized tourist books. The question is if any of those places are the exact place where You were born, died, walked, etc., or is every place just a trap for so-called Christians who want to emulate Your suffering?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Some aspects of this question were indirectly explained in one of the previous Dialogs which dealt with the issue of why it was necessary for Me to be born in that particular region (the land of Canaan) and why the Islam religion originated there likewise. Also, some aspects of why I was born as a Jew were revealed in Update 9 of the **Corollaries...** .

Let Me go into this issue a little further. For very important spiritual reasons, I had to be born in the town of Bethlehem. This is in fulfillment of the prophecy recorded in the Book of the prophet Micah, Chapter 5, verse 2, and I quote, ‘*But you, Bethlehem Ephrathah, **though** you are little among the thousands of Judah, yet out of you shall come forth to Me The One to be ruler of Israel, whose goings forth have been from of old, from everlasting.*’ It is interesting to note that in the Gospel According to Matthew, this verse is quoted in a somewhat different fashion (all quotes are taken from The New King James Version of the Holy Bible). Let Me quote it also, ‘*But you, Bethlehem, in the land of Judah, are not the least among the rulers of Judah; for out of you shall come a Ruler who will shepherd My people Israel.*’ (Matthew 2:6).

My birth in the town of Bethlehem, which was the least significant and the smallest of them all, signifies My choice to humble Myself and to lower Myself to the lowest possible level of human life, as well as to the most external one. You have to understand very clearly that, from the spiritual standpoint, any birth or beginning of My life on your planet in any other place other than the lowest of the lowest and the smallest of the smallest would not only exclude anyone from the sphere of My needed influence and, most importantly, from My need to gather all necessary and vital

experiences, but it would bypass all situated in those regions from their being eventually saved and liberated from the negative state. The rule here is that if you want to include in your experiential mode everything, without exception and exclusion, you have to start from the least and the smallest and proceed from there to all other levels. Otherwise, you would leave out the basics on which the origin of life, in our case, of the pseudo-life, was initiated. This is the reason why I had to be born, not only in Bethlehem, which at that time corresponded to the discussed position, but also, in its most outward and lowest place — in a manger, the place for animals. As you see from this positioning, there was no possible lower and more humble abode to be born in than the manger. Also, such a choice on My part, besides the described corresponding significance, reflects My Absolute Humility, Modesty, Innocence and Humbleness. All other places in the discussed land where I walked and performed My work, also had very important spiritual correspondences which enabled Me to acquire everything that I needed for the purpose of My entrance into the Hells and for the lockup of the pseudo-creators. At this point in time it would be difficult for you to grasp what those correspondences are and how they were utilized by Me for that purpose.

So, in answering Roxanne's question, yes, all those designated places in the Holy Bible were the places where I was born, walked, did My work and was crucified.

Peter: What about her question about the town of Nazareth that supposedly didn't exist and was set up later on to trap Christian tourists? Also, about the issue of Your being a Nazarene?

The Lord Jesus Christ: There was a community of Nazarenes which, later on, came to be known under the name of Nazareth. It was named so by association to the Nazarenes. This is obvious from verse 23, Chapter 2 in Matthew, and I quote, *'And he came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophets, "He shall be called a Nazarene."*' So there is some credence to the existence of such a community, turned into a city. Nazarenes were the ones who were committed to never shave their heads. This was so in order to illustrate the sanctity of the wholeness of one's spirit, soul and body which had been continuously violated by all traditions, conventions and customs of that time. It also corresponded to the positive spiritual powers that couldn't be defeated or corrupted by the forces of the negative state, no matter how much or for how long and with what deviance they would try to do so. This is the reason why I became a Nazarene and lived in a Nazarene community. This also is the reason why Samson, who was a Nazarene, was blinded when he was lulled by his female lover into sleep during which she was able to shave off his hair, making him, thus, powerless. As you see, all

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

these events and happenings have a very important spiritual significance and correspondence.

Peter: Roxanne's next question has a similar connotation, as above. It relates to the Jews' crossing of the Red Sea which parted in front of them and which they were able to cross on dry land. Some people claim it was a mistranslation and it was really supposed to have been 'the Reed Sea' which is in a different location altogether and is much narrower and shallower. Is there any truth in this?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, as with the above doubts about the place of My birth, etc., the same applies here. Again, there are very important spiritual correspondences in the entire story of the Red Sea crossing, and with the life of the children of Israel in Egypt and their various escapades. Don't forget one thing, though: The negative state has been making an all-out effort to discredit all Biblical stories regarding anything and especially regarding My activities during that time. So, they came out with their own versions of how things happened in order to undermine the true meaning of those events. If you don't have the right knowledge about the real meaning, significance and correspondences of those events, or whatever it is, they cannot trigger in your mind the proper perception of the true spiritual reality. In that case, you will accept falsities about anything. In this case, you would accept something that couldn't connect you to the true positive state. Only through such proper corresponding means, up to a certain point, could humans have been connected to the positive state.

As you know, any life, including the human life and pseudo-life of the negative state depends, in an ultimate sense, on some feasible connection to the positive state, and ultimately to Me. For people in the negative state and humans of those times, such a connection was provided by the spiritual correspondences of certain physical places, events, external depictions and symbols and their respective functions. This is why such correspondences were established. What you have to clearly understand in this respect, is that if it were not for the negative state and human life, no such correspondences would be needed. It was for their sake and for the sake of giving them an opportunity to experiment in the life of the negative state and human life that they were instituted. The positive state, in itself and by itself, does not need to have correspondences. Everything is clear and obvious to them without any need of their symbolical depictions. However, in order to not contaminate the purity of the positive state's life by the nature of the negative state, and to generate life force energies into the life of the negative state and human life, it was necessary to come up with a certain setup which would make such intercommunication possible without any outward understanding of and influence on each other or without any direct connections between the two states. The function of correspondences

serves this purpose well. So, the negative state does not want people to know that they live and function only through the mode of spiritual correspondences, be they positive or negative, and that they live and are alive only by them. Therefore, they distort and falsify anything related to these important issues as recorded, for example, in the Bible.

As you remember from My New Revelation — the Big Book — in Chapter 23, it was indicated there that My government of planet Zero is executed through an illustrative mode in the form of spiritual correspondences. At the time of the Old Testament, certain people, as well as certain nations, lands, events, happenings and setups on planet Zero played a very important role in representing significant spiritual factors and correspondences which reflected the process of spiritual developments in the spiritual world, as well as of the pseudo-spiritual world. Also, they represented the nature of combat which was going on between the forces of the positive state and the negative state. As you remember from the mentioned chapter in the Big Book, at that time humans were in an extreme state of externalization and ritualization without any sense of the internal spiritual states. Because of this factor, in order to keep them alive and living, it was necessary to devise such representative modes for them which would maintain their connection to the spiritual world, the world of pure internal states. The only way they could be kept in some awareness, albeit an obscure one, of the true spiritual reality, was through these types of representative depictions. Also, they needed to witness all kinds of miraculous works which could not be explained by any other external factors but only by spiritual ones.

The story of the children of Israel, and their life in the land of Egypt, as well as their liberation and exodus from that land and wandering in the desert for 40 years, as well as their entrance into the land of Canaan, and what they did there and how they behaved, served these important representations. Thus, in this respect, you can conceptualize them as a symbolization of life in the negative state from which they were being liberated by My Divine Providence, represented here by Moses. Being in the negative state signifies being in the Hells. Coming out of the Hells is possible only by a one way route — from the lowest hell, through all other levels of the Hells to the very exit from the Hells. The Red Sea represents the deepest hell through which everyone in the negative state has to go, in order to bear the consequences of their evil and false lifestyle. Because I am the only one who can bring out anyone from the Hells, or in this case, from the negative state in general, I personally protect everyone who agrees to convert to the positive state. This is depicted by the pillar of cloud which stood between the children of Israel and the forces of the Hells. Notice please, it was the light in the night to one side, in this case, to the children of Israel, and at the same time it was a cloud and darkness to the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

other side, in this case, to the forces of evils of the Hells. Whereas it brought protection, salvation and enlightenment to those who were in the process of conversion to the positive state, at the same time it brought obscurity, confusion and blindness to the attacking negative side. As you remember, any time you brought the positive state into a closer proximity to the negative state, everyone in the negative state was exposed to their own misery, confusion, turmoil and insanity. Thus, they experienced typical traits of their own nature in the fullness of its manifestation. Without such a proximity, they fully deny that they have such a nature.

Of course, the situation is entirely different now than it was at that time. However, that event still signifies and corresponds to, or depicts, the process of bringing out all who trapped themselves in the negative state of the Hells from its clutches, and their return to the positive state. It is depicted here by the entrance of the children of Israel into the land of Canaan. The total elimination and destruction of the negative state is depicted by the Pharaoh and his armies who pursued the children of Israel into the Red Sea after it was divided into two sides, and which was brought back to its former condition, while he and his horses, chariots and armies were still in its midst and after the children of Israel left it. So, as you see from these symbolical depictions, because of the spiritual need to illustrate everything in concrete, tangible and physically and externally realistic events, such things described in the Holy Bible literally had to happen. At that time, it was the only way anything spiritual could be manifested on planet Zero and in human life. Thus, in response to Roxanne's question, yes, it was the Red Sea, and yes, it all happened the way it is described in the Bible for the above mentioned important spiritual reasons.

Peter: Thank You very much for this revelation and explanation. I think I've exhausted all the posed questions at this time. Is there anything else You wish to add or to comment on?

The Lord Jesus Christ: No, Peter, it should be enough. Have a nice evening.

Fifty Seventh Dialog

March 20, 1999

Peter: Before asking any questions, I would like to ask You if You have anything to add or to comment about anything You wish?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for asking Me to do so. Yes, I do have something to add to the topic of our discussion yesterday as recorded in the Fifty Sixth Dialog. One issue relates to My 12 disciples. As you noticed yesterday, we designated some aspects of the spiritual correspondences of the nine disciples, leaving out the last three. One of the reasons why almost no information exists about the last several disciples, especially the last three, is because their corresponding significance related to something that was inconceivable at that time. As mentioned before, the Creation and pseudo-creation were in total isolation, separation and a closed-in condition without any direct contact between them. As you also know, the indirect contact was maintained by means of correspondences and symbolical representations. The ideas of their unity, oneness and integration were ingrained in this type of indirect contact without having their direct experience. And yet, with the future outcome of everything related to My Grand Plan of this unification, integration and oneness, it was extremely vital to maintain such ideas in sentient minds. Without having such ideas, no tendency would exist, not only toward striving to ever accomplish the goal of this unification, integration and oneness, but no need would exist to eliminate the negative state or to activate the fullness and completeness of the life of the positive state. Such ideas were maintained by means of the mentioned correspondences and symbolical representations.

The last three disciples were correspondences and representations of these factors of unification, integration and oneness. First of all, they represented these factors as related to the sentient mind. As you know, the sentient mind was divided into three aspects — inner-spiritual, interior and external. In the human sentient mind on these positive aspects were superimposed the pseudo-spiritual, pseudo-interior and pseudo-external mind. The structure of the sentient mind reflected the structure of Creation and pseudo-creation. Or, to be more precise, the structure of Creation and pseudo-creation reflected the structure of the sentient mind. Because of the closure, isolation and separation of these aspects of the sentient mind, the structure of Creation and pseudo-creation had exactly the same design.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

So, in this sense, the last three disciples represented these ideas as related not only to the unification, integration and oneness of the sentient mind but to all dimensions of My Creation and pseudo-creation likewise. At the same time, in their totality, all twelve disciples represented and corresponded to the idea of elimination of the negative state and of the gruesome complexity of the human sentient mind which was locked out and closed off from direct access by the superimposed pseudo-sentient mind. Again, such an idea needed to be ingrained not only in sentient minds elsewhere, but especially and particularly, into the human sentient mind. Without it, no human could be saved. In some mysterious way, you may conceive the process of saving humans by means of removing of their pseudo-sentient mind from the structural design of their original mind. As you know, this pseudo-mind was genetically fabricated for them through the means of special types of spiritual correspondences.

On the other hand, as was mentioned several times before, any process of elimination of the negative state and of the pseudo-sentient portion of the human mind, can begin and be accomplished only from the position of the mentioned unification, integration and oneness. The reason for this need was explained in the previous Dialogs. My 12 disciples reflected this necessity. In this respect, number 12 corresponds to these factors. As you see from this explanation, whatever I did during My life on planet Zero, I did it with only one thing and purpose in My mind — salvation and preservation of all sentient minds, as well as humans, and setting up a condition for unification, integration, and oneness of all, for the purpose of a total and complete elimination of the negative state and of all the negative aspects of human life, rooted in the existence of its pseudo-sentient mind.

The other issue that needs further elaboration relates to the role that Judas Iscariot played. Everyone in the Christian World considers him a most terrible and contemptible person, deserving to be condemned to burn in the fires of hell to eternity. This is how he is depicted by all religiously minded humans. They concentrate only on that part in the Gospels, related to his story, which talks about his betrayal, sell-out and suicide. No one has taken into consideration that he repented, was remorseful and returned the 30 pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders who paid him, by throwing them in the midst of the temple and afterwards, hanging himself. And yet, all these events have deeper spiritual meanings and correspondences.

First of all, don't forget that someone had to agree to play the role of the one who would betray Me. After all, I and Judas agreed that this

situation would be played out for some very important spiritual reasons. Judas not only agreed to betray Me but also to bear all consequences, results and outcomes of such a betrayal. This was done with the understanding that once this process was completed, he would be redeemed from being a cursed and condemned man.

If he had been the way he is portrayed in all churches and religious sects, he would never be able to feel remorse for what he did. Anyone who is of a negative nature or who was originally fabricated in the Hells for such a purpose, is fabricated with the total inability to feel any remorse. In your human life, such a condition and tendency — the inability to feel remorse — is manifested in the life of antisocial or psychopathic personalities. They commit their atrocious and abominable deeds without feeling any remorse or guilt. As long as such a person is in the negative state and is devoted to it, and lives by its rules, such a person is unable to feel or to express remorse and/or guilt. In order to have such an experience, one would have to be withdrawn from the negative state and be spiritually, mentally and genetically rewired and totally changed or reborn. This was not the case with Judas. By expressing his remorse to the very extreme — committing suicide, he clearly demonstrated that he was not of a purely negative and evil nature.

Let us look at some of the spiritual correspondences of Judas' representation and behavior. As you know, he was carrying a special type of box into which willing individuals put some money. Thus, Judas was in charge of our material and physical needs — buying food, clothing and all other necessities for our human bodies. This position depicts the most external requirements for taking care of the most external factors of the totality of one's spirit, soul and body. Because these are the most external and outward factors of anyone's life, without proper consideration of their internal and intermediate counterparts, occasionally they have a tendency to disregard the spiritual and mental factors of life.

The moment such factors are neglected or disregarded, the negative state, rooted in this neglect and disregard, takes over, and by that fact sets up anyone who is in such a state for betraying the positive state or, in this case, into betraying the proper spiritual principles that underlie the possibility of any life. As you know, money is the life-blood of the negative state, or its false spirituality. If you place all your hopes and efforts into money, making it the ultimate goal of your life, you lose any sense of what the true life is all about. In that case, you will become negative and your life will be ruled by evils and falsities.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

So, Judas was in charge of money, representing and illustrating the factor of the outcome of a preoccupation with such non-spiritual things, without any regard for their spiritual roots. The chief priests and elders in this connotation represent the entirety of the negative state, which seeks any possible and impossible means to destroy the positive state, represented here by Me.

Once you have money, and that money becomes the ruling factor of your life, you will establish a condition of dependency and addiction to money, which leads you into a state of craving to have more and more money. The moment you become a slave of your own cravings, you will do anything to satisfy them, even to the point of betraying or selling out your own mother and father, so-to-speak. In this case, betraying Me. This factor is nicely illustrated by the addicts of alcohol, drugs and other types of substances, who are able to commit any crime to satisfy their cravings. In this respect, you can consider that Judas was the very first one who agreed to illustrate and demonstrate this fact and to set up an example of all consequences, outcomes and results of such conditions and states.

However, in Judas' case the situation was much deeper than just illustration of the results of addiction to money. First of all, it is an illustration of the results of a separation from the spiritual, inner, internal and inward factors of life and turning to the external, outward and outside factors. Secondly, it is an illustration of separation of one portion of the energies of the positive state from its totality, and utilizing it for fabrication of a different style of life than that which underlies the positive state. Thirdly, it is a demonstration of the outcome of turning away from Me personally, and giving preference to the pseudo-gods represented here by money. As you know, money is a pseudo-god of the negative state and its human life. In your life on planet Zero, everything is ruled by money. You cannot take one step without having money to survive in your human life. So, in an ultimate sense, this is an illustration and demonstration of what happens if the meaning of life is placed into something that has no meaning, in this case into money. Judas' case represents the most extreme outcome of such a setup, rooted in the nature of the negative state.

That Judas realized his horrible mistake and experienced remorse signifies that everyone in the pseudo-life of the negative state will eventually recognize the terrible mistake that they made in activating and putting the negative state into dominance. Following this realization, that portion of energy which they separated from the totality of all positive energies, represented here by 30 pieces of silver, will be returned to those who originally initiated such an activation, in this case,

to the pseudo-creators. That it was returned in the midst of the temple signifies the midst of the negative state to which the pseudo-creators returned after their lockup. That they could not take back the money in question signifies their inability to utilize the energy of the positive state any longer for further expansion of their pseudo-creative efforts. But it also signifies their ultimate realization that the answer to their existential question cannot be found in any external, outside, non-spiritual, materialistic and scientific factors, represented here by that money. For that reason, not only will they reject accepting it back as something that could still have any meaning for them but, symbolically speaking, they use it for buying a portion of land for the burial of poor people. This signifies that they bury for good and forever all manifestations of the negative state and the negative state itself. Poor people represent all these manifestations. In fact, in the currently discussed connotation, poor people illustrate and demonstrate that the negative state, in the true reality of its nature, doesn't have anything at all and is totally meaningless and valueless. Therefore, the only thing you can do with the negative state is to bury it forever.

In a more literal connotation of the described events as related to Judas, it is also an illustration and demonstration of how the negative state at that time valued the positive state and the spiritual principles of life which emanated from My Absolute Nature. In this sense, it is an illustration of how the negative state personally valued Me at that time. In their view I was a cheap fellow whose price tag didn't deserve to be greater than 30 pieces of silver. 30 pieces was the lowest price for which you could buy something that had only very little value. In this case, it was a piece of property that was good for nothing or it was good only for something as despicable as burying poor people. So, as you see from this explanation, the story of Judas of Iscariot has multiple meanings. Up to this point, no one has known the true background of this story. All of you have looked at what was happening at the scene without seeing or understanding anything that was going on behind the scene.

Peter: Well, I see this clearly. This is a surprising revelation to me.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, it is. However, as you know, the problem with the readers of the Christian Bible, or Islam's Koran or any other so-called holy books, is in the fact that they take everything that is contained in them only literally. Taking it literally means seeing things at the scene and not behind it. And yet, it was revealed to all of you in My New Revelation the scene and not behind it. And yet, it was revealed to all of you in My New Revelation that nothing in them whatsoever should be taken literally. Living in the physical, external world where

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

everything is manifested literally, it is not easy for you to bypass the literal meaning and discover the purely spiritual meaning which is behind the scene. Your lifestyle and the structure of your human mind were purposefully designed in such a manner so as to be able to see and discern things only in their literal and outward connotation. It takes a lot of time and tremendous effort to train yourself to see behind the scenes and to consider the spiritual factors of all such events.

But look at the tremendous danger that you are currently facing as a result of this situation. As you surmise, Peter, the majority of humans belonging to the various religions, take literally, and not spiritually everything written in their so-called holy books. Take for example, the literal predictions of the Christian Bible, of the Jewish Talmud, of the Muslim Koran, and of the holy books of Buddhists, Hindus and any others. They all are full of various prophetic predictions of doomsday, Armageddon, the ending of the known physical universe, My Second Coming for Christians, the coming of the Messiah for Jews, the coming of Imam Mahdy for Muslims, the coming of Krishna for Hindus and the unified coming of them all in one person under the name of Lord Maitreya.

For almost two thousand years, all who have belonged to these various religions have been waiting and waiting and waiting in total futility for all these events and comings to come true. Yet, as of this date, none of them have materialized. At the end of every century, every decade or during any unusual events, they have expected that by now all those predictions would have come true and that the time was near. The state of this futile and hopeless waiting leads many people to the opposite extreme — to the denial of anything of that nature from ever happening and also, to the denial that any other type of life but the physical/bodily human life exists at all and that after one dies it means the end of that life for the dead one.

However, recently, a much more dangerous situation occurred. Some Christian, Jewish, Muslim and other fanatics, in their insane zeal to prove the verity of the literal sense of the mentioned predictions in the so-called holy books, have been trying to accelerate the fulfillment of those predictions in their literal sense by wanting to stage all kinds of turmoil, wars, terrorist activities and similar events which would prove the rightness of their expectations. Because all of them are tired of waiting for those predictions to come true on their own accord, they are trying to do something about them.

Thus, for example, Christian fanatics have been trying to stage all kinds of incitements in Israel to force My Second Coming to take place. What a foolish but extremely dangerous notion! The Jewish fanatics would like to build their third temple (the first temple was built by Solomon. It was destroyed by the armies of Babylon. The second temple was built after their return from the captivity in Babylon. That temple was destroyed by the Roman armies) because, according to their predictions, only after the third temple is built, will the Messiah come. The only problem with this situation is that the third temple has to be built in the same place where the first and the second stood. Unfortunately for the Jews, on that place the most holy mosque of Muslim stands.

So, what do you do with this situation? A plan exists to forcefully destroy the mosque and build the third temple. Can you imagine the consequences of such an effort? An all-out war could erupt from all these foolish tendencies which could destroy humanity as you know it.

I can assure you that at the present time, many similar plans exist among the mentioned fanatics to make a forceful literal actualization and realization of all those predictions in their literal sense. I can also assure you that these are the works of renegades, who are trying to capitalize on those predictions, strongly reinforcing the human belief systems and their tendencies to take everything literally and not spiritually.

All these things are permitted to happen in order to illustrate all consequences of the improper and spiritually dangerous tendency to take everything contained in such holy books literally and not spiritually.

If it were not for My Divine Providence and its hidden works, such fanatical zealots would have succeeded in destroying your world a long time ago. However, the presently existing situation on your planet is the reflection of the presently existing situation elsewhere in other dimensions of the Zone of Displacement and all its Hells, as well as in the negative state in general. It is also the result of the civil war that rages between the pseudo-creators and the renegades. Because of that, the situation with the fanatical zealots became more dangerous than ever before. Don't be surprised if you hear or experience more and more of such dangerous attempts by the mentioned fanatical zealots. You can consider them to be an extended arm of the renegades.

Due to these facts, you, as My true representatives, are asked by Me directly to dispense with any notion of considering the literal sense of the Bible or any such so-called holy books. If you were to continue to cling to

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

the literal sense, you would be supporting the cause of the negative state. And although the followers of Swedenborg's teachings accept the fact of the spiritual correspondences on which the inspired books of the Bible are written, they still require drawing the doctrines of their church from its literal sense. It is no longer appropriate to do so. You were informed by the means of My New Revelation — in the Big Book, that the literal sense of the Bible was replaced with the literal sense of My New Revelation. Only the internal spiritual sense of those books in the Bible have continuous validity, if seen from a proper spiritual perspective.

As you know, the problem with the inner spiritual sense of those books in the Bible is that they were designated to influence the Spiritual Minds but not the interior and external minds. Because of that they provided the needed connection to the true spiritual reality of My Creation, only to everyone's Spiritual Mind, bypassing the interior and external minds. At that time this situation reflected the then existing condition of the total separation, isolation and locked-in system that ruled the life of all dimensions. As mentioned in one of the previous Dialogs, this setup was first necessary to establish in order to give an opportunity for the rise of a lifestyle different from that of the positive state.

However, the presently existing situation requires a different approach. At this crucial time, when we all are standing at the crossroads of a choice-making and decision-making process, it is absolutely necessary to include in it everyone's interior and external minds likewise. Remember please, the positive state also needed to be brought and positioned into the midst of the externals, that is to say, into the midst of human life and the negative state in general. The externals are their life.

To repeat again, you cannot do anything about the negative state and human life from the position of being outside of them. Only from within them can you accomplish anything at all. And because their life is rooted in the externals, by the logical requirement of this setup, you have to position yourself in those externals.

Those of you who read and accept the three sources of My New Revelation, that is to say, those of you who are My true representatives on planet Zero, are becoming the embodiment of this important requirement. You will be My extended arm in the very externals of the human life through whom I will generate all necessary components, for the purpose of the accomplishment of our ultimate goal — the elimination of the negative state and its typical negative aspects of its human life and for the activation of the fullness and completeness of life of the positive state.

For that reason I am giving you a proper understanding of all these factors, especially as related to the predictions of the so-called holy books, so that you don't fall into the trap of the majority of humans' belief system. And at the same time so that with this proper understanding, you prepare humanity to accept the truth of these facts when the time comes. By your life and acceptance of these facts, you are preparing them for that time.

Some of the readers of these Dialogs indicated to you, Peter, that they still read the Bible, finding some contradictions in it between what we have been talking and writing about and what is written in the Bible. They have forgotten what was said about such reading in one of the previous Dialogs. It was clearly indicated there why the reading of the Bible, and having a tendency to accept or to concentrate on its literal meaning, can endanger your spiritual life. You have to learn to dispense with such a tendency and to set up an example for others of how not to take literally anything contained in the Bible or any other so-called holy books.

Many human tragedies, throughout their entire history, were generated by such clinging to the literal sense of the Bible and of all the other so-called holy books. The literal sense is subject to numerous different irreconcilable and contradictory interpretations. Because of that, they are the source of major conflicts in human history. You don't want to support that tendency by your own habit of considering or accepting the literal sense of such books on face value.

You are on this planet to establish a lifestyle which is not founded on such interpretations and understandings. This is the reason why you are given all this important information, as contained in these Dialogs specifically, and in the two other sources of My New Revelation in general. On your planet, very few individuals are privileged to have this information and understanding. Of course, some of them, if privileged to have access to them, would reject it for their own reasons. This has already been the case and will be the case in many instances.

In order to accomplish your goal and the purpose for which you are being designated as My true representatives, you are humbly asked by Me to not waste your time on reading or studying anything else not related to your professional needs and standing which is contradictory to the content of My New Revelation. It would be very beneficial if you were to spend most of your free time reading and studying My New Revelation. That way, not only would you be spared from being contaminated with the content of such readings, but most importantly, you would succeed in

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

establishing a lifestyle congruent to My True Nature and to the nature of My positive state. And this is for what you are needed the most.

Peter: Thank You very much for this timely reminder. Is there anything else today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: No, Peter, this is all. Have a wonderful day.

Fifty Eighth Dialog

March 23, 1999

Peter: This morning I would like to ask You for some additional clarification on the issue of the literal meaning of events described in the Bible and on their symbolical representation. Yesterday, in my discussion with Heather, she raised a question of a possible contradiction between the statement that nothing in the Bible should be taken literally, and the statement that everything happened literally. Then I received two questions from Mr. Beneš of Slovakia and one question from Tom Oudal of Texas. May we address this issue and those questions?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, you most certainly may. Let us begin with the issues raised by Heather about the possible contradiction, and then we'll go into answering Mr. Beneš' two questions and Tom's one question.

As you remember from previous explanations, at the time of the exodus of the children of Israel from Egypt, and in the entire history of writing of the books contained in the Bible, humanity on planet Zero was positioned in the extreme state of externalization and ritualization. No direct perception of the spiritual reality of life existed. In order to maintain humanity alive and living, some modes of indirect connection to that spiritual reality needed to be established. Otherwise they could not survive. That mode was found in the spiritual correspondences. The way these correspondences function is by selecting certain individuals, groups, nations, lands, objects, animals, plants, etc. who would be assigned, by their lifestyle, behavior, structure, dynamics and the way they go about the fulfillment of their everyday needs, and anything else, to represent these spiritual factors of life. In most instances, they are not consciously aware of their function in that role and that the purpose of their life on planet Zero is to be representatives and correspondences of these facts. Thus, whatever happens in their life, in a literal sense, does really happen but, at the very same time, events of their life and experiences are representations, correspondences and depictions of some important spiritual reality and meaning.

Therefore, when we are talking about not taking anything literally that which is contained in the Bible, we are talking about the need to look on those representations, correspondences and depictions embedded in those events, and not on the events themselves. The events in themselves and by themselves, apart from what they represent, correspond to, and depict, have no meaning from the spiritual standpoint. So, when we say

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

or confirm that the crossing of the Red Sea on dry land by the children of Israel literally happened, it is not the crossing itself that you should consider but what it spiritually represents and signifies — the way it was explained in the Fifty Sixth Dialog, for example.

However, there is another point to this requirement. It relates to the prophetic predictions contained both in The Old and The New Testament, respectively. As you know, the literal interpretation of those prophecies brought to humanity nothing but disappointment and trouble. We mentioned in the previous Dialog (57) about the tragic outcome of such an interpretation. Because of that, you are being warned to not make the same mistake as the majority of humanity is making by trying to ascribe to them the literal meaning or that they will come true exactly and literally as it is predicted by them. As you remember from the previous explanations in this respect, the majority of such predictions and their actual realization happen either in the spiritual world, through its various dimensions and pseudo-dimensions, or they are spiritual correspondences which describe possible consequences of choices that humans and other creatures would or would not make.

So, to summarize, if you look at our statements in the light of the above described explanation, no contradiction exists in them.

Now, Peter, you may proceed with the other questions.

Peter: Thank You very much for this clarification. Let me present You now with the first question posed by Mr. Beneš. In the latest Dialogs we were talking about the principle of integration, wholeness and unification of the three aspects or dimensions of Your Creation and how important they are for all of us. Is it possible for Your representatives, in the course of their life on planet Zero, to accomplish or to reach integration and unification of their mind the way it is described in ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***, in its Chapter Five? Without following the procedures described in that chapter, which are no longer valid, is there any possibility of accomplishing this most desirable goal of the unification of one's mind and to connect directly with You as You reside in us?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, the answer to that question is contained, to some extent, in the same chapter. It was said there that the full transformation of one's mind is not possible while you still reside on planet Zero and are in the human body and its pseudo-life. When we are talking about transformation we are talking about this most desirable unification and integration of all aspects of one's sentient mind, and

elimination or getting rid of the pseudo-sentient mind and all its aspects. Thus, in answering Mr. Beneš' question, such a total and full integration and unification is not possible while you live on planet Zero and your spirit and soul are bound to function from and through the position of your physical body and the typical aspects of your human nature. They impede, block and interfere with the possibility of completion of this process.

However, there are different degrees and levels of such a process of integration, unification and transformation that one may and can accomplish while still living on planet Zero, functioning from the position of one's human body and human nature. My true representatives are uniquely different and are therefore, on a different level and in a different degree of their roles, assignments and the way they function and what they can accomplish in this respect, as well as how they may accomplish it. Here we are talking again about individualization and personalization of their lives and personalities. Also, we are talking here about the original agreement about how far and to what extent they will need to go in the process of transformation, integration and unification of their minds and connection with Me within their minds. Some can go far, some not so far, and some will be only at the very beginning of this process. However, regardless of how far they can go in this process, their accomplishments in this respect, from the spiritual standpoint and needs that exist for the benefit of all, are required exactly to the degree they are able to establish them in their lives. So, you should not feel bad or less valuable, or less accomplished than anyone who might be, relatively speaking, much farther into this process than you are.

However, the situation, in this respect, has somewhat changed since these Dialogs have been in the process of recording and since the currently ongoing shift has been taking place. The change of your roles and positions from being agents of the positive state and to becoming My true representatives on planet Zero, gives all of you a greater possibility of accomplishing this goal than was previously feasible or conceivable. The way you have to understand this statement is that now you have three sources of My New Revelation, and the awareness to what they correspond and signify. By their means, that is to say, by reading them on a daily basis, by making them the top priority, or number one priority of your life and everyday living and by making an all-out effort on your part to practice and exemplify their principles and what they contain in your life, you will be able to intensify and to go much further in the process of transformation, unification and integration of your mind and being in control of your human pseudo-mind, without allowing this pseudo-mind to rule and influence your life. As this process goes on, the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

sense of your connectedness with Me within your mind will be more discernable, recognizable, perceptible and more and more felt and experienced.

Due to the fact that you are still positioned in human life and in a typical human body, this accomplishment will still be limited and not completed. Only after you leave your human life, that completion will be actualized and realized to its fullest possible extent. At the same time, while living on planet Zero, you will still experience considerable individual differences in how far and to what extent this process will go. And in some cases, for some very important spiritual reasons, no changes or very insignificant changes will occur if looked at them from the standpoint of your external perception and discernment. However, don't be deceived by this false perception and discernment. On the inner level, on the level of your true mind, these changes will be enormous. And not only that, but by not giving in to these false perceptions, and by continuing in your effort to practice what is given to you in the three sources of My New Revelation, you are preparing or paving the way for yourself and others to successfully and immediately finish this goal after your arrival in the spiritual world. That way, you will also be able to begin without any delay in your mission and work for Me, from the position of that world.

At this point in time, you have absolutely no idea how important it is for you and all of us that you continue in your efforts to read the three sources of My New Revelation and practice their principles. If you do that, you will be fulfilling your mission and assignment that you have from Me, while still living on planet Zero. And this is so, regardless of whether you have or don't have any sense of My intimate connection with you in your mind. I can assure you that, by the process of that reading and practicing, you have that connection to the fullest possible degree.

Peter: That was a nice explanation. Thank You so much for it. Mr. Beneš' second question is a very interesting one. You know, for many centuries people were wondering, to no avail, what it was that You wrote on the ground during Your encounter with the scribes and Pharisees and a woman caught in adultery? So, Mr. Beneš is asking if it is possible for us to, finally, learn about this hidden mystery.

The Lord Jesus Christ: It is time for you to know about the true meaning of that encounter. It is not by coincidence that I personally inspired Mr. Beneš to ask that question. Even though Mr. Beneš complains or claims that he has no access to Me in his own within, he is very wrong about it. Not only has he an access, but he is very much in

tune with all aspects of the spiritual reality and his own intuition. The only problem with him is that he does not recognize on his conscious level that this is the case. Perhaps his expectations of how such a connection should be experienced by him is not entirely correct or feasible from the standpoint of his own assignment, mission and role.

But let us go back to the question at hand. You have to look at that encounter, described in John 8:3-11, from three aspects. The first aspect is the act of writing itself, and why I chose that mode of communication and medium for writing; the second aspect is where or on what I wrote or chose to write it; and the third aspect is what really did I write on the ground.

Let us look at each aspect separately. The choice to write at all and the medium of writing has an important spiritual significance and meaning. The mode of writing is the means of communication from the externals to the externals. Or the mode of conveyance of something that is contained in your within but cannot be expressed by any other means but the external ones. If someone is positioned in the externals and relates to others who also are in the externals, you have to use their method of communication for expressing any ideas of any significance. Otherwise, they wouldn't understand you. As you know, I positioned Myself in the most externals and related to humans of that time only from that position. Hence, a choice to write something that I needed to express. To emphasize even more the factor of externals, I chose to write it with My finger. A finger of a human hand or, to be precise, its function, corresponds to the ultimate expression of the external direction of all physical activities and their manipulation. In human life you cannot physically write by the means, solely, of your mind. In most instances you have to use your fingers to do so. In this case, I was illustrating all the limitations to which human life was exposed. But at the same time, I was illustrating that it is possible to convey important spiritual ideas even by such extreme external means which were the only ones available to humans.

The second aspect, of writing on the ground after I stooped down, signifies the need to embed something very important into the very essence and substance on which the negative state and its human life was built. The ground corresponds to the very nature of anyone or anything on which such a nature can be actualized and realized. If you want to convey something of vital and crucial importance in order to make a point or to cause a desirable effect, you have to embed it into the very ground — in this case, in their very nature. Otherwise, it would be only a fleeting impression which disappears as soon as it crosses your

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

awareness. In our case, as you know, this encounter was happening in the midst of the negative state with the representatives and agents of the negative state. Thus, I was putting or embedding something very important in their very nature without their conscious awareness that I was doing so. This was something that related to their future salvation after they fulfilled the purpose and goal for which they chose to be in the negative state. At the same time, I was putting or embedding in their nature, or in the ground, something that, in the future, would be utilized for the total and complete elimination of the negative state when the time would come to do so.

Now comes the third aspect. What was it that I wrote on the ground? Obviously, in order to write something on the ground it has to have enough dust for My words to be readable. The dust corresponds to and signifies the transience and temporality of the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the negative state and the negative aspects of human nature. By writing in the dust on the ground I was conveying to everyone who was observing Me (and this observation was not limited to only humans who came to Me at that time and to the woman they brought with them but, most importantly, to everyone else in My Creation and pseudo-creation) that the negative state and its end product — human life, have only temporary and transient value and that, despite that fact, nevertheless, they will be saved only by the means which were embedded and written in the very structure of their nature, represented here by the ground and My writing on it.

Notice please, that I stooped down twice and wrote twice on the ground. Stooping down corresponds to and signifies My choice to come to the level of the negative state and human life and to embed into them all conditions and means for their salvation, as well as salvation of everyone trapped in the negative state and for its ultimate elimination.

In the first instance of My writing, I wrote from the position of My Absolute Unconditional Divine Love and Its Femininity. In the second instance, I wrote from the position of My Absolute Unconditional Divine Wisdom and its Masculinity. Thus, I was writing from the position of their integration, unification and oneness. In the first instance, I wrote down the words ***‘mercy, compassion and empathy.’*** Those are the attributes of pure unconditional love. In the second instance, I wrote down the words ***‘understanding, acceptance and forgiveness.’*** Those are the attributes of pure unconditional wisdom. Symbolically speaking, by writing those most important, vital and crucial words on the ground, I placed and embedded them in everyone’s unconscious mind (as far as humans and creatures of the negative state are concerned; all others in

the positive state were consciously aware of them) so that they could be utilized, when the time comes, for the accomplishment of the most desirable goal — salvation of all, elimination of the negative state, and activation of the fullness and completeness of the life of the positive state.

The message, in this respect, is very clear, and it is directed to all everywhere and everywhen, without exception or exclusion — both in the positive state and the negative state and human life — that the only means by which this goal can be accomplished at all is by those attributes of My Absolute Divine Love and Absolute Divine Wisdom which were written and embedded in everyone's mind, structurally. There is no other way. If I were not to write them and ingrain them in everyone's mind structurally, even if those in the negative state and in human life are not consciously aware that such is the case, and that they contain them in the very fabric of their mind, no one could ever be saved from anything at all.

This is what was signified by My behavior and actions during the described encounter. Because of that, I clearly could not condemn or judge the woman in question. You cannot do that if you know, in an absolute sense, the reasons for the negative state's pseudo-being and pseudo-existence and for all human problems, as well as for their outcome. The only thing you can do in a situation like that is to let her go and advise her not to behave any longer in the same manner. In other words, instead of judging and condemning anyone in the negative state and human life, you show them the way out of it and tell them what not to do, giving them a choice in the matter. My behavior, in this case, was significant in the sense that for the first time it established a condition of freedom of choice for everyone in human life to be the way they wanted to be. As you know, up to that point, everything was by necessity and no freedom of choice. In this particular case, their law of necessity and no freedom of choice demanded from them to execute that woman by stoning her to death. However, I abolished that necessity by pointing out to them that anyone in the negative state and human life is imbued with problems and sins because it is their nature to be so. Up to that point they had no other alternative. My incarnation on planet Zero into the typical human life brought them the other alternative. This other alternative was illustrated and demonstrated by My behavior during the described encounter and how I handled that situation and what I said to that woman. So, by saying to that woman, 'neither I condemn you; go and sin no more,' I gave her a clear alternative in the matter and set her free from a life of necessity and no freedom of choice. Because the woman in question corresponded to the entire humanity, or to be more precise, to

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

humanity's very soul, I established in her a new lifestyle for humanity rooted in freedom of choice and no necessity. And this is what that case was all about.

As you see from this case, My writing on the ground and what I wrote on it had an enormous significance for the entire being and existence as well as for the entire pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. And not only that but, most importantly, its significance is being triggered right now during this shift in order to establish a condition in your life by which you can proceed toward your ultimate goal and toward fulfillment of your mission for which you are on planet Zero. It gives you a blueprint of how to think, how to behave, how to feel, how to relate, how to will and how to consider all events in human life and in the negative state. This is the reason why I inspired Mr. Beneš to ask that question.

Peter: For the first time in human history, since the time the quoted encounter was recorded by Apostle John, we have the answer to the mystery of Your behavior with that woman and about Your writing on the ground. Thank You very much for this inspiring revelation.

The Lord Jesus Christ: It is a pleasure, Peter. As you see, we are dealing here again with the factor of timeliness. Up to this point, it was not appropriate to either ask that question or to get any answers in that respect. Only during the currently ongoing shift, the need for asking it and getting proper answers to it became crucial and timely. And now, Peter, you may ask Tom's question.

Peter: Tom tells me that for some time now he has been preoccupied with the meaning of the Pyramids situated in Egypt and Mexico and perhaps, in some other places in South America. The question is, who were their builders, how did they come about and what do they signify, if anything at all?

The Lord Jesus Christ: In order to answer Tom's question properly, we need to go back into the history of the activation of the negative state. Some aspects of that history were described in ***Fundamentals of Human Spirituality***. As you know from My New Revelation, many epochs had passed before the full activation of the negative state and fabrication of humans took place. In the process of this activation, several steps needed to be taken. This activation, for obvious reasons, could not happen overnight, so-to-speak. It was a gradual process. In the first round, a direct connection to the spiritual reality of life and to the spiritual world existed. As gradually the idea of the activation of the negative state caught up in the sentient mind, a second round needed to

be instituted. This round is characterized by the replacement of a direct contact with and awareness of the spiritual reality and spiritual world with an indirect one. It was at this time that the science of correspondences was developed and established. It replaced that direct contact and awareness. In order to preserve that contact and awareness in some mode and shape based on the newly developed laws of correspondences, external objects, structures and images were invented and built which would serve as a reminder of the spiritual reality and of the spiritual world, as well as of the origin and source of any life.

These objects, structures and images were carefully designed in such a way that they fully reflected the nature, structure and dynamics of the spiritual life. As you see, in their original design they served solely and only as a reminder of the other reality, other than the external physical reality. People would look at them and they would bring to their memory the reality of the spiritual life and proper spiritual principles by which life, any life, is sustained. In other words, those objects, in themselves and by themselves, didn't mean anything but only what they represented and to what they corresponded, or of what they reminded people of that time. In our present understanding, we would say that they looked at them and saw things as they were behind the scene and not at the scene. However, as the negative state was more and more in the process of its activation, gradually the knowledge and understanding of correspondences was lost and forgotten. At that point in time, people lost their ability to perceive and understand things behind the scene and they began to see only those things that were at the scene, considering them the only possible reality. In this way, they lost their connection with anything truly spiritual and real.

But to go back to those structures and objects. During the time of development and establishment of the science of correspondences, very intricate structures were built, such as the mentioned Pyramids and all other similar objects. As you know, recently, by examining more thoroughly some areas of the Pyramids, your scientists determined that their foundation is much older than it was previously assumed. I can tell you for sure that they date to those times when the future pseudo-creators were in the process of development and establishment of the science of correspondences which I revealed to them for the purpose of their utilization for future needs. Later on, of course, other generations were adding to them without having a proper understanding and meaning of their representation and depiction. So, Pyramids and similar structures were built in different parts of your planet originally as a reminder of eternal life, of the mystery of the origin of life and as a memento that life is not what most people think it is. Because of the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

original purpose for which they were built, every aspect of them, everything that they consist of and everything contained in them has a deeper spiritual meaning, correspondence and representation. They describe the nature of other dimensions, other worlds, other life forms and other realities. Through these descriptions and depictions, contact with and awareness of other worlds and other spiritual realities were maintained throughout many generations. And this was the major purpose for which all those mysterious structures were built.

Of course, this meaning and their purpose was lost to the majority of humans. It was permitted to be lost in order to give a chance and an opportunity for the nature of the typical human life to fully unfold and establish itself for the purpose of learning what types of life not to choose on a permanent basis.

So, in answering directly Tom's question, the original builders of the Pyramids were the scientists who were integral components of the pseudo-creators' clan. Later on, some humans were utilized in the process of their construction with the help of technology which was developed by those scientists and which was lost for many millennia. And this is all that you need to know and understand about this issue at this time. Nothing more would make any sense to your human mind. You will know more about it later on, perhaps only after you leave planet Zero. At that time you will be able to grasp much more, not only about the discussed issue but about all other things.

Peter: We are profoundly thankful for anything that You feel is appropriate and timely for us to know. Is there anything else today that You wish to bring to our attention?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Not today, Peter. This is enough for now. Have a very pleasant day.

Fifty Ninth Dialog

March 29, 1999

Peter: First of all, I would like to thank You for giving me a few days break from dialoging. At the same time, as usual, I felt unproductive during this time. Of course, I understand perfectly that important reasons exist why such breaks are necessary and needed on many levels of my assignment. During this time, some questions arose that need to be presented for Your input. However, the most important event which happened during this time was the beginning of an assault by NATO on Yugoslavia for its unwillingness to accept a peace agreement with fighting Kosovo. Many questions relating to this event were asked. We are all very much concerned and anxious about the possible danger that could escalate into something much more than just bombing the region in question. Every reader of these Dialogs is asking for Your input in this matter and for Your advice on our role and position during this crucial and, possibly, very dangerous time.

The Lord Jesus Christ: As you know, Peter, and all who are asking this question, the situation in Yugoslavia and Kosovo, and NATO's involvement in this conflict, is a reflection of the spiritual affairs that are taking place on other levels of being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. In essence, you are experiencing the manifestation of the previously mentioned civil war which is raging between the pseudo-creators and the renegades. Certain inappropriate choices were made by several factions of the renegades. As a consequence of those choices they brought upon themselves the need for this assault. It is not that I personally willed that this would happen, or that the pseudo-creators wanted it to end up like that. Many efforts were made to keep, as much as possible, this from happening. However, the renegades are not yet at the point that would result in their learning their lessons. They are still blinded by the lust and craving for power, domination and self-exclusiveness. Such tendencies inevitably bring upon themselves the need for their restraining and punishment.

In this particular case, NATO represents the pseudo-creators, Yugoslavia represents one faction of the renegades and Kosovo represents another faction of the renegades. These two factions are in conflict over control, power and domination. Because of the inappropriate choices that the first faction made, it put into danger several dimensions of their realm. This danger could have an adverse effect on many other levels of being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence with an undesirable outcome for all concerned. Because of that, when everything

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

else failed to convince that faction to agree to the suggested peace agreement, it was necessary to permit somewhat drastic measures to be taken in this respect in order to restrain the faction in question.

It would be utterly impossible for you to understand everything that is involved in this situation and how things are being set up for an important choice-making and decision-making process. You have no idea what, who and how everyone is involved in this process. All you know and see is that NATO is bombing Yugoslavia and its military forces in Kosovo. In other words, it is impossible for you to see behind the scene. You see things only as they happen on the scene. And yet, in actuality, things are not what they appear to be on the scene. At this point in time, it would be spiritually very dangerous for you to know exactly everything that is at stake during this conflict. Your question whether this conflict could escalate to the point of a Third World War and the total destruction of humanity has merit. What you have to understand in this respect, is that such a choice and outcome exists. It does not mean that, ultimately, this choice would be chosen and realized. It may or may not happen that way. It all depends on all other important factors and how they would serve toward the ultimate winning and subsequent elimination of the negative state.

One of the possible scenarios of how the negative state would win and ultimately destroy itself is by total annihilation of humanity and everything on planet Zero. As mentioned in one of the previous Dialogs, an all-out effort is being made that such a scenario would not come to this realization. However, although it is improbable, nevertheless, it does exist and it may be chosen if no other means would be available to put an end to the negative state.

Your role in this respect is to continue in your work as My true representatives without being concerned and anxious about the outcome of this conflict. You are to maintain neutrality as far as ethnic Albanians and Serbs are concerned. Don't judge one side or the other. Objectively speaking, both sides have committed and are committing atrocities and abominations against each other. They both can be accused of genocide. It is not your place to take sides about their conflict. More things are involved in it than you can imagine, surmise or understand.

On the other hand, as you remember from the previous Dialogs, you were asked to shift all your energies in support of the pseudo-creators and to take an active part in the Great Alliance. Because in this case NATO represents the pseudo-creators, you are advised, if you choose so by your own freedom of choice, to give it your moral support. It is not that you

have to like what is being done or how things are being done by the forces of NATO. After all, violence is always negative no matter what; but because the present conflict serves some very important spiritual purpose, the outcome of which will determine what other choices will need to be taken in order to bring the negative state closer to its ending and elimination, you are advised not to harshly criticize NATO's actions in this respect. So, in this particular sense, regardless of how disgusting the bombing is in your view, it does serve, ultimately, a good purpose. Don't forget for a minute that everything negative, no matter how bad and putrid it is, can and may be turned into something very positive. The precedence for this fact was set by Me personally when I transformed within Myself everything negative contained in My human part, which I assumed during My incarnation on planet Zero, into a purely positive nature.

From the beginning of this conflict, there was a tendency with some of you to perceive it from the wrong standpoint. For example, you, Peter, under the influence of your Russian friends, started to doubt your intuition about this situation and were inclined to side to some degree — although reluctantly — with the Russian position in this respect. How conveniently you and Lyudmila forgot about the Great Alliance and that you agreed to be a part of it, giving support to the pseudo-creators, in this case to NATO, as their representative. Too much futile and inappropriate politicking was taking place, judging things as they were happening at the scene, without looking at the deeper spiritual meaning of all these events, and how things were behind the scene.

This is an example of what happens when you forget to consider the spiritual factors of all events and evaluate them from the typical human external factors. You even went so far that from the typical human standpoint you called Albanians, and some other nations in the Russian Federation, bandits, thieves, terrorists and by similar inappropriate names. This was a sweeping and spiritually dangerous generalization. Sure, there are some groups like that among them, as well as among all nations on planet Zero. But to make a generalized statement about them being all like that is to pronounce a very unjust judgment and to make conclusions which are totally false. Who do you support by such an attitude and statements? The renegades! Being that you are My true representatives on planet Zero, such negative words, thoughts, feelings and emotions about anyone should never enter your mind. And if they do, you should immediately reject them as not coming from you but from the negative aspects of your human nature, that is to say, from the negative state. Following that, purify yourself from them and ask Me for mercy

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

and forgiveness. That way, such words, thoughts, feelings or whatever of this nature, will not be appropriated or attributed to you.

One of the reasons, Peter, although not the only one, that you felt in the last few days like not being in your skin and having some kind of block that prevented you from dialoging with Me, was this judgmental atmosphere in your home and a tendency to yield to the opinions of others in order to please and appease them. Instead of listening to your intuition that was screaming at you not to succumb to their views, you listened to what others had to say about this situation. Finally, you realized your mistake and yesterday, under My personal input, you made a very strong statement about the whole situation. It was not until you had a conversation with Kamil of the Czech Republic that you realized what was going on and how dangerous it was for all of you to be sidetracked from the proper spiritual consideration and realization about all of this, as well as about everything else.

The lesson for all of you is very clear in this respect: Unless you constantly keep in your mind Me and My spiritual principles; and unless you bear in your mind that you are My true representatives; and unless you listen to what your intuition is telling you, you are in danger of becoming a target of the renegades. It is in this kind of situation when the renegades and their minions may recognize who you are personally. The outcome of this recognition could be a very unpleasant one for you. So, be very careful how you evaluate or judge events and all involved in them. In fact, as My true representatives, it is not your place or role to do that anyway. You give everything to Me and to My Divine Providence. I will take care of all things in the best possible and the most needed manner in accordance with the Grand Plan of My Salvation.

Peter: I am asking for Your mercy and forgiveness if I, personally, erred in this matter. I cannot talk about others. Let them address You personally without my prodding.

The Lord Jesus Christ: And you are forgiven, Peter. It wasn't that much you, personally, because inwardly you felt the right way. It was your tendency to please others, not wanting to offend them by your different opinion. So, let us put this issue behind us. Don't worry and don't be anxious about the outcome of this conflict and war. I can assure you that it will end in a manner and way which is most appropriate, feasible and needed from the proper spiritual standpoint. And this point is what counts the most. And now, Peter, you may ask the other questions.

Peter: This question came from one of the readers of these Dialogs in Slovakia. It relates to the topic of the Seventh Dialog. It seems to me that we were accused of being somewhat selfish. On page 67 of that Dialog, in its last paragraph which continues on page 68, we are being advised to ask Your help in managing our everyday lives *for our own sake*. I believe the stumbling block is in the words '*for our own sake*' instead of for Your sake, for others' sake and for the sake of principle itself because it is the right thing to do.

The Lord Jesus Christ: That statement in the quoted paragraph was taken out of the context in which it was presented. The paragraph started with an advice to ask Me to help you to be a certain way for your own sake. However, it ended with the suggestion to do all that from Me, by Me, of Me, through Me and **for Me; as well as for everyone's sake and for the sake of principles**, because it is the right thing to request and to be that way.

The important spiritual point here to realize is that if you want to do things the way it is supposed to be or if you want to be the way you are supposed to be, that is to say, in this particular case, if you want to do things for My sake, for the sake of others and for the sake of principles themselves, you have to begin doing that from only one possible platform. As you remember from My New Revelation, it was indicated there that you cannot relate to or do things from the position of anyone or anything else. You have only one position or platform — you! You can relate only from yourself. No other position is available to you. Because of that, if you really want to do your best for all concerned, you have to take care of yourself first. If you are not in good shape or condition, whether spiritually or mentally or physically, you cannot properly perform your duties, obligations, assignment or whatever you have. Thus, what that statement signifies is that you need to take care of your life for your own sake first, so that, subsequently, you may fulfill properly, effectively and competently your duties, obligations and assignments as related to Me, to others and to all spiritual principles.

But there is another important point to this issue. If you are asking Me to help you in accomplishing this goal for your own sake, so that you are in a proper and desirable position to do it because of Me, others and the principles themselves, you are, in fact, asking it for Me, others and the principles themselves. If you take into consideration the spiritual fact that you, in your individualized and personalized condition, in your non-human portion, are derived from a unique element taken out from My Absolute Nature, then whatever you are doing for your own sake, if you keep in your mind who you are and from where your true nature derives,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

you are doing it for Me. And because I do everything for everyone's sake and for the sake of principles themselves, the logical conclusion is that you likewise are doing it for others and for the sake of principles themselves.

You have to distinguish between your human nature and the nature that stems directly from Me in you. If we were to be talking from the position of your human nature, then such a statement could be considered being selfish. However, in that particular connotation, because you are being advised to be the way your true nature, which derives from Me, is, by the factor that it is I who is advising, that advice is given from the position of your being an integral part of the whole or of all and, most importantly, of Me. Philosophically and spiritually speaking, if you are part of all and all are part of you, and together you are all part of Me, in this particular connotation, logically speaking, whatever you are doing for your own sake, you are doing it for Me, for all and for the sake of principles themselves because it is the right thing to do it that way. So, in an ultimate sense, from the position of the nature of My positive state, everything one does for oneself is always done for My sake, for the sake of others and for the sake of principles themselves. There is no other way. And this is what the mentioned paragraph in the Seventh Dialog signifies.

Peter: Thank You for this explanation. The next question was asked by Joseph Grygar of the Czech Republic. It relates to the use and misuse of computers and their programs and how they might influence one's mental characteristics.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, the answer to that question should be obvious by now. Computers and their programs are tools. As such, any tool is neutral in itself and by itself. It is the purpose for which they and their programs were made and how they are being utilized. As anything else in human life, they can have either positive or negative connotations, respectively. They can be either very helpful or very harmful. Again, it depends on your own individual and personal purpose for which you approach such tools. Take for example, our work, dialoging together. By directly typing them in your computer program, you are saving time, effort and energy that otherwise would have to be spent on numerous rewritings, editing and correcting. In our particular case, this computer program, used with such a purpose in mind, serves a very good cause. Thus, in this particular case, it has a purely positive connotation.

However, take for example, someone who uses computers with an evil and negative intent. Computer hackers, designers of viruses and similar

individuals are using computers as a means to hurt or to harm other people in their efforts to simplify their work and to make things more manageable. Or take for example, individuals who spend hours and hours on the Internet, wasting all their time and energy on useless communication with others without any particular purpose in mind. In other words, they become addicted to the Internet. In cases like that, they become slaves of their computers; or to be more precise, they enslave themselves to their computers. For them, the use of computers and their programs became negative. Thus, in these particular cases, they have a purely negative connotation.

This is a good example of the fact that it is the sentient mind and its attitude which ultimately determines what is good and what is bad by the purpose for which it uses any tools. You have to train yourself to see things from this position and to not ascribe anything to any tools that they don't have. By ascribing such characteristics to inanimate objects, such as tools of this nature, you are avoiding your own responsibility in determining with what purpose such tools are being used by you personally. Instead of recognizing that it is your own attitude that makes you do whatever you do, you would have a tendency to blame tools, in this case, computers and their programs, for being responsible for your actions or behavior. So, you are advised to not put anything of this nature in your tools that you use in your everyday life. Your spiritual and mental dispositions and the needs that you have, are the ones that determine the usefulness or harmfulness of any such tools.

Peter: Thank You very much for this comment. My last question comes from Victor Dokukin of Moscow, Russia. He would like to know if there is any spiritual significance to the color 'green' used by Muslims in their various designations.

The Lord Jesus Christ: As you know, Peter, the function of colors, as well as of everything else, has an important spiritual correspondence. In this particular case, as related to Muslims, it has two distinct connotations. The first one relates to the original newness of the just-established religious movement that had not been in existence up to that point. Anything green, in this particular connotation, denotes the beginning of something new, fresh and different. It is pleasant to your eyes, thus, to your soul and it is creatively invigorating. However, here comes the second connotation. Anything green also means something unfinished, incomplete and unripe. In this particular connotation, it means that Muslims have never conceptualized the One God as being The Lord Jesus Christ. They rejected Me as the One who is that God or Allah. Instead, they proclaimed their prophet Mohammed to be the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

greatest of all who is the very next to their Allah. In their view, no one is greater than Allah and his prophet Mohammed. As you see from this designation, they have remained green all the way through their history, never ever allowing themselves to accept the very important spiritual fact that there is more to the conceptualization of God or Allah than what their green religion admits or professes. Because of that, and because of the spiritual arrogance, rooted in putting Mohammed almost on the level of God and considering themselves the only chosen ones, their green turned into a greenish infestation which heralds a very serious terminal spiritual illness. Thus, their religion became one of the most negative and vicious representations of the Hells. This is the reason why they retained the green color.

Peter: Thank You very much for Your input in all discussed issues. Is there anything else that You would like to address today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. No, not today. I think you all have been given enough food for thought. Have a marvelous day.

Sixtieth Dialog

March 31, 1999

Peter: I would like to present for Your input two issues or two questions today. But, before going into them, may I ask You if You have anything to offer first as related to any topic that we have discussed so far?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for giving Me this opportunity to talk first. I would like to offer some additional comments about religious movements on planet Zero. As you remember, in Chapter 3 of ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ*** we had extensively discussed the betrayal of Christianity and the outcome of that betrayal as well as why it was permitted to take place. However, not too much has been said so far about other religious systems, other than Christian oriented. As you know, the closest to Christianity is the Islamic religious movement and its respective sects. We have already discussed why it was permitted to be established on planet Zero. In the Fifty Ninth Dialog we have also mentioned the meaning of the green color preferred by the followers of Islam. But in this particular Dialog we need to touch upon the betrayal of Islam as related to its suppression of the proper conceptualization of the nature of Allah or God. No one knows that during the original setup of the Islamic religion, as it was revealed to Mohammed, a different conceptualization of the nature of God or Allah was conveyed to him. As you know, their holy book, the Koran, does include the story of My birth on planet Zero through Mary, as announced to her by My Angel. In that story, originally, two sentences were used as related to My birth. One was related to My being the great prophet; the other to My being the Holy One and the only begotten Son of God.

If you carefully analyze these sentences, particularly the words ‘the Holy One’ and ‘the only begotten Son of God,’ and the way they were used and understood at the time of their utterance, you will notice a very important factor: Such words as ‘the Holy One,’ in the very connotation of what these words mean and signify, could not be used for designating or applying to anyone but only to One God Indivisible, the Almighty. However, because we are dealing here with the purely physical birth, the birth into human life, for humans of that time it was inconceivable that God Almighty Himself/Herself could or would undergo such a putrid, dirty, impure and disgusting mode of birth as the human birth was/is. The contradiction of these terms is obvious. If God is the only One Who is and can be The Holy One, it is impossible for Him/Her to enter something or by means of something which is totally opposite to this Holiness. In order to make this event — My physical birth — acceptable

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

to humans, it was necessary to downgrade or diffuse the understanding of who it was that was being born at that time. For that reason, the words 'prophet' and 'Son of God', instead of 'God,' were used in addition to the words 'The Holy One.'

It is in these two different designations that the split between Christians' and Muslims' understanding of who it was who was born, occurred. Whereas Christians, in addition to the word 'prophet,' emphasized the words 'Son of God,' later on reinstating the words 'the only begotten,' Muslims on the other hand, got stuck with and concentrated on the words 'prophet,' totally disregarding the other words. Neither of them properly considered the words 'The Holy One.' And even though Christians admit that I am the Holy One, they don't conceptualize the meaning of that designation in the sense that I am the only one Who is Holy and that there is no one else. In their conceptualization there is also the Holy Father and the Holy Spirit. So, we have here the proverbial Christian Trinity which immensely confused and totally distorted the proper conceptualization and understanding of the nature of God, that is to say, of My True Nature. As you know from the above mentioned chapter, this false conceptualization led, among other things, toward the betrayal of Christianity. And yet, it was provided by My Divine Providence, that in the original description of the announcement of My physical birth, the words 'the Holy One' were strongly emphasized in order to implant into the human mind, in its unconscious parts, that the One who was being born at that time was the true God. The logic of this designation — The Holy One — is obvious. It relates to the absoluteness of My Nature. Because I am the only One who is without sin or problems, it means that I am the only One who can be Holy. Everyone else, who is not in such an absolute condition, cannot be holy. At the same time, this logic leads to the irrefutable conclusion that because no two Absolute Beings can be and exist — they would be mutually exclusive, — it means that I am the only God Who is and exists.

Initially, this conceptualization of the term 'the Holy One' was clear to Mohammed, the founder of Islam. However, he was unable to reconcile the concept of a typical human birth with any possibility for God to undertake such a step. In his human understanding, only a prophet, or someone sent by God, could be in that position. He was also unable to conceptualize in human terms the possibility that God can have the only begotten Son. To admit such a possibility meant to admit My Divinity. And in his understanding, nothing of divine can become human. To be human, for him, excluded the possibility of being Divine. For that reason, he decided to accept Me only as a prophet who was sent by God to do some important work for Him. The other reason for Mohammed's

inability to accept Me as the only God, was in the fact that he could not conceptualize God as someone who would be able or willing to split Himself into two or more entities. After all, he was led to establish an important concept of the only One Indivisible God. In his understanding, how could God take something out of Himself and give birth to Himself in a human form and nature? Wouldn't it be splitting or dividing God into two? For that reason, in his understanding, Jesus Christ could not be God or even the only begotten Son of God. He was only a prophet. Maybe a very significant and important prophet, but nevertheless, only one of many important prophets. Later on, in order to ascribe the possibility that prophets can also be holy, the concept of holiness was diluted and degraded in its proper understanding and applicability. This was done in order to justify the need to refute the possibility that I was the true God. After all, if a prophet can also be holy, then, in that case, My holiness does not constitute that I am God.

In this unjust and improper justification is rooted the betrayal of Islam and its prophet Mohammed. Mohammed himself, upon his arrival into the spiritual world, recognized his gross error and made proper amendments. From that point on, he became an ardent follower of Me, as The Lord Jesus Christ, and was assigned the role of bringing these facts of My True Nature, as well as of My New Nature, to all Muslims who have been arriving in the spiritual world. This fact was also noted by Swedenborg. The full understanding of how My physical birth into human life was possible, if I were the only true God, his Allah, did not fully register in his mind until the transmission of My New Revelation and until the explanation of how it happened — as recorded in Chapter Two of ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***, was completed and made available to him and to all other Muslims in the spiritual world. So, in essence, the present-day Muslim religion, because of its disregard and neglect of the proper understanding of who I was, remains, symbolically speaking, green, underdeveloped and incomplete. Because of this factor, it was split into several sects which are in a constant fight with each other in a similar manner as are all other religions and their respective sects on planet Zero.

As far as all other religions are concerned, the majority of them were established before Christianity and Islam. They all derived from the pseudo-creators' conceptualization of God and their impositions of how and who should be worshiped. Take for example, Hinduism, Greek, Roman, Germanic and Scandinavian ancient religious beliefs. They were all established by the pseudo-creators. At that time, several clans of powerful pseudo-creators existed. Each clan established its own pantheon of pseudo-gods — themselves. From that position, in the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

various regions of planet Zero and the Zone of Displacement, they imposed on their inhabitants their own brand of pseudo-spirituality, in which they played the roles of gods. So, in essence, these religions, the remnants of the old establishments, continue worshiping the pseudo-creators without realizing who the pseudo-creators were or are. They believe that they worship true gods.

A somewhat different situation exists with Buddhism. As you know, Buddha was a regular human being who allegedly was enlightened. From his enlightenment, Buddha developed a system of teachings that became widespread in India and some other nations. Buddha never considered himself to be God. Only after his death, his followers established a mode of worshiping him which may be equated to the worship of a god. However, in its philosophy, Buddhism is pantheistic and ultimately, somewhat atheistic in the sense that the universe and everything else in nature is divine. In this conceptualization nature is god. Because nature does not have any concept of 'I am,' the only logical conclusion that you can derive from this understanding is that there is no god. From this, you can conclude that Buddhism was established by the clan of the pseudo-creators who were strict scientists.

In the process of the pseudo-creators' fabrications of various creatures and sub-creatures in the Hells, a special brand of demons was fabricated who were put in charge of controlling, developing and influencing some other nations on planet Zero, besides the major ones. These nations comprise various African tribes, South American tribes, Caribbean and Pacific islanders and some Asian tribes. Each of these tribes has its own brand of pseudo-spirituality as imposed on it by the mentioned demons. They introduced themselves to those tribes as their protectors, helpers and gods. So, these types of pseudo-religions established worship of demons. They are still widespread among those tribes.

As you see from this brief explanation, on planet Zero, apart from My New Revelation, nothing exists that would have any semblance of the real truth about My True Nature and about the nature of My positive state, as well as about the true spiritual principles. They all live either in falsities and distortions, or they outrightly worship demons.

As you know, this situation was permitted by Me to be established on planet Zero in order to illustrate and demonstrate the true nature of the negative state and what the results, outcomes and consequences of the activation of the negative state and its end product — human life, led to. As you also know, once this illustration and demonstration is at its last phase, a foundation is built for its elimination. The very first, and the

most important, building block of that foundation is My New Revelation in its three sources. Its impact on humanity and all creatures and inhabitants of the Zone of Displacement and all its Hells, as well as on everyone else, will be of tremendous proportions beyond your ability to grasp it. Your responsibility in this respect, as My true representatives, is to carry the light of My New Revelation by examples of your life from the position of My positive state. That light will be utilized, at an opportune time, to enlighten all those trapped in the above-mentioned religions and pseudo-spiritual trends so that they could come out of their blindness rooted in their false belief systems.

Peter: Interestingly enough, Your elaboration brings us to my first issue that I wanted to bring to Your attention. It was raised by Heather and Tom (sister and brother Oudals). The issue is: Why is it that Your New Revelation was translated into Spanish, Russian, Czech and Slovak and of course, why was it transmitted in English? Why has it not been translated into German, French, Italian, Greek, Portuguese, some Chinese languages, Japanese, Arabic, or some of the Indian languages or in some of the other languages?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, Peter, as you know, each nation and its language has a very specific correspondence to and position in relationship to the structure of the spiritual and intermediate worlds and to the pseudo-spiritual and pseudo-intermediate worlds. The spiritual situation and the spiritual needs in those worlds, as well as to what an extent their spiritual development is progressing or regressing, respectively, determine which language or nation on your planet is designated for transmission and translation of My New Revelation. Regardless of how big or small the population of those nations in your world is, their spiritual standing and the way they influence the totality-of-it-all, and the importance of their influence and impact on the rest, is what makes a difference. The spiritual correspondences of Russian, Czech and Slovak populations, as well as of the Spanish population, are such that, at the present time, their influence and impact on the rest of Creation and pseudo-creation is of the most significant and greater degree than any others. Their positioning and placement in the spiritual scheme of all unfolding events is such that whatever transpires in their sphere of influence and domain determines for the rest, the overall direction by which they are to go or to continue in their spiritual progression or regression, respectively. Even though from your typical human and planetary view some of these nations are too small or insignificant or their influence and impact on events on planet Zero are negligible or unimportant, it is not so from the position of what they signify, mean and correspond to in the spiritual and pseudo-spiritual

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

worlds and dimensions. Up to this point in time, the English speaking population has had the greatest significance in this respect. Because of its spiritual positioning and correspondence, it was necessary to transmit My New Revelation in this particular language. Only from its position and correspondence, the greatest and the most needed impact on all others could be accomplished and actualized. Subsequently, next in the hierarchy of the spiritual and pseudo-spiritual organization, the Russian, Spanish, Czech and Slovak populations were in the most significant and impacting position and correspondence. Their corresponding position in the realms of other dimensions is such that they are able to exert the most needed influence on the state of affairs in those worlds.

In order to establish a favorable condition for the future elimination of the negative state and for the establishment of the fullness and completeness of life of the positive state, My New Revelation needed to be transmitted and translated first, through and by the means of those nations on planet Zero which are in such a position, role and correspondence. They are able to most significantly and in the most needed manner, place all principles and information of My New Revelation into the sentient minds of all involved and concerned in this respect. Also, they are the ones who represent humanity in such a manner that through them the rest of the nations on planet Zero will be able to establish, when the time comes, their connections to the spiritual reality of My Creation. From that connection they will be able to recognize the truth of My New Revelation.

Another point to this issue is that some nations on planet Zero, in their position of demonstrating and illustrating the consequences, results and outcomes of those religious movements who are directly worshiping pseudo-gods, or whose spiritual conceptualization of the Christian and the Islamic doctrines are totally inappropriate, have not exhausted their usefulness and the purpose for which they were permitted to be in place. They are still needed in their current position in order to continue in providing important learning for all in My Creation and pseudo-creation how not to worship and how not to conceptualize the Nature of God and His/Her spiritual principles. At this point in time, any translation of My New Revelation into their respective languages, **from the position of the worlds and dimensions to which they correspond**, would directly interfere with this learning process. Therefore, it would be premature to provide them with such a translation. For now and for these times, the impact of My New Revelation on those nations will have to remain only on their deepest unconscious level. There are some other important spiritual reasons why at the present time no other translations of My New Revelation are in the process of being

undertaken. But those reasons cannot be revealed at this time. It would be incomprehensible to your human mind. Should anything change in the positioning and role of those nations, such translations would then be in the process of being undertaken. In the meantime, the availability of My New Revelation in the discussed languages is totally sufficient for My purposes.

Peter: Thank You very much for this explanation. My second issue relates to one of Your statements which You uttered in the form of a parable during Your life on planet Zero and which is recorded in the Gospel According to Luke, Chapter 16, verses 1-9. This parable deals with a steward of a certain rich man against whom an accusation was brought that this man was wasting his goods. Because of that, the steward could no longer continue to be a steward. The steward realized that he could do no other type of work so he decided to call every one of his master's debtors and made them rewrite their bills by lowering the amounts of their debts. He had this done so that they would receive him in their homes after he was fired from his job. So the master commended the unjust steward because he dealt shrewdly. Then You go on, saying, *'For the sons of this world are more shrewd in their generation than the sons of light. And I say to you, make friends for yourselves by unrighteous mammon, that when you fail, they may receive you into everlasting habitations.'* This particular parable has always been a mystery to me and of all whom I know. In our understanding of those events, the mentioned steward was committing an outright fraud. And yet he was commended for his fraudulent deed. In our times, the steward would go to prison for what he did. Even more mysterious is Your concluding statement about making friends by unrighteous mammon and everlasting habitations. Is it possible for us to have some explanation of the true meaning of this parable?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Of course, Peter. It is time to shed some light on that parable. No one has ever properly understood what it really means or signifies. A deep spiritual meaning and correspondences are contained in the content of this parable. The rich man signifies and represents the entire positive state. Only the positive state is imbued with the true spiritual riches. The steward represents those who were utilizing the energies of the positive state for their own negative purposes or, in this case, for activation of the negative state. The lowering of the amount of the bills of the debtors signifies setting up a condition by which and through which those who activated the negative state will be saved and returned to the positive state. The debtors here signify all in the positive state who received the gift of life from Me. It is My life by which everyone lives and is alive. That the rich man

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

commended the unjust steward for his shrewdness implies an agreement that was made about the outcome of the negative state and on which the negative state was permitted to be activated in the first place. That the sons of this world are more shrewd than the sons of light signifies that all participants in the negative state are more able to utilize available resources contained in the cut-off from the positive state energies for their own purposes than those who reside in the positive state and who are in the state of innocence. To make friends by unrighteous mammon signifies to utilize all available resources, contained in the negative state, for positive and good purposes. By utilizing it that way, after one leaves the negative state, one is eligible to be received in the positive state. And this is all that you need to know about the meaning of this parable.

Peter: Thank You so much for this explanation and for everything contained in this Dialog. Is there anything else today that You would like to add?

The Lord Jesus Christ: No, Peter, that will be all. Have a pleasant rest of the day.

Sixty First Dialog

April 2, 1999

Peter: This morning I would like to begin with yielding to You to talk first. Perhaps You would like to make some comments or to offer us some additional clarifications on anything You feel we are ready to know or need to know. After that, if we still have time, I'll ask some questions.

The Lord Jesus Christ: I appreciate very much, Peter, your willingness to yield to Me this time at the beginning. Yes, I do have something to discuss with you and all prospective readers of these Dialogs. First of all, I would like to, once again, address the issue of importance and significance of the asked questions and the need to have answers to them. Some of you, including you, Peter, exhibited a certain degree of irritation about some questions that were asked by the readers of these Dialogs. In your opinion, those types of questions were too insignificant and too unimportant, wasting My and your time. For you, the answers to those types of questions were too obvious and too clear without need for their answers. You were almost bored reading My answers to them. Such an attitude on your part indicates a certain degree of spiritual arrogance still present in that part of your mind which relates to your typical human nature.

You have conveniently forgotten what was clearly indicated to you in My New Revelation, especially in the **Corollaries...** and in the first few Dialogs, that every single reader of My New Revelation, in all its three sources, is on a different level of understanding, acceptance and practice of all their principles. And that there is not one individual, yes, not one, that would be on the same level as any other individual. And not only that, but you were informed by Me that each such an individual — the reader and practitioner of My New Revelation — is connected to many different dimensions in the spiritual world as well as in the pseudo-spiritual world. Because of this important factor, whenever such an individual is asking questions, as long as they are not of a personal nature, he/she is asking them not only from his/her own personal and individual position, but such questions are asked also from the position of those worlds to which he/she is connected. In other words, such questions are being asked also on behalf of all those multitudes of sentient entities who are connected to that individual for this very purpose. Because of that, for that individual and for all those connected to him/her, the asked questions are very important and very significant. This process happens, of course, in most instances, without any conscious awareness of the individual who is asking those types of questions. No

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

matter whether you are or are not consciously aware that this is the case, let it be known to all of you that this is the true reality of your being My representatives. Don't forget please, that whatever is clear and understandable to you and to that level of being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence to which you are integrally connected, is not necessarily clear and understandable to some others at their own levels.

So, never underestimate the importance and significance of any questions which are being asked and to which I provide the answers with the greatest possible pleasure. As My true representatives, you need to learn to be a little more humble and not to be smug about your own ability to understand things which are so obvious to you but which might be confusing and unclear to someone else. You are on planet Zero, in My services, not only for yourself but, most importantly, for all others. And don't forget that these others are not limited to only your co-workers in My services on planet Zero, but they also include all the multitudes of sentient entities who are connected to you and to your co-workers from other dimensions and pseudo-dimensions.

The second issue that I would like to touch upon is your concerns and fears that things in the pseudo-creators' and renegades' conflict, as reflected in NATO and the Yugoslavia-Kosovo war, are not working out the way you would like them to work. Instead of resolution of this conflict the way you expected it to be resolved, you are so far experiencing the opposite — the escalation of that war without any sight of its ending soon. One of the many reasons why this situation is the way it is right now, (and this is the only reason that you need and are ready to know at this particular time), is that certain important lessons need to be learned by the pseudo-creators and all involved in this conflict. The Serbs' defiance is the exemplary reflection of the renegades' stubbornness, unyielding, rebelliousness, arrogance, viciousness, aggressiveness, evilness and violence.

As far as the pseudo-creators and their NATO are concerned, there are at least two lessons that need to be learned. One is that it is inefficient to use against the renegades the methods that the renegades are using — violence and extermination. No one ever accomplished anything important and significant by means of violence and aggression. Violence breeds only violence and leads to a greater degree of defiance and determination not to yield or to give up. It promotes the need for vengeance and retaliation. They should have been using some other, more effective methods in dealing with this situation. The virtue of patience is still not ingrained in the pseudo-creators' character. They

need to learn it fast if they are to succeed in their endeavor in this, and any other matter. At the same time, this situation with the renegades-Yugoslavs indicates that the renegades still continue in their self-destructive attitude, reflected in their philosophy of 'better death than surrender.' They are not yet ready to change this attitude.

The other lesson for the pseudo-creators is in the renegades' illustration and demonstration of the outcome, results and consequences of their fabrications to whom they gave so much power before their lockup. Once you bring someone to life with an evil and wrong intent, you give an impetus to that one to develop only in one direction — to be more evil, more vicious, more violent, more arrogant, more cunning and more aggressive. Creatures like that, once given a taste of power and domination, are never able to give up their positions voluntarily. So, this situation shows the pseudo-creators very clearly what a horrendous mistake they made in allowing these creatures to be fabricated in such a negative and evil way. As mentioned previously in one of the Dialogs, upon their release from the lockup, the pseudo-creators were very much surprised and almost shocked to see how the development of the renegades had been proceeding up to that point. The present situation, in which the pseudo-creators are finding themselves, reflects the need to bear the consequences of their act of fabrication of the renegades. This situation is in response to their questions about the outcomes and results of such fabrications.

The third issue that I would like to touch upon is the issue of correspondences and the written material. As you remember, in one of the later Dialogs, in which we discussed the phenomenon of pyramids, and similar mysterious structures scattered around the globe, it was indicated to you that they represented various spiritual correspondences which depicted and described obliquely, in a symbolical way, the structure of the spiritual world and everything related to the nature of life in that world. As the process of the externalization of life on planet Zero (planet Earth at that time) continued and the need for recording the true spiritual reality was more and more realized by the ones who inhabited that planet, writing methods were developed and established. For your information, it was at that particular time that, for the first time in the history of your planet, writing and recording in letters was invented and instituted in the life of its inhabitants. At that time, the purpose of that invention was for one reason only — to preserve mankind's connection to the true spiritual reality, and later on, to the true pseudo-spiritual pseudo-reality, at all cost. The inventors of those methods, through the architectural structures and written material, realized very well that in order to proceed with the experiment, they

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

needed to have such a connection if they were to succeed in anything at all.

At that time, the way the written material was structured was by means of the developed correspondences. For that reason, in the same manner as the architectural structures were depicting in their symbolical representation the spiritual reality of life, so were the words recorded in writings. Thus, each utilized and written-down word contained multiple hidden meanings related to some spiritual events or traits or character or style of life as found and practiced in the spiritual world, and later on, also in the pseudo-spiritual world. For those times, this was a common language by means of which communication was going on amongst all the worlds in all their respective dimensions, including your planet. Because of this factor, the proper spiritual awareness of the true spiritual reality was maintained for some time here. Also, because of this setup, everyone had full knowledge and understanding of what those correspondences meant and signified. No one was ignorant of their meaning.

However, as the spiritual deterioration continued, and as the experiment in establishment of a different life, different from the life of the positive state, was going on, a gradual loss of understanding of the language of correspondences set in. This was permitted to happen in order that the newly fabricated humans would not take hold of these correspondences and misuse and abuse them for their own negative and self-destructive purposes. The way humans were fabricated was that their nature and character reflected the state of total ignorance and proclivity toward abusing, misusing and distorting everything to which they would come across. The problem with the proper knowledge, use and application of correspondences was/is that if they are misused, abused and used for inappropriate purposes, it may lead those who would do such a thing, to eternal damnation. The reason for this eternal damnation is in the fact that anyone who would be utilizing them with an evil intent, would end up in permanent irrevocable denial of any spiritual factors of life, as well as in the denial of the Absolute Being and Absolute Existence of the Creator. In that case, any such person would lock himself/herself into an unchangeable condition from which there would be no way out. In order to prevent this from ever happening, My Divine Providence provided that not only the proper knowledge of the meaning of correspondences was lost, but that all the written material about them and their interpretation was lost likewise. At that time, when the laws and procedures for use and application of correspondences were written, the written material also contained an extensive interpretation and clear explanation of the meaning of correspondences at all their levels.

Can you imagine what would be done by humanity if that particular written material would be available to humans? For that reason, those books, or written material that contained the mentioned explanation and interpretation, were hidden and became inaccessible to anyone on planet Zero. The only thing that remained from that time were the words and sentences which contained pure correspondences, but to which the key for their understanding and interpretation became unavailable.

It was not until Swedenborg came on the scene that some limited aspects of certain correspondences, as contained in the Bible, for example, and in some other so-called holy books, were revealed to him by Me. Some others were revealed in the process of the transmission of My New Revelation contained in all of your books, Peter. However, as you know, many other levels of what those correspondences mean and signify, continue to be unavailable to you and to humanity in general. This unavailability is in place for your own protection and for the protection of humanity. As long as the negative state continues to be and exist in its pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, this situation will remain unchanged. The proper knowledge, understanding and utilization of what correspondences contain, would not only endanger all who are trapped in the negative state and in human life, but it would effectively impede the further illustration and demonstration of their nature and the purpose for which the negative state and human life were allowed to appear in the first place. In that case, the full learning of their nature and their lifestyle could not be completed and registered in the Universality-Of-It-All or in the Guardian-of-Forever. As a consequence, the activation of the fullness and completeness of life of the positive state could not come to its fruition either.

And the last brief comment that I would like to make is about the parable which was recorded by Luke, Chapter 16, verses 1-9 and the meaning of which we discussed in the Sixtieth Dialog. It relates to the steward's effort to lower the amount of debt on the debtors' bills. Besides what was said about it in the mentioned Dialog, it also signifies something else which is of a crucial spiritual importance. The amount of the debt which the negative state has against the positive state is such that it cannot be repaid at its current level. Because of that, should a demand be made by Me, or by anyone in the positive state, or by you, as My true representatives, that it pay off the full amount it owes, it would default. In that case, by the rules of the spiritual laws, no one in the negative state could be saved or brought out of its life. They would have to stay forever in order to pay, or to bear the consequences for what they accrued in the process of their negative and evil life. As you know, should something like that be permitted to happen, the positive state could not

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

be activated in its fullness and completeness either. For that reason, by the conditions of My Unconditional Absolute Mercy and Forgiveness, I will allow the lowering of that debt to the level which is fully repayable. In this case, it means that all voluntary participants in the negative state will bear the consequences of their negative and evil lifestyle only to the level which is bearable and sufficient for the needed illustration and learning for all even though, by their despicable deeds, they would deserve to be punished for them for a much longer period of time — if not forever. And this is all that I would like to comment on today. You may, Peter, ask your own questions.

Peter: Recently, as of a few days ago, some of the readers of these Dialogs noticed that they have felt tired, exhausted and low in energies. Others feel lonely, sad and abandoned. Still others are afflicted with all kinds of debilitating physical and, perhaps, even mental conditions or illnesses. Are there any spiritual reasons for these adverse states experienced by some or most of us?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, Peter, as you know, nothing exists in any kind of condition, be they spiritual, mental, sexual, physical, social, material, etc., that would not have some important reasons. In the case of those who feel somewhat tired, exhausted and depleted of energies, it is a reflection of your intense involvement in the conflict which is going on between the pseudo-creators and renegades as depicted in NATO's military campaign in Yugoslavia and Kosovo. As you remember from before, you were told, actually you were advised, to shift all your energies toward helping the pseudo-creators in their struggle with the renegades and help them as much as possible. Those of you who took this advice into your hearts and who are making yourselves and your energies available to the pseudo-creators for that purpose, as well as for some other important purposes, are experiencing this necessary depletion of your energies. Of course, on your conscious level you are not aware to what extent and how your energies help and support them and how they are being given to and passed on to the pseudo-creators. Only on the spiritual, most within level such an awareness exists. The reason for your not having any conscious awareness about this process, is in the fact that if you were to consciously know about all aspects of your involvement, as well as what is really going on at the other levels of the various dimensions of the mentioned conflict, you would not be able to survive physically. The effect of that knowledge would be unbearable and inconceivable to the human aspects of your nature. Thus, it is for your own safety and benefit that you are not, either fully or not at all, aware of your involvement in this conflict. Again, you are advised to turn yourself to Me, or to concentrate on My Presence within you, visualizing

or thinking or feeling or imagining yourself, or whatever your mode is, touching Me and tapping through that touch into My Absolute Positive Energies, replenishing yourself with them to the degree of your needs. I will determine, of course, the extent of your needs in this respect. During this period of time, and at any time you feel tired and depleted of your stamina and energies, you are advised to do that at all times. That way you will be able to continue in your work for Me, and synergistically, with the pseudo-creators, without any interruption. Remember please, these are very crucial times and your involvement is needed to your fullest possible extent. On your human level you have absolutely no notion how important these times are. Their immense importance would be beyond your present ability to comprehend or to grasp. Therefore, I am asking you in all humility and humbleness, to endure a little longer and not to give up or not to stop giving support through your own personal energies to the cause in question.

Those of you who are in the process of experiencing feelings of loneliness and a desire to have someone physically next to you or with you, for the purpose of sharing your life and everything you have, are in that position for some of your own very important spiritual reasons. During these crucial times, any other condition, other than what you are experiencing right now, would be detrimental to your spiritual, mental and physical well-being and health. No matter what you consciously think or feel, no matter how much you think that it would be so nice and so beautiful to be with someone for the purpose of sharing at all levels of your life, the opposite would be true. Your life would become so unbearable, so miserable and so unhappy that you would have no desire to continue in it. For that reason, you are advised to stop feeling sorry for yourselves and to realize that it is an illusion of your physical conscious mind to think or to feel that you are alone. Please, bear constantly in your mind that you are never ever alone. You are continuously surrounded by the members of your spiritual family, by the members of the New Universe and by all members of your home base from which you incarnated on planet Zero. But, most importantly, I am always with you, on a 24-hour a day basis. If you train yourself to think in these terms, your loneliness and feelings of desperation will melt away. At the same time, you will realize that you should be thankful, grateful and appreciative that you are externally, on your physical level, not involved with anyone because, by not being involved, you are avoiding something very dangerous to your entire life. Please, consider these factors and accept your destiny for what it is at the present time. After all, you agreed to go through these kinds of experiences.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

And the same is true for those of you who have some very unpleasant, painful and debilitating physical and/or mental conditions. In an ultimate sense, all these adverse conditions serve some kind of protective purpose. Again, you have no idea what kinds of dangers you are avoiding by allowing yourself to have such conditions. Of course, there is much more to the reasons behind these conditions than what was said above. However, for security reasons, it would be premature for you to know why it is that it was necessary for you to submit yourself to have these conditions, be they physical (such as for example, cancer, rheumatism, multiple sclerosis, attention deficit disorder, heart conditions, high blood pressure and many others), or mental (such as for example, anxieties, depression, melancholy, worries, etc.) or spiritual (such as for example, doubts about yourself, about your spiritual standing, about your spiritual worth, about your role and position, etc.). Remember please, for some important spiritual reasons, you agreed to have them and to experience them. Because this aspect of our discussion has a purely individualized and personalized connotation, it would not be beneficial to say more about it at this particular time. For that reason, I would recommend to finish for today and to resume our dialoging some other time. I wish you all a very pleasant and inspiring day.

Peter: Thank You very, very, very much for Your input in these matters.

Sixty Second Dialog

April 4, 1999

Peter: Well, today we traditionally celebrate Your resurrection. Some interesting questions were asked by Michael M. of Massachusetts that have a direct relevance to this event, as recorded for example, in the Gospel According to John. Other questions of his relate to some of Your miraculous works during Your stay on planet Zero. Perhaps, before his formulated questions, You may have something to contribute about the fact of Your resurrection.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are right, Peter, and I thank you for this opportunity to briefly elaborate on that event. If you look carefully on My involvement with My Creation and with the pseudo-life of the negative state and human life within this cycle of time, you will notice that, during the current cycle of time, three most important and most significant events had taken place. Those events completely and totally altered the course of history of My Creation, as well as of the pseudo-creation. Because of them, nothing has been the same as it had been before. The first event was My incarnation throughout My Creation. It culminated in incarnation on planet Zero into the end product of the negative state — the human life, and, by its means, throughout the Zone of Displacement and all its Hells. This particular event allowed Me to experience life as all sentient entities did in their relative condition. It also allowed Me to experience life as did humans and all creatures and sub-creatures of the negative state. The need for this experience was explained in one of the previous Dialogs. At the same time, this particular event prepared a very important condition for everyone in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence to experience My True Nature from their own personal and individualized level. Also, to give to all an opportunity to establish and to have a very personal and intimate relationship with Me.

The second most important event was My experience of something that has never been established anywhere and anywhen, but which was invented and instituted by the process of activation of the negative state and made a condition of life in the end product of its pseudo-creative effort — human life. It is known to you as the process of dying and death. Because of the assumption by Me of the typical human life, I had to also assume something which is inherent in the human life — dying and death. This process is a very peculiar phenomenon. As you know, it doesn't exist anywhere in My Creation. The process of dying and death is a reflection, illustration and demonstration of the true nature of the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

negative state and its human life. It reflects transience, temporality and decay of everything inherent in the nature of the negative state and human life. Because dying and death are so typical of human life, in order to have the fullness and completeness of its experience, it was necessary for Me to submit Myself to that experience to its fullest extent.

However, dying and death, because it is an invention of the negative state, serves also as the only possible gate for entrance into other levels of the negative state. You have to clearly understand here that the only way to enter the negative state from the position of human life, is by the process of death and dying. Any other way, or if I would want to enter it by any other means but human's, would end in the total annihilation of everyone situated in the negative state. Only the most external position, so inherent in the nature of human life, could and did provide such means for My Absolute Divine Condition, during that time by the relative condition, which clothed and shielded anyone in the Hells from being harmed or destroyed. Because human life is the most ultimate expression of this most external condition, it was human life that made it possible for Me to accomplish My mission in the Hells. No other means were available at that time or at any other time.

Another important point to realize here is that the nature of dying and death, inherent in human life, established a sense, in everyone who is experiencing it, of finality, ending, irreversibility and loss of life. And because human life is embedded in the physical experience of all its sensations, it gives one a false impression that dying and death is a true reality at all levels of one's being and existence without any hope of continuing in that type of life — on the physical level. This situation leads to the assumption that no other life but the physical one is possible or feasible. One of My important reasons for incarnation into the specific human life was to refute this false belief and this illusion which humans were prone to have. Therefore, I demonstrated the falsity of this view by conquering death through the process of resurrection of My physical body. This particular event proved beyond a shadow of a doubt that, in the true reality of life, in life which stems from My Absolute Life, no such thing as dying and death exists. If you consider the logical construct of the assumption of the existence of the Absolute Life, the word 'Absolute,' and what it contains and signifies, precludes any possibility of any type of terminal state — such as, for example, dying and death. For if such things were possible in an absolute sense, meaning if a terminal and all-ending death were to exist, then no absolute state would be conceivable or possible either. They are mutually exclusive.

One of the important reasons why it was necessary for Me to resurrect in the human physical body, was because the human physical body denotes and exemplifies the most external factors of the negative state. By the process of My physical resurrection, in My human physical body, I established in human life and in the negative state in general, a condition which made and will make it possible to eliminate, when the time comes, from their life the concept, as well as the process, of dying and death. Only someone who is Absolute, and who submits Himself/Herself to this experience, may and can establish such a crucial condition. Thus, by the process of My physical resurrection, I set up a most important condition in human life and the negative state by which dying and death will be eternally abolished.

Of course, this was not the only reason for My resurrection. As you know, it also relates to the most important factor of the acquirement of My New Nature. This factor was extensively described in Chapter Two of ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***.

And this brings us to the third most important event which happened during this cycle of time. Following My resurrection, the process of the eternal change of My Nature had begun. As you know, it was not completed until Christmas time of 1987. It also culminated in the beginning of the transmission of the final portion of My New Revelation, as reflected in its three sources, and which transmission was preceded by the nine previous books, written by you, Peter, and inspired by Me. The significance of My New Nature has been elaborated upon many times in My New Revelation. It is not necessary to repeat it here.

One more comment I would like to make before proceeding to the answers of Michael's significant questions. As you know, the time of My physical resurrection is considered to be springtime. This is not by a coincidence. Spring signifies the beginning of a new life and establishment of everything fresh and new. In My case, it was heralding the beginning of the process of the eternal absolute change of My Nature and establishment of My New Nature. As Christmastime was placed during the darkest and most deadly time of the year in the Northern hemisphere, My victory over dying and death, that is to say, over the entirety of the negative state and human life, was placed at the time of spring in order to illustrate an important spiritual correspondence of those times.

And now, Peter, you may ask Michael's questions.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Peter: Thank You very much for this enlightenment. I will divide Michael's questions into three parts. The first and the third parts should be answered as the last because they either don't have relevance to Your resurrection or they relate to something that happened a few days after Your resurrection. However, the second part has a direct relevance to it and, for that reason, I will begin with that part. It relates to Chapter 20 in John. John 20:1 begins with the statement '*On the first day of the week.*' Is there any significance why it was on the first day of the week?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Of course, Peter. Anything at all recorded in the Gospels has a very important spiritual significance. It was on the first day of the week that My resurrection took place. It was on the same day, early in the morning, while it was still dark, when My friend Mary Magdalene came to the tomb where My physical body was buried. '*The first day of the week*' signifies a new beginning in the currently ongoing cycle of time. '*The first day*' means at the inception of that new very beginning and '*of the week*' signifies that it will be happening within the current cycle of time. Something most significant was about to happen which would change entirely the total history of My Creation and the pseudo-creation. That it was Mary Magdalene who first came to My tomb signifies that mercy, compassion and empathy will be placed into the foreground of the process of My Salvation which was made possible by the factor of My physical resurrection and by My conquering the negative state and human life. Mary Magdalene, in this particular connotation, represents these Divine Characteristics. That it was still dark when she came to My tomb signifies that the awareness of the importance of why I had and needed to experience the process of dying and death still had not registered in the minds of anyone, both in the positive state as well as in the negative state, respectively. That Peter and John were the second who came to My tomb, after Mary Magdalene informed them about not finding My body in the tomb, signifies that all other attributes of My Divine Nature, represented here by Peter and John, will be undergoing fundamental changes based on and stemming from My Absolute Mercy, Compassion and Empathy. They will be rooted in My Absolute Divine Goodness and Love (John) in conjunction with My Absolute Divine Wisdom and Truth (Peter). Peter's and John's running together signifies the spiritual marriage of Divine Love and Good and Divine Wisdom and Truth which ushers help to all those who need to be saved from the clutches of the negative state. That John ultimately outran Peter and came to the tomb first signifies that Divine Love and Goodness has to lead during the process of My Salvation of all, because only from the position of pure unconditional love can anything of this monumental nature be initiated. Once it is initiated, the purity of the unconditional

wisdom follows in order to establish the most effective means for the accomplishment of this ultimate goal.

That John, after stooping down and looking into the tomb, saw the linen cloths lying there, yet he did not go in, signifies that Divine Love and Goodness recognize that the truth of that event doesn't stem or originate in the externals or in the negative state in general, represented here by the tomb (the negative state) and the linen cloths lying there (the externals). Stooping down, in this particular connotation, means recognition and acceptance of the need for My Divine to be in the externals and to incorporate them into My Nature. Not going in means adherence to the fact that this need stems not from the externals themselves but from My Divine Internals. That Simon Peter came afterwards, following John, and went into the tomb, signifies that by the means of My Divine Wisdom and Truth, I was able to enter the negative state and human life and to incorporate their lives into Me, after purifying them from the accursed position of being only in the externals. But it also signifies that it is My Divine Wisdom and Truth that prepare the way to establish the favorable condition for My Divine Love and Goodness to also position themselves in the externals, in the negative state and human life, signified here by John's following Peter into the tomb and seeing all the articles of clothing folded nicely and orderly and lying in the tomb. Folded nicely and orderly also signifies that I established a firm order and new laws by which the life of the negative state and human life were to follow from that point on. It also signifies placing everything in order in all the Hells so that a condition is established there for elimination of the negative state when the time comes.

John 20:17: *'Jesus said to her (to Mary Magdalene): "Do not cling to Me, for I have not yet ascended to My father; but go to My brethren and say to them, I am ascending to My Father and your father, and to My God and your God."'* The content of this particular verse relates solely to the process of the unification of everything that I acquired during My incarnation on planet Zero and My stay in the Hells with My Divine Essence and Divine Substance, from which I descended to the human level, and which is designated here as 'My Father' (Divine Essence) and 'My God' (Divine Substance). At the time of My conversation with Mary Magdalene, I was still in the state of separation from them. That I asked her not to touch Me or cling to Me signifies that in the state of separation, acknowledging My current condition by clinging to it, would mean to place that separation in a permanent mode. This was a prophetic warning to all My subsequent followers not to separate My current state from its Divine Essence and Divine Substance and not to

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

consider Me as someone different from them, or, in this case, from My Father and My God. That I also added '*your Father and your God*' signifies that everyone else's life, in its positive connotation, derives from that Essence (Father) and that Substance (God). That I called them '*brethren*' signifies My acknowledgment that they are all relative to My Absolute State and that I equalized Myself with their condition by experiencing their life from their position.

Peter: Thank You very much for this explanation. The third part of the question relates to John himself and the reason that he never named himself as being John but instead, he talked about himself in the third person (John 20:3-10; and John 21:20) and only in designating himself as someone You loved and who had leaned on Your breast at the supper.

The Lord Jesus Christ: This situation reflects the true nature of Humbleness and Innocence, which are attributes of love and goodness and of femininity. Anyone representing such attributes is deeply loved by Me and symbolically speaking, they are at My breast. You see, such attributes derive from My very heart, that is to say from My very Essence. They are the source of life. Because I love life, any life, in an Absolute sense, I also carry that life on My breast or in My heart from which I emanate it to everyone else. Love and Goodness never advertise themselves to anyone. They simply are! For that reason John never indicated that he is the one who is in that role and representation. In order to illustrate that in Me no difference exists between My Absolute Masculinity and My Absolute Femininity and that in Me they are truly equal and one and the same, John was chosen to represent My feminine aspects from that side of his nature which contained the feminine principles in him. Thus, as you see from those verses, John talked about himself only as being My disciple whom I loved. This designation also pointed out the fact that no one in himself/herself and by himself/herself can or may be the source of one's own love and goodness. Only in acknowledging that any love and goodness come and stem from Me, that is to say, in being My disciple, can one truly love and be good. And this is all that you are ready to know about the discussed issue.

Peter: Again, thank You very much for this interesting explanation. The first part of Michael's question relates to the feeding of the five thousand men with the five loaves of bread and two fish in one case, and the four thousand men, besides women and children, with seven loaves and a few little fish in another case. These two events are recorded in Matthew 14:15-21 and Matthew 15:32-38; and reiterated in Matthew 16:8-11. Also in John 6:5-13. John specifies that those were barley loaves. Is there any significance in these specific events?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Deep spiritual mysteries, as well as spiritual correspondences, are contained in the quoted events. Some of them can be revealed at this time. Others are premature to be known by you. Let us address those that can be revealed and understood. As you see, two events of a similar nature are being described. In both cases, feeding of the multitude was taking place but with a different number of those involved in its process. These two cases have a totally different spiritual significance. One is taking place from the position of My Divine Love, the other is taking place from the position of My Divine Wisdom. However, both are taking place in human life, in the most externals and in the negative state in general.

The general meaning of those events is that I extend My Love, the life-giver, and My Wisdom, the light-giver, also to everyone in the negative state and in human life. Thus, this signifies that My Love and Wisdom are all encompassing. Bread, in general, signifies the goodness of life, and barley bread specifies its being natural goodness. Fish, in general, signifies the most external aspects of the natural truth. That in one case there were only five loaves of bread and two small fish signifies the nature of the negative state and human life that contain a very insignificant amount of good and truth even in the most external natural states of good and truth. But it also signifies that the negative state and human life are not absolutely evil and negative. They do contain a small remnant of goodness and some minute degree of truth in them. Otherwise, they could not live and function. My feeding them from those minute conditions signifies that I will utilize those remnants for extending to them all aspects of My Celestial, Spiritual and Natural Goodness and Truth which will save them from their pseudo-life. Sitting down to eat this bread and fish signifies acceptance of the fact that only by My own intervention in and arrangement of everything in the negative state and human life in a proper order, can anyone be saved from the eternal continuation in such a pseudo-life. Five loaves of bread means the minimum amount required for maintenance of semblance of life in the negative state and human life. Seven loaves means the maximum of anything of good that can be contained in the pseudo-life and human life, and no more. Two fish signifies the minimum awareness of any truth which is available to anyone in the negative state and human life and which is necessary to maintain in their condition in order to preserve in them any ability for being saved. A few small fish signifies the maximum of anything from the natural external truth that can be contained in the pseudo-life and in human life at all. Five thousand signifies that portion of positive energies that was cut off from the positive energies and utilized for the establishment of the pseudo-life of the negative state and which will be eligible for conversion to the positive

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

state, that is to say, for conversion of their entire totality, represented by the number five thousand. It is not an infinite number which decided to partake in the pseudo-life of the negative state but only a very small portion of it. Four thousand means all aspects of human life that need to be fed with goodness and truth for the purpose of their purification from all their evils and falsities. *‘Besides women and children’* signifies that the negative state and human life place all meaning of life and how they understand what life is all about in the external-scientific exploration and explanation, depicted here by men-males, with very little consideration of the inner, intuitive and insightful state of knowing that something is the way it is and why it is so, represented here by women and small children. That 12 baskets of leftovers were collected signifies that there is no limit to how much of My Divine Love and Goodness is available to all who desire to be fed by My Life. Twelve means the completeness and fullness of any state which is inexhaustible and lasts forever. At this time this is all that you need to know about this issue.

Peter: Thank You very much for everything. Is there anything else today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: No, Peter, this will be all for now. Have a nice day.

Sixty Third Dialog

April 5, 1999

Peter: Today I have some questions to ask on behalf of Dr. Beth Ann Voien and Dan Barba. However, before going into them, I would like first to ask You if You have anything to add or to elaborate on anything previously discussed or considered.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for asking Me first. I would like to offer some additional comments about the issue of My resurrection from death, preceded by My entry into the pseudo-creators' Hells and all other levels of the Hells. As you remember, from the position of human life, the only way to actually enter the hells and be tangibly present in them is either by the means of death — the invention of the Hells, or by one's spirit and soul, in most instances, without being consciously aware of such presence and work there. The human physical body is incapable in itself and by itself to be transposed from its planetary environment to any other non-physical dimension. Even within the physical dimension it is bound by the biological, chemical, atmospheric and other similar conditions which are structurally ingrained in the nature of planet Zero. Thus, in order to be able to enter any other dimensions in a tangible and perceptible manner by all modes of one's mind, the human physical body has to die or be put aside either on a permanent or temporary basis, respectively.

In My particular case, it was necessary to choose the first mode of entry into the Hells — by means of the physical death of My physical body. The reason for this choice is in the fact that death is the most significant state and process of human experience which all humans must inevitably go through. In fact, human life, from its very beginning, is in the process of dying, culminating in the actual death of its physical body, through which the human spirit and soul are discharging their life while on planet Zero. Because of this condition and because such an experience is integral to human life, and because I chose to be in human life, I had to also choose the human mode of dying and death itself. Lack of any experience of the human nature, in this case, lack of experiencing the most integral portion of human life — dying and death — would deprive Me of experiencing the completeness and fullness of all states, processes and conditions of human life and thus, ultimately, of the negative state. If human life is the end product of the negative state's pseudo-creative endeavor, then it is obvious that the fullness of the negative state's nature cannot be experienced — as everyone in the negative state does — without including all experiential modes of human life. If I were to

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

exclude this most significant mode of human experience, I would not be able to accomplish My mission the way it was carefully planned. Also, in that case, humans could not be saved from their typical human life because in order to save them from it, one has to know experientially what human life is all about and how it functions and proceeds, as well as by what means and ways it ends its function while living in the typical human body. As you remember from previous statements, the only way you can accomplish anything at all about anyone or anything is from their own experiential position.

The mystery of My incarnation into human life, and via it, into the negative state, is in the fact that from the position of My Absolute Goodness, which is pure and uncontaminated by anything negative, it is impossible to come in touch with anything human and negative. As you know, such touch would cause total destruction of all in human life and in the negative state in general. In order to circumvent this adverse possibility, I chose to acquire a human physical body, by the means of a typical human birth, which insulated My Absolute Goodness from causing any harm to anyone. At the same time, it gave Me something that was not contained in My Absolute Nature. As you know, the human body was originally fabricated from ideas of evils and falsities. Because evils and falsities are the nature of the negative state, and because they don't stem from or originate in the Absolute State, they have only relative and temporary validity. This is the source of the human body's condition rooted in its dying and death. At the same time, because of this important factor of the human physical body, I became structurally familiar to the negative state and to human life as if I were one of them. Simply stated, because of My human body, everyone also assumed that I was as full of evils and falsities as anyone else. By that assumption, I was able to insulate everyone else in the negative state and human life from being annihilated by My Absolute State. During that time, I functioned, in most instances, from the position of human relativity.

If I were to choose to enter the Hells by any mode other than through the typical human death, it would be entering it by My Absolute Spirit. It is impossible for My Absolute Spirit to do anything from the relative condition. Otherwise it would not be absolute. In that case, I would not be able to maintain the life of My Creation and its function. Such maintenance is possible only from the Absolute Condition. So, if I were to enter the Hells from this Absolute Condition, by the factor of the negative state's relativity, temporality and transience, the negative state would succumb to that Absolute Presence. However, the human physical body gave Me a means, by its process of dying and death, which are of a relative, temporary and transient nature, to enter the Hells from the

position of their own relativity. By that relativity, the Hells were insulated from being annihilated by My sole presence from the position of My Absolute Nature. This is one of the most important reasons why I chose the human mode of life, ingrained in the process of dying and death. Because it was perceived by everyone in the Hells that My human physical body was dead, they all assumed that I was like one of them, relative to their own relativity. Therefore, I was familiar to their mode of pseudo-life. From that position I could accomplish everything in the Hells that was needed and necessary to accomplish.

Of course, the greatest surprise of their pseudo-life was when they witnessed that My human physical body was alive again by the process of its resurrection from death. In actuality, it was at that time that they fully realized who I was. Before that, they only suspected who I was but they were not sure about it. They were confused about Me because, after all, a true God cannot die. And here I was dying and dead. How could this possibly be Me? It was difficult for anyone to conceive an idea of God's assumption of human nature with all its attributes which included the most important and significant one — dying and death. This is one of the reasons why many humans, and others in the negative state, are unable to accept this fact about My life on planet Zero. Because it is almost impossible for them to accept the fact that God can experience dying and actual death, and even more impossible for them to understand and to accept the fact that My human physical body was resurrected from that death, they had to conclude that I was not a true God, but only either His emissary or an enlightened regular human; and that if I really died, then My body remained dead and has never been resurrected, yielding to the pseudo-laws of planet Zero.

And yet, from the position of My salvation of all, and from the position of elimination of the negative state on a permanent basis, it was absolutely essential for Me to experience the human condition of dying and death. And even more important, it was absolutely necessary to establish something that had never existed or had never been experienced before — resurrection of My physical human body and taking it with Me to the spiritual world and subsequently incorporating it into My Absolute Nature. And this is what the true meaning of Easter is all about. Of course, there are many other important aspects of these events and facts but they would be beyond comprehension of the relative human life. They are of the absolute nature.

Peter: Thank You very much for this beautiful elaboration. May I now present Beth Ann's questions?

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, you may.

Peter: Her first question relates to the terms, often used in the books of Your New Revelation — ‘creatures’ and ‘sub-creatures.’ Interestingly enough, I have also been pondering about them for some time. Her question is whether these entities, called creatures and sub-creatures, are also sentient, and thus, ultimately able to accept You and Your positive state.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, the answer to this question will be somewhat ambiguous. It is ‘yes’ and ‘no.’ However, before going into explanation of this ambiguity, it is necessary first to reveal something that has not been revealed so far. It relates to the way these two terms need to be understood and to whom or to what they are applied. Initially, during genetic manipulation and experimentation by the pseudo-creators, they came up with an idea of fabrication of some creatures that would be fully sentient in the negative sense; meaning, their sentience would include nothing at all from anything conceivable in the positive state or how they or any sentient entity looked, both externally and internally. Because no external or internal resemblance existed to anyone or anything in Creation or pseudo-creation, and because these fabrications could also be clearly differentiated from any animal forms and contents, they were named by the pseudo-creators, ‘creatures.’ These creatures were fabricated in such a way that their sentience was put into a special type of spiritual, mental and genetic sphere which precluded an entrance of anything positive and good. In this respect, only very rudimentary elements of the positive nature were contained in their brand of sentience. Because from the spiritual standpoint, the degree of sentience is determined by one’s ability to know, to understand and to accept Me as The Lord Jesus Christ, and My positive state, and because of the minutest degree of their sentience in this particular sense, the answer to that question is on the ‘no’ side.

However, things are not as simple as that. And this brings us to the ‘yes’ portion of our ambiguous answer. As you know, no sentient life may or can exist without some degree of awareness, albeit on the unconscious level, of something positive and good. This factor, discussed many times before, stems from the fact that there is no such thing as absolute evil or absolute negative. Only Absolute Good and Absolute Positive exist. In order to give life to such creatures, even though it is a pseudo-life, it was necessary to retain a minute degree of that portion of life which originated from and in the positive state.

We mentioned above that only very rudimentary elements of the positive nature were included in their brand of sentience. These elements were sufficient enough to give them life but not sufficient enough to have any obvious sense of anything good and positive. It is these rudimentary elements that will be used by Me to rekindle or reawaken them to the point that they will enter into the fully conscious sphere of the mind of these creatures and will be utilized for expansion of their sentience with a greater degree of its positive aspects.

Let Me tell you something. Some time ago, a very special division in the New School was opened by Me, which specializes exclusively in the affairs of these creatures. The members of that division are assigned the role of performing the expansion of these creatures' sentience through a special type of spiritual, mental and genetic rewiring of their sentient mind in such a manner that it puts them into a position to discern, to understand and to accept My New Nature and the nature of My positive state. It is a somewhat lengthy process from the standpoint of your conceptualization of time but, nevertheless, it is very effective and efficient in accomplishing this goal. Recently, a great number of these creatures have undergone this process of rewiring and restructuring with a subsequent conversion to the positive state.

So, this is the first part of answering Beth Ann's and your question, Peter. In this first part I also want to include the explanation of the term 'sub-creatures.' At one point in time, shortly after the lockup of the pseudo-creators, the 'prominent' members of the Hells to whom the pseudo-creators passed their power, standing and control, and to whom they gave 80 percent of the knowledge that they themselves had, and who are now called the renegades, decided to continue the experimentation with the available genetic material in order to fabricate their own brand of entities. However, the 80 percent of the knowledge available to them was not sufficient to bring them to the full level of the pseudo-creators' abilities in this respect. In fact, the lacking 20 percent contained most of the secrets of the pseudo-life-making process. Only some initial elements were available to the renegades (we shall call them renegades for the purpose of differentiation, although at that time they were not yet renegades). In the process of the renegades' attempts to fabricate a new breed of entities, who would be the likeness and image of themselves, they only partially succeeded in their effort. The reason why they were unable to fully succeed and fabricate someone like the pseudo-creators' creatures, was because they totally and completely excluded anything positive or good in the process of their attempts. The renegades were/are unwilling to accept the fact that any type of life can and may originate only with the inclusion of something positive and good, even if

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

it is in the minutest proportions. They wanted desperately to prove the point that they can and may fabricate someone fully sentient without any such inclusions, limiting themselves only to purely negative and evil states and extracting from genetic material only that which has no relevance to anything positive, even in the remotest degree.

After several attempts and numerous failures, the renegades succeeded in fabrication of the quasi-sentient life forms, called sub-creatures. The reason they are called that is because, internally and externally, they look like caricatures of the creatures who were initially fabricated by the pseudo-creators. What is the spiritual, mental and personal status of these sub-creatures? Because only negative elements were used in the process of their fabrications, and only pseudo-energies were applied and imparted on them, these sub-creatures have only very rudimentary intelligence and ability to understand anything at all and are in need of constant supervision. They are comparable to humans who are in a state of moderate to severe developmental disability. In actuality, these adverse human conditions are the sole correspondences of those sub-creatures.

However, in the Hells, these sub-creatures are able to be trained in performing some tasks of menial labor. So, they were turned into slaves of other creatures and renegades for the purpose of performing these types of tasks for them. Under their presently existing spiritual, mental and personal conditions, they are unable to comprehend and, thus, to accept Me or My positive state. This is the 'no' answer to Beth Ann's question. However, because of My Absolute Compassion and Mercy, I could not allow them to be eliminated like common animals. In these sub-creatures, potentially, an ability exists that could lead them toward development of the concept of 'I am.' From that concept they would be able to understand and to accept Me in My New Nature and My positive state. For that reason, when the time comes to permanently abolish the negative state and its typical human life (in its purely negative aspects), these sub-creatures will be placed into a hospital-type division of the New School, where I personally impart on them some additional spiritual, mental and genetic elements that would be incorporated into their current genetic makeup, and from which they will be able to develop full sentience the way it is in the positive state.

In the first step of this important work, an idea will be implanted into the comprehensive sphere of their just-developing sentient mind, in which they will be asked, if they wish and desire by their own free will and choice, to be and to exist as solely positive entities placed into the life of the positive state. Because their original genetic code, as implanted

into them by the renegades, contains a strong desire to be and to exist, no matter in what mode of life, they will all accept this new positive condition. And this is the 'yes' portion of My answer to Beth Ann's first question.

Now, the above explanation of the terms 'creatures' and 'sub-creatures' refers to those times which were in occurrence either before My First Coming or before My New Nature came to its fruition. Following those times, and after the creation of My New Universe, and after the release of the pseudo-creators, and after the pseudo-creators fabricated their own new pseudo-universe, a different breed of creatures was fabricated by them with a subsequent fabrication of a different breed of the sub-creatures by the renegades. Because these new fabrications do not resemble anything that had previously been in being and existence, as well as in pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, and because they are not comparable to anyone or anything else, they are also designated by the names 'creatures' and 'sub-creatures' in order to distinguish them from all others. The reason why they are also called by these names, although they are nothing like the other creatures and sub-creatures who were previously fabricated, is in the fact that the methods and procedures used for their fabrications were the same as with the other ones, except that they were made from a totally different material. These newly fabricated creatures and sub-creatures, in comparison with the previous ones, are much more pseudo-advanced and pseudo-sophisticated in their makeup than the previous ones. Although they are fully sentient, their sentience is based on the awareness of a different level of evils and falsities which has not been available or extricable up to that point. But because they do have a sense of 'I am,' even though it is rooted in purity of evilness and falsifications, they will be able to understand and to accept, when the time comes, My New Nature and the life of My positive state.

However, there is a third category of creatures and sub-creatures in the Hells. This category is derived from human stock. Some humans, who were, in their nature, of such tremendous negativity, evilness and falsification, and who became so engrossed in and identified with their despicable nature, that upon arrival to one of the Hells, they were/are specially 'rewarded' by their masters with genetic restructuring into these types of creatures. On the other hand, those of the human stock who totally failed in their endeavor to please their masters but who, at the same time, despised and rejected anything positive and good, upon their arrival to the Hells, were/are genetically restructured into the type of sub-creatures as mentioned above.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Now, these former humans, turned into creatures and sub-creatures, by My special state of Compassion and Mercy, in an opportune time, will be restored to that part of their previous human nature which contained the awareness of their 'I am,' on which their subsequent salvation will be built with the full understanding and acceptance of My New Nature and My positive state.

Peter: Thank You very much for Your comprehensive and elucidating answer. Her second question relates to the concept which we used to name the book of ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***. For some reason or other we started to call it 'the Big Book.' In the history of humankind's constant and continuous struggle with alcoholism and all other numerous types of addictions, a movement was established known under the name, 'Alcoholics Anonymous.' The founders of that movement also wrote a book containing the philosophy of Alcoholics Anonymous. That book is also called 'the Big Book.' Beth Ann's question is whether there is a correspondence — a kind of precursor of the positive principles contained in the 12-Steps — to Your New Revelation as contained in our Big Book.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Although there is no direct correspondence between the two, some parallels do exist. The parallel can be found in the fact that the founders of Alcoholics Anonymous, for the first time, became aware of the spiritual roots and reasons behind alcoholism and all other forms of addictions (to drugs, nicotine, gambling, and anything else). They recognized the fact that such addictions or dependencies are reflections of a total deprivation, rejection, improper understanding and misuse of the true spiritual principles. For that reason, the recovery from that condition could be found only in the reestablishment of the proper spiritual awareness and reconnection to one's spiritual origin and in giving up one's problems to God, in our case, to Me, and that without this spiritual awareness and acceptance of God, one is totally powerless and lost. The designation of the name 'the Big Book' to their book is more to the volume of the written material as compared to their other published books or literature.

In our case, although the name 'Big Book' also has some limited connotation to its quantitative volume, meaning it is big by the number of pages it contains, from the purely spiritual standpoint, by the way it is valued in the spiritual world, the 'Big' means big on the ideas and content and what it reveals qualitatively rather than quantitatively. As no awareness had existed before the 'Big Book' of Alcoholics Anonymous revealed and defined that alcoholism and all other addictions were, in fact, a spiritual disease, so is the 'Big Book' of My New Revelation

containing explanations, ideas, concepts and principles which had not been available and discernable by anyone up to the point when they were revealed. And this is the extent that they correspond. No other comparison or correspondence between them exists.

Peter: Thank You very, very much for this explanation. And the final question comes from Dan. It is somewhat confusing to our human mind to understand the notion that we are involved in and function at many levels of being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. How is this possible and what is the degree of our involvement on the other levels as compared to our day-to-day function on our external human level? This is a very interesting question.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, it is. And yes, from the standpoint of your human external conscious mind, it will be almost impossible for you to understand how your involvement at all mentioned levels is accomplished. The problem with your human external conscious mind is that, because in your day-by-day function on planet Zero you are going from one place to another, at one time or another, it functions from the position of and within the spatial-temporal continuum. In that mode, your perception is linear and not discrete. Your human external conscious mind does not contain any notion of discreteness of the multidimensional interconnectedness. In a practical sense, you discern and perceive things and events as happening here or there, at this or that time. No synchronicity and simultaneity of all events is perceptible or apprehensible by your externals from which you function on a daily basis. At the same time, because of your human limitations, you think about other dimensions and pseudo-dimensions as located or situated somewhere out there, in some kind of remote corner of the visible universe. What is very difficult for you to apprehend is that all those dimensions are not only far from you in any sense of the availability to your perception, but they are next to you, around you and in you, although in a different state and process than you are. Your human perceptual limitations are not allowing you to see them or hear them or sense them externally. However, your true mind, beyond its external shell, by which and through which you function on planet Zero, is not situated in the spatial-temporal continuum. Although it is connected to it by its scanning sensors, accommodated to the nature of your physical environment, its major portion is involved in the life and events of other dimensions and pseudo-dimensions — without direct or even indirect involvement by that portion of your human mind which is assigned the role of orienting you and helping you function in your human life placed in the external physical environment. In this sense, your involvement in the external human life, as My true representatives, is limited to about

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

five percent or less. The other portions of your mind and pseudo-mind (the rest of 95 percent or more) are involved elsewhere and elsewhen. That elsewhere and elsewhen are not somewhere or somewhen out there or outwhen (this is very difficult to explain!), but it is, once again, right with you, around you, in you and by you. Therefore, it is not difficult at all for you to be in many places, states, conditions, times and paratimes at the very same moment because they are all present here-and-now with you (now, how do you say it in order to avoid the time-space bound understanding of what I am talking about?).

The closest, but at the same time the most remote example in your human understanding you can find is in something like radio, television and telephone devices. For example, you talk on the phone with someone who is sitting or standing several thousand miles away from you and who is in a different space and at a different time than you are. And yet, you hear that person in your own time, in your own ears and in your own space at the very same time that he/she hears you in his/her own time, space and ears. Or take for example, the various frequencies and waves on which the television viewing and radio listening are built. By your physical eyes and your physical ears you neither see nor hear those frequencies and waves. And yet they are right there with you. And in them, right in your room, there is a presence of all people and events on your planet taking place at the very same time and place. And your own image and activities are constantly being present with all others in their time and place. In order to discern that it is so, your human conscious mind needs special types of devices which capture all images of those people and events, and makes them available for your viewing and hearing.

So, in our case, whenever you distract your human conscious mind by whatever mode, either by sleeping, dreaming, concentrating on some specific ideas, or by some other ways, in that moment your mind is intensely involved in other dimensions at the very same time as you are marginally involved in your own human external life. In order to properly understand this concept, you need to dissociate yourself from your external conscious perception and switch to your internal perception and intuition. It is utterly impossible for you to understand this concept by your external mind. It is not even remotely built to understand anything of this nature. Because of that it would be very difficult, if not impossible, at this time, to continue in this discussion. Therefore, let us close this discussion for today with a wish for all of you to have a very pleasant day.

Peter: Thank You very much for this nice Dialog. It was a very enjoyable encounter.

Sixty Fourth Dialog

April 7, 1999

Peter: Before asking my own questions, I am yielding to You to talk first or to contribute anything You wish this morning.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for your kind offer. I would like to make some comments on our multilevel conversation that happened yesterday during your and Lyudmila's afternoon walk. As you know, Lyudmila, I, you, members of both your respective spiritual families, members of the New Universe and the pseudo-creators assigned to you were engaged in a lively debate about various important spiritual issues. At one point in time, during this conversation, an issue was brought up of how your energies can be conveyed to the pseudo-creators with whom you have been working at all levels of your life (in some cases, with the exclusion of your conscious awareness that such work has been going on continuously).

Let Me tell you something about the methods of this important work. First of all, in order that such work can take place effectively and efficiently, a number of the pseudo-creators, from various groups, are being assigned to you, in addition to those who have been with you for some time (from the time when the ***Corollaries...*** were written) for the purpose of liaison between the rest of the pseudo-creators and you. Of course, at that time, the purpose of your synergetic work was considerably different than it is now. During that time the major effort was to build a bridge of connection between the pseudo-creators and the positive state and to help them come out of the hole (symbolically speaking) so that they could see and learn what it was that made you so different from all the rest of humanity.

At the present time, within the framework of the Great Alliance, your work together is geared toward restraint and defeat of the renegades, toward the establishment of a totally new lifestyle, and relationships from the position of the positive state, among many other things.

How can your energies be conveyed to the pseudo-creators in order to realize and actualize this important work? The very first step in this respect, and one of the most important ones, is the way you think, feel about, and relate to the pseudo-creators. For a long period of time, you thought and felt about them in an adversarial manner. They were considered to be your enemies who would want nothing better than to destroy you or seduce and corrupt you. Also, many of you were afraid of

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

them and avoided even thinking about them. With such an attitude, not much could be accomplished in the process of establishing synergistic work with them. Once they noticed the difference that existed between you and the rest of the typical humans, their attitude toward you changed. They no longer felt the need to do anything about you or your reversed conversion to their cause or to the cause of the negative state. Instead, they adopted a detached, scientific, cool and objective attitude toward you for the purpose of observing and learning what it was that made you so different. In the process of that observation and learning, many questions of important significance were answered by your contribution to them, and willingness to submit yourself to their observation and experimentation and by your offer of help.

During that time, most of you still felt cautious and untrusting toward the pseudo-creators, avoiding them as much as possible and interacting with them only on a 'must' basis. No positive feelings or feelings of friendship were experienced by you toward them. This condition of yours was understandable because of the pseudo-creators' disruption of the course of development of life in the positive state and fabrication of the human race with all its atrocities and abominations. At that time, you were much too preoccupied with the negative consequences of the activation of the negative state and fabrication of humans. In other words, you were looking at that situation from a typical position of the negative state and human life instead of from the position of proper understanding and acceptance of the reasons why the adverse activities of the pseudo-creators were permitted by Me to unfold in the first place. From that position, it was difficult or even impossible for you to understand and to accept the fact that, by their adverse activities, the pseudo-creators were contributing to very important learning for all in My Creation at all its levels.

However, at the present time, with the proper understanding and acceptance of the needs for all those events, unleashed by the pseudo-creators, to take place, and by their own understanding and acceptance of the consequences of their adverse activities, and by having the proper and correct answers to all of their questions *available* to them, your position and attitude toward them are changing in such a manner that it will occupy the view inherent in the nature of the positive state and in My Nature personally. This is the view of mercy, compassion, empathy, understanding, acceptance and forgiveness. No longer will there be rejection, fear, avoidance, lack of trust and similar negative emotions and attitudes, but instead there will be a new form of friendship and cooperation between you and them.

And this brings us toward the issue of conveyance of your energies to the pseudo-creators in order that they accomplish what is needed to accomplish at this particular time. By showing toward them love, friendship, kindness, understanding, and by similar positive emotions and thoughts, you are giving them your energies. Through such positive feelings and thoughts, the pseudo-creators are able to extract and utilize your energies in their important work which they are doing now solely for Me and My cause.

In a practical sense, if you have a visual awareness of their presence with you (and some of you do have it), you go to them, greet them, hug them, be friendly and kind to them and converse with them as much as possible on all issues of your life and life in general. If you don't have a visual awareness or any other experience of their presence with you, you may think and feel about them in this positive way and talk to them in your mind as if you are fully consciously aware of their presence with you. Either way, or whatever way is available to you, will be very effective in conveying your energies to them.

In a more general and even more effective way, if you invite them to participate in all your everyday activities, your personal energies will be constantly available to them. You have to understand that, from now on, the pseudo-creators assigned to you will be an integral part of your spiritual families. They will be in an especially close contact and collaboration with the members of the New Universe who are assigned to you for that, and for many other important purposes.

Another important issue that transpired during our multilevel conversation yesterday, was about your attitude toward the pseudo-creators in cases when you personally don't agree with some of the methods they have been using in their effort to restrain and defeat the renegades, or in other instances that you feel are not too appropriate or efficient. Although in some cases your perception in this respect may be correct, it is advisable that you don't take a judgmental position toward their methods. The reason for this is that you have no idea why certain things are permitted by Me the way they are being manifested or undertaken by the pseudo-creators. In your conversation with Me and with them yesterday, as well as with all present, it was clearly indicated to you that the pseudo-creators, as well as everyone else, are not perfect or absolute. Because of that, they, as well as everyone else, are prone to make mistakes. How do you think that some important learning in their case, as well as in everyone else's case, is accomplished and takes place? By making mistakes and learning from their mistakes. It was clearly indicated to you in My New Revelation that, because of everyone's

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

relative condition, even someone who can be considered almost next to My Absolute State is prone to occasionally make some mistakes or to arrive at some inappropriate conclusions. However, through such mistakes and wrong conclusions, they learn very important lessons through which and by which they are able to be more and more perfect and more and more advanced in their spiritual development and progression.

So, if you look at the pseudo-creators' mistakes and wrong conclusions from this proper perspective, you will understand the need for their occurrence and you will give them full support in their endeavor by agreeing with their procedures no matter how inappropriate or wrong they seem to be from your human standpoint. Remember please, from your inner, non-human standpoint, there is a clear understanding and acceptance of why such errors or wrong conclusions need to occur. By this type of accepting and positive attitude, you are giving or sharing with them your personal energies. And this is the other, very effective way how to convey to them your energies.

As you see from these examples, the way you give them or make available your help and your energies, is by your proper attitude and the way you feel, think about, and interact with the pseudo-creators. This is the most effective way.

Another point that you need to be aware of in this respect is that there are two levels in which you are involved with the pseudo-creators, as well as with everyone else who is assigned to you. Your involvement approximately 95% of the time and of your mind takes place in other dimensions in general, and in the dimension of the pseudo-creators in particular, where most of them reside at the present time. It is in these dimensions that you need to physically (symbolically speaking) relate to them and be with them and participate in all their activities. This participation and involvement happens, of course, without any, or very little, awareness (although a very, very, very few of you have this awareness) of your human external conscious mind. The other level of involvement is on the external plane of your everyday life when you go about your everyday business, in your mind when you converse with them and all of us, or simply when you keep all of us in your conscious awareness. The offshoot of this external involvement is when you talk to each other on the phone or face-to-face, as the case was yesterday with Lyudmila and you, Peter. Whenever you use your external vocal cords and talk about spiritual issues and about the pseudo-creators and their work, or whatever, in this respect, and only if you talk about them in a positive connotation, you are giving them your energies and, at the same

time, you are intensely involved with them in their activities, as well as allowing them to be positioned in your externals. By doing that, you are making it possible for the pseudo-creators to influence the course of events on planet Zero, not only from their own dimension but also from your own external position. This combined positioning will make it more effective to accomplish the goal set forth by Me for the process of containment of the renegades and for the final elimination of the negative state. You have to clearly understand that the current role of the pseudo-creators is to make things right. They were the ones who made things wrong. Therefore, it is their full responsibility to make them right once again. And because, before your incarnation on planet Zero, for your own very important reasons and learning, you volunteered to help the pseudo-creators in this crucial process, your own personal roles are being changed or, to be more precise, that portion of your role for being on planet Zero which relates to this collaborative effort with the pseudo-creators, is being activated right now. This is the reason why we are talking about it in this Dialog and why Lyudmila and you, Peter, yesterday, during your afternoon walk, were discussing these issues with all of us. As you see, nothing is without reason and everything happens in a very timely manner.

Talking about the renegades, the other point which was brought to your attention yesterday during our multilevel conversation, was the issue of the renegades themselves and how they 'physically' look and at what point of their possible future conversion to the positive state they are at the present time. It was indicated to you that from your human standpoint and judgment, they do look very ugly, fierce and unpleasantly disgusting. However, in their own subjective view, to themselves, they look very beautiful and desirable because they equate beauty and desirableness with fierceness, ruggedness, roughness and similar negative features and characteristics. As you know, the inner dispositions, which in the case of the renegades are evil and negative, determine the external look and manifestation. The more evil and negative they are, the uglier and more fierce, rugged, unpleasant and rough they look externally. But, because in their view, to be that way internally is the most desirable and most exciting way to be, they equate those states with beauty and loveliness.

As far as at what point of their possible future conversion to the positive state they are, it was indicated to you that, at the present time, for the time being, they are not yet ready to take that step. It was also indicated to you in the previous Dialogs that the renegades are the ones who exemplify and manifest the final, most negative and evil portion of the nature of the negative state beyond which there is nothing to learn any

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

more. Only after this last phase is completed, the condition will be established by which the renegades will be able to convert to the positive state. At this time in the 'game,' it would be very premature to reveal to you what those conditions could or would be. Wait and see and be patient!

Another thought that occurred to you personally, Peter, but which you didn't express, was about the scenario under which the pseudo-creators in their entirety would convert to the positive state before the total activation and elimination of the negative state. Is such a scenario possible? And if it is possible, how could the learning about the nature of the negative state and its human life in its fullness be completed? Let Me tell you something. You are not too far from the time when all the pseudo-creators, including the third, the most negative group, will be on the positive side. So, what is going to happen then?

Well, don't forget that during the pseudo-creators reign, before their lockup, many forms of pseudo-sentient entities, creatures, demons, sub-creatures and similar beings, as well as typical humans, were fabricated and put into place throughout all the Hells, the Zone of Displacement and on planet Zero. There are billions, billions and billions of them. These so-called beings, in whatever form and condition, were fabricated from purely evil and negative elements. They were given an impetus to develop only in one way — more negative, more evil, more cunning and more pseudo-sophisticated. Following the lockup of the pseudo-creators, they continued in their adverse development along the lines of being more and more that way. And not only that, but they fabricated an even greater number of creatures and sub-creatures from their own brand of ideas of evils and falsities.

Because of this setup in their development, even after all the pseudo-creators convert to the positive state, these beings or creatures, headed by the renegades, would continue in their pseudo-effort to destroy the positive state and to take over the entire Creation with a much greater motivation, effort and striving than ever before. And not only that, but they would proclaim themselves to be the true pseudo-creators who fabricated humans and all other creatures and sub-creatures in the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, as well as that they are the true saviors of humanity. Having 80 percent of the knowledge and abilities possessed by the genuine pseudo-creators, they would be able (and they already are now, by their current experimentation and work) to manifest and illustrate how the negative state was activated and put into dominance.

Because of their ability to do so, should this scenario be given a preference, they would be able to convince humanity about their being their true ‘creators.’ Once humanity would become convinced of these pseudo-facts, the negative state would pseudo-win on planet Zero. Of course, it doesn’t mean that this particular scenario would be chosen or given preference. However, it is available and it could be put into motion if needed and necessary. And this is all that I wanted to contribute today. And now, go ahead, Peter, ask your question which reflects your typical human embarrassment due to the technical mistakes you made in these Dialogs.

Peter: Yes, it is very embarrassing and uncomfortable and I am curious why this situation has been with me throughout my entire life. The technical mistakes we are talking about (and this is for the benefit of all readers of these Dialogs), is in the fact that somehow, in the sequential numbering of the pages of these Dialogs, in one instance I numbered two Dialogs with the same page numbers. In the Forty Fifth Dialog the last page number is 304, but I started the Forty Sixth Dialog with page number 303. This numbering of the pages is completely off. And although I corrected this problem in my computer, the readers received wrong and confusing numbering of these pages. In the Sixty Second Dialog, those people who received it through E-mail, will have an error on page 420, on the very last line of that page, which ends with the words “until Christmas time of 1988.” It should be read as 1987, and not 1988. Even typing now, I made a mistake by typing 1997. Fortunately, I caught it immediately. And the same problem occurred in the Fifth Dialog. On page 41, where a quote is entered from the Epistle of James, it is indicated that the quote in question is in the first chapter, verse 13, whereas it should be the second chapter, verse 13. All my life I have known that the mentioned quote is contained in the second chapter of James, yet I typed in the word ‘first.’ Is there any reason for these embarrassing oversights? (By the way, I urge all readers who received these incorrect data, to make proper corrections in their copies).

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, as you know, nothing exists without some important reason. In your case, this is an illustration of your aversion toward quantification, externalization and linearity. It is not so much the numbers themselves and in themselves per se, as the sequential numbering of pages or entering specific dates that are troublesome for you personally, Peter. You have always had a problem with that. You are clearly aware of the spiritual correspondences of the function that each individual number has. Such correspondences have a qualitative and discrete connotation. However, it is a different story when they are used in their quantitative, mathematical, linear and

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

statistical functions. These are of purely external nature. Because of that they have a negative connotation. Hence, your unconscious aversion toward them reflected in your unconscious rejection to properly follow the sequential numbering or giving the correct dates. The precise dates for you, Peter, have too much of the fixed, immutable, unchangeable, and temporal connotation, which are, again, of external and linear nature. They are specific only to planet Zero and to the human aspects of your nature. The nature of the positive state is rooted in quality, non-linearity, discreteness, individuality and uniqueness. Because you have always looked at things from the position of the positive state, which was ingrained in your basic nature, even if you were not consciously aware until recently that it has been the case with you, you have always taken the position of the positive state rather than the position of the typical human state of your mind. It has always been your role to be that way, Peter.

That was also one of the reasons why during your school years, the situation was specifically set up for you in such a manner, that you were thwarted from being able to excel or to succeed in mathematics and science in general. Because of that, you developed such an aversion toward them. If the situation were set up differently, you would be engrossed in natural sciences and mathematics in general to a such extent that it would effectively sidetrack you from your mission as transmitter of My New Revelation. You would have become a hard-core scientist who would tend to reject any spiritual explanation of the structure of Creation and human life. In that case, you would have sided with the negative state. As you see from this explanation, everything in your life was set up in such a way that it would lead you only toward one most important purpose — to become the transmitter of My New Revelation. In some way or another, everything in your life has served this purpose.

Peter: I appreciate this explanation very much. However, it does not diminish my embarrassment. Well, all I can say is, first of all, that I profusely apologize by the means of this particular Dialog to all readers, (please, forgive me, everyone!), and secondly, that I will try to do my best to avoid such mistakes in the future. But don't hold your breath that it won't happen again.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, I would recommend to all readers of these Dialogs to go by the headings which designate which Dialog follows from the first to the last one rather than by the page numbers — at least until the problem is corrected. Of course, you corrected it in the

computer. Others may, if they wish, correct them manually in their own copy of these Dialogs. That would resolve your concerns, Peter.

Peter: Thank You very much for this suggestion and for Your contribution toward the issue discussed in this Dialog in general. One more question was asked by Dr. Ardyth Norem. Her question is: In our sexual involvement with the members of our spiritual family or with others in the positive state who are assigned to us, what kind of products result, if any? I believe her question relates to Your advice which was given to us some time ago, as recorded in one of the Updates in the **Corollaries...** . At that time, we were advised to invite all assigned to us to engage in such a sexual relationship. Any comments or elaboration on this issue?

The Lord Jesus Christ: At that time the major reason for that advice was the need to establish a direct line from the positive state to human life and to the negative state in general so that the members of the positive state could position themselves directly in the midst of human life and the negative state. Sexuality, being that it is a major tool or means for such a necessary connection, was utilized primarily for that purpose as well as for joy, delight, pleasure and mutual sharing. Because of such a specific purpose, for which your sexual involvement was used, the only type of ideas which were born from such a sexual relationship, were the ideas related to the most effective and efficient abolishment and elimination of the life of the negative state and for preparation of the currently ongoing shift to begin. No specific ideas for their endowment into becoming new sentient entities were produced because of an entirely different purpose for which such sexual relationships were introduced. Now, at that time, all this was happening without your conscious awareness.

However, the present situation is entirely different. The shift occurred with the purpose and goal that such sexual relationships between you and all those who are attached to you, including the pseudo-creators, are being encouraged. Sexual relationships of this nature, which happen entirely on the spiritual and mental levels in other dimensions, very often with only marginal, if any at all, external physical sensation, have become a means through which and by which a new quality of interrelationships amongst all of you is being established and totally new ideas are being born that have a direct relevance to the activation of life in the state of fullness and completeness of the positive state; as well as a new and different understanding of that aspect of My New Nature which has not been available to you up to this point, but which has been put into the foreground as of recently, and is being conveyed to all of you who

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

choose by your own free will and choice to be in such sexual relationships. The impact of the release of this new and different aspect of My New Nature to the entirety of My Creation and to you, My true representatives, will be of immense proportions, not discernible by the human portion of your mind — at least for the time being — but very much felt and experienced during such sexual intercourse on the other levels.

Another product of these relationships is the birth of special types of ideas that have a direct relevance to your new roles which you have in your position as My true representatives. Such ideas will be helpful to you in establishment of a lifestyle which is of the positive nature from the position of the positive state. They will give you insight into and understanding of what and how it is to be My true representatives. In addition to that, the involvement of the pseudo-creators in this sexual process will give them a better means to receive and to utilize your personal and sexual energies in making things right once again, as indicated above, and to abolish everything that they made wrong. As you know, sexual energy is one of the most potent tools and means through which and by which all the above mentioned things can be accomplished.

Because of these very specific and crucial aspects for which your sexual involvement with those who are attached to you in other dimensions and worlds is taking place, or will be taking place, — if you so choose it to happen by your own free will and choice — no energies will be left for production of the ideas for birth of new sentient entities. At this point in time, all your sexual and other energies need to go into that which was described above. Of course, parallel to that, your sexual involvement will still be accompanied by the sense and feelings of joy, delight, pleasure, happiness, relaxation and mutual sharing. And this is all you need to know at this time about this particular topic.

Peter: Thank You very much for this explanation. It was very interesting. Is there anything else You would like to talk about today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: No, Peter, this is all for today. As always, it was a pleasure to dialog with you. Have a very pleasant day.

Sixty Fifth Dialog

April 9, 1999

Peter: Yesterday, later in the afternoon, I did receive some questions from a European reader, who wants to remain anonymous. We'll respect that reader's request. However, before formulating those questions, I am yielding the floor to You first, should You have any comments and elaboration on anything at all.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you very much, Peter, for yielding Me the floor first. I have one brief comment. Yesterday afternoon, as Lyudmila and you were doing some grocery shopping in one of the grocery stores, you noticed, Peter, on the rack of displayed magazines, on the front page of one of those ill-reputed, but very popular with the so-called common humans, magazines, in very large bold letters saying that God has sent humans on this planet a message. At the same time, that saying warns everyone who is afraid of learning the content of that message not to read it. What a nice psychological trick! The publishers of such magazines know very well that if you tell humans not to read something because it will scare or frighten them, then they, most certainly, will read it immediately, without any delay. Curious what that message was all about, you, Peter, opened that page and briefly scanned it. That message was saying something like, (and I paraphrase it considerably), 'this is it, guys. I've had it with you. At the end of this and the beginning of the next millenium, you will, most certainly, be destroyed, wiped out for all the atrocities and abominations that you have been committing throughout your entire history.'

It is not the content of that statement that caught your attention but from what direction it was coming. It is true that, once the negative state and its human life (in its negative aspects) exhausts its usefulness and serves its purpose for which it was allowed to be activated, it will be permanently and irrevocably eliminated from the face of My Creation. This elimination may or may not happen at the beginning of the next millenium. However, it also may happen many milleniums from now, depending on all the choices that are in the process of being made by everyone in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. In the mentioned article it was indicated that God was sending his message from some far away constellation, many, many light years away from your planet, and that it was sent in some kind of coded mathematical symbols. It was alleged in that article that for two years the NASA scientists have been trying to decode that message and that finally, they succeeded in doing so. However, they concealed the content

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

of that message from the rest of humanity in order not to cause them to panic.

So, what kind of God is it that sends these types of messages? Obviously, he is time-space bound and is unable to speak in any human language if he conveys his messages in mathematical symbols. Do you see the ridiculousness of this foolish assumption? As if God is so limited that he is incapable of functioning from the position of a non-spatial, non-temporal condition and from the position of everyone's language.

The reason I am mentioning this obviously foolish notion, as recorded in that article, is to bring to your attention the fact of distortions and outright falsifications of what My True Nature is all about. These types of articles, appearing in such numerous numbers, are geared toward brainwashing humans into accepting the nature of God, My Nature, in a totally inappropriate and unrealistic manner. It takes humans far away from understanding even remotely what My True Nature is.

As you clearly remember from My New Revelation, and this is a simple reminder to all readers of these Dialogs, one of the most obvious and potent ways of how the negative state may and can temporarily win on your planet, is by totally wiping out from the human mind any proper and correct understanding and acceptance of the true conceptualization of the Nature of God — The Lord Jesus Christ. In this type of conceptualization, there will be absolutely nothing that would even remotely contain and reflect what My True Nature is all about or what it is like. Once humanity is at this point, then the negative state will fully win and, at the same time, paradoxically speaking, by winning, it would destroy itself permanently and irrevocably. In the very moment of its winning, it would exhaust its usefulness and would serve its purpose for which it was allowed to come to its adverse fruition.

And this is all that I wanted to comment on or, to be more precise, to remind you about this early morning. You may now, Peter, formulate the mentioned reader's questions.

Peter: Actually, there are three questions. Two of them are addressed directly to You, and the third one is directed to me in my former function as a clinical psychologist. However, because, as of recently, I denounced myself from being a clinical psychologist, I am presenting even that question for Your answer. After all, You are the only true Absolute Psychologist in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. You know us all in an Absolute sense and not as psychologists anywhere who know things only in a relative sense, and even in that

sense their knowledge is so limited and imprecise that it doesn't count — in my 'humble' opinion. So, let me begin with the first question, and following Your answer, I will ask the other two in sequence, if it is all right with You.

The Lord Jesus Christ: It definitely is, Peter, it definitely is. However, although you denounced yourself as being a clinical psychologist, and this was the right and timely thing to do, and there is no need to be proud about being one, the valuable experiences that you gathered during almost 37 years in that role were needed and necessary in order to become the transmitter of My New Revelation. So, as you see, everything in your life served some good and positive purpose, no matter how disgusted you are presently with everything related to psychology and psychiatry and the way it is being conceptualized and practiced.

Peter: I accept these facts. Thank You for this reminder. The first question: Why is it that sometimes it happens, that the readers of Your New Revelation, among themselves, have different, even entirely opposite, views, opinions and positions about certain problems, situations and questions?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, some aspects of the answer to this question are contained in the First and especially in the Second Dialog. It would be advisable for the inquirer to carefully reread those two Dialogs. However, the issue here is in possibly opposing views, opinions or positions that they are taking as compared to some other readers of My New Revelation. The answer to this question is not a simple one. It all depends in what area of life, or to what such opposing views, opinions or positions are being applied. If they relate to something obviously external, such as for example, preferences for a certain type of lifestyle or the way they talk, dress, behave, etc., it is a matter of personal choice that needs to be respected and accepted even though you personally may disagree with it or it is disgusting to you. This is something that is individualized and personalized. No two persons can and may be alike to the fullest possible extent. There will always be individual differences. These are the facts of life, any life.

However, if the differences or opposing views, opinions or positions relate to some important spiritual issues or problems or situations or happenings, and they are in obvious contradiction to the content and ideas of My New Revelation, then we have here something that is a real problem. Take for example, the issue of your support of the cause of the pseudo-creators, the way you were asked to provide. In their conflict with the renegades and their minions, as reflected in NATO's bombing of

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Yugoslavia, for example, you were advised to not take sides with either Serbs or ethnic Albanians in Kosovo, but instead, to be neutral. At the same time, you were advised to support NATO's cause because it represents the pseudo-creators' side. If some of the readers of My New Revelation take a totally opposite view, opinion or position in this respect, they obviously side with the renegades and their very evil and negative cause. In that case, by the logic of this setup, such an individual is opposing My New Revelation, and ultimately, My cause. And this is true regardless of how much the bombing of Yugoslavia is not appropriate or not needed — in your view, of course. Obviously, if it has been going on, by the fact that it is going on, it is needed, and therefore, no other viable option was available to the pseudo-creators. The lessons need to be learned by all involved. With any other options, they could not be learned. Remember this!

However, there is another point to this issue. Do you remember it was indicated to you in one of the Updates in the ***Corollaries...*** that there are many reasons and different motivations and intentions with which various prospective readers approach My New Revelation? It was also indicated there (Update 15) that if someone inappropriately and incorrectly understands and applies the ideas and concepts of My New Revelation in their personal lives, then such individuals stick out to the negative state like a sore thumb, becoming a well-pointed target for the demonic creatures of the Hells. In our case though, the issue is how anyone approaches My New Revelation. What kinds of intentional and motivational factors are behind such an approach? It was previously indicated to you on several occasions that some individuals will approach My New Revelation with a totally wrong, inappropriate and selfish intention and motivation. Others will approach it from the position of the negative state, as agents of the negative state, with only one purpose — to pollute, to poison, to distort and to falsify every single word contained in My New Revelation. So, you have here two major factors. One is when someone is approaching it for inappropriate, selfish and similar negative reasons instead of for the sake of the principles themselves, for the sake of learning the truth and applying it in their personal lives. In this case, because of this factor, individuals of this nature will misunderstand and misinterpret the ideas of My New Revelation and, due to this fact, they will project their own ideas into it which suit and are in congruence with their own personal selfish needs. In this case, they will have opposite views from someone who has the right intention and motivation with which they approach My New Revelation. Unfortunately, because of this self-absorbed selfish, or whatever, inappropriate factor, such individuals will be self-righteous about their opposing views, thinking, and even

feeling, that their view is fully congruent with the principles of My New Revelation and that the other person's view is not.

Cases of this nature are permitted to happen in order to illustrate and demonstrate for all what happens and what the outcome is if someone approaches My New Revelation with such an inappropriate intention and motivation. In cases like this, it would be better if such an individual would never have come to My New Revelation at this particular time. Of course, even in cases like that, the individuals of this nature volunteered and agreed to exemplify this particular approach for the sake of important learning of all involved. In the second factor, when disguised agents and demonic individuals of the negative state approach My New Revelation with their own agenda, it is obvious that they will oppose anything which is contained in My New Revelation by giving its principles a totally wrong meaning and drawing from them totally false conclusions. Their mission on this planet is to do just that, in order to confuse others and to discourage them from reading it or applying its principles in their lives. After all, if there are so many irreconcilable interpretations regarding the content of My New Revelation, then something is very wrong about it. Then, maybe, after all, it is not My New Revelation and it is not I Who is talking to Peter, saying to him all these things. So, one of the many purposes of these agents and demonic figures is to come to My New Revelation with only one reason in their mind — to offer many contradictory and irreconcilable interpretations and explanations of all My New Revelation's principles in order to place such doubts in the mind of any prospective reader.

As you know, one of the reasons why it was so strongly and so often emphasized and recommended that you are to go by your own internal intuition in the process of your reading of My New Revelation and subsequently making your own decision about whether to accept its content or not, and to rely only and only on what your intuition tells you in this respect, was to prevent you from listening to anyone else's views and opinions, especially if they are opposite to or incongruent with your own, the way your intuition was telling you. As you see from these examples, the issue here is not to listen to anyone and what they tell you in this respect but to make conclusions from the position of the principles and content of My New Revelation itself, based on what it is telling you, in your own mind and heart. This is especially true when you encounter someone who is telling you something different from what you understand and accept in this respect. So, the proper way to proceed in cases like that is to let them have their own opinions and views, as you have your own, making yourself personally responsible for how you approach My New Revelation and remembering that you are not

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

responsible for theirs because they will have to bear the consequences of their own reasons why they approached My New Revelation the way they did and you will have to bear your own. So, as always, you are advised to carefully explore your own reasons, intentions and motivations with which you originally approached My New Revelation and how you are applying its principles in your everyday life. Of course, if your intuition is telling you something about My New Revelation which is correct and proper, and if someone comes to you and conveys his/her view and opinion about it and that opinion and view is in full agreement with what your intuition is telling you, then you have an external confirmation that you are right and that your approach toward My New Revelation was a proper one. However, don't consciously seek out such confirmation because the proper spiritual approach is not to rely on externals but always on internals, in this case, on your own intuition. As you know, in it My presence is most pronounced and discernible.

Peter: Thank You very much for this nice response. The second question of the mentioned reader goes something like this (I am translating it): Sometimes it happens that when one performs some kind of good deed, the situation develops in such a way that from the outside it looks like such a deed not only didn't help but, in fact, it ended in hurting someone. While we are living on planet Zero, it is difficult to ascertain in what way the situation will develop in this respect. Because of the uncertainty about the outcome of such a deed, the question is: Should we actively continue to make efforts in performing such good deeds; or should we take a passive approach in order to avoid these possibly unpleasant outcomes?

The Lord Jesus Christ: The answer to this question is very simple. First of all, this issue was already discussed in one of the earlier Dialogs. Obviously, the reader who is asking this question, either has not come to the reading of that particular Dialog (possibly it has not been translated yet in the reader's respective language), or the issue was not explained the way it would fully satisfy this particular reader. This is a very individualized and personalized issue. Because of that, no general all-inclusive conclusion or advice can be made in this respect. It all depends on each particular case and, once again, with what motivation, intention and purpose one approaches the performance of his/her good deeds. The major aspect of this situation depends on two factors: First, to whom and why such a good deed is offered, and second, how appropriate it is, from the standpoint of wisdom of that situation, to offer or to do such a deed. If such deeds are made indiscriminately, without any regard for the consequences of their impact, and without any consultation with your intuition and wisdom, and, ultimately, without asking Me whether such

deeds, no matter how good they seem to be, are appropriate and beneficial in each particular case, then they can cause more harm than good. Remember, the important issue here is **to love with discerning wisdom**. As it was revealed to you in My New Revelation, love without wisdom is blind. And wisdom without love has no power and impact. The advice here is, as always, to ask Me to inspire you, to illuminate you and to enlighten you, and your intuition, when, how, to whom and why any such good deeds should be made available. That way you can never go wrong. Sometimes, restraining yourself from doing any good deed, as well as any harm, to someone who is not ready for it, or who is not in a proper spiritual position to benefit from it, is, in itself and by itself, a good deed. So, a good deed is not always defined by doing something good actively and tangibly, but also by restraining yourself, if the situation warrants it, from doing it at all. Remember that!

Peter: Thank You for this reminder. It is very timely. The third, the so-called psychological question of the reader, is to me personally, as a clinical psychologist. It is as follows: What is my opinion of the problem of belittling, ridiculing and laughing at someone and by someone? What kind of spiritual correspondence does this problem have? How should we react in situations like that? Because the question here is about the spiritual correspondence, it behooves me to refer it to You for answering it. After all, I am, thanks God (excuse me!), no longer a clinical psychologist.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are excused, Peter. Two factors are involved in this issue. The first one relates to the self-concept, self-image and self-identity that an individual, who belittles, ridicules and laughs at you, developed and established during his/her formative years. This is a psychological factor. If such an individual was brought up in an atmosphere of ridiculing, belittling and laughing at, or if he/she was constantly belittled, ridiculed and laughed at by his/her significant others, he/she will adopt and internalize that attitude in his/her life because it is the only thing that the individual in question was able to learn or to experience. Nothing else was available to him/her. Around such an attitude that individual's personality was established. He/she knows nothing else or how to behave in any other way. The second factor is a spiritual one. By prior agreement, before incarnation on planet Zero, such an individual chose to incarnate into the environment that would impose on him/her such an adverse attitude. The purpose here is to illustrate the consequences, results and outcomes of such a negative attitude and lifestyle. It is an important learning for all of how not to be, how not to behave and how not to relate.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

However, there is another point in this respect. A certain contingent in the Hells specializes in the development of such ridiculing, belittling and laughing at behaviors and attitudes in order to apply it to the nature of the positive state and to Me personally. From that particular contingent, many incarnate on planet Zero for the purpose of ridiculing, belittling and laughing at anything good and positive, and also at you, My true representatives. When you encounter someone like that, because now you know the reasons behind his/her negative behavior, you exhibit the opposite characteristics — understanding, acceptance and forgiveness and, if your intuition tells you to do so, in a kind voice, bringing to his/her attention that such negative behavior can hurt only him/her but not you. By approaching cases like that with such a positive attitude on your part, you are helping the individuals in question to change their behavior, if not while they are on planet Zero, then after they come back to the spiritual world. And this is all that we need to talk about today. Have a nice day.

Peter: Thank You very much for Your explanation and for playing a psychologist on my behalf.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. It was My pleasure to do that.

Sixty Sixth Dialog

April 11, 1999

Peter: A few days ago, as Lyudmila and I were walking during our usual afternoon walk, and as all of us were discussing various life issues, a question came to my mind which I would like to present to You for Your elaboration and comment, if I may. But before formulating my own question, I would like to ask You if You wish to make any comments or elaborate on any topic first.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Of course you may ask your question, Peter. And, yes, I would like to talk about something first, since you were so kind and offered Me this opportunity to talk first. My comments will address, in the form of clarification, the issue of the pseudo-creators' effort to make everything right which they had made so wrong. As you know, Peter, one of the most important and significant processes, by which the pseudo-creators were able to activate the pseudo-life of the negative state, was separation of all principles of masculinity and all principles of femininity and putting one principle over the other, artificially making one more valuable, more deserving and more needed than the other one. In the higher spiritual understanding, the process of separation occurred on the level of Love and Wisdom, Good and Truth and Positive Works and Faith. The positive state, the nature of which derives from My Absolute Nature, was founded on unification, integration and oneness of all these spiritual principles. In Me, they are in a state of Absolute Unity, Harmony, Cohesiveness, Integration and Oneness without any possibility of their split, fractionation or placing one over the other. Logically speaking, if all these principles in Me reside in their Absolute State and Condition, then each principle, in itself and by itself, is absolute likewise. Because they are absolute, they must be equal in all their aspects and manifestations. Otherwise, some of them, or all of them, would not be absolute but only relative to each other. If they were to be relative to each other, in that case, any particular principle could be put in a position of preferential treatment or could be conceivable as more needed, more valuable and more deserving than any other. However, in that case, Creation could not be created because any creation can be founded only on the state of unification of all principles. Nothing has ever been permanently built on anything even remotely resembling a disintegrated state or condition.

So, in order to activate the negative state, it was necessary to violate this fundamental requirement for any type of creation and come up with something which would have a totally opposite nature and meaning.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Therefore, if the nature of the positive state was built on the principles of unification, integration and oneness of Love and Wisdom, Good and Truth and Positive Works and Faith, then obviously, if you have the need to come up with something totally different from that, in that case, you have to start with the total separation, isolation and disintegration of all such principles. Otherwise you would be building the positive state and not the negative one.

This is how the pseudo-creators made things wrong. For that reason, in order to make them right again, it is necessary to begin with the process of, first, removal of such a separation, isolation and disintegration, and second, it is necessary to proceed with the process of reintegration, reunification and reconnection of all these vital and crucial principles.

As you noticed, Peter, I purposefully omitted the word ‘marriage’ in the process of this description. It was on your mind why this is the case. Although in the past, or up to this point, it was appropriate to talk about the spiritual marriage of Love and Wisdom, Good and Truth and Positive Works and Faith, the present, more advanced spiritual situation requires a higher approach toward understanding these concepts and how they interrelate. If you carefully explore the meaning of the word ‘marriage,’ you will notice that it indicates the existence of two separate entities that need to come together in order to make them **distinguishably one**. No matter how much you unify them, or in this case, marry them, if you perceive and conceive them as two separate entities, as manifested, for example, in the existence of male and female, they still remain distinguishable from each other and unique in their nature. So, no matter which way you look at it, they are two and not one. In such a marital state, a condition still remains that may result in their possible separation — as is so often manifested in human divorces, for example. In that case, if you look at it from a typical condition of their marriage, they continue to have a very strong potential for their future separation — for whatever reasons. And that would and could ultimately lead to reactivation of the negative state. However, if we talk about their integration, unification and oneness, instead of their marriage, by virtue of the true logical meaning of these important concepts, no possibility for the reactivation of the negative state may or can result from them.

The reason why up to this point it was permitted to talk about their marriage, was in the fact that it was necessary for Me Personally to separate from My Essence — My Absolute Femininity, in order to be able to enter human life, and the life of the negative state in general, and to set up a condition in them for their future salvation built on the process of reintegration, reunification and reconnection of the principles in question. Because in human life, and in the negative state in general, the

closest approximation to such a positive understanding and conceptualization of these principles was manifested only in their physical marriages, in which they could remotely experience some minute degree of their unification, it was necessary to adopt that concept or word — marriage, in order to make such notion familiar to them. Otherwise, they could not conceive and understand what I, or anyone else, was talking about. Thus, as you see from this example, the word ‘marriage’ gave humans and other creatures some remote approximation of the true reality of the positive state. These are the remnants of the positive state contained in everyone who presently lives in the negative state and in human life. On these remnants their future salvation will be accomplished. The way for this process was prepared by My own reunification, reintegration and reconnection to My Original Essence, called in the Gospels, Father.

However, at the present time, when everything about the negative state and human life is coming to its finale and ending, and because the word ‘marriage’ doesn’t even remotely reflect the true nature of the positive state, it is necessary to bring into the foreground of everyone’s awareness a different, more appropriate understanding of this concept and replace it with concepts that are more genuine, realistic and more congruent with the true nature of the positive state which is structured conceptually and dynamically on the basis of unity, integration and oneness of all principles of Love and Wisdom, Good and Truth and Positive Works and Faith. These concepts contain and reflect far more than the word ‘marriage’ can express or contain.

Because in the case of the pseudo-creators, in order to activate the negative state, it was necessary to separate Love and Wisdom, or Femininity and Masculinity, respectively, and all their other respective attributes and characteristics, and because from the position of the principles of Love — femininity, it is utterly impossible to do that — love would never allow such a separation! — they had to suppress that principle and emphasize and put into dominance the masculine principle. Only from the position of masculinity, in the state of its total separation, isolation and disintegration from the principles of femininity, can a situation be set up for activation of the negative state. The problem with love and its femininity is in the fact that from its position no question can or may occur about the possibility of any other life other than the life of the positive state. Love doesn’t ask questions. It is not its function to do so. However, from the position of wisdom and its masculinity, such a question can easily be conceived because it is its function to ask questions. But in order to answer that question properly, with the full validity of all its conclusions, consequences, results and outcomes, it was necessary to turn away from the state of the unity of Love and Wisdom

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

and all their respective attributes and characteristics. The turning away resulted in the split of masculinity and femininity with the subsequent activation of the negative state. It is not by coincidence, Peter, that in your mind, whenever you think about the pseudo-creators, you think about them as men. No women pseudo-creators ever enter your awareness.

In order to make things right once again, this split has to be repaired. How do you go about repairing it? As you know, the very nature of the pseudo-creators, as well as all their fabrications, is rooted in this split. It is encoded into their genetic makeup. As you remember, some time ago, it was indicated to you (in the ***Corollaries...***) that I opened a very special new division in My New School that specifically and particularly specializes in the affairs of the pseudo-creators. Any pseudo-creator, who shows a desire to convert to the positive state, must enter that special division in the New School and undergo a special type of spiritual, mental, 'physical,' genetic and any other type of restructuring and rewiring of their entire system, incomprehensible to your human external mind, during which, encoded into their genes, the need for this split is being removed and a new code within the pseudo-creators' mind is implanted for the reconnection of the mentioned principles and all their states and processes. This new code makes it possible for them to begin the process of reintegration, reunification and reconnection of all previously separated, isolated and disintegrated principles within their mind.

I am revealing to you that at this time almost two-thirds of the pseudo-creators are in that particular division of the New School, undergoing this process. Remember please, because the process of separation, isolation and split took many millennia to accomplish, the process of reunification, reintegration and reconnection cannot take place overnight, so-to-speak. However, due to the fact that the state of unification, integration and oneness had already been experienced by most of them before the activation of the negative state, and its familiarity and how to revert to it was retained in the deepest recesses of the unconscious portion of their mind, it doesn't need to take as long a time as the process of the split itself. The reason why the process of the split took basically a few million years to accomplish (in humans' conceptualization of time), was because nothing of that nature or experience existed at that time. It was necessary to experiment with that process first by trying this or that method until a proper key was found to accomplish that almost impossible feat.

As long as the pseudo-creators are undergoing this process, and as long as they are in the process of making things right once again, based on

their own internal integration, reunification and reconnection, we will continue to call them ‘the pseudo-creators’ for their own personal and important spiritual reasons. Only after the full deactivation and elimination of the negative state is completed — the major task for which the pseudo-creators are responsible, will they no longer be called ‘the pseudo-creators.’ At that time they will be called co-creators.

As far as the other one-third of the pseudo-creators is concerned, who are still not in the position of conversion to the positive state, they will continue in their own experimentation for the purpose of getting the final answer to their existential question. However, at this time, their question has a final character, beyond which, after it is answered properly, no other question is possible to ask from their own position, because it will totally and completely reject the mentioned before Null-Hypothesis. The reason why their current questioning has a final character, is because their experimentation reached a pinnacle due to the fact that finally, they have a different type of material, extracted from My true representatives, formerly the agents of My positive state, with which and by which they are trying to fabricate a sentient entity who would contain such a state of unification, integration and reconnection of all previously split principles, without utilization of any true spiritual principles. The question in their mind at this time is: Is it possible at all to accomplish this goal? Is it possible to fabricate someone into the mentioned state of unification, integration and reconnection without any spiritual principles and My Personal involvement? You see, Peter, the issue with this particular brand of the pseudo-creators is My Personal involvement. They have always wanted to prove that it is possible to create a purely positive lifestyle without Me or My Personal involvement. This is the core of the whole issue!

The reason why we are calling this phase of the pseudo-creators’ experimentation — as reaching the final pinnacle, is that, before this time, and before their lockup, they tried all other possible and impossible methods — and, of course, they failed. At this time, however, only one method remains — using the new material extracted from My representatives, which was not available to them at that time. So, taking into consideration the importance of this final answer to their question, it is to your advantage that the remaining pseudo-creators complete this phase of their final experimentation as soon as possible so that they likewise may enter the mentioned division in the New School. By proceeding with this experimentation, and as a result of rejecting the Null-Hypothesis (remember its premise? ‘It is possible to have a true life, comparable to the life of the positive state, without Me or any of My true spiritual principles or only with false gods, them, and with false and distorted spiritual principles!’), they are on their own way toward making

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

things right. This is one of the many reasons why you were advised to cooperate also with this faction of the pseudo-creators. The sooner they complete this phase of their experimentation, the sooner we will all be in position for elimination and removal of that burdensome state of isolation, separation, split and disintegration on which life of the negative state and human life are founded. Unfortunately, at this particular time, as mentioned before, their experimentation in this respect is hampered and impeded by their war with the renegades. The renegades, of course, are proceeding likewise with their own agenda in this respect, and in a similar fashion as the pseudo-creators.

There is one more comment I would like to make before answering your question, Peter. This comment is unrelated to the above discussed topic. It relates to a tendency that some of you show in trying to compare your situation and condition, whatever it may be, with someone else's. Even if some similarities in such situations and conditions may exist amongst you, they are only superficial and entirely external. There is a certain degree of spiritual danger in trying to seek out such similarities or in making such unnecessary comparisons. Unbeknownst to you, the negative aspect of your human nature may impose on you a desire or a need to be like someone else or to have the same type of experience as some other individuals. By falling into this possible trap, you would deny your own unique, individual and unduplicated nature. In that case, you would fail in your mission to be yourself and to have your own experiences with your own unique manifestation of how such experiences are being handled, expressed, perceived, conceived and interpreted. No one can be like you.

However, let us assume for a moment that two or more individuals have the same type of problems. Let's say that they have exactly the same type of physical illness, for example, a heart condition or liver cancer. Even though it is the same illness, its cause, course, outcome, and everything related to its condition, as well as how everyone in that condition will react to it, what he/she will experience, feel, think and sense about it, will be infinitely different from anyone else in that condition. And although external physical symptoms may be manifested in a very similar manner, their internal counterparts and each individual's perception and experience of it, will never be the same. The danger of trying to find a common denominator in them is in the fact that it could lead to the suppression of the need to have one's own unique experiences in this respect and become a self-fulfilling prophecy through and by the means of expectations to have the same experiences and their outcomes as some other individual's. That would entirely defeat the proper manifestation of the spiritual reasons which underlie any such condition or situation. Because of that, it would effectively prevent one

from learning, as well as providing for everyone, important lessons from having such a condition or being in such a situation.

Or take for example, an attempt to find some similarities between someone who retired from one's human type of job and someone who is medically disabled to be able to continue in one's human job. In the case of a retiree, the situation is spiritually and inherently different than in the case of medical and/or mental disability. In the first case, the retired individual fulfilled the purpose for which he/she was engaged in his/her respective job or work or position or whatever. He/she put his/her time into it so that to continue in it would be spiritually unproductive. At the same time, by retiring from it, he/she yielded that position to someone else who may be able to contribute some other important aspects to the nature of that position which were not available or needed at the time when the retiree was in it. On the other hand, the medical and/or mental disability, which is preventing one from being in that position, from the spiritual standpoint signifies inappropriateness and inadequacy of that position for the individual engaged in it because to continue in it would not only lead nowhere but it would be entirely futile, unproductive, dangerous and undermining his/her true and genuine mission to which the previous experience, in that particular position, was preparing the way to experience something totally different; in this case, to experience the physical and/or mental disability and to what it could lead in the life of the individual in question.

However, from our spiritual standpoint, this particular issue is so individualized and personalized that no two cases can ever have anything in common or, at least, can have the same reasons. Only on the external human level such commonalities may appear. But they can be and are, in most instances, misleading. So, don't fall into this typical human trap. This is just a gentle reminder. I believe, Peter, that your question has some relevance to this particular issue.

Peter: Yes, it does. Actually, when we were walking and talking, I quietly said that, although we know very well that whatever happens in our life, no matter what it is, happens by prior agreement between You and us, and serves some kind of important purpose, nevertheless, we don't know why it happens. As we were groaning and complaining about our numerous physical aches and pains and various states of our physical discomfort, I was wondering why it was necessary to agree to all of this and why we are unable to get rid of them no matter how much we are asking You, and all present with us, to help us to dispense with all that human nonsense — at least on the physical level (pains, aches, discomforts, illnesses, etc.).

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

The Lord Jesus Christ: Although there is some relevance between the above mentioned reminder and your question, there is also a considerable difference. In the first instance, we were talking about trying to compare or to find similarities or similar reasons behind conditions that are alike. However, in this instance we are addressing the issue of why such states exist at all.

No simple answer can be offered to this question. Yes, it is true that for some of your own personal and inherently individual reasons, you agreed to go through these kinds of experiences. These personalized and individualized reasons are impossible to reveal because they are solely between Me and you. In this case, each one of you would have to approach Me personally and individually and to ask that question on your own behalf. However, don't hold your breath. While you are on planet Zero, most aspects of that 'why' will not be available to you, first of all, for security reasons, and secondly, and most importantly, for the reasons that their magnitude and significance are of such proportions that your human conscious mind could not accept it or even conceive it. From your typical human standpoint, you would simply reject them as something utterly impossible and inconceivable. If I were to reveal them to you fully, because of your present inability to accept or even to understand them, you would flatly reject them as something that in no way could be true or feasible. In that case, you would instantly become a well-pointed target to the forces of the negative state, and by your rejecting attitude, you would succumb to the negative state, effectively becoming its slave. To prevent you from ending up like that, it was necessary to conceal most of the content of that agreement and why it was so necessary to enter into it under such restrictive conditions in the first place.

You see, Peter, and everyone who reads these words, most aspects of your agreement to experience whatever you have been and will be experiencing during your life on planet Zero, are of such a nature that they cannot be revealed because of the way your human life, and its limitations, is structured and how it is set up. Remember please, the agreement also was not to have this important knowledge available to you while staying on planet Zero in human life. At that time you perfectly understood that human nature was such that it would effectively impede and interfere with your ability to know this 'why.' Simply stated, human life and its peculiar and impossible nature, is such that it is incapable of accepting or grasping most of the spiritual reasons existing behind it or for any such states and conditions as reflected in your illnesses, for example, or for whatever you have in all aspects of your typical human life.

However, there are some aspects of it that can be revealed and comprehended even by your typical human mind. One aspect of the issue in question is a clear illustration and demonstration of the nature of human life and of the negative state in itself and by itself. What is it that the products of the negative state, as well as the negative state in itself and by itself, lead to or are capable of exhibiting for the learning of all? That those products and the negative state are nothing but decay, pain, suffering, misery, debilitation, regression, dying and death. If you agreed to enter human life, and if your spirit and soul — your unique individuality — agreed on a temporary basis to experience human life through a typical human body, the product of the negative state, then, obviously, you also agreed to everything that was/is integrally ingrained in such a body — decay, pain, illnesses, sickness, diseases, suffering, misery, debilitation, and dying and death of your physical body. After all, there is no other way to experience human life.

So, if you consider these important factors, then it will become obvious to you why your requests to help you to get rid of such conditions cannot always be answered or offered to you. In this case, such help would be in gross violation of your initial agreement under which you entered human life. In that case, you would fail in your mission. Of course, there are situations that warrant such help and elimination of certain physical conditions which need to happen only on a temporary basis within a specific time frame of your human life experiences because of the need to experience them and to learn from them or to illustrate the coping skills and how they were applied and accomplished. They are needed only for as long as the lessons are being learned or certain other aspects of their nature are fully grasped and understood by all involved with or connected to you. On the other hand, there are some other states and conditions of your physical body that need to run their course, either to the end of your human life on planet Zero or to a certain allotted time until they fulfill their purpose and exhaust their usefulness for which they were allowed to inflict you in the first place. However, whenever you are asking Me, as well as all present with you, for help, we can do only so much as the nature of our mutual agreement and contract allows us to do. But don't forget one important thing: If it were not for our continuous help and support, you would not be able to endure for a minute anything that is inflicted on you by the nature of your physical body and human life in general and by the conditions of our agreement and contract. So, even in the most debilitating and painful conditions, when your physical and/or mental suffering is the worst possible to imagine, our help and support is the most pronounced and the most obvious, even though when you are in the midst of such a terrible experience, it seems to you that you have been forsaken by Me and by all present — while the exact

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

opposite is true. Otherwise, you would not be able to survive such an ordeal. Remember this fact whenever you are in such a condition or situation!

And finally, there is another aspect to your physical conditions. Each condition illustrates certain different aspects of the nature of the human body and how fragile and limited it is. As you know, one individual is not capable of illustrating or taking in all such aspects. Otherwise he/she could not survive it for a fraction of a second. Therefore, it was necessary to redistribute all these almost infinite varieties of such aspects among many individuals-volunteers and in the process of many, many, many millennia. This is the issue of exposure of the nature of the negative state. The reason why we are saying ‘almost infinite varieties,’ is because the nature of the negative state and human life is exhaustible and therefore, it will reach its end. Thus, not originating in the Absolute State, their nature doesn’t have a prerogative to stay forever. For that reason, it doesn’t have infinite, inexhaustible varieties of the experiences in its nature. In view of these facts, each one of you agreed to experience only as much as you can take in and be able to experience or to endure during your stay on planet Zero in your own specific human physical body. I can assure you personally that nothing more or nothing of a greater degree or intensity was assigned to you than of what you would be capable or would want to experience or to endure. This is what we mutually agreed to. And as you know, such an agreement can never be broken or violated. Does My elaboration on this issue answer your question, Peter?

Peter: Yes, it does. And to tell You the truth, I was suspecting that something like that is behind all of this. Anyway, I thank You very much for Your kindness and willingness to bear with our questions and our, very often, foolish inquisitiveness. Is there anything else today You wish to elaborate upon?

The Lord Jesus Christ: I think we’ve had enough for one day. You are welcome, Peter. And don’t concern yourself with your questions and ‘inquisitiveness’ because, as you know, My willingness to respond is inexhaustible and doesn’t have limits. So, just go right ahead and question and be inquisitive any time that you feel like. In the meantime, have a marvelous time.

Sixty Seventh Dialog

April 13, 1999

Peter: Today, I personally don't have any particular questions of multiversal, or any other, significance. Neither did I receive any questions from anyone. However, one problem was brought to my attention by Dr. Ardyth Norem about the inappropriate use of the term "in lieu" in the Sixty Second Dialog and maybe in some others. In the English language that term means "instead of" or "in place of." So, when I was asking You at the very beginning of that Dialog whether You have something to contribute "in lieu" of Your resurrection, I meant it in a totally different connotation than the English meaning of that word. My meaning was whether You had something to contribute about the fact of Your Resurrection. So, anyone who will be reading that question, should replace the word "in lieu" with the words "about the fact of." I am sorry for the inconvenience that it may cause to the readers, especially those who are in the process of translating these Dialogs into some other languages. Obviously, I am far from being perfect in the usage of some words in English, or any other languages.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Don't be so hard on yourself, Peter. Such mistakes are common and understandable. I can assure you, the majority of the readers of these Dialogs will understand your question the way you meant it to be and not the way it is meant in English. Of course, it is a good idea to make appropriate corrections and it was kind of Ardyth to bring it to your attention.

Peter: For me it is a little embarrassing. However, I accept the fact of my human imperfections and limitations. But, to go back to today's business — if I may say so. As I mentioned at the beginning, neither I nor anyone else have any particular or significant questions at this time. Therefore, I would like to ask You if You have anything to contribute or add or elaborate upon today.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for asking Me. Yes, I do have something to add to the issue discussed in the Sixty Sixth Dialog. Let's say that today is a continuation of our discussion about the issue of separation of Love and Wisdom, Good and Truth and Positive Works and Faith, and femininity and masculinity, as well as of the concept of what humans call 'marriage.'

As mentioned in that Dialog it was necessary to split and separate these principles in order to give a chance for the negative state to be activated.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

The original purpose of that split and separation on the part of the pseudo-creators was for the establishment of a lifestyle which would not only substantially differ from the lifestyle of the then existing positive state, but that it would be totally opposite to it in the sense of opposing it. The purpose was purely scientific in order to test the possibility of any other lifestyle, other than the lifestyle of the positive state.

As long as Love and Wisdom, Good and Truth, and Positive Works and Faith, and all their attributes, characteristics and derivatives, are in the state of unification, integration and oneness, no other lifestyle is possible to establish. Knowing that from the position of pure Love, and its Goodness and Positive Works, no other lifestyle than the positive one could be conceived and subsequently established, it was necessary to isolate and separate that Love and all its attributes, characteristics and derivatives from its state and process of unification, oneness and integration, with Wisdom and all its attributes, characteristics and derivatives. After all, the nature of Love, and its structure and dynamics, is such that it can produce nothing else but what is positive and good. Pure Love can generate and establish no other products of any kind.

This is one of the major reasons why it was necessary to suppress all principles of Love and put them into a minor and subservient position. And because Love is of purely feminine principle, it was necessary to separate and split femininity from masculinity and put masculinity into the dominant position. In the state of this type of separation and split, a totally new lifestyle was established that had never been conceived or was possible before that time. This is the genesis of the activation of the negative state.

Based on these types of factors, human life, and life of all in the Zone of Displacement and its respective Hells, was developed and established. Therefore, anything in human life, as well as in all other types of pseudo-lives, is founded on and derives from these factors of separation and split. If you look carefully on the history of humankind, you will notice that during all its history, females, in the majority of human cultures, were always in a position of subservience and slavery to the dominant males. Their function and role were limited to childbearing and being housewives. In most instances, they were excluded from any important decision-making processes or from occupying any significant and important social positions unless, of course, they were of the so-called royal heritage.

Due to the fact that the lifestyle of humanity and everyone else in the negative state was established on the principle of dominance of males

over females, in order for Me to personally incarnate on planet Zero into the typical human life, and in order to succeed in My mission, it was necessary to accept the existing condition on this planet and take the form of a male. Two reasons existed for this necessity. One was that only from the position of being a male, could I be listened to and accepted as having any authority at all. The other, more important and significant one, was that, in order to establish a condition in human life and the life of the negative state in general for their eventual elimination, you need to begin from the midst of their own nature, from their own position, from their own within and from everything upon which they founded the meaning of their life. Any other position would not only be inconceivable by anyone in that life but it would be flatly rejected.

As you see from this situation, it was necessary for Me Personally to follow the same procedures in the process of My incarnation on planet Zero and into the negative state as 'to what' the activation of the negative state went through. Thus, as you remember, an element from My Absolute Masculinity was temporarily separated and split from My Absolute Nature and combined with certain human elements. Because that element derived from the State and Process of My Absolute Masculinity, it enabled Me to be born into human life in the form of a male.

Another point to the necessity of being born as a male, was that it was the masculine aspect of life of the positive state which was split, isolated and separated from the totality of all principles of femininity, or, in this case, from the principles of Love, Goodness and Positive Works. It was not the feminine principle that initiated and established that separation, isolation and split. Therefore, any reunification, reintegration and reconnection of the masculine, or Wisdom, Truth and Faith, with its feminine, or Love, Good and Positive Works, must begin from the position of that which separated, isolated and split itself from it. Thus, it has to be initiated from the position of masculinity. This is the reason that, during My human life, I had to be a male. It was necessary for Me to fully experience the state of separation, isolation and split in the same manner as humans did in order to be able to incorporate it into My Nature for the purpose of its transformation and establishment of favorable conditions for the eventual elimination of this burdensome and miserable split, separation and isolation. The point here to realize is that you cannot reunify, reconnect and reintegrate that which was separated, isolated and split from outside of yourself. First you have to incorporate it into yourself, into your very nature, before you can do anything about it. Unless it is contained in your very nature, in its experiential mode, not only wouldn't you have any recourse of doing it, but you wouldn't

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

know how to do it; instead, you would reaffirm the lifestyle of the negative state. This is one of the major reasons why it was absolutely necessary for Me to incorporate into My Nature everything that I experienced during My incarnation on planet Zero and in the Hells. As you remember, that incorporation produced and established My Absolutely New Absolute Nature.

Once that incorporation was completed, from the very within of Myself, I could initiate the process of reintegration, reunification and reconnection of everything that was split, isolated and separated for the original purpose of activation of the negative state. First, it had to happen within Me. After all, while in human life, I was separated, isolated and split from My very Essence and Substance. And not only that, but I brought back with Me something that had never been part of Me — the human nature and the human physical body — and imparted it on My Original Nature. It would be impossible for anyone, anywhere and anywhen to even remotely comprehend what this most significant, most important and most vital process entailed and what the consequences, outcomes and results of it were, have been, and will be to the very eternity. Suffice it to say, that the completion of this process established a foundation for and put into motion the future reintegration, reunification and reconnection of everything and all that was split, isolated and separated from its original source. This process, which is going on right now, is the process of the gradual elimination of the negative state and of all negative aspects of the human nature.

While the process of reintegration, reunification and reconnection was going on within My original Nature, that Nature changed and, around Christmas of 1987, I became the fullness of The Lord Jesus Christ. The closer that process was coming to the state of completion, a more obvious shift in the conceptualization of femininity and masculinity in human life was occurring. Suddenly, in the so-called civilized countries, feminist movements started to appear — the purpose of which was for women to break out from their accursed position of being less important, less valuable, less needed and less deserving than men. All these movements, although their philosophy was/is based on somewhat distorted and incorrect premises, were and are the results of that which I established in the process of reintegration, reunification and reconnection of everything within Me that was originally split, isolated and separated for the purpose of experiencing human life and the pseudo-life of the negative state. Without this example, which I established by My Own Life and experiences, no such movements could ever occur.

In the process of the long history of the pseudo-creators' reign, they gradually lost any perspective for the need to have any other type of life other than the life of split, isolation, separation from and supremacy over females. Their original attitude in this respect is reflected in the lifestyle of some nations on your planet that place women in the most demeaning positions you can imagine. Such an abominable attitude is reflected in all Muslim countries, for example.

The present state of affairs in this respect is such that, on your planet, there is a tendency to manifest two trends. On one hand, more and more awareness exists that women's positions should be fully equalized with men's; on the other hand, in some of the mentioned Muslim countries you see the opposite extremist attitude and establishment. This is a reflection of the split that occurred between the pseudo-creators and the renegades.

Originally, the purpose for which the pseudo-creators initiated the discussed-here split, was for purely scientific curiosity of what would happen if you separate, split and isolate the masculine from the feminine and put the masculine into a dominant position. The question was: What would be the nature of life if it were to be established with this type of setup? You see, Peter, and all who read these words, this portion of the original question (the original question in this respect is much broader than this one), has already been answered for the pseudo-creators. Now they know, based on everything that they have seen in human life and in the entire Zone of Displacement, what it is and how it is to be in such a pseudo-life. Because of that, they are in the process of relinquishing their previous state, and they are in the process of learning a totally new attitude and perception of what women's place should be, to what that place corresponds, and what it is like in the true positive state. As a part of that learning, which happens during their residence in the New School, they are being assigned to females on planet Zero, primarily and particularly to those females who read, accept and practice the three sources of My New Revelation. They will learn from you how it is to be in the position of a human female, because contrary to all their expectations, you are not only able to read, understand, accept and practice everything contained in My New Revelation, but you are able to ask your own questions, get your own answers and to be on par with any men who have the same connection to My New Revelation and sometimes you are able to understand it even better than some men. The pseudo-creators assumed, that the way they fabricated a human female, women could never be able to reach or accomplish the same degree of knowledge, understanding and acceptance as men. Thanks to you, My

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

women, they are in the process of unlearning this falsity. By learning that, they will change their attitude toward women.

For your information, in order to help all the pseudo-creators in this important process of learning, several important pseudo-creators, representatives of each of their clan and faction, as of now, are being assigned to all females on planet Zero, connected to My New Revelation, by their prior agreement. This portion of your agreement, ladies, is being activated right now, as of this very moment and as you are reading these words. This is a very important role that you will be playing in helping in this process.

A totally different situation exists in this respect with the position of the renegades. Whereas in the case of the pseudo-creators, the sole purpose of the discussed split, separation, isolation and disconnection was to learn about their consequences, outcomes and results and to obtain a very important answer to their existential question, the renegades have no such motivation and intention. Their purpose and goal is to continue in the pseudo-life of the negative state and to dominate over all and everything without any end. And because the pseudo-life of the negative state is founded on and is possible only due to the separation, isolation, split and disunion of all discussed principles, and on the dominance of males over females, the renegades, with great ferocity and determination, want and desire nothing more than to continue in this trend. And not only that, but they have established even more restrictive and vicious demands toward their females in this respect. This attitude of the renegades is reflected on your planet in the extremist Islamic groups, such as for example, in Afghanistan, who demand that all men have beards and that all women stay home, be fully covered and don't hold any office, work, or position.

In this respect, you can say for sure that the majority of the followers of Islam, because of their pseudo-spiritual policies toward femininity and women in general, have been totally and completely subsumed by the renegades. As in the original setup by the pseudo-creators, from which they are presently receding, in the conceptualization of the renegades and their minions, women are good only for sex, procreation, raising and taking care of their children, cooking and performing the household chores.

Of course, even in your own country, the situation in this respect is far from being equalized. In valuing a woman's role and position in the workplace, for example, the tendency still exists to remunerate a woman for her work in a lesser amount than a man in the same position. As you

see, it is not as easy to get rid of many millennia of built-up and accepted habits, customs and cultural mores regarding women's position in human life as we would like. It will take time, a lot of time, to accomplish this most needed and desirable goal.

In the process of the activation of the negative state, the pseudo-creators were seeking something that would replace the important and life-giving spiritual principles rooted in their unity, oneness, integration, cohesiveness and harmony. In other words, in order to establish any life, no matter of what nature and content, some semblance and imitation of the nature of the positive state was necessary to fake. Otherwise, nothing could be established in a lasting manner. After many centuries of experimentation, they came up with the concept of 'marriages.' Marriages were invented by them in order to replace the true states, processes and conditions of unity, oneness, harmony, integration and cohesiveness of all spiritual principles. Because in any marital relationship two distinctly different individuals are involved, and because their union is accomplished solely from the position of without, no actual unification, integration and oneness takes place between them and in the state of their internals where it counts and where it can reflect the true nature of such unification and integration. What you have to realize in this respect, is that it is possible to activate the negative state only from the position of the externals. Thus, any such marital unions are also only of the external nature and therefore, they don't represent any danger to the pseudo-life of the negative state. Just the opposite: Because they reaffirm the position of the external involvement, they support, fuel and give life to the negative state. In this sense, as revealed previously in My New Revelation, any form of marriage is negative and, basically, of evil origin.

When we are talking about the state of unification, integration and oneness of all principles of femininity with all principles of masculinity and of all principles of masculinity with all principles of femininity, we are talking about the accomplishment of such states within each individual in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, and not about marriages or unification of one man with one woman or one woman with one man. Only that which happens within each of them, that's the only thing which counts and that's what is needed to be worked on and be accomplished in order to eliminate the negative state and human life with all their fake replacements — such as, for example, marriages.

That this is the issue of the process of individualization and personalization as related to one individual, is obvious from My Own

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Absolute Nature. I am not two or three or more individuals but I Am One, and the only One Absolute Individual. It is within Me that all discussed principles are in the state of their absolute unification, integration, oneness, harmony and cohesiveness. And because all individuals in being and existence, as well as potentially in all pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, reflect, in some way or other, this Nature, they are all individuals relative to My being Absolutely the only One Individual. Therefore, it is within them that the same state, process and condition needs to be established in order to approximate this Absolute Nature in their own relative condition. On such approximation their true life depends.

Due to the fact that the pseudo-creators made things wrong in this respect, under My personal guidance and leadership, they will be put in charge of making things right once again — after they acquire in the New School all necessary means for accomplishing this goal first within themselves and then subsequently dealing with all others in their former domain and with humans, bringing them to the same state of reunification, reintegration and reconnection as the pseudo-creators will have at that time. Once this is accomplished, the negative state and human life in its negative aspects will be no more. And this is all that I wanted to share with all of you today. Go and have a very pleasant day.

Peter: Thank You very much for this interesting enlightenment.

Sixty Eighth Dialog

April 15, 1999

Peter: Also today, no questions of multiversal significance or of urgent importance were asked by anyone. Neither do I have anything to ask of that nature. However, for a few days now, I have had something on my mind that is of concern to me personally. Because, in its true sense, this concern is not personal but purely spiritual, I would like to bring it to Your kind attention, if I may. But before I do that, let me ask if You have anything to offer this very foggy early morning.

The Lord Jesus Christ: It is really very foggy, Peter. And although fog of this nature is very common in coastal California at this time of the year, your state of mind, presently, in some ways, reflects this fogginess. It relates to your concerns which, in essence, to some degree, cloud your perception of the issue which has been on your mind. But before going into that, I do have something to contribute this morning. And since you are so kind to give Me the opportunity to talk first, I'll take advantage of that and will do so. Thank you for your offer.

This morning I have some good news and, from the standpoint of the situation in the negative state's domain and in human life on planet Zero, some bad news. The good news for the positive state is that we are seeing some positive movements in the clan of the pseudo-creators who belong to their far right branch. As you know, that branch has always been on the extreme side of scientific-mindedness and a very aggressive approach for the resolution of any problems they have been encountering. Because of this scientific-mindedness, their nature has been emotionally cold, detached and 'objective,' without any personal warmth, compassion, love, modesty and humbleness. In their attitude they have always been somewhat arrogant, grandiose, aggressive, proud of their accomplishments and inconsiderate of others. Because of this type of nature, these particular pseudo-creators lost any sense, and even any experience, about what it is to truly love and to be truly loved. If you take into consideration that the basic premise of their lifestyle derived from rejection of the principles of love, goodness, positive works, compassion and empathy, then it is obvious that any aspects of these principles, rooted in the nature of femininity, would be alien to them, and they wouldn't know how to express them or how to experience them. After the split, nothing remained in their experiential mode that would contain any traits of these principles. As you know, this was the only way they could be if they wanted to activate the negative state and its pseudo-life.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

This situation is still reflected in some human languages, the vocabulary of which does not contain the word 'love' in its true sense as conceptualized and understood by everyone in the positive state. Instead, in those languages there are many substitutes for the word 'love' and what it really signifies for them. However, My Divine Providence provided that the major human languages contain the word 'love,' although its meaning doesn't always match what it means and signifies in its true sense and how it is perceived, understood, conceptualized and manifested in the life of the positive state.

The discussed-here branch of the pseudo-creators was put in charge of finding effective substitutes for love and all its principles. If such substitutes were impossible to find and establish, then, in that case, they would have to come up with the interpretation of what love really means and how it should be manifested, felt and expressed in such a way that the conceptualization of their understanding of love would have nothing in common with what true love means and really is. So, in essence, in the negative state, and in the majority of human life, the concept of love, and how it is understood and expressed, very often does not have anything in common with true love. We can call it pseudo-love. The problem that the pseudo-creators faced during their effort to invent and activate the negative state was that, in order to succeed in their effort, they needed to come up with something that would have enough resemblance to true love and yet, that would have nothing of the nature of that love. The reason for such a need is in the fact that any life at all can be invented and established only on the principles of love. Love is the very foundation of any life. It is its essence, as wisdom is its substance. So, in order to establish life of the negative state, some kind of fake substitute of true love needed to be invented and put into motion. This was the most formidable task and it took many millennia to come up with something like that. It would be impossible for you to understand even remotely how all this was accomplished by the pseudo-creators.

In scientifically analyzing the concept of love and what it contains and how it is expressed and directed, the pseudo-creators came up with something that had never been in existence before that time and that no one had ever experienced in their personal life. If true love was founded on sharing with others, on utmost consideration for others; if it was directed from within to without and always, first, to others; if the meaning of love was in giving, receiving, reciprocating and wanting good, delight, pleasure and happiness for all, and in all similar factors and characteristics, then, in that case, an opposite direction of that love needed to be taken in such a manner that this love would be directed only to oneself, from without to within oneself, and to anything that can

serve one's own selfish well-being, without any consideration for others. If genuine and true love is unconditional, because it is its nature to be that way, then in the pseudo-love of the negative state, the way it was invented and established by the original pseudo-creators, this love was turned into being only conditional. By placing conditions to their love, pseudo-love actually, they effectively nullified any positive meaning of the true and genuine love. And yet, because they had to begin with the original concept of love, they were able to convince the pseudo-life of the negative state, which was being established, that it is truly and deeply loved. Here is the mystery of the life-making process. In order for anything to be and to exist, no matter in what form, shape, state, condition, or whatever, you need to convince it that it is being loved. Otherwise, no possibility would exist to sustain such life. Simply stated, anything alive needs to be loved. If it is not loved, it cannot be effective and successful in its own being and existence and thus, it can't continue in its own life.

This is how the scientific pseudo-creators were able to accomplish their goal. They proved to the newly established pseudo-life of the negative state that they loved it. By loving it, by cherishing it, by taking care of it, they succeeded in making it functional in all its numerous aspects. And because any life is a matter of internals, in order to love the negative state, it was necessary to internalize and individualize it, making it the very core of their unique individualities. The logic of this setup is in the fact that, if you make the pseudo-life of the negative state your own internals, that is to say, if you make the negative state the essence and substance of your spirit and soul, by which they will live and function, in order to sustain it within yourself, you have to direct all that love to yourself and no one else. This is how the concept of self-love, in all its negative aspects, came to its adverse fruition. And this is how life of the negative state is maintained and how it flourishes and multiplies.

The extension of this self-love, the life of the negative state, is love to this world or the externals only. The fundamental principle of self-love is to have everything only for oneself. Because of this principle, everything has to serve one's own needs only, without any regard for anyone or anything. In order to fully satisfy this principle, and in order to exclude anyone from the sphere of sharing anyone or anything, the substantial portion of that self-love is the need for power and control. If I love only myself, then everyone and everything out there has to love me, respect me, serve me, provide for me and worship me. They are here only for me and I am here only for myself. I will love them only if I have total control and power over them. Therefore, I will love them solely for my own self and not for their selves. This is how conditional love came into its

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

adverse fruition, becoming love to this world. This form of pseudo-love is founded on the premise that anything out there is my extension and process, the purpose of which is to serve me and to be under my control and power. If nothing were to exist out there, I would not be able to fulfill my self-loving needs for control, power and domination. After all, over whom or what could I have power, control and domination if nothing would exist out there? This is how love to this world or the externals was established.

Now, with these two factors in hand — self-love and love to this world — the pseudo-creators were able to subterfuge the newly established lifestyle of the negative state and all its inhabitants into believing that, first of all, they are being loved, and secondly, that their life is the only possible life that has any meaning, purpose and reality. And to give any semblance that it is a real love, they invented the concept of ‘marriage’ which gave them some idea of sharing. But look under what conditions such pseudo-unions are established. They are based on self-exclusiveness, possessiveness, enslavement, mutual dependency, a closed-in loop, jealousy, and similar negative characteristics which feed on nothing and no one else but one’s self-love and love to this world, perpetuating them ad infinitum. With such characteristics, the life of the negative state continues to stand on firm ground.

At the present time however, under the influence of the studied consequences, results and outcomes of this pseudo-life, it is becoming clear to the pseudo-creators, including also their far right branch, that such life is a self-feeding loop that leads nowhere. And not only does it lead nowhere, but it produces exactly the opposite of what the pseudo-creators wanted to prove and accomplish. Whereas the two other factions or branches of the pseudo-creators realized this fact some time ago, and because of that they decided to enter the special division of the New School for the purpose of their conversion to the positive state, the third branch only now is beginning to realize the futility of their effort and experimentation. Because of that, we are seeing the very first members of that clan coming to our side and entering the New School for the purpose of their conversion to the positive state. This is the good news for the positive state which we were talking about at the beginning of this Dialog.

As a result and consequence of their wise decision, Lyudmila encountered, for the first time, a pseudo-creator from that clan who was assigned to her in order to learn what true love is all about and how it relates to the principle of femininity. Because the issue here is love, goodness, sharing and positive works for the sake of principle, without

any other negative selfish connotation, and because they are the nature of femininity, those pseudo-creators from the mentioned far-right branch, will be assigned to you, My ladies, who are connected to My New Revelation. Besides the other pseudo-creators, these have a very special and strong need to learn about love, sharing, giving, kindness, compassion and empathy, that is to say, about femininity and all its attributes, characteristics and manifestations. Only you, ladies, can and may provide them with this experience. In encountering this particular pseudo-creator, Lyudmila rightly noticed the striking difference between him and others assigned to her from the two other branches. This pseudo-creator had an air of arrogance, roughness, sturdiness, detachment and coldness about him. But, as he is interacting with Lyudmila, he is learning fast the new ways of relating which are offered to him by her. And this is the way that all others from that branch will be coming to you for the same purpose. Because this is a learning process for all the pseudo-creators, and not only for this particular branch, whoever of you is and will be involved with them, is and will, obviously, be an integral part of the faculty that runs the mentioned special division of the New School. This is a very noble and vitally important assignment for all of you who agreed to participate in this process.

So, this is the good news. From the position of the negative state it is, of course, the bad news. The other aspects of the bad news for humans and all others in the negative state are that, as more and more pseudo-creators are converting to the positive state by the means of the New School, the renegades and all their minions are becoming more and more unmanageable, more and more evil, ruthless and determined to keep hold on their control, power and dominion. As a result of their negative and evil effort, life on this planet will become more complicated, chaotic, unbearable, evil, negative, unpredictable and intolerable. These are all signs that the negative state is in the final phase of winning on your planet. Of course, looking on this bad news from the perspective of the positive state, for everyone in it, it is good news, because it accelerates the time when the negative state, with all its atrocities and abominations, will be eternally eliminated and the life of the positive state, in its fullness and completeness, will come to its most desirable fruition. And this is all, Peter, that I wanted to contribute for your information today. You may now formulate your concerns. I know what they are and how they came about but it would be a good idea if you were to state them in your own words.

Peter: Thank You very much for Your contribution and enlightenment. And I truly appreciate that You bear with my foolish concerns. As You know so well, my concerns are regarding the literal sense of the Bible,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

and especially with Your own literal statements as recorded in the four Gospels (Matthew, Mark, Luke and John), as well as in the Apocalypse. I am very well aware that in all books of Your New Revelation, much was said and explained about the reasons why such negative language was utilized and why it was necessary to talk the way You did. However, it seems to me that I have not been entirely successful in getting rid of the feelings that something is wrong about the way I understand and convey things to others and to myself about them. As you know, I was raised in a very conservative, evangelical Baptist environment. In that environment I was fed with mother's milk, so-to-speak, that whatever was written in the Bible, in its very literal sense, has an eternal, unchangeable and immutable validity, and anyone who says anything contrary to this fact commits unpardonable sin and deserves eternal punishment in the lowest of the lowest Hells. Two problems with this situation exist: One, as You know, in my foolish youth, I was preaching exactly the same things throughout the Baptist churches in the region where I was born. So, I am guilty of the same spiritual crime. Second, and the most important one: Anything that is conveyed to us in Your New Revelation is in total and complete contradiction to everything, or almost everything, that is contained in the Christian Bible, or in any other so-called holy books. If I were a follower of Islam, their fanatics would probably put out a contract for a million dollars on my life as they did to the author of ***Satanic Verses***. Of course, Christian fanatics would probably do the same to me as they do with doctors who perform abortions. I am surprised that no one has yet assassinated me. Any comments about these concerns of mine? Not that I am afraid to be assassinated. I wouldn't be the first one or probably the last, but I am more afraid when coming to the spiritual world, that I will face this awful dilemma of being in the position of eternal punishment for everything that I have done and for what I have so far transmitted in Your Name. Whew, this was a long sentence. Please forgive me.

The Lord Jesus Christ: I forgive you gladly. I perfectly understand your predicament and position, Peter. As you recall, during last night's sleep you had very troubling and disturbing dreams, in which you found yourself constantly hiding from and avoiding some vague, non-identifiable dangers. You couldn't put your finger on what it was that you were hiding from and avoiding. Those dreams reflected your anxieties and fears about this issue. Yes, much was said and revealed in My New Revelation about why it was necessary for Me to talk, and for My disciples to write, the way it was recorded in the Bible and the way it was done at that time. For the peace of your mind, let us reiterate certain aspects of this anxiety-provoking 'why.'

Consider the quality, the state, the nature and the condition of that time as compared to this time and to various times, not only in the history of humanity on planet Zero, and not only in the history of the entire Zone of Displacement, but also in the history of the entire positive state, as well as, most importantly, in the history of My Own function, manifestation and creative efforts. Let us assume for a moment that whatever was written in the Bible and in the other so-called holy books, has absolute, eternal, immutable, unchangeable and non-modifiable validity beyond and above which nothing more could or may be experienced or explained or revealed. If this situation were to be true, then what would happen? Everyone, everywhere and everywhen would be locked-in forever to stay in the same condition, state, situation and process as they were at the time of such statements and revelations. No progress, no development, no changes and no nothing could ever be possible or feasible. (I am aware that English grammar doesn't tolerate two negatives, in this case, 'no nothing.' But I want to leave it as it is for emphasis). However, as you know, nothing is the same as it was at that time, or as it was at Swedenborg's time, or any other times, or as it is at the very present time, or as it will be in the future time.

If you take into consideration the nature of each particular time, you can function, you can talk about and reveal things only from the position of the nature and requirements of each particular time. During My incarnation on planet Zero, the situation was such in the entire being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, that, under their current spiritual development and progression, or regression in the negative state, respectively, existing at that time, no other mode of conveyance of spiritual or any other ideas was not only not available but was not conceivable or needed. No one would understand any other language. It is not necessary to go into any other aspects of these issues because they were extensively discussed on several occasions in previous portions of My New Revelation. Here, I would only like to again and again emphasize that, due to the human nature, and the nature of everyone in the negative state, everything has a tendency to be perceived in a stagnant, immutable and unchangeable state. Don't forget please, that all those words were said by Me at that time, as recorded by My disciples. If I say something, humans perceive it as something that has an eternal validity because I am eternally the same and unchangeable. Therefore, My Words must have the same meaning and they cannot ever be changed in the same way as I am unable to change in My Nature or unable to change My Mind. As you see from this example, the problem here is not in what I said at that time, but how My Nature is being conceptualized, understood and portrayed.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

The totally false and distorted perception, understanding and acceptance of My Nature, or Who I truly Am, leads to the distortions, falsification, misunderstanding and misinterpretation of everything I said, or revealed or what was said and revealed in My Name. The obvious contradiction of this situation is that, if God-Me is considered to be the only Creator who gives impetus to any progress, evolution, revolution, changes, or whatever, then how, ever, can such things happen if I Myself never change or progress in an absolute sense? Does it make any sense to consider things otherwise? Think about it, Peter, and you will see the beautiful logic in the need to always come up with something new, leaving behind everything that was new and proper at that time, or at each particular time, but which is now old and worn out, because it served its purpose and fulfilled its needs but which would be totally improper, regressive and destructive at each new and different time. I'll let you go now so that you can meditate on this. Have a nice day and meditation during the rest of this day.

Peter: Thank You very much for all that You conveyed to us and for Your understanding.

Sixty Ninth Dialog

April 17, 1999

Peter: From our conversations yesterday and today, it is obvious to me that the topic which we addressed in the Sixty Eighth Dialog needs to be further discussed and clarified. Am I right?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, you are right. It is not by coincidence that your concerns, expressed in that Dialog, have been intensified at this particular time. The present spiritual situation and climate are such that they require addressing certain ideas and concepts that have relevance to the currently ongoing shift. The nature of this shift requires redefinition of the meaning of some words, concepts and ideas that traditionally, the way you and everyone else have been understanding and conceptualizing them, mean and contain something entirely different than what you are used to.

However, before going into that, let us take up something else first. It will lead us directly into the presently addressed issue. Take for example, your statement in the mentioned Dialog that you committed a spiritual crime by preaching and teaching, in your teens, distortions and falsities in My Name. If you carefully analyze the spiritual situation and climate that existed at that time (almost 50 years ago), did you have any realization at all that any other possible interpretation and understanding of the Biblical statements existed than that with which you were presented and which others taught you during those years? You had no other ideas in your mind. You took it on face value that only one interpretation and understanding — the literal one — was possible and feasible. Nothing else was available to you at that time. So, in view of these facts, what kind of crime were you committing at that time? You did what you thought was right, proper and truthful. Can you be judged, adjudicated and condemned for something about which you had absolutely no idea that it was wrong, distorted or even outrightly false?

It would be a totally different story if you were to fully and completely identify yourself with those distortions and falsities to such an extent that they would be internalized by you and that upon your learning that there is a totally different meaning, or that there are many different meanings, to all those Biblical statements than what you thought, and because of your identification with and internalization of the literal sense only, you would reject them as inappropriate, untrue and false. In that case, failing to amend your ways and changing your attitude and

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

understanding, you would condemn yourself to some form of hellish punishment.

Now, why do I bring this to your attention at this time? First of all, we need to clarify the issue of condemnation and judgment. If someone labors under the impression that his/her understanding of something is right, proper and correct, and if there is no other possibility or availability of any other ways to understand it or conceptualize it, then such an individual cannot be judged or condemned for it. However, if upon presentation of a different, more appropriate understanding of the same thing offered to him/her and he/she, based on the new available information, accepts it and consequently rejects his/her previous view and understanding, then that individual establishes a progressive mode of his/her life and reflects the reality of the life in the positive state. On the other hand, should he/she reject this new information and cling to his/her old mode of understanding and conceptualization, in that case he/she sets himself/herself up for judgment and condemnation.

However, there is another aspect to this issue. Any current understanding and conceptualization of any concepts, ideas, words, lifestyle or whatever you have, provided that nothing else was available or offered at that particular time, signifies only one thing: That the currently existing spiritual situation and climate require and are capable of having only this type of understanding and conceptualization and no other. Anything more or different, under those kinds of spiritual conditions, would be incongruent to them. And not only that, but it would be dangerous to everyone's spiritual health.

Based on these factors, it is obvious that each particular time in the history of My Creation and pseudo-creation has its own understanding of anything at all, congruent to the nature, needs and the level of the current spiritual awareness that it has. As time goes by, and as different aspects of My Nature are being conveyed to the rest of all sentient entities, a different meaning and understanding of the same concepts, ideas, words or whatever you have, are triggered and placed into their minds for the purpose of choices that they have to make: Either to transcend their understanding, conceptualization and, based on them, their lifestyle, concepts, ideas, words and everything else previously held by them, or to reject them and keep clinging to the old ones which outlived their purpose and exhausted their usefulness. If the choice is for their transcendence, then a new lifestyle is established which reflects the nature of the positive state in its continuous progressive, onward movement and mode. However, if the choice is to reject them and instead to cling to the old ones, then the reaffirmation of the lifestyle of the

negative state and human life occurs, giving them a new surge of energy and impetus to continue in their stagnant and unproductive nature.

Very often, if not always, the previously held understanding and conceptualization of concepts, ideas, words or whatever you have, contradict their incoming new and different understanding and conceptualization. This is the reason why it was stated so many times in My New Revelation that what was proper, right and correct yesterday or before, might not be so today; and what is proper, correct and right today might not be so tomorrow. A tendency exists on your part to forget this important statement and reminder and for that reason, you often question the validity either of that which was stated during the previous times or of that which is being offered to you at this time. You may see it as a contradiction instead of as a transcendence of something which was needed and proper at that time but which is no longer in that position at this time. Or your interpretation of certain events or phenomena at that time, which were proper and needed to be understood exactly the way you interpreted them, have a totally different meaning and interpretation at this time.

Don't forget one crucial and important thing in this respect. When you were in the role of My agents on planet Zero, your understanding and interpretation of all things, events and phenomena were, in most instances, from the position of the negative state and your specific human life, as well as from the level of your own personalized and individualized needs congruent to that role. As you are being placed in the midst of the positive state, becoming My true representatives, your spiritual awareness of all and everything is being shifted to a totally different level. That level requires triggering of a new, higher, more appropriate understanding and conceptualization of everything that you have so far known and understood. Because of that, a different meaning, more congruent to the current spiritual condition and climate, is being offered to you and brought to your attention. By this factor, you are being put in a condition to make an important choice of your life — to transcend the old meaning and accept the new one or to reject it and cling to the old one. Either choice will result in its own consequences.

Let Me give you a few examples. At the time when you were writing **Messages from Within**, Peter, a certain very rare astronomical phenomenon was taking place. During that time, that phenomenon repeated itself three times. Obviously, with such a rare phenomenon some feasible and understandable interpretation was needed to be made. As you know, from your prior astrological studies and knowledge, in the far past that phenomenon was equated with My birth on planet Zero.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

This is how the wise men of the East, based on their astrological studies, determined that an important King was being born. So, naturally, you, Peter, assumed that because of that important factor, the same phenomenon occurring at the time of your writing of the mentioned book, would result in a **physical** birth of three important people who will be instrumental in changing human life from its negative connotation to a positive one.

The spiritual situation on planet Zero and elsewhere at that time was such that it didn't allow any other interpretation and understanding of that phenomenon than what you thought or understood about it. Your astrological training was somewhat clouded the way you looked at it and the way you interpreted it. However, this was what was needed at that time because neither you nor everyone else anywhere was ready to know more about it or to perceive it at a higher spiritual level. So, because of that, it was permitted for you, for the time being, to conceptualize that phenomenon the way it is described in ***Messages from Within***. However, the presently existing level of your spiritual awareness, as well as everyone else's who reads these words, requires a transcendence of how the discussed phenomenon should be understood and interpreted. At that time, it was still taken much too literally and not spiritually.

Was anyone and/or anything born during the occurrence of that phenomenon (the precise, unusual and very rare conjunction of Jupiter and Saturn which takes place once in several thousand years in that kind of configuration)? Yes, there were. But not necessarily on planet Zero. Two events occurred during that time. Three sentient entities were born in other dimensions whose births were initiated from something that was going on in My Nature as I was in the final phase of completion of the acquirement of My New Nature. Because the major catalyst of this acquirement was My former Human Nature, the nature of the mentioned three sentient entities was formed in such a manner that it would reflect the process of changes in My Nature and, at the same time, that it would reflect the need to set up a very specific condition for the future salvation of humans on planet Zero and for the future elimination of the negative state.

Now, in your conceptualization and understanding of that phenomenon, because, by your intuition, Peter, you correctly perceived that somehow it had a very important relevance to human life, you concluded that those beings would be physically born on planet Zero as typical humans; while the reality of that situation now indicates that the births occurred somewhere else but with a special important relevance to the human destiny. Looking at that event from this kind of perspective, was your

understanding and interpretation of it incorrect, Peter? Yes and no. Yes, it was incorrect because, in actuality, no such physical humans were born. No, it was correct because someone was born with a direct relevance to the human destiny. However, the spiritual level of that time was such that it required some degree of the literal interpretation to occur because not all spiritual factors were in place that would allow any other, more appropriate one to be revealed or to have.

However, the most important aspects of this phenomenon were not reflected in the birth of the mentioned three individuals but in the birth of three spiritual ideas that were about to be released to the entirety of My Creation and to the pseudo-creation. These ideas relate directly to Me and My Nature. After all, even from a typical astrological standpoint, which you, Peter, correctly rejected from your life, the discussed phenomenon related somehow directly to Me. Therefore, its major interpretation and understanding should have relevance only to Me. But because whatever happens in Me in an absolute sense has, in some way or other, an impact on everyone and everything else, no matter where or when, it also produces consequent events in all relatives in their own relative conditions. So, if some ideas are being born in or being released from My Absolute Nature, then they always result in the birth of someone and/or something new that had not been in being and existence before. Hence, the birth of the three mentioned individuals.

What were the important three ideas that were being born and/or released at that time? The first idea was that My Nature is in the process of being changed in an absolute sense, resulting in a totally New Nature that had not been conceivable at any time before. The second idea was that, as a result of My New Nature, a new creation is being created that will fully reflect and contain in its relative condition My Absolutely New Absolute Nature. And the third idea being revealed was that the negative state and human life in its negative state are not forever and that everyone participating in those two forms of life are in them on a voluntary basis and that therefore, everyone, no matter who, will be saved and returned to the positive state. The point to realize here is that no one had known until that time that the negative state was not forever, and that everyone in it would be saved and returned to the positive state. The logic of that incorrect perception was in the fact that if the negative state has to stay forever then, obviously, everyone else, situated in that pseudo-life, has to stay in it forever likewise.

To make such an important revelation before that time and to tell everyone about these three ideas, before the actual completion of all proper spiritual factors, and before My New Nature was established,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

would not be feasible or appropriate because no one could understand what I was talking about. Taking into consideration everyone's spiritual state and condition at that time, which derived from My Old Nature, such revelation would be rejected, thus endangering everyone's spiritual life. Before the full understanding and impact of those three ideas could reach everyone's mind, those minds needed to be transformed and brought into full alignment with My New Nature. How could such things have been done if My New Nature had not yet been fully established? Only at this time, during the currently ongoing shift, the full revelation about these facts could be finally revealed and explained.

Let us take another example for the need to have a different understanding of some words, ideas and concepts as congruent to different times and spiritual conditions and requirements. Let us discuss two such concepts — 'father/mother' and 'marriages.' How do you conceptualize and understand the word 'father' for example? In your human life, you equate it, first of all, with a typical masculine gender. You have no other view and understanding than that your father is a male. Why is it so? And this bring us to the topics discussed in the Sixty Eighth Dialog. As you remember, in order to activate the negative state, it was necessary to split feminine from masculine and masculine from feminine; or, in other words, love from wisdom, wisdom from love; good from truth and truth from good; and positive works from faith and faith from positive works. Once this impossible feat was accomplished, based on that pseudo-principle, human life was fabricated. So, how can you come to this world, into human life, in order to be able to survive here? By splitting yourself from your femininity — if you are born as a male; or from your masculinity — if you are born as a female (of course, by your own choice and for some of your own important spiritual reasons why you chose to be born as a male or as a female).

In view of these conditions, you see and perceive your father as a male and your mother as a female, and yourself personally as a female if you are a woman or as a male if you are a man. Somehow, during your physical birth, you split yourself from your own counterpart. Because of this split, you are unable to conceptualize your gender in any other way. In My own particular case, because no other possible way existed to enter human life by the means of the physical birth but only through this split, I had to split Myself from My Essence, which was of the Absolute Feminine Nature, and to appear on planet Zero as a Human Male. Because of that split and separation from My Essence, I had no recourse but to relate to It as to Someone Who Was separated from Me — which

was the case until that split and separation were eliminated and I, as a Human Male, was reintegrated, reunited and reconnected to My Essence.

At that time, because of the existing spiritual situation everywhere, I called that Essence 'Father.' But what does the word 'Father' in My conceptualization really mean? The first impression that you all had was that My Father was a Man, of masculine gender. Because of the mentioned split and separation, no other perception and understanding of the word "Father" was available to anyone anywhere. But does the word 'Father,' in its true essence and substance, as well as the word 'mother,' in its true essence and substance, really mean or are equated with the masculine or feminine gender, respectively? From the observable external position, because to those terms are assigned certain gender types of characteristics, your expectations and habits in this respect put you in no other position but to consider them in such terms. Why would I call My Essence 'Father,' from which I split and separated in order to enter human life, if I took a male form while on planet Zero, and which Essence is basically equated with the feminine principle? Because in My conceptualization of the concept 'Father,' nothing is contained related to any specific gender characteristics on one hand and, on the other hand, at that time, under those spiritual conditions, that word signified the Absolute Good which takes care of the life of everyone everywhere and which gives birth to Creation. In other words, I descended from My Good, or from the goodness of My heart, and I entered human life in order to establish in humans a condition which would enable them to be saved from their human life. Thus, I separated from My Good-Love and brought the Truth to the place where no truth existed any longer. Because this Truth derives from the masculine aspects of My Nature, logically, I had to appear as a human male in order to reflect this condition.

Another reason for this necessary choice was that only Truth is able to combat evils and falsities. Good-Love does not combat anyone or anything. It accepts things as they are. If I were to appear as a female, because such appearance would be from the feminine aspects of My Nature, I would simply accept things in human life, and in the negative state in general, as they were, without any attempt to change anything. In that case, the negative state and human life would have to stay forever and no possibility would exist for anyone in the positive state to establish their life in its fullness and completeness.

Thus, in My conceptualization of the word 'Father,' its meaning relates to the factor of parenthood and not to something which is of purely masculine principle. As you know, the term 'parenthood' contains equally

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

both feminine and masculine principles, or fatherhood and motherhood. However, in order to accommodate to the then existing spiritual situation, and to yield to the lifestyle of humans and all others in the negative state, founded on the split and separation of those two principles, and because of the familiarity which those two concepts provided for them, I had no recourse but to speak from that particular position. If I were to speak in terms that would really reflect their true and genuine meaning, they would not be able to understand them and, because of that, they would reject anything I was saying to them. In that case they would eternally block themselves from being saved. Can you imagine the consequences of that if this were to be the case?

However, in the process of spiritual development and progression, as one step, epoch, condition, state and time succeeds another, gradually and slowly, you upgrade and update the conceptualization and understanding of all such terms, bringing them closer and closer to their true and multiple meaning. It is not that much that their meaning wasn't true before, as that they had multiple meanings. In the various spiritual conditions, only those meanings are triggered which are congruent to the nature and needs of each particular spiritual condition and state.

At this time, during the current spiritual condition, and during the currently ongoing shift, the new meanings of all such terms are being triggered and made available to you. One of the most important functions of these Dialogs, is to explain these facts and give you an opportunity to familiarize yourself with this new meaning. So, don't be surprised if whatever is being conveyed to you in these Dialogs will refute and replace completely your former understanding and application of all such terms, concepts, ideas and words. This is an integral part of your spiritual training, growth and progression in your new role as My true representatives.

Now, from what I said so far, it is obvious that I and My so-called Father are not two, or three or more persons, but One and the only One. The Christian conceptualization of My True Nature, as well as some other religions, stems from an external observation of the setup of human lifestyle. It is a form of projection on their part. If human males and females, and their children, are two or three or several, and if they are separated and isolated from each other, and if they are distinctly different individuals, then the nature of God must have the same setup. In that case, there is a Father-God, in His masculine, He-man appearance, Mother-God in Her feminine, She-woman appearance, and possibly there are other gods representing some other aspects of being and existence. While the fact is that all those so-called gods are various

aspects and characteristics of the same Absolutely One Absolute and the Only One Individual. Humans improperly derive the understanding of such concepts from their own false and temporary condition — the condition of the split and separation from their own masculinity or femininity, respectively.

And yet, some of you, who have an access to the state of your internals and thus, to the other dimensions, are sometimes confused to see or hear someone there who claims to be you in either feminine aspects or masculine aspects or both. This is a reflection of your separation and isolation from them which enabled you to enter your human life on planet Zero. It is as if you left behind your femininity if you are a male or your masculinity if you are a female. But does it mean that you are two or more individuals at the same time and not one and the same? Of course, it does not. After all, your nature, in its original and genuine state, and in its relative condition, reflects My Absolute Nature which is One and Indivisible.

Due to the fact of your isolation and separation from the state of your own integration, unity and oneness, you experience a constant desire to reunite, reconnect and integrate yourself with your wholeness and completeness. This desire is reflected in your need to be with someone who is of the opposite gender. They remind you of your previous state and condition in which you were before your incarnation on planet Zero.

This is how the concept of marriages came into its own human life. Noticing the need for this reintegration, reunification and reconnection with their original nature, the pseudo-creators came up with the replacement of this need in the form of external types of marriages in which a male is united to a female and a female to a male. However, even in this condition, its temporality and transience is obvious from the fact that it is bound only ‘until death do us part.’ Do you see the true meaning of such unions from this statement? This is the reason why I said during My life on planet Zero that in the heavens they neither marry nor are given into marriages but are as My angels. What is it to be like My angels? It is to be in the state of unification, integration and oneness of all feminine and masculine principles in each one individual. In that sense, you can say in your own familiar-to-you words that they internally and individually are married within themselves.

However, the word ‘marriage,’ from the position of the nature of the current spiritual state and development, which transcends any previous ones, is no longer tenable or suitable to use for the purpose of describing such unification, integration and oneness. It still gives you the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

impression that there are, somewhere out there, two individuals, who will merge into one individual, and in the process, they will lose their unique individualities and their unique natures. Such a case is impossible to envision. It would equal the destruction of both of them, leading to the impossible scenario of cessation of the unique life which I Personally imparted on them. To do that, in some sense, would mean that I relinquished My own life which I placed in those two individuals.

Until now, for the purpose of giving you some comfortable and familiar grounds in this respect, such terms were proper to use in order to implant into you some ideas of the concepts of unification, integration and oneness and what they mean and signify. The word and the state of 'marriage' served that purpose well. Therefore, it was permitted to be used and even required up to this point. This is the reason why it was also used in the previous books of My New Revelation.

However, these are entirely different times. We are far away from all other times and we are in a totally different mode and style of life. In your particular cases, as My true representatives, you are being trained to approach all spiritual concepts, words, ideas and your life in general in a way more congruent with the true spiritual positive state's way. Therefore, if you hear in your state of inwardness something like, 'beyond time, beyond space, the promise was made,' it signifies the promise of freeing you from the state and condition of your current separation, isolation and split from your femininity or masculinity, respectively, and reintegrating, reunifying and reconnecting you in such a way as it is understood, conceptualized and is, in the positive state; and the way it is in My Own New Nature.

Well, I believe we should finish for today. There is enough food for thought for all of you contained in this Dialog and therefore, the suggestion is to close for now. Go into the sun and have a healing time for your physical pains, Peter.

Peter: Thank You very much. I'll take Your timely advice.

Seventieth Dialog

April 19, 1999

Peter: Yesterday I received two questions from Europe, two questions from the East Coast of the USA and one question from Australia. Before going into formulating those questions, as usual, I am asking if You have anything to contribute or add or elaborate upon this morning.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for asking Me to talk first. I do have some reminders to bring to your attention today. The first reminder relates to the nature of the negative state. If you carefully analyze the understanding of the nature of the negative state the way it is conceptualized by Christians and some others, and the way it is portrayed in their so-called holy books — the Bible, for example — it is obvious that in their understanding, the negative state is here to stay forever. Even if they claim that after the final Last Judgment, when the old Heaven and the old Earth will be no more, and instead the New Heaven and the New Earth will be created by Me, illogically and inappropriately, they retain everyone who was a sinner (and who didn't amend his/her ways, by acknowledging Me and by accepting the lifestyle and behavior exactly the way they prescribed it in accordance with their own ideas of how a man/woman of God should behave, act and be, and in what manner he/she should worship Me) in the Hells to be tortured there to eternity. If someone has to be tortured to eternity in some kind of hell, it means that the Hells, the very embodiment of the negative state, have to be retained likewise to eternity. Thus, logically speaking, the negative state has to stay to eternity.

What kind of New Heaven and New Earth, or new Creation would it be if this assumption were true? Tell Me, what would be the difference between the old ways and the new ways, respectively? In essence, none! It would be a futile waste of creative energies and My Personal endeavors. Nothing would be different because the negative state would still be plaguing the minds of everyone in the positive state by the factor of awareness that some entirely different state continues to be and to exist even now in the condition of a lockup without any possibility of having any influence and impact on the rest of Creation. So, the only difference between the old ways and the new ones would be in the fact of everyone in the negative state being locked up and their inaccessibility to anyone who is not in the Hells, so that they couldn't exert any influence on those in the positive state.

This false belief and conceptualization of the nature and destiny of the negative state stems from an incorrect perception of the nature and origin

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

of the negative state. Philosophically speaking, if we admit that the negative state is here to stay forever, to eternity, then we also have to admit that there is a different absolute power in being and existence, different from the power of the absolute positive state. In other words, there is someone out there who has the same potential powers as I do, or who is capable of maintaining the negative state to eternity. Such an ability assumes potential absoluteness. In a true logical construct, admission of two absolute powers — and we are repeating this — is mutually exclusive. In that case these two powers would be only relative to each other. Again, by the logic of such a conclusion, in that case also, the positive state would be relative in the same way as the negative state is. Thus, both conditions would be only temporary, and at some point in time and non-time, everything and everyone would cease to exist to eternity. No Creation, and no nothing (retain two negatives, please!) would remain in their being and existence. Life, as you know it and as you don't know it, would be no more, anywhere and anywhen.

So, it is necessary to realize once and for all that the negative state has never had any true life in itself and by itself and therefore, it cannot stay forever, to eternity. Only something or someone who derives from the Absolute State which is in Itself and by Itself — Me, may and will stay to eternity. The reason why the negative state doesn't have this prerogative, is because, after all, what is the negative state or what is its true nature? The negative state and its nature is a perversion, distortion, mutilation, falsification and, as you, Peter, like to say it, a screw up of the nature of the positive state. Its pseudo-life derives from the true life of the positive state. For that reason, if no life of the positive state were to exist, so the pseudo-life of the negative state would not exist.

In this sense, the elimination of the negative state will not be by the process of its total destruction in some kind of apocalyptic fireball, or whatever, as everyone expects, but by making things right. In other words, whatever was perverted, mutilated, distorted and falsified, will be put back in the state and condition in which it used to be before its current adverse condition and state was activated. However, because by the process of the negative state's pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, new experiences about life other than life of the positive state will be acquired, and because by the nature of those experiences, everyone in the positive state will have a totally different perspective on what life is all about, and because everyone in the negative state by the token of the same experience, experiences being in the negative state, will likewise have a totally different understanding about any life, even though they will return to their previous condition; neither those in the positive nor anyone returning to it, will be the same. They all will be utterly new and different. And this is, in essence, what is meant by creating the New

Heaven and the New Earth. In such a New Creation nothing can be retained of the old. Otherwise it would not be new. For that reason, the continuation of the negative state, or the Hells, even after this New Creation is established, would nullify any possibility of anything new being able to take hold.

My other two comments that I would like to make this morning, relate to your yesterday's discussion with Lyudmila and Tom Oudal who were visiting you in Santa Barbara. Both related to the issue of the pseudo-creators. In one case, the issue was their conversion to the positive state; in the other case, their tactics in handling the situation with the renegades.

In the first instance, the question was, what would happen if all pseudo-creators were to convert to the positive state before the total pseudo-winning of the negative state on planet Zero? It was correctly concluded by you that, in that case, the pseudo-creators would be able to convey the genesis or the process of activation of the negative state to everyone's mind from the position of the positive state. As in the movies or on a television screen, they would be able to illustrate the entire process and outcome of this activation in such a manner so that everyone participating in watching it would acquire the full necessary knowledge about all aspects of that process. In some ways, this is a preferable depiction of the entire process of activation of the negative state than if it were to be done from the position of the negative state itself. In this position, it would be biased toward itself and it couldn't be objective in its depiction. In that case, the danger of acquiring inappropriate and incorrect knowledge about the entire process of activation of the negative state could occur.

So, as you see from this particular scenario, not only would it be advantageous if all the pseudo-creators were to convert to the positive state before the pseudo-winning of the negative state on planet Zero, but it would also provide a total and complete adherence to the requirement of and the need to illustrate the process of activation of the negative state from A to Z, so-to-speak, without any bias.

In the second instance, the tactics the pseudo-creators used against the renegades is faulty in the sense that the pseudo-creators forgot that the renegades were masters of the military approach toward resolution of their problems. On the other hand, the pseudo-creators are not. They are scientists and theoreticians who don't possess the same degree of abilities in military matters that the renegades do. For that reason, the military action they took against the renegades, as depicted in NATO's war against Yugoslavia, is not working the way they expected. Not only is it not working that way, but, in some degree, it is helping the Yugoslavs to

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

accomplish their goals related to the abomination of ethnic cleansing. As you know, the population of Kosovo, by the process of that war, is being expelled from their land. And this is what the Yugoslav Serbs wanted anyway.

At the present time, the pseudo-creators, their far right branch, have recognized their mistake in this respect, and as they informed you, they are in the process of brainstorming about finding a different, more effective way to defeat the renegades. After all, they do have a 20 percent advantage over the renegades who function on the level of 80 percent of the abilities that the pseudo-creators possess. So, wait and see what they will come up with in this respect. And this is all I wanted to contribute today, Peter. You may now go ahead and ask the questions on behalf of the inquirers.

Peter: The first question relates to something You conveyed to Your disciples during Your physical stay on planet Zero. It is recorded in the entire Chapter 24 in Matthew. Part of that chapter (verses 29-31) was explained in the Big Book, in its fourth chapter. However, the question is about the meaning of verses 4 through 28, and particularly verses 15 through 22.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You have to look at the content of that chapter from what preceded the entire conversation recorded in it. Thus, it is verses 1 to 3 in Chapter 24 that set up a condition for that conversation to occur. Under what circumstances did I say what I said at that time? My disciples were showing Me the buildings of the temple (verse 1). And as they were doing that, I said to them, *‘Do you not see all these things? Assuredly, I say to you, not one stone shall be left here upon another, that shall not be thrown down.’* (verse 2). Later on, My disciples came to Me privately and asked Me, *‘Tell us, when will these things be? And what will be the sign of Your coming, and of the end of the age?’* (verse 3). Without proper interpretation and understanding of these three verses, which set up a proper condition for what followed, as described in the rest of that chapter, nothing could be explained regarding anything else contained in that chapter.

First of all, you have to look at the location of that temple. As you know, it was located in Jerusalem, in the country of Judea. Secondly, you have to understand to what the city of Jerusalem, Judea and the temple spiritually correspond and signify. All these things, as well as the entire content of Chapter 24 in Matthew, have a deeper spiritual meaning. Not all aspects of that meaning could be revealed or explained to you at this time. They would be beyond your human mind’s ability to grasp them. However, there are three aspects that are possible to reveal about this

issue. The first aspect relates to the destiny of Jerusalem, Judea, the temple and Jewish people in general, and to their own particular spiritual correspondence and what kind of role they played in relationship to Me personally and to the rest of humanity. The second aspect relates to the events which happened a few centuries ago (in your physical time) in the Intermediate World of Spirits and not on planet Zero. And the third aspect relates to the complete pseudo-winning of the negative state on planet Zero — as one possible scenario.

The Jewish nation, in general, represents, in this particular connotation, as related solely to the content of Chapter 24 in Matthew, the state of extreme literalization, externalization, distortions and falsifications of all spiritual concepts, ideas, principles and laws and how they related to God-Me. Because of this kind of representation, they chose to also represent the entire humanity, in its own tendency to do exactly the same. Due to this factor, it was necessary to set up a condition which would enable a literal and factual illustration of all the consequences, results and outcomes of such a representation and lifestyle. Thus, it was necessary to illustrate it in the very external events on planet Zero and on the destiny of the Jewish nation. Their temple, in this particular connotation, represented this false, distorted, inappropriate and improper worship and conceptualization of Me and My True Nature. Jerusalem represented, in general, the pseudo-spirituality which originated in the externals and from false conceptualization and understanding of My True Nature. And the Jewish nation represented the false positive state which replaced the true positive state. Because of this setup and because of the choice to represent all this, the Jewish nation also had to physically and literally reject Me as the only true God and their true Messiah. This rejection is reflected in their shout, '*His — **My** — blood be on us and on our children*' (Matthew 27:25).

Now, by this literal statement, the Jewish nation brought upon itself literally most everything which was described in Chapter 24 in Matthew — retribution and punishment. In reality, in the true reality, it all happened to them exactly the way it is depicted in that chapter. Following My departure from your planet, a few decades later, the temple, Jerusalem and everything in it, was totally destroyed and made uninhabitable. And its inhabitants were banished from their country. And because the Jewish nation, in this particular connotation, represents the destiny of the entire humanity, the content of that chapter fully applies to everything that has been happening in the history of planet Zero. Thus, you have on your planet nothing but wars, pestilence, earthquakes, famines, extreme climatic conditions and similar devastating events which have been plaguing humanity for many, many centuries. At the same time, you have been witnessing the appearance of many false

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

prophets, false christs and similar individuals who brought you nothing but further distortions and falsities in the name of God or in My Name. By doing that, and by accepting their falsities and distortions as true and genuine, coming from Me, humankind only reinforces the need to continue in the same mode of life, bringing upon itself more devastating adverse events as described in that chapter. This is how the negative state is pseudo-winning on your planet.

However, let Me tell you something about the content of that chapter. Although it is true what I have just said about it as related to the destiny of humanity on planet Zero, in reality, in the true reality, I was talking about the second aspect of its meaning — the events that happened in the Intermediate World or World of Spirits. Every single word of that chapter relates to nothing but what was about to happen in that world. It was Swedenborg who correctly described the nature of that world and how everything foretold about it, in Chapter 24 in Matthew, came true. As you remember from his description, as well as from some statements in My New Revelation, for many centuries, humans, following their departure from planet Zero, were allowed to form their own countries, cities, societies and religions in the same manner as they did while they lived on this planet. However, in that world, because they no longer were restricted by a typical limitation of human nature, they were able to further distort, falsify, pervert and mutilate spiritual concepts, and how they perceived and understood My Nature to unimaginable-to-your-human-mind proportions. Because of that, they brought upon themselves everything described in Chapter 24 of Matthew. Every single word of that chapter was fulfilled at that time and in that world. So, in this particular sense, at this level of understanding, whatever is contained in that chapter has very little relevance to the present time.

What you have to understand about their situation in the World of Spirits, is that by the establishment of such a lifestyle as described above and in Swedenborg's writings, in that World, the negative state completely and totally won within the human enclaves. In other words, in that World, at that time, the negative state exhausted its usefulness and served its purpose and therefore, it needed to face its Last Judgment. The result of that Last Judgment, as you remember from the previous portions of My New Revelation, was abolishment of the typical human era or the human age. This is the reason why I was asked by My disciples *'... what will be the sign of Your coming, and of the end of the age?'* Notice please, it was not the end of the world or everything else but only of one specific age. In our case, the human age in that world. At the same time, the only way this particular Last Judgment could be executed was by the process of My Second Coming into that particular world. So, as you see from these events, in that world both the abolishment of the negative state,

represented by the human age or era, as well as the Last Judgment and My Second Coming had taken place at that time. In your world, on planet Zero, because we are talking here about the ending of the age, and nothing else, that event was manifested in the ending of the Dark Ages which dominated the history of humanity for many centuries, in the same manner as the human era was dominating the World of Spirits for their own many centuries (in your conceptualization of time). Following that, in your world, on planet Zero, the age of the so-called enlightenment and Renaissance had begun.

So, whatever was said in prophet Daniel (Daniel 11:31; 12:11) about *'abomination of desolation'* (Matthew 24:15) refers to the complete and total winning of the negative state in the Intermediate World or the World of Spirits as it had been fulfilled at that time. From your conceptualization of time, the Last Judgment and cleaning that World from all consequences of abomination of desolation — meaning from all evils, falsities, distortions, mutilations, perversions and everything else of the nature of the negative state and of human nature — has taken over 250 years and was completed at the time of the writing of your ***Messages from Within***, Peter.

Only one more thing can be clarified in the form of a reminder. It relates to the term *'great tribulation.'* (Matthew 24:22) and to the words *'And unless those days were shortened, no flesh would be saved; but for the elect's sake those days will be shortened.'* 'Great tribulation,' as it was indicated to you in the previous Dialogs and in the Big Book of My New Revelation, signifies, as it was in the other world, the total and complete winning of the negative state in human life on this planet and anywhere where human life still is in the process of flourishing. That those days, in which this will take place, will be shortened refers to the nature of the negative state. The negative state does not have a never-ending option of its pseudo-life. Therefore, at one point in time and in its state, it will exhaust all its energies from which and by which it pseudo-lives and pseudo-functions.

As you know, the negative state was activated during the current cycle of time and can stay only during this cycle of time. Because of the full exhaustibility and depletion of its content — after all, it did not initiate and originate in the Absolute State — this cycle of time will be much shorter in comparison with the future cycle of time in which the positive state will be in its full development and manifestation. Because the positive state stems from and is originated in the Absolute State, it doesn't have an option of ending its true life. It will continue forever, to eternity. Now, if the negative state were to have the same option as the positive state has, no one could survive its inexhaustible potentials. The

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

winning of the negative state under such conditions, the conditions of its inexhaustibility, would mean that the great tribulation would have to continue forever, to eternity. In that case, realistically speaking, no one could survive such a condition in the positive state either. It would mean that everyone in it would ultimately succumb to the negative state. To end like that means only one thing — spiritual death and death of all flesh, meaning of all in human life and whoever is in the life of externals (flesh). ‘*The elect’s sake*’ are all members of the positive state and My representatives in all other worlds, dimensions, planet Zero and the Zone of Displacement. For their sake, the negative state was activated only on a temporary and transient basis. Because of that, the time, during which it is allowed to manifest its ugly face, is considerably shortened. In comparison with the time during which the positive state will manifest the fullness and completeness of its life, which will last to eternity, the negative state’s time is like nothing. And this is what is really meant by the content of the quoted verses.

Of course, there is a different level of meaning to everything contained in that chapter. This is the third aspect of its meaning, mentioned above. It relates to the multidimensional events as a consequence of the pseudo-winning of the negative state on planet Zero. This particular aspect, because it is in the process of its actualization and realization, and because it has multidimensional and multiversal implications, cannot be revealed at this time for security reasons. Also, the full knowledge of it would be unbearable to the human aspects of your mind. Therefore, it is for your own good and protection that you don’t know all its aspects. Later on, it will become obvious to you how everything contained in that chapter has relevance to this particular time. So, for that reason, I would recommend closing our discussion about the content and meaning of this chapter and going on to the other questions, if we may.

Peter: Yes, I understand. It is obvious to me that sometimes we are asking questions, the answers to which would be either premature to have, or they could not be comprehended by our human mind. Well, in that case, let me translate the second European question. I believe this question, in some form or other, has already been answered. The question is: ‘In accordance with my personal knowledge, on planet Zero some humans exist, even possibly the representatives of the positive state, who, besides having genetic blocks of their individual minds, and besides having the general negative shell that surrounds them, in addition to that, they have some kind of demonic shell, which for the given individual, causes a very strong distortion of perceived reality, and very often it totally negates incoming and outgoing information of that individual. Is it possible to explain the origin, goal, purpose, function and the means for elimination of this particular block?’ End of the question.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, this question, in some of its aspects, was answered in the Sixty Fifth Dialog and in some others. Whatever was indicated in that Dialog, fully applies to this situation. Therefore, it would be a good idea for the inquirer to reread that portion of the mentioned Dialog which deals with this issue, although it does so in a somewhat different connotation and from a somewhat different point of view.

However, let me tell you something from the onset of reiteration of My answer. To assume that anyone who is a representative of My positive state being in such a condition as described in the inquirer's question, is to assume an impossibility. If someone exhibits such demonic characteristics, no matter what he/she says or thinks or claims about who he/she is or how he/she is perceived to be, such an individual cannot be a representative of My positive state. It is obvious that an individual of this nature is a representative of the negative state, and his/her purpose is to pollute, to contaminate, to distort and to falsify anything related to the reality of the positive state. Such an individual is a true demon, incarnated from the negative state with a special type of mission to undermine and mislead anyone's proper perception of truth and to plant into other people's minds, especially into the minds of My true representatives, doubts about their own integrity, intuition and who they are and what the purpose of their life is and whether what they know and understand about the positive state, and especially about My Nature, is true, proper and correct, and to sidetrack them from My New Revelation.

There is a special contingent of creatures in the Hells who specialize in this type of work and whose members, upon incarnation on planet Zero, acquire such a thick shell and blocks around themselves for the purpose of being immune to any influence or impact of anything positive that they may encounter during their life on this planet. This is done with the goal in mind to succeed in their mission of contradicting anything and misperceiving anything and distorting anything that has any positive connotation. Don't be surprised to learn that some individuals of this adverse or demonic nature, perhaps come from or even are the renegades-incarnate themselves. As you remember, in one of the previous Dialogs, it was indicated to you that some of the members of their clans chose to physically incarnate on planet Zero, through projection back in time, in order to fulfill this purpose and their evil and negative function. As long as they are in their specific and particular mission and assignment, because they are part of the process of winning of the negative state on planet Zero, no means or ways exist at this time which would enable them to eliminate their blocks and shells. They must remain, for a time, the way they chose to be. In your dealing with individuals of this nature, you don't argue with them or try to convince them about the wrongs of their perception, behavior, attitude, lifestyle or whatever they have, but

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

instead, illustrate by the examples of your own positive life, and the way you behave, act, relate, think, feel and perceive the events on this planet, the difference of how it is to be the representatives of My positive state in comparison with the demonic representatives of the mentioned Hell. By doing that, you are preparing a means by which these individuals, after they fulfill their purpose and goal for which they became what they are, will be able to break through their blocks and thick shells and become able to perceive everything in its true light. That way, they will acquire a means for conversion to the positive state. At this time, there is nothing more you can do for them. And not only that, but any attempt to do more than that would only reinforce their determination to continue in their adverse mission. In that case, you would be contributing to their evil cause. So, be very careful how you approach individuals of this nature.

Once again, as you see from this example, sometimes by not doing anything for someone of this nature but instead to let them be and do whatever they are supposed to be and do, and on your part, by being and doing what you are supposed to be and to do in your own individual life as My true representatives, in the ultimate and final outcome, is doing much more for them than otherwise would be the case.

Peter: Thank You very much for this explanation and elaboration. The next two questions are coming from the East Coast of the USA. These two questions seem to be interrelated. For that reason, I will present them together. The first question relates to the mystery of the Bermuda Triangle and the disappearances of marine and air vessels that have occurred there. To tell You the truth, I am surprised that so far no one has asked this question. From a typical human position, it is an interesting one. The second question relates to the discovery of Puerto Rico and America in the “New World.” Is there something that can be revealed at this time about any correspondence between Puerto Rico, the Garden of Eden, and the relationship that Puerto Rico shares with the United States? If nothing is by coincidence, is there a reason why Puerto Rico was discovered before America? Also, what is the corresponding meaning of why Puerto Rico has had the lowest statistical growth/development rate as far as educational achievement in the United States and overcoming the effects of poverty? Also, as to the intense, conflicting, and confusing political struggle between Puerto Rico and its overall status in relation to the United States? These are the questions. Are we ready to know Your answers to them?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Most aspects of these questions would be beyond your ability to grasp their true meaning and purpose. Some other aspects are untimely to be revealed. The spiritual condition of humanity and your particular place in the scheme of all currently ongoing events

and happenings is such that it would not be beneficial for you to know them. However, let us address some that could be revealed, understood and grasped. First of all, regarding the Bermuda Triangle. Originally, at the time of the pseudo-creators' experimentation with the development and establishment of human life on this planet, during its movement from its original place in space, where it was the most outward reflection of the original planet Earth, and during its placement in this particular physical dimension, they also experimented with the building of a special type of star-gate which would enable them to maintain some connection between the various dimensions and which would allow them to travel among them at will. In other words, in its original configuration, the Bermuda Triangle was a gateway to all other places in their own pseudo-universe. Once they fulfilled their purpose and goal with the establishment of humankind on this planet, the pseudo-creators collapsed that gate. However, the energies that maintained that collapse, are still present in that region. So, during very rare and special types of climatic conditions, those energies weaken to such an extent that the gate in question is momentarily and partially reopened. If someone or something happens to be there during the occurrence of this extremely rare phenomenon, they are sucked into that gate and transported to some other dimension where they remain until their physical death, if they were able to survive the shift at all. In most instances, they were not.

In the process of this portion of the pseudo-creators' experimentation, they were looking for a place on this planet which would be the most suitable and sensitive for establishing and opening of such a multidimensional gate. They found such a place in the region of the Bermuda Triangle. The island of Puerto Rico was in close proximity to that place, so the pseudo-creators established one of the important bases there from which they operated during the mentioned experimentation. At that time, they created a climatic and natural condition on that island which duplicated and resembled something called "The Garden of Eden." The pseudo-creators were masters of creating such places because they had the knowledge of their original life in the positive state which is structured in accordance with the nature of the Garden of Eden, or, to be precise, in accordance with the nature of the physical dimension of the positive state, of its most external position, which is called in the spiritual world, "The Garden of Eden." The physical beauty and the lifestyle of that particular dimension is indescribable. So, this is the relationship of Puerto Rico of that time to the Garden of Eden.

The affinity of the pseudo-creators to that island and its proximity to the United States is in the fact that the pseudo-creators, during their time travels, recognized the importance of the United States in the scheme of events on this planet and set up a condition for the future domination of

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

this country over Puerto Rico. But because, unconsciously, both countries recognize or feel the pseudo-creators' touch in all their historic development and current affairs, and because they are in their control, a certain degree of retribution and punishment is being triggered for Puerto Rico, which provided a physical base for the pseudo-creators to do what they did, how they did it and why they did it. This resulted in the establishment of the current political, economic, educational and any other conditions that Puerto Rico has been finding itself throughout the history of its relationship with the United States. And this is all that can be revealed about this issue. Nothing more would be timely and needed at this time.

Peter: Thank You very, very much for this revelation. The last question which comes from Australia is as follows: How should we react to someone who is asking us about our attitude toward the present problematical events in this world if that someone has no connection to Your New Revelation? Sometimes, if we try to explain to such individuals our attitude and opinion about these problematical events, it causes only more confusion in their minds than what they had before.

The Lord Jesus Christ: The answer to this question should be obvious from the reading of these Dialogs and all other books of My New Revelation. It is a matter of your individual intuition and who and how the individual in question is asking to provide for him/her your opinion about the problematical events on this planet. There are no general guidelines applicable to all in a blanket manner. Each case will be different. The only advice that I can give is to ask Me for enhancing your intuition and to inspire you what, how and to whom you are to convey your own stance in this, or any other matter. If you are accepting what is being conveyed to you in these Dialogs, and in My New Revelation in general, and if you accepted to be My true representatives on this planet, by virtue of that fact, and by thinking, feeling and sensing My presence in your mind, by whatever mode is available to you, and responding from that position, I can assure you that you will be able to clearly discern how, what and to whom you can say whatever is needed to be said to anyone. But don't be surprised, if sometimes you will get the impression that you shouldn't say anything at all or that you should decline to make any response. Just follow your intuition — always! And this is all that needs to be conveyed in this respect. This was a long day for you, Peter. Therefore, I would recommend to finish it for now. Go in peace with My blessings and My gratitude for your work in My services.

Peter: I thank You very, very much for all Your input contained in this Dialog.

Seventy First Dialog

April 23, 1999

Peter: For a few days now something has been coming into my mind related to Your first major temptation by the forces of the negative state during Your incarnation on planet Zero, as recorded in Matthew 4:1-11, Luke 4:1-13, and which is also mentioned briefly, in passing, in Mark 1:12-13. Does it mean that You would like to address this particular issue, and if it does, what is the relevance of that event to the presently ongoing shift and to our personal lives, if any? Or is there anything else that You would like to bring to our attention before going into this particular issue?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, as you know, Peter, nothing is by coincidence. If that particular event has been on your mind, and if it has not been leaving you despite the fact that you tried to get rid of it, then, obviously, there is a need to discuss it. Don't forget what one of the important and major functions of these Dialogs is. As you remember from one of the recent Dialogs, the process of elimination of the negative state and human life in its negative aspects, is the process of making things right because, once upon a time, they were made very wrong. An integral component of this process is dialoging about the meaning, proper understanding and correct interpretation of some events recorded in the Gospels related directly to My life on planet Zero. As you know, the majority of those events, the way they have been understood and interpreted by Biblical scholars, does not reflect the true reality of their meaning. Their understanding and interpretation is either distorted or totally incorrect. For that reason, it is necessary to bring into proper light their meaning and why they happened the way they did. The integral part of these Dialogs is to do just that. And this is the relevance of the discussed issue to this time and to your life. The nature of the ongoing shift requires that everything about Me and everything else, no matter what and where, is put into proper context, meaning and perspective. You cannot very well begin the elimination of the negative state with improperly understood concepts and events related to such important spiritual issues as recorded in the Bible, for example. Otherwise, it wouldn't be its elimination but its confirmation and continuation.

However, before proceeding to this issue, which is on your mind, Peter, let Me briefly talk about something else. It relates to the tragedy that happened in one of Colorado's high schools. As you remember from one of the most recent Dialogs (Dialog 68), we were talking there about the good news and the bad news. The bad news related to the situation in the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

negative state and on planet Zero. It was indicated there that things will be becoming worse and worse for everyone who is in the negative state on the side of the negative state. Such unspeakable and never-heard-of-a-few-decades-before events are nothing more than a reflection of the negative state's pseudo-winning on planet Zero. As you remember, Peter, a few years back, after you finished recording the ***Corollaries...***, you were informed by Me that humans proper were/are no longer being born on planet Zero. Whoever is born here comes only from the negative state. Later on, you were also informed by Me that those humans on planet Zero, who showed obvious inclination toward and support for the negative state, were transmogrified into becoming full-fledged agents of the negative state. At that time, it was not proper yet to reveal, that this process of transmogrification was performed on all those children and newborn infants of the human-proper stock, whose genetic code showed an overwhelming predisposition toward the negative state. So, even before they became fully functional adults, they were already transmogrified into agents of the negative state.

As you remember, the renegades have been imitating the activities of the pseudo-creators and, because of that, they proceeded to do with some humans and many children and infants their own brand of transmogrification. As a result of their pseudo-effort in this respect, some very demonic, cruel, inconsiderate, emotionally void and empty, irresponsible and violent children and teenagers appeared who are able, in your view, without any hesitation, to commit unspeakable and horrid crimes. This is the reason why, as of recently, you have been hearing about 11 year old children, and even younger, who murdered their parents or committed similar deeds that no one could understand or explain. The Colorado event is the result of this type of transmogrification. So, don't be surprised if you hear more and more of similar, or even worse events of this nature. They are all one of the many aspects of the process of the pseudo-winning of the negative state on planet Zero.

Recently, you have been informed by Me that the negative state's pseudo-winning is in its final phase. It was also pointed out to you that in this final phase its nature would be showing its most ugly, putrid, despicable, horrid and abominable face. If you look at the nature of the crimes that are being committed around you, you can see that this particular face is being exposed. So, again, don't be surprised if you are about to hear more of these events happening on planet Zero in all kinds of unexpected ways.

On the other hand, those humans and children who did not show a preference for the negative state, at that time, were put into a position of

becoming agents of the positive state. And although the majority of them are not directly connected to My New Revelation, or don't have any ideas that My New Revelation even exists at all and is available to all, nevertheless, they are influenced by it covertly in such a manner so as to support the positive lifestyle in their own private lives. Unfortunately, the number of these types of humans in comparison with the numbers of the transmogrified ones, is small. Fortunately, from the position of the positive state, the quality prevails over the quantity. So, don't despair. And this is all that I wanted to comment about this morning. You can go ahead, Peter, and formulate what has been on your mind these few days.

Peter: The issue in question is your temptation by Satan or the devil in the wilderness. Which text in the Gospels do You prefer to interpret, Matthew's or Luke's?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Let us take up Luke's version. In this particular version the sequence of events is somewhat different than in Matthew's. Here, we'll begin with the first verse and proceed with the interpretation of each subsequent verse.

Verses 1-2: *'Then Jesus, being filled with the Holy Spirit, returned from the Jordan and was led by the Spirit into the wilderness, being tempted for forty days (in Matthew 'for forty days and forty nights') by the devil. And in those days he ate nothing, and afterward, when they ended, he was hungry.'* A situation is being described in this verse which sets up a condition for the first encounter with the ruling body of the pseudo-creators and for the first direct experience of the nature of the negative state. To be filled with the Holy Spirit signifies to be empowered by all necessary means for the successful outcome of this first encounter. To be led by the Spirit into the wilderness means to be transported into the very heart of the negative state. The condition of the wilderness reflects the true nature of the negative state void of anything positive and good. No true and genuine life can be found in the wilderness. The only things that may be found in it are wild, unruly, poisonous, hurtful, harmful and useless things. In other words, it is a pseudo-life. Being tempted for forty days means being in the state of a complete and total withdrawal from anything which is of the nature of the positive state. 'Forty days' in this connotation doesn't mean time but complete lack of anything good and positive. 'Forty nights,' on the other hand, denotes to be only in everything evil and false; that is to say, to be in the state of a direct experience of all aspects of all evils and falsities of the negative state. 'And in those days he ate nothing' signifies that I refused to take into Myself and internalize anything which is of the nature of the negative state. In other words, nothing of evils, nothing of falsities, nothing of

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

distortions, nothing of perversions and nothing poisonous, contained in the life of the negative state, was accepted by Me. ‘And afterward, when they ended, he was hungry’ represents the state of total depletion and separation from anything good, from anything true and from anything positive in general. Remember please, only in the state of complete separation from the positive state, and from My Original Divine Nature, could I have been tempted by the devil, in this case, by the leaders of the pseudo-creators. Being in this state, after a while, I became hungry for anything good, true and positive.

It was in this state that I was approached by the devil, as described in verse 3: *‘And the devil said to Him, “If You are the Son of God, command this stone to become bread.”’* ‘The devil’ in this connotation means all summarized evils of the negative state. From that position, from the position of all evils, the temptation was being directed at Me. ‘If You are the Son of God’ means that the forces of the negative state were/are incapable of accepting the fact that I made My Divine Human, which in this connotation means ‘Son of God.’ They need external proofs that it is so. But because their demand to prove it is based on the nature of the negative state, and only from the position of the negative state, it cannot be accomplished from that position. To ‘command this stone to become bread’ denotes to acknowledge and to accept the pseudo-fact that all falsities (stone) of the negative state are good and positive (bread).

Verse 4: *‘But Jesus answered him, saying, “It is written, ‘Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word of God.’”’* My answer came from the position of the positive state and My Absolute Good (Jesus), denoting that the entire life, and any life at all, is possible only by unceasing emanation of My Absolute Life (by every word of God), into all life and that, in itself, by itself and from itself (bread alone), any life at all is incapable of sustaining itself otherwise.

Verses 5-7: *‘Then the devil, taking Him up on a high mountain, showed Him all the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time. And the devil said to Him, “All this authority I will give You, and their glory; for this has been delivered to me, and I give it to whomever I wish. Therefore, if You worship before me, all will be Yours.”’* A situation is being described here during which I was introduced experientially to all pseudo-dimensions of the Zone of Displacement and all their respective worlds in a multilevel and multidimensional mode, apart from time and space, and during which past, present and future were merged, giving Me an opportunity to observe and to experience all aspects of pseudo-life of the negative state in their totality. From that position, I was offered a complete control and authority over all, provided that I would agree to

their conditions of becoming one of them, relinquishing My Divinity and My being a true God.

Verse 8: *'And Jesus answered and said to him, "Get behind Me, Satan! (in Matthew: 'Away with you, Satan!') For it is written, 'You shall worship the Lord your God, and Him only you shall serve.'"* Notice please, that in the second round I was using the word 'Satan' in order to emphasize from what direction I was now being tempted. As you know, 'Satan' denotes all falsities of the negative state in their summary and completeness. Thus, I was presented with all available falsities with which the negative state was leading its assault on Me as on the Only Absolute Truth. That nothing of such falsities could enter into Me or even be considered by Me is signified here by the words 'Get behind me, Satan!' or 'away with you, Satan!' Any admission of anything of this nature into My Absolute Nature would mean the end of the positive state and, subsequently, of anyone and anything. This is what the leaders of the negative state were hoping to accomplish. If I were to yield to them in this respect even in the slightest and minutest degree, they would accomplish their goal in destroying the positive state and its true life. Of course, they didn't realize that if something like that were ever to happen, they themselves would cease to be and exist in their own pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. Therefore, I responded with the words that 'you shall worship the Lord your God, and Him only you shall serve.'

First of all, these words are very important in the sense that it was for the very first time during My Presence on planet Zero that I clearly stated and confirmed that I was the true and the only God. Otherwise, I could not say 'worship the Lord your God.' Secondly, this also signifies the fact, that I was/am the only Lord of everything and everyone and that the claim of the devil and Satan — the evils and falsities of the negative state — that the entirety of the negative state with all its worlds and dimensions is under the control, domination and power of the rulers of the negative state, is an illusion permitted by Me for the time being and only until the time when I Personally will take over that power, control and domination. And thirdly, I indicated clearly that the only reality of any life could be found in worshiping Me and in serving only My cause. Therefore, if anyone were to relinquish or reject this fact, one would deprive oneself of the true life. This was a very clear indication that the negative state did not possess any true life within its domain and sphere. Up to that point, it falsely assumed that it had such life.

Here the situation is being described which indicates that it was permitted for the members of the negative state to think that they had

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

true life comparable with and in opposition to the true life of the positive state. Such an assumption on the part of the members of the negative state was necessary to have, in order to give them a chance to establish themselves in their own brand of pseudo-lifestyle. If such permission were not to be granted to them, they could not succeed in providing the necessary learning to all about the falsity, illusion and unreality of such life. However, My entrance into their pseudo-life heralded a new beginning. At that time, I was setting up the first milestone and condition for the future elimination of the negative state and its pseudo-life. The very first step in this effort, was to bring to their attention that their life is not really a true life, but it is only a perversion, distortion, mutilation, falsification and ultimately an illusion of the true life; and that without the life of the positive state no one could survive for a fraction of a second in the pseudo-life of the negative state. Thus, in this sense, for the first time I brought to their attention what the true nature of the negative state was. At the same time, I gave them a new option on life and how to get out of their pseudo-life by stating that, 'You shall worship the Lord your God, — **ME** — and Him — **ME** — you shall serve.' Only in doing that, can one find true life. No other ways exist to establish oneself in one's own life.

Verses 9-11: *'Then he brought Him to Jerusalem, set Him on the pinnacle of the temple, and said to Him, "If You are the Son of God, throw Yourself down from here. For it is written:*

*'He shall give His angels charge over You,
To keep You,'*

and,

*In their hands they shall bear You up,
Lest You dash Your foot against a stone.''"* (Psalm 91:11-12)

To bring Me to Jerusalem signifies to place Me in the midst of the embodiment of pseudo-spirituality, rooted in externalization and taking everything literally (Jerusalem). To be set on the pinnacle of the temple means to be on the top of the falsified worship or, in this case, worshipping the leaders of the negative state, who proclaimed themselves to be gods. The temple was such a place of worship. In view of the negative state, if I was the true Son of God, then admitting to Myself that only externalization and taking everything literally about all spiritual factors has any true sense and reality, would mean that only the negative state has true life and true reality. After all, I chose to come down from the positive state into the negative state and by that factor I gave preference to the life in the negative state, rejecting the life of the positive state. If that were to be the case, then, by accepting such falsities as truths, I

would become negative and evil, and because of that, coming down into the negative state, in no way would hurt Me. Not only would it not hurt Me, but I would bring down all inhabitants of the positive state into the negative state where they would continue to serve Me in accordance with the pseudo-spiritual principles of the negative state. This is what the pseudo-creators wanted to accomplish at that time. My response to this temptation was clear:

Verse 12: *‘And Jesus answered and said to him, “It has been said, ‘You shall not tempt the Lord your God’ (Deuteronomy 6:16). Once again, for the second time, the indication was that I was the true God. Otherwise, I could not say, ‘You shall not tempt the Lord your God.’ To tempt Me, or your God, signifies to reject Me and not trust Me to do what is needed to be done and how it is needed to be done. It also means not admitting or doubting that I am the Only One God Indivisible and the only Source and Originator of the true life and the only Creator of My Creation. Such doubts may and can become causative factors for the activation of the negative state. This is the reason why everyone was warned not to tempt the Lord your God. To tempt the Lord your God, in the spiritual sense of these words, denotes a dangerous desire on the part of someone, who is tempting Me, to become such a god himself/herself. To desire that leads straight forward into the establishment of the pseudo-life of the negative state. Thus, in My case, by refusing to follow the demand of the devil to throw Myself down, I refused the entirety of the negative state and all aspects of its pseudo-life. By that fact, I clearly refused to acknowledge the reality of the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. At the same time, I established the second most important condition under which everyone could come out of the negative state — “do not tempt Me and accept the Absolute Reality of Who I Am and what My True Nature Is.” By accepting that, together with the first condition outlined above, you will free yourself from the illusions of the pseudo-life of the negative state.*

On this note and with this understanding the negative state left Me alone for the time being, as depicted in verse 13.

Verse 13: *‘Now when the devil had ended every temptation, he departed from Him until an opportune time.’* As you see from the content of this verse, there were many other temptations to which I was subjected at that time. The reason why they were not included in the above quoted text, or in Matthew’s text, was that they were of such a nature that they could not be described or understood in any human language or expression. Also, as you see from this text, the indication was that My temptations by the negative state were only the beginning and that there would be many more opportune times for these types of temptations to

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

take place — which they did. As you know, the last temptation that I was subjected to was the temptation on the cross. During that time, My Divine was in the most remote position from My human which would allow Me the experience of human death or the death of the human physical body. It was at that time that, paradoxically speaking, the negative state placed itself in a position of total defeat. The forces of the negative state assumed that by killing My human physical body, they had Me and that I was defeated. Just the opposite was true. By doing that, they made it possible for Me to enter their domain from the least-expected position, but the only position which would enable such an entrance to happen — the human position. As you remember, they assumed that if I was the True Son of God, such a thing as human death could never happen to Me. Therefore, in their boastful spiritual arrogance, they entirely missed My need to undergo such a process.

On the other hand, if I were not to die physically on the cross, but remain alive, the negative state could never be eliminated and, in some ways, it would ultimately win its case in a permanent, and not only in a temporary, fashion. This was the paradox of that situation. For the forces of the negative state My physical death was their alleged winning over Me, while the opposite was true — it was their total defeat.

Talking about the cross and the symbolism which it represents, brings us to the question which was raised by Edmund Heine, Jr., our architect, and as reiterated by Lyudmila Savelieva. What was the significance or symbolism of the cross? The reason why I had to die on the cross was extensively explained in Update 9 in the ***Corollaries...*** . It would be unnecessary redundancy to repeat it here. The question is about the meaning or symbolism of the cross.

The word ‘cross’ has many meanings. First of all, it is a mechanical construct used in ancient times for execution of criminals. This type of execution was widely spread during the Roman Empire’s rule. In this sense, the cross has a purely negative connotation. It symbolizes crossing over someone or nixing one’s life or making one’s life unbearable, torturous and full of suffering and misery. Thus, in this sense, the cross also symbolizes the nature of the negative state which, by crossing over the positive state, killed its impact and influence on anyone who resides in the negative state, and by that factor, it made the negative state nothing but a life of death, misery, suffering, pain, torture, discomfort, nastiness, burden, and all other adverse states and conditions, unthinkable in the life of the positive state. The cross is an embodiment of such pseudo-life. My dying on the cross symbolizes My dying from and for the negative state and from and for the negative aspects of human

life. In a deeper spiritual meaning, because the cross represents the entirety of the despicable nature of the negative state, My dying on the cross symbolizes taking upon Myself all consequences, results and outcomes of the activated negative state for the purpose of its final elimination. Do you remember what was said about it in one of the previous Dialogs? In order to conquer and, subsequently, to eliminate the negative state, you have to include its content into yourself first. That is to say, in order to deal with the negative state effectively and successfully, you have to enter its very center, or its very pseudo-within, and from that position, by taking upon yourself all its results, you are able to accomplish your goal. To repeat it again: You cannot do it from outside of the negative state. And this is what one of the true significances of the cross was.

Another meaning of this word is to cross something, or being on a crossroad or bearing your cross patiently. In the first instance, to cross something means to end anything old, previously functional and alive, and to begin something new and different. Being on the crossroad means to face an important decision of your life. It also indicates the need to make choices which will determine the outcome of your further development. In all these meanings, the cross is always symbolizing the ending of something, or dying of something and the beginning of the new and different of something.

To bear your cross patiently symbolizes your agreement to enter the negative state and its human life, and taking upon yourself a difficult and almost impossible task of surviving in it without succumbing to its temptations.

As you know, Christians adopted the symbolism of the cross in all their religious rituals. If you take into consideration a totally negative connotation of the symbolism of the cross, which indicates nothing but misery and suffering, then their preoccupation with it denotes reaffirmation of the rule that the negative state has over them. The Catholic church is particularly preoccupied with this aspect of My life on plant Zero, making the depiction of My life in such a manner that it emphasizes its defeating aspects. After all, if you concentrate only on misery and suffering, or in My case, on the passion of the cross, which was the most painful and negative experience, you concentrate on the negative state only and how it rules or has ruled your life. In that case, you disregard any positive connotation that your life has and that its ultimate outcome is your winning over the negative state. So, because of this kind of significance of the term 'cross,' you are advised not to be taken in by anything it symbolizes and represents. To do that means that

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

you are functioning from the position of the negative state. As My true representatives, you are to function only from the position of the positive state. That position does not include any sense of suffering, misery, pain and similar negative characteristics with which the life of humans and the creatures of the negative state are imbued.

Peter: Thank You very much for this elaborate explanation and elaboration. Is there anything else that You would like to talk about today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: There is one brief comment about Dan's concerns over the word 'titration' used in the Fourth Dialog. That word is included and defined in any regular Webster College Dictionary. In our case, the word 'titration,' in the connotation of the mentioned Fourth Dialog, signifies redistribution or measuring out of a certain amount of the available energy, or whatever, in order to adjust it to the level of the needs and ability to absorb and to utilize it in accordance with the unique individual and personal characteristics of each sentient entity. It is not necessary to make any amendment to that text because every reader should be in a position of active and independent exploring, searching, pondering and figuring out by themselves what it means. Spiritually, it is not always proper to regurgitate food for people and feed them into their mouths as the case is with infants. They are not infants. Sometimes, to make things too easy for people is to make them too dependent on someone else's explanation, preventing them from doing the exploratory work on their own. It can take away or suffocate incentives to proceed on their own in figuring out the meaning of such words from the context of any such statements in which these words are being used. We cannot support the establishment of a situation which would foster such dependencies. In that case, they would be in danger of being under the influence of the negative state. I can assure you, Peter and Dan, that the use of such 'unusual' words on My behalf has a deeper meaning and significance. Even if it is sometimes difficult to understand their proper meaning, they are used with a well-intended purpose. I am humbly advising you to get used to this necessity. And this is all that I had to tell you today. We can finish for now. I wish you all a very pleasant time.

Peter: Thank You so much for all this input and for being patient with our human limitations.

Seventy Second Dialog

April 24, 1999

Peter: This morning I would like to bring to Your kind attention the issue of empathy raised by Dr. Ardyth Norem. I believe this question relates to the problem of ending up in taking over someone's pain, suffering, misery and similar adverse symptoms and making them one's own property. The question is how to avoid doing so and yet, at the same time, to be able to continue in being empathetic. Is it appropriate to ask this question or might its nature be too personalized and individualized? However, I would like to ask You if You have anything to add first before going into answering my and Ardyth's question?

The Lord Jesus Christ: The majority of the aspects of this question have a personalized and individualized nature. It is up to each individual to determine from their own within, from My Presence within them, asking Me for inspiration, illumination and enlightenment about how not to fall into the trap of taking over other individuals' conditions, whatever they may be. However, some commonalities exist in how to experience or apply feelings of empathy so that you don't end up in this predicament. Before going into this issue, I would like to take up your offer, Peter, and add some points to the topic discussed in yesterday's Dialog (Dialog 71). It relates to the issue of temptation.

As you remember, your question was how the Biblical story of My temptation by the devil (all evils of the negative state) relates to all of you personally and to the nature of the ongoing shift. Besides what was briefly mentioned in that Dialog about this relevance to your times, the following points will be revealed.

Let Me tell you something important in this respect: Shortly, you will be entering a very complicated phase of this shift which will put all of you in the state of temptation. The Biblical story of My temptation will prepare you to properly deal with that situation during which you may find yourself in the state of temptation. In the manner and way I handled My temptations, and by the example of what the outcome of them was, I showed you how to proceed in this case.

As you noticed from the Biblical text, there were three areas of temptations which I permitted to be recorded in the Bible. Only these three have any relevance to your cases or which are accessible to your human understanding. The numerous others, not recorded at that time, relate only to Me and to the implementation of My Plan of Salvation of

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

the devil and Satan himself, symbolically speaking (meaning those sentient entities who have been producing all evils and falsities).

The first area of temptation that you may be subjected to relates to your desire to know more or to experience hunger for the understanding of many things or getting answers to many questions which are not or cannot be available to you at this time or at any time at all, as long as you are in human life. Many events and situations have been occurring up to this point and many will be occurring from now on which have been and will be very brutal, puzzling, incomprehensible, intolerable, unacceptable, senseless and confusing, making it impossible for you to see them or to interpret them in the proper light. This situation may be compared to the temporary state of darkness during which you are unable to see anything or sense anything properly. The temptation in such times will go something like this: “If you are the true representatives of The Lord Jesus Christ, how is it possible or how come you are not getting answers about the meaning of all these events and situations, but are kept in total darkness about them? Or how come your ‘fabulous’ intuition doesn’t tell you what these things are all about? Isn’t it true that if you are unable to discern or explain or comprehend the meaning of all these things, then, in that case, you cannot be the true representatives of your precious Lord Jesus Christ? You are deceiving yourself, and you better accept the reality of who you really are. Give up, man/woman, don’t kid yourself; you would be better off if you were to become just like us without any claims of being someone different. You are being deceived when you are being told that you have a special wiring that makes you different from the regular us who don’t have it.”

What would be your response in situations like that? You may say or think or feel something like this (**if you choose to do so by your own free will and choice**): “The Lord Jesus Christ provides me only with that or with so much as I need for each particular time of my life on this planet — neither less nor more. If I am not getting answers to my questions or if I am confused and unable to come up with any sensible explanations about anything happening or taking place, it is for my own protection, benefit and safety. It only means that such knowledge, at this particular time, not only wouldn’t be beneficial for me, but it could hurt my well-being. In all modesty, humbleness and humility I accept this necessity and I am placing into the hands of my Lord Jesus Christ my inappropriate hunger and thirst for knowing more, for wanting more and for desiring more. By doing that, and by doing it this way, I am acknowledging and confirming that I am a true representative of my

beloved Lord Jesus Christ.” Now, a response of this nature will effectively terminate this particular temptation.

The second area of temptation that you may encounter during the upcoming period relates to your possible fascination and admiration of external things, of political things and of various external possessions. The danger here is in placing the meaning of your life into having more of them and in desiring to have power, control and domination over others and things. Situations may present themselves to you in which your preoccupation with these matters can become of such a degree that you may lose the true spiritual perspective of such situations, tendencies and desires. You may be promised, through all kinds of attractive external goods, a happy, fulfilling, meaningful, peaceful and rich life if only you would stop being bogged down in your so-called spiritual considerations. In other words, the temptation in this respect would be to give up your spiritual heritage, and being My true representatives, and instead, to serve the negative state under the disguise of having total control, power and domination over your own life and even of the lives of others.

Your response during these types of temptations may go something like this (again, **if you choose it to be this, or a similar way by your own free will and choice**): “I am a humble servant and follower of The True Lord Jesus Christ in His/Her and Her/His New Nature, the only One Who has all power, control and domination or dominion over all and over everyone and everything. There is no one or nothing that I have any need or desire to serve, or to be under their influence, or to worship them or to consider them of any importance to my life. By my own free will and choice I am giving all such tempting thoughts, feelings, tendencies and behaviors to my beloved Lord Jesus Christ Who is the only One who counts in my life. Whatever I have or don’t have at this time or whatever I will have or won’t have in the future, it is and it will be by the Will of my Lord Jesus Christ, and that’s the only thing I need. For all that which I have and don’t have, and which I will have and won’t have, I am deeply and profoundly thankful, grateful and appreciative to my Lord Jesus Christ because it is only He/She Who knows in an absolute sense what I need or don’t need or what is the best for me at each junction of my life on planet Zero or anywhere or anywhen else.” By saying, thinking or feeling something like this, you will successfully ward off these types of temptations and charms of the negative state.

The third possible temptation, which may come your way during this particular shift, is the one which relates to your own personal, mostly physical and/or mental sufferings, illnesses, anxieties, worries, pains,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

discomfort, loneliness, depression, non-fulfillment, poverty, lack of sufficient support and funds and similar negative states and conditions. So, the question may be raised: “How come you are experiencing these types of totally negative conditions if you are the true representatives of The Lord Jesus Christ? How come your precious Lord Jesus Christ doesn’t take care of His/Her own? Why are such things allowed to be experienced by you? Isn’t it true that if you are experiencing them then you are just like us and there is absolutely no difference between you and us? Is this how the positive state looks and how your precious Lord Jesus Christ treats you? Is it worthy at all to serve someone like that Who allows you to go through all these miserable states?”

Your response, **by your own free will and choice**, in situations like that can go something like this: “Away with you Satan — the falsities of the negative state! By my own free will and choice I agreed to go through these types of adverse experiences for some very important spiritual reasons and for the learning and benefit of all. Such negative and adverse states could never deter me from my true spirituality and from being a true representative of my Lord Jesus Christ. Even He/She Himself/Herself underwent all temptations, even the temptation on the cross, in order to set up an example and to illustrate the futility of such temptations and their total powerlessness to sway me from my spiritual path and from my destiny. So, don’t waste your time and energy on tempting me with your foolish and useless efforts to throw myself down into your pit. It will never work. I accept in deep modesty, humbleness and humility everything that I have been and will be going through in my life on this planet, no matter how painful, miserable, negative and adverse it has been or will be. It is all a part of my mission and assignment.” By saying, thinking and feeling it this or a similar way, you will be able to overcome these types of temptations.

If you look carefully on the content and mode of these temptations, which you may be facing shortly or in the near future, you will find striking similarities between them and those which were permitted by Me to be recorded in the Gospels. I can assure you that the reason why the story of My temptations has been on your mind, Peter, is that you would address this issue from the position of its relevance to this particular time, during the currently ongoing shift and how it may apply to all your lives in the services for Me from the position of being My true representatives. And this is all that I wanted to convey to you for now.

Peter: Thank You very much for these suggestions and support.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. And now we may address some aspects of the question about empathy.

As you know, empathy, together with mercy and compassion, derives from the nature of unconditional love. Although there is some degree of interconnectedness between empathy and mercy and compassion, empathy is also able to function on its own merit. In order to better understand what follows, it is necessary to define from our standpoint the term ‘empathy’ first. What do we mean by this term regardless of how it is defined in the common dictionaries of human languages? Such definitions may or may not be what is meant by the spiritual aspects of this term. In order to differentiate among these three terms — mercy, compassion and empathy — it would be advisable to briefly define all of them strictly from our own standpoint and understanding.

Empathy, in our conceptualization, is defined as an ability of any sentient entity to feel and to sense what another sentient entity is going through, no matter what it is, ***without internalizing or accepting or taking over into himself/herself*** anything felt and experienced by the other one. By the factor of this definition, empathy may or may not lead to compassion, depending on the nature and character of such experiences. If the experience is of the suffering type or of an adverse type, or if one finds someone in a condition of needing support and help, situations of this nature may evoke a state of compassion.

In this sense then, compassion may be defined as an internal state of feeling for someone else’s state or predicament which leads to the establishment of the need to be helpful and supportive of any individual who is in the process of experiencing such predicaments or whatever it is, again, ***without internalizing or accepting or taking over into himself/herself*** the other individual’s states and conditions. If these states and conditions are of such a nature that they require on your part to let go of some negative feelings which you might have toward such an individual, it may lead to the state of experiencing within you the need of having mercy upon such an individual.

For that reason, in this sense, mercy can be defined as completely letting go of any negative feelings, thoughts, attitudes, expectations and behaviors that you may experience toward anyone who is, in some way or other, indebted to you, whether spiritually, mentally, physically, materially, financially, socially or in any other way.

These three states and conditions of your mind are rooted in the nature of unconditional love itself. However, as you know, a true unconditional

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

love never functions or is expressed without its unconditional wisdom; as unconditional wisdom never functions and is expressed without its unconditional love. Otherwise, neither of them would be powerful or properly functional and expressive. For this reason, the major attributes of this wisdom — understanding, acceptance and forgiveness — need to be taken into consideration if their proper function, application and expression could be established.

Thus, whenever you acquire a full understanding of something or someone's condition, no matter what it is, and if this understanding is based on the proper consideration of all spiritual factors of free will, choice and agreement, it will lead you toward the establishment within you of the need to accept the necessity of such an individual's condition and/or experience. If this experience, in some way, is of a negative and harmful nature, and he/she shows remorse or sorrow or asks you or others for forgiveness, based on all the above factors, you experience within you a strong need for forgiveness and you really forgive.

So, what is going on in you if you find yourself in a predicament when you feel empathy for someone's suffering to such an extent that it becomes your own suffering and, as a result, your own life becomes miserable? First of all, the wisdom portion of this combination was not properly applied in this case. It means that you have not properly understood the need and the choice that such an individual had when he/she accepted to go through such experiences. Because of that you were unable to accept the fact that the individual in question placed himself/herself in a position which enabled him/her to fulfill his/her mission in this respect. And if the situation warranted the need for forgiveness, in that case, you would not be able to forgive someone or something, who, in your view, was the causative factor of such conditions, states or experiences.

However, there is another reason for your negative experience in this respect. Unconsciously, and sometimes even consciously, without having proper understanding, knowledge and acceptance of such individuals' needs and choices, you conclude that in no way they deserve to have them or to suffer them. Because of that, by your unwise empathy, the empathy which, in this particular case, excludes understanding and acceptance, you want to free or liberate them from that condition. Thus, in some sense, you are depriving them of having their own experiences and fulfilling their own purpose for which they agreed to place themselves, by having them.

There is a certain degree of spiritual arrogance in such an attitude. Because of that, this attitude may lead to retribution and self-punishment manifested in experiencing or taking over some symptoms of other people's problems. They are the warning signs that your attitude in this respect is inappropriate and does not take into consideration all factors from the proper spiritual view of the whole situation.

This is one aspect of this issue. Another aspect, which I believe is Ardyth's concern, is when you have empathy with someone and you share yourself with that someone and that someone ends up hurting you or rejecting you or both. In other words, you get burned. There are many reasons why this can happen. This aspect of the problem is the one which is totally individualized and personalized and therefore, it cannot be revealed or explained through someone, in this case, through Peter, who is in a different mode and level of experiencing and understanding of anything.

One aspect of this situation though, may be touched upon. The question here is: From what position do you establish any condition or build any foundation for a relationship which would lead to sharing yourself with each other? Is it empathy? Is it true love? Is it true understanding and acceptance? Is it compassion? Or is it expectations and projections of how such sharing should be experienced, and manifest itself? Are you relating to that individual from yourself, from your own essence and substance, directing it to that individual's own essence and substance, from your true "I am" to the other's true "I am"? Or is it directed from your own ego to the other individual's ego and from all their negative attributes? Or in a higher and most important sense, is such a relationship directed from Me in you to Me in the other individual?

If you carefully explore all these factors, you may find the answer to your questions about why such failures are occurring in many human relationships. Simply stated, they are based on the wrong foundation; they are approaching each other for the wrong reasons and with an inappropriate intention and motivation.

On the other hand, don't forget also the issue of some very individual, personal and unique choices that you accepted before incarnating on planet Zero into your brand of human life in order to place yourself into having these types of adverse experiences for some very important spiritual reasons. In that case, the understanding and acceptance of your own destiny and of your own assignment while on planet Zero may help you to cope with these problems, and in all modesty, humbleness and humility, you will let go of any unnecessary expectations and

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

anticipations in this respect. If not, your life will continue to be unbearable and unfulfilling, full of disappointments and unhappiness.

Peter: Thank You very much for this explanation. Is there anything else that You would like to talk about today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. No, not today. I think this is enough for the moment. Go and have a nice day.

Seventy Third Dialog

April 25, 1999

Peter: One Biblical issue, which describes the event of Your transfiguration, has been coming to my mind recently. Taking into consideration that nothing is by coincidence, I assume that You would like to address this issue. Am I right? Of course, as always, I am asking if You have anything to add first, before going into this subject.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are very right, Peter. Certain aspects of the currently ongoing shift require that the issue of My transfiguration be brought to your attention and the attention of all readers of these Dialogs now. However, before going into this issue, with your kind permission, Peter, I would like to have a little, as well as a somewhat brief, philosophical discussion. This discussion relates to the interrelatedness of unconditional love and wisdom and their various attributes. For the purpose of our discussion we will mention the ones which were taken up in our previous Dialogs. They are: mercy, compassion, empathy, understanding, acceptance, forgiveness, objectivity, righteousness, justice and judgment.

Philosophically and spiritually speaking, these attributes can be paired off in the following way: mercy-understanding-objectivity; compassion-acceptance-righteousness; and empathy-forgiveness-judgment. At the same time, you can conceptualize them in the following manner: Mercy, compassion, empathy, objectivity and justice are of the femininity, the nature of which is founded on unconditional love, goodness and positive works; and understanding, acceptance, forgiveness, righteousness and judgment are of the masculinity, the nature of which is founded on unconditional wisdom, truth and faith.

The interrelatedness of these attributes and their simultaneous function is obvious from this logical construct. Without properly understanding any situation, you are unable to be objective and therefore, merciful. At the same time, you cannot be understanding and objective unless you are, at the same time, merciful. Your objectivity cannot come to its life without understanding and a sense of mercy. You cannot be compassionate without accepting any situation on its merit and without being righteous about it. You cannot accept things without having compassion for them and having a righteous attitude toward them. You cannot sense the righteousness of any situation without accepting it and having compassion for it. You are unable to experience true empathy

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

without having some sense and need for forgiveness and without being able to properly judge the meaning of any situation. You are unable to forgive without having empathy and without properly judging the situation. You cannot properly judge the meaning of any situation unless you are willing to forgive and have empathy.

As you see from these logical constructs the relatedness of these attributes is such that they are all at the level of simultaneous and synchronous sending and receiving and receiving and sending. It is not as if one is the active sender and the other one is a passive receiver; or as if one is a passive sender and the other a passive receiver. And because we are ultimately talking here about integration, unification and oneness of love and wisdom, good and truth and positive works and faith, and even in a more ultimate sense, about oneness, integration and unity of masculinity and femininity, as well as femininity and masculinity, it is very obvious that both and all of them are in a state of simultaneous and synchronous active sending and active receiving as well as in an active receiving and active sending. So, in all these cases, it is always a two-way street, so-to-speak. In this type of interrelatedness, no such states exist which could be considered being in a passive mode. They are all active and they all have the same dynamic, progressive, and interactive nature.

If you look carefully at this description, from it you will be able to deduce a very important conclusion: It vividly describes the nature and the life of the positive state. Thus, as you see from this fact, the positive state doesn't contain anything even remotely resembling a passive state or a state in which one is actively sending and the other one is passively receiving. At each and every time they are both actively sending and actively receiving as well as actively receiving and actively sending. Why do we repeat this combination also in the opposite direction? Because both situations have an equal involvement. Thus, it is not only an active sending and an active receiving but, at the very same time, the one who is sending is also receiving and the one who is receiving is also sending. In this respect their equalization is absolute.

This is how all principles of masculinity and femininity and femininity and masculinity are established and manifested in the positive state. They are in a state and process of absolute equalization at all times and under all conditions. From these facts you may clearly conclude that under this condition, when the nature of all principles is in the state of their absolute equalization, nothing of a negative nature can be conceived or established.

In order to activate the pseudo-life of the negative state and put it in the state of dominance, it was necessary to recede from this arrangement. How do you go about doing so? If the nature of the positive state is rooted in this absolute equalization and simultaneous active and progressive mode of its life, then you have to come up with something or with some ways to nullify this equalization and simultaneous and synchronous active and progressive mode of its life. By the logical analysis of these aspects of the nature of the positive state, you come to the discovery of the concepts of opposites, splits, disunion, isolation, separation, subservience and non-equalization. Originally, such concepts as these had not been known to anyone in being and existence. First, they needed to be deduced before they could be implemented.

However, in order to be able to make such a deduction, a different approach toward acquirement of knowledge needed to be discovered and implemented. Up to that point, all knowledge had been coming from everyone's within without any consideration or possibility of its coming from without. The problem with acquiring any knowledge from within is in the fact that because I was in the state of everyone's within, such knowledge always derived from Me directly. From this position nothing of the negative nature could be conceived or thought of or lead to the discovery of any other methods which would enable anyone to ask the existential question about any other life other than the life of the positive state.

So, the first step in this process was to turn away from the state of that within. In the moment such dissension happened, and any knowledge began to be sought in the without, the scientific methods of exploration, generalization and conclusions were born and the concepts of the opposites, splits, disunion, isolation, separation, subservience and non-equalization were discovered. Once these terms were discovered in the now pseudo-logical constructs of the pseudo-creators' minds, the next step was to experiment with these terms in order to find a way for establishment of a lifestyle which would be founded on them. In the process of this pseudo-endeavor, after a long period of time, it was concluded that if all the positive counterparts of these concepts — the absolute equalization, unity, oneness, harmony and integration — underlie the life of the positive state and if they are reflected in the state and process of masculinity and femininity and femininity and masculinity, then, in order to make the negative counterpart of these terms — opposites, splits, disunion, isolation, separation, subservience and non-equalization — functional and real, giving them some kind of semblance of life, and establishing them apart from the life of the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

positive state, it would be necessary to first deal with masculinity and femininity and their unification, oneness, integration and absolute equalization. In order to do that, it was necessary to first discover a special type of method that would enable them to destroy the state and condition of femininity and masculinity, under which they functioned and operated in the positive state.

Such a method was found in the spiritual laws of correspondences and the genetic code of those sentient entities who occupied the natural dimension of My Creation. In the process of experimentation with their own physical bodies (at that point in time they occupied the physical dimension and had so-called physical bodies) and the physical bodies of other inhabitants of the physical dimension, they were able to discover those genes and their spiritual counterparts or correspondences which were responsible for the state of unification, oneness, integration and equalization of masculinity and femininity and femininity and masculinity and their simultaneous and synchronous function in the process of their active sending and active receiving and their active receiving and active sending.

As you remember, it took the pseudo-creators a very, very long time, in your conceptualization of time, before they were able to come up with the solution that would lead them toward the accomplishment of this most difficult goal. By various combinations, splits, dissections and re-combinations of these or those genes, and all their spiritual correspondences, they finally were able to find the most appropriate combination that resulted in the establishment of a life form which fully adhered to the pseudo-principles of split, disunion, separation, isolation, non-equalization, passivity, subservience and similar characteristics, not found in any aspects of life in the positive state. By putting these conditions in an active mode, the pseudo-life of the negative state was on its way to demonstrate and illustrate life built on and rooted in some other principles other than the true principles of the positive state.

This is how the negative state came about. You can consider this brief discourse as a lesson in the genesis of the negative state and in all forms of its pseudo-life. And now we can close this philosophical detour and begin addressing the issue of My transfiguration which has been on your mind, Peter.

Peter: Thank You very much for this beautiful and enlightening philosophical discourse. I enjoyed it very much. The event of Your transfiguration is recorded in three Gospels. It is in Matthew 17:1-9; Mark 9:2-8; and Luke 9:28-36. Which version would You like to take up?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Although there are some small differences in these versions' timing, they all reflect the fact of My transfiguration. However, the most comprehensive and the most accurate description of that event was recorded by Luke. For that reason, let us take Luke's version, beginning with the first to the last verse.

Verse 28: *And it came to pass, about eight days after these sayings* (in Matthew and Mark it is *after six days*), *that He took Peter, John, and James and went up on the mountain to pray.* Here you see the above mentioned discrepancies in timing. Matthew and Mark talk about six days while Luke indicates that it happened after eight days. Number six in this particular connotation signifies before completeness of a certain important spiritual state. As you remember from the first chapter of the book of Genesis in the Bible, the so-called creation was finished on the sixth day after which came the state of rest, or the state of completion of one creative effort before the beginning of the next creative effort. Thus, in this sense 'six' signifies before the fullness and completeness of life of the positive state could be established, indicated here by the seventh day of rest. 'Seven' means the completeness and fullness of life of the positive state, as reflected in My statement, recorded in the Apocalypse, 'It is done!' (Revelation 21:6). On the other hand, 'eight' means after the completion of this phase. In this particular connotation, the words '*about eight days after*' signify after a very important spiritual condition was established in all involved dimensions and their worlds which made it possible for Me to proceed with the event of My transfiguration. That I took with Me Peter, John and James denotes the fact that any such event can be initiated only from the position of integration, unification and oneness of all principles of Love and Goodness (John); Wisdom and Truth (Peter) and Positive Works and Faith (James). Only from this position can My True Nature be experienced apart from its physical human nature. That I took them on a high mountain (Matthew and Mark recorded the word '*high*' whereas Luke omits the word '*high*'), denotes taking them to the very core of the positive state, signified here by the word '*mountain*.' In proximity to everything else, a mountain is always high. So, this word in itself implies its high elevation. It denotes the fact that My positive state is above all and everything. That I went there to pray signifies My state of meditation and shift from a typical human state of externals to the proper spiritual state of internals (prayer). Only in this state can anything spiritual and true be discerned and understood. No other state is conducive to any such perception and understanding.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Verse 29: *And as He prayed, the appearance of His face was altered, and His robe became white and glistening.* In the process of the shift to the internals, and in the process of establishment of the state of integration of all aspects of My Nature (the process of praying), My True and Genuine Nature is manifested, anchored in the State of My Absolute Innocence and My Absolute Positiveness, free of any contamination, pollution and poison of anything from the negative state and from the negative aspects of human nature (appearance of My face was altered and My robe became white and glistening).

Verse 30-31: *Then behold, two men talked with Him, who were Moses and Elijah, who appeared in glory and spoke of His decease which He was about to accomplish at Jerusalem.* Talking with two men signifies expressing all things from the position of proper understanding of everything from the position of a lawful arrangement of all aspects of the positive state, as well as of the negative state, for the purpose of accomplishing one of the most important steps in the process of salvation of all from the negative state and for building a firm foundation on which the negative state's elimination will be possible. Moses was representing all the laws and principles that could not be fulfilled by anyone on planet Zero or in the negative state. All these laws were not only not fulfilled but they were completely broken and violated. Elijah was representing the fulfillment of all prophecies regarding the ways of how all these things could be accomplished and established. From that position, the three of us were discussing all aspects of My Divine Destiny and how no other possibilities existed for the accomplishment of My goals but only through the experience of the death of My physical body by means of crucifixion and by entering all the Hells in general, and the Hells of the pseudo-creators in particular, and by locking them up for a long period of time. We were also discussing the outcome of all these events and how it will contribute to the total elimination of the negative state and activation of the fullness and completeness of life in the positive state. That Moses and Elijah appeared in their glory signifies in the state of their true nature - without any signs of anything typically human in the negative aspects of its nature. 'To be in one's glory' means to be in total freedom and independence from anything evil, false and negative and thus, to be in one's true nature.

Verse 32: *But Peter and those with him were heavy with sleep; and when they were fully awake, they saw His glory and the two men who stood with Him.* Being in heavy sleep means to be in the deep state of inwardness. In your old terms, Peter, it means to be in a deep hypnotic trance (plenary state). Only in such a state could they transcend their

human limitations and external impositions and wake up in a state of higher awareness and ability to see things in their true essence and substance. Being in deep sleep and from that condition to wake up, does not mean literally waking up, but transcendence into the state beyond and above sleep. This was known in your professional circles, Peter, as a plenary state of hypnosis. So, in this particular case, Peter, John and James were put into the deepest state of their within from which state they were awakened into the plenary state, the state that integrates everything of which they consisted in the totality of their unique personalities and individualities. Only in such a state could they discern My True Nature and the true nature of those present with Me (Moses and Elijah), denoted here by their glory.

Verse 33: *And it happened, as they were parting from Him, that Peter said to Jesus, "Master, it is good for us to be here; and let us make three tabernacles: one for You, one for Moses, and one for Elijah" — not knowing what he said.* The process of those two parting from Me, for Peter and the other two was the process of returning into their previous external human condition. In this condition they are confused and don't know what is going on with the exception that somehow they sense that it is the state to be in for eternity because it is the most beautiful and the most desirable state to be in. For that reason, from the position of the truth of the matter, represented here by Peter, he wants to establish a condition which would enable them to stay in that state indefinitely without having any conscious knowledge of what it is that they desire or wish. It is in this transitional state in which the next event happens, as depicted in verses 34-36.

Verses 34-36: *While he was saying this, a cloud came and overshadowed them; and they were fearful as they entered the cloud. Then a voice came out of the cloud, saying, "This is My beloved Son. Hear Him." And when the voice had ceased, Jesus was found alone.* Because now, as Peter was talking, they were in a transitional phase from the state of their integrated inwardness to their typical and usual external human state; in that phase everything appears confusing, intangible, clouded and obscure. The experience of this nature raises the emotion of fear. This is a state of ignorance and obscurity in which nothing is clear. In it a separation is perceived between something which is impossible to understand and discern in itself and by itself and something which is physically real and tangible. To hear a voice in this state means to have some obscure awareness that there is more to all of this than what they can grasp and understand by their human mind and that it is the originating source of that which they can grasp and understand. In this

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

case, My physical aspects, as a human being, are understandable and discernable. On the other hand, My origin is not. Therefore, that origin is perceived as the voice of My Father, who acknowledges Me as His Beloved Son Whom they should hear, listen to and follow. The spiritual indication of this request — to hear Me, or to follow Me — is indicative of the fact that I as the Beloved Son of the One in the Cloud, Am the only One Who can provide you with anything that you need in all aspects of your life. And because no one else exists who can do so, the logic of this fact leads you to the conclusion that I am the Only True God, Who, temporarily and for the time being, chose to separate Myself from My Divine Essence and combine certain of My elements with some human aspects in order to become a typical human. And this is one aspect of the event of My transfiguration that can be revealed at this time.

The relevance of this event for you and for these times is contained in the emphasis on the fact that you need to constantly keep in your mind how important it is to see things behind the scene and not at the scene; and how important it is to be in the state of integrated inwardness with the conscious awareness of that state. Only in this type of state are you able to discern and to understand all things in clarity of their essence and substance without any distortions and falsifications so typical of human nature. That way, you will truly become My true representatives. And this is all that I wanted to convey to you today. Have a very spiritually profitable day.

Peter: Thank You very much for this reminder and for everything.

Seventy Fourth Dialog

April 29, 1999

Peter: During a few days break from dialoging I have received some questions from the East Coast (from Kevin, the photographer) and from Slovakia (from Alena). Some of these questions have been answered many times over in the process of transmission of the entirety of Your New Revelation. Perhaps, because our people are asking them, some of their other aspects need to be brought into the foreground of our attention. However, before going into formulating and conveying these questions, I would like to give You an opportunity to talk first and tell us if You have anything to contribute this windy and very cold (for Santa Barbara) morning.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for offering Me to talk first. Yes, it is very windy and cold for your type of climate. In some ways, it reflects the overall instability, confusion, unpredictability and chaos wreaked by the insane renegades. And yes, I would like to talk about something this morning before addressing the presented questions. Actually, I would like to touch upon two issues.

The first issue relates to the topic discussed in the previous Dialog (73rd). It relates to the event of My transfiguration on the high mountain. One aspect of this transfiguration was not mentioned at that time but which, for some of you, may have some comforting significance. My transfiguration illustrated and demonstrated to all present and watching that the manifestation of one's spirit and soul takes place through a certain type of visible and perceptible medium. In the case of humans, for example, their spirit and soul are manifested through their physical bodies, which are perceptible by all human senses (you can see, hear, smell, touch and even taste them). When this human body dies, it disintegrates into its elemental particles from which it was created by the ideas of its spirit and soul. Because of this observable phenomenon, some people on your planet concluded that, perhaps, the spirit and soul cannot be sensed or perceived by any of the regular five human senses, the ability of which to do so is attributed to the existence of the human physical body. In their view, the spirit and soul either don't exist at all independently of their physical bodies, or they are some kind of vapor or something like that, unable to manifest themselves in a tangible manner without such a body.

On the other hand, some of your so-called mystics postulated the existence of different types of bodies (the so-called astral bodies, for example) which coexist with the external physical bodies and which take over its function following its physical death. Although their assumption is somewhat

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

skewed or distorted, and in some cases, totally false, the postulation of the existence of some type of medium through which one's spirit and soul manifest their unique being and existence, is a correct one. One of the important purposes of My transfiguration, although not the only one, was to demonstrate and illustrate this fact. In the process of that event, I shifted from the typical human body to the other type of body which was hidden behind the external physical body (if you can say it that way!) and which was built from entirely different elements than anything conceivable by your human external mind.

From this fact you can conceptualize that any spirit and its soul, which is located in the physical dimension of planet Zero, has a temporary body, through which and by which it discharges its unique life while residing in any external physical environment, and a permanent nonphysical body through which and by which it manifests itself in all other nonphysical dimensions. The difference between these two bodies is in the fact that whereas the physical body is transient and subject to decay, aging and dying, the nonphysical body is not subject to such a destructive process. It can change its form, shape, appearance, and anything else related to its function, as needed and if needed, but it cannot cease to be and to exist as the other one does.

Why is it so? This ability and need stem from the nature of the spirit and its soul itself. As you remember from the previous discussion about these issues, each sentient entity, including humans, consists of three inseparable aspects: the most within aspect, called spirit; the interior aspect, called soul; and the exterior aspect, called body. What is spirit and what is soul? In itself and by itself, apart from its soul and its body, spirit is non-tangible, non-perceptible and non-discernible because it is in a constant state and process of pure individualized, personalized and unique energy, pure thought, pure idea, pure reality and pure essence and substance of its life. Thus, it is an idea of pure life force that generates and produces all else. Because of these types of functions, in itself and by itself, the spirit's nature cannot be sensed by external modes of perception. After all, it is the state of pure inwardness.

However, from the purity of its state and process, the spirit constantly generates pure ideas of its form and medium of manifestation and appearance to any external perception. From such ideas it creates its soul. Soul, in this respect, can be conceptualized as an extension and process of its spirit by which and through which it enables itself to self-perceive and to self-sense, as well as to perceive and to sense everything outside itself. For the purpose of being sensed and perceived by the outsideness or outwardness, in order to fulfill its major life obligation for sharing and reciprocating, from the pure idea of this need, together with its soul, it

creates a specific and unique body through which and by which it can accomplish this most fundamental goal and purpose rooted in its very being and existence.

This nature of the spirit, of course, reflects My Absolute Nature. As you know, everyone's spirit and soul is patterned in accordance with the blueprint provided by My Absolute Nature. I am the only Absolute Pure Spirit Who in an absolute sense generates all absolute ideas of life, any life. I am the only Absolute Pure Soul Who in an absolute sense generates all perceptive and sensible factors of life, any life. I am the only Absolute Pure Body Who in an absolute sense makes it possible for life, any life, to be externally tangible and perceptible by all and everything. Because this structure is a blueprint for any creation, as well as for the pseudo-creation, everyone else is structured in the same manner relative to My Absolute Condition.

Talking about different types of bodies, you can conceptualize the existence of the spiritual body, mental or soul body and physical or external body. On planet Zero, in addition to these bodies, another type of body was fabricated which is accommodated only to the pseudo-life on this particular planet. Because of that, it is able to survive, on a temporary basis, only in the environment, sphere and atmosphere which exists only on this planet. As you know, in order to make Myself familiar also to humans, for the purpose of their ultimate salvation, I chose by My own free will and choice, to incarnate on planet Zero and to acquire a typical human body, through which and by which I became the completeness and fullness of all states and processes in Creation and pseudo-creation.

So, to summarize our somewhat philosophical detour, it is obvious that tangibility, perceptibility, sensibility, discernibility and comprehensibility of the spirit and its soul are the very ideas of the spirit itself in order not to be considered a state of something that doesn't have any sense. Because these factors are generated by the spirit's ideas through its soul, the ability of the body, any body, to see, to hear, to smell, to taste and to touch is not of, by and from the body itself but of, by and from the spirit and its soul through its body which the spirit created for that very purpose. In this respect you can conceptualize that the spirit and its soul always are clothed with their specific and unique bodies, which are a reflection of their unique spirit and soul. That this is so was proven by My transfiguration on the high mountain where I appeared in My Spiritual Body which was as discernible and perceptible as any other body. Because of that My three disciples were able to see not only Me but also Moses and Elijah. That they saw also Moses and Elijah, who were long dead in their understanding of this fact, illustrates two important things: One, that sentient entities in the spiritual world are not some kind of air, wind, fluff or whatever, but they

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

are as real, as perceptible, as tangible and as alive as anyone on planet Zero, and even more so. And second, it totally refutes some Christians' belief that whoever dies will stay dead until I resurrect them from their death during My Second Coming and the Last Judgment. If this were true, in no way could Moses and Elijah appear with Me on the mountain and talk with Me about important events. Thus, this event proves beyond a shadow of a doubt that whoever dies on planet Zero, is shortly after that resurrected in their other spiritual-soul bodies and they continue in their lives in a real, concrete, perceptible and tangible manner.

The second issue that I wanted to bring up this morning is somewhat practical as compared with the above more theoretical and somewhat philosophical issue. It will be a nice balancing as well as a transition to your questions, Peter. It relates to your concerns, Peter, that some, in fact, only very few individuals, who have been receiving our Dialogs, as of this date, have not provided you with any feedback — either positive or negative. You are somewhat puzzled and you are not sure whether to continue sending them these Dialogs or not. You are afraid that, unless some feedback is given to you, your action in this respect may be considered an imposition.

Consider this, Peter: Neither of these four individuals informed you to stop bothering them by sending them our Dialogs; nor did they give you any negative feedback. As you say in your human life, no news is good news. Your intuition clearly was telling you to continue sending them our Dialogs even if no feedback was available to you. Listen to your intuition. Unless they explicitly ask you to stop doing so, I would recommend to continue in providing them with our Dialogs. You don't consciously know whether they are not benefiting from their ideas and content.

On the other hand, don't ever forget that the vast majority of people who have been receiving our Dialogs not only with great elation and gratitude provided you with the most positive and uplifting feedback, but they also gave you support, either financial or moral or both. And this brings Me to the point where I would very much like to join you, Peter, and express My personal thankfulness, gratitude and appreciation to Dr. Beth Ann Voien and Dr. Ardyth Norem who recently, as well as in the past, have provided our important and vital cause with a very generous financial contribution; to Tom Oudal who at least twice-three times a year gives his generous financial support to our cause; to Pearl McCallum, Helen Soderberg, Kathleen Brady, Brian Mullany, Alice Good and some others for their meaningful financial support; and to all others, whose financial hardships and constraints don't allow them to make financial contributions but who contribute in other ways, such as for example, helping in editing, translating and morally supporting us in our important and crucial work.

Their support is, of course, as valuable and as needed as any other type. They are all needed and very much appreciated.

Now, our discussion in no way should be interpreted as an attempt to solicit financial or any other support from anyone. We have never asked anyone for anything and we'll continue in doing so. However, if anyone is moved from their own within, by their own free will and choice, to make such contributions, whether financial or any other, they are welcome to do so provided they don't feel compelled or forced by any external or imposing factors or considerations. And this is all that I wanted to talk about this morning. You may go ahead, Peter, and ask your questions on behalf of Kevin, the photographer, and Alena.

Peter: Because Kevin's question was submitted a few days ago, and Alenka's questions came only yesterday, I am going to submit to You Kevin's question first, if I may.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You may, Peter, it is the right way to proceed.

Peter: Kevin is wondering about the issue of privacy in the positive state. Is there any or is it needed? His scenario is, if someone converts to the positive state and that someone was perhaps a murderer or a rapist on planet Zero as a human, would all positive entities know this and how would it relate to the 'daily' affairs of those who would come in contact with this now positive entity.

The Lord Jesus Christ: It all depends on how the term 'privacy' is being understood by all of you. In a typical human understanding, this term signifies keeping to oneself and not sharing anything that one considers to be of his/her own affairs which is of no concern to anyone else. From this understanding of the concept — 'privacy,' you may conclude that in human life there is a need to hide or conceal something or to be discrete about something. In some ways, in human life, privacy serves some protective function, protecting you from possible jealousy, envy, greed, misunderstanding and misinterpretation of your situation and your personal life by some others of the human kind.

In this particular sense, in the positive state, the issue of privacy is not an issue at all. Simply stated, there is no need for this type of privacy. However, don't forget that life in the positive state is founded on individualization, personalization and privatization. Every individual is unique and different. This arrangement requires a setup which would provide each individual with infinite possibilities of actualizing, realizing and manifesting their own individuality, personality and uniqueness. Because everyone is infinitely different and unique, they all have infinitely

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

different and unique needs. By the factor of this setup, each individual is very private and very individualized in his/her needs.

So, in the positive state, the term 'private' doesn't signify the need for concealment or hiding or for any other security or protective reasons but instead, it means to be in one's own nature, absolutely unique and different from anyone else's nature. This specific need stems from the fact that a unique element, or to be precise, its idea from My Absolute Nature was imparted on each and every individual in order to provide that individual with his/her own unique life and its unique manifestation. This is a very private matter which is between Me and each and every individual.

However, as you know, one of the major purposes of life is to manifest that uniqueness and individuality, or the idea of My very specific and unique element, for the purpose of sharing it with all other uniquenesses and individualities. In this particular connotation, no need for privacy, by the process of denying oneself and one's uniqueness to anyone else who desires to share and to know, exists or can be conceived. Such a notion as this type of privacy had not been implanted in anyone's mind in the positive state. Because of that, every individual is an open book, so-to-speak.

On the other hand, the situation is somewhat different with those who converted to the positive state and, while in human life, committed some kind of atrocity and abomination (murder or rape, for example). In the process of their spiritual transformation, after they experienced full retribution and punishment for their deeds, by the factor of punishment and retribution itself, their deeds were separated from them entirely and placed in the Universality-Of-It-All or Guardian-Of-Forever or, in Biblical terms, in the Lake of Fire and Brimstone, where they are retained to eternity for the learning of all what never to choose and how never ever to be or to behave or to act. Due to the fact of this separation, their deeds are erased from their memories and they are never ever reminded of them or brought to their attention. If someone goes to the mentioned area for learning, and if that learner happens to come across these particular deeds (murder or rape), the deeds themselves are being experienced but not who committed them. In this case, the privacy of the individual who committed them is absolutely preserved.

From this fact you may conclude that in the positive state no one is interested in who the individual was who committed such deeds but that such deeds were committed at all for some very important reasons and learning for all. This is the reason why I stated several times that I will blot out their transgressions and will not remember them. The way you have to understand this statement is that these transgressions will be totally blotted out or permanently removed from the individual in question

and no one will know or remember, including the individual himself/herself, that he/she was the one who committed them.

The reason why it was, is and will be necessary to have these types of arrangements, is because if any such individuals were to remember what they did or what kinds of atrocities and abominations they committed, their memories would be tormenting them constantly and as a result of the guilt factor induced by such memories, they could not accept the life in the positive state. They simply would feel that in no way would they deserve anything available to them in the life of the positive state. And not only that, but their guilt and tormenting memories would be adversely influencing everyone else in the positive state, turning the positive state very fast into the negative state. In that case, the negative state would have to stay forever, and no possibility would exist for the establishment of the fullness and completeness of life of the positive state. This is the reason why it was stated that not only will I blot out all their transgressions, sins or whatever, but that I also will permanently erase them from their memories. Thus, as you see from this revelation, the evil and negative deeds of any individual's life committed while on planet Zero and in all other regions of the Zone of Displacement and its Hells, remain absolutely private not only in regard to everyone else but also to that individual himself/herself. There is no need to remember them or retain them in one's memory.

However, should any improbable and impossible need arise to remind that individual of his/her deeds, these deeds could always be pulled out from the Universality-Of-It-All, and his/her memories about them, as well as his/her former identity, could temporarily be restored. The way it would be done, in order to preserve the total and complete privacy of his/her case, would be by temporarily placing that individual in the Universality-Of-It-All, having him/her recognize his/her former self and what kinds of deeds he/she committed. And this is all that you need to know at this time about this issue.

Peter: Thank You very much for this meaningful and nice explanation. Let me formulate or translate Alenka's questions. She has four of them. I will present them one by one in order to simplify the matter. Her first question is: What kind of correspondence does fear have? What kind of outcome does it have for the spiritual and mental life of a human? How does it influence the connection, whether conscious or unconscious, with other dimensions and what kind of consequences has it on the physical level?

The Lord Jesus Christ: In order to properly understand the concept of fear, it is necessary to look into the genesis of fear. As you know, fear is a negative emotion which does not have any place or meaning in the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

positive state. Throughout My New Revelation, as well as in these Dialogs, we have already discussed most of the aspects of the genesis of the negative state. All that applies also to the concept of fear. Because before the activation of the negative state, fear didn't exist, it was necessary first to invent the concept of fear as such, then, once the concept or notion or idea of fear was discovered, to produce certain conditions under which fear could appear and establish itself in the lives of sentient and non-sentient entities (animals). How do you go about producing or inventing the notion or idea of fear itself? After all, nothing comparable existed by which and from which the pseudo-creators could deduce such an unusual-for-those-times notion or idea. As you remember from the previous Dialog (73), the issue they faced was separation, split, isolation, distortion and disunion of all spiritual principles, and of principles of masculinity and femininity and femininity and masculinity. In the process of this pseudo-creative endeavor, by the nature of the process itself, as a side effect of this split, separation, etc., many unusual states, conditions, emotions, thoughts and feelings appeared that had not been conceivable or possible until that particular time. In some ways, their appearance was totally unexpected by the pseudo-creators.

This situation is comparable to present-time discoveries, during which, by experimenting with some type of medication, for example, the reason it is tested doesn't produce the desirable results but, by the so-called coincidental testing (in their view), its effectiveness and positive results are found in a totally unexpected condition. So, in our case, the pseudo-creators, being the outstanding scientists of their own time, carefully analyzed and categorized each occurring new states, emotions, feelings, thoughts or whatever was occurring in the process of the mentioned split. They observed all effects, consequences, results and outcomes of any new occurring mental or physical phenomenon. They did expect that as the process of this split was taking place, it would produce something new, unusual and totally unexpected. As they experimented with each such new occurrence, they noticed a certain emotion that produced very peculiar mental and physical symptoms. A tendency to withdraw, run, escape, tremble, panic, strike out, cry and hide, and similar states, accompanied by all kinds of physical symptoms which didn't occur in any other situations, led the pseudo-creators toward classifying this condition as fear. Thus, fear was born and established in the life of sentient and non-sentient entities who were positioned in the negative state and on planet Zero.

By studying this concept, the pseudo-creators were able to capitalize on it and, through a certain type of genetic and other type of manipulation and experimentation of correspondences, they were able to fabricate a specific gene conducive to the production of fear. They coupled that gene with anything which was unfamiliar and unexplainable or which was familiar

but, at the same time, dangerous to pseudo-life itself. From this, the concept of familiarity was deduced and established. Anything familiar and non-dangerous, didn't produce fear and the need to avoid it. On the other hand, anything unfamiliar and dangerous produced instant fear and the need to avoid it or run from it, or escape from it or hide from it, etc.

A good example of this situation can be found in My walking on the sea during the storm toward the boat of My disciples. Such a phenomenon was not familiar to them. A human being couldn't walk on the sea. So, they had to conclude that I was some kind of ghost because, in their view, only a ghost could do something like that. Therefore, they were exceedingly afraid and cried out of fear. Once they realized that it was really Me, they lost their fear. However, Simon Peter, in order to test Me, asked Me if he could walk toward Me on the sea. I granted him that desire and he started to walk. But because such an act was utterly unfamiliar to him, he experienced fear and as a result, began to drown. Or take another example: I was sleeping inside the boat (after all, I did have a human body which needed some physical rest), and a huge storm, almost of hurricane proportions developed. Now, such an occurrence was familiar to them but in a negative way. The familiarity of this situation was associated with the danger of perishing and dying. So, they woke Me up, rebuking Me that I didn't care that they were all perishing. As you know, I stood up and commanded the storm to cease — which it did. But how did they react to My intervention? Now they became fearful of Me because something like that event — My command to the storm to cease its fury and to the sea to calm down — was utterly unfamiliar to them. No human being had ever been able to do something of that nature.

From this explanation and these examples you can clearly see that, although in some human situations fear is considered to have a protective function, its spiritual and mental impact has a negative connotation. Usually, it stems from an inability to understand and, as a result, to accept something on its face value. Therefore, it distorts the true reality and very often, it totally falsifies it. These particular properties of fear — to distort, falsify, misunderstand and reject — were effectively utilized by the pseudo-creators, and they successfully implanted them in their fabrications so that they would be prevented from understanding and accepting the true reality of the positive state and its true life. Because of this setup, fear in human life, from the spiritual and mental standpoint, is a means to distort, falsify and misperceive the true reality of any life or anything else for that matter. Thus, you can say for sure that fear corresponds to the state of distortion, falsification, misunderstanding, rejection, avoidance, misperception and spiritual blindness. Anyone who is in the state of fear, cannot properly communicate with anyone in other dimensions. And not only that, but fear attracts certain contingents of creatures and sub-creatures in the Hells

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

who both feed on fear and produce it, as well as maintain its state in anyone who is experiencing it. Thus, through the state of fear, one is connected to these types of creatures and sub-creatures in the Hells who, by its means, influence and dictate the conditions of life of the fearful one. Due to the fact that fear produces constant tension and stress within one's overall system, its physical repercussions are very obvious. It may lead to high blood pressure, heart attacks, strokes, ulcers and many other adverse physical conditions, all capable of leading to the death of one's physical body.

Peter: Thank You very much for this contribution. Alenka's next question, in my opinion, was extensively answered both in these Dialogs and the other books of the New Revelation. She is asking the following: What is the origin of negative thoughts, particularly if they are very often, very intensely and against our will, present in our mind? What is their spiritual correspondence? Is it possible to defend ourselves against them? I believe the answer to this question is contained, among other things, in the 43rd, 44th and 46th, as well as in some other Dialogs, in ***Corollaries...*** and in ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***. (especially in Chapters 11, 12, 13 and 16). Possibly, the mentioned Dialogs have not been translated yet into the Slovak language. Would you like to address this issue anyway?

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are right, Peter; in some way all books of My New Revelation contain the answer to her question and especially, how to ward off such negative thoughts. Nevertheless, let us reiterate some aspects of this issue. As with everything else in the negative state, whatever it contains, whatever its nature is and the way everyone in it and in human life functions, has never had any place or has never been considered by anyone in the positive state. So, as you know, negative thoughts were invented by the pseudo-creators by the means of careful analysis of all thoughts and ideas that had been occurring in everyone's mind at that time. In the process of the above described split and disintegration, one of the side effects of that process was the birth of negative thoughts and ideas. The way you have to understand this fact is that once you eliminate the state of integration, unification, oneness and cohesiveness, by that process itself, you produce negative thoughts and ideas integral to the opposite of these positive states. In a way, they are the 'natural' outcomes of such a process. This is how most, if not all, negative things were born at that time. From that point on, once they were born, it didn't take a very long time to establish a lifestyle congruent to their nature. Because human life is built on the premises of the negative state, such negative thoughts and ideas are ingrained in their minds, or, to be precise, in their pseudo-minds. As you know, the vast majority of people function only from the position of their pseudo-minds. Because they

disregard their true minds or their true selves, and derive everything from their pseudo-minds and ego states, rooted in the externals, they are imbued with nothing else but negative thoughts and ideas. So, as long as you live in human life, and function in your human body, such negative thoughts, ideas, feelings, emotions, or whatever you have, are inevitable to have, to experience and to exhibit. The superimposed pseudo-mind in its three spheres on your true mind and its own three spheres, intrudes and imposes them on you on a continuous basis. On the other hand, don't forget what you were told in My New Revelation about certain negative guardians and demons specifically assigned to guard your pseudo-mind. It is their domain. Not only do they guard it from anything positive and good, but they place everything negative and bad (negative thoughts and bad ideas) into it and they feed you, as well as in return, they are being fed by them. Hence, inevitability to have such negative thoughts and feelings almost on an involuntary basis.

On many occasions, throughout My New Revelation, and especially in the above-mentioned Dialogs, you have been instructed how to deal with them in your everyday life. To repeat again: As My true representatives, whenever such thoughts or ideas enter your mind, you immediately dissociate yourself from them, acknowledging that they are not yours but that they are being imposed on you contrary to your free will and choice. As you are stating this fact, immediately give them to Me, and I will dispense with them as needed and in the most appropriate way, and upon your request I will replace them only with positive thoughts and ideas. You are encouraged to exercise this effort. In the moment you recognize in your mind such an intrusion of negative thoughts or ideas, reject them on the spot and instantly replace them with some positive thoughts or ideas. If you do this exercise long enough, you will notice that, at one point in time, such negative thoughts and ideas, themselves, will be less and less intruding into your mind. In this respect, good practice is to countermand these intrusions by saying the New Prayer of The Lord Jesus Christ or by reading a page from any of the books of My New Revelation or in these Dialogs. This type of approach not only will be helping you, but you will also be helping all those negative entities that are producing such thoughts and ideas in your mind and to which they are attached. By seeing and experiencing your process in this respect, they will be in a position for their conversion to the positive state. As you see, this is one important step toward the elimination of the negative state.

Peter: Thank You very much for this timely reminder. Alenka's next question is about the meaning of colors and their correspondences.

The Lord Jesus Christ: A spiritual danger exists in the particular knowledge of color's correspondences. It could be, and it already has been

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

misused by some. The problem with humans is that they have a dangerous tendency to ascribe to the objects themselves, in this case to colors, properties or potentials that they don't possess. As mentioned before, it is their corresponding spiritual function which has them, and not the objects or colors themselves. Also, if you reveal to humans, and this includes also all of you, the true correspondences of colors, they would have a tendency to apply certain colors most inappropriately in their lives. Such an inappropriate application could lead to dangerous outcomes. Therefore, at this time, it would be premature to reveal their true meaning. Perhaps later on, when the situation would be more favorable, some aspects of colors' mysteries and their spiritual correspondences could be revealed.

Peter: I understand. Her next and last question is actually a request for clarification. Are there any changes about eating meat, the way it was described in the ***Corollaries...*** or is that description still valid?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, it is valid and it always will be valid, as long as you are living on planet Zero. Don't forget one very important statement that I made during My physical life on planet Zero. It is not what you put in your mouth that defiles you (I am paraphrasing this) or causes you problems, but what is coming out of it which does so. In other words, you can eat anything you want, no matter what it is, if you do it in moderation and for the sake of supplying the necessary energy needed for your body. Spiritually speaking, nothing is hurtful or harmful to you, if you do it with the right approach, for the right reasons, and with the right intention and motivation. It is entirely up to your own personal and individual responsibility to determine with what attitude, intention, purpose and motivation you eat, or fast, or diet, or exercise or do anything in this respect. The **act** of eating or **what** you eat in itself and by itself has no meaning apart from its purpose and needs. Your motivation, intention, purpose, attitude and approach — these are what count. Because they are yours, and you are responsible for them, it is always between Me and you. Therefore, if you wish, you may approach Me with this question in order to help you to determine this factor and establish a lifestyle most congruent to your own personalized and individualized needs. And this is all that we need to discuss today. Have a wonderful day.

Peter: Thank You very much for Your willingness to put up with our questions.

Seventy Fifth Dialog

April 30, 1999

Peter: Yesterday, after I finished recording the Seventy Fourth Dialog, I received a letter from a man, unknown to me, in Slovakia, who brought to my attention a possible contradiction or inconsistency in **The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ**. He is asking for an explanation of the following contradiction: In the **Introduction** of that book, it is stated that, *“The Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ does not contain any inclination whatsoever to command, to force, to impose, to order or to intimidate anything on anyone.”* However, in Chapter Two of that book, on page 37 (English version, Second Printing), You stated, regarding the change in the wording of Your prayer, *“By the authority and order of The Lord Jesus Christ... .”* Would You like to make any comments about this discrepancy?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, I would gladly make a comment on this seeming problem or contradiction. Look at it in what connotation both statements were made. In the **Introduction** we were setting up a condition under which the reading of My New Revelation should be undertaken. It had a general connotation related to all who would be in a position to read My New Revelation. Under no condition should such reading be considered as binding, impositional, demanding, threatening, judgmental, condemning and forcing one to change anything contrary to his/her own free will and choice. That statement talks directly to people who read our book, spelling out to them how its content should be considered. It does not relate to the words of that book itself.

On the other hand, the statement on page 37 relates to the need to change the wording of what had been known until that time as The Lord's Prayer. Who is the author of the words contained in that prayer? I am the author. If, for example, you had written a book and it was subsequently published in its first edition, and a few years later, when you were considering issuing a second edition, you faced the need to change certain words or wording, maybe even delete or add something, etc. Who has the authority over any change in your book? You have that authority, and from the position of your own authority you give an order to your editor and publisher to change the wording in some places of your book. Your order concerns only and only the content or wording of that book. In no way are you ordering or commanding your publisher and editor to change their own mode of life, or the way they behave, talk, dress or live their lives in general, or the way they relate to your book in general. So, your command or order is issued and relates, in fact, only to

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

yourself as the author of your book. It has no relevance to anyone else as far as their own behavior and lifestyle are concerned. This is the way you have to understand and to interpret the mentioned seeming contradiction. Your response to the author of the mentioned Slovak letter was a correct one.

Peter: Thank You very much for Your explanation and corroboration. The same day I received an E-mail from Slovakia, asking about the philosophy and meaning of the New Age movement. Any comment on that?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, throughout the books of My New Revelation, many things were said and explained about that movement. For example, your article, Peter, contained in the ***Corollaries...***, about ***“A Course in Miracles”*** which is considered to be a pinnacle of the New Age movement, is a good illustration and explanation of some aspects of that movement and its spiritual danger for those who accept and follow its teachings.

As was mentioned in one of the previous Dialogs, you can consider this movement as a reaction to and a rebellion against the dogmatic, rigid and restrictive ideologies of traditional Christianity and Islam, for example. Also as a rebellion against the danger posed by the nuclear age; against the environmental abuses, misuses and disasters; against the use of all kinds of artificial enhancements in food processing, in growing of plants and in animal feed, and in similar matters. In general, it is a rebellion against the old lifestyle, the way people lived their lives and the way they treated each other and especially their environment.

In their philosophical pursuit, the New Age movement turned its face toward something which was either unavailable, or was restricted, or judged inappropriate for Western culture. The novelty and the mystery of something unknown or inaccessible up to a certain point, fascinated the members and founders of that movement. Because up to that point, the only well-known philosophy and religion accessible for them was of Western-type and Christianity, they basically turned away from it, and looked toward Eastern Mystical teachings contained, for example, in Buddhism, Hinduism, and some other Eastern religions and so-called spiritual teachings. So, in essence, their philosophy derives from these types of teachings adopted and tailored to the needs of a typical Western man/woman.

As you know, replacement of the Christian and Western philosophy with the Eastern one, does not change too much in matters of spiritual truth

and how it is conceived, perceived, understood and practiced. They are dogmatic, ritualistic and literal. Because of that, they are all superficial, external, and spiritually blind. In their philosophy, they all contain nothing but distortions and falsities.

So, what has been accomplished so far by the New Age movement? It replaced one dogmatic, ritualistic and externalized approach with another one. And not only that but, in some ways, even more so than before, it turned away from the true inner spiritual factors to ritualistic, external factors. It placed all values, purpose and meaning of life into something that has no meaning, value and purpose in itself and by itself. An example of this is the use of very specific, so-called organic foods and diets, the use of colors, the use of aromas, the use of certain types of fragrances, magnets, herbs, minerals and many other similar means which have no spiritual impact on anyone or anything but which only pleases the pockets of their manufacturers. They improperly assign to these products something that they don't contain — healing from all ills of the negative state without recognizing that the negative state even exists.

As you remember from ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***, it was indicated there that one of the major aspects of the New Age philosophy is its emphasis on love without wisdom. The danger of this approach is obvious: Love without wisdom is blind. It is unable to see the true roots of human problems and the nature of the negative state. Because of that, New Age followers have a tendency to deny that such a thing as the negative state with all its Hells exists at all.

In one of the previous Dialogs, we have already extensively discussed the use of non-traditional medical approaches by the New Age people. It is not necessary to repeat it here again. Therefore, I am referring the Slovak inquirer to that particular Dialog to refresh his memory.

In your particular case, as My true representatives, you are strongly advised not to be preoccupied with anything related to the New Age movement and not to buy into its spiritually dangerous philosophy. Of course, as always, it is up to your own free will and choice to follow or not to follow this advice. In one of the previous Dialogs it has already been explained why it is dangerous and especially why it is tremendously dangerous to mix the ideas of My New Revelation with the ideas and practices of the New Age movement. Again, I am referring everyone to that particular Dialog.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Peter: Thank You for this timely reminder. It always amazes me why it is that even our own people, those who read and practice Your New Revelation, are preoccupied so much with these types of movements. It would seem very obvious to me that, after reading Your New Revelation several times, one should be able to have all necessary answers to these types of questions and to clearly see how useless and spiritually dangerous such movements are. What is the matter with our people that not only are they preoccupied with these movements, but, some of them, even practice their methods and sell their products?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, Peter, don't forget that those movements, or what they promise and contain in their philosophy, can be very charming and attractive. Also, in many instances, by using their products, one could begin to feel physically invigorated, stronger and healthier. This is how the trap of the negative state is set. As you like to say it, Peter, although the negative state is insane, it is not stupid. How does it operate, in order to attract people to its side and subsequently trap them into its clutches? By making things in their properties effective, charming, beautiful, attractive and pleasurable. Otherwise, no one would buy into their claims.

As you clearly remember, in order for the negative state to be effective in its function and illustration, it requires being loved. Someone has to love it so that it can live, flourish and spread. If the negative state would appear to its followers the way it is portrayed by the Catholic Church, for example, as a very ugly, mean, gruesome, repulsive, despicable and murderous demonic face, no one would ever be attracted to its cause. The cunning of the negative state is not in being that way, but in being just the opposite. Its nature was formed in such a manner so that it would be very easy and comfortable to accept all its claims. Otherwise, it would have no way of surviving and manifesting its true nature. Do you think that Satan or the devil looks like he is being portrayed by all those numerous artists, book authors and movie producers on your planet? Absolutely not! To his followers, in fact, he looks like one of the most beautiful persons you could have ever imagined or experienced. Of course, we are talking here about the looks of the pseudo-creators who were called by such names as Satan and the devil.

What you have to understand in this respect is that the inward spiritual state of the so-called Satan or the devil is really as it is being portrayed on your planet in your artwork, movies, books and television programs. However, outwardly, it is an entirely different story. Why do you think one of the most important factors of the negative state's life, on which it stands and falls, is turning everything to and judging everything by

external appearances and not by their internal states, dispositions and conditions? Exactly for that reason — so that it could be accepted and loved. Otherwise, it would have no recourse but to fail miserably in its effort to establish and to manifest its pseudo-life.

This fact is another example of the genesis of the negative state. As you know, in order to activate the negative state, it was necessary to violate and break the fundamental rule, principle and law on which My Creation is founded — the state of inwardness is the originating point from which everything else proceeds and becomes its own process. Because of this rule, it is the state of internals and what it contains or how it looks, in its true nature, that counts.

However, under this rule it would be impossible to activate the negative state in any of its aspects. So, in order to conceal what would happen if the negative state were to be activated or how its internal state would look, it was necessary to close off the ability of all participants in its life to see, to discern, to consider and to understand the state of the internals. If the true value of the positive state could be found only in the state of internals, and from it in all its other derivatives, situated in the externals or in between, then, obviously, the true value of the negative state had to be placed in the externals and from that position also in all its derivatives. If you close off the way to the internals, you have no choice in the matter but, first of all, to deny that anything of the inner or internal nature even exists and, secondly, you would derive everything from and place all your hopes, knowledge, understanding, or whatever you have, in the only thing you consider to be real — the externals or the outsides or in what you see, hear, sense, smell and touch with your external physical sensory organs. All else would be intangible for you.

So, you make everything in the negative state look outwardly beautiful, attractive, delightful and pleasing to all your senses. That way you would develop a tendency to admire everything presented to your senses. And not only that but you would ascribe all that as being My Creation, considering Me the Originator of all that. Under this condition, it would never occur to you even remotely, that what is presented to you, in actuality, has no part in and of the positive state and thus, of and in Me. This is especially true if all those things are presented to you in My Name. How could you doubt it? Or how could you refuse to accept the reality of all of that which is presented to your senses under My Name? This is how the negative state was able to seduce and trap many into its pseudo-life. By this setup, the negative state put its followers into a firm and unmovable position to see things only at and on the scene without ever knowing that the true reality of everything is behind the scene.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Having this proper knowledge and understanding about how the negative state operates, as well as having all other proper and correct knowledge and understanding about its nature and its genesis, you, as My true representatives, are being put into a position of clearly seeing through all its offerings, seductions and promises. This fact gives you the ability to see things behind the scene and disregard what is going on at the scene. By doing that, by training yourself to perceive everything from this proper perspective, you will be able to defy the negative state's influence on you and you will no longer be attracted to and preoccupied with all its movements, such as for example, its New Age movement.

Peter: Thank You very much for this elaboration. Dr. Ardyth Norem is asking the following question: In response to the negative state's misery and its present condition, how are You and the beings of the positive state experiencing and responding to the present circumstance? Furthermore, as Your true representatives, is it appropriate for us to experience this deep sadness, given our shared task of manifesting Your Nature and the positive state in this time and place?

The Lord Jesus Christ: The answer to this question should be obvious from our previous discussion about the nature of the positive state and My Nature. As you remember, not a long time ago, you were informed by Me that during the presently ongoing shift, a certain repositioning of attributes of My Absolute Unconditional Love and Absolute Wisdom, and subsequently, their application in the lives of the members of the positive state, has taken place. At the present time, the entire emphasis is on those aspects which were designated as **mercy, compassion, empathy, understanding, acceptance and forgiveness.**

What are these attributes telling you? Our position, thoughts, feelings or whatever we have in this respect, in regard to all atrocities, abominations, pain, suffering and all else in the life of the negative state and in human life on planet Zero, is determined by the above mentioned attributes. Look at it this way: If we have a full understanding of why things have to be the way they are and the way they have been happening and will be happening in the negative state and in human life, then we are able to fully and completely accept the necessity for all that to unfold and be manifested. If you know, first of all, the reasons for all of that, and secondly, if you are cognizant about the voluntary, temporary and transient status of all who participate in the life of the negative state and human life, and of all their miseries, pain and suffering, then our attitude, in this respect, is influenced by our total compassion, empathy, mercy and forgiveness. After all, it was by everyone's free will and choice

to enter that type of pseudo-life. No one was forced or compelled into anything.

If you take into consideration the fact that everyone who initially volunteered to activate and subsequently, to participate in the pseudo-life of the negative state and in a typical human life, did so with great delight, pleasure and elation, knowing that by doing that they would contribute immensely to the cache of knowledge about any other life other than the life of the positive state, and that their negative experiences would be instrumental in the final choice-making effort and decision for the purpose of activation of the fullness and completeness of life in the positive state, then it would be totally and completely superfluous, unproductive and futile to be or feel sad about anything that is going on in the pseudo-life of the negative state and human life. On our part, that would be a waste of precious energy that has to go somewhere else — to some more important causes.

The problem with your view is that you look at everything happening around you from the position of your externals, the way everything appears to be and not the way it really is. Again, the issue of watching things as they are being played out on the scene and not what really is happening and why it is happening behind the scene, is being raised here. In your position, being that you are still in the human skin, it is not that easy to disregard the external perception of and based on it, the external reaction to everything which is going on around you. The human portion of your nature, because it is its integral structure to perceive and to react like that, has no recourse but to feel the pain and misery of suffering that constantly accompanies human life and life of the negative state. However, in the higher sense, or behind the scene, it is all only an illusion. On the spiritual level of every participant in that type of pseudo-life, the situation is entirely different. The pain, misery, suffering, and everything else, so integral to the nature of the negative state, is felt and manifested only in the externals. In the internals, on the spiritual level, because of the proper understanding and, based on it, subsequent acceptance of the necessity to go through all of that, such adverse experiences are not perceived as pain, misery and suffering but as the process of learning, illustration, demonstration and manifestation of how not to be, how not to feel, how not to behave and how not to live one's life in general. This factor is one of the most important ones in setting up the foundation for salvation of all who have been and will be the participants in this pseudo-life.

Because, as My representatives, and not as typical humans, you have the knowledge and understanding of all these factors revealed to you in My

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

New Revelation, and because you are to reflect the attitude and lifestyle of the positive state and My Attitude in your relative condition, you are asked to train yourself to dispense with such emotions as sadness over everything that you see and experience in human life. Such emotions would not be helpful to you or to anyone toward whom that sadness is directed. After all, sadness is a negative emotion. Logically speaking, by being sad, you are supporting the negative state. Instead, replace your sadness, and similar emotions, with mercy, compassion, empathy, understanding, acceptance and forgiveness. By doing that, you will manifest the life of My Positive State and My Life in the midst of the negative state and human life. And this is exactly what you are here for — to manifest that.

Peter: Thank You very much for these nice words. Is there anything else today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. No, nothing more today. Go and take care of some other important business. Have a nice day.

Seventy Sixth Dialog

May 2, 1999

Peter: This morning, before going into any questions, may I humbly ask You to elaborate a little more on the subject of Satan or the devil appearing to his followers as outwardly beautiful, and being factually that way from the position of external observation, as addressed in the Seventy Fifth Dialog?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Most certainly, Peter. Not only is it Satan or the devil, or to what these terms spiritually correspond, who appears to his followers as beautiful, attractive and very much lovable, but they all appear that way to each other and to themselves. You have to understand very clearly that the nature of the negative state is founded on everything external and on appearances. If you carefully analyze the meaning of the word “appearances,” you will inevitably come to the conclusion that its meaning denotes that something which appears a certain way, isn’t necessarily so in the true reality of its nature.

The reason why they all appear that way in the negative state is that, if you separate, split and disconnect the state of your internals from the state of your externals, the externals appear as having life in themselves and by themselves apart from the state of their internals. Such an appearance enables anyone to project an image of his/her appearance as beautiful, desirable, attractive and lovable.

The issue here is, once again, the difference between the nature of the positive state and the nature of the negative state. If you want to come up with the idea of the negative state as such, and if you want to activate and establish the life of the negative state, you have no choice in the matter but to deviate from the way the life of the positive state is structured. Otherwise, you would end up reinforcing the positive state. So, if life of the positive state is rooted in the internals or in the state of within, and if everything else proceeds from that direction to its outward or without manifestation, then, logically, you must proceed in the opposite direction. To do that, you need to separate the state of externals, which derives from the state of internals, and make it look independent of and different from the state of within.

However, because, in essence, nothing of the external or without nature can or may exist without its internals or within, you make it appear as being independent of and different from anything or anyone. You proclaim that it has life in itself and by itself without any connection to anyone or anything. At the same time, you close off any obvious and

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

conscious access to anything internal or to the state of within. By doing that, you place everyone in your domain and under your influence, into a position of no choice but to judge everything and everyone by the state of their outward or without or external appearances. In this case, no matter what the state of your internals is, because you have no conscious access to it, you are able to manipulate your outward appearance the way you want to.

However, what happens if you bring the light of the positive state into the negative state? Due to the fact that life of the positive state is founded and rooted in the state of internals or within, and because the true reality of everything and everyone is in such a state, when you engulf with your state-light anything which is in the state of appearances-without, the appearances disintegrate and your true and genuine nature, or your state of within, comes to the light. In this state, you no longer look beautiful, but your opposing and different nature comes to its reality. The way you have to understand this statement is in the fact that if you are opposing something, you cannot look like or be like that something. The nature of the positive state is beauty in itself and by itself. And because the positive state is the state of internals, it is the state of internals that determines the condition under which and by which beauty is defined, conceived and perceived. Thus, in this sense, beauty is always the state of internals which is projected also into the state of externals. This is the state of integration, unity and oneness of everything which is of the nature of the positive state.

So, if such is the nature of the positive state, then, by the logic of the opposing factor, the negative state, in its essence and substance, or in its own state of internals, is ugly and repulsive. But because the negative state is always in the state of separation, split and disunion from its own state of internals, it is able to define how it will appear in its state of externals. After all, its external appearance *appears as* having its own life apart from anything or anyone. In the light of the positive state, this '*appears*' dissipates completely and the true state of its internals appears or comes to the foreground. '*Appears*' is an illusion which appears as having its own reality. Thus, in this sense, anything in the negative state, as well as the negative state itself, is nothing but illusion. If you place all your meaning into appearances, you live a life of illusions. In that case, you have no true life. Such is the nature of the negative state.

Peter: Thank You very much for this elaboration. As You know so well, for a few days now, I have been deeply troubled by some thoughts that have been on my mind. Looking at and analyzing the nature and content

of some questions that the readers of these Dialogs, and of Your New Revelation in general, are asking, I am wondering if they really read everything contained in Your New Revelation; or if they read it, whether they properly understood or grasped its ideas, or whether their approach toward its reading was too superficial and too shallow. Forgive me, please, if I am being judgmental. I have no intention of being that way. Take into consideration the fact that Your New Revelation deals, besides many other most important and most significant issues, with the issue of the negative state, its origin, genesis, activation, development, nature and all other factors underlying its pseudo-life. This particular theme flows throughout all the books of Your New Revelation, from the very first one (***Fundamentals of Human Spirituality***) all the way to these Dialogs. It would seem to me that if this theme is so prevalent in these books, that it would be very easy to deduce or make conclusions about many things related to the origin, purpose and dealing with such things as, for example, negative thoughts, emotions, actions, behaviors, relationships, the nature of humans, their attractions, their lifestyle and all similar negative factors with which the negative state and human life are so much and so extensively imbued. And yet, here we go, the questions of this nature are constantly pouring in and coming our way. What is going on here? Am I missing something? Please, help me to clear my mind from these troubling thoughts.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, Peter, you are forgetting one important thing. How is the human mind, and its comprehensive abilities structured? It is structured by limitations, narrowness, one-sidedness and selective attention. Moreover, all aspects of its memory are faulty and forgetful. You easily forget everything, or most of everything you read or hear or see. And very often, if you remember something, most of it is distorted or skewed in such a way that it reflects very little how it really was or occurred. Remember what happened yesterday? After rereading several Dialogs, subsequently, in your conversation with Gloria, you complained to her that you didn't remember one word contained in those Dialogs, as if you had never read them or recorded them. And you are the recorder of these Dialogs! If you, who writes down our Dialogs and all other books of My New Revelation, fall into this trap so conveniently set up for all of you by the forces of the negative state, how much more would someone end up in the same predicament as you? Do you see My point? So, don't be frustrated and troubled by this phenomenon but instead, present all such questions to Me. Let Me decide whether they should be answered or not.

On the other hand, it would be very important if anyone, who wants to submit such questions for our consideration, before submitting his or her

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

questions, would carefully examine and explore for what reasons, with what intention and motivation and for what purpose such questions are planned to be asked. First of all, do such questions really have a multiversal significance? Can they really contribute to the cache of knowledge which would be beneficial and useful for all? Is there anything behind asking these questions which is of purely personal, ego-state driven needs? Could such questions be answered by simply rereading these Dialogs and other books of My New Revelation in a more careful and attentive way than before, because the answers to their questions are really contained in them?

Actually and factually, you could easily and rightfully conclude that the answers to all questions asked so far, as well as to the questions which will be asked, are either contained directly in everything that has been written and recorded so far, or they can be logically deduced from them.

Unfortunately, things are not as simple as that when you consider the structure and dynamics of the human mind. Don't forget that everything in human life, because it is founded on the pseudo-principles of the negative state, is externalized and materialized (in the sense of matter or solidity!). Because of that, by this nature itself, it is expected that everything will be coming from someone or something that has a very clear and, discernable by one's external senses, solid or compact presence in time and space.

Because of this genetically encoded tendency of human nature, very often, some of you expect or may perceive the negative state, as well as the positive state, as some kind of solid, perceptible and touchable entity which is pounding into you, from the without of you, all those negative thoughts, feelings, emotions, attitudes, behaviors, actions and many other similar negative conditions. Thus, as you see from this illusion, such an entity is time-space bound because, in your conceptualization, it is out there in some kind of proximity to your own time and place, influencing your life in a positive or negative manner, respectively.

In this case, if your perception and understanding of these factors is an obvious illusion, then what is the negative state, as well as the positive state, for that matter? Is it something tangible, material (in the sense of matter), objective, time-space bound, living apart from you and your life? How do you define these concepts?

Both the positive state and the negative state don't reside somewhere out there, remotely positioned and situated from where you are or reside. They are in you, within you, with you and around you. In this sense, you can define them as the states, modes and quality of your thinking,

willing, behaving, acting, relating and feeling about yourself, others and everything else. They are a matter of your attitude, intention and motivation. So, if you allow yourself to have negative thoughts, negative feelings, negative behavior, negative relationships and negative actions, then the negative state is in you and you are the negative state; then, in that case, the devil is in you and you are in the devil (or what he corresponds to!). On the other hand, if you allow yourself to have positive thoughts, positive feelings, positive behaviors, positive relationships and positive actions, then the positive state is in you and you are the positive state; then in that case, I am in you and you are in Me. As you see from this definition and description, all aspects, characteristics, traits, attributes, as well as everything else, both of the positive state and the negative state, respectively, are not somewhere out there ready and willing to enter you, or devour you — in the case of the negative state, but they are within you, generated by your own attitude, intention and motivation.

Once such states as these are established within you, whether positive or negative, from that position they are then projected to their outwardness. In that condition they are compounded by all those who internalized them and accepted them as their consistent lifestyle. Because of that they tend to become objective reality apart from their originating source. They establish their own state of cache where all of them are stored and released in accordance with the needs of those who placed them in that cache in the first place. This is how the wrong conclusion about these states' independent being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence came to its life.

There is a human saying which goes something like this: 'Birds of a feather flock together.' Anyone with similar states will have a tendency to form into groups, societies, nations, countries and similar entities giving them a sense of the same purpose and goal, based on their preferred internal dispositions. Because such entities appear apart from any individual, in his/her mind they give him/her an impression that they are the source of everything happening in his/her life, be it positive or negative, respectively. Hence, the illusion that everything is coming from without or from the outside and that the negative state, as well as the positive state, is situated in some kind of real time and space apart from one's own position which is time and space-bound likewise.

So, to address your concerns, Peter, it is obvious that the readers of these Dialogs, who ask their questions, the answers to which should be obvious from the content and ideas of My New Revelation, are still in the mode of a typical human conceptualization of the nature of the negative state as well as the positive state, respectively. When they are asking questions

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

of such nature that are directional and indicative of the fact that in their view something is coming into them from somewhere out there, then it is obvious that they missed the entire point of the meaning of My New Revelation. But it also means that their questions, which have this type of nature, should be answered promptly in order to clarify for them the true reality of these factors so that they are not misleading themselves in this respect.

So, when someone is asking where the negative thoughts and feelings are coming from, then you simply point out to them that they are not coming from somewhere out there, but, for some very important reasons, they are generated by the sentient mind. This is also the issue of personal responsibility. If you expect things to come into you from the outside, then you think that you are not responsible for their existence. However, in the moment they enter you, it is up to you either to accept and internalize them, thus, becoming their own possessor and reproducer, or you reject them and separate them from your mind. Either way you are responsible for the fact of whether they become or not become the reality of your life. The way you have to understand this statement is that any such thoughts, feelings, attitudes, behaviors, or whatever you have, are always generated by the sentient mind. They never exist apart from the sentient mind. However, once they are generated, by the very factor of that generation, besides being an integral part of that mind, their energy, which contains the entire content of their nature, separates itself from that mind and floats around seeking any other sentient mind in order to impinge itself on it. When that energy finds another sentient mind, it enters that mind and the individual in question will experience within himself/herself the entire nature contained in that energy. This is how the impression was born that all those negative thoughts or whatever, are coming from without and are independent of one's own mind. You can clearly see the illusion and falsity of this perception.

Our explanation of this issue points out the higher or transcending understanding of what all is involved in this issue and what the nature of the negative state, in fact, is. Up to this point, for a better understanding and acceptance of these concepts, it was necessary to somewhat objectivize and concretize the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the negative state and its function, manifestation and influence on the human mind. In this kind of presentation, it makes better sense for the prospective reader. But since questions of the above mentioned nature have been and will be asked, it was time now to elaborate on this issue from a totally transcending point of view. It is necessary to dispense, once and for all, with the objectivized and concretized perception of the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the

negative state and the way it is conceptualized, conceived and understood. And this is all that I wanted to say today about this issue.

Peter: Thank You very much for this explanation. I appreciated it very much. Leilani Henry of Colorado, submitted three questions. Let me present them to You one by one. The first question: What is the mystery of polarity, frequency, electromagnetic fields, negative and positive ions and Your Sexuality/Vitality/Life-Giving Force? Some things, such as concrete urban areas, microwaves, power lines, television, computers, etc., may zap Your Life Force in us. Also, humans have ‘discovered’ that certain things nourish Your Life Force within us, such as being near nature (waterfalls, Grand Canyon visits, thought-provoking conversations with the opposite sex and sensory stimulation in general). And related to all of that, why do humans gravitate toward same sex conversations, much of the time women are talking in the kitchen and men in the living room... is that avoiding polarity of some kind?

The Lord Jesus Christ: The answer to this long question has a direct relevance to that which we have just discussed above. First of all, this answer could be easily deduced from the content of My New Revelation. Take for example, Chapter 20, in ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ*** which deals extensively with sexual energies, as a life force energy, as vitality, vigor, and similar characteristics of My Sexual Energy that continuously emanate to all and everything in My Creation and in the pseudo-creation. It also deals with My sexuality, sexuality of the sentient entities in the positive state and human sexuality in particular.

At the same time, it was also pointed out above, that whatever exists or pseudo-exists, is constantly and unceasingly generated by the sentient mind’s energies and in an ultimate sense, by My Absolute Sentient Mind’s Energies. Thus, such phenomena as polarity, frequency, electromagnetic fields, and negative and positive ions, are a production of the activities of the sentient mind. In the process of this production, as these activities are being actualized and realized, depending on the nature and purpose of such activities, certain types of energies are being discharged, which appear in the ***outwardness*** of the sentient entities’ environment for the purpose of maintenance of that environment in a functional and balanced mode, so that it could provide for them a comfortable and pleasant environment, in which they can live and function. Such environments are created from the ideas of the sentient minds, accommodated to the specific nature and needs that they have, relevant and congruent to their own uniqueness and infinite varieties of their differences. Because of these differences, infinite varieties of

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

environments are created, each having its own specific spiritual, mental and physical laws, depending in what dimension and where within that dimension they are located.

As you know, the structure and dynamics of the negative state and human life, in their essence and substance, were fabricated in accordance with the blueprint provided by the structure and dynamics of the positive state itself, which I implanted into it. However, to make themselves different and apart from the positive state and its structure, the fabricators of the negative state and human life placed everything in an upside-down position. So, because of that, whatever is beneficial, good and true in and for the positive state, is just the opposite for everyone in the negative state and human life. And of course, vice versa.

A good symbolical depiction of this fact is how positive and negative ions impact humans' mental and physical conditions. Take, for example, the simple meaning of the words 'positive' and 'negative.' If you were to go by the meaning of these words themselves, you would have to conclude that positive ions would have positive and good influence on the mental and physical condition, and negative ions would have a negative one. However, because of the upside-down condition, in most instances, the opposite is true: Positive ions have a negative influence and negative ions have a positive influence. This is how everything in the negative state and human life is being played out and manifested.

Of course, in the true life of the positive state, neither polarity, nor positive versus negative exists. As you remember from before, everything in the positive state is in the state and process of integration, unification and oneness. Therefore, the concept of polarity is inconceivable for them even in the typical scientific sense as depicted in the science of physics, for example.

The appearance of polarity, and all other physical phenomena, as they are manifested in the pseudo-universe, the Zone of Displacement and on planet Zero, is the result of the sentient minds' experimentation with the laws of Creation on which, the many-times-described unity, oneness, integration and harmony of all and everything are built. In the process of that experimentation, the split, separation, disintegration, chaos and disharmony were produced, which separated themselves from the true Creation and formed a very peculiar state, known to you under the name of the Zone of Displacement, planet Zero and all the Hells, in which all these laws were violated and redefined in such a manner so as to implement, support and maintain the state of this separation, split and disunion with all their numerous derivatives. Hence, polarity, negative and positive ions, electromagnetic fields and all other similar forces

maintain the pseudo-life of the negative state and human life by providing them with an environment by which they can live and function. Under any other conditions and laws, they could not survive. Any violation of these types of laws, likewise, results in destructive conditions, unhealthy for the human body which requires for its health, functioning within those laws. So, whenever something is put into the proximity of that body, which is in discordance with its own physical and mental requirements and which disturbs its proper function (such as for example, the mentioned concrete urban areas, etc.), that body reacts with depletion of its own energies and may become ill, or even die. On the other hand, if you place it into the proximity of areas that are in harmony with its internal laws, such as for example, waterfalls, Grand Canyon visits, etc., it responds favorably to them and is able to reenergize itself. Don't forget, that by the nature of the negative state, which is rooted in the life of the externals, everything in it comes from without. Thus, the human physical body was made in such a way that, in the majority of cases, it requires recharging of its energies from external sources. It is like a machine that needs to be fed or repaired by someone from its outside.

As far as men and women are concerned, it is not that they avoid polarity of some kind, but it is a reflection of the forceful split, separation and disunion of masculinity from femininity and femininity from masculinity. We have already talked about this issue several times before. Therefore, no need exists to repeat it again. As you see, even the marital condition, in which humans like to be, doesn't eliminate this accursed situation. The differences between them are so deep and irreconcilable that even in their own conceptualization, symbolically speaking, women are perceived as coming from Venus and men as coming from Mars. This is how far apart they were separated and split originally by the pseudo-creators. So, don't place into these differences anything of the physical (in the sense of physics) nature. It is all the result of the spiritual state of affairs and how everything was placed upside-down.

Peter: Her next question is: Is there more significance to be revealed about the left and right sides of the body and brain?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Once again, the answer to this question can be deduced from whatever has been revealed so far about this, and related-to-it issues. Let me tell you something different, Peter. In the positive state there is no left side. Only the right side exists. The right side symbolizes the truth — the *rightness* of all things. Everything is proper and *right* in the positive state. If it is so, and I attest to it that it is really so, then how can you differentiate from the positive state in order to

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

make a different lifestyle than that which is integral to it? By deviating from its ***rightness*** and by placing everything to the left of it. Logically speaking, if there is only right in the positive state, then the only direction which you can take in order to deviate from it, symbolically speaking, is in the direction from the ***rightness*** to the ***wrongness***. The ***wrongness*** is left out of the positive state. Do you see the symbolism of this? And because the human body is the ultimate expression of the nature of this accursed deviation, everything in it is divided into the right and left — the right side in its function of being a correspondence to something positive and powerful, and the left side being a correspondence to something negative and weak. And this is all that can be revealed about this issue for now. More would be premature to know.

Peter: Leilani is asking about the multiversal significance of the Hawaiian Islands, if any. Many people say that they are the most beautiful islands on the entire planet.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, things are not as simple as that. As with correspondences of any places and countries on your planet, the multiversal significance or spiritual correspondence of the Hawaiian Islands cannot be revealed for the simple reason that it could not be grasped by your human mind. The only thing that can be said about it, and even that would be a little too much, is that these islands, through their spiritual correspondences, contain a mystery of multiversal gates, through which and by which the leak into some other dimensions, as well as into the deepest Hells, is symbolized. On one hand, you have a beautiful island (of course, in your conceptualization of what beauty is. You have no comparison with that which is considered to be and is beautiful in the positive state) which remotely reflects some aspects of the good and positive; on the other hand, you have an island there which spits lava, fire, brimstone, poisonous vapor, and similar things which correspond to the deepest Hells. These diametrical differences illustrate and demonstrate the diametrical differences that exist between the nature and life of the positive state and the nature and life of the negative state. Such illustrations and demonstrations are provided on your planet in various places by My Divine Providence in order to remind humans about these crucial and fundamental differences. And this is all that you need to know about this issue at the moment. Go and rest now, Peter.

Peter: Thank You very much for Your revelation. I'll take Your advice.

Seventy Seventh Dialog

May 3, 1999

Peter: May I ask You in all humbleness and humility to take over this morning and convey to us anything You wish? After that, I will ask some questions on behalf of Michael Maldonado of Massachusetts.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for your kind offer. One thing I would like to ask all readers of these Dialogs, who have a need to ask questions of multiversal significance, that they restrain themselves from asking about spiritual correspondences of various countries and places on planet Zero and their respective languages. Whatever has been revealed so far in this respect, and to the extent it has been revealed, is the only thing that could have been safely revealed. At this particular time, and for some time into the future, nothing more is possible to reveal about such correspondences due to the serious spiritual repercussions that could result for those countries and their situations, as well as to everything in the spiritual world, to which they correspond. Even some minor revelations about this issue could be damaging to the cause of their salvation from the negative state.

Let Me tell you something about this issue. The members of the negative state, particularly and mainly the renegades, are frantically trying to determine which country and its language corresponds to what and to where. If they were to be able to learn this secret, they would acquire a key which would open the doors for them for effective attack and possible takeover, not only those countries and their languages but also all those states and places to which they correspond. So, if I were to reveal to you anything about such spiritual correspondences, even in the slightest degree, such knowledge would enter the multiversal consciousness, as well as the general consciousness of everyone (for most humans without their conscious awareness), from which area the renegades could easily readout that knowledge and utilize it for their destructive purposes.

Don't expect that this situation will end soon. It is quite possible that, as long as the negative state exists, such knowledge, as well as many other knowledges (plural!), will not be available to you for your own safety and for the safety of all others everywhere. In some ways you can consider your curiosity and the need to know these kinds of mysteries, as being implanted into you and enticed by the members of the negative state who are attached to you (without their knowledge of your true identity) for the purpose that they might learn something about these mysteries so that they could utilize them for their own negative and evil purposes.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

As you see from this situation, some of your questions, although interesting and stimulating, cannot be answered for your own good. Yesterday, you were asked (Dialog 76) to very carefully explore the reasons behind submission of your questions before submitting them for My consideration. How important is it for your own spiritual development, progression and growth to have answers to some of your questions? Take for example, the knowledge of correspondences that the Hawaiian Islands have in the spiritual sense. Would such knowledge contribute in any way toward your spiritual growth, enhancement, progression and betterment? Would it contribute to the improvement of your own individuality, personality, mentality, spirituality and anything else that you, as an individual before Me, consist of? Or is it simply an idle curiosity on your part to have such knowledge for the sake of that knowledge itself, without any use to anyone or anything? How could such knowledge be utilized for the benefit of all as well as for your own benefit?

These kinds of questions you need to ask before submitting them for My answers. It is not easy even for Me to receive your questions and then to be put into a position of refusing to answer them due to some kinds of important spiritual reasons, or simply because of your own safety and well-being. Believe Me, I don't like any more than you do to refuse any requests that My children, you, are submitting to Me. If it were not for My Absolute Wisdom, which restrains Me from answering some of your questions, I would gladly provide you with them, thus, placing you in tremendous spiritual danger. My Unconditional Absolute Love would like nothing better and more than to answer all your questions without any reservation. However, My Absolute Wisdom carefully weighs all aspects with which your questions are being asked and especially to what extent answering your questions would be contributory to the benefit of all everywhere and how it could be used, misused or abused by anyone in the negative state. Don't forget from what position your questions are being asked. You are still in the human skin, situated on planet Zero, surrounded by zillions of negative entities, who are waiting for nothing else but to have the same knowledge as you have so that they can use it to destroy not only you but the entirety of the positive state. Do you see My point?

So, again, in all modesty, humbleness and humility, I am asking you to accept these facts and not to get upset if some of your questions could not be answered for the reasons as outlined above.

This statement is also in response to one of the questions that Michael was asking about the Spanish language. This question falls into the category of those that cannot be answered at this time — if at all during his life on planet Zero.

On the other hand, very often, what you think about your questions and to what extent they have multiversal significance, is not what really is behind the motivation and intention which made you ask them. It is quite possible that if you consider something as having multiversal significance and importance, from our view, it does not have it. It is either too personalized and individualized or too localized without any impact on anyone or anything else besides you or your locality. For that reason, it is always a good idea to ask Me first, within your own self, or your intuition, whether your question could be answered locally through you, or to you individually, without involving any mediator. It is very important that you train yourself in doing just that in order to avoid passive dependency on any mediators. You are very strongly advised to become your own mediators to Me. **It is your spiritual responsibility to establish such a mediation between Me and yourself.** No one can do it on your behalf. Only if the indication from within you is that, because of the multiversal significance of your question, it should be asked through someone who is put by Me in the position of asking it on your behalf, in this case through Peter; in that case, you may submit your questions to Me through Peter. No other types of questions will be considered in the future.

Another aspect of this request is to bring to your attention the fact that, instead of My having to decide through Peter whether your questions merit My answers, because of their possible multiversal significance, it is your spiritual duty and responsibility to determine whether or not your questions need to be presented for My answers through Peter. Again, you are encouraged to be fully active participants in this process and not passive recipients of the answers. This request is spiritually very important. As My true representatives on planet Zero you are to illustrate the factors of independence, freedom, self-reliance, active participation and your own contributions, from your own unique position and state in order to give all in the negative state correct and proper answers about the nature of life in the positive state. After all, their pseudo-lives are founded on dependency, slavery, reliance on authorities, passive acceptance of orders, non-contributions of anything of their own, denial of uniqueness of their individualities and on similar negative factors, which stifle any productive and creative incentives to do anything on their own.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

A good example of such pseudo-life, inherent in the nature of the negative state, has been illustrated on planet Zero in the communist countries and countries with dictatorships. Their subjects were put into a position to be told what to do and how to do it by the directives from the party bosses. Without such directives, no one would dare to move one's finger for fear of being punished, demoted or even put into prison. You, as My true representatives, don't want to be in the same position by passively waiting for someone else to take your responsibility and to do everything on your behalf. For that reason, if you are to actively illustrate and demonstrate the lifestyle of the positive state within and by your own personal and individual life, you are to train yourself in becoming an active, responsible, independent, unique and free participant in this process. By doing that, you will be successfully fulfilling your mission and obligation that you have from Me on planet Zero.

Thank you for your attention to this important matter.

Peter: And I thank You very much for this very needed and timely reminder. Unless You have anything else to relate to us, I would like to present Michael's first question. As is obvious from Your reminder, his second question about the widespread use of the Spanish language was answered by not answering it for security reasons.

The Lord Jesus Christ: At the moment, I don't have anything else to add. Go ahead and ask his question.

Peter: His first question relates to the issue of masculinity and femininity and sexual preferences that some humans exhibit for the same sexual gender — homosexuality. I would add to it humans who have both tendencies — bisexuality. The question is whether homosexuality has anything to do with the exemplification of another aspect of fear and a pseudo-spiritual effort to maintain the separation of masculine and feminine principles. This is something like not venturing out to experience something new and unknown. It is interesting to note in this respect that, although much was said and written about sexuality in Your New Revelation, with the exception of some brief note in Chapter 20 of ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***, nothing has ever been said about anything on this issue. You know, Lord Jesus Christ, I wouldn't be surprised at all if some humans would also consider You as having homosexual tendencies because of the way Your disciple John described Your relationship with him — You loved him and he leaned on Your breast.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, the reason this topic has never been discussed properly is because, until now, no one has raised this question. Obviously, it has not been timely to bring it to our attention. My relationship with John and what it symbolized was properly explained in one of the previous Dialogs. It is not necessary to repeat it here. However, as you know, human tendency to misunderstand, to misinterpret and to distort everything has no limits. For that reason, don't be surprised if some humans come up with something like that in order to justify their own hidden sexual desires or needs. Don't be taken in by any of that. Many and numerous things are ascribed to Me that have never happened or even been considered by Me. On the other hand, even more things are being denied about Me and My life which I really did and said. So, you have here two extremes: One extreme claims all kinds of behaviors, sayings, attitudes and actions about Me that have never happened. They do that, in most instances, for the purpose of confirmation of their own views, attitudes, behavior and lifestyle. It is easier to excuse one's own questionable tendencies if such tendencies are also ascribed to Me. After all, if I did it or was like that, or behaved like that, then it is proper and godly to be that way.

On the other hand, the other extreme, which is one of the most favorite of the pseudo-ideologists and propaganda-makers of the Hells and their scientific minions on planet Zero, and which they prefer and wallow in, is to proclaim that I didn't say any of that which is ascribed to Me as saying, or I wasn't there where it says I was, or that everything written about Me and My deeds had never happened; or if any of it really happened, then it happened only at the level of 16% probability.

So, no matter which way you look or which extreme you take, both serve to distort and outrightly falsify everything about Me, about My life on planet Zero and elsewhere and about My Nature. Get used to this idea! You see, Peter, when you are presented with seemingly indisputable and undeniable scientific facts about My life on planet Zero, and how little verification and/or verity exists in everything that was written about and ascribed to Me during that time, it is extremely difficult not to buy into their claims. What all of them are missing in this respect is, that one of the major reasons why it was permitted not to have such proofs and objective scientific verification about anything related to My life on planet Zero, was in order to place the full responsibility on each individual to verify these things by their own intuition and discernment, so that they would conclude on their own whether it was so or not.

The issue here was the freedom of choice to accept Me and what I conveyed to them, and what I did, or to reject all of it. Can you imagine

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

what would happen, from the spiritual standpoint, of course, if firm, undeniable, scientifically verifiable proofs were to exist about My life on planet Zero and about everything that I did and what I said at that time? What would this establish in human life and in the life of the negative state in general? By the factor of such undeniable proof I would put them into the state of accepting everything about Me by imposition and not by their freedom of choice based on their own internal conclusions whether it was or was not so — whatever relates to My life on planet Zero. In that case, everyone in human life would be locked forever in the life of inevitability and no freedom of choice.

As you know, and as we have repeated many times before, acceptance of anything by imposition and no freedom of choice, cannot enter anyone's internals or within. Therefore, because of this factor, it cannot be appropriated to them. It cannot become as their own. Any imposition always comes from the outside. Because of that, it cannot influence the inside where it counts. The spiritual law requires that any acceptance of anything, with its appropriation or attribution to anyone's life, is possible only if it is accepted by one's freedom of choice without any imposition from the outside or externals.

So, to make humans accept anything about My life on planet Zero based on external scientific verification and proof, would close off their access to their internals where I reside. The paradox of this situation is in the fact, that accepting Me by imposition and not by their own freedom of choice and free will, would totally, completely and eternally eliminate their ability to make any contact with the true Me, residing in their within. In that case, all humans, who would accept Me on those kinds of external conditions, would be eternally locked into their externals. If this were to happen, then the negative state and its human life could not be eliminated because their life is rooted in the externals. Once again, in that case, the fullness and completeness of life of the positive state could not be activated either. As long as the negative state exists and as long as human life in its negative aspects flourishes, no possibility exists for this fullness and completeness of life of the positive state to fully establish itself.

As you see from this description, as well as this detour from our topic, the rationale for not having any external scientific proof about My life on planet Zero is very obvious. At the same time, this situation gives anyone on your planet and in the negative state the ability to think about Me and to accept My life anywhere in any way they want or desire — even to the point of claiming that I exhibited or had some homosexual tendencies toward My disciple John. No one is prohibited from anything. Now, on

this kind of approach, humans are put into their own place to make their own decision, based on their own discernment, to accept or not to accept anything at all in general and about Me in particular. Because it is their own discernment, by it and through it, they are able to accept anything by the state of their internals where it really counts.

But to go back to the issue of homosexuality. It is true that one of the many reasons why these types of sexual relationships were permitted, besides what was said about it in a brief comment in Chapter 20 of the First Big Book (obviously, these Dialogs will comprise the Second Big Book), was to illustrate on concrete examples the separation of masculinity from femininity and femininity from masculinity; as well as to illustrate the tendency and the nature of the human mind to avoid something new and different. However, this is not the only major reason. Other reasons stem from the function and purpose of sexuality. Its function and purpose were extensively described in the mentioned 20th Chapter of ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***.

As you remember from that chapter, sexuality has a much broader meaning than just being limited to only sexual, physical, or any other type of intercourse. It was defined as My Life Force Energy, Vitality, Vigor, Strength and a Tool of all-inclusive sharing and acquirement of knowledge about Me, others and oneself, unceasingly emanating from Me through My entire Creation and made available to any sentient entity anywhere and anywhen.

In the sense of the above described function of sexuality, it is obvious that any relationship at all, regardless of the gender, stems from and is made possible by this sexual energy. In the understanding of this role of sexuality, it is obvious that we are not talking here about sexual intercourse as conceived by humans. For them the word 'sex' means nothing else but to have sexual intercourse or to make love. This is an extremely narrow and inappropriate understanding of and view on sexuality. Because of this fact, or this inappropriate perception of sexuality, reduced to coitus of two humans, the broader and more appropriate understanding of sexuality which defines it as the source, foundation and impetus for any relationship to be established, ends in its extension into the sexual-coital act also between two partners of the same gender. In other words, in the human life, which takes everything to the extreme on one hand, or to the total reduction of any meaning to its least significant aspects on the other hand, everything is manifested in some kind of relational setup which would allow illustrating this factor of extremes or reductionism.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

So, if any relationship at all stems from and is derived from the general sexual energy, emanated from Me to all and everything in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, then, because, after all, it is **the** sexual energy, it has to be concretely embedded and illustrated in some humans' sexual relationships in the manner and way humans understand and practice sexuality. Because of humans' reduction of sexuality only to the coitus of two humans, and because sexuality underlies any relationships at all, then, for them, in their view, it is logical and proper to have sex also with a partner of the same gender. This is how human homosexuality and bisexuality came about. As you see from this explanation, the originating point of these two practices, as well as any human sexual practices, was in an improper, skewed and distorted understanding of the role, place and function of sexuality the way it is conceived, perceived, understood and practiced in My Creation. And this is all that needs to be revealed about this matter at this time.

Peter: Thank You very much for this explanation. Is there anything else today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. No, not today. This is all for now. Have a wonderful day.

Seventy Eighth Dialog

May 5, 1999

Peter: Today I would like to present to You, two questions. Of course, before I to do that, I am asking if You would like to talk first.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for asking. I suggest that, at this time, we reverse the process. First, present your questions, and after I answer them, if we have time and if needed, I will offer something from My own position. So, go ahead, Peter, and ask your questions.

Peter: My two questions might be somewhat related. The first question relates to the striking differences in the content of the Four Gospels, the way they portray Your life on planet Zero, what You did and what You said and how You did whatever You did and how You said whatever You said. This difference is especially striking between the Gospel According to John, and Matthew's, Luke's and Mark's, although there are considerable differences among the rest of them likewise. As you know, the so-called Fathers of the Christian Church, in the old times, only reluctantly included into the Authorized Version of the Holy Bible the Gospel According to John. Its style and wording reminded them too much of the then popular Greek philosophical ideas and concepts. The Greek philosophy was much too gentile for their Christian taste. As if non-Christian philosophers couldn't say anything truthful. My second question relates to Your statement, as recorded in Luke 8:10, and to Your quote of the prophet Isaiah (6:9). Let me repeat that verse: *'To you it has been given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of God, but to the rest it is given in parables, that "Seeing they may not see, and hearing they may not understand."* Could you shed some light on these two issues?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Gladly, Peter. Let us first take up your first question. There are very important spiritual reasons why only Four Gospels were included in the Authorized Version of the Christian Bible despite the fact that many other versions existed. These other versions, especially the so-called Gnostic ones, were rightly rejected by the Fathers of the original Christian Church. They contained too many falsities and distortions about Me and My life on planet Zero. It was solely by My Divine Providence that the mentioned Four Gospels were recorded, preserved and included in the Christian Bible. These Four Gospels represent four different platforms or positions or stances or points of view from which My life and My deeds and what I said are being described and conceptualized. Because these are totally different views

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

and positions, they reflect these differences in their style and what they tend to emphasize or prefer to include in their text.

In a general sense, from the standpoint of spiritual correspondences, you can conceptualize these differences in the following manner: John's position is from the East; Matthew's position is from the South; Luke's position is from the West; and Mark's position is from the North. However, the way you have to understand this statement is not in a typical geographical designation of these terms — east, south, west and north — as related to the position of any place on your planet toward its sun. It is to what these terms spiritually correspond that counts. So, in this particular case, **and only in this particular case**, to what do they correspond? East corresponds to My Absolute Essence and its Absolute Unconditional Divine Love as the source and the originator of any life. This is the beginning of and rise to everyone and everything. South corresponds to My Absolute Substance and its Absolute Wisdom as the builder and activator of the firm and eternal foundation on which My Life is manifested and, stemming from It, My Creation could occur, proceed and become the true reality. West corresponds to My Absolute Goodness and, stemming from it, all My deeds and works that I unceasingly perform for the purpose of maintenance of My Creation in the most optimal and useful condition. North corresponds to My Absolute Truth and Faith and proper understanding of all events from all aspects and positions of their manifestation, application and implementation from the most within all the way to the most without, so that everything is included and nothing is left out.

This is the way you have to look at the meaning of the Four Gospels. Because of this important spiritual designation, it was provided that only these particular Gospels, and no others, were included in the Bible. Only these four most important positions could provide the proper description of My life and My deeds on planet Zero ***without*** distorting or misinterpreting anything related to them. All other positions, although they do contain some aspects of the truth about Me and My activities at that time, their nature is such that it perceives and interprets everything in a distorted, skewed and even falsified manner.

So, why is it that the Gospel According to John is so much different from the other three? If you look from what position it approaches My Life and My Nature, you can clearly see that it derives everything from My Essence, designated as My Father Who is the origin of all and everything. It is the beginning of all. Take for example, the very first verse of the very first chapter of John. How does it begin? *'In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was*

God. These words contain a profound mystical significance. It points out the fact that Creation is the Idea-Word of the Creator, Who is contained in that Word and Who is that Word. Logically speaking, if you are contained in something, you are that something. But it also means an unceasing activity because Word means Verb (in Latin *Verbum*) and verb always relates to something active. Even in the case when you are resting, a seemingly passive state, your rest is an active projection of your mind to be in a restful position. So, in essence, there is no such thing as being passive or doing nothing because doing nothing is, once again, an active projection of your mind or desire to do nothing — which is an active process.

However, the other mystical meaning of the ‘*Word*’ is the Truth. The Truth is the Word and the Word is the Truth. By the means of Truth from its Wisdom, I gave the beginning or birth to everyone and everything. Thus, in the beginning was the Word, meaning an Idea of My Creation and all its sentient entities. And because, somewhere along the line of being and existence of My Creation, a certain number of sentient entities decided to separate themselves from My Creation, thus, violating the Truth or the Word or The Idea; in order to preserve the integrity of My Creation, and set up a proper condition for their return to Me, when the time is right, I sent My Word into their world, making it flesh in order to restore the Truth by My Word where no Truth any longer existed.

As you see from this description, John’s Gospel indicates something that was clearly stated later on in My New Revelation, that My Truth was separated from My Essence-Father and incarnated on planet Zero into the human life in order to establish for humans the proper conditions for their salvation from all falsities and distortions in which they live. Why was it that the Truth-Word-Idea-Light incarnated on planet Zero into the negative state? If you live in falsities and distortions, from that position it is impossible to save you because they are the source of your pseudo-life. Having no other knowledge and understanding, you simply identify yourself with your falsities and distortions, considering them to be the only truth. In such a condition, My Presence in My Truth-Word-Idea-Light is completely lacking. The lack of My Presence locks them in their adverse condition and gives them no choice in the matter but to consider their state as the only one feasible and possible, and their falsities and distortions as the only real Truth.

In this case, your first effort is to bring the Light into their condition which exposes their falsities and distortions, and implants into them My Word-Truth-Idea-Light, giving them an option to recognize the falsity

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

and distortion of their condition and, based on that, providing them with the realistic possibility of coming out of that condition and accepting the real Truth-Me into their life, thus, turning their pseudo-life, considered by them to be a real life, into the real life.

However, from what direction and source, and by what effort is that Word-Truth-Idea-Light coming? It is coming from My Absolute Essence rooted in My Absolute Unconditional Divine Love. Traditionally, this Essence is designated by the word 'Father.' It indicates someone who gives birth to all and everything. In our conceptualization of this term, it is not associated with the masculine gender. Its meaning is solely in the fact that it is the very originating point of all else. In fact, in our conceptualization the word 'Father' is equated with the word 'Spirit.' It is the spirit of everyone that is the source of one's life and of everything that one consists. This is the reason why in one of the previous Dialogs, as you remember, it was stated that your spirit, or the spiritual mind (which is the same thing), is your father. From the position of this understanding, you can conceptualize everything in you which is something else but your spirit, as being your son. After all, if your spirit is the originating point of everything else in you, then, in fact, it gives that everything else birth. In that case, logically speaking, all else in you is the son of your spirit-father. In that sense, My Word-Truth-Idea-Light is My only begotten Son.

Because the very Nature of My Essence is My Absolute Unconditional Love, from that position, I sent My Son — My Word-Truth-Idea-Light — into the world in order to save it from its own foolishness, falsities and distortions; or, to be more precise, to set up a condition to accomplish this act of salvation when the time comes. This is the reason why John quotes Me as saying the famous and most quoted words, *'For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life.'* As you see from this quote, it is My Absolute Unconditional Love that gave impetus to My Word-Truth-Idea-Light — My only begotten Son — to descend into the world for the purpose of its future salvation. After all, logically speaking, if *'...the Word was God,'* then it is obvious that Father and Son are the same. This is the reason why John very clearly and empathetically quotes Me as saying, *'I and My Father are One.'* (John 10:30) and *'He who has seen Me has seen the Father'* (John 14:9); and John the Baptist saying, *'No one has seen God at any time. The only begotten Son, **who is in the bosom of the Father**, He has declared Him.'* As you see, I emphasized the words **'who is in the bosom of the Father'** in order to give you a clear insight into the fact that I am not someone different from My Father but one and the same from eternity to eternity.

This discourse has a direct relevance to something which was prophesized by the prophet Isaiah, or which I said through him: *‘For unto us a Child is born, unto us a Son is given; and the government will be upon His shoulder. And His name will be called Wonderful, Counselor, **Mighty God, Everlasting Father, Prince of Peace** (Isaiah 9:6). Now, why would the Son be at the same time the Mighty God and an Everlasting Father? Isn’t it a contradiction in terms — to be one’s own son and one’s own father at the same time? If I am the Son, why is it so that I am My Own Father likewise? From a typical human standpoint, this statement, as well as the above statements, doesn’t make any sense. Not only doesn’t it make any sense, but it is totally confusing to the human mind. This is the reason why Christian theoreticians, theologians and philosophers had to come up with the idea of three persons in One God or One God in three persons — the proverbial Christian Trinity. And because neither of these conceptualizations of God in three persons makes any sense, they had to invent the concept of blind faith, proclaiming that it is a mystery of God that cannot ever be comprehended by the rational, logical mind or by the reasoning process. For that reason, it has to be blindly believed. In order to justify the concept of blind faith, Luther went so far in this respect that he proclaimed reason and logic as an invention of the devil.*

The problem with these people is that they interpret the terms ‘Father’ and ‘Son’ from a typical human standpoint and not from the spiritual understanding of what these terms signify. We have already discussed the true meaning of these terms in one of the previous Dialogs. As you see from the above interpretation and the interpretation in that Dialog, the term ‘Father’ is equated with your essence and the term ‘Son’ with your substance. And because it is the essence which gives birth to everything else, including its substance, it is conceptualized as father, and the substance as its son. They are not two but one entity.

You can say that the entire content of John’s Gospel revolves around this issue. Because this issue is one of the most mysterious and mystical of all, his Gospel is very much philosophical and mystical in comparison with the other three Gospels which have a totally different approach to My Nature and My life on planet Zero. His Gospel, therefore, puts considerably more emphasis on what I said rather than on what I did. At the same time, it deals much more with the issue of Who I really Am as compared with the other three Gospels. This is the function of the East point of view. The East point of view indicates that the Father of everyone and everything is Love which functions and operates by the means of its Wisdom through its Word-Truth-Idea-Light. Love-Father sends its Son-Wisdom-Word-Truth-Idea-Light into the world so that it

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

may accomplish its goals there. In this non-gender sense, you can equate the word 'Father' with the word 'Parent' which doesn't have such a gender-bound connotation. In a deeper sense the term 'Parent' can be equated with the term 'Love,' and the term 'Word-Truth-Idea-Light' with the term 'Son.'

The central theme of this particular Gospel, therefore, is Love and how I Loved the world and everyone in it. This is John's representation. It has a very strong feminine connotation. This is the reason that, not only his Gospel has this particular connotation, but also his three Epistles, which he wrote, are full of references to this Love. He correctly perceived that the true meaning of life is in Love. And, logically speaking, if I am the Originator of any life at all, then I must be Love in Myself, by Myself, of Myself and from Myself. Thus, there is no other source of Love and everything related to it but I.

In another sense, because of such an essential connotation that John's Gospel has, you can consider it as the most comprehensive integration of everything which was recorded about Me in all other Gospels. Whereas other Gospels concentrate on those aspects of My life on planet Zero, which their points of view — South, West and North — represent, and by which they limit their descriptions of these facts, John's Gospel takes a much broader, all-inclusive position that emphasizes all aspects of My function and operation from all levels of My Absolute Nature.

Let us now take Matthew's position, or the position from the South. It comes from the position of the need to rebuild or reconstruct something which was considerably damaged and in many cases completely destroyed. Or to say it differently, something that had not been accomplished, or had not been properly applied, or that had been completely misunderstood and misinterpreted, needed to be brought to everyone's attention so that they would be enabled to amend their ways and, as a result, they would be able to put everything in proper spiritual perspective. This is the function of My Absolute Wisdom, which from the position of its Absolute Love, provides the proper and effective material for accomplishing this goal. This is the function of the South. The entire Gospel of Matthew has this particular connotation. In some sense, it illustrates and at the same time, provides the means for how to make everything right which had been made totally wrong.

In Luke's position, or the position of the West, the Goodness of My Heart requires a continuous functional maintenance of My Creation so that all and everything in it is provided with all possible opportunities for their continuous growth and progression. In this particular connotation, as

applicable to planet Zero in particular and to the entirety of the negative state in general, it is the process of healing of everything that is sick, diseased and dying and that desperately needs repairs. As you know, humans and their lifestyle and all in the negative state, are very ill, fully and terminally diseased and are in the process of dying. My coming to this world, from the Goodness of My Heart, was for the purpose of offering all the means and ways for their healing. Here I am in the function and role of a Physician. It is by no means a coincidence that Luke himself was a physician. I needed him to be in that role in order to exemplify externally My role as being the only Absolute Physician Who is able to cure everyone from all their ills no matter how incurable and terminal they may, or seem, to be. This is a position of My Compassion which stems from the Goodness of My Heart to provide everyone with the opportunity to be healed. This is the position and significance of the West. It tells you that I am the Only One Who can repair everything which is broken, and restore everything that was damaged to its proper and useful function, or to make everything new and different in an absolute sense.

In Mark's position, or the position of the North, the Absolute Truth of the Faith establishes a condition in the most externals of everyone's perception which makes it possible for them to accept My Works as being purely Divine. The primary emphasis here is not on what I said but what I did. My Deeds built a foundation, on which everyone's faith in positive works with a subsequent commitment to perform such positive works, with positive and good intent, could become the reality of everyone's life. The position of the North, in this connotation, signifies that anything I say must be corroborated by life in accordance with the principles contained in My sayings. Thus, from this position, only the positive works or good deeds of everyone are the only effective confirmatory signs that one properly understood and applied My Principles. Therefore, in Mark's position, or the position of the North, whatever I say or pronounce is immediately confirmed and corroborated on the spot by My Positive Works or Good Deeds. But it also shows that the source and proper motivational and intentional factors of anyone's effort to perform such positive works or deeds, stem from Me as the Only One Who from His/Her Absolute State can properly motivate everyone to be that way because I am the Ultimate Source of everything positive and good. The faith in this crucial fact makes it possible for you to be the same way as I am, relative to My Absolute State in this particular respect. And this is the truth of the matter. This is the position of the North, in our present connotation, related to this topic only.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Of course, Peter, as you know so well, these designations — from the East, South, West and North, — in their literal meaning, apply only to planet Zero. In the positive state, only the East exists, similarly as only the right side exists there (see Dialog 77). In the positive state there are spiritual correspondences of these concepts in the manner as described above. This factor points out the fact that I am the Only One Who is 'I AM' in an Absolute sense. This 'I AM' is perceived as the East because of the fact that I constantly rise and shine in everyone's life. Thus, in the positive state everyone is facing the East, no matter which way they turn. For that reason, as no left exists in the positive state, so there is no back or behind. Only the negative state is situated in the back and behind. This is one of the reasons I was saying to Satan or the devil, "Go behind Me, Satan." By saying that, I indicated very clearly that there is no place, or state or condition in the positive state whatsoever, which would have a negative connotation.

Peter: Thank You very much for this unusual explanation. It would never occur to me that such an interpretation could be given to the meaning of the Four Gospels. Could we continue with the answer to my second question?

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are very welcome, Peter. Yes, we may continue.

Peter: Let me reformulate this question. I quoted Luke 8:10 and Isaiah 6:9. The question is why would You purposefully speak in parables in order to have humans and creatures of the negative state see but not see, and hearing that they may not understand? This doesn't make any sense.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Before explaining the reasons for such a statement, first, I am going to confuse you even more. How did Isaiah state those words and in what manner did I quote them? Let Me quote Isaiah first: verse 9: *'And He said, "Go, and tell this people: 'Keep on hearing, but do not understand; keep on seeing, but do not perceive.'"* Now, My quote in Luke: *'Seeing they may not see, and hearing they may not understand.'* Do you see the difference in the sequence between these two quotes? I reversed the sequence. Why, you may ask? At the time I said those things through Isaiah, I had not yet been incarnated on planet Zero. I only considered it and talked about it. But My talking about it didn't register in anyone's mind on this planet that I Personally would come down to them and be with them. So, this is the reason that in Isaiah, I said first about hearing but not understanding. Then I prophesized that once they see Me, no matter how often they will see Me, they will not perceive Who I am.

On the other hand, in Luke I had to reverse this saying because, now I was down with them and they saw Me from day to day and yet, no matter what, they didn't see Me the way I really was or Who I really was. For that reason, '*seeing they may not see.*' At the same time, as I was talking to them from their own position, being amongst them physically and literally, and as they were hearing Me, because they didn't see Who I really was, they couldn't understand what I was saying to them.

Let Me confuse your external mind, Peter, even more. How do the words in prophet Isaiah continue following the 9th verse in Chapter 6? Verses 10 through 13: '*Make the heart of this people dull, and their ears heavy, and shut their eyes; lest they see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their heart, and return and be healed.*' This is even more cruel-sounding than the verse that I quoted in Luke. Isaiah 6:11-13: '*Then I said, "Lord, how long" And He answered: "Until the cities are laid waste and without inhabitant, the houses are without a man, the land is utterly desolate, The Lord has removed men far away, and the forsaken places are many in the midst of the land. But yet a tenth will be in it, and will return and be for consuming, as a terebinth tree or as an oak, whose stump remains when it is cut down. So the holy seed shall be its stump.*'

So, why was it that I had to speak in riddles, or in this case, in correspondences and parables, purposefully making them not understand what I was talking about and purposefully making them not accept who I was and what My purpose amongst them was? Look at it from what position I was talking to them and in what position from which they were seeing Me and hearing Me. I came down from the ultimate internals or within state to the ultimate externals or the without state. And not only that but I positioned Myself in the **outside-ness** of the without itself — which is the negative state and human life itself. In other words, I came down both to the human life and the Zone of Displacement. Now I was on the human level and on the level of the negative state. How do you relate to anyone from that level and how do they relate to you from their own level? From the externals or outside-ness to the externals or outside-ness. As you know, this condition is the condition of **appearances** only. In this condition, which is the condition of illusion and unreality, if I were to let them see Me for Who I really was and let them understand what I really was talking about, I would eternally lock them up in the state of outside-ness. In that case they would stay in the **appearances** of their lives and not in the true reality of their lives. Thus, they would eternally stay in the illusion of life without ever knowing what the true life is all about.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

So, the first step in this respect was to come down to their level, and implant in their internals or within, the Truth, which they would not understand in their externals so that they would have no chance to distort and falsify it, thus, preventing themselves from any possibility of coming out of the illusion of their pseudo-life. In order that this would not happen, ever, I spoke in parables and correspondences, or in the language of their internals. This is that 'stump' that remains or the holy seed which will be utilized by Me to open their internals and let them know and accept the Truth, and based on that, bring them back to the positive state — as was so nicely and symbolically described by Me in the quoted verses of prophet Isaiah.

You have to understand here very clearly, that to accomplish all that, first you have to come down to their level. At this level they have no Truth. Neither is anything implanted of that nature in their internals. Their internals are shut off and completely blocked. The key to opening them is by implantation in them of the Truth of My Nature and the true meaning of My Word. Unless you implant this fact first, you are unable to accomplish anything at all. Once it is implanted into their unconscious mind, you let it germinate there until the time comes for it to spring forth and blossom into a powerful tree of the correct and true knowledge about everything regarding their pseudo-lives and the true meaning and purpose of the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the negative state and why it was permitted to come to its adverse fruition in the first place. In the meantime, as it germinates, externally, you dull their mind, you make them blind and deaf, you do all that which I indicated in Isaiah, so that they don't get hold of it and cut it down or pluck it out from their mind, thus, preventing themselves from ever being saved, and consequently placing themselves in eternal doom. So, whatever I said and how I said it, was for their own benefit. If you look at it this way, you will see that in no way was it cruel, but instead, it was a sign of My Absolute Mercy and Compassion. And this is what the quoted statement really means and signifies.

Peter: Thank You so much for this meaningful and inspiring explanation. Is there anything else You would like to contribute today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are very welcome, Peter. No, I think I will postpone anything else that would be useful to talk about to some other time. We've had enough for one day. Have a pleasant afternoon, Peter.

Seventy Ninth Dialog

May 6, 1999

Peter: We had some preliminary reactions to the content of the Seventy Seventh Dialog — as expected. And they are coming only from the people who have E-mail. The others, who receive our Dialogs by regular mail, have not received this particular Dialog yet (I sent it out yesterday). I wonder what kind of reactions we will be getting from them. Anyway, we have a request from three different people for some further elaboration and explanation about the issues touched upon in that Dialog. One is from the East Coast, one from the West Coast and one from the Czech Republic. The Czech Republic request is not related to the content of the Seventy Seventh Dialog. However, before going into formulating their questions, I would like to ask if You have anything to convey to us this morning.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, Peter, the reactions that are coming and will be coming to the content of the mentioned Dialog are understandable due to the fact that it emphasizes heavily that everyone has a personal responsibility to determine what kinds of questions to ask and whether such questions really have multiversal significance. This is not an easy task. Don't forget that, basically, the nature of human life was fabricated in such a manner that it would inherently and naturally incline toward expecting everything to come from or to be suggested by someone else; that is to say, from the outside and not from their own inside. This setup causes some humans almost a panic attack if they have to come up with their own answers, from their own within and by their own effort, taking responsibility for the outcome of such an effort. It is much easier for humans to function in their lives if they are told what to do and how to do it or if they receive the answers to their questions from someone else, who is in a position of authority to do so, instead of being forced to seek such answers in their own within. As you know, such tendencies are typical of the entire nature of the negative state. So, don't be surprised if more questions come our way regarding this issue. On the other hand, you did have some positive feedback about the content of that Dialog.

One comment needs to be made regarding something which was indicated on the last page of the Seventy Sixth Dialog. It relates to the issue of **the right side** and of **the left side** and being **right** about something and being **left** out of something. Some concerns were expressed by Dan about the language limitations. As you know, the English language was chosen in this century for transmission of **The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ**. The structure of this particular language allows conveying some very important spiritual

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

ideas, which are impossible to express in any other language. Because of that, it is not by coincidence that the English language was established as a common international language by which and through which people of various other nations and languages communicate with each other. From this fact, you can see why this particular language was chosen for transmission of My New Revelation. Of course, there are some other important spiritual reasons for this choice but for crucial security reasons they cannot be revealed.

The problem with some English expressions is that no equivalents of them exist in some other languages. So, anyone who is translating My New Revelation is facing a formidable task of finding the most appropriate words that could correctly approximate the English expressions. However, in some instances, such as for example, in the above mentioned expressions (emphasized in bold font), it is impossible to find such equivalents. It is being suggested therefore, to any prospective translator of My New Revelation, and especially of these Dialogs, to use descriptive forms by which they can explain what those expressions in English really mean.

I would like to make one more brief comment before going into your questions, Peter. It relates to a certain saying that humans have and which needs to be put into a proper perspective. This saying goes something like this, **“The road to Hell is paved with good intentions.”** If you look carefully on the meaning of this expression, you will notice how skewed it is. This saying was formulated by the forces of the negative state and subsequently, implanted into humans’ minds. The hidden purpose of it was to prevent humans from having any good intentions. After all, if good intentions lead to the Hells, then, in that case, why even try to have them? It is better to stay passive and inactive without any motivating impulses to do anything good or positive because, no matter what, you will still end up in one of the Hells.

This is how humans are deceived into thinking in this manner about good intentions. From the true spiritual standpoint, as was indicated in My New Revelation on several occasions, one’s actions and deeds are not judged by their outcomes but by the initial intentions with which they were executed or undertaken. If one’s intentions were good and positive, in no way can they lead one into the Hells. At the same time, if one’s intentions were really good and positive in all their aspects, both internally and externally in one’s mind, they are incapable of leading to negative outcomes and results. Good and positive intentions lead either to good and positive outcomes or to neutral ones — in that case, for some important spiritual reasons, it was not timely or appropriate to

undertake such actions. However, they can never lead to negative, or even evil outcomes. Therefore, logically speaking, good and positive intentions can never place one into the Hells or pave the way into the Hells. If there is such a negative outcome, it only means that the intentions were only seemingly good, judging from the position of the externals, but internally they were not such. In that case, you may get an impression, based on your external observation and conclusions, that 'good and positive' intentions lead to the Hells. And this is all that I wanted to contribute this morning. You may go ahead, Peter, and ask the mentioned questions.

Peter: Let me begin with one request for clarification which has some relevance to what we were talking about in the Seventy Seventh Dialog, as recorded on its last page. It relates to the issue of sexuality but from an entirely different perspective. Interestingly enough, this issue has never been brought up, in any books of Your New Revelation, up to this point. It relates to the concept and meaning of incest. This is a sexual relationship that happens between parents and their children, or between siblings or between close relatives. As You know so well, such sexual practices, from a historical perspective, were strictly prohibited throughout the entire history of humankind. Is it timely to clarify this issue?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, it is very timely. It has a direct relevance to the nature of the ongoing shift and to the illustration and demonstration of the final, most ugly face of the true nature of the negative state. You can also apply to the issue of incest everything that was said about homosexuality and bisexuality in the Seventy Seventh Dialog. However, there is much more to this issue than only that which was indicated to you in that Dialog. Yes, incest is the ultimate and most external — to the farthest possible extreme — expression of the inappropriate understanding, conceptualization and practice of sexuality in human life. Once again, to repeat, if any relationship at all is founded on and derived from sexual energies, and if, in the human understanding of sexuality, it is limited only to sexual intercourse, lovemaking and coitus of two individuals, then how do I relate to anyone in my family and among relatives? By and through having sex with them. By such practices, this factor illustrates and demonstrates the fact about what happens if such misconception, misinterpretation and misunderstanding of the concept of sexuality is established and if it is reduced to only literal, physical sexual intercourse.

However, besides all of that, incest is a tool of the perpetrator used as a means through which and by which the victim is being manipulated,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

controlled and shown who is in power and authority. This tendency comes from the efforts of the negative state to divide people into passive, submissive and obedient creatures on one hand, and on the other hand, into being dominant, controlling, authoritative and possessive. In this case, it is assumed that my children or my relatives or family members are my possessions and I can do with them whatever I want. And because sexuality is one of the most potent tools to establish and consummate such division, and based on it, interrelationships, it is sexuality which is used for this purpose.

But there is more to this issue than what has so far been indicated about it. It strictly relates to the very nature of the negative state itself. As you know, life of the negative state is based on masses, groups, societies and similar entities. The purpose for their establishment was to suppress any notion of uniqueness, personalization and individualization of any members of the negative state and humans. This setup is well illustrated in the policies and philosophies of the communist countries where the individual is nothing and masses are everything, and where a small group of people or even one individual establishes control and power over them and uses, manipulates and controls them in any way he/she wants. Because of this setup, you can easily, and without any guilt or remorse, sacrifice any individual to the needs of the group or masses. The family structure on planet Zero is founded on the same premise. And because, once again, sexuality is the best possible tool by which and through which you can show who is in control, it is sexuality that is being used for this purpose.

But look what happens in this process. The victim of this setup usually ends up in an inability to establish her/his true identity. The purpose of incest, as devised by the forces of the negative state and projected into human life, is to destroy, or shatter or completely block the way toward establishment of one's unique personalized and individualized self-identity. The negative state doesn't tolerate any such uniqueness and individualized and personalized lifestyle or self-identity. The ultimate expression of this tendency, in the form of illustration and demonstration of this fact and of the nature of the negative state, is in the practice of incest which leads to such a terrible outcome for any victim of this sexual act. This is one of the reasons why incest is so widespread throughout humanity on planet Zero.

As you know, Peter, incest has a long history on your planet. The incestual relationship is even recorded in the Christian Bible. Take for example, the case of Lot, a relative of Abraham, and his two daughters (Genesis 19:30-38). After they escaped the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah, during which Lot's wife lost her life by becoming a pillar of

salt, they found themselves being isolated from anyone else. So, Lot's daughters, seeing that they had no chance of having husbands, and wanting to have children, made their father drunk, and during his drunken stupor, forced him into having sex with them so that they could become pregnant and establish posterity for themselves. Although the meaning of this story from the standpoint of its spiritual correspondence has an entirely different relevance than what we are talking about here, it illustrates how sex is being utilized to accomplish one's goal — whatever it may be. In our case, sexuality has been and will be utilized by the negative state in order to accomplish its goal as related to the destiny of humanity. In this particular connotation, its goal is to completely and totally eradicate from human life any concept of, as well as need for individuality, personalization and uniqueness of everyone's impression, expression and manifestation.

It is the only way the negative state can win on planet Zero. As long as any, even the tiniest vestiges remain from individualities, uniquenesses and personalization, the negative state is not in full control and dominance. Why is it so? As you know, the entire nature of the positive state is founded and built on uniqueness, individualization and personalization of all its members. It is the very nature of the positive state to be so. It fully reflects, in its relative condition, My Nature which is rooted in Absolute Individuality, Uniqueness and Personalization. In this sense you can say that I Am the Absolutely Unique, Absolutely Individualized and Absolutely Personalized Absolute Individual. And because My Creation and all My sentient entities reflect and carry this Nature of Mine in their own relative condition, they are totally and completely individualized, personalized and fully unique likewise.

So, how do you go about the activation of the negative state if such is the nature of the positive state and all its inhabitants? By receding from this arrangement. You cannot very well build a totally different lifestyle if you adhere to these principles. In order to build such a deviant lifestyle, you need to destroy the functional power of these principles and introduce their opposites. Incest, in this conceptualization, is the extreme illustration and demonstration of this factor. It is this example that provides a tangible, concrete and literal manifestation of these pseudo-principles that very effectively and successfully lead to the destruction or shattering or blocking off the ability of the victim to establish her/his unique, individualized and personalized self-identity. Not having any self-identity, the individual in question can be manipulated in any way you want.

As you know, in your psychiatric diagnostic manual, these individuals are diagnosed as having borderline personality disorders. From your past

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

clinical practice, Peter, you know very well what tremendous difficulties these cases present to any therapist who works with these individuals. These difficulties stem from the following fact: How can you work with someone who has never been able to establish any positive or even negative self-identity? If you are empty inside of you, is it possible to make any connection to that emptiness? In order to do that, you would first have to build a proper and acceptable self-identity for that individual. Otherwise, all your effort to help her/him (mostly her!) ends in total failure — as is the case in many instances of these individuals.

To illustrate even more pronouncedly these splits, some individuals abused by incest develop a dissociative identity disorder which leads toward the establishment of multiple artificial personalities within the same individual. Others become psychotic or insane, completely escaping from the awareness of the physical reality surrounding them. Again, these facts illustrate that the negative state has no firmly established unique, personalized and individualized identity and is totally and completely insane, having no notion whatsoever what the true reality of life is.

Now, here is the ultimate illustration and demonstration of the nature of the negative state, which has no individuality, no uniqueness, no personalization, no self-identity, but is empty and void of any real life. The results of incestuous relationships illustrate these facts about the negative state in its most extreme degree. This is the reason why it was permitted to flourish and why it is so widespread amongst humans. It tells you how not ever to practice your sexuality in any of its aspects.

Due to the fact that during the currently ongoing shift, the ugliest, most putrid and most despicable nature of the negative state is in the process of its manifestation by the renegades; it is at this time that one of its most cherished tools — sexuality in incest — is being brought to your attention.

Another aspect of this issue is that, as you know, in the vast majority of cases, the victim of incest is a female. This fact illustrates and demonstrates the extreme and the most negative and evil consequences of the separation, isolation and split of femininity from masculinity and masculinity from femininity. Moreover, if you put a female into a subservient position and serving a dominant male, then you can use, abuse, misuse and manipulate her in any way you want. Incest is the ultimate expression of this factor. This is how far that separation, isolation and split can go. And this is all that I wish to reveal about this issue.

Peter: Thank You very much for this enlightening explanation of this issue. The next question comes from Michael Maldonado. I quote: 'Is the purpose of asking questions of multiversal significance (even if we've already received, and should have received the answers from You), so that we can have You share the answers (that we already received from You personally), with the other members of Your New Revelation — Your other representatives? So, if I ask a question directly and get an answer from You from my own within, I am assuming I am still to ask for an answer through Peter so that others may benefit? Is this what it's all about?'

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, the answer to this question should be clearly deducible from the content of the Second Dialog. I would strongly recommend rereading that Dialog carefully in order to acquire the proper understanding of everyone's position and role. As it was indicated in that Dialog, everyone comes from and is connected to a certain world in a certain dimension, or sometimes to several worlds and to several dimensions, from which they function and from which they receive and to which they send any information that is needed at each particular time. In this respect, they are limited to these and only to these dimensions and worlds. Because of that, other dimensions and other worlds don't have access to the information received by them from their own sphere of functioning and communication. They have different needs and different modes of communication and reception of any information. This is the way it is at this particular time. This structure will continue to be this way until the time when the negative state and human life in its negative aspects will be no more.

In view of these facts, because of the uniqueness of each dimension and its worlds, and because of your connection only to them and to nowhere else, it is a little out of the way to talk about multiversal answers that you, in your own personalized and individualized communication with Me, have been receiving and will be receiving from Me. Whatever you get in this respect from Me, relates only to you and to the worlds to which you are connected. Peter's role in this respect is different from all of you in the sense that he is in a position of being connected to the multiversal sphere and atmosphere of being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, so that whatever is conveyed by Me through him is available to all dimensions and their worlds, as well as to all pseudo-dimensions and their worlds, in an all-inclusive manner. His entire life, and all his life experiences were structured in such a way so that he could be in this role. At this point in time, no one else is in that role. Even if you are getting the same answers in your own within from Me directly as through Peter, My answering through Peter still relates to all

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

and everything, and everyone hears them, whereas the answers that you receive are heard only by those who are connected to you directly. Of course, this setup in **no way** indicates (and we are repeating this again and again!) that your position is less valuable, less important and less needed than Peter's; or that Peter's position is more valuable, more important and more needed than yours. It simply means that your position is different from Peter's and that both positions are equally needed, equally important and equally valuable. And this is the way it is supposed to be at this time.

Whether you are to share your personal answers that you receive from Me directly, depends on the nature and content of the questions asked and the answers received. This should be established from your own within in the process of your communication with Me. Some of them may and can be shared. Some of them would be spiritually inappropriate, or even dangerous to share. Again, this factor has to be established by you alone with Me and no one else. However, bear in your mind very clearly that whatever answers I give through Peter are very timely, and need to be conveyed to and heard by everyone everywhere in other dimensions and worlds, as well as by you, My true representatives. There are certain aspects of these types of answers, the significance of which cannot be perceived or understood by your external human mind but which are perceptible and understandable by others who are not in the position of human life. These aspects of My answers are related to the way and mode Peter formulates them from Me and on My behalf. Your ways and modes in this respect are entirely different and they would not be able to convey the same needed things and meanings that Peter's can. This is the reason why Peter's style of expression and conveyance was chosen by Me and why he talks, speaks, relates, writes, etc. as he does. It is an integral part of his ability to be and to do so. Don't try to imitate him or expect to have the same results from your own relationships with Me as he has. That would defy your own uniqueness and the way I manifest and express Myself through you. Please, remember this. It is important.

Peter: Thank You very much for this reminder. Michael's next question is as follows: 'Obviously, if we should be asking and receiving questions from our own within, has this all been a strengthening exercise to show us that we already know the answers to the questions we are asking so that we will definitely "know" that we have been on the right track? Has it been some kind of necessary reinforcement or corroboration so that we have the confidence to know that what we are feeling is really You, and that the answers that we have been personally receiving are truly coming from You?'

The Lord Jesus Christ: Although you can see it this way, as My true representatives you shouldn't seek or interpret your answers as a confirmatory and reinforcing means to your certainty that it is I who speaks with you and that you are on the right track. The entirety of My New Revelation is founded on the irrefutable logic of its ideas and principles that don't need any such confirmation or reinforcement. If they, nonetheless, are coming your way, you may acknowledge them with thankfulness but you don't dwell on them, you don't seek them out and you don't base your acceptance of Me and My New Revelation on them. Instead, as it has been pointed out to you many, many, many times, you rely on your intuition which is telling you whether something is or is not so. It is very vital and crucial at this junction of your life to make sure that you, as My true representatives, rely solely on the factor of your intuition, on the logic and reasoning processes of your mind. All else is superfluous. That all else is incapable of providing the members of the negative state with any proper learning. The opposite only reinforces their position. We have already discussed this issue in some of the previous Dialogs.

Peter: His last question goes like this: 'Any questions about correspondences that do not directly relate to anyone in particular, should we avoid or hesitate asking even before asking You directly from our own within?'

The Lord Jesus Christ: The issue here is the usefulness and the real need to know something that may or may not be beneficial for you or may even be spiritually dangerous for you. You may ask Me anything you want. No restrictions or limitations exist in this respect. It is solely between Me and you. However, in asking your questions, you are responsible for determining whether they should be asked also through Peter because the answers to them may have multiversal significance. Simply stated, the act of such determination should never be imposed on Peter in order for him to ask Me whether your question is or is not of such a nature. You have to put this responsibility on your own shoulders. Yes, go ahead and ask Me anything you want. It is appropriate to do so. However, **only questions of true multiversal significance can be asked on the forum or platform of these Dialogs.** Also, when you are asking questions that don't relate particularly to anyone or anything, in a sense of correspondences, you are directed to explore what kind of use they can serve in order to benefit your own personal life and your spiritual progression. And this is all that can be said about this issue at this time.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Peter: Thank You very much for these answers. My last question came from Martina Kamradova of the Czech Republic. In actuality, it is not that much of a question but a request for clarification. It relates to the issues discussed in the Seventh Dialog about praying for others and the wording of Your New Prayer. That prayer begins with the words, 'Our Lord Jesus Christ...' It is always 'our,' 'us,' etc. How does it conform to the requirement of not praying on behalf of others?

The Lord Jesus Christ: No, it doesn't mean praying for others. Remember please, you are surrounded by members of your spiritual family, by the members of the New Universe and by many others from your home base and from elsewhere. Whenever you are saying 'Our Lord Jesus Christ,' you are evoking their presence in your conscious life and you are praying *with* them and not *for* them. Can you see the difference here? Moreover, at the very end of Update 18 in the **Corollaries...**, it was clearly indicated to you that you may substitute, if you wish, the wording of "Our Lord Jesus Christ" with the words 'My Lord Jesus Christ.' This substitution was suggested in order to bring you closer to the personalization and individualization of your own life. When you are praying in the presence with all who are with you in the state of your internals, you are evoking very important multiversal spiritual correspondences related to the final elimination of the negative state and to the building of life in the positive state in its fullness and completeness. Because of this important significance and correspondence, all present with you pray with you for the same reasons and for the reinforcement of their own resolve to serve Me for that noble purpose. Remember this.

At this point, Peter, I would recommend finishing for today. Have a pleasant afternoon.

Peter: Thank You very much for the answers to our sometimes questionable questions.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. And I thank you all who asked all these questions. Obviously, if I chose to answer them, My answers concern everyone everywhere. Go in peace with My love and appreciation.

Eightieth Dialog

May 10, 1999

Peter: This morning we do have some questions to ask. However, before asking them, I would like to offer You this time to talk first — as always.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for your kind offer. Although I do have something on My mind which I would like to share with you, at this time, I would prefer to talk last, in a form of concluding remarks. Certain things need to be conveyed, the nature of which requires expressing them at the end of this Dialog. So, because of that, please, go right ahead, and ask your questions.

Peter: The first question is asked by Dr. Beth Ann Voien. Let me quote her question verbatim: ‘We are told that the pseudo-creators “saw” something different about the way the agents of the positive state, who were readers of the New Revelation, were living and being on this planet. My question is: “What did they ‘see’?” Clearly, most, if not all, of ‘us’ have very typical human foibles, shortcomings, etc. Did they see our ‘within,’ our intentions, efforts, beliefs related to the Lord Jesus Christ and/or possible connection of our lives to other dimensions, or...?’”

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, in some ways Beth Ann answered her own question. Yes, it is all that and more. That ‘more’ is in her ending word ‘or...’. As you remember from Update 15 in the ***Corollaries...***, it was indicated to you that, in comparison with other humans, by the grace of The Lord Jesus Christ, you were *peripherally* rewired in a somewhat different way. Here is the emphasis on the word ‘peripherally.’ Why? Any other type of rewiring would make you much too non-human. In that case, it would be impossible for you to accomplish your mission of being translators about the nature of the typical human life and life in the negative state in general. Also, under those conditions, it would be difficult for you to survive. In some ways, you can say that, if you were more than peripherally rewired, you probably would be assassinated. Other humans, and agents of the negative state on planet Zero, could not stand your being too much different or not like them at all. In that case, your mission from Me would be successfully thwarted by them.

On the other hand, it was also extremely important to place into you something that other humans and agents of the negative state didn’t have in order to maintain your **direct, albeit unconscious**, connection with the positive state in general, and Me specifically. Otherwise, you would simply be like other humans, without any ability to distinguish

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

between what is spiritually proper and right and what is not. Either way you would fail in your mission. And this brings us to the answer of Beth Ann's question. Your peripheral rewiring consists of a special ability, implanted directly by Me, to recognize, discern, comprehend, apprehend, sense, intuit and to accept the Truth about Me, My Spiritual Principles, spirituality in general, the truthfulness and beauty of My New Revelation and the true reality of the positive state. This particular ability, which the vast majority of humans are presently lacking, puts you in a position indicated by Me to My disciples during My life on planet Zero, as recorded in Luke 8:10, and I quote again: "To you it has been given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of God, but to the rest it is given in parables, that *"Seeing they may not see, and hearing they may not understand."*" We have already extensively discussed the issue of why this was the case in the Seventy Eighth Dialog. No need exists to repeat it here. Please, if you wish, you may reread that Dialog. So, basically you have been in the same position while living on planet Zero as My disciples at that time. They were also peripherally rewired in order to be able to understand and to accept Me and My Word.

At that time, as you know, the pseudo-creators were in full control of the Zone of Displacement. They concentrated on their effort to stay in that position. They realized the danger of My incarnation on planet Zero, although, later on, during the process of My dying on the cross, they were not one hundred percent sure if I was Who I really was. However, initially, they did suspect that I was the Holy One. This is obvious from the cries of demons and the so-called unclean spirits during My exorcising them from humans. During that time, they usually cried out, "We know Who You are, the Holy One, Son of the Highest. Did You come to torture us?" Because of that initial knowledge, all efforts of the pseudo-creators were directed to undermine My mission. It didn't give them any time to examine the rewiring of My disciples. Of course, the peripheral rewiring of My disciples differs substantially from your own. Their position was entirely different. Don't forget that at that time I was still separated from My Essence — the Father, and because of that I was perceived by My disciples as being a different Person from My Father-Essence. Also, My New Nature didn't exist at that time. So, their rewiring was directed toward their ability to accept Me more like the only begotten Son of God rather than the Only One Indivisible God. Knowing this, the pseudo-creators also assumed that this was the case, and therefore, from that position, the rewiring of My disciples didn't have any impact on them because they were in exactly the same position as far as their perception and understanding of Who I really was. Neither the pseudo-creators nor My disciples nor anyone anywhere had any notion that My Nature will fundamentally change and that I will acquire

a totally New Nature that had not been in being and existence up to that point, and that this New Nature would fundamentally change everything in the entire being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence as well as in everyone else's life and their own natures.

However, your peripheral rewiring was structured in such a way as to enable you to perceive, to recognize, to understand and to accept everything related to My New Nature and everything contained in My New Revelation. The pseudo-creators, the way they fabricated the human mind or human nature, assumed that not one typical human being, as his/her mind and disposition were made by them, would ever be able to have insight or understanding, much less acceptance, of anything of these facts. As you know, left to its own devices, the human mind and its perceptive and comprehensive abilities, in its essence and substance, the way it was purposefully fabricated by the original pseudo-creators, is unable to properly grasp the true spiritual reality and anything related to My True Nature. It can do so only in a distorted and falsified manner. This was a necessary arrangement in the scheme of the activation of the negative state and fabrication of humans in order to put the negative state in a dominant position. Otherwise, the negative state would have no chance to take hold in anyone's life. Just look at those numerous religions and their respective sects or on all those scientific minions of the negative state and atheists. In comparison with that which is contained in The New Revelation, none of them have come even close to the reality of the positive state and My True Nature. Whatever information they have or contain, is either totally false or totally distorted. Sure, in a distorted aspect of their conceptualization of these facts, you can remotely recognize some obscure features of the true spiritual reality in the same way as in a caricatured painting of any person, you are able to recognize his or her original features. However, in essence, no one pays attention to those features but only to the overall distortions. This is exactly the way the human mind, in its original setup, was fabricated by the pseudo-creators.

Under those conditions, with such a genetic and other type of fabrication, the pseudo-creators assumed that no one who contains within him/her such a mind could ever come even close enough to anything truthful and genuine as related to My New Nature, to My New Revelation and to My positive state. So, when they came back, after their release, suddenly they noticed a very small group of people who showed very distinctly some kind of ability which no other humans possessed — the ability to intuit, to recognize, to understand, to accept and to practice anything related to My New Nature, to My New Revelation and to My positive state.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

As you remember from Update 20 in the ***Corollaries...*** it was stated there that the pseudo-creators couldn't understand how it was possible for anyone who had a typical human mind or human wiring or human disposition, the blueprint of which they had and by which they fabricated humans, to be able to come to such important awareness and knowledge. So, being the most curious scientists of all time, as you know, they decided to postpone the destruction of humanity and instead, to concentrate on studying what made that very, very, very small group — **you** — so different from anyone else on planet Zero.

In the process of their studies, they discovered this special peripheral rewiring in the human psyche and, corresponding to that, a somewhat different brain function — in the sense that different areas of its brain were in an active mode as compared to other humans and the agents of the negative state. In the others, the respective areas of their brain were in a dormant and inactive mode without any ability to be awakened or stimulated.

As you remember from one of the previous Dialogs, your peripheral rewiring contains many different abilities. Not all of them were triggered in their initial function. Some of them were in the background of your mind and life and some in their foreground. Different areas of the rewiring were being triggered in accordance with the nature and function of your roles and missions that you had from Me. When you were in the position of being My agents on planet Zero, a different set of abilities were in the foreground related to that particular role. At this time, however, as you have been shifted to your new roles as My representatives, those abilities were put into the background of your mind and a different set was triggered which is in the process of enabling you to function in this new role. This new role is mostly connected to everything which is recorded in these Dialogs — as the third important source of My New Revelation. I can assure you that if you were not to have this particular rewiring, not only would you be unable to understand what this is all about — as written or recorded in the three sources of My New Revelation and all the preceding books — but you would be unable to accept any of that and you would consider all of that, in the same manner as the vast majority of humans would, — if they were to have access to My New Revelation — the results of some kind of ravings of an insane mind.

I can assure you that most humans, if they were to read the books of My New Revelation, would flatly and outrightly reject any of their ideas and would condemn you to eternal punishment in one of the Hells. Just look how many books were sent out since you put the TNR Foundation on the

Internet, having your own Web Page there. None of those people have given you any feedback — so far. Don't expect that too many, if at all, will do so. Unless they were to have a very similar rewiring as you do, it would be utterly impossible for them to understand and to accept the ideas of My New Revelation. The reasons for this situation have been explained throughout these Dialogs.

So, when the pseudo-creators returned, they were shocked to discover that anyone having primarily and dominantly a human type of mind, would be able to find himself/herself in a position to logically and rationally, based on his/her own deductive and inductive abilities, come to the conclusion that something like My New Revelation contains the Truth in its undistorted and non-falsified nature and condition. What you have to understand in this respect, is that the initial fabrication of a typical human mind, in its reasoning, logical, deductive and inductive abilities was genetically and otherwise structured in such a way so as to enable it to come to only distorted and falsified conclusions about any spiritual issues.

One of the most significant reasons why you were peripherally rewired differently from all others, was to give an opportunity to the pseudo-creators to recognize the fact that it is possible to come to the right conclusions about all spiritual facts and issues, and especially about My New Nature and the content of My New Revelation that reveals all these things, by the means of pure logic, rationality, reasoning processes, deductive and inductive methods and by knowing intellectually, intuitively and emotionally that something is true or is not true. The issue here was the ability to differentiate something which is true from that which is distorted or false — with the exclusion of the infamous blind faith. By altering in a certain way this ability in you, or to be more precise, by enabling you to utilize logic, reason, intellect, intuition and all their attributes in a somewhat different way and from a somewhat different perspective, it was made possible for you to see things and to discern events the way they really are and not the way they appear to be. This factor made it possible for you to know beyond a shadow of a doubt that My New Revelation, and what it contains, is My True Word and it is nothing but pure Truth without any distortions or falsifications. So, in a sense, we are using here the methods developed by the pseudo-creators for the purpose of making it impossible to see things that way.

This is the reason why they were so shocked and why they decided to experiment with you and your abilities in this respect. It was this factor that convinced the majority of the pseudo-creators that, no matter what they fabricated, or what methods of exploration they established and

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

used, if they are used with the right and proper intentions and if they are approached from the correct perspective, they can also lead to the right conclusions about anything, including the nature of the positive state and My New Nature and about everything related to spiritual issues. This crucial discovery on their part led many of them into wanting to be converted to the positive state. In it, they found the answers to their existential question about the possibility of the existence of the Absolute Truth. You can conceptualize this fact in the following manner: No matter what you do, no matter how many methods you use to prove that nothing of this nature exists, no matter how many arguments you come up with to refute the reality of the Absolute Truth — Me, in their final and ultimate outcomes and results, they will lead you to the inevitable conclusions that the Absolute Truth is Me and that no other source of life can or may exist and that, therefore, all life is derived from My Absolute Life. And this is what it is all about.

In this sense, you agreed to be incarnated on planet Zero, and by your specific abilities to make such conclusions, based on the pseudo-creators' methods, and stemming from your peripheral rewiring, you are helping them to convert to the positive state and thus, helping in the process of the elimination of the negative state and establishment of the fullness and completeness of life of the positive state. If I were to put in one sentence what your rewiring is all about, I would say that it is your unusual ability to instantly know whether something in the spiritual matters is true or not.

Peter: Thank You very much for this explanation. Beth Ann's second question relates to the use of animal organ transplants into human bodies. She enclosed an article from a journal, I believe its name is "On The Issues," in which article a very critical position is taken for the use of animal organs to transplant them into human bodies in order to preserve in them, life; as well as for genetic manipulation, in this respect, and for such a purpose in general. Would You like to make any comments about this tendency?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Whatever was revealed in this respect in one of the Dialogs, which dealt with the issue of human organ transplants, fully applies to animal organ transplants into human bodies as well. However, some additional points need to be addressed in this respect. Beth Ann correctly concluded that it is the work of the renegades and that their purpose is to shift the balance in humans back into a more animalistic, non-sentient dominance. The major purpose here is to eradicate any spiritual awareness in humans. It is not shifting humans to a non-sentient dominance as much as eradicating their spiritual awareness, no

matter what it is and no matter how distorted or falsified it is. The renegades' goal in this respect is to eliminate any type of spiritual awareness in humans and in their own creatures and sub-creatures.

However, there is much more, and much more deviousness to the renegades' purpose than what we have just indicated above. As you remember from many statements in My New Revelation, as well as in the Christian Bible, each human being and any sentient entity in the domain of the negative state, has preserved in them, in the deepest recesses of their unconscious minds, remains or remnants of something positive and good. These remains comprise everyone's ability to choose and to change. To repeat again, in that ability is My presence in everyone. From it everyone lives and is alive. But it contains even more than that. There is a spiritual genetic code in those remains which carries My Likeness and My Image. It was specifically included there by Me Personally in order to make it possible to recreate My Likeness and Image in everyone on planet Zero and in the entire Zone of Displacement which they lost or lacked in the process of the activation of the negative state or during the life of the negative state. This was done by Me with My future Plan of Salvation.

As you know, Peter, and all who read these words, everyone in the positive state was created in My Likeness and Image — the Absolute in the relatives in their relative condition. However, during fabrication of humans and other creatures and sub-creatures of the negative state, in order for the negative state to take hold, it was necessary to eliminate any signs of My Likeness and Image. Otherwise, everyone fabricated that way would become positive. Even the pseudo-creators, who originally had that likeness and image, had to alter their own spiritual, mental and physical genetic makeup in order to get rid of My Likeness and Image in them. But it was not possible to completely and fully destroy it. The reason for that was because it stemmed from My Absolute Condition. Whatever originated from that kind of condition, cannot be eradicated in its totality. However, it can be suppressed, repressed, hidden, isolated, separated and put in an inaccessible mode. This is what happened with the pseudo-creators. Now, in their effort of fabricating various creatures and humans, they had to use their own material. In other words, they fabricated them into their own likeness and image. And because they contained the entire spiritual, mental and physical genetic code of My Likeness and Image, it was fully transferred into all creatures and humans fabricated by them. No matter how much they tried not to include that code in their fabrications, it would not work. Any effort to do so, ended in a spontaneous abortion. For that reason, they had to allow that code to be included with the hope that because it was

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

totally isolated and inaccessible, it wouldn't interfere with the purpose for which they fabricated humans and other creatures. You can conceive this factor as another glitch in the pseudo-creators' design that led to their total defeat but, at the same time, to their conversion to the positive state.

In this respect, the major purpose of the renegades to utilize animal organs in the human body and by undertaking all kinds of genetic experimentation with animals and humans, is to remove the code containing My Likeness and Image and thus, to destroy all remains of anything positive and good in all humans and creatures and sub-creatures of the negative state. Their rationale for this effort is that, if they could succeed in this goal, then any hope for conversion to the positive state of anyone in their domain would be lost forever. In that case, knowing that, by the very Essence and Substance of My Nature, I could not destroy any living and breathing sentient entity, the negative state and thus, the renegades themselves, would have to stay forever likewise. If this were to be the case, neither the positive state could ever come to its full and complete eternal fruition. As you see from this scenario, the status quo existing right now would have to be in place for good and forever. Everyone would be locked in the same place and position to eternity. This is the effort that the renegades are making in this respect.

However, there is another point to their experimentation. As you know, the human body is very fragile, weak, transient, perishable and prone to all kinds of destructive processes. Its survival rate, in comparison with other types of bodies, is extremely short. The renegades are trying to change this condition of the human physical body. They would like nothing better than to bring it on par with other types of bodies, which can live for many millennia, or millions of years or even forever. They want to prove that it is possible for this type of human body to continue in its life without any inner spiritual factors. By experimenting with animal organs and genes, the renegades are hoping to find some secret of prolonging and constantly rejuvenating all the cells of the human body and its brain in order to make it live, if not forever, then at least for several centuries. If they could accomplish that, then they would be able to prove something that even the pseudo-creators were unable to prove — that life is possible without any remains of anything good and positive in it. You see, Peter, this is the competitive nature of the renegades. They want to desperately prove to their parents — the pseudo-creators, that they are better than them. At the same time, by such a possible accomplishment, they would preserve their power and control indefinitely. After all, if they can give humans something that would

make them physically live for centuries or even, maybe, forever, then they would acquire very loyal followers and slaves in the human stock.

So, as you see from this discourse, there is much more to animal organ transplants into human bodies than it seems at first glance. Also, as you are aware, the real and substantial genetic works on planet Zero, in this respect, didn't begin until the release of the pseudo-creators and the renegades' appearance on the scene. At that time, they were the motivating factors that gave impetus to the very fast development in this, as well as in many other areas of human science and human life.

There is only one glitch in this effort of the renegades: The code, which contains My Likeness and Image, cannot be destroyed without nullifying any possibility of life in anyone or anything. Of course, at this point in time, they don't believe it to be so. Therefore, they are undertaking the most unusual experiments, which include, among many other things, combining animal and human genes and organs, so that they can come up with something which would refute this fundamental premise that underlies the possibility of any life at all. Don't be surprised, therefore, if you hear about even more bizarre and unimaginable experimentation which could be undertaken by the renegades and their human counterparts-geneticists. And this is all that can be said about Beth Ann's questions at this time.

Peter: Thank You very much for this revelation. Is there anything else You would like to talk about today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, I would. As you know, up to this point you have recorded 80 Dialogs with Me. They contain tremendously important material that needs to be studied and absorbed by all their readers. This indicates that, unless there will be any emergency type of questions that need immediate answers, the recording, or to be precise, the sending out of our Dialogs, will pause for some time.

Let Me tell you something very important: At this point in time, we have reached a junction in the process of the ongoing shift that requires from all of you, as well as for everyone else in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, to make some important choices, based on the knowledge of the material in these Dialogs presented to you. In order to make the proper choices, relevant to the content of these Dialogs, you need to study them and to consider all aspects of their ideas. For that purpose you need time. Also, those of you need time who are translating these Dialogs into other languages, so that all others who don't know English can be put in a position to make their own choices. It is very

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

important that they do so likewise. It is not an easy task to translate them as well as to study them thoroughly. In your human life, when you have so many other duties and responsibilities, you need some time to do so.

Moreover, you, Peter, need to undertake a long trip to Europe (Russia, Slovakia and the Czech Republic, and maybe even to some other countries) where My people are, who need to be with you and talk with you face to face. You will be gone for over three months. During this period of time, I would recommend to not send out any more Dialogs to anyone in order to provide them with the above mentioned opportunity for studying them and making further important choices based on their studies. Although it is quite conceivable and possible that you will be dialoging with Me and recording them on your notebook-computer, if needed and necessary, I would advise you to restrain yourself from sending them out until you come back to Santa Barbara (at the end of August, 1999). At that time, a second round of these Dialogs can and will commence — if necessary, feasible and needed. At that time it will be clear to you if they will be needed. Right now, prepare yourself for your travel, Peter.

In conclusion of this Dialog, I want you to be aware that this junction or crossroad, or whatever you want to call it, at which you find yourself at the present time, reflects a very trying time. The situation in all worlds of the negative state and on your planet, which reflects that situation, is very volatile, unstable, dangerous and, from the standpoint of your external conscious mind, unpredictable. There is no certainty anywhere and in anything. Your only certainty and safety, as well as peace, serenity and happiness, can be found in being My true representatives and in the knowledge that you are under My care and protection. Therefore, do not fear and do not be dismayed, for I am with you all and My Unconditional Love and Wisdom will accompany you everywhere you'll go and in everything you'll do as long as you put all your hope and faith into Me and My New Revelation. And this is all for now.

Peter: Thank You very much for all these Dialogs and for Your willingness to be so close with us as One of us.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. I can assure you it is My greatest pleasure to be so and do so. Go in peace.

Eighty First Dialog

May 23, 1999, Moscow, Russia

Peter: This morning I would like to greet You, my Lord Jesus Christ, and everyone present, from the very stronghold of the renegades — Moscow, Russia.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for your greetings. We all greet you as well.

Peter: I would like to present to You several issues for discussion. However, before going into that, may I ask You if You would like to contribute something first?

The Lord Jesus Christ: With this particular Dialog, a different positioning of all forces of the negative state, as well as all members of the positive state, as well as all humans on planet Zero, as well as all representatives of My positive state on planet Zero, is being established. This fact, Peter, is reflected in your recording this particular Dialog, as well as, perhaps, some other Dialogs, from the midst of the stronghold of the renegades. As is obvious, physically and geographically, you are far away from Santa Barbara. And not only that, but you are in a place and state, which has a totally different spiritual correspondence, conducive to the needs that the current phase of the ongoing shift requires and is in the process of being established.

The nature of this particular positioning has a widespread impact and significance, placing everyone into a different mode of functioning and into a different angle of perception of the reality and role of the entire Creation and pseudo-creation. As you know, Peter, My Absolute New Nature, in its Absolute progressive functioning and manifestation, is in the continuous process of releasing something different and new which has not been in being and existence so far. Whenever this release takes place, it impacts all sentient entities in the positive state, and it also has an effect on everyone in pseudo-being and pseudo-existence and on planet Zero. This impact and reception of something that they haven't had up to this point, shifts everyone's perception of the reality of the entire Creation and pseudo-creation and gives them a totally different understanding of the meaning of life in general as well as of the current situation in which everyone finds himself/herself.

Life of My Creation and pseudo-life of the pseudo-creation has many aspects and modes of manifestation and realization. In order for everyone

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

to be exposed to these various and infinitely different and diverse aspects, you have to make available for them various positions and angles from which they can ascertain and subsequently incorporate into their own private lives these different and diverse aspects. Because they are not absolute but relative, this exposure happens in progressive steps and in relevant-to-them spiritual shifts.

Currently, you are in the midst of such an important release and relevant-to-it positioning or repositioning of everyone and everything in order to accommodate their lives and their perceptual senses to this important occurrence. Although it is impossible for your human minds to grasp the entire nature of this event, and how it will impact your personal lives on your conscious level, nevertheless, let it be known to you that nothing will be the same or will have the same meaning and understanding. Whatever you have known and understood up to this point will gradually, and almost imperceptibly, have to be modified, reevaluated and in many instances, completely abandoned and replaced. This will not be an easy task, especially for you who are still functioning within the frame of your typical human skin, so-to-speak. Yet, you will notice that gradual changes will be taking place in the ways you looked at and understood not only all events happening on planet Zero and elsewhere, and how you have evaluated them, but also in your own personal and individualized life and everything related to it. The entire meaning and purpose of your life will be changing and subsequently, will have to be modified.

Your presence, Peter, in Moscow, Russia, and later on in Slovakia and the Czech Republic, has a direct relevance to these changes. Of course, you have to understand very clearly that these changes and repositioning of everyone in the positive state have preceded any changes and repositioning of everyone in the negative state and in human life on planet Zero. However, in order to trigger them in the realm of pseudo-being and pseudo-existence and in human life on this planet, they have to be preceded by changes and repositioning of everything in your personal lives — My true representatives.

If you take into consideration that you have been functioning from the position of the positive state, and My Personal position, then it is obvious, and it logically follows, that any such changes have to be reflected or taken place in your lives first, after they have been established in and impacted on the lives of all sentient entities in the positive state. Because you are the reflectors of the events and changes of the positive state, by reflecting them in your personalized and individualized lives and your own repositioning congruent to the

repositioning of everyone and everything in the positive state, by the examples of your own lives, you establish a foundation on which the impact of these changes effects everyone and everything in the negative state and planet Zero, putting them into a position for their own changes and repositioning.

In your current lives on planet Zero, these changes and repositioning will be taking place not that much on the external level of your everyday life, as you go about your daily business on planet Zero, but mostly and particularly on the spiritual level of your mind and on the level of your participation in other dimensions to which you are connected on a continuous basis. On the external level these changes and repositioning will be taking place in a very slow and almost imperceptible manner in order to prevent you from the shock of their sudden and unexpected occurrence which they would and could cause. As you know, human nature is very fragile and prone to such fatal shocks. Therefore, anything happening of this monumental and significant nature, when it is applied to the external aspects of the human life, has to be accommodated to the level of its ability to perceive, receive and apply it without being killed by such an unexpected shocking event.

So, don't expect drastic changes and a sense of repositioning of your external lives and behaviors. These changes and repositioning will be gradual and almost imperceptible. Nevertheless, they will be coming and they are already in the process of their implementation, effecting your internal lives. As you know, it is the changes on the internal, spiritual level which truly count.

The current new phase of the ongoing shift has a tremendous impact on the situation of the pseudo-creators and the renegades and everyone who is involved in and supports their cause. There is a sense of acceleration of everything related to their function and purpose for which they were allowed to be where they are at the present time. You don't know it, Peter, but because of your role as the transmitter of My New Revelation and as someone who is in the position in which you are, your physical presence in the stronghold and the very center of the renegades — Moscow, Russia — is or will be triggering something in their realm and sphere of influence which will put them into a position of change and repositioning of the energies that make it possible for them to function and to do what they have been doing up to this point. What this will be, is premature to know or to reveal. Most of it, although not all of it, will be happening after you depart from Moscow to Slovakia. Also, for security reasons, it would be dangerous to reveal it at this particular time. Suffice it to say that also in their domain nothing will be the same.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

The only thing that can be said in this respect is that the renegades will be exposed to something which they could never have foreseen or could have been expecting and which will put them in a different mode and position of functioning and behavior. The outcome of this will be surprising for you all as well.

Another point of your visit in Moscow, Russia, Peter, and being with Lyudmila, Victor and their son Dimitrij, is a living illustration of the fact that no matter where you are physically, even if it is in the deepest Hells and in the very center of the renegades on planet Zero, because you are functioning from the position of the positive state, and thus, you are the positive state, you are, in fact, in the positive state. It is the state of your internals or your overall mind which determines where you are and not the physical location in itself and by itself. In the past, as you remember, Peter, when you were still functioning in the role of My agent, you used to be very sensitive to such negative physical locations on planet Zero. You strongly felt the presence of negative and evil spirits in those locations and you were adversely influenced by them. At that time, you were still laboring under the false assumption that external physical locations, that have negative spiritual correspondences, can and may influence the internal state of your mind. Because you believed it to be so, by the factor of that belief, you allowed the present negative entities to influence you adversely. At that time you were in the process of learning about what happens if you place any value in the externals and if you ascribe any power to the nature of the physical locations that are under the control of the negative state instead of looking inward and finding any solutions in the internal states that are not space-location-time bound.

The problem with this fact is that if you ascribe any meaning and significance to the external physical location, giving it power to influence you in any manner and way, by the factor of your mind projection into it to be so or to have such abilities to exert influence on you, you inadvertently activate the negative state in you, becoming, for that moment, the negative state. Because of that, you feel miserable and uncomfortable and you rush to get out of that place. In cases like this, by your wrong attitude, you gave power to the negative state, effectively relinquishing the positive influence of My positive state over you.

It is very important for all of you to realize that you are the ones who determine by your attitude in what condition you will be and how you will be influenced by any factors of the external physical locations. In themselves and by themselves any such physical or geographical locations are neutral.

It is the sentient mind's attitude that determines whether such a location will have either positive or negative impact and influence on you. In this respect, as it has been pointed out many times before, if you are the positive state and in the positive state, and ultimately, if you are in Me and I am in you, no matter what your physical or geographical location is or will be, even if it were to be in the deepest Hells or, as in your case, Peter, being in the midst of the physical stronghold of the renegades, regardless of anything, you are in the positive state; and instead by being negatively influenced by anything going on in their domain, you will feel positive and good. And not only that, but by your projected positive attitude, by the sense that I am in control of all factors of any life, you will have a positive and beneficial impact on that place and everyone and everything situated in it.

Therefore, please, don't allow any such negative places, negative in your view, to have an adverse influence on you by having wrong attitudes or expectations of how it will influence you. If you expect to be influenced negatively by it, by all means you will feel miserable and very uncomfortable being in it. On the other hand, if you come to such a place with Me in you and with My positive state in you, and if you direct all your perceptions from My position and from the position of My positive state, then, in that case, you will experience only everything positive and good. Don't forget please, that even the most evil, negative and putrid place or state could not be absolutely so. Do you remember what I said to My prophet Elijah when he complained to Me that no one had remained amongst the children of Israel who would not be serving some other gods and who would not be corrupted by their evil deeds; and because of that he was asking Me to take his life for he was sick and tired of hiding for his life from people who wanted to kill him? I told him that I preserved amongst them a certain number of people who didn't succumb to the negative state and who continued to worship only Me. This example illustrates very clearly the fact that there is no such thing as absolute evil or negative. No matter what and no matter where, I do have My own people who are constantly making sure that My Presence in their negative location is fully preserved and is available to all.

Just look at the family with whom you, Peter, are staying in Moscow. It has always amazed you, since you have known its members, how it was possible to find such a positive, loving, caring, considerate, kind, gentle, wise, understanding, humble, modest and accepting family in a place which is so evil, negative and chaotic; the place which is dominated by the renegades and their negative state in general. And yet, here you are, living with them and enjoying immensely their company and the kindness and goodness of their heart, sharing with them and receiving

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

from them their full support of My New Revelation and their successful effort to live in accordance with its principles in a place and state in which it is seemingly impossible to be like that or to behave like that. Here is proof that someone like Lyudmila and Victor, because of their purely positive and good inclination, intention and motivation, which they have from Me, can live and function in a place like Moscow, Russia, and yet, remain positive and good. And no matter what their external problems might be, no matter how many physical and mental struggles they have being going through, no matter how much the negative state of their physical location has been trying to exert influence on them and to undermine or enslave their lives, nevertheless, they remained positive and good, serving by their good example My positive state and providing positive life energies to their geographical location for the purpose of fulfillment of its own destiny and goal for which it was allowed to be established in the first place.

As you see from this interesting example, any location and its survival depends on the presence of someone like Lyudmila and Victor, in order for it to be what it is and in order for it to fulfill its purpose for which it was established in the first place. I can assure you, Peter, and everyone who reads these words, that without people like Lyudmila and Victor, such locations, as well as the entire planet Zero, could not survive or function for a fraction of a second. The positive life force energies which I transmit through them from Me into such locations, make it possible for them to sustain their being and existence or, in this case, their pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. This fact gives you a clear indication that anything at all, no matter what it is, is totally and completely dependent on the sentient mind and, in an absolute sense, on My Absolute Sentient Mind. My Absolute Energies are continuously being emanated into all sentient minds from My Absolute Sentient Mind and by the process of the important titration, these energies are being redistributed throughout the entire being and existence, as well as the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, maintaining them in their one being and existence as well as pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. This is the reason why I put people like Lyudmila and Victor — by our prior mutual agreement, of course, — even into such locations as theirs is. Without them, such locations could never function and sustain any life in them. And this fact gives Me a great opportunity to express My personal gratitude to Lyudmila and Victor for their volunteering to be in a place and location in which they are and for allowing Me to generate through them My very specific energies which are needed to maintain any life and everything else in their location; and also for taking such good care of you, Peter. As you see, their location requires very specific and very unique energies in order to enable such a place, state and condition to be and to exist at all.

Because of this important fact, you are asked to never ascribe to the external environment anything that in actuality and factuality it doesn't have. As My true representatives you need to train yourself to look at everything happening in your environment as a result of the activities of the sentient mind — be they positive or negative, respectively. Wherever you are, no matter in what physical or geographical location on planet Zero you find yourself at each particular time, no matter where you live, you are needed in that location. Through you I maintain that location in its functional mode. Even if in your view that location can be considered as the very embodiment of the negative state itself, because it serves some kind of positive function in its ultimate outcome, it is needed to be exactly the way it is at each particular time and place. Your presence in it, and your positive energies that you continuously transmit and provide from Me to that location, not only make it possible for that location to fulfill its own purpose for which it was permitted by Me to be where it is and how it is, but, most importantly, it sets up a very important condition for all living in it, by which they will eventually be converted to the positive state. This is a very important realization. Remember this!

There is only one aspect of your endowment which is not entirely subject to a direct influence of the sentient mind and which is therefore, difficult to accommodate to this requirement. It is your physical body. And although your physical body is, in many instances, under the control of your mind, albeit on an unconscious and rarely conscious level, nevertheless, it was genetically structured in such a way so as to be dependent on the environmental and atmospheric conditions. Thus, no matter what, no matter how spiritually advanced you are, your body has a tendency to respond to its physical and atmospheric environment in accordance with any condition in which it finds itself at each particular time. Thus, for example, in bad weather and with a low atmospheric pressure your body may feel out of place, your head may be spinning, you may feel sleepy and tired, your blood pressure can be either too low or too high, and you may experience all kinds of physical symptoms which are incongruent with the nature of your being My true representatives or with the nature of the positive state in general. In situations like that, your realization that it is inevitable for your body to react like that, and knowing that it is a transient situation, you will not succumb to the negative influence of the negative state which is trying to get to you through the physical reactions of your body.

One of the major reasons why the human physical body was fabricated to be such a sensitive instrument to the influence of its physical external environment, was for the purpose of its utilization as a means to keep you in the negative state. After all, it was fabricated from the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

corresponding elements of the negative state. Thus, it is a full-fledged subject of the negative state. Do you remember it was indicated to you in My New Revelation that your spirit and soul are positive but that they are trapped in a physical body which was fabricated entirely from elements of the negative state? Because of this setup, there is continuous tension and pressure between these two forces keeping you potentially in the negative state. Any state of tension and pressure, which is experienced as an unpleasant state, is conducive only to the negative state. No such states exist in the positive state. This is the reason why it is said that your physical body, by its opposing nature to anything which its spirit and soul require or project, keeps you potentially in the negative state. The reason we are using the term ‘potentially’ and not actually, is that those of you who are My representatives, being that you are positioned in the positive state in your spirit and soul, will not succumb to your body’s negative conditions and reactions which it has to its physical environment.

However, bear in mind one important factor. The above statement about the physical environment and its influence on your physical body has to be taken with a certain degree of reservation. Why is it so? Because, in an ultimate sense, in its global and universal aspects, any environment, and any of its ongoing climate, condition, state and process, no matter what it is and how it is, is always influenced by the overall state and condition of the global and universal sentient mind. If the general condition of the global sentient mind is negative, as is the case in the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence and on planet Zero, then the physical, climatic, atmospheric and any other condition of the physical and geographical location and environment will reflect that condition and subsequently will establish a very turbulent, violent and chaotic state which, in turn, will adversely influence the condition of your physical body and the state of your mind in general.

So, you have here a somewhat circular loop that is going around and around feeding itself from one end to the other: sentient mind—physical body—physical environment—physical body—sentient mind. However, from the position of the physical body and its autonomous nervous system, the primary factor of dependency on the conditions and states of the sentient mind is not perceptible or discernible. Seemingly, from its own perspective, it only reacts to the conditions and states of the physical external environment and to nothing else. This situation was purposefully established by the fabricators of the negative state in order to keep people in the false perception that they are always influenced only by external factors without any involvement of anything internal or of the sentient mind in general. If you are constantly responding to

something outside of you, in this case, to the conditions in your environment, and if it looks like and feels like that — it is beyond your conscious control; and if you have no way to command your body not to respond to those external stimuli in such a negative and very often sick manner, you have no recourse but to conclude that all the power of influence is outside of you, being independent of you or of the sentient mind in general. In that case, the logical conclusion must be that the true reality of being and existence resides outside of you and not in you. This is how the trap of the negative state was set up. It is a convincing illusion taken for granted as a true state of affairs by the majority of humans and residents of the negative state everywhere and everywhen. And because of the experiential factors of the obvious reactions of the human physical body to the conditions and states of its external environment, this illusion is considered to be a true reality.

Be cognizant of these facts and adjust your perception and understanding accordingly. As mentioned in the last Dialog (80), which was recorded a few days before your departure from Santa Barbara, Peter, you are at an important crossroad and, perhaps, in the most important and significant time in the entire history of planet Zero as well as in the history of the negative state with all its Hells in general. As mentioned at the beginning of this Dialog, this situation requires from you or, to be precise, puts you in a condition to reevaluate the way you perceive, understand and look at all events around you and at your own lives. Up to this point, in this respect, there has been a tendency to judge everything happening around you and in you from the position of the external factors, and from the position of your typical human nature. In other words, to repeat it again and again, your judgment was based on that which was seen on or at the scene and not behind it. On or at the scene all things appear as having their own being and existence, independent of anything even remotely related to the state and condition of the sentient mind. They seem as though they have life in themselves and by themselves beyond any control of the sentient mind. Because of this false perception, many conclusions have been made even by you who are connected to My New Revelation, which are incorrect, even outrightly false, or distorted. Holding to such false, distorted or incorrect views, will continue keeping you under the influence of the negative state.

In order to avoid this unfavorable situation, I am asking you in all modesty, humbleness and humility, to stop judging things by their external appearances and start to look at them as they appear behind the scene. Even if some of you will be unable to ascertain what is going on behind the scene, and even if very often it will be difficult to understand or impossible to know what it is that really is happening

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

behind the scene, still don't succumb to the temptation of judging them in a typical human manner as they appear at or on the scene. Believe Me, it is better to have no knowledge in this respect than to have false, incorrect or distorted knowledge. If you rely on an indisputable fact that I know in an absolute sense what is going on behind the scene, and if that knowledge stays only with Me for some important spiritual reasons and for some foreseeable time, then your position will be to avoid at all cost judging things as they appear to be, instead as they really are. Simply stated, you put everything into My hands, having one of the most important knowledges, that whatever is happening, and how it is happening, no matter what it is and how it is, it is by My Will and by My Absolute Knowledge of all outcomes and results which any such events will produce. And most importantly, no matter how bad things look or seem to be, in their ultimate outcome, they all serve some good purpose.

Peter: Thank You very much for this revelation. Should we finish for today or should I proceed with asking questions mentioned at the beginning of our Dialog?

The Lord Jesus Christ: At this time, I would recommend to finish for today and take up your questions tomorrow or whenever you feel like. In the meantime, have a very pleasant time with My wonderful people — Lyudmila and Victor.

Eighty Second Dialog

May 25, 1999, Moscow, Russia

Peter: Is it appropriate to continue this morning with the questions that I planned to ask You yesterday on behalf of Victor and some others?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, it is appropriate. Go ahead and formulate your questions.

Peter: Since I am in Moscow, in the stronghold of the renegades, the questions relate to the behavioral issue of someone who is Your representative but who resides in a place and condition which is predominantly negative and from the standpoint of the political and economic situation, is in complete chaotic turmoil and desperation. The question is: How should Your representative behave or act or proceed if he/she is witnessing a crime as an outside observer — a shoplifting or some kind of stealing for example, by someone with whom he/she has no connection or whom he/she doesn't know or is acquainted with? Actually, two scenarios are possible in this situation. One is to be a witness as an outsider, a bystanding observer of such a crime; the other is when he/she is hired specifically to watch for such criminal activities and report them to the appropriate authorities. I believe the issue here is the application of principles of mercy, forgiveness, compassion, empathy, understanding and acceptance as applied in situations like that. What are the proper procedures in these cases and how does one manifest or apply in them these attributes of the positive state, from the position of the positive state? As You see, this is a somewhat practical issue.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, it is practical. However, it is also somewhat individualized and personalized and dependent on the situation, condition and setup under which any such criminal behavior is taking place. Because of that, it is obvious that no general guidelines, applicable to all situations, can be given or formulated. Take for example, the situation in Russia as compared to some other highly developed country. In Russia, the situation is desperate. Many people are without jobs or salaries. Their circumstances are such that, very often, in order to survive, they are forced into stealing. Of course, also in highly developed and economically prosperous countries, crime of this nature does exist. However, motivational factors which underlie such needs to commit these types of crime can be very much different. Thus, as you see from this difference, a different approach would be required to be taken in this respect. The first issue, of course, is to determine the motivational and

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

intentional factors of each particular person and all the reasons with which he/she approaches his/her criminal act.

The problem with this situation is that, as a bystander and an outside observer, you have absolutely no way to determine these motivational and intentional factors and the reasons for the need of any person to commit such crimes. How do you proceed in a situation like that? In some instances, such as for example, in Russia, to witness a crime and to do something about it, may endanger your life. So, as you see from this possible scenario, the situation is not as simple as it seems at first glance. Normally, under any other circumstances, if motivational and intentional factors are known or are obvious, and if they don't constitute any danger to the observer, as My true representative, it would be your spiritual duty to approach such an individual and to give him/her an opportunity to amend his/her ways by returning the stolen goods to the rightful owner and to admonish him/her not to do it anymore. In situations like that, when the intention, motivation and reasons for such behavior are known and no danger for you personally exists, the law of mercy, forgiveness, compassion, empathy, understanding and acceptance fully applies.

In other cases, when such factors are totally unknown and cannot be deduced or determined from the momentary situation in which you find yourself, as well as in all situations at all, the best way to proceed is to instantly turn yourself inward and ask Me for inspiration, illumination and enlightenment of how to proceed and what to do. Your very first thought, feeling or impulse, which follows your request to Me in this respect, would be the one which you would be advised to take and to apply. There could be situations in which you would feel very obviously that it would be very inappropriate to intervene with the process of commitment of such crimes. Here we are talking about the factor of important choices that both the individual committing the crime and the proprietor from whom he/she is stealing had made and the agreement into which they had entered prior to their incarnation on planet Zero. For some of their own important spiritual reasons, and for the reason of the illustration and demonstration of some specific aspects of the nature of the pseudo-life of the negative state, they need to play out this scenario of a thief and a victim of his/her crime. Your premature interference in this process could very well impede and nullify this play out. In that case, not only didn't you help the situation but you complicated it by your interference.

Your first impulse, of course, as My true representatives, would be to prevent any wrongdoing to anyone and on anyone's part. You have no

desire to cause any harm to anyone on both sides of the fence. To be a contributory factor of throwing a criminal into prison, especially in such horrible prisons as exist in Russia or some other countries, for example, is something that you don't want to do. On the other hand, you don't want the other party in this setup to be hurt either by losses that he/she can sustain from stealing. Here is the issue which we have been extensively discussing in the previous Dialogs and especially in the last one (81) about learning to see things behind the scene and not as they are being played out on or at the scene. As an outside observer or as a casual bystander, what you see is not what actually and factually really is happening behind the scene. You have no idea what is causing the interaction, deeds, acts, or whatever, which are taking place in front of your eyes. Your judgment of this situation, based on its external observation, therefore, can be very wrong and inappropriate. And based on it, your intervention not only could be wrong and premature but it might and could cause harm to all involved and to you personally. Sometimes in situations like that not to do anything is to do everything. On the other hand, sometimes reporting such crimes to the appropriate authorities, is to show true mercy, compassion, forgiveness, empathy, understanding and acceptance. And sometimes to approach the individual who is in the process of committing the crime and asking him/her to stop doing it, is to save that individual from some terrible consequences of his/her prospective crime.

So, in this respect, you have at least three options: Not to do anything, allowing that situation to be played out as needed and as was agreed upon by all involved; to report the crime to the appropriate authorities; or to approach the individual in question and give him/her an opportunity to cease from proceeding to commit the act of stealing or, if it already has happened, to return the stolen goods.

In these three options, or in any possible other options, no matter which way you look at them, the law of mercy, compassion, empathy, understanding, acceptance and forgiveness is fully applied and is being executed. The application of this important spiritual law, which we have so much emphasized in these Dialogs, and which is so crucial to the nature of the currently ongoing shift, has a much broader meaning than just letting go of someone or something. As you see from these three options, your attitude and subsequent behavioral act is not limited to only one way of how to do it or how to apply it. For example, to show mercy and to forgive doesn't necessarily mean that you are to prevent punishment so rightly deserved by the prospective individual who is about to commit a crime of stealing. By your appropriate action, in some cases, by being instrumental in the deterrent and apprehension of such

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

an individual, if the situation warrants, and by allowing him/her to go to prison, could be, in fact, the act of mercy and forgiveness. In situations like that, you inadvertently prevented something much worse from happening than otherwise would be the case. However, the opposite is also true: If your action was inappropriate, and if you were instrumental in apprehension of such an act, it may lead to much harm to all involved.

So, as you see from our discourse in this respect, the situation is much more complicated than you would like it to be. How easy it would be for all of you if only one simple answer were to exist, applicable to all situations in this respect. Unfortunately for you, no one such simple answer exists. This is the reason why it was emphasized above that you need to turn yourself to Me and to your intuition from Me in order to be able to make the right decision in all situations of your life and not only in the discussed one. As My true representatives, you were endowed with a much greater degree of intuition and of access to Me than anyone else in order to be able to listen to it and to act accordingly from the state of your within and ultimately from Me in you. Your reliance on this factor will enable you to always make the right decision no matter how outwardly you would feel about it.

As far as the second scenario is concerned, in which the nature of your particular job is to be a guardian against any stealing and which requires from you to report or to apprehend any criminal act of stealing, or whatever, it is your spiritual duty, no matter what, to abide by the description of your job and by the agreement under which you accepted your position in this respect. Of course, even in cases like that, if you catch a thief, and if the thief is ready and willing to return the stolen goods, and if he/she shows obvious remorse for his/her act and if he/she is asking you for mercy and compassion, and if no other obvious harm was done, then it would be prudent and wise to let him/her go without turning him/her in to the appropriate authorities and with a strong and firm reminder to him/her not to do anything of that nature anymore. And this is all that can be said about this issue at this time.

Peter: Thank You very much for this explanation. The next question, which came from several readers of Your New Revelation, relates to the behavioral issues of Your representatives on planet Zero as well. However, at this time, it concerns sexual behavior. As you know, it was indicated by You in Your New Revelation, that any safe sexual involvement for Your representatives is possible, if at all, only with someone who is at the same or a similar spiritual level and who is a follower and practitioner of Your New Revelation. Otherwise, if no such opportunities exist, the advice was, not to get sexually involved at all but

to wait until the time when we are recalled from planet Zero and reenter the spiritual world. The question in this respect was: In view of the currently ongoing shift and in view of its specific nature, is this requirement still valid and applicable at the present time? What if someone meets a prospective sexual partner who exhibits very independent behavior, and who seems to be stable, reliable, honest and non-demanding, and who is not jealous, envious, possessive and manipulative but who is not connected to Your New Revelation and who is not a follower and practitioner of its principles; is it appropriate for Your representative to get sexually involved with such a person if there is mutual attraction and consent? The reason for this inquiry, the way I understand it, is in the fact, that there are not enough individuals connected to Your New Revelation with whom such a sexual relationship could be established. After all, how many men and women are there of this nature with whom it would be possible to have such a relationship?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Also this question has primarily a personalized and individualized nature. Therefore, no all-inclusive rule exists by which everyone could establish a sexual relationship of this nature. It all depends on the intention and motivation with which such a sexual involvement is approached. Different people and different situations will require a different approach.

By and large though, what was suggested in Chapter 20 in ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ*** continues to be valid even during this shift and in the situation that currently exists. In some ways, because of the extreme condensation of the negative state and the impact it has on all and everything, this requirement is even more applicable than before. The character traits that you enumerated above, Peter, on behalf of the inquirers could very well be superficial as observed from the outside as a bystander. Although such a person may behave that way initially, it could be a dangerous trap by the negative state to catch you in its clutches and to cause you tremendous problems and repercussions.

Nowadays, it is quite possible that you will be encountering such situations frequently exactly for that purpose — to catch you and to sway you from being My representatives. No matter how nice such a person looks or behaves, no matter how much outwardly that person is fulfilling the above mentioned requirements, unless that person is a true follower and practitioner of My New Revelation or a covert agent of My positive state, such characteristics are only superficial and externally imposed without any roots to the true reality of the positive state. Don't forget one important fact: At the present time, the agents of the negative state acquired the ability to exhibit all good and positive characteristics on

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

their outward level in order to deceive, if possible, even My true representatives on planet Zero.

We have already discussed in one of the previous Dialogs the issue of the negative state, or the devil and Satan, as appearing beautiful, attractive and positive. Otherwise, no one would fall into its trap. But look what kind of word we are using here. It ***appears*** that way. Appearances don't mean that they are a true reality as well. In most instances, appearances are just that — appearances. What do you know about what is hiding behind those appearances? Very often, and not surprisingly, behind them you can find just the opposite of that which appears to your external observation. Unfortunately, by the time you discover this fact, it is too late. You have already fallen into the trap set up for you by the negative state by the means of your sexual desires and sexual needs to get involved with someone of this nature. So, don't be taken in by any such appearances and don't believe for a second that anyone could be positive, good, free, independent, stable, balanced, non-manipulative, non-possessive, non-jealous, non-envious, etc., without Me or My New Revelation.

However, the situation is not as simple as that even with someone who is claiming to be a follower and practitioner of My New Revelation. In this respect, you have to understand one important fact: A sexual involvement of the two individuals who are both followers and practitioners of My New Revelation could also be unproductive, unfulfilling, negative, inappropriate and imbued with all kinds of problems and adversity if approached with the wrong intention, wrong motivation and for the wrong reasons. Don't forget the fact, many times mentioned before, that everyone involved with My New Revelation is at a different level of its acceptance and practice. These different levels are not necessarily congruent with and harmonious for establishment of a sexual relationship amongst its members. Even in this respect you can get a very unpleasant surprise. Because of the different understanding and acceptance of the principles of My New Revelation, a serious conflict could ensue which could lead to very unpleasant consequences.

Take for example, some situations which currently exist with some marital and boyfriend-girlfriend partners who are seemingly both followers and practitioners of My New Revelation. At least they claim to be so. How harmonious and fulfilling is their sexual involvement? If they are seeking some other involvement, it only means that they are not happy or satisfied with their present sexual arrangements. Thus, they seek out someone else with whom they can get sexually involved. But how does the other partner respond to such an involvement? She/he

becomes jealous, possessive, demanding, manipulative, inconsiderate, selfish, envious and almost violent. Are these the characteristics of My true representative? No matter what the situation is, no matter how much one feels to have the right to behave like that, it is very inappropriate for My representative to exhibit such negative characteristics. And if he or she does, then it only means that My New Revelation and its principles have never penetrated his/her externals and therefore, have never been internalized. In that case, such a person only *appears* to be a follower and practitioner of My New Revelation while the true reality of his/her situation is that he/she is not. How would you like to get sexually involved with such a person? Do you see My point? And although in itself and by itself such involvement, if on your part is approached with positive and good intent, doesn't necessarily constitute what is called sin, nevertheless, you are setting yourself up for a very unpleasant outcome. It could complicate your life immensely. Ultimately, you would be very sorry for getting sexually involved at all.

Because of the ultimate individualized and personalized nature of this situation, it would be wise and prudent to turn yourself to your within and ask Me, before entering into or planning to have any sexual involvement, if it is appropriate, safe and sanctioned by Me and if it could be beneficial and useful for both involved, as well as for all connected to you in other dimensions, to have such sexual relations.

As you see from this advice, your sexual involvement with anyone not only impacts the two of you in whatever manner and way, but it has a considerable ramification and impact also on others who are connected to you. And this is so whether you are or are not consciously aware that such is the case. Don't ever forget that at all times you are functioning on many levels of being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. Because of that, your actions, behaviors and undertakings, whatever they may be, have a very strong impact on all of them. And this is particularly true about sexual involvement. Being what sexuality is and signifies, as a tool for an all-inclusive sharing, and as a means of generating life-force energies, any such involvement on your part would have much more significant impact on everyone and everything connected to you than any other type. Thus, you have to be very careful about this situation. Don't allow yourself to be blinded by your strong sexual drive and succumb to its demands by getting indiscriminately sexually involved with anyone who comes your way, no matter how much that person seems to be ready and willing and appropriate even if that person is a follower and practitioner of My New Revelation. Don't forget about the infinitely different levels and degrees of involvement in this respect.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

You will never go wrong if you ask Me to indicate to you by some mode and means available to you how to proceed in cases like that. You are advised to ask Me especially about magnifying your intuition and by not allowing it to be suppressed, repressed or blinded by your overwhelming sexual drive. Sometimes, it is much more profitable to restrain yourself from any sexual involvement than to fall into the traps of the negative state which likes nothing better than to use your sexual drive for the purpose of corrupting you and making your life miserable. Remember, please, sexuality is one of the most favorite tools in the hands of the negative state to accomplish its goal on planet Zero. This is especially true during the currently ongoing shift. Prepare yourself for many temptations by the means of your sexuality. An all-out assault is being planned by the forces of the negative state against anything positive remaining on your planet. Sexuality will play a prominent role in this assault. It will also be used to make some of you — females, unexpectedly and unnecessarily pregnant, thus, complicating your life considerably. Should anything like that happen, you are advised to abort the fetus. Of course, as always, the choice is yours. And this is all that can be said about this issue at this time. I would recommend, Peter, to finish it for today. Go and rest, have fun and enjoy your stay with My people — Lyudmila and Victor.

Peter: Thank You very much for Your input and for Your advice. I'll do so gladly.

Eighty Third Dialog

May 27, 1999, Moscow, Russia

Peter: Before going into my own questions this morning, I would like to ask You, my Lord Jesus Christ, if You have anything to contribute about anything at all.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for asking Me to talk first. Many things are in the process of unfolding and taking place at the present time. Within the frame of the currently ongoing shift, various progressive phases are being instituted or, to be more precise, are put into motion which will significantly alter the course of developments in the realm of the negative state and on planet Zero.

For example, something important happened yesterday that enabled one of these phases to be triggered. The nature of this phase and what it constitutes is premature to reveal or to know at this time because it is still unfolding. As long as it is unfolding, such knowledge, being that it would be offered to human aspects of your conscious mind, could impede its proper establishment as well as manifestation of its consequences. The reason we are mentioning this fact is that your collaborative effort, Peter, with our Lyudmila, as well as with Victor; your discussions and walks in the streets of Moscow, and most importantly, your specific spiritual, mental and physical energies, produced by your activities yesterday, were needed and were effectively utilized for this phase to begin its development.

As you see from this fact, being that you are My cherished representatives on planet Zero and being that you agreed to work with Me on whatever is needed and is deemed appropriate by Me for the purpose of fulfillment of all aspects of My Plan of Salvation, everything that you do, experience, consider, undertake or whatever, is being utilized by Me within the frame of My Work which I do toward the final goal. It is not that much your specific activities or experiences that you have or undertake, but your very specific energies which are generated during such activities and experiences that are being utilized for this noble purpose. This factor relates to all of you who agreed to be My true representatives on planet Zero. Your diverse specific and unique activities, your experiences, everything that you have encountered from the time that you agreed or chose upon My request to become My true representatives, and to the time of fulfillment of your missions on planet Zero, no matter where you are and no matter what you do or experience, the spiritual, mental and physical energies produced during this time,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

serve for Me as important means for accomplishment of My goals in this respect.

Now, it is obvious that your human conscious mind is utterly incognizant of this fact. Consciously, you have no idea or sense that this is the case. However, on other levels of your mind, without any conscious involvement, you are fully aware of this fact and your participation in this respect is registered and recognized there. The reason you need to know about these facts at this particular time, is that the phase of the currently ongoing shift, which is in the process of unfolding, requires your conscious knowledge regarding your involvement in this important work. Although it is quite conceivable that outwardly you may not have any tangible recognition or experience of anything particularly happening in this respect, your becoming consciously aware that this is the case, and being aware that no matter what you do or experience, and that your spiritual, mental and physical energies are being utilized for this purpose, it will considerably strengthen this process, making it more effective, more executable and more successfully established.

There is an important time frame factor for this process. As you know, different readers of these Dialogs, and specifically of all Dialogs that follow the Eightieth Dialog, will read them at different times. These different times will be spread out considerably especially with those who will be awaiting for their translations into other languages. This factor of time-spread is not by coincidence. Within the time frame that is needed for this phase of the currently ongoing shift to be fully put into motion or to be executed and established, various specific spiritual, mental and physical energies will be needed that will be provided at the time of their reading of these Dialogs (which follow the 80th Dialog). This is a spread out effect.

Looking at our Dialogs from this perspective, you can clearly ascertain that there is an important breaking point between the first 80 Dialogs and the ones that follow them. An important spiritual and multiversal milestone was accomplished and firmly established at all levels of being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, as well as on planet Zero at the time when the 80th Dialog was finished and you, Peter, embarked on your important and crucial trip abroad. Following that Dialog, a new beginning in the process of elimination of the negative state and all the negative aspects of human nature, as well as in preparation for activation of the fullness and completeness of life of the positive state, has been in place. The nature of this new beginning required from you, Peter, to arrive into the strongholds of the renegades in Moscow, Russia and have a very intense and meaningful collaborative

involvement with Lyudmila and Victor. Their participation with you, Peter, in this process, at this junction of the mentioned new beginning, is very important; and your combined spiritual, mental and physical energies which are being generated by your various activities, and very often also by seeming non-activities (during your rest and/or sleep), are very important contributory factors for this new beginning to be firmly grounded and put into motion. At the same time, by this factor, you are building a firm ground and condition, on which all others of My representatives, during their own reading of these Dialogs, and subsequently during their own activities, will be contributing their own spiritual, mental and physical energies which will be utilized for the successful implementation and establishment of everything related to this new beginning and the way it will be unfolding.

Of course, due to security considerations, the nature and the content of this new beginning cannot be revealed at this time. The renegades are extremely disturbed by it and they would like nothing better than to learn about the nature and content of this new phase so that they could block its impact on themselves or, at least, postpone its establishment and process. Not having any possibility of learning these facts, they are becoming more furious and more chaotic in their activities. Thus, you can expect that some more unpredictable chaotic and confusing events on your planet are to take place, generated by the renegades in response to this new beginning. In some ways, such events may sometimes and temporarily adversely influence your external lives by setting you up for development of all kinds of unexpected and irritating symptoms on your external mental and/or physical level. However, whenever something like that may happen to you, don't panic and don't be dismayed or upset because they are only superficial and non-life threatening occurrences which will pass without any harm done to you and to your overall well-being. As you know, Peter, something like that has already happened to Lyudmila and Victor.

I want you to realize that anything which is and will be happening to you, as to My true representatives, no matter how seemingly difficult, threatening, bad, unpleasant and unexpected it is or will be, it will be turned into something positive and good; and the spiritual, mental and physical energies generated during those times will be effectively and successfully utilized by Me for the accomplishment of My goals and plans. And this is all, Peter, that I wanted to contribute today. You may proceed with asking your questions.

Peter: Thank You very, very much for Your meaningful contribution. My first question relates to something that You said in Your Revelation

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

(Apocalypse) in the Holy Bible, Chapter 3, verse 19, and I quote, '*As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten. Therefore be zealous and repent.*' The Russian translation sounds somewhat more severe in this respect. It indicates that whomever You love, You unmask and punish. The English translation, as quoted here, doesn't have such a punitive connotation as the Russian. This statement, and some statements by Paul and King Solomon about not sparing the rod to punish children and humans in general (for example, the saying, '*spare the rod and spoil the child*'), led many societies on this planet to institute sometimes very severe forms of punishment and discipline. And not only that — and this is a problem, — they do so in Your name, quoting You and Your punitive nature, justifying their own punitive actions and severe behavior toward their children and other humans. After all, if You punish, rebuke and chasten us, and if You recommend us to do the same in respect to others, then it is godly, proper and appropriate for us to be that way. Somehow, this understanding of Your statement doesn't fit The New Revelation's conceptualization of Your True Nature. Would You like to offer any comment on this issue? Also, why is it that it came to my attention at this particular time?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, I would like to comment on this statement of Mine as recorded in the Apocalypse. And the reason that it came to your attention at this time is that it is connected to the above mentioned new beginning and to the phase which is in the process of its occurrence right now within the frame of the currently ongoing shift. The forces of the negative state, especially the renegades, but also the pseudo-creators, are in the process of triggering, or have already established, all kinds of mutually punitive activities and destruction as seen, for example, in the NATO war against Yugoslavia and in the fights that are going on among various factions of the renegades (ethnic cleansing, hateful intolerance, etc.). This unusual situation triggers in a much stronger manner than before in human tendencies to try to resolve problems of their lives, be it within their own families with their own children, or in the workplace or on the streets in general or in relationships amongst themselves, in a violent and punitive manner. Recently, you have been witnessing many such events taking place around you. And you will witness more of them.

In order to justify such violent and punitive behaviors, very often and in some societies, it is proclaimed that I am the One who is doing it by the means of humans. Thus, in their conceptualization I am the One who punishes people and who allows all these atrocities and abominations, which are constantly generated in all corners of your planet, to take place. As you know, any so-called natural disasters, for example, that are

happening so frequently on your planet, are considered to be acts of God, as though I am the One who causes them. Because of this false perception and misunderstanding, and because of the more and more frequent occurrences of such negative, punitive and violent phenomena, it is necessary to address this issue and put it in a proper perspective. This is the reason why it was brought to your attention at this time. It is also tied in with the above mentioned phase and the new beginning.

If the Nature of God — My Nature — is rooted and grounded in the Absolute Divine Love and Absolute Divine Wisdom, and Absolute Divine Good and Absolute Divine Truth, and Absolute Divine Positive Works and Absolute Divine Faith, then, in that case, logically speaking, any punitive or punishing or violent behavior is inconsistent with such a Nature. However, what would be the reason for My making such statements, (and there are many such statements throughout the Bible), if they truly contradict Who and how I really am? As you see from this discourse, the issue is, once again, in taking everything, what I said or stated literally and not spiritually. The problem with this situation is that anything I proclaim on the spiritual level and which relates solely to the amendment or correction of one's ways and manner of life, if it is stated in terms of outcomes and consequences of any activities and/or behaviors of the negative nature, when it is applied to the external non-spiritual understanding of the human mind, it sounds and is perceived and conceived as punitive or punishing or even violent.

Consider this important fact: What is the nature of the positive state in general — as related to the discussed issue? In its essence and substance it reflects My Absolute Nature in its relative condition. The nature of this nature, tautologically speaking, is to be positive, that is to say, to be kind, gentle, considerate, understanding, long-suffering or patient; to be loving, wise, open, merciful, forgiving; to be compassionate, empathetic, understanding, accepting; and to be non-violent, non-punitive and non-retributive. In this case, if you establish a lifestyle congruent to these positive characteristics, you establish the very life of the positive state. If you are in such a life, you are in Me and I am in you because only from My very Nature anything of this nature can be established. So, what do you do, if you want to initiate and establish a lifestyle which is totally different? Obviously, you cannot include in such a life anything which is of those characteristics. You have to come up with something totally opposite to them. In this case, a lifestyle comes to its fruition which contains only that which is not in the positive state and/or in My Nature. Thus, you will initiate violence, punitive-ness, ruthlessness, chastisement, rebukes, inconsiderateness, impatience, rejection and all

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

similar characteristics which will become the mode of your life. Hence, the negative state.

However, there are several factors under which and by which such life could be established. First of all, as you know, because this life doesn't contain anything which would be of My Nature or the nature of My positive state, it cannot have a permanent and eternal continuation. Otherwise, you would have to admit that two absolute forces operate independently in the multiverse: one positive and one negative. If this were the case, either force could not be eliminated to eternity. This situation would be true if both forces were to be initiated in the Absolute Source — Me. In the logical construct, if something is Absolute in one of its fundamental characteristics, it cannot be at the same time absolute in something which is opposite to this characteristic. If I am absolutely good, kind, loving, wise, etc., I cannot be at the same time absolutely bad, evil, negative, hateful, intolerant, foolish, inconsiderate, etc. Thus, as stated many times before, co-existence of two absolutes in their opposing characteristics, cannot be and exist. They are mutually exclusive.

Based on these factors, a very specific arrangement was made by Me before I granted My permission for this opposing lifestyle to be established. In actuality, several conditions were spelled out and embedded in the life of the negative state. As you know, the first one was that the negative state cannot stay forever but it can last only during one cycle of time — the current one. Secondly, that everyone who participates in its life will be there on a voluntary basis with the ability to change and to choose fully preserved in them. Thirdly, that no conscious memories will be retained that this is only a voluntary and transient status of their pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. Fourthly, that everyone participating in the negative state will have to bear full consequences of his/her negative and evil deeds. Fifthly, that in the very life of the negative state there will be a continuous awareness of rebuke and chastisement about evilness and negativity of its members in order to make it possible for anyone in the negative state to recede from its pseudo-lifestyle. After all, if you choose to be negative or evil, you choose the pseudo-life of the negative state. Once you choose this pseudo-life, you choose all conditions under which the negative state was permitted to be activated. In that case, you choose the life of punishment or punitiveness as well as rebuke and chastisement.

Due to the fact that I am Absolute Love, and being absolute in My Love, I love everyone without exception or exclusion, no matter how evil and negative any individual might be. Because of My Absolute Love, I am in the state of a constant reminder to everyone in the negative state and

human life to recede from their negative life because by its very nature it is the state of suffering, rebuke, chastisement, misery, confusion, foolishness and similar putrid characteristics. My Absolute Love has no desire for anyone to be in such a terrible state. Therefore, if I love you, and if you are in such a state, by that factor and by the factor of its nature, I am continuously reminding you to amend your ways because I want you back in the positive state with Me. My Absolute Love provided all these conditions in the negative state in order to make it possible for everyone to come back to the positive state.

Can you imagine what would happen if no such important provisions were made and if nothing of this nature were to be imbued in the very essence and substance of the negative state or, to be more precise, in everyone's unconscious mind? If nothing of this nature were to exist in their minds, regardless of in what mode — conscious or unconscious, there would be absolutely no incentives for anyone to get out of the negative state and to come back to the positive state.

Because before activation of the negative state, we all had a mutual agreement to establish all the above mentioned conditions, under which the negative state was permitted to be activated; and because, in an ultimate sense, I am the One Who has Absolute control of all consequences, outcomes and results of any actions and reactions, it is perceived by everyone, and, in fact, it is needed to be stated to everyone, that it is I who rebuke and chasten everyone whom I love and cherish. This is the Absolute Wisdom of My Absolute Love and the Absolute Love of My Absolute Wisdom. If I were not to love in such an Absolute manner, it wouldn't matter to Me what would happen to you or what the outcome of the negative state would be. In that case, you might as well commit existential suicide. No purpose would exist for your life, whatever type of life it would be, to continue under such impossible conditions. However, I do care, and I do care in an Absolute degree. And because I care Absolutely, I provide all kinds of opportunities, make all kinds of provisions and set up all kinds of conditions under which recession from such a pseudo-life and return to the true life is not only possible but is an absolute necessity.

As you see from this explanation, Peter, the interpretation of the quoted verse has to be made in the manner as described above. It is not as if I personally and directly rebuke or punish or chasten anyone — this would be contrary to My True Nature — but the Wisdom of My Love spells out for everyone in the negative state and human life all conditions under which the negative state was permitted to be activated; and, at the same time, it gives them a way out of it. As mentioned at the beginning of this

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

discourse, whenever you spell out for someone those conditions, or whatever conditions, because it is you who spells them out for them, it appears that you are the one who is rebuking and chastening them. In the negative state and human life no other perception is possible because, by their very nature, it always appears to them as if this rebuke and chastening comes from the outside, from someone out there and not from their own within; while the true reality of this fact is that such rebukes and chastening come from their own within where it was placed by the original agreement as one of the most important conditions under which the negative state was allowed to come to its pseudo-life. However, their own within is rejected by all members of the negative state and by the majority of humans — what a terrible state for them to be in! — and because of that, the only way it can penetrate their mind at any of its levels is if you present that statement to them as if it is coming not from their within but from their without — in this case from Me. Hence, *‘As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten. Therefore be zealous and repent.’* Does it answer your question, Peter?

Peter: Very much so. And I thank You very much for this answer. Although I do have another question, I think I should postpone it to some other time.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, it would be a good idea to do so. More of your energies are needed in a different mode of activities.

Eighty Fourth Dialog

May 29, 1999, Moscow, Russia

Peter: As You know, for some reason or other, the issue of the Book of Revelation in the Bible (Apocalypse), as such, continues to be on my mind. The question, of course, is: Is there anything at all, contained in that book, that has relevance to the present and future state of affairs on planet Zero, in human life and to the outcome of the negative state? Or whatever was written in that book had been fulfilled somewhere else, in the World of Spirits, for example (Intermediate world), as Swedenborg claimed, and therefore, has no relevance to anything in human life and any other type of life? And if it had already been fulfilled, then why is it that it is still so much on my mind and why so many diverse interpretations and explanations of this book's content exist and continuously spring up among religious zealots on this planet? Something is seriously troubling me about this whole issue. Do You think it would be a good idea to talk about it at this time? Of course, before answering my question, perhaps You would like to talk about something first. I would gladly yield this time to Your input into anything You feel is timely and appropriate.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for allowing Me to talk first. Just a brief comment about something you experienced yesterday. As you were taking your morning walk, after finishing your recording of our Eighty Third Dialog, at one place on the street, on its sidewalk, a pathetic man was sitting in a very uncomfortable (from your point of view) crouching posture. He was preoccupied with his meager belongings, consisting of a few items, going through them, one by one, without any apparent purpose or goal. His look was emaciated and he was dirty, filthy, smelly, unkempt, paying attention to no one and to nothing, not looking at anyone or on anything in particular. He looked to you, Peter, so miserable and so out of place, that your heart sank and you felt both revulsion and compassion at the same time. Approximately 40 minutes later, as you were returning from your walk, the man in question was still present at the same place, sitting or crouching in the same posture, doing exactly the same things without any obvious alteration in anything in his posture or position or in his meaningless activities, related to a very few belongings of his. When you returned home to Lyudmila and Victor's place, you forgot about that man.

Then, during the late afternoon, after your meal, you took another walk by the same place. To your surprise, at the same place, there was the same man, who at this time was lying down on the sidewalk, sleeping,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

again in a very uncomfortable (from your view) fetus-type position with two or three scattered pieces of french rolls. At this time you were really shocked by the whole scene, thinking that, perhaps there is some message contained for you in this strange encounter. Again, as you were walking back, approximately an hour later by the same place, the man in question continued to sleep in the same posture, at the same place, with the same scattered french rolls. His look, appearance and behavior were bizarre, chaotic, confusing, pathetic and meaningless. Your first thought was that maybe, this man is either drunk or mentally ill or both. But looking at him from your clinical perspective, although he could fit into both of these diagnostic categories, there was something more about him and his looks than just mental illness and/or alcoholism. Again, as you were walking by, you felt almost uncontrollable revulsion and compassion. You almost felt as if you should do something about him and his condition. Interestingly enough, a multitude of people were walking by that man, without paying any attention to him, as if they were used to or expecting to see something like that on a daily basis. Taking into consideration that you are in Moscow, Russia, and taking into consideration the terrible economic situation that people in this country have been experiencing, it is obvious that such scenes as that are common occurrences for them. So they go by them as if nothing is happening.

As you were pondering about the fate of that man, Peter, you became curious why it was necessary for you to encounter a strange man like that and why situations like that were permitted to happen at all, and why even worse things than that were permitted to happen and what the lessons from this experience were/are for you personally, Peter.

As you know, being what you are and who you are, Peter, nothing is by coincidence in your case. By the example of this case, we wanted to bring to your attention a vivid, concrete and factual depiction of the nature of the negative state. That man was the very embodiment, illustration and demonstration of what the negative state is all about and how it looks in its true essence and substance, stripped of all its fake appearances. This is the reason why the man in question looked like more than just a mentally ill person and/or an alcoholic. In your clinical practice in the mental health field, Peter, you were used to encountering people who were mentally ill or alcoholics or drug addicts or all of the above. And yet, they didn't evoke exactly the same feelings as the man in question. It was obvious to you that there was something more to that man than just being a mentally ill person and/or alcoholic. His purpose was to set up a living, vivid, concrete and obvious example of the nature of the negative state.

No matter how the negative state appears to be from the outside observation, its true nature contains nothing more than what you saw in the condition of that man. People like that agreed to this illustration and it was permitted by Me to have such concrete examples so that the true nature of the negative state could be exposed and become obvious to all. Your feelings of revulsion in this case were in response to the obvious nature of the negative state. Your feelings of compassion were in response to the need to save everyone from the negative state and to give them an opportunity to come back to the positive state. At the same time, Peter, you were wondering how it is possible for someone like that man, in his overall condition, to be saved from the negative state and to be converted to the positive state. After all, he looked like an empty shell without any spark of anything rational and salvageable. And you were telling yourself: Could the presence of The Lord Jesus Christ be in a man like that? Is there anything in that man that would make it possible for him to understand what his condition is all about so that he could be transformed? How is it possible for a man like that to have anything even remotely resembling free will, free choice and the ability to change?

Based on these questions, you were starting to doubt, Peter, whether the basic premises of My New Revelation were correct and whether you misunderstood something about the whole concept of The New Revelation and whether the situation with the ending of the negative state and converting everyone in it to the positive state was correct and feasible at all. How is it possible for someone like that man to be loved and cared for by Me or by anyone of you? After all, the revulsion portion of your feelings toward men like that was/is overwhelming. Feelings of revulsion are inconsistent with feelings of love and caring.

Well, here we have again the issue of seeing things as they are at or on the scene and not behind it. Moreover, you were looking at the whole scene from the position of your relativity as well as from the position of very little, if no knowledge at all, why someone like that man can even exist. On the other hand, I am looking on men like that from the position of My Absolute Knowledge of all reasons for something like that to be in any type of life. In other words, I see them always as they really are behind the scene in their very essence and substance. If someone agreed to illustrate even such unimaginable extremes of the nature of the negative state, as the case is with the man in question, how could I, from the position of My Absolute Love and its Absolute Wisdom, not love and care for such a man and not preserve in him a spark of something generated from Me which will be utilized by Me for saving him and bringing him back to the positive state? In fact, I am thankful and grateful for individuals like that for agreeing to be a vivid, concrete,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

tangible and factual illustration of the nature of the negative state and to what the pseudo-life of the negative state, in its outcome, leads.

Notice please, the french rolls which were scattered around that man. You were wondering: How in the heck did they appear if that man had never moved from that position? Who provided him with those rolls? After all, they were not present when you walked by that man in the morning. Obviously, someone had compassion on that man and provided him with those rolls. What does the appearance of the french rolls tell you, Peter? What is the spiritual correspondence here? As you know so well, spiritually speaking, I am the Bread of Life, represented here by the french rolls. I provide for everyone the means of survival no matter who it is or where he/she is or how negative and/or evil he/she might be. No matter what, everyone is fed by My life.

At the same time, the french rolls represent very obviously that even men like that are not absolutely negative or evil. Even with men like that, around them and in them there is something present which is of Me, of My Absolute Goodness, Love and Care. By that presence, they are able to fulfill their purpose, for which they were allowed to be the way they are. The indication is very clear here: No one and nothing would be able to proceed in doing, representing, illustrating, demonstrating and being the way they are or agreed to without My feeding them with My Life-Bread. That My Life-Bread is misused, abused and discarded by them every time after they eat it, as represented by the scattered french rolls around the man in question, is another story. Nevertheless, it is always available to them and it will be utilized in the ultimate outcome of their purpose, for which they agreed to be, for saving them from their dire condition.

In a general sense of this experience, Peter, the lesson here is very obvious: This is how the negative state will end. All its efforts, no matter how much they seem to be beneficial and profitable in their interim manifestation, will come to nothing else but what the man in question demonstrated and illustrated to you, Peter. Thus, it will end in nothingness and total meaninglessness. All those multitudes of individuals who by their own free will and choice voluntarily participated in the pseudo-life of the negative state, illustrating all aspects of its pseudo-life, will be rewarded for their effort by being reawakened from their condition and subsequently saved.

At the same time, as you were seeing that man in one position, without any obvious change, sitting or lying down on the sidewalk, it became obvious to you that by representing the factual and actual nature of the

negative state, he was a reflection of the current state of affairs in the negative state in general and human life in particular. In this sense, the indication was that the negative state is stagnant, unprogressive, unchangeable in its true nature (it doesn't want to change anything) and unmovable. It is going nowhere. In actuality, the only way it is going, as was obvious from the condition of the man in question, is backward, being utterly regressive and senseless, going toward its ultimate doom and eternal death. Such a movement is no movement at all. Whatever ends in its ultimate death and non-being and non-existence cannot be considered to be in true motion. The only true motion possible, from the spiritual standpoint, is forward and onward toward a higher, more progressive level of being and existence.

If the negative state was built on everything opposing the nature of the positive state, which is in the state of continuous unceasing progression, then it is obvious that the negative state would be built on continuous regression and degradation. Otherwise, it would not be the negative state. Based on this factor, logically speaking, if something is in the process of continuous regression and degradation, then it ends up shrinking in all aspects of its life, or pseudo-life in this case, with a total loss of all and any energies that are able to support its pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. In that case, as this regression and degradation takes place, gradually all energies become completely and totally depleted, and nothing is left that would enable continuation of this pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. At that point in time, the negative state will become non-existent also by the simple fact of its regressive and shrinking mode.

This logical outcome and setup clearly indicates, once again, that the negative state, by its very pseudo-essential and pseudo-substantial nature, cannot continue forever to eternity. Only something which is moving onward and forward, in a progressive mode, can and may continue in that mode because it is continuously expanding, and in the process of its expansion, it is multiplying its energies which serve to eternally maintain this progression and expansion. As you know, Peter, this nature of the positive state stems from My Absolute Nature. It clearly tells you that I am the One Who is in an absolute, eternal and continuous mode of progression, movement, expansion and manifestation. Therefore, anything that is derived from Me Personally, is also in such a mode.

Because, as you know, the negative state didn't derive from Me, but from the opposition of anything that is in Me and from Me, it couldn't establish the same mode. For that reason, it is exactly like the man you saw on that sidewalk — it is dying in an absolute sense.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

And this brings us obliquely to the answering of your question, Peter, about the content of the Book of Revelation in the Holy Bible. In reality, in the true reality of its content, in one of *the many aspects* of its internal sense, that book describes the nature of the negative state, its final outcome and the process of its elimination and closure of this cycle of time. If you carefully consider the offered description of the negative state in that book, then the negative state looks exactly like the man whom we described or mentioned above. Besides all of that, that book also describes the Nature of God and the process of acquirement of My New Nature and how this New Nature will impact the entire Creation and pseudo-creation and what its outcome for all will be. It also describes the ending of the human era in the Intermediate World, the spiritual combat in the process of this ending, the process of the Last Judgment in general and the building and establishment of the fullness and completeness of life of the positive state.

As you know, Peter, all books in the Holy Bible that contain the inner, spiritual sense (35 books altogether), including the Book of Revelation (Apocalypse), have multiple meanings and many levels of interpretation. Because of the fact that the inner, spiritual sense is of the spiritual world, which is not time-space bound, anything written in those books, and especially in the Revelation-Apocalypse, in some way or other, is applicable to all times, all conditions, all states and all places in the entire being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. However, when you apply their meaning to some place and condition like planet Zero, for example, which is time-space bound, the tendency is to interpret their content in the frame of past, present and future and with local and limited application to the human destiny only.

Looking at the content and meaning of the Apocalypse from a typical human perspective, in linear time and space, some levels of the inner spiritual sense of this book, almost in its entirety (but not entirely), had been fulfilled as of some time ago. The problem with the human understanding and interpretation of the content of this book, is that they limit its application only to human life on planet Zero. And although it is correct to assume that whatever is written in that book has some important relevance to humans, it was not applicable to humans living on planet Zero as much as it was applicable to their destiny in the Intermediate World. Thus, you can say, that most of the content of that book, as applied to that world, has already been fulfilled.

However, humans are able to see and discern, in most instances, only one level of the content and meaning of that book — the literal level which does not make too much sense for them. The literal level is too confusing

and mysterious for them. But because they are unable to ascertain any other level, they have been trying for many centuries, since it was written, to figure out what it really means and signifies in its literal sense only. Due to the fact that the literal sense has no sense, in order to make some sense out of it, the interpreters of the Apocalypse have come up with many diverse, very often contradictory understandings and interpretations of its content as it could be applied to human life and its destiny only. Thus, once again, and we are repeating this for the sake of a reminder, they see things only as they appear on and at the scene and not behind the scene. The literal interpretation equals seeing things as they appear on and at the scene. Because anyone looking at the scene does so from his/her own perspective, which is unique, personalized and individualized, they all ascribe to the events happening on the scene different meanings and connotations. Hence, the many diverse and contradictory interpretations of the content of books such as the Apocalypse.

On the spiritual level of its understanding and interpretation, which is seeing things behind the scene, whatever is contained in the Book of Revelation-Apocalypse, has a totally different meaning and connotation. As mentioned above, it applies to everything which was, is and will be happening during this particular cycle of time. As you know, it is in the current cycle of time that the negative state was permitted to be activated, put into pseudo-motion, illustrating and demonstrating its lifestyle. Because of that whatever was written in the Apocalypse, in its inner spiritual sense, will have some relevance to the very end of this cycle of time. Looking at the events described in that book from this perspective, you can say for sure that some things described there have already been fulfilled, some are in the process of being fulfilled and some will be in the process of being fulfilled as this cycle of time continues to its grand finale and ending.

However, bear in mind please, — and I am reminding you about this once again — that one important factor as related to the Apocalypse is that whatever is written there, in the majority of its aspects, happened, is happening and will be happening in some other dimensions and not that much on the literal planet Zero. The complete fulfillment of all aspects and levels of the Apocalypse will take place elsewhere with the obvious ramifications, in their ultimate manifestation, to the life of humans on planet Zero. Many things will be reflected on the inner, spiritual level of the human mind and in their specific lifestyle. However, because there are always some important consequences which this specific lifestyle produces on the external levels of events that take place on planet Zero, it appears as though all things and events, as described

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

in the Apocalypse, have been and will be unfolding and taking place literally on planet Zero.

Thus, as you see from these facts, whatever is written in the Apocalypse has relevance either to something happening in other dimensions, or in the inner sanctums of the human spiritual mind or both simultaneously. In their external application to the events on planet Zero, such events are only the consequences of activities on those two levels without their roots or causative factors in anything literally happening on planet Zero.

However, there is one more understanding to the content of the Apocalypse that needs to be mentioned. It relates to something that is reflected in the relationship which exists between the Absolute State and the relative state. Conveyance of any knowledge from the Absolute to the relative is apportioned to the degree of the ability which anything relative has in its unique nature. It is in this process, the process of titration, that, under the influence of the existing negative state and its effort, this knowledge and application of its principles, could become diluted, corrupted, distorted and falsified. The entire content of the Apocalypse, in this particular aspect, deals with the consequences, results and outcomes of this corruption, distortion and falsification. Whatever becomes corrupted, distorted or falsified, by its nature, brings upon itself judgment and retribution. The Apocalypse, in its content, contains the forms, ways, means and processes of this judgment and retribution. In other words, on some levels, the Apocalypse serves as a warning of what could happen or what the outcome would be if anyone were to internalize these corruptions, distortions and falsifications so that they would become the only identity of one's life. In some ways, you can conceive the writings of the Apocalypse as a preventive measure for anything of that nature from ever happening.

Of course, there are many other aspects to the content of the Apocalypse and to what it means and to what and to whom it applies than just mentioned above. However, the knowledge of these aspects is unavailable to you or to anyone in the negative state at this time. It either relates to something which is not of human life and therefore, it wouldn't make any sense to you, or to those aspects of the negative state on one side and to the positive state and the Works of My Divine Providence on the other side, which would be totally outside of the human mind's ability to comprehend and apprehend. For that reason nothing more can be said about this issue.

Peter: Thank You very much for this explanation. There is one more question that I would like to ask. It relates to something written in

Chapter 10:4 in the Book of Revelation-Apocalypse. I quote: *‘Now when the seven thunders uttered their voices, I was about to write; but I heard a voice from heaven, saying to me, “Seal up the thing which the seven thunders uttered, and do not write them”’*. Is it appropriate and timely for us to know what it was that the seven thunders uttered and who or what those seven thunders are?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, it is. Because whatever the seven thunders uttered at that time and to what their uttering was applicable has already happened, it is safe for you to know about it. Spiritually speaking, the seven thunders represent and signify, among many other things, the Absolute All-inclusive Power, Control, Dominion, Insight and Foresight of My Divine Providence as related to the course of the entire being and existence — My Creation, and to the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the pseudo-creation and to the human life. From that position, and specifically from the position of My Absolute Knowledge and Foresight, a prediction was made about something which was going to happen or, to be precise, which had already been in the process of happening but which would not be finished until some time in the future. This most important and most significant event relates to something which was sworn by the Angel, standing on the sea and the earth, that in the day when the seventh Angel will sound his trumpet, the mystery of God will be finished, as He/She predicted through His/Her prophets (verses 6-7 in Chapter 10).

The seven thunders, from the position of what they spiritually signify in the current connotation of their meaning, were predicting the Absolute change in the Nature of God. They were saying that a totally New Nature of God would come to its most desirable fruition and that God would become in His/Her fullness and completeness The Lord Jesus Christ to eternity and that there would be no other God, or no other Nature of God but only and only The Lord Jesus Christ. This information was meant at that time **only and only** for the members of the positive state. Under the conditions that existed at that time, for important security reasons, it was not available to the members of the negative state and to humans.

Because the negative state and humans perceive everything in their external connotations, whenever something is uttered in the positive state, for the members of the negative state, as you remember, it sounds like hieroglyphs. However, in the moment you write it down, because the instrument of writing is the instrument of externals and because it is written in the external words, by the factor of this externalization, it becomes available and understandable also to the members of the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

negative state and to humans. Such knowledge, before the completion of the process which it predicts, would be detrimental for anyone in the negative state and for humans because they would make an all-out effort to prevent it from its occurrence or at least to interfere with this process by whatever means were available to them. Such an interference would result in their annihilation. In order to prevent this from happening, it was necessary to seal until today what the seven thunders were foreseeing or foretelling at that time. And this is all that you need to know about this topic, Peter. Go, rest and have fun.

Peter: Thank You very much for this explanation. I'll take Your advice.

Eighty Fifth Dialog

June 1, 1999, Moscow, Russia

Peter: Before asking my own questions, as usual, I would like to ask You, my Lord Jesus Christ, if you wish to elaborate on anything this morning first.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for asking Me to speak first. At this point in time, I would like to address, in the form of reiteration, some of your own concerns and doubts, Peter, about My frequent statements that before the negative state was activated and before human life came to its pseudo-reality, the agreement was made that no one on planet Zero, as well as anywhere else in pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, would remember anything about this agreement or about any agreement which every individual had made before incarnation on this planet or anywhere else in the negative state. Some aspects of this agreement and the way they were established were obliterated from the memories of the members of the positive state as well.

Your doubts and concerns in this respect, Peter, are regarding the verity of these claims. You are telling yourself that if you are unable to remember even one small and maybe, insignificant event or item that took place or was part of your life prior to your incarnation on planet Zero, and in your case, Peter, especially about our agreement for you to become the transmitter of My New Revelation, then, perhaps you are deceiving yourself and others. Sometimes you are almost horrified, waking up during the nights with anxiety attacks, thinking about what your retribution and punishment would be, if you were to be wrong or if you were deceiving others and yourself, after you come to the spiritual world following your recall from planet Zero. In your typical human type of scientific view, to which you occasionally succumb, you are concerned that no objective facts exist or are available to anyone which would be able to verify these claims. How do you go about proving that this is really the case? No such proofs exist. In some ways, you almost have to take these statements of Mine on blind faith. If I say so, and if you are sure that it is really Me who is saying these things, or making such claims, — about which you are frequently unsure — then you have to accept them without any demands or possibility of having any objectively and scientifically verifiable data.

The statement about taking these claims on blind faith fully contradicts the principles of My New Revelation. As you know, the major tool by which anything conveyed to you in My New Revelation can be proven, is

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

by your intuition, insight, logic, rationality, reason, intellect and by an inner sense or perception or discernment that something is or is not true. It is a state of simply knowing that something is or is not so without any need for objectively verifiable proofs. The problem with objectively verifiable proofs is that they come from without. If you carefully explore the nature of such proofs, as reflected in the scientific principles initially and originally formulated for that purpose by the pseudo-creators and subsequently adopted by your scientists, then you will come to the inevitable conclusion that such proofs are as unreliable and inconclusive as anything else in human life and in the negative state in general. How many times have you encountered in scientific circles something which in their view was proven with almost one hundred percent certainty, only to be completely refuted somewhere along the line of new discoveries? What is this fact telling you, Peter? That any knowledge that stems or comes from without, has no permanent reliability. And not only that, but knowledge that was acquired by such methods, very often, is either distorted or completely wrong or false.

The reason for such extreme unreliability of any knowledge acquired by such external, without methods, is in the fact that in this setup you are looking at all phenomena of life as they appear on or at the scene. This is the objective, externally verifiable view. This is the view of appearances and not of true reality. Therefore, in this view or stance you can have only that which you see with your eyes, so-to-speak, and not what really is going on seen from the perspective of that which is happening. If I observe your behavior, for example, and if I have no other source of knowledge about it but only what I observe from my perspective and from the outside of you, how much truthful and genuine knowledge could I acquire about anything related to the reasons, modes and the needs of your particular behavior and who you really are? Not much, because I go only by external appearances and not by the reality of your true internal motivational factors which underlie all your activities and your everyday behavior.

This example tells you very clearly how inappropriate, superficial and unreliable any scientific methods are. No other conclusions can be made about these methods if you take into consideration that all their knowledge derives from without — from externally observable phenomena. As you know, Peter, from such perspective, or in such a setup, or in such a condition, no true and genuine knowledge exists. What exists in them, however, is appearance of true knowledge but not knowledge itself.

In this respect, how can you apply anything of these so-called human scientific external or objective methods to anything spiritual or to

anything that is initiated in within or in the state of internals where the true reality exists? Because these methods are not equipped even remotely to discern or to detect or perceive anything or even to understand anything at all which happens and is originated and initiated in the state of internals, they have no recourse but to deny that anything else exists other than that which is observable on or at the scene. After all, such methods are designed from elements of the externals or from the elements of appearances. If you design something from such elements, it will be able to tell you only about something which relates to these externals. In that case, anything which happens in the true reality of the internals, will completely and totally elude such methods.

As you see from this description, all such so-called objective scientific methods are of the negative state. They are the property and methodology of the negative state. In the true understanding of the nature of these methods, you can be assured that they were originally established by the pseudo-creators and conveyed to humans in order to keep them in appearances of knowledge and understanding of the reality of being and existence and not in their true knowledge and understanding.

Once again, and we are repeating this, if, in the positive state, all knowledge stems from everyone's within, that is to say, from My presence in that within, then in order to initiate and establish the negative state, you have to recede from this method. Otherwise, you could never come even remotely close to the initiation and establishment of the negative state. So, the logical conclusion in this respect was that if such true knowledge stems only from Me in everyone's within — after all, I am the Absolute Knowledge in, by, of and from Myself — then in that case, in order to establish a totally different lifestyle, different from the lifestyle of the positive state, it was necessary to derive all knowledge from without, without any involvement of Me. It was very clear to the initiators of the negative state that any aspect of My involvement could not produce anything ever remotely resembling something that was not of the positive nature. Knowing that I am Absolutely Positive, and knowing that in such a state nothing of the negative could be contained in an absolute sense, it was necessary to completely and totally exclude Me from the process of activation of the negative state.

What do you get in the ultimate outcome of any creative or pseudo-creative effort if you exclude the only and the very source of knowledge — Me? The only things you get are appearances of knowledge. Such appearances lead to nothing else but to either relative knowledge or to outright distortion and falsities. For that reason, based on these factors,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

any knowledge available to anyone in the negative state and to humans, is either relative, applicable only to some narrow, limited and isolated occurrences, or it is distorted or false. And this is what the negative state and human life are all about.

Taking into consideration these facts, it is very obvious that anything contained in My New Revelation cannot be subjected to the methodologies of the negative state for the purpose of verification of the truthfulness of its statements and/or claims. If you were to apply them for such a purpose, you would end up either in total denial that they are true or you would end up in distorting or falsifying them. After all, if you approach anything from the position of methodology which is relative, distorting or falsifying, your conclusions about anything cannot be any other but relative, distorted or false.

For these reasons, in the process of transmission and formulation of anything in My New Revelation, at all times, it was necessary to discard any utilization of any methods which were available in the negative state and human life for the purpose of verification and validation of its statements and/or claims. Instead, a methodology of the positive state was and is used — by inner, intuitive knowing that something is or is not so because it is the only thing that makes perfect sense. This is not a method of blind faith but a state of inner, irrefutable, logical, rational, insightful and intelligent knowledge which clearly tells you that no other explanation, understanding or discernment is possible and conceivable at this time but only the one which is presented to you from Me, or from the State of My Absolute Knowledge, by the means of My New Revelation.

Because of the relativity of any sentient mind, by the factor of that relativity, very often, this mind cannot come up with the right answers no matter how much and to what extent it would try. In order to give impetus for any creative effort of any sentient mind to take place, from time to time, it is necessary to reveal certain knowledge to the relative sentient mind from the source of My Absolute Knowledge so that continuous progression of the acquirement of new, higher and transcending knowledge is assured. Such new knowledge is contained in My New Revelation for each time and epoch. Any time that new knowledge is made available to the sentient mind, it is put to its use. In the moment all aspects of that knowledge are fully utilized, applied and firmly grounded in the sentient mind, another New Revelation is given by Me which contains new, higher, transcending and more advanced knowledge than previously available. Usually it either supersedes the previous knowledge or, in most instances, it builds on it. Once again, the process of verification of the truthfulness of this new knowledge, is by everyone's inner intuition, logic, reason, rationality, insight and

intelligence. Because all these attributes are the state of pure internals, verification always stems from everyone's within.

In your particular case, as My true representatives on planet Zero, you were put into a position of verification of everything contained in My New Revelation by the same methods — the methods of the positive state. Therefore, to seek this verification by any other methods than that, would constitute seeking it by the methods of the negative state. In that case, to repeat it again and again, if you were to apply its methods, you would end up either in total denial of the verity of My New Revelation, with its subsequent rejection, or you would simply misunderstand its true meaning with a subsequent distortion and/or falsification of all its principles. In that case you would end up in the negative state, stripped of the role of being My true representatives. For this reason, Peter, I am asking you not to seek any so-called objective scientifically verifiable proofs about whether the statements regarding total obliteration of everyone's memories, including yours, as well as about anything else contained in My New Revelation, are true or not and whether you are deceiving yourself and others in this respect because you are unable to recall anything concerning our agreement or any other events, or whatever, from the time before your incarnation on planet Zero. It serves no good purpose. It only pleases the negative state.

Throughout My New Revelation, we have already extensively discussed why it was necessary to undertake such an unpleasant task as obliteration of all memories related to our prior agreement before your incarnation on planet Zero, as well as all memories related to your life in other dimensions before that. First of all, as you remember, it would make your life on this planet and in human life totally and completely unbearable. You could not survive on planet Zero and in human life with having such memories and knowledge. In that case, you would fail in your mission. Your failure in this respect would give the negative state a better chance for its continuous survival. Secondly, with such memories and knowledge, the validity and outcome of the experiment in the pseudo-life of the negative state would be nullified because it would be a pretentious undertaking in a sense of '**as if**' and not **as it really is** or would be. And thirdly, in view of the members of the negative state, if you were to have the privilege of having such conscious memories available to you, your position would be considered preferential by them, placing you above all and everything and, at the same time, portraying Me as discriminatory, biased and prejudicial. In that case, it would be concluded that I am of the negative nature. This would lead to a very dangerous conclusion that ultimately, there is no difference between Me and My positive state and them and their negative state.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

So, as you see clearly from this discussion, everything has its purpose and reason. And no matter how difficult it sometimes is for you to be in your situation and position, as related to a total lack of any memories in this respect, as well as to anything else in your human life, nevertheless, it is for your own good and protection that such a setup was necessary to institute or to establish. Only under these conditions anything real, valid, learnable and beneficial for all could come to its positive fruition. Any other condition would invalidate the entire process. In that case, no proper learning about a different life, different from the life in the positive state could take place. And this is all that I wanted to say from My own perspective, Peter. You may proceed with asking your own question(s).

Peter: Thank You very much for Your meaningful elaboration on this issue. I do ask for Your forgiveness for having such doubts and needs to scientifically verify the truthfulness of Your statements and claims.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are forgiven. Being that you are in the human skin, it is inevitable to have such doubts and uncertainties. They are unavoidable. Just don't dwell on them but at any time they plague you, turn your attention to Me and give them to Me. I will take care of them in the most appropriate manner.

Peter: Thank You for this reminder. Now, to my question. For some time now I have been preoccupied with the animal life on planet Zero and in human life, about their meaning, place, and function. I am aware of all things that so far have been revealed in this respect by You, especially about pets and their function in the lives of humans, and particularly in the lives of Your representatives. As you know, some animals, especially pets, exhibit almost humanlike emotions and behaviors which lead some humans, as well as some of Your representatives, to the conclusion that perhaps, these animals have a certain degree of conscious awareness and sense about many things in their environment and about some emotional states of their human masters. Some of them have almost some kind of premonition about impending doom in nature or in human physical or neurological conditions (for example, in epileptic seizures). Again, these abilities, lead many to conclude that animals, or at least some of them, have intelligence and are maybe, rational. I am especially concerned with the considerable preoccupation, time spent, spiritual, mental and economic resources and energies that some of Your representatives show and have in relationship to their pets. To what extent is this appropriate? And what is the situation, place, function and purpose of animal life as related to us, human life, the negative state and to anyone

and anything else? How much is there inappropriate justification on our part to have such pets in our lives?

The Lord Jesus Christ: In order to properly answer your question, it is necessary to go back to the very beginning of Creation, when Creation was put into the process of its being and existence. As you know, the state of My Creation has always been from eternity and always will be to eternity. It is the process of Creation that has its relative beginning and relative end with a new beginning on a higher mode of its progression in its process.

What is Creation in general and its process in particular? As you know, Creation stems from My Absolute Ideas and their various Absolute Elements which are projected from the state of My Absolute Within to the state of My Absolute Without. In its without condition, My Creation appears as if it is independent of its source — Me. As you remember, this condition was necessary to establish in order to give it a sense of freedom and independence for the purpose of choice-making, change and continuous progression. Thus, in an ultimate sense, Creation is the embodiment of My Idea for the establishment of being and existence of all and everything in their own independent being and existence. Because all being and existence was within Me, in order to make it independent, the first step, in the process of Creation is to project that being and existence from within Me to the without of Me. Once this projection occurs, by the very nature of My Idea, which is dynamic and progressive, My Creation is put in its process which is in its own dynamic state and process. In other words, because Creation reflects My Creative Nature in its own relative condition, it is creative and progressive by its own nature.

In its original setup, Creation is conceived as a state, condition, place and process, the purpose of which is to establish infinite varieties of unique, independent and specific environments or residences into which all created sentient entities are placed in order to establish for them a suitable atmosphere and sphere for their own creative effort. Because all sentient entities, in their original condition, the way they were created, reflect in their relative condition My Absolute Creative Nature, they are creative in their nature likewise. Thus, by their nature, they have their own ideas, which are projected into their own environment, giving rise to various entities which become the embodiment of these ideas in a concrete or apparent state.

As you know, Peter, the sentient mind of these sentient entities derives from the nature of My Absolute Sentient Mind. The sentient mind discharges its being and existence, as well as its creative effort, through

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

the processes of its mentation or mentality. This mentality, deriving from My Absolute Mentality and the process of My Absolute Mentation, consists of various components in their unique conglomeration which put any sentient entity into the state of self-awareness, self-perception, self-identity, self-emotivity, self-feeling, self-perception, perception of everyone and everything else and into affection for life. Due to the fact that the fundamental nature of every sentient entity, in their original conception, is creative and projective, whatever they generate from the processes and dynamics of their mentation and mentality, by the very nature of each sentient entity's independence, it tends to establish itself outside of this sentient mind as its own relative being and existence in its own independent mode.

In an absolute sense, you can conceive this issue, as something which originates from My Absolute Mentation. Thus, whatever I think, feel and emote, all ideas and mental elements of the process of thinking, feeling, showing affection, and anything at all, by the process of their dynamic occurrence in My Mind, as they are sent out from within Me, they appear outside of Me as various forms of living sentient and non-sentient entities. Similarly, whatever any sentient entity thinks, feels, shows affection for, etc., in the process of generating such mental elements, these elements separate themselves from the sentient mind and appear as their own independent life forms. The nature and content of such thoughts, emotions, feelings, affection, etc., determines the nature and content of any such life forms. They all become relative to the sentient mind as any sentient mind is relative to My Absolute Sentient Mind.

From this description, you can derive the genesis of non-sentient life forms, in this particular case, of all animals. In some ways, you can conceive animal life as a byproduct of the activities of the sentient mind, especially and particularly of the processes of its mentation. The sentient mind is continuously in the state of thoughts and emotions and in the process of thinking and feeling. By its nature it constantly generates its affections for being and existence and for all byproducts of the process of its mentation. By them, through them and of them, the life of all such non-sentient entities is maintained.

The way you have to understand the above description of the genesis of non-sentient life forms, is by the process of projection of all elements of sentient mentation at all levels of being and existence and their respective dimensions. On the spiritual level, their ideas are generated from the ideas of thoughts, emotions, affections, feelings and thinking. Because they are pure ideas, on this level animal life forms are in the state of their ideas and in the process of their projection to the intermediate dimension, and through it to the physical or material

dimensions where they become a concrete and tangible embodiment of those ideas and all their elements. For this reason, on the spiritual level, whenever an idea of any affection, for example, is produced, it appears as a non-tangible but visible form of an animal. This form is subsequently projected to the intermediate area, where it receives the elements of its own mentation, as conceived by the nature of the sentient mentality and its projection. In that condition, by the process of correspondences, it is projected to the physical dimension, where it becomes a concrete animal which carries within itself all elements of its spiritual ideas, as generated in the spiritual dimension; all elements of the specific process of mentation as it occurs in the intermediate dimension; and all elements of its concrete and tangible manifestation as it ends in the physical or external dimension.

As you see from this description, concrete animals don't appear in the spiritual and intermediate dimensions as something tangible and independent of the sentient mind. In those dimensions they appear only as visual constructs which depict the state and process of the sentient mind at each junction of that state and process. Thus, any change in the state and process of the sentient mind, changes the forms and the types of animals which appear as a result of this change. They carry the nature of this change. Because there are infinite varieties of these changes and of all the ideas generated by the sentient mind in all aspects of its process of mentation, there are infinite animal forms which reflect the nature of these changes and all these ideas. As they proceed into their own being and existence, they are grounded in concrete and tangible life forms on the level of physical or material (in the sense of matter) dimensions.

However, the question is: What is the purpose of appearance of any animal forms into their own non-sentient being and existence? In the spiritual and intermediate worlds, where their appearance is non-concrete, their function is to provide an objective feedback to any sentient entity on the nature and process of his/her thoughts, emotions, feelings, affection and anything else continuously generated by his/her process of mentation. At each particular time, any respective entity not only subjectively discerns what he/she thinks, feels, has affection for, but in the moment any such thoughts, feelings, affection, etc., occur, he/she can see them outside of himself/herself, as objective constructs in the forms of animals that signal him/her the objective and concrete state of the nature and content of the current processes of his/her mentation. This objective feedback of his/her subjective states and processes is a necessary concomitant of the sentient mind's activities which reinforces their properness and appropriateness at each junction of their

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

occurrences. From the nature of the appearing animal forms, any sentient entity can immediately determine the true state and content of his/her own spiritual and mental dispositions and the way they impact his/her environment and everyone present in his/her vicinity. Thus, in the spiritual and intermediate worlds, the animals are not perceived as something independent of their minds, having their own specific life. Instead, they are perceived for what they really are: as an objective and external depiction of the state and processes of their sentient mind. For that reason, in those worlds, animals don't have the same meaning as on planet Zero, for example.

On the level of the physical or external dimension, in the positive state of Creation, although all animals appear as independent entities in their own life, independent of the sentient mind's life, nevertheless, they are recognized by all inhabitants of this dimension as an ultimate concrete and tangible manifestation of the sentient mind's states and processes of its mentation for the above-described purpose. Because of that, people in this dimension, respect their animals and let them be in their own natural habitat without having any need to form any attachments to them or without interfering with their own mode of non-sentient life. By the processes of their own mentation, they maintain their animals' life in a properly functional and productive mode. Their animals are seen as a contributory factor for maintenance of proper ecological balance of their environment.

The issue of whether animals can be rational, intelligent and self-aware in themselves and by themselves, even in a rudimentary condition, is in the fact that they reflect the condition of the sentient mind. Because all animals are, in an ultimate sense, a concretized projection of the sentient mind's states and processes of its mentation, they reflect some elements of these states and processes. It is not as if the animals in themselves and by themselves can have such characteristics and traits but in their expressions and impressions, they are totally dependent on the being and existence of the sentient mind and its mental states and processes. So, the animals may reflect them in their own limited way without being actually and factually that way in themselves and by themselves. Simply stated, animals respond to the projection of ideas of their sentient masters, anchored and manifested in their masters' mental processes.

The situation is totally different in the negative state and in human life. This difference is not that much in the genesis of animal life forms and their establishment as in the nature of the purpose for which they are being utilized by humans, for example.

Before going into this aspect of our topic, it is necessary to briefly elaborate on the ways life, any life, was initiated on planet Zero. As you know, Peter, and everyone who reads these words, one of the many purposes for which the negative state and human life was activated, was to prove that life doesn't originate in Me, or in some kind of god, or in My spiritual principles, but it is an evolutionary process which occurs without any outside input or thrust, and which develops from one single cell, culminating in an appearance of sentient life forms — humans, in our case. How do you go about proving that this is so? After long deliberation and experimentation, the pseudo-creators came up with the idea of separating one of the most external reflections of the original planet Earth and moving it to the current place in the continuum. At that time, the reflection in question was in the state of what your scientists would call primordial. The purpose of this move and placement, was to separate it from any influence of its original source or anyone and anything else. This was a necessary arrangement in order to prove the point that life as such can be initiated without anyone's influence or input and that therefore, it can begin its development by itself and in itself. Thus, no God, no spiritual factors, and no one else is involved in the establishment of life.

After the pseudo-creators succeeded in this move, they took one single organic or living cell, and placed it in the primordial ocean on this reflection, called now planet Zero. They nurtured that cell in such a way so as to make it multiply and expand into many other cells. They established a suitable bio-chemical and physical condition in the ocean and on planet Zero in general for that cell, or now for those cells, to further develop. By the ideas of their own minds, they projected into those cells various elements that gave an impetus for gradual and seemingly evolutionary development of life forms from one single cell all the way to complex organic life forms culminating in the appearance of various fish and oceanic organic creatures. From them a gradual development of other animal life forms, birds and insects was initiated by projections of the relevant ideas of the pseudo-creators' sentient mind conducive to the appearance of these specific forms. The purpose for this fabrication was to prove that fish, insects, birds and animals were evolving in themselves and by themselves without any influence and impact of anyone anywhere. You see, Peter, in the moment you would assume that all these non-sentient life forms are in some way dependent on someone sentient, you would instantly refute the possibility of these life forms of developing on their own. In that case, you would have to conclude that life doesn't appear in itself and by itself, without anyone's input or initiation, but it is a product of some very intricate design by the sentient mind.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Such conclusions would defeat the purpose for which the pseudo-creators wanted to activate the negative state and to fabricate typical humans. For them it was vital to prove that sentient life develops from non-sentient life forms in an evolutionary manner and not the other way around: All non-sentient life forms are the product and reflection of the activities of the sentient mind, in this case, of My Absolute Sentient Mind.

Once again, here you have the proverbial upside-down position that was needed to be established in order for the negative state to come to its adverse fruition. In other words, if, in the positive state everything is determined and is originated in the activities of the sentient mind, and in an absolute sense in the activities of My Absolute Sentient Mind, in that case, in the pseudo-life of the negative state and in its end product — human life, everything needs to be set up in such a manner so as to give an irrefutable impression, based on the scientifically observable facts, that nothing is dependent on the activities of the sentient mind but it has its own independent life. And not only that but that the sentient mind of humans developed from lower life forms, in actuality from that proverbial one organic cell, so conveniently placed in the ocean of planet Zero and influenced by the pseudo-creators, and not the other way around.

Of course, as you know from the geological and paleontological history of planet Zero, many failures occurred in this so-called evolutionary process. We are not going to go into the nature of these failures because the purpose of this discourse is different. What we are doing here is building a foundation on which a most proper and appropriate answer can be given to your question, Peter, and how it all relates to the present state of affairs.

The deception and self-deception of the pseudo-creators in this setup is obvious. First of all, they were the ones who placed that one living cell in the primordial ocean on this planet. Secondly, that cell was taken from the animal forms which existed as projections of the sentient mind on the physical planet Earth. Thirdly, the origin of that particular living cell, as well as other cells in being and existence, initially was created from My Absolute Ideas for the establishment of sentient life forms. Fourthly, the already established sentient entities were already producing their own ideas of various life forms as reflections of the unique and specific processes of their mentation, contained in their thoughts, emotions, feelings, thinking, willing, affections, etc. So, no matter which way you look at the whole setup of the pseudo-creators, no matter how much there is on your planet of an appearance that all non-sentient life forms are independent of the sentient mind, in their ultimate function, they all

depend on the activities of the sentient mind and, in an absolute sense, on the activities of My Absolute Sentient Mind.

This dependency factor can be proven on the type of animal life forms that exist on your planet and how the animals respond to humans as a result of humans' processes of mentation. As you know, in the positive state all sentient entities have and project only positive, kind, gentle and loving, caring and considerate thoughts, emotions, feelings, affections and everything else positive and good, contained in their spirit and soul. The corresponding factors of these traits and characteristics can only reflect what they are and what they project. For that reason, the animal forms in the positive state, for the purpose of feedback, appear as beautiful, gentle, kind and positive in general.

On the other hand, in the negative state and in human life on planet Zero the situation is different. The animals there are correspondences and reflections of the mental processes which are, in the majority of cases, negative, violent, hateful, predatory, raw, inconsiderate, impatient, fierce, cowardly, territorial, selfish, greedy, insensitive, etc. On the other hand, My influence and the presence of My representatives and others of My people on planet Zero, makes it possible that some animal life forms resemble those that appear in the positive state. The reason we are saying they resemble and not that they are as such, is because on planet Zero the overwhelming presence and condensation of the negative state has a negative effect also on these types of animals. For that reason, these animals are not exactly as they appear in the positive state. Even in their case, some of the above described negative characteristics, under certain circumstances, very often are present in their behavior. This is an obvious reflection of the human mentality, which could exhibit at different times, or sometimes even at the same time, both positive and negative thoughts, feelings, emotions, affections, etc.

As you see from these examples, regardless of the appearances that tell you that animals on your planet have their own independent life, their function, as well as the possibility that they exist at all, is dependent on the presence of humans and their spiritual, mental, physical and any other types of activities. So, in evaluating the factor of the possibilities that your animals have independent intelligence, rationality, sensitivity, feelings or whatever so typical of human nature, or of the sentient mind in general, and that they are able, in themselves and by themselves, to respond to some types of needs that humans have, it is necessary to realize that to what they respond does not stem from their internal abilities to do so, but from the projection of the sentient mind and expectations that humans put into them. From ideas of the possible

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

services to provide to humans and other sentient entities, animal instincts were formed which make it possible for the animals to respond to environmental cues and to the projections of human mental processes. Because of that it appears as though animals have some rudimentary, or even more developed mental faculties similar to the sentient mind. While in the reality of this setup, they are a reflection and correspondence of the sentient mental faculties which maintain those observable abilities in animals.

So, you would be advised not to ascribe to the animals something that they don't have. In your scientific terms it is called anthropomorphization of animals, meaning ascribing to animals human mental or any other characteristics. Because of the nature of their instincts, some animals can be trained to respond to human mental and physical conditions and become a warning beacon for prevention of such conditions. Because of their instinctual drive and sensitivity for inputs that come from their human and geographical environment, from the energies which immediately precede any unusual events in it, they are able to react to those events in a protective manner. This reaction is characterized by humans as premonition and foresight. However, in the reality of this condition, it is not something inherent in the animals in itself and by itself, but it is an instinctual element in them which allows them to respond to those energies that precede before any event takes place. Thus, once again, they respond to external cues and not to the internal dispositions that would make them able to evaluate and assess the situation on their own.

In the human conceptualization of the factors described above about the original purpose for which animal life forms appeared, this purpose was lost. In fact, it was purposefully made so by the pseudo-creators so that humans would have no way of arriving at these conclusions about animal life forms. On one hand, for humans, it was necessary to assume that animals have their own life, independent of the sentient mind's mental activities; and on the other hand, by seeing and experiencing how animals behave and act, humans would assume that in some ways, for some reasons they evolved from the animals in an evolutionary manner without any involvement of any Intelligence or Spiritual Entity who planned out to the minutest details all and everything by which sentient life came to its fruition. In this sense, regardless of how positive or beneficial animals seem to be for humans, their function and purpose on this planet is to serve in the hands of the negative state so that they may refute the existence of anything spiritual or independent of the evolutionary and natural forces.

However, there is another point to this issue. This issue relates to household pets, to which humans are attached so much, rather than to all animals in general. The issue here is an interdependency factor. By adopting certain types of animals into their households, taking them away from their specific environments, humans made their pets dependent on them. At the same time, by the factor of their own attachments to their pets, humans became dependent on their pets as well. In doing so, humans reinforced their negative tendency to depend on the fulfillment of their emotional needs, or whatever needs they have, on something external, outside of them, in this case, on their pets. Thus, as you see from this setup, the function of pets in this particular respect, from the position of the negative state, is to keep humans in a state of dependency on external factors and not on their inner spiritual factors. Once they become used to the fact that their emotional needs, or whatever needs, are being fulfilled by someone or something from without, in this case by their pets, they atrophy their ability of inner, independent self-reliance and by that factor, they close the way to their internals where everything exists and is available for their life needs, whatever they may be, so that it could be fulfilled in the most appropriate and needed manner.

This situation clearly indicates that the nature of human life is to always seek out all forms of dependency on someone or something else. In the hands of the negative state, animals, and especially household pets, serve this purpose well.

So, what kind of use do animals serve in human life? A different use is served by animals as such and by household pets. The animals on planet Zero are a concrete illustration and demonstration of the external manifestation of various human affections, emotions, feelings and the nature of the negative state and the human mind in general, giving an important input to everyone else what kinds of thoughts, feelings, emotions, affections or lifestyle in general not ever to choose. At the same time, they clearly illustrate the consequences of such negative and unhealthy characteristics on the environment in which humans and creatures of the negative state reside and what the feedback for their producers is. The negative mental projections, which make life of animals possible in this respect, produce negative feedback to those who project them, reinforcing their negativity and compounding their mental and any other problems. If you receive negative feedback from your own negative projections — after all, no other type of feedback is possible than negative in such a case — your negativity is compounded and by that factor, all your problems are reinforced and compounded as well. This accursed self-feeding loop of the negative state in human life is a

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

good example of how life should never be conceived, experienced, practiced or lived. And in this sense, because animals on planet Zero by their own behavior and actions reflect this situation, their use is in the illustration and demonstration of this factor.

Is there anything positive in animals' function on planet Zero? Yes and no. The 'yes' portion of this answer is contained in the fact that animals contribute, in some way or other, for the ecological balance of the planetary environment in which human life can and may thrive. Thus, they provide something by which humans are able to illustrate the nature of their human life. Moreover, some animals serve as food for human consumption in order to provide necessary energies for their bodies in which their spirit and soul can manifest their life. The 'no' portion of this answer is in the fact, that human life is founded on the principles of the negative state. Thus, anything that contributes to the proper manifestation of human life, becomes a contributory factor for maintenance of the negative state.

As far as domestic or household pets are concerned, apart from some well-trained dogs that provide health types of services for their masters (for blind people, for mentally, physically and otherwise handicapped humans and for similar conditions), their use is in the fact of their showing the consequences of interdependency and how complicated human life can be and what such dependency on external factors leads to and what it creates for humans in their own personal life. Up to this point, from the position of the positive state, keeping pets in human habitats for any other reasons but to be attached to them or just to have them or to play with them, has been considered a harmless nuisance. However, in the moment their attachment to their pets becomes a habit to the point of full dependency on them, so that they feel that they cannot live or be without them, in such a case, it is no longer a harmless nuisance but a full-fledged dominance of the negative state. Don't forget one important fact: On planet Zero, especially at the present time, all animals, and especially pets, can become a potent tool in the hands of the forces of the negative state in order to adversely influence and manipulate humans and to make their life complicated. No matter how much the owners of their pets enjoy them, no matter how much they outwardly serve their masters, by some kind of pleasurable or any other seemingly positive purpose, they are of the negative state and therefore, through them the forces of the negative state can use them for their own purposes.

Another illustrative and demonstrative purpose for which domestic or household pets are permitted to be kept by humans, is to reflect on concrete examples that the negative state, in order to have any

opportunity or chance to take hold in its own pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, needs to be loved and cared for. This factor clearly illustrates and demonstrates one very crucial and important principle: Nothing can live, be alive, function and manifest its nature unless it is loved and cared for by the sentient mind. In order to illustrate and demonstrate this principle, some sentient entities, as you know, Peter, also agreed by their own free will and choice, to love and take care of the negative state, as well as of all forms of its pseudo-life's manifestation. Without such love and care, the negative state, as well as any state or life at all, would have no chance whatsoever to come to its own adverse fruition and to establish itself in the consciousness of sentient entities, becoming thus, its own independent pseudo-reality which, for all practical purposes, appears to itself to be as its own true reality. The way humans love and care for their pets, which pets, in the vast majority of cases, have solely negative correspondences, illustrate and demonstrate this love and care for the negative state very well. In this illustration and demonstration is the use which pets provide for the entire Creation and pseudo-creation.

As far as My representatives on planet Zero are concerned, and their particular preoccupation with their pets, their situation could become volatile and dangerous in a sense that, if no other recourse is available to the renegades to adversely influence or manipulate them or make their lives miserable, they will use their pets to get to them. This has become an important factor as of recently. As you remember, Peter, upon your arrival in Moscow, Russia, you were told that a new milestone was established and something entirely different was put into motion. It entirely changes the mode of operation of everyone but particularly of the renegades. Under this condition, the function of animals and pets has also changed. And because, in some ways, these animals and pets are their creatures, they will be utilized by the renegades to get to you and to cause you some type of complications or interference.

As you remember, you were told that your energies were very much needed in your collaborative work with the members of the New Universe and with the pseudo-creators. Because the forces of the negative state are aware that your energies are needed for this important work, they will try to sidetrack you by any means in order to engage you in some useless and futile activities, which would deplete your energies, making them unavailable for anything else. Your pets will serve this purpose very well. Just look how much preoccupation, time, effort, various resources, money, and many other things are spent on your pets. All that requires your energies. By being engaged in such activities with your pets, your energies are uselessly wasted. They are not going into your work for Me in your collaborative effort with the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

members of the New Universe and the pseudo-creators. Also, as you remember, Peter, whenever you talk with someone who has pets, that talk inadvertently is turned to talking about their pets, about how cute they are, how delightful they are, how lovable they are and how they are considered to be their babies or children. Such talk also can be considered a crafty deterrent, set up by the negative state, from more important issues. They are a waste of precious energies and time which could be spent in a much more productive and useful manner. In telephone conversations for example, when people who visit you call their homes, one of the first inquiries they make is: How is my baby pet? They spend considerable time just talking about their pets as if nothing more important in their lives exists than their pets. And this is the trap of the negative state which has an adverse influence also on My representatives who have such pets. Unfortunately, they are not consciously aware that their attachment to their pets is an effective tool in the hands of the negative state, and now particularly in the hands of the renegades, to covertly influence their lives, by robbing them of their vital energies that need to go into their collaborative effort with the members of the New Universe and with the pseudo-creators. In some ways, you can conceive their love and care for their pets, as love and care for the negative state. And this is a spiritually very dangerous aspect of such love and care.

Now, as you know, Peter, I am not in the business of ordering or commanding anyone what to do, how to do it, how to be, what to have or what not to have. Everyone of you can be, or do, or have anything you want. However, don't forget about your priorities. Also, don't forget about the human tendency to justify their own preferences, in this case, why they need to have pets. Because you were asking for My advice, in this respect, due to the currently existing spiritual situation, and what everything it entails and what your position and purpose is, it would be much more beneficial and better for you and for all of us, if you would relinquish your desire to have such pets; or at least, not to have any more pets, after the ones that you currently have, expire by the natural course of their pseudo-life (unless of course, you have some serious medical or mental condition which would justify having them). This advice is for your own protection and safety. This is not an order or command. I just want you to know that you have absolutely no idea what the phase of life you have entered as of recently means and signifies. In this phase also, animals and your pets will be utilized for the purpose of impeding and interfering with your work for Me and for robbing you of your precious energies that are needed for this work more than ever before. Consider this, and make your own choices. However, don't complain about any

consequences of such choices. And this is all that needs to be said about this issue at this time.

Peter: Thank You very much for this extensive elaboration. Many readers of this particular Dialog will probably not like what is being conveyed in it regarding their pets. I am very much afraid that they will accuse me of projecting my own prejudices and biases that I have about animals and especially pets. It is possible that they will think that it is not You who were saying all these things but my own personal inventions.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, Peter, unfortunately, such accusations or whatever are sometimes inevitable. How else can you justify your own needs to have pets, or whatever else, but by considering anything which contradicts these needs or their attachments as false and, in this particular case, as not coming from Me? As you know, one of the major reasons that we have been having this dialoging, was to trigger in their readers awareness of various issues that they need to work on or to make appropriate choices. Obviously, if someone who has pets will be offended by our statements in this respect, then it only means that such a person has serious problems that he/she needs to work on — of course, if he/she chooses to do so by his/her own free will and choice. These Dialogs, and what they contain, can be considered as giving everyone who reads them an opportunity to amend their ways, to correct or remove their problems — should they find and recognize that they have them. Because you are, after all, humans, even if you are My representatives, as humans in your nature, you do have problems and everything so specifically contained in human nature. That nature is easily influenced by the negative state. In the form of these Dialogs, and what they contain, you are given a tool for becoming aware of such possible problems with the opportunity to amend them. Whether you take or not take this opportunity, depends solely upon you. Neither I nor anyone else in the positive state will judge you for whatever choice you will make in this respect. You do whatever feels right for you. However, don't forget about the consequences of doing such.

Peter: Thank You for this reminder. Is there anything else today that You would like to comment on?

The Lord Jesus Christ: One brief comment about the tragedy that happened two days ago in Minsk, Belarus. In this tragedy, 54 or more, mostly young people perished by stomping each other in a panic during their massive (several thousands of them) gathering to celebrate Beer Day (drinking beer). As you know, suddenly, almost out of nowhere, a dark cloud appeared over the square of their gathering and for a few

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

minutes showered upon them torrential rain and hail. In the panicky effort to escape it, they stomped each other to death. Although such phenomena do occur in massive gatherings during sporting events, this one was unique in that, the cloud in question appeared only over the square where they gathered and nowhere else — as if someone was carefully planning for this tragedy to happen. I can assure you, Peter, that it was planned to happen that way. For your information, a certain event had taken place at that time in one of the pseudo-dimensions of the renegades — a dimension that has a corresponding connection to the city of Minsk, Belarus, — in the process of their internal strife. During this strife, a violent outburst happened against one of their groups which was trying to split from the others and to establish its own independence. As a result, it was wiped out and locked up in one of their deep Hells. In order to replenish the state to which that group corresponded or which it occupied, it was necessary to orchestrate a disaster during which several people of young blood would perish and take the place of the ones who were wiped out and locked up in the Hells. As you noticed, the celebration was of a negative nature because it intended to celebrate something that has no positive connotation — alcohol. Hence a reward of the negative nature in the form of its retribution.

Also, that event is another form of illustration and demonstration of the putrid nature of mass gatherings which have no positive connotation whatsoever, but are wild, unruly, insane, unpredictable and totally irrational — the typical nature and lifestyle of the negative state. And this is all that I wanted to say about this event at this time. There is more to this tragedy than that but it is premature to reveal. This has been a very long Dialog, Peter. Unless otherwise indicated, I would suggest taking a few days break from our dialoging. Go in peace, Peter, and enjoy your stay with Lyudmila and Victor in Moscow, Russia.

Peter: Thank You very, very much for Your contributions in these matters.

Eighty Sixth Dialog

June 14, 1999, Moscow, Russia

Peter: Well, for two weeks now we haven't recorded any Dialogs. These were a very strange and unusual two weeks. Especially the second or the last week of these two weeks was unusual and unpleasant because of a sudden illness that I experienced. I wonder if You would like to offer any comments on anything relating to that which was going on during this time or on anything else that You feel is appropriate and timely to talk about at this time?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, you are right, it has been a very trying, unusual and uncertain time for you personally as well as for everyone elsewhere who is connected to you either here or in other dimensions. Many things have been happening of the most significant nature. These events required a maximum effort on everyone's part from all levels of their functioning — spiritual, mental and physical. In the process of exertion of this effort, most of your spiritual, mental and physical energies were considerably depleted. As a result, because your physical body is the weakest and most sensitive part to the depletion of these life force energies, it succumbed to a temporary illness. Your personal involvement, Peter, in this process was to an extreme degree on other levels without your conscious awareness. At the point when the greatest amount of energies was released by your participation in this process, you entered into the state of temptation. The external manifestation of this temptation appeared in the form of a sinus infection, with high fever, and all symptoms that accompany this type of infection. For the whole week you were in this state which put you externally into an inactive mode. This inactive mode was very necessary because it allowed us to restore all the spent energies which you gave to the above mentioned effort.

Sometimes, in order to accomplish this goal, it is necessary to permit the physical illness of your body in order to put it into a state of total rest and inactivity. In your human life, very often, it is the only way by which restoration of spiritual and mental energies can be accomplished with a subsequent buildup of physical energies. Otherwise, you would continue to be active to the point of total collapse. The problem with this situation is that when you are working intensely on other levels, spending all your energies somewhere else and for something that is not of your world, as well as of your conscious awareness, meaning, you are not aware that your spiritual and mental energies are being spent at a considerable rate somewhere else, you don't feel that your energies are being spent. So, you

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

continue in your activities without realizing that very little necessary and needed energies remain to do them. In cases like that, we intervene by permitting your physical body to get temporarily ill, so that you are prevented from continuing in any type of activities which could lead to your collapse, and even, possibly, to physical death.

If you carefully analyze the external events of the past two weeks, you will notice how many unusual things were happening even at your planetary level. And you have absolutely no idea how many crucial and important things were going on at the other levels! Look what happened in the NATO war against Yugoslavia, for example. Look what kind of manipulative events followed the cessation of bombing. The Russian renegades, in cohort with the Serb renegades, by their impulsive, competitive and one-sided decision to enter Kosovo without any consideration for the outcome of such a dangerous and foolish move, brought the entire humanity very close to total destruction. At the same time, the renegades of Kosovo or Albania, are unwilling to follow the agreement of all involved to be disarmed which continues to endanger and hamper the so-called peace process.

All these events are the sole correspondences of the events and happenings that have been going on at other levels of pseudo-being and pseudo-existence in the civil war of the pseudo-creators and various factions of the renegades. Because all your energies have been going on in support of the pseudo-creators, and because many unimaginable, confusing, convoluted, manipulative, competitive and unexpected turns have been occurring in this process, they required a much greater degree of your involvement than otherwise would be the case. This situation led to almost total depletion of your energies without your being aware that such is the case. In order to prevent your possible death, I permitted that you would enter a state of temptation, which would place your physical body in a temporary illness until all your spiritual and mental energies would be recharged and subsequently recharging your physical energies.

Why is it that I am talking about allowing you to enter temptation? The entire situation is also being utilized for illustration and demonstration of something spiritually very important and for learning some crucial and significant lessons. As you remember from the Seventy Second Dialog, you were clearly warned there that shortly, you will be entering an unusual and dangerous phase of the currently ongoing shift, which may put some of you, and perhaps, all of you, into the state of temptation. One form of this temptation, the third one, among other things, indicated that you might be tempted by being sick or ill and that no matter how much you would ask for help to accelerate the process of

healing or getting rid of your unpleasant condition, you would feel that no help was forthcoming and that therefore, you would have to go through the entire course of that illness as prescribed by its nature.

So, in essence, we are talking here about two different aspects of this entire experience. The first aspect relates to your unconscious involvement in all events that have been and will be happening on other levels. They all required and will require your personal and individual spiritual, mental and physical energies. You all agreed to make them available to those levels. As you know, your participation on that level, in most instances, happens without your conscious awareness. At the very same time this situation is being and will be utilized also for learning some important lessons on the external or outward levels on planet Zero by the means of your own personal and individualized experiences and about the nature of temptations. This aspect is and will always be available to your conscious awareness so that lessons could be learned by all involved, including you personally.

What are temptations and who or what is the tempter and how and why does one enter the state of temptation? This is what you need to learn at this point in time. If you carefully analyze the nature of human life, then you would have to conclude that one of the major reasons for its pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, although not the only one, is to be a stage on which the nature of all types of temptations could be manifested. In this particular connotation, you can say with a considerable degree of certainty that whoever agreed or will agree to enter human life, automatically agreed or will agree to enter the state of continuous temptation. In this particular sense you can say that human life is nothing else but a state of temptation.

Why is it so? If you consider all factors under which the negative state and its end product — human life, came to their adverse fruition, then you will clearly notice that by its very nature it continuously requires some kind of reinforcement in order to effectively and successfully continue in its pseudo-life. How is pseudo-life of the negative state being sustained? Among other things, by constantly submitting to its followers and participants something that would be attractive and desirable which would keep them in the clutches of its pseudo-life. In other words, it is tempting people to do something which would keep them in the negative state. And because the negative state is rooted in all evils and falsities, it tempts people to do something that would be evil and false. If they do that on a continuous basis, they remain in the negative state. By this factor, its pseudo-life is preserved as long as they do that. If they were to stop doing that, the negative state couldn't survive for too long. This is

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

the reason why we indicated above that the negative state and its human life is the state of continuous temptation.

However, there is a certain degree of falsity in this situation. The false impression is in the fact that for anyone who is being tempted, it appears as though that temptation is coming from someone or something out there. However, the reality of this matter is that in order to be effectively tempted, you need to open yourself up for this temptation to set in. Being in human life, even I needed to open Myself up to be tempted by the devil and Satan. Otherwise, I couldn't be tempted. One point of My need to be tempted was in the fact that it was the only way to get in direct contact with the negative state for the purpose of gathering all its experiences.

So, what are these facts telling you? They are telling you that it is you who set yourself up for any temptation by your intentions, motivations, thoughts, feelings, attitudes, behaviors, expectations, beliefs or whatever you have. Any inappropriate content or connotation in any of them, opens the doors for temptation to enter. However, in human life, because of its very nature to be in the externals, everything is perceived in this respect as if any temptation comes from the outside, in this case from the devil or Satan.

As you remember from the 26th Chapter of ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***, it was indicated there that the Old Lord's Prayer, in order to reflect this factor of externalization, allowed for humans to perceive that I am the One Who leads them into temptation (*'and lead us not into temptation'*). On the other hand, in order to make things right, this false perception was corrected in the New Prayer of The Lord Jesus Christ which indicates that you are the one who leads yourself into temptation (*'let us not lead ourselves into any temptation'*). The reason for these differences was explained in that chapter. Therefore, I am referring you to it — if you wish and are interested in refreshing your memory. The important factor in this respect that needs to be realized is that, although temptations are coming from someone or something, it is entirely up to every individual whether they will have any impact on him/her or whether he/she reacts to them in any manner which would open the door for them to enter that individual. As you see from these facts, the keys to the doors to yourself are in your hands. Because you have the keys, you are, therefore, ultimately responsible whether that temptation will have any power over you.

Let us take a couple of examples in order to explain this situation. First, let's talk about your own personal experience in this respect, Peter. Although it was necessary to allow this temptation in order to put your

physical body into a state of transient illness for the purpose of recharging your personal spiritual, mental and physical energies; nevertheless, that situation was also fully utilized to demonstrate how you yourself led yourself into the state of that temptation. Do you remember what it was that preceded your fall into your illness?

Peter: I was pondering and almost torturing myself with uncertainties about the content of the Apocalypse in the Bible, doubting whether Your New Revelation in all its aspects is truthful and is really coming from You or whether it is not me and my foolish arrogance that makes such unsubstantiated and non-provable claims.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Exactly, Peter. Look what happened here. Last Monday (June 7, 1999), you continued pondering about the content of the Apocalypse. Despite the fact that on numerous occasions it was clearly explained in My New Revelation why it was necessary to utilize the negative language for description of everything recorded in that book, and despite the fact that on many occasions you were given explanations about its content, something was nagging at you about its content and especially about everything that has been revealed so far regarding its meaning. On impulse, that particular day, you took the Russian Bible which Lyudmila has, and in one session reread the entire book from the first verse of the first chapter to the last verse of Chapter 22. After you finished its reading you became almost horrified how brutal, inconsiderate and nasty the content of that book was. At the same time, you fell into a state of severe doubt and depression about the strong possibility that your entire explanation of everything contained in My New Revelation could be false, and because of that, you will face a horrible punishment and retribution in the manner as the literal sense of the Apocalypse indicates.

If you carefully analyze the entire situation which took place that day, you will notice a negative chain reaction, leading from one negative condition to another one in your mind. After doubting the verity of The New Revelation, you began to feel guilty about its transmission. After that you felt guilty about not being able to live up to the expectations of the principles of My New Revelation. In your personal view, you thought and felt that you were not practicing and living what you taught and preached to others. Then you felt embarrassed, guilty and undeserving for how much effort, money and energies Lyudmila and Victor spend on you and how they have been taking good care of you, providing you with everything imaginable and unimaginable to make your life in Moscow, Russia very comfortable, pleasant, joyous and productive. So, what really happened here? By your adverse feelings and attitude in this respect,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

you, Peter, led yourself into temptation. Thanks to these adverse states of your mind, you opened the doors for that temptation to enter. Following that, you started to exhibit all the symptoms of your illness.

So, what do we have here? First of all, this situation proves that human life, as well as the entirety of the negative state, is a state of continuous temptation. It means that life in the negative state is nothing else but temptation. Secondly, in order that any form of temptation has impact on you, you have to open the doors of your mind yourself so that it could enter you and cause havoc or whatever within your spiritual, mental and/or physical system. In other words, you cannot be tempted unless you lead yourself into it by your own wrong attitude, thoughts, feelings, emotions, intentions, motivations, behaviors, relationships or whatever you have. Thus, as mentioned above, no one else can be responsible for the state of your temptation but only you yourself.

One of the major reasons for permitting such temptations to take place in your lives, is to give you feedback on the wrongs of your state of mind. If your lifestyle or the state of your mind and psyche leads you into temptation then the unpleasantness and suffering resulting from it are telling you that something is terribly wrong with your life and the way it is being lived. In this sense, any temptation can also be conceptualized as giving you an opportunity to amend your ways and to keep your spiritual and mental doors closed so that in the future you are prevented from leading yourself into the state of temptation. As you see from this aspect of the meaning of temptation, anything negative can be utilized for some positive purpose. When you are constantly feeling that you are in the state of continuous temptation, when you clearly doubt your own mind, or whatever, you may begin to think that maybe something is wrong with your entire lifestyle and attitude. If you arrive at this point, you are being given an opportunity to make a different choice and to change. And this is why I permit temptations to take place in the lives of everyone who lives on planet Zero and in the negative state in general.

Unfortunately, the human mode of life, which naturally tends to externalize everything, by its very nature, seeks out the reason for its adverse condition not in the factors of the state and process of everyone's internals but in the state of their externals. For that reason, whatever adversity is happening in their lives, such as for example, illness or whatever, the source of it is being sought out not in the state of their mind but in the state of some external phenomena. A good example of this fact can be found in the way people ascribe to external occurrences something that in themselves and by themselves they don't have. Take for example, humans' fear of draught. If the window in your room is

opened and the condition outside is somewhat windy, they either rush to close the window or avoid being in a direct flow of that draught. Why? Because they believe that by exposing themselves to that draught they could become ill by a common cold or some other illness. And yet, as you know so well, Peter, there is not one shred of any spiritual or even objectively scientific evidence, corroborated by extensive medical research in the USA, that would confirm this false assumption. However, because this falsity, as well as numerous others of similar nature, has been perpetuated for millennia throughout human history, it became almost encoded in their genes. It makes their belief in such phenomena irrefutable and non-modifiable. Of course, as you know, in the case of wind or draught from wind, just the opposite is true: The air movement throughout the rooms of your house, which occurs by the factor of this draught, takes out all impurities in them and cleanses the air, making it healthier. The closed rooms, with the unmovable air in them, becoming stuffy and unclean, gives much greater opportunity for all kinds of microbes, germs and viruses, or whatever you have there in such an abundance, to trigger your illness due to your wrong attitude and false belief system. As you see from this example, humans ascribe to outside phenomena, such as for example, to the above mentioned draught, something that they don't possess or have. In this case, it is not draught from a windy day that causes the human body to get ill, but their fear of draught that makes them so. It is the human mindset which allows this to happen. In other words, by having this fear and by projecting it into draught, they lead themselves into temptation, opening the doors for the negative state to enter them and to cause their adverse condition.

As you see from this example, one of the reasons why human nature was structured in such a way as to seek out any causative factors to anything in their conditions, whatever they may be, in the externals or outside phenomena, is so that humans would have tremendous difficulties in recognizing the falsity of this setup. If it were too easy for humans to discover the truth of this matter, the negative state, as far as humans are concerned, would have very little chance to take hold in their lives. In that case, humans would rarely, if at all, lead themselves into any temptation. If this were the case, being that the negative state is the state of temptation, among many other things, and thus, not being able to tempt anyone anymore, it would atrophy into nothingness.

For that reason, once humans realize the true source of their problems and stop seeking out their source in the external phenomena; and once they realize that they have the key to everything that is going on in their lives, by accepting the truth of this matter, they will no longer lead themselves into temptation. By doing that they will eliminate the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

negative state from their lives. And this will be one of the many options by which humans will be led into for the purpose of their ultimate salvation from their accursed position and nature. I can assure you, Peter, it won't be an easy task to accomplish this feat. It will take time, a lot of time, to change their false belief systems to which they so desperately cling and into which they place so much hope and effort. But, one way or another, it will be done and it will be done in the most appropriate and effective manner. And this is all that I wanted to contribute today, Peter.

Peter: Thank You very much for this explanation and elaboration. Is there anything else that You would like to talk about today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Not today, Peter. If the need arises to convey something important to you, while you are still in Moscow, Russia, you will intuitively know that we need to record another Dialog. In the meantime, have a good time.

Eighty Seventh Dialog

June 15, 1999, Moscow, Russia

Peter: Today, I am just checking in to see if there is anything that You would like to talk about; perhaps, some further evaluation about the spiritual significance regarding the chaos, confusion and volatility, or whatever, which has established itself following NATO's cessation of Yugoslavia's bombing. Also, an interesting question popped into my mind this morning about the spiritual reasons why it is that European nations, as well as the United States, being that they are all so-called Christian nations, had sided and side with the Muslims in their wars with the Serbs in Bosnia and now with the Albanians in Kosovo? From our typical human standpoint this doesn't make any sense. Of course, before answering my question, I am humbly asking if You have anything to contribute first.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Although I do have something to discuss this morning, I would prefer to talk about your question first, Peter. It is an interesting question because it touches upon something that has been carefully planned out and decided upon by all involved in the Great Alliance which was formed, as you know, Peter, primarily for the purpose of defeating the renegades and their various and numerous factions. As you are aware, these factions are also in the process of fighting with each other for their own place of power, control and dominance. Their own in-fights considerably complicate the entire situation. The abilities, development, sophistication, strategic advancements and pseudo-spiritual tools, utilized in these in-fights by various numerous factions of renegades, are at very different levels. They can be characterized on a scale from the lowest to the highest — as some being at the lowest level, some at various levels in between and some at the highest level. Looking at this situation from this point of view, you can ascertain that in the process of evaluating the approach which needs to be taken in order to deal with this grave situation, you have to consider those factions of the renegades that represent the greatest danger to the cause of the pseudo-creators as well as to our cause of the ultimate elimination of the negative state.

Now, as you know, Peter, all these things are happening on the level of the pseudo-dimensions of the Zone of Displacement where the pseudo-creators are currently located, as well as at the level of the pseudo-dimensions where various factions of the renegades are located. The means, the modes and ways by which this pseudo-spiritual war and wars are going on are of purely spiritual or pseudo-spiritual nature,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

respectively. However, as they are projected on planet Zero to the various nations that are in a corresponding position to the pseudo-creators and to the various numerous factions of the renegades, they take the form of a typical human mode of waging wars as presently available to them during the current technological development and industrial 'progress' in this respect.

So, how can this situation bring us to answering your questions, Peter? From a typical human standpoint, it would seem very logical to expect that Christian European countries and the United States, would naturally take sides with their own Christian brothers who are fighting the Muslims or followers of Islam. However, as you are aware, Peter, this is not the case. This has been puzzling for most of you, especially in view of the fact that ultimately, the followers of Islamic religions are openly bent on wiping out all Christians, or anyone else for that matter, who are, in their view, infidels. This doesn't make any sense to you.

However, if you look at this entire situation from the spiritual standpoint, as things are in this respect in the spiritual or pseudo-spiritual world, you will acquire an entirely different understanding for the need to give support to the Muslims, in this case against your own so-called Christian 'brothers.' In evaluating the strength, the sophistication, the standing, the abilities, the pseudo-spiritual advancement and everything else of each particular faction of the renegades, it was determined which faction of the renegades represents the greatest and the gravest danger to the positive state, to the cause of the pseudo-creators and to the process of ultimate elimination of the pseudo-life of the negative state. In the process of this important evaluation and subsequent planning out the strategies for the defeat of the renegades in their entirety, a hierarchy or a scale was developed which reflects the degree of this danger all the way from the least degree of danger to its greatest degree.

Unfortunately for your position, the most dangerous faction of the renegades for our cause was found to be that one to which the Serbs at the present time correspond. Because of that it was not only necessary but it was very crucial and vital to concentrate on defeating this particular faction first. On your planet this situation was reflected in the United States and NATO countries joining the forces of that faction of the renegades which corresponded to Bosnia's and Kosovo's Muslims.

If you carefully compare the overall sophistication, intelligence, abilities, industrial 'progress,' technological advances, and all similar military and economic factors of the Serbs, for example, and the Muslims in question,

you will notice striking differences. The Serbs are much more advanced in all aspects of their development and lifestyle than are the Muslims. The Muslims are much more primitive, limited, underdeveloped, unsophisticated and unruly in all aspects of their life than the Serbs. Because of that, Serbs, or to what faction of the renegades they correspond, are much more dangerous at this junction of the unfolding events than Muslims. It is not at all that Muslims are better, more deserving or whatever, than Serbs. In fact, in some ways they are as bad, as evil, as murderous and as destructive, and often even more so, than Serbs. But this is not the point. The point is that the faction of the renegades to which the Serbs correspond, at this point in time, is capable of much more to effectively cause tremendous havoc and destruction in the fabric of pseudo-creation and Creation than the various numerous factions to which Muslims correspond.

For this reason, at this junction of the civil war, it was necessary to first concentrate on defeating the faction of the renegades which represents the greatest danger to all. Knowing this, after careful deliberation, the pseudo-creators decided to concentrate their effort in this respect on dealing with that faction of the renegades who have been holding the most powerful position amongst all of them. This faction on your planet is represented by Bosnia's and Kosovo's Serbs. And because the United States and all other NATO countries are under the dominance of various groups of the pseudo-creators, the groups that presently are in the Great Alliance, they were the ones that were forced to play out in external representation on planet Zero all these events that have been happening in other dimensions — through the corresponding factors of the whole setup.

So, don't be dismayed or upset by anything that you see, hear or experience in the next few months or even years which will be taking place in this respect. The confusion, chaos, violence, and everything else that is happening in Kosovo is nothing else but a reflection of the state of affairs taking place in the dimensions of the renegades.

At the same time, I want you to be aware that by their behavior, attitude, murderous drive, hateful intolerance, mutual slaughter, both the Muslims and the Serbs brought upon themselves the need for punishment and retribution. Because it is only the members of the negative state that execute this punishment and retribution, and because both Serbia's and Kosovo's representatives of the renegades are equally guilty of the same crime, they are being utilized by the forces of the negative state to carry out this retribution and punishment. So, as you know, the Serb faction was the first that by its abominable policies of

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

ethnic cleansing, executed this retribution and punishment upon Muslims for their past atrocities and abominations, following which the Muslims are doing likewise the same to the Serbs for their atrocities and abominations. Both factions are in the process of bearing the consequences of their evil actions and deeds.

For that reason, My advice to you is the same as it was some time ago: If you choose so by your own free will and choice, don't take sides with either the Serbs or the Muslims. You are on the side of the Great Alliance represented by NATO and the United States. They represent the effort of restraining and locking up those factions of the renegades that presently represent the greatest danger to our cause.

I see, Peter, in your mind, a question about the position of the Russian renegades in all these events and happenings.

Peter: You are right. Russian renegades are a mystery to me. It seems that they are the wild card in this foolish game.

The Lord Jesus Christ: They are, Peter. And because of that, the Russians would be even more dangerous than the Serbs, or to what they correspond, if it were not for their current miserable economic, industrial, technological and overall breakdown and to what this condition spiritually corresponds in the other dimensions of the renegades. The Russian renegades are very well aware of the danger to their overall cause of domination and destruction of the positive state if the pseudo-creators succeed in restraining and locking up the various numerous factions of the renegades. It undermines their abilities and power as well. For that reason, as you know, Peter, this faction of the renegades was from the very beginning viciously opposing everything which was being undertaken against those factions by the pseudo-creators — as represented and illustrated by the NATO bombing of Yugoslavia.

Not having any other recourse, in its impotent inability to do anything about it or to intervene in any other forceful way, this faction of renegades, represented by Russia, decided, in its own hypocritical sanctimonious way, to play the role of peace negotiators. Do you really believe that they were after any peace, Peter? Peace was the last thing on their mind, if at all. What was on their mind instead was to stop as soon as possible any military-bombing activities, or to what they correspond in their pseudo-spiritual dimension, in order to limit as much as possible the destruction of the faction of the renegades represented on your planet by the Serbs to which the Russian renegades have always

been connected in their mutual pseudo-spiritual and other type of union. You see, Peter, they knew that the sooner they would be able to succeed in stopping the bombing, or to what it corresponded in other worlds, the less damage would be sustained by the Serbs, or to those to whom they correspond, and the more power and strength they would preserve for future needs in waging war against the pseudo-creators and the positive state in general.

Because of the strong interconnection which exists between the Russian and Serb renegades, a total defeat of one would cause a considerable weakening of the other. And vice versa: If one would succeed in breaking up the bombing, or to what it corresponded, as soon as possible, before total destruction of one or the other, the other would likewise preserve its strength and power for future needs in this respect. I can assure you, Peter, that nothing else was on the minds of the Russian renegades but that. At the same time, and this was very important for them, by their peace negotiating efforts, the Russian renegades retained some face-saving respect of all other nations on your planet and to what they all correspond in other worlds. This grudging respect they desperately need in order to preserve their dominance and power against other factions of the renegades.

The need to preserve some degree of power and dominance by the Russian renegades, as well as their face-saving effort, following the surrender of the Serbs, was illustrated and demonstrated by a desperate and dangerous, unexpected by anyone, move by the Russian military to transfer a small contingent of their troops, located in Bosnia, to Kosovo. If they would really be after genuine peace, they would never undertake any such desperate move. All they want in actuality, is to preserve the position of the Serbs, or to what they correspond in the spiritual realm, so that the pseudo-creators and all the members of the Great Alliance would not be strengthened and totally victorious in their efforts in dealing with the renegades and all their various numerous factions.

Of course, Peter, there are many other highly important spiritual reasons for the entire situation taking place in other realms as reflected in the events on your planet. However, these spiritual reasons are, unfortunately, beyond any grasp by your human mind. Because of that, their knowledge would represent great danger to all of you and your missions which you have from Me. Therefore, be satisfied with the explanation which is available to you and which you can fully grasp. Your duty in this respect, and I am repeating this, is to make all your energies available to the cause of our Great Alliance. Because of that, you have to be extremely careful and to not sympathize with any sides of the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

renegades, represented on your planet by the Serbs, Kosovars, Russians and many others, no matter how much in your typical human view they suffer, are being butchered, cut up, killed or destroyed by whatever mode.

Don't forget for one minute that all participants in these atrocities and abominations on all sides, agreed to play out all these things for some very important spiritual reasons. Also, don't forget that you were warned very strongly that the renegades and all their factions with all their abominable activities, represent the most vicious, cruel, despicable, inconsiderate and deplorable face of the negative state beyond which nothing exists that could be illustrated and demonstrated about its putrid nature. Don't get upset if you hear or see on your television how Kosovo Muslims are butchering Serbs or Serbs are butchering and burning Kosovars, or whomever, because by being upset about these events, you are wasting your precious energies on them instead of making your energies available to our cause. Remember this! It is very important! In some ways, by your inappropriate attitude in this case, you could easily support the cause of the renegades. I can assure you, not knowing everything involved behind the scene in the other worlds, you don't want to do that.

And this brings us to something that I wanted to briefly discuss with all of you today. It basically concerns the lifestyle that you currently prefer or are living. The issue here is, once again, temptation. However, at this time it is not temptation by illness or misfortune or similar factors but by external riches, money, material possessions and everything related to them.

As you remember, in one of the previous Dialogs, it was mentioned to you that some statements that I made during My First Coming on your planet, recorded in the Gospels, were meant not that much for those times as for these times or even more to future times. One such statement, which is very timely and applicable for this time and for you in particular as My true representatives, was recorded in Matthew 6:19-21 and 6:33. In that statement you are being advised not to lay up any treasures on this planet where moth and rust destroy them and where thieves break in and steal them, but instead, gather such treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust destroy them nor thieves break in and steal them. Because where your treasure is, there will be your heart also. But seek first the Kingdom of God and His righteousness and all these things shall be added to you. I am paraphrasing these two texts.

I would like to emphasize at this time the words “for where your treasure is, there your heart will be also.” The issue here is to internalize something. This is especially true about dependencies, possessions and attachments. Anything you make yourself dependent upon or attached to, or anything you possess as your own, has a tendency to be internalized. Once it becomes a matter of your internals, it becomes an integral component of your personality and your overall nature. For this reason, your heart, or your mind in general, or your entire disposition, or everything you are and consist of, will be pulled in the direction of your dependencies, attachments and possessions. In this respect, if you become too dependent on or too attached to your external material possessions or money, for example, you are putting yourself in danger of losing the proper spiritual perspective of your life and the sense of what the priorities of your life should be. In that case, you gathered treasures which are subject to rust, being eaten by moth or being stolen by thieves. In other words, all your worldly treasures become the property of the negative state. And because your heart is where your treasures are, you will choose to follow them into the negative state, thus becoming a slave in one of its ‘comfortable’ Hells where such treasures turn into nothingness or useless commodities.

In order to avoid such a horrid destiny, you were advised to seek first the Kingdom of God and His righteousness and all else automatically would be added to that. To seek the Kingdom of God and His righteousness is to see, to accept and to internalize the fact that the number one priority of your life, the way you understand, look at and consider your life, is its spiritual consideration and what or who the true source of all riches is. If you turn all your attention and effort to this spiritual consideration for the sake of principle, because this is the right thing to do, and if you evaluate all events of your life and life in general from the spiritual factors of their occurrence, then you will find the Truth — Me. By that factor, whatever you need in all other aspects of your life, as a consequence of the right spiritual attitude and prioritization of everything in your life, will automatically be added to you. Consider the factor of whatever you need and not whatever you want. You might want many things but, in actuality and the true reality of your life, you don’t need them. Whatever you have, whatever is available to you at each junction and phase of your life, is the only thing you need and require. All else, beyond and above that, from the spiritual standpoint, would be interfering with your proper functioning — no matter what you think and no matter how much you think it would be good and beneficial to have it or to possess it.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Therefore, the advice in this respect is not to waste your time and energies on desiring or fantasizing about having this or that and how having this or that would make your life more comfortable and more bearable. In actuality, if such things were presently made available to you, having them would make your life more complicated and more unbearable.

The issue of temptation in this respect is, and this is for all My representatives on planet Zero, that the forces of the negative state will try to preoccupy all your attention and your life energies on acquirement of this or that for the above mentioned purpose. The forces of the negative state are presently targeting you with effectively diverting your attention and your spiritual, mental and physical energies to something useless and unproductive, such as for example, acquirement of various material possessions and similar external goods. Unless there is an indication that you are in real need of them and unless all resources for their acquirement are provided or are available, I can assure you, you don't need them.

A more disguised but at the same time, more dangerous form of temptation in this respect is when the forces of the negative state whisper in your ears that you are truly seeking the Kingdom of God and His Truth-righteousness first while the reality of it is that you are doing so not for its sake but for the sake of those other things that are supposed to be added to your effort in seeking that Kingdom of God. In this case, you neither find the Kingdom of God and His Truth-righteousness nor any other things that are added to it. You become a loser on all sides.

Why is it that I am bringing such obvious things to your attention at this particular time? And why is it that I am reminding you about My statements made almost two thousand years ago?

As you know, you were previously informed by Me that the situation on your planet and elsewhere is very volatile, unstable, dangerous and, from your human standpoint, unpredictable. All things are being brought into an extreme state of condensation. The more this is going on, the more life around you is being externalized, materialized and superficialized. The true spiritual perspective of life is either totally lost or it is so distorted and falsified that it has no reality in the true spiritual meaning of anything. In all its aspects, under these conditions, life is becoming for you, My true representatives, very uncomfortable and unbearable. Whenever you think or feel in these terms, because they have a purely negative connotation (after all, discomfort and burden are of the negative

nature), by the factor of these negative thoughts and feelings, you are opening the doors to your internals or to your mind to the forces of the negative state to tempt you. In other words, by them, **you are leading yourself into the state of temptation.**

The most obvious form of this temptation is having a desire to possess certain material things, properties, money, and any similar external goods, so that by their means you could eliminate these negative thoughts and feelings. It is a pseudo-natural tendency to think in such terms as that; meaning, if you live in the world in which happiness and comfort of life and everything in it are founded on external factors, then, in order to make this life bearable and livable to some, more or less, comfortable degree, you need to have as many external possessions as possible. And this is a trap. Gradually, by concentrating all your energies, thoughts and efforts on their acquirement, you will lose the true spiritual perspective of your life and subsequently, you succumb to the promises of the negative state. In other words, you will become a victim of your temptation.

I can assure you, Peter, and all who read these words, that at the present time, the forces of the negative state are in the process of making an all-out effort to corrupt all remains of positive and good that are still present on this planet in the form of My representatives and others, so as to eliminate anything of that nature in their domain. This effort on their part is in the direction of your reversed conversion — conversion to the negative state, by means of trapping you into being preoccupied with such external, non-spiritual activities beyond and above your everyday needs.

If they could succeed in their effort in this respect, if they could tempt you by such means and if you were to yield to such temptations, then, based on the spiritual rule of ‘where your treasures are, so your heart will be there as well,’ they would accomplish their goal because, in that case, by the process of the internalization of all your desires, wishes, possessions, attachments and dependencies, you would automatically side with the negative state, becoming its agent.

The reason I am bringing these facts to your attention at this time, is that the situation now is very much conducive for such things to happen in your life. This is only a reminder. It is a good policy to remind yourself from time to time to not ever seek any means of salvation in the non-spiritual external factors of your life. The temptation will be great to seek them out in such external states. To countermand this tendency, you need to establish an entirely different mode of life. Every day, more

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

and more, almost on a continuous basis, you are advised to turn all your attention to the spiritual factors of your life. In other words, you are to seek constantly the Kingdom of God and His Truth-righteousness — Me, so that It could be established in your internals from which It could regulate all aspects of your life from the most within spiritual to the most without external, material, financial and all others. By concentrating on Me and My New Revelation — The Kingdom of God and His Truth-righteousness (I Am the Kingdom, and My New Revelation, in which I am fully present, is My Truth-righteousness), you will have everything and all that you need to effectively survive on planet Zero and to accomplish your mission.

If you do that, your heart will be in the true treasures of the positive state where nothing of the negative nature (thieves, rust and moth, etc.) can endanger its preciousness and eternal usability in the form of continuous spiritual progression, which makes your treasures more precious, more valuable and more exquisite.

So, do not lead yourself into any temptation by your wrong or negative thoughts, feelings, emotions, attitudes, behavior, relationships, desires, wishes or wants. Give them all to Me and I'll take good care of them as well as of all your **true everyday** needs. And this is all that I wanted to contribute today. Have a nice and peaceful day in Moscow, Peter.

Peter: Thank You very much for Your elaboration on these important issues.

Eighty Eighth Dialog

June 17, 1999, Moscow, Russia

Peter: I understand that You would like to continue in the day-before-yesterday's topic regarding the issue of seeking the Kingdom of God and His/Her Truth-Righteousness and how that statement of Yours is applicable to us as Your representatives at the present time.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, you are right. In actuality, what I would like to do today is not that much to consider something new and unknown to you but to reiterate or repeat some obvious facts that have been emphasized many times before.

The need for these seemingly redundant reiterations is in the fact that each particular time, during which this need becomes obvious, has a somewhat different connotation and meaning from the standpoint of its spiritual content. As you know, many aspects exist at each particular time and, relevant to its character and nature, events. Each such aspect requires its own interpretation and understanding of its meaning and the reason for which it is being manifested within each particular time. Because of this fact, in order to illuminate or to bring into focus the true understanding of what each time in its own flow is all about, very often, it is necessary to restate or repeat certain things which have been brought to your attention several times before. From the spiritual standpoint, and from the standpoint of the needs of each particular time frame, as it flows to its fulfillment, such restatements or reiterations are not seen as a redundancy but as a necessary addition to its own meaning and proper understanding of its true nature and why it is occurring at each particular time during the time flow. Because of this fact, whatever is being restated or reiterated, the meaning of it, and how it is being applied to the current time flow in the temporal-spatial continuum, would have a somewhat different connotation than it had during its initial statement as well as during all its subsequent restatements which followed its initial, first time statement.

In addition to memory problems, which you all as humans have, this fact needs to be kept in your mind at all times so that you don't fall into the mode of complaining that too much repetition or redundancy exists in these Dialogs and in the books of My New Revelation in general. Your memory problems are obvious. How many of you remember what the Thirty First Dialog talks about, for example, or any other Dialog? You can test yourself to see how much you remember. On the other hand, the important spiritual needs to make such reiterations are not so obvious to

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

you as your memory problems but these needs are even more important than refreshment of your spotty, imprecise and unreliable memory.

Having said that, we may proceed now toward the discussion of the issue of seeking the Kingdom of God and His/Her Truth-righteousness as it applies to the present times on planet Zero and in the entire Zone of Displacement.

As you know, Peter, the present time on your planet and in all the worlds and pseudo-worlds to which its various regions correspond, is extremely volatile, unstable, dangerous and chaotic. Any war, no matter what type or what and who is involved in waging it, produces these conditions. For that reason, on your part, the obvious response to them is confusion, uncertainty, dismay, fear, concerns and similar negative feelings, emotions, thoughts and even behaviors. Because of this adverse state of your mind and your position, there is a tendency to forget or disregard the state of your internals and instead to concentrate on that which is happening outside of you, around you and on your planet in general. Thus, because of this situation, your attention tends to be directed toward the events which are happening out there or, in our previous words, on or at the scene and not behind it.

Unfortunately, this tendency effectively distracts you from acquirement of the true meaning of all those external events as they are seen in their true essence and substance or behind the scene. The danger of this situation or of your preoccupation with these external events, as they are seen on or at the scene, is in the fact that it leads you away from the truth of the matter and places you in the need to accept appearances as truth. In other words, you will have no recourse but to accept distortions and outright falsities about the true meaning of all such events.

Seeing or perceiving all such events from their external occurrences means seeing or perceiving them in their non-spiritual connotation. And because non-spiritual connotation of their meaning and the need for their occurrence is misleading, you put yourself into the position of the negative state's effort to keep you, as much as possible, in its point of view which is totally false and inappropriate. Thus, by this factor, you are being sidetracked from your position of being My representatives to becoming the negative state's representatives.

A good example of this factor is how some of you interpret and understand the events revolving around Yugoslavia, Kosovo, NATO, Russia and around everyone on your planet who is involved in this mess wrought upon you by the various numerous factions of the renegades.

How many of you have really considered the spiritual factors of everything related to this mess? Some of you only see that the Serbs have been butchering Kosovo's Albanians and Kosovo's Albanians, the Serbs; and that NATO was bombing them in order to prevent genocide from spreading out into unmanageable proportions. Because of this inappropriate view and understanding, some of you have been taking sides, by that supporting the renegades' cause. I can assure you that the renegades would like nothing more than having you see and understand things their way — the false way, and not the true spiritual way. That way, they could keep you in the negative state, effectively undermining your role as My true representatives or representatives of My positive state. Be aware of this danger.

As mentioned before, from the true spiritual standpoint, all these external events are reflections of the spiritual combats that are taking place in other dimensions and/or pseudo-dimensions. Their meaning is entirely different from what you see in their external manifestation on planet Zero. In the spiritual connotation of those events, the issue is preservation of the pseudo-life of the negative state by all means and ways available to the forces of the negative state. It is the formerly-many-times-mentioned issue of the extreme condensation of the negative state for the purpose of its continuous self-preservation and pseudo-winning, at least on planet Zero.

What you have to understand in this respect is that the current situation with the members of the negative state is such that, in essence, they are fighting for their very lives. A very important shift occurred in the entire meaning and understanding of the purpose of the negative state's striving. With a massive conversion of the pseudo-creators to the positive state, totally unexpected by anyone in the negative state, it was necessary to redefine and reevaluate the purpose of the negative state's pseudo-being and pseudo-existence as conceived by its members and followers. Initially, shortly after release of the pseudo-creators, the members of the negative state had very high hopes that their pseudo-life had a real chance not only to continue indefinitely but to win and take over the positive state. They relied on the very special abilities, sophistication, cunning and power of the pseudo-creators which others in the negative state lacked.

However, how would you feel if your hopes in this respect are shattered by the sudden realization that the pseudo-creators had something totally different on their mind than the perpetuation ad infinitum of the pseudo-life of the negative state? You see, Peter, the members of the negative state, up to the time of the release of the pseudo-creators, were kept in

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

total blindness about the true meaning and purpose of why the pseudo-creators activated and put into pseudo-motion the pseudo-life of the negative state. In fact, all members of the negative state, with the exception of the pseudo-creators, of course, were kept in the belief that this purpose was in taking over the positive state or at least in establishment of a permanent — to eternity — lifestyle which would diametrically differ from anything contained in the true life of the positive state. This subterfuge was a necessary arrangement in order to give an opportunity for the negative state to be established. After all, if you were to know from the very beginning why the negative state was permitted to be established, you would fail in illustrating and demonstrating something which should never be chosen. In that case, the fullness and completeness of life in the positive state could not be established either because no one in the positive state would ever know what not to choose and how not to be.

For that reason, the true purpose of the activation of the negative state had to be hidden until this time. It was not until after the release of the pseudo-creators that this purpose was revealed, to the shock of all members of the negative state. Certain aspects of this true purpose were also hidden from the members of the positive state so that the authenticity and genuineness of the learning process would not be contaminated and made void.

As you remember from previous revelations, the true purpose of the pseudo-creators' effort in activation of the negative state was primarily for seeking and establishing the Absolute Truth. As you also know, the way this seeking and establishment was taking place was by discovery and establishment of what the Absolute Truth was not. The proper determination of this important spiritual and philosophical factor was vital and crucial for the final answer to the question whether life is possible and feasible without any God — Me, and My true spiritual principles and whether such a thing as the Absolute Truth is possible and really exists.

With this factor is connected another mystery related to the needs of the lockup of the pseudo-creators. Why was it necessary to take this seemingly restrictive step? Of course, this lockup was by prior agreement between Me and the pseudo-creators. One of the many reasons for this act (besides what was revealed about this need before), was in order that the pseudo-creators in their zeal to get the answers to their existential question as soon as possible, would not destroy humanity prematurely on planet Zero and by that act preventing My incarnation into human life so that I could also save humans from their horrid destiny. You see, Peter,

the pseudo-creators were in actuality ready to destroy humanity shortly before My incarnation because they clearly saw that humans failed miserably to provide them with the necessary answers in their search for the Absolute Truth. By that time, humanity clearly provided them with the answer that humanity **is not** the answer to their question. And not only that but they recognized the fact that humanity, the way its nature was fabricated, would impede this search and would interfere with the progress of finding the Truth. Therefore, humanity of that time was getting in their way in this respect.

So, in order to give a chance for some other aspects of the negative state to be illustrated and demonstrated for the sake of learning of all, the pseudo-creators agreed to be locked up and taken out of the picture until an opportune time. During their lockup they were given time to cool off and to reevaluate all that they had learned and experienced up to that point. In the process of their lockup, the pseudo-creators continued to explore various options, trying to find a more effective way for answering their existential question. There are many other things they did during that time, but they would be beyond the ability of your human comprehension.

So, after the release of the pseudo-creators, when gradually and slowly the members of the negative state, as well as the members of the positive state, learned the true purpose of the activation of the negative state, the way it was meant to be from the very beginning of its activation, they faced a formidable task to change the purpose of their pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. With the massive conversion of the pseudo-creators to the positive state, it became obvious to everyone in the negative state that it is only a matter of time when the pseudo-life of the negative state will end its pseudo-being and pseudo-existence permanently, for good and forever.

This realization, in accordance with the true nature of the members of the negative state, made them furious and desperate. At this point in time, knowing what the inevitable outcome of their pseudo-being and pseudo-existence will be, they want nothing more than to have revenge and to cause as much damage, hardship, misery and suffering as they are capable of. In this process, the true nature of the negative state, in its ultimate manifestation, beyond which nothing more is to be manifested and learned, is being exposed to its fullest extent.

Presently, this situation with the negative state, is reflected in the events that you have been experiencing on the Balkans, and also in the situations with Arabs, India, Pakistan and with many other places on

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

your planet. And I can assure you, you will be experiencing more of similar, and possibly even worse events than what you have been witnessing up to this point in worse events than what you have been witnessing up to this point in Yugoslavia and Kosovo and how they butcher and kill each other. This is all an integral part of the final exposure of the ultimate nature of the face of the negative state. Therefore, don't feel sorry for any of them because they have chosen, by their own free will and free choice, to illustrate these factors of the negative state. Paradoxically speaking, and it will seem to you that it sounds very harsh and non-godlike, they should be thanked for what they are doing to each other and for the cruel and despicable way they are doing it to each other, because they are only fulfilling their purpose for which they volunteered, providing valuable lessons to all of how never to be and how never to behave in relationship to each other.

Now, this is a good example of how you are advised to look upon all things that are happening around you in your external planetary life. As you see, it is not what and how things are taking place on your planet, but what is behind them that counts.

From this position we may now properly interpret the words 'but seek first the Kingdom of God and His Truth-righteousness and all these things shall be added to you.' There are two aspects to this statement that I would like to bring to your attention and memory today (of course, there are more than that but only these two are ready to be reiterated). First of all, seeking the Kingdom of God signifies seeking the meaning of all events as they are happening behind and not at or on the scene. His/Her — My — righteousness or Truth does not appear that much, if at all, in the externals because, as you remember, the externals consist of appearances only. The appearances are, in most instances illusions and not the true reality. Therefore, they don't contain the Truth. This fact tells you how important it is for you to look for the spiritual meaning and interpretation of all things, happenings and events in order to avoid falling into the traps of illusions, which are webbed from the falsities and distortions of the negative state. As mentioned before, in the fight for their very survival, the forces of the negative state, in their fury, retaliation and revenge against the so-called betrayal of the pseudo-creators, are determined to cause as much damage as possible in the process of their defeat. This fact is nicely illustrated by the Serbs, and before that by the Kosovars, who are destroying, burning down and killing as much and as many as possible on their way out of Kosovo. And of course, the Kosovars are doing exactly the same to the Serbs. And in fact, this is what this war is all about.

In your case, the forces of the negative state, by such atrocious activities, are trying to seduce you into interpreting all these events in a typical human non-spiritual way, trying to make you feel sorry for them so that they could solicit your support for their cause. Again, don't fall into this trap but see things behind the scene in the manner as described above and as your intuition will be telling you.

The second aspect of this issue is in understanding what the Kingdom of God is all about. As you know and remember, Peter, during My life on your planet, I also stated, as recorded by Luke (17:21), that the Kingdom of God is within you. What does it tell you? How do you make a connection between My statement about seeking the Kingdom of God first and that the Kingdom of God is within you? It is obvious that if the Kingdom of God is within you then seeking the Kingdom of God first means that the only true answers to all your questions (the Truth-righteousness) could be found in no other place but only within you.

You have known this fact since the time My New Revelation was in the process of being transmitted. However, the reason you are being reminded about this issue at this time, is in the fact that as the negative state is reaching its ultimate condensation, this effort will be more and more difficult to establish or to accomplish. The reason for this difficulty is rooted in the very nature of the final phase of the exposure of the face of the negative state. It is in this phase that all paths, ways, roads or whatever you have, to the state of everyone's within, will be entirely blocked in a very effective way. None of the human stock will be able to remove or to overcome these roadblocks. This is a necessary arrangement if the negative state is to temporarily pseudo-win on planet Zero.

In your case however, as My true representatives, if you keep these words in your mind and what they truly mean and signify, as described above, you will be able to overcome all these blocks and continue in your journey into your within. However, bear in mind, that the forces of the negative state will try their worst to distract you from your effort in this respect by arranging all kinds of external events in order to preoccupy you with them and their inappropriate understanding and interpretation. When you see all those things around you, and how atrocious and abominable they are, it will be very easy for you to forget about turning yourself within and seek all proper and truthful understanding and interpretation of their meaning from Me within you.

As mentioned previously, you are entering a very difficult time in this respect. Therefore, it is important to be reminded about these facts because the danger of neglecting your duties to seek the Kingdom of God

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

first, in its meaning as described above, is greater than ever before. This is the reason why we are spending so much time on this topic. It is in preparation for what is to come or, to be more precise, for what is in the process of happening right now.

Peter: Thank You so much for this timely reminder. Is there anything else today that You would like to talk about?

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. No, not today. It is sufficient for today. Go in peace and rest.

Eighty Ninth Dialog

June 18, 1999, Moscow, Russia

Peter: Presently, I don't have any specific questions to ask. Perhaps You would like to talk about something which would be beneficial and useful for us to know.

The Lord Jesus Christ: As you remember from the previous Dialog(s), it was indicated there that the real and original purpose for which the negative state was activated, the full and proper knowledge of this purpose, has not been available in its full content, until recently. As a matter of fact, it was not until Update 20, in the **Corollaries...**, was recorded, that this purpose was in the process of being revealed.

Before My New Revelation was recorded, the simple and the most common understanding of this purpose was in the assumption that certain contingents of angels decided to rebel against Me and My Rule, Power and Domination, and wanted to establish their own life, with its own principles, rules, regulations and conditions which would be in total opposition to anything established and practiced in the life of the members of the positive state.

This story was a favorite fable, perpetuated in all kinds of Christian and non-Christian books and dogmas. It took almost two thousand years, in your conceptualization of time, before anything different and new was revealed about the purpose for which the negative state was activated. It was not until your book, Peter, **Fundamentals of Human Spirituality** was written that an entirely different purpose for activation of the negative state was revealed and described. That purpose, as it was stated at that time, had absolutely nothing in common with the story about rebellious angels who in their alleged foolish pride desired to overthrow My Government and replace Me and My type of government with their own brand of government.

However, at the time when the above mentioned book was written, Peter, the entire and ultimate purpose for the activation of the negative state had not been available for some important spiritual reasons. As you know, two most significant and most important factors were missing at that time. One was that My New Nature had not been established or its acquirement had not been completed by that time. The second was that the pseudo-creators were still in a lockup mode. Personally, you, Peter, incorrectly assumed at that time that, first of all, the negative state could not be eliminated in its entirety but instead it would be put in a

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

permanently dormant or inactive condition. Because of that, the assumption also was that the pseudo-creators would remain locked up permanently. For security and safety reasons, as all other things were being accomplished within the realm of the positive state and as My New Nature was coming to its final completion, in order that no interference would occur with these important processes and events, it was necessary to retain the impression that you, and everyone else, had at that time in this respect.

But, have you noticed how almost each chapter in ***Fundamentals of Human Spirituality*** was ending? Every time, as you were finishing each chapter in that book, the statement was made that **there is a transcending understanding to everything which was being revealed in those chapters.**

Do you have any idea why such significant and important statements were made at that time? They were made at that time so as to prepare you for the fact that sometime in the future, when everything, as well as everyone everywhere, will become ready, safe and open, you will receive a higher, more appropriate and more relevant understanding of all things related to My Nature, to the activation of the negative state, to the story of the pseudo-creators and to everything else.

So, as years have been going by, in their process, you were getting more and more information regarding all these issues, the information which considerably transcended anything previously revealed and conveyed to you. The most comprehensive and the most advanced and transcending understanding of these facts culminated in Update 20 in the ***Corollaries...*** . It was in that Update that for the first time you learned the true, genuine and initial purpose for which the negative state was permitted to be activated. As you remember, this true purpose was a search for the Absolute Truth by means of discovery and establishment of everything at all that is not true.

Due to the fact that at that time, or non-time, nothing existed that was not true, philosophically speaking, it was not possible to define what everything is that is not true. It is inconceivable to come to the definition and understanding of something from the position which doesn't contain anything of that something's nature. Thus, in our case, it is impossible to know from the position of the positive state, which doesn't contain anything of that non-truth, what the Absolute Truth is not. On the other hand, in a logical construct of any important investigation and discovery, it is not possible to derive any knowledge about anything which is not contained in the available knowledge and information. In this sense,

from the State of the Absolute Truth it is not possible to know what it doesn't have — in this case, what is not its own Absolute Truth. At the same time, to derive any conclusions about existence of the Absolute Truth from the Absolute Truth Itself, is circular because it has already established its own absolute reality and consequently, it is axiomatic, not requiring any proof from its own position.

However, there is another point to this issue. How do you go about searching for the meaning of the Absolute Truth and what it really is if you are relative and not absolute? In other words, how a relative being may grasp and comprehend what the Absolute Truth is and whether there is such a thing as Absolute Truth if, by his/her very nature, he/she is incapable of containing the Absolute Truth in its entirety within himself/herself? The problem with a relative being is that, by his/her very nature, because he/she is nothing else but relative, he/she may arrive at the state of severe doubt whether there is such a thing or state as Absolute Truth or anything Absolute. If no Absolute exists, then, it is conceivable that neither God, who supposedly is Absolute, exists. 'After all,' such a relative being may say, 'if I am not absolute, if I am relative and everything around me and in me is relative also, then how can I establish whether any such Absolute Condition or Absolute State exists at all? Because of my relative nature, it is quite conceivable that all else is relative and therefore, no Absolute Truth or any other Absolute Condition or State exists as well.'

Now, this was the very original question that preceded any other questions posed at the time before activation of the negative state. As you see from this understanding, the issue that leads to the activation of the negative state was the issue of the crucial and important relationship between the Absolute — Me, and the relative — all sentient entities. By the nature of their relativity, unable to fully grasp and comprehend the Absolute, the sentient mind embarked on the search and exploration of the Absolute Truth. However, being relative, it couldn't derive anything from the Absolute State or Condition. For that reason, the sentient mind developed a relative methodology which would begin to gather experiences and knowledge of the relative nature, relative to its own relative condition. Hence, existence of something relative to the relative only — which is the negative state — as opposed to being relative to the Absolute. In this construct of exploration and research, the only way you can arrive at any feasible conclusion about anything which is of the Absolute State or Condition, is by classification of everything which is not true or which is not absolute. This is an oblique way of discovery of what the real truth is by the mode of the establishment of everything which is not true.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

In the process of discovery of these important factors, you establish a mode of life which would reflect in its entire course everything which doesn't have any place in the Absolute State or Condition and its positive state. This mode is a mode of concrete and tangible illustration and demonstration of everything which is not true in the lives of those sentient entities who had agreed to participate in this demonstration and illustration.

Once you embark on your search for the existence of Absolute Truth and what it is not, it is at this point that you ask yourself an important question: What would life be like if it were to derive not from God — Absolute Truth — Me, and from His/Her — Mine — Absolute State or Condition, but from something or someone else who does not contain anything at all of this Absolute Nature or who is not a derivative from this Absolute? Now, if such life were to be possible at all, and if we could establish such life, it might be able to give us a clear answer about the existence of the Absolute Truth because such life would contain everything which is not true. If that different life were to be in its nature similar to the life of the positive state then, of course, not deriving from the Absolute State, it would prove that the Absolute State is incidental to any origin of life and thus, has nothing to do with anything living and existing and therefore, for all practical purposes, it doesn't exist.

Due to the fact that such life would not contain anything at all from the assumed Absolute, it would have to be totally and completely separated from anything and anyone who would be of a different life, in this case, from the life of the positive state. This separation is of an absolute necessity if any semblance of validity of the outcome of the experiment in other types of life other than life of the positive state could be assured. Lack of such separation would invalidate the results of this experiment because any conjunction with the positive state would contaminate it with the truth contained in the positive state. They said to themselves, 'Paradoxically speaking, we know what the real truth is. We don't want to establish something which is obvious and doesn't need any proof. However, we don't know what the non-truth is. And this is the real issue. How can we live without this vital knowledge? How can we progress and proceed with our lives if we lack this important knowledge? After all, the Absolute Truth cannot provide us with such knowledge because it is the Absolute Truth. By its very Nature, it doesn't and can't contain anything which is not of its Absolute Nature, and thus, with that which is non-truth. On the other hand, we, being relative, are incapable of reaching the level of this Absolute. For that reason, in some ways, we know nothing. On one hand, we have no knowledge what the truth is not; and on the other hand, we are incapable of having knowledge in its fullness

and completeness about anything contained in this Absolute. Therefore, we know absolutely nothing. For that reason, the only truth that we know is that we know nothing. And this is our real truth.' Do you see the serious existential and philosophical dilemma, Peter, which the sentient entities at that time had faced?

Peter: Yes, very clearly. I am surprised that by this time this factor had never occurred in my mind although it should have been clear to me from the entire content of Your New Revelation.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, as you know, Peter, in your relative condition, any knowledge has to come in small progressive steps. Just think about your overall condition at the time when you were writing ***Fundamentals of Human Spirituality***. How many seemingly insurmountable difficulties did you have at that time from only those things which were revealed in that book? To reveal all at once about all these things at that time would most definitely either kill you or you would reject it outrightly which would kill you spiritually. However, now is the time to talk about it because your spiritual condition and state, and of all readers of these Dialogs as well, is such that it allows us to reveal the transcending understanding about all these things.

But to go back to our topic. So, if sentient entities at that time arrived at the correct conclusion that, in the true reality of their being and existence, they knew nothing, and if their mind was structured in such a way that it craved, strived, thirsted and was hungry for knowledge, then it naturally embarked on rectifying this situation. The logical steps that needed to be taken in this respect, were the ones which were obvious. 'If being relative,' they were saying, 'we are incapable of knowing absolutely whether there is such a thing as Absolute Truth; in that case, because of our relativity, we may discover what is not Absolute Truth. In our relative condition, it is our prerogative to be able to discover everything which is of the relative nature and because of its relativity, it is not contained in the Absolute. As we go about discovering, describing, classifying and experiencing in a very factual, actual, experiential, illustrative and demonstrative way and mode (and this is the only way which is convincing) what the truth is not; once we exhaust all possibilities and feasibilities of all aspects and factors of everything which is not true, then and only then can we arrive at the proper conclusion that everything which is of this non-true nature is not the Absolute Truth. In that case, by the logic of these facts, everything which is beyond and above or outside of this non-truth is the Absolute Truth.'

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

This conclusion can be derived from the fact that, if life of all sentient entities continues even beyond exhaustion of all aspects of the proven non-truth, as not being contained in the Absolute, and if all possibilities and all aspects of this non-truth were discovered, classified, experienced, illustrated and demonstrated, and yet, life continues beyond all of this, then it is obvious that life could not be derived from anything relative because in the moment all its factors are discovered and exhausted, due to their relative condition, any life at all should cease to be and to exist. For that reason, because life nevertheless continues, any life at all must originally originate in the Absolute Condition — Me. **And this is the Absolute Truth.** Now all sentient entities, thanks to this experiment, can and may know clearly, first of all, what the Absolute Truth is not, and secondly, that the Absolute Truth really is and exists absolutely and that everything which is not of the negative nature, or of non-truth, is of the Absolute and therefore, everything else, which is not of this non-true nature, is Absolutely True. Hence, the knowledge what the Absolute Truth is.

As you see from this somewhat difficult philosophical description, this was the only way that the relative sentient mind could acquire this most vital, crucial and important knowledge. Because of the relativity of their nature, no other way for the sentient entities existed, by which they could arrive at this knowledge, but only through the activation of the negative state. In order to make all these events happen, the pseudo-creators, in agreement with Me, agreed to become the ones who would proceed with experimentation and search for the Absolute Truth by the only possible way — through the activation and establishment of the pseudo-life of the negative state. All experiences, all knowledge and everything else that have been and will be acquired during the entire process of this experiment, will be utilized in the final choice-making decision for the life of the positive state in its complete and total form and condition. Without this crucial knowledge, or as it is obvious from the above, in this case, without any knowledge at all, nothing of the fullness and completeness of this life would ever be possible to establish.

As you see from this revelation, everything in the negative state and human life on planet Zero, no matter what it is, and no matter how horrible and despicable it seems to you, serves only one purpose — to ultimately make life of the positive state in its fullness and completeness possible and feasible. Therefore, in evaluating all happenings and events that you have been and will be experiencing on this planet, it is important that you bear these factors in your mind. Because you are My true representatives, you are advised to look at all these factors from My position and thus, from the position of the positive state. The above

description provides you with a transcending understanding why the negative state and human life were permitted to be activated and established. No other purpose for it has ever existed or will ever exist. Remember this!

For that reason, no matter how abominable, impossible, cruel, hateful, intolerant, vicious, murderous, evil, deceitful, foolish, insane and manipulative the deeds of the inhabitants of this planet and of the negative state are, remember, please, they are all illustrating and demonstrating what the real truth and real life are not. In that is their service to the positive state and in that is their ultimate redemption as well. Because of these facts, don't waste your time and precious energies on getting upset, angry, disgusted, disappointed, fearful, restless, disillusioned, or whatever, about anything that you see, experience, observe or hear. By such an adverse attitude, you would be supporting only the negative state. Remember please, your energies are needed somewhere else and not on feeling frustrated about and sorry for someone who is a culprit or a victim or a perpetrator of all these negative and evil deeds. In committing them, they are only fulfilling the purpose for which they were fabricated in the first place.

In view of these facts, revealed in this particular Dialog, it is advisable for you to reevaluate the way you look at all events and happenings on this planet, in the negative state in general and in your personal and private lives in particular. At this point in time, you need to acquire a transcending understanding for all and everything that transpires in your lives and in the pseudo-life on this planet and in the negative state in general. One of the many purposes for recording these Dialogs, is to provide for you this transcending understanding and to give you a tool for making it possible for you to reevaluate your position and role and consequently, to change your attitude and mode of thinking, feeling, intending, willing, behaving, acting, relating or whatever, if there is a need to undertake such a process. It is solely between you and Me to determine in your own personalized and individualized manner whether you need to make such changes and if there is such a need, by what method it should be accomplished. The nature of the presently ongoing shift requires from all of you that this step of reevaluation is to be undertaken in order to prepare you for what is to come shortly. Unless this is done as soon as you read these words, it would be very difficult for you not only to understand and accept that which will be happening shortly on your planet but also it would be very difficult for you to live your life on this planet. And because of that, consequently, it would be difficult for you, if not impossible, to fulfill your mission on this planet in your own unique role as and in being My true representatives. Therefore,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

I am encouraging you to undertake such steps as soon as possible following the reading of these Dialogs. The reading and accepting of what is contained in these Dialogs will make taking such steps and reevaluating your attitude, and everything in your mind, very easy and comfortable. By the sole factor of their reading and what they contain, and by the acceptance of their content into your lives as My Truth, you will accomplish this important goal very successfully.

Peter: Thank You very much for this prolific and meaningful discussion and reminder. Is there anything else that You would like to talk about today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: It was My pleasure, Peter. I think it is enough for today. The content and meaning of this Dialog is somewhat difficult. Therefore, I would recommend to close for today so that nothing more or different would be interfering with the proper comprehension of this Dialog. Go in peace and have fun with Lyudmila and Victor, My good and loving people.

Ninetieth Dialog

June 19, 1999, Moscow, Russia

Peter: Today I would like to present for You an inquiry related to one of Your statements during Your stay on planet Zero. However, before formulating my question, I would like to ask if You have anything to talk about or to elaborate upon as related to anything You think would be appropriate for us to know.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for asking Me to talk first. I do have something to add to the topic discussed in the Eighty Ninth Dialog as related to the issue of the purpose for which it was necessary to activate the negative state and place it in its own relatively independent life. As you remember, the entire issue at that time was the relationship between the Absolute State and the relative states. From the position of the relative sentient entities, looking upon something that is Absolute, and knowing that it is impossible to fully grasp the nature of that Absolute, certain doubts could easily enter the sentient minds about the validity of any knowledge which was available to them. How could a relative sentient entity be sure that any knowledge available to him/her really is true and genuine if nothing exists at all against which such knowledge could be compared or ascertained?

Take for example, this scenario: You are a relative being. You have no other option in the matter of any knowledge but only that which you have and what you experience and which is the life of the positive state. But how do you really know that it is the life of the positive state and that you are positive? Because you are told so? Against what other type of life are you able to compare your current life that would clearly give you an indication that what you have and what you experience is really the life of the positive state? From your relative position, not having any other experience about any other life, you could easily conclude that, for all practical purposes, your present life might as well be the life of the negative state. How would you know any difference if you have no other experience about anything but what is currently available to you?

How can you justify having theoretical knowledge that you really are in the life of the positive state and that you have full freedom of choice about anything if that anything doesn't even exist and if nothing different is available from which to choose?

So, in order to put all these questions to the test and in order to make available to all relative sentient entities a different perspective and

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

different choices, it was absolutely necessary to allow the establishment of an entirely different type of life that would have nothing in common with the life which was currently available. Any commonalities with the available life would preclude that different life to be much too different. From that kind of situation, no true learning or acquirement of needed proper knowledge could be derived.

However, the dilemma of this setup is in the fact that there were no sources available from and no grounds on which any other type of life other than the available life could be derived and built. So, how do you go about establishing this different life if you have no sources and no grounds for establishment of anything of this different nature? The first and the only step that is available to you, as to the relative sentient entity, in this respect is to search out what kinds of ideas were implanted in your mind in the process of your creation. By carefully analyzing all such ideas and by exploring all aspects of knowledge that are available to you, you discover one important fact: You didn't create yourself but you were created by someone else. And not only that, but in the process of your creation, as the idea of your unique and specific creation occurred in someone else's Mind, you were given a choice to be and to exist or not to be and not to exist as an independent, free and choice-making individual, albeit relative, but nevertheless, its own unique being and existence. Moreover, you do have knowledge that because you were not the one who created yourself from nothing, by your own effort and volition, and that you are therefore relative, there must be Someone Who created you from His/Her own independent ideas or from Himself/Herself. And because you do possess this knowledge and the knowledge that, in the initial setup, from the relative, nothing can be derived in itself and by itself that could give life to another relative, in that case there must be Someone Absolute to whom you are relative and who is capable of producing such a relative life.

However, as mentioned in the previous Dialog, because of your relative condition, no knowledge is available to you about the true nature of this Absolute in its absolute sense. Therefore, because of your absolute dependency on this Absolute State, and because you cannot acquire any knowledge about its True Nature, you have to conclude that whatever knowledge you have is no knowledge at all. Thus, to repeat again, you know absolutely nothing. Any relative knowledge is only relative and therefore, it is not reliable because it doesn't have absolute validity. Only that which has absolute validity and is inexhaustible in itself and by itself can provide you with reliable, valid and true knowledge. This is the condition of your relative life. And because, in the true reality of your life, you know absolutely nothing in an absolute sense, you begin to

doubt anything that you know about or that you experience in the process of your living. You even begin to doubt whether you really exist at all and whether your life is not some kind of illusion or a nightmarish state.

So, as you continue to explore all ideas that you have, at one point you realize that you do have an idea that gives you a different option to anything else available to you. Once you discover that idea, you realize that your free will and choice depends on availability of that option represented by the idea in question. This is the only option you have besides the original idea that your life derives from some kind of Absolute State or Being. And what does that idea contain? It tells you that you have the right and privilege to reject the other idea which tells you that your life derives from the Absolute Source.

However, at this point in time, you have only an option in the form of the availability of that idea. No experiences and knowledge are available to you in order to determine what life would be like if that idea is not only accepted as the only valid one but put into its practical manifestation so that it could produce all its consequences, outcomes and results. To have this different option in itself and by itself is not sufficient to acquire any knowledge about any other type of life but what you currently have. Also, it is not sufficient to give you a reliable and valid notion whether the life you currently live in, is really the positive state's life or whether it is something else; perhaps, even the pseudo-life of the negative state. After all, at this point of your exploration, you have absolutely nothing available that would enable you to compare your so-called positive life with any other type of life.

For that reason, in order to make such a comparison possible, and in order that your question whether it is the life of the positive state which you currently live in, is answered once and for all in the most valid, reliable and experiential mode, you choose to accept that option contained in the mentioned idea and you go by its indications.

So, as you see from this description, the very first step in activating any other life but the life of the positive state, is to accept that idea and proclaim that life, any life, doesn't derive from the Absolute State, defined as God, and from His/Her Will and His/Her Ideas or Spiritual Principles. In the moment you accept that idea, by the process of that acceptance, you enter the second step in the activation of this other life: You totally and completely separate yourself from your original life, defined as the life of the positive state, and you begin to live life in accordance with everything that is not contained in that other life. You

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

arrive at this point by simply analyzing what was contained in that other life and you reject all its premises, conditions, traits, modes and character so that nothing of it enters your new and different type of life. Accepting anything from your original life, would make it impossible to make a proper, reliable and valid comparison between these two types of lives.

Once you put this other type of life into motion, and once all consequences, outcomes and results of its activation are in process, your learning begins about what the truth and the true reality is not and what the Absolute State does not contain. As you are exhausting, step by little step, all aspects and facets of this learning, at one point in time, you reach a very obvious state that makes you realize that nothing is remaining any more that could be learned from this process. In other words, everything learnable and everything that could have been experienced has been learned and experienced and therefore, it would be futile and unproductive to continue in something that no longer gives you any option to learn anything new and different about anything.

It is at this junction that you realize very clearly that, because of the full and complete exhaustibility of anything contained in your type of life, your life is not a true life for the simple reason that it lacks any true incentives in its continuation. If you have nothing more to learn, you lose all incentives to continue in that type of life. This obvious conclusion leads to another important conclusion: If you produce something which derives from your relative condition, it can be nothing more than relative to the relative only and therefore, it lacks permanency of its being and existence. Somehow it always inevitably ends without giving you any further option of learning and experiencing something new. In that case, it is not the true life because, as you make comparisons between the previous life in the positive state and your current life, which can now be defined as the life of the negative state, you realize that your previous life doesn't contain this option — exhaustibility of learning and its permanent ending. Therefore, that life had to be derived from the Absolute Condition or State because only from something which is Absolute can anything of this inexhaustible nature be derived.

Once this realization fully hits your mind, you come to the conclusion that the only feasible, realistic, rational, intelligent, proper, logical and correct choice to be made is the choice for the life of the positive state. Now you know what never to choose. Before that, before activation of that other life, the life of the negative state, you had absolutely no knowledge and understanding of what not to choose — but also what to choose, for that matter.

As you see from these facts, the issue here is not only what not to choose but also what to choose. If you have no experiential and obvious comparison between all factors of two different lives, you cannot arrive at any conclusion about choosing something or not choosing something. And this is one of the true rationales for allowing the activation of the negative state. This was one of the most important purposes for which permission was granted to proceed with this experiment.

From My Absolute State and Condition, in My non-time and non-space state, I knew Absolutely that activation of any other life but the life that stemmed from My Absolute State, would have only transient and temporary duration for the simple reason that it didn't originate from My Absolute State but from the relative state of sentient entities. Anything that derives from the Absolute State, as you know, Peter, — and we are repeating this fact again, — cannot be exhaustible because it carries within itself the absolute in its relative condition. On the other hand, anything that originated in the relative state, by the nature of its original source, is relative to the relative only and because of that, it is fully exhaustible and transient. It remains only until it exhausts all its possibilities and everything that it contains. And this is the fundamental difference between these two states.

However, as is obvious from the above description, you are unable to discern these fundamental differences if you have no experience and no comparison between them. In order to do that, you have to allow establishment of that other type of life — the relative one — so that such an important comparison can be made and a proper foundation and condition for your choices are established. Only after that are you able to come to the right conclusions about anything at all.

From these facts, Peter, you can clearly see the obvious rationale why it was so essential to permit the activation of the negative state. Without My permission, all sentient entities would be locked forever in only one state — the positive state, without any option of learning about anything else. In that case, they would be eternally plagued by doubts whether their life is a true life or whether something else exists that could be a better and truer life. If you were to live constantly in doubts about anything, tell Me, Peter, what kind of life would it be?

Peter: In that case it wouldn't be life of the positive state but it would be life of the negative state because doubts and uncertainties are negative emotions.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

The Lord Jesus Christ: Precisely, Peter. So, in order not to allow these doubts and uncertainties to plague the sentient mind, thus, avoiding contamination of the positive state by anything negative, it was necessary to allow the activation of the negative state and give everyone a concrete and tangible option, based on experiential factors, to make the proper and right choices. And this is what this was all about and what I wanted to talk about today, Peter. You may proceed with asking your own question.

Peter: I don't know whether my question has any relevance to the discussed topics, although it might. It relates to Your statement as recorded in the Gospel of Matthew 10:34-36: *'Do not think that I came to bring peace on earth. I did not come to bring peace but a sword. For I have come to "set a man against his father, a daughter against her mother, and a daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law. And a 'man's enemies will be those of his own household.'"* Could You shed some light on that statement which seems to contradict anything about Your being the Prince of Peace, for example. If You are the Prince of Peace, how come You stated that you came to this world not to bring peace but the sword; that is, a terrible division amongst all on this planet? What is this all about?

The Lord Jesus Christ: I will gladly do so, Peter. And yes, even though at first glance, it is not obvious whether there is a connection between this statement of Mine and the topic discussed above; nevertheless, you would be surprised to learn that there is a direct connection between them.

Consider these facts: In what way was life in the negative state, that other life, established in the lives of all creatures, sub-creatures, humans and all others, fabricated by the pseudo-creators? Without any knowledge and information about the nature of life in the positive state. This was a necessary arrangement if true and any learning about other life other than the life of the positive state could come to its fruition. If those fabrications of the pseudo-creators were to know even the least significant aspect of the nature of life of the positive state, theoretically speaking, — although in this life nothing insignificant exists, — it would be impossible to establish any other type of life. Under these conditions, no one would desire or want to participate in any other type of life. As the members of the positive state before the activation of the negative state had no knowledge about anything which was not true, so the fabrications of the pseudo-creators, by analogy, could have no knowledge about anything that was really true. Only based on such an arrangement could any true, genuine and uncontaminated learning occur. At the same

time, as you remember, Peter, in order that any other life other than the life of the positive state could take hold also in the lives of the pseudo-creators, it was mutually agreed that they would erase their own memories about anything related to the life of the positive state so that they would have no desire to revert back to that life. Again, with full memory about that life, the pseudo-creators could not properly establish the life of the negative state because they would be motivated to go back into that life and, at the same time, they would inadvertently transfer that knowledge and experience into the lives of their fabrications. With such knowledge and experience, the establishment of life of the negative state would fail miserably from its very onset. In that case, the true learning about non-truth and consequently, about truth as well, and also about the Absolute State, would come to naught. Because of that, the sentient minds would continue to be plagued by doubts and uncertainties about the true nature of their own life.

So, as you see from this description, in order to make this crucial and vital learning come to its fruition, it was necessary to temporarily eliminate all memories and experiences about anything related to the life of the positive state. Thus, after the activation of the negative state, and after the life of the negative state was fully established, before My First Coming on planet Zero, no one in the negative state and on planet Zero had known about not only what the real truth was all about but also what the entirety of the positive state was about. As you see from this situation, here you have a reversed situation as compared with the situation existing before that time in the positive state. Whereas in the positive state, up to that point, no one had any knowledge of what the non-truth was all about; in the negative state the situation was reversed in the sense that no one had known before My incarnation on planet Zero what the truth was all about.

How does all this relate to My statement, quoted by you, Peter, above? Consider this: What would really happen if, under the then-existing conditions on planet Zero, called in that text 'earth,' I would bring its inhabitants, as well as to all inhabitants of the negative state, peace? Not having any knowledge about the true life and its truth, as well as about the Nature of God — My Nature, without any prior revelation about anything related to My Truth and about the nature of the positive state, by the factor of the nature of peace itself, I would confirm and fully permanently grounded them into their own pseudo-reality of the pseudo-life of the negative state and human life. In that case, all inhabitants of the negative state and planet Zero would be locked up in their current condition to eternity. Once confirmation, acceptance and acknowledgment of anything happens from the position of My Absolute State, by and

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

from the factor of My being Absolute Peace, that ‘anything’ becomes its permanent state. In that case, it cannot be eliminated ever.

For that reason, as you remember, I came to this world as Truth. And not only as some other aspects of this Truth, but the Truth that combats all evils and falsities and that reveals their true nature to someone who has no knowledge, no understanding, no discernment and no nothing about anything related to the real truth. This aspect of My Truth corresponds to the meaning of the word ‘sword.’ In the spiritual connotation of the word ‘sword,’ it signifies to bring into everyone’s life the truth of the matter and by that truth, the exposure of the true nature of the life of the negative state and the nature of human life. Thus, I brought to this planet and to the negative state the truth that combated ignorance and no knowledge related to anything of the positive state and all aspects of what is its truth or its true life. Because the pseudo-life of the negative state was rooted in evils and falsities, considered by everyone in it to be good and true, bringing sword to them signifies to bring all the means for exposure of the true nature of the negative state and for effectively combating and eliminating all their evils and falsities.

That a man would be put into a position to be against his father, in this connotation, signifies the following: A man denotes the original state of all those who activated the negative state, as well as all those who were fabricated originally from the energies and material which were separated from the energies and material taken out of the positive state. In those energies and material, as you remember, Peter, were encoded all necessary ingredients of My positive state and the presence in them of My genuine Nature. That this man was put into a position to be against his father signifies that, at one point in time, everyone in human life and in the life of the negative state will recognize how, why and by whom the negative state was activated and put into its pseudo-motion. This ‘how,’ ‘why’ and ‘whom’ is designated here by the word ‘father.’

That a daughter will be against her mother signifies that all former aspects of the nature of the negative state, subsumed by the name ‘evils,’ which by the process of activation and putting into dominance the life of the negative state were given birth, will rise against this arrangement and will dispense with the feeding source of their pseudo-lifestyle, designated here by the word ‘mother.’

That the daughter-in-law will be against her mother-in-law denotes that all derivatives and consequences of the birth of all evils will likewise dispense with everything related to their own feeding source, designated here by the word ‘mother-in-law.’

That 'a man's foes will be those of his own household' signifies here that, at one point in time, when everything related to the pseudo-life of the negative state will come to its fulfillment, and when the final learning about everything that is not true is completed, the realization will come to all participants in the negative state and in human life that what they considered to be the true life, that is to say their own life, designated here by the words 'his own household,' is, in actuality and factuality, not a true life but only an illusion and fraudulence of life. Therefore, the realization will come to everyone that their kind of life is man's worst enemy and foe. From the position of this most vital realization, the comparison of their pseudo-life and the true life of the positive state will be fully achieved and following that, everyone in the positive state and in the negative state and in human life will know with absolute certainty what the real truth is and what the non-truth is as well. This realization, based on this comparison, will lead to the final, most important choice — to choose only the life of the positive state and to choose complete rejection of anything contained in the pseudo-life of the negative state. By this act, the permanent elimination of the negative state will take place. Now everyone will know for sure that true life can and may originate only in the Absolute State — Me, the nature of which is absolutely positive. By knowing that, everyone will know what the Absolute State is all about. This is the true meaning not only of the quoted text, but among many other things, also the true meaning of My First Coming on planet Zero. Hence, the need to bring sword on this earth instead of peace. And this is the mentioned connection between your question, Peter, and the topic of our initial discussion.

Peter: Thank You very, very much for this meaningful and logical explanation. Is there anything else that You would like to talk about today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter. Just briefly: As you have been walking with our Lyudmila and by yourself in the streets of Moscow, and watching and observing its inhabitants, you have noticed a striking phenomenon. Looking at the faces of all the bywalkers, you realized that there was something very wrong with the expression of their faces and their eyes. At first, you couldn't put your finger on what you really saw in them. Then, it suddenly hit you that those faces and those eyes were utterly empty, as if they lacked any true life in them. They were totally dispirited, as if no spirit and soul were present in them. In other words, it was impossible for you to detect anything truly spiritual or positive in them. This phenomenon, observed by you, Peter, is a reflection of a total depletion of anything truly and genuinely spiritual in the lives of humans on planet Zero. Because you have been walking in the midst of

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

the city where the stronghold of the renegades was established, it is only logical to assume that deterioration and elimination of anything truly spiritual would occur first in this place. One of the many reasons for your visiting Moscow, was to bring this factor to your attention, Peter. Your experience in this respect, is an indication of how the entire humanity on planet Zero will end. Gradually, as My representatives and everyone positive, one by one, will be leaving this planet, no one will remain on it that will have any notion about anything truly spiritual or have even a desire or need to know it or to strive for it. The extreme factor of externalization and preoccupation with the material, monetary and physical aspects of their lives, will set in completely and will dominate their lives to the fullest possible extent. All remaining humans will become the way you have observed on the streets of Moscow, Peter.

This is a good illustration and demonstration of how the negative state could pseudo-win on planet Zero — one of the many possible scenarios. As My representatives, and everyone positive, one by one, will be leaving this planet by natural means, the only ones who will remain on it would be the agents of the negative state. Having no one any longer present on this planet from the positive state, and having all typical humans transmogrified into full-fledged agents of the negative state, together with all the original agents of the Hells, by the factor of the nature of their lifestyle, the negative state would fully establish its domain on this planet without any traces or signs of anything positive and good. In this status of its domain, the final learning about its nature, as a fully chosen lifestyle by everyone's free will and choice, would take place. Thus, it would reach its pinnacle beyond which nothing would exist that could be learned from it. It will be at that point in time that everything that we discussed in this Dialog, as well as in the Eighty Ninth Dialog, will come to its realization. Now, Peter, you are winding down your stay in Moscow, Russia; and soon, you will be embarking on your trip to Slovakia and the Czech Republic. For that reason, I would recommend that, with this Dialog, we finish our dialoging for now until an opportune time. Intuitively, you will know when to resume our dialoging. In the meantime, have a marvelous time here in Moscow with Lyudmila and Victor, as well as everywhere you'll go. I am with you.

Peter: Thank You so much, so much for everything, my Lord Jesus Christ.

Ninety First Dialog

July 22, 1999, Brno, the Czech Republic

Peter: Good morning from Brno, Moravia in the Czech Republic, my Lord Jesus Christ and everyone present.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Good morning to you, Peter, from all of us present.

Peter: Basically, I am checking in formally, so-to-speak, to see if there is anything that would be timely to reveal or to discuss or elaborate upon. However, I do have something on my mind related to the nature of the pseudo-creators *after* they became the pseudo-creators and established themselves as such. Of course, as always, before going into my own question, I am humbly asking whether You have anything to bring to our attention at this time.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for your kind offer. At this time, although I do have some issues that need to be discussed, it would be somewhat premature to do so due to the fact that you have not yet finished your mission in the Czech and Slovak Republics and you still have several meetings to attend with My representatives, situated in those two Republics, who are such either actually or potentially. Certain things and events need to occur in order to complete and close the one crucial and important phase of the currently ongoing shift which relates to your visit in Europe, Peter, before anything could be revealed in this respect. So, be patient and continue in your meetings with My people everywhere you go. For that reason, I would now recommend that you go ahead and ask your question.

Peter: As I was rereading some chapters in ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***, and thinking about other books of Your New Revelation, in which the issue of the nature of the pseudo-creators was raised, it occurred to me that, perhaps some discrepancy may exist between how the pseudo-creators were perceived or described in those books and how they are perceived and how we relate to them at the present time. As You know, in those books, the pseudo-creators were portrayed as the most evil, vicious, cunning, despicable, negative and putrid creatures who had nothing more in their mind than to take over the entire positive state and to destroy You and Your Government. However, for the first time in the ***Corollaries...***, as well as in these Dialogs, they don't seem to be portrayed that way anymore. Instead, they

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

are perceived as someone who, in essence, is in search of the Absolute Truth. Any comments on this seeming discrepancy?

The Lord Jesus Christ: I would like to comment on this issue gladly, Peter. It is a good question and it needs to be elaborated upon. In some way, it has a direct relevance to the issues discussed in the Eighty Ninth and Ninetieth Dialogs. As you remember, Peter, in those Dialogs a transcending understanding was offered to you and to all of you who read these Dialogs, on the absolute need to activate and put into dominance the pseudo-life of the negative state.

Let us look on this issue closer. Once again we are facing here the problem of relationship or relatedness to and understanding of the Absolute and all relatives to this Absolute.

As you remember from the aforementioned two Dialogs, from the position of the relatives, the knowledge of the Absolute, in its Absolute State and Process, is not possible in an absolute sense. And yet, in the state and condition of relativity of the sentient mind, there is a tendency and a need to somehow approximate this mysterious Absolute State. However, as you remember, at that time, or, to be precise, at that non-time, no grounds existed on which such approximation could take place. In order to build such feasible grounds you need to have some orientation points or, better to say, you need to have some comparison between something entirely different from what you have and what is familiar to you in order to find out or to establish everything which is not integral to the nature of your current state and condition or your life in general.

As you remember, the issue was whether the sentient life is really positive; that is to say, is the currently (at that time or non-time) experienced life really positive? Does it really derive from something which is Absolute and to which that life relates from its relative condition? If no other condition exists, how do you define what is positive? Against what state are you able to determine that your life is really positive? What does the term 'positive' contain? If no other type of life exists against which you can compare and define the true nature of your current life, then isn't it obvious that the term 'positive' in itself and by itself has no meaning or sense? How do you go about determining what is really positive and what is not so or such?

In order to answer this question, your first step in this respect is to classify the nature and content of life which you currently experience. Once you clearly establish all characteristics, traits, aspects, essence and substance of that life and everything else contained in that life; and once

you determine that your life is something that derives from some kind of Absolute State, the nature of which you are incapable of grasping in an absolute sense, you embark on the exploration of some other possibilities which are not contained in anything that you have or experience at the current state and process of your life. This is your second step. In this step you need to find out and to define what is not contained or is not integral to your current life.

The question here is: Can something exist at all which is not contained in the nature of your current life and, consequently, by association, is not contained in that Absolute State which generated the currently available life? In your classification and definition of everything contained in your current life, you came to the conclusion that, if your current life derives from the Absolute State, to which you are relative and by which you live and are alive, then, by the logical construct of this setup, everything that you classified and defined must be contained in that Absolute State with the only difference that in that State all those established characteristics of your current life are of the Absolute Nature, whereas in you or in your current life they are of the relative nature. Thus, in essence, you are nothing else but a relative approximation of that Absolute Life or State. From this established fact you now have the relative knowledge what the Nature of that Absolute Life or Absolute State is. However, you still lack any degree of knowledge, first of all, how it is or what it is to be Absolute and, secondly, what would life be like if it were not derived from that Absolute State?

The issue here is, in its true essence and substance, the need to have some tangible comparison which would assure that your current life is really what you think it is and that it is not some kind of imposed factor about which you have no idea whether it is truly real or imaginary.

So, at this point in time, you can ask yourself the following question: If the current life, which you had already classified and defined as the life which approximates in its relative condition the Absolute Life and its Absolute State and Process, then what kind of life could it be which would move in the opposite direction, away from this particular approximation? How far could one go by moving away from It? Would this moving away continue infinitely, without ever stopping and reverting back on itself or returning to its originating point and subsequently ceasing to be and to exist? Or, at one point in time, would it exhaust all its possibilities and give a clear answer to the question that no other type of life is possible but only the one which originated in the Absolute Life and its Absolute State and Process? What would happen, for example, if this movement would continue indefinitely, to eternity?

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Would it mean that this other type of life is likewise Absolute? Can it be or is it really absolute?

The paradox of this assumption is obvious. How is it possible to predicate about anything which moves in the opposite direction and which, by its very nature did not originate in the Original Absolute Life, from which the current life stems or is derived, that it is Absolute if it has never existed in itself and by itself but occurred as a reaction and opposition to something which has always been in Itself and by Itself without any beginning and ending? On the other hand, what would happen if, by any chance, this opposite movement were to continue to eternity, never ever stopping or exhausting all its possibilities? In that case, how could it be defined or designated?

However, there is another point to this issue. Should such possibility be feasible — moving away to eternity — then you would have no choice in the matter but to also conclude that this type of life, which moves in the opposite direction from the approximation of the Absolute Life and its Absolute State and Process, originated in the Original Absolute Life as well. In this conclusion the paradox is obvious: If both lives, mutually exclusive and moving away from each other, originate in the same Absolute Source, then, by the logic of this setup, they would cancel each other; and not only that, but in that case, by the factor of mutual cancellation and ceasing to be and to exist, they would also cancel the Absolute Life Itself. If something like that were to happen, in that case, no Absolute Life could exist at all because if the Absolute Life, by the logical definition of its Absoluteness, is truly Absolute, it cannot have any beginning or ending.

Therefore, by the logic of such a conclusion, in this sense, no Absolute Truth, or anything Absolute, would exist likewise. In that case the only thing that would be and would exist is relative to the relative only. For that reason life, any life, would have to have a tangible and experiential beginning and ending. If it were to be so, then Creation would not be the State and Process of the Absolute Creator, but a freaky and unplanned accidental occurrence without any intelligent and thought-out process which, at one point in time, because of its accidental and incidental occurrence, would cease to be and to exist forever.

As you see from these hypothetical constructs, originally, the issue here was the search for the Absolute Truth. Because the only possible way to begin this search is by moving in the opposite direction from the relative approximation from It, — after all, you are incapable of deriving anything Absolute from your relative condition — you establish a

lifestyle which doesn't contain anything of that of which your current life consists.

What you have to understand in this respect, Peter, is that the issue here was to find out whether it is possible to establish a lifestyle which would, paradoxically speaking, approximate the Absolute but in the opposite direction — by moving away from it and not toward it. This was and is a fundamental difference between the positive state, defined above as the original life stemming from the Absolute, and the negative state, respectively, defined as a subsequent life which originated in the minds of the relative beings without any connection to the Absolute. Thus, as you see from this difference, whereas everyone in the positive state moves infinitely toward the approximation of the Absolute, everyone in the negative state wants to approximate It by moving away from It.

How do you accomplish such a negative approximation? The only way you can do it is by becoming more and more as not like anything which is in the positive state or in the original life. By this time, of course, you have already classified and defined all aspects, traits, characteristics and everything else about your original life. From the position of this classification and definition, you now begin to produce everything that is the exact opposite to anything which is contained in your original life. As you are moving more and more away from the Original Source of your life, you become more and more different in all respects and in all aspects of your new life from the original life that you had up to that point. As you are establishing this other type of life, by its opposing factor, you become aware what that other type of life is not and, at the same time, you become clearly aware what your new life is like. In this setup now you have established a condition which gives you a possibility for a clear comparison between these two types of life. Now you established a foundation on which you can distinguish between the nature of the original life, defined as the positive state, and the other type of life, defined as the negative state.

In the positive state, by the process of continuous approximation of the Absolute Life and Its State and Process, as you move closer and closer toward it, you become more and more as and like that Absolute Life — Me. If I am the Absolute Love and the Absolute Wisdom and all its infinitely numerous Derivatives, then everyone who approximates Me and comes closer to Me becomes more and more like Me, that is, more and more loving and wise, having more and more of their derivatives.

On the other hand, in the negative state, by the process of continuous reversed approximation of My Absolute Life and all Its States and

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Processes, as you move more and more away from Me, in your search for everything that is not of Me and of My Absolute State and Process, in order to find out if it is possible to know anything different than that which is contained in Me, you become less and less like Me. And not only that but by opposing everything contained in Me and My positive state, you become more and more of that which is not contained in Me and My positive state.

So, if I am the Absolute Unconditional Love and Absolute Wisdom, the farther away you move in the opposite direction from Me, the more unloving and unwise you become. If I am the Absolute Good and Truth then, by the reversed approximation, you become more and more evil and false. And because all infinitely numerous derivatives of My Absolute Unconditional Love and Absolute Wisdom are of My Absolutely Positive Nature, as you move farther away from Me, in your evil and false lifestyle, you will reversibly approximate them so that all derivatives of your evils and falsities will become more and more negative to the point that they will be coming closer and closer to everything opposite which is contained in My True Nature.

Thus, in this sense, you may say that the more away you are from Me and My positive state, the less and less you will be as and like I am and the less and less you will have of that which is contained in My positive state.

And this brings us to the answer to your question, Peter. Basically, you can say that one of the many issues for the pseudo-creators was to find out how far they can go in becoming negative or as and like I am not and My positive state is not. Again, the question was: Is it possible at all that by the process of reversed approximation of My Absolute Life, a point could never be reached at which point their becoming more and more negative would exhaust all its possibilities and there would be nothing else after that point which would enable them to become even more negative, evil and false? If they could reach such a point, then it would prove beyond the shadow of a doubt that anything originated in the relative condition, cannot have life in itself and by itself and therefore, it could never be absolute or of the absolute. In that case, by the logic of this factor, the opposite must be true — all life must originate in the Absolute State — Me, in order to have no ending and no exhaustion of its usefulness and creativity. **And this is the Absolute Truth.**

So, as the pseudo-creators, by their own design, were becoming more and more negative, for the purpose of testing their hypothesis, as outlined above, they generated more and more characteristics which in My New

Revelation were designated as possibly the most evil, putrid, despicable and by similar adverse traits. In this respect they went as far as they were capable of. At the present time, they are finding themselves at a dead end, recognizing the fact that anything originating in the relative condition, without any relevance to anything Absolute, has no permanency, no continuation, no possibilities, no true creativity and no nothing (two negatives, please!).

Because of this factor and because, originally, the purpose of their becoming that way was solely for the establishment of that which is not of the Absolute and which is not true, and thus, obliquely, coming to the conclusion that Absolute Truth really exists, in order to reflect this situation with them, it was necessary to look at them in the **Corollaries...** and these Dialogs not as being your adversaries but allies in the search for the real truth. After all, all your lives, you all have been searching for this Truth — Me.

Before that, before the transcending understanding of the needs for the activation of the negative state, it was vitally necessary for you to acquire a proper knowledge about the genesis and nature of the negative state in all aspects of its abominable state and condition. Without such knowledge, you could never come to proper conclusions about its meaning, purpose and nature. In that case, not properly knowing about it and why it was permitted by Me to be activated, you would remain in distortions and falsities not only about the negative state but also about the positive state and My True Nature. For that reason, it was necessary first to show you the true face of the negative state in all its aspects, before anything else could be revealed in this respect. And because the pseudo-creators were the ones who agreed to become the embodiment of all and every abomination and putridity of the negative state, it was necessary to describe them and their deeds in such adverse terms and concepts.

However, at the present time, during the currently ongoing shift, as well as from the time Update 20 was recorded by you, Peter, the situation has fundamentally changed. As mentioned many times before, absolutely nothing is the same. The present situation in all worlds and universes, that is to say, in the multiverse, as well as in the Zone of Displacement and on your planet, requires that the real reasons for the permission of the activation of the negative state and for the true nature, position and role of the pseudo-creators in all of this be revealed and accepted by all of you who read these words.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

It is vital and crucial that, as My true representatives, you know the real truth behind all of this. Only with the truth in your minds and hands, symbolically speaking, will you be able to effectively survive in what is to come and to fulfill your mission to the satisfaction of all.

Peter: Thank You very much for this exquisite elaboration and revelation. Is there anything else You would like to contribute today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. The content of this Dialog is somewhat difficult. For that reason, I would postpone saying anything else until the opportune time. Intuitively, you will know when. In the meantime, have a marvelous time with My Czech and Slovak people. And now, go on the balcony and sunbathe for a while.

Ninety Second Dialog

July 28, 1999, in Prague, Czech Republic

Peter: As You know, during my visit in Slovakia, some of Your people were asking questions that may have multiversal significance. Perhaps, a few questions could be formulated at this time while I am still in Prague. Would You be willing to consider them? Of course, before that, is there anything at all that You would like to remind us about or elaborate upon first?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for asking Me to talk first. And yes, it is appropriate to ask one or two questions, as posed by Milan Schultz of Slovakia and others. However, let Me address, in the form of a reminder, some issues first. Something needs to be brought to your attention before going into answering one particular question. And although the issue that needs to be restated is very obvious from everything previously stated many times in My New Revelation, nevertheless, it is timely for it to be restated once more.

As you know, everything in the positive state, as well as in the content of all sources of My New Revelation, is in a continuous progressive mode. At each junction of any new phase of any shift, most of everything that was indicated or used before, may not be relevant or appropriate any longer following the crossing of this junction or making an appropriate, or even inappropriate, turn. For this reason, as you remember from Update 15, it was very strongly stated there, with great emphasis, that nothing in My New Revelation should become old — ever!

What does this statement signify or mean? First of all, it means that, as the spiritual progression is going on, all concepts, ideas, terms, principles, precepts, or whatever, contained in all three sources of My New Revelation, in their meaning and significance, trigger a different understanding and application accommodated to the nature of each particular time in the process of this spiritual progression. Secondly, it means that there is a continuous process of regeneration and renewal of everything contained in My New Revelation taking place which affects everyone and everything in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. And thirdly, that nothing in My New Revelation, in all its aspects, should ever be taken dogmatically and fanatically.

As you are aware, if the nature of something is in the state and process of continuous progression, it can never be fixed, unchangeable, dogmatic or

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

doctrinal because, otherwise, it would prevent any such progression to be progressive or to be in the process of moving onward and forward.

So, why are we talking about these obvious facts at this time, Peter? Well, look at this need this way: As you were discussing various important spiritual issues during your meetings with My people in Slovakia and the Czech Republic, you noticed a peculiar tendency of some of them to dwell on the methods and practices, the use of which was proper and appropriate at the time of their initial formulation and implementation but the use of which at the current state of affairs completely and totally exhausted its usefulness and served its purpose so that their relevance at this time is not only inappropriate but it is even spiritually dangerous. And yet, the questions you received about their use were indicative of the possible fact that the tendency might still be there to abide by their requirements.

The problem with this situation is that, if such a tendency with some of you still might exist, then certain requirements of the past, as contained in some statements in My New Revelation, especially in the ***Corollaries...***, were understood and applied dogmatically and not in a progressive and **here-and-now** mode. From a dogmatic approach it is only one step from being fanatical about anything contained in My New Revelation.

Of course, it was very appropriate to ask about the continuous validity of some of those requirements despite the fact that it should have been obvious from the nature of My New Revelation itself that they had only temporary usability and application until something better, newer and more appropriate would become available.

Take for example, the requirements of one previous phase of the past shift, the nature of which was the establishment of the need for individualized and personalized approach within the frame of My New Revelation and everyone's life (of those connected to My New Revelation). Because of that requirement, it was advisable for all of you not to congregate in one big group but to get together in twos or threes and not more. The reason for this requirement was that none of you at that time was on the spiritual level which would enable your ego states to be subsumed by your spiritual mind or not to be in the way of your mutual interactions. On the other hand, this requirement was also for the purpose that everyone of you would be anchored in your own individualized and personalized within where you could establish a very private, unique and intimate relationship with Me from which position you would be able to ask your own personal, intimate and relevant-to-

you-only questions and get your own personal, individualized and intimate answers relevant only to you as well.

Now, in some respect, the statement about the group gathering was possibly conceived by some of you in a dogmatic way. It was assumed that, from that time on, this will always be the case to eternity and, at the same time, that no more of any type of revelation would be coming from Me through Peter, for example, which would have a multiversal significance. And yet, as you don't remember, it was clearly stated there (Update 15, for example) that this situation will continue for a short period of time, or for some time, until something else would be accomplished and established.

As you see from this example, the negative state effectively blocked your memory from the true meaning of that which was stated there in this respect so that you would conveniently forget in what context the above requirement was made. This is a good example of how the human mind operates. Under the influence of the negative state, it takes into consideration one part of some statement, which best suits the current needs of its functioning, and disregards the other part which limits the applicability of the first part to a certain period of time beyond which its continuous application not only would become useless but could even be spiritually dangerous.

Should any statements in My New Revelation be taken dogmatically and fanatically, My New Revelation would become old very fast and consequently, useless. Nothing in it would remain that would have any meaning and significance. On the other hand, it is the utmost matter of your intuition and the wisdom of your spiritual mind to be able to distinguish between those statements of My New Revelation which have absolute validity, applicable for all times to eternity, from those which have only a temporary value. It is advisable that, at all cost, you are to avoid dogmatizing and immortalizing those statements which have such a temporary validity and applicability. By avoiding doing so, you will be able to receive new input into your understanding of everything contained in My New Revelation and in your own personal and individualized life. This will assure your continuous spiritual growth and progression. On the other hand, if you dogmatize such statements, that have only temporary validity, making them eternally applicable, you would effectively block yourself from proper understanding of the true meaning of everything contained in My New Revelation and thus, you would fall into the traps of the negative state, becoming negative. In that case, also, your intuition would atrophy into nothing and you would lose any connection with the true reality of My positive state and your own

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

integrated within. Of course, should anything of that nature happen, it would be futile to talk about integration of your within because it would realistically mean that you have never accomplished such an integration.

The integrated within signifies an all-out unification of all aspects of your life from the most within to the most without. In the state of such an integration, your intuition would very clearly indicate to you about anything that has a permanent validity and applicability and about that which doesn't have it. Otherwise, such distinction would not be possible.

Another extreme in understanding of some statements in My New Revelation, and especially in these Dialogs, is a tendency for a very broad generalization. A good example of this tendency is in the way a statement about black coffee was made. Because of the process by which the coffee beans are being processed and by that processing are being made black, some of you assumed that, because of the negative spiritual correspondence of the black color, any processing which turns some substances from some other, more pleasant color into the black one, such substances should be avoided likewise. Such statements should never be generalized as applicable to all chemical and other processes which convert and change colors or anything else for that matter.

Again, it was forgotten in what context that statement was made. It related solely to chemical substances that have a dangerous property to alter your consciousness, thus, effectively distorting and even falsifying the true perception of your reality and reality of everything else, especially the spiritual reality. Such mind-altering substances not only distort and falsify the proper perception of any reality but may put you in contact with demons/renegades who would appear to you as angels of light, giving you the false impression that you are in contact with My positive state. These mind-altering substances, to which strong black coffee and cigarettes also belong, became one of the most effective means for the negative state to adversely influence humankind in general and possibly even My representatives — if they continue in such practices. Because of these facts, you should never ascribe an all-inclusive applicability of something which is limited only to certain requirements that may have a damaging effect on how your mind functions and perceives any reality or pseudo-reality, and to anything else which doesn't have such an effect.

The danger of such improper perception is in the fact that, under the influence of such substances, a reversed perception may occur: The true reality may be perceived as a false one and the false reality as the true

one. This is the very purpose of the negative state to put you in such a reversed, or upside-down position.

At the same time, the tendency to improperly generalize the applicability of such statements can also be utilized by the negative state. In this case, because you would be afraid to use anything which was changed by some kind of process into a black substance, for example, but which doesn't have any ability to improperly alter your mind, your life would be full of unnecessary restrictions that would complicate your life even further. Any unnecessary restrictions and complications are always of the negative state. In that case, you would be under the influence of the negative state and you would be in the negative state. And you don't want that.

The above discourse is meant only as a reminder in order for you to avoid falling into a trap set up for you by the negative state, especially by the renegades. As always, rely on your intuition and in it, ultimately, on Me. That way you will know clearly how and to what extent and for how long anything at all is applicable, usable and valid. And this is all that I wanted to remind you of at this time. You may go ahead, Peter, and ask your question on behalf of Milan Schultz of Slovakia.

Peter: His question is a very interesting one and for him a very troubling one. It relates to Your requirement to use in fullness the words "The Lord Jesus Christ" whenever we address You or talk with You or about You amongst ourselves or in our private thoughts. He told me that he perfectly understands intellectually the need for doing it the way it is extensively explained in Your New Revelation (especially throughout the Big Book). However, he has difficulty in grasping why someone as You who is Absolute couldn't come up with some-kind-of one word for Your Name which would contain everything at all signified by the words "The Lord Jesus Christ."

The Lord Jesus Christ: It is not necessary to repeat what was said about this issue in ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***. The issue of mystical integration and all-inclusiveness, contained in those words, was properly conceived and explained. Milan's question is a very good one. However, his problem is, as well as everyone else's on your planet, that he looks at it from a typical human position. Of course, up to this point, no other position has been available to him, or to any one of you, from which you could or were able to relate to Me. Don't forget in what world or what condition you live in. What are the modes of communication amongst all of you? How do you convey something to anyone with whom you are in contact? You do it by specific words of your

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

language in which you speak. Either you say it with your mouth or write it down using the same expressions. Even when you think about Me or anyone else, when you address Me or anyone else in your mind, you silently use the same expressions in words by which you talk or write.

As you know, human expressive abilities and what they are capable of describing and containing are extremely limited. They are never able to fully express the total meaning and content of any reality or pseudo-reality available to them. This situation is even more obvious in expressing or describing something of a spiritual nature or of the positive state and of other dimensions, especially those that are of non-temporal and non-spatial nature. In order to bring to your human mind even remotely the understanding of something which is of a purely spiritual and multidimensional nature, it is necessary to describe it in many words because, from the position of your relativity, one word could not contain or explain or grasp the entire meaning of that which that nature contains or has. In this case, if you were to use only one word, that word, because of its relative and extremely limited nature, by its very limited meaning, would convey to you only a part of the whole but not the whole itself. In that case, you would make a judgment about the whole from its part. To make any conclusion from one part of the nature of the whole can and may lead to distortions and falsifications about the entire nature of that whole.

The problem in this case is that seeing things from the perspective of one part, splits that whole into fractions. By that split the whole loses its wholeness and becomes effectively disintegrated. This is the way things are on your planet and in the negative state as well. This is the way the human mind and creatures in the negative state function in general and how the life of the negative state is possible to maintain. If anyone in human life and in the negative state would be able to perceive and to describe things the way they really are in their totality and wholeness, no negative state and human life would be possible.

The problems with humans are that they are incapable of communicating in ideas, but only in words and/or pictures and/or in tangibly visible symbols. Because of that, whatever you need to convey to them from the position of non-human life, in this case, from the position of My positive state or from Me and about Me directly, you have to convert those ideas into their own mode of expression, perception, impression and understanding. As one full idea about anything in the positive state is being sent out to the human mind, in the process of its conversion, in order to have any impact on that mind, it splits into multiple words or pictures or symbols that convey to it its meaning and significance.

How do you convey something which is of Absolute Nature to someone who is of the relative nature? If I were to use only one word for My Name, as it would enter the relative mind, it would limit considerably and much further the understanding of who I am and what My Nature is. In order to give to the relative mind some approximation of My Absolute Nature, I have to accommodate Myself to the level of their receptive, impressive, perceptive and comprehensive ability. As I send out My One Idea about My “ABSOLUTE I AM,” as it enters the relative mind, it splits into several ideas which are better able to approximate what My Absolute Nature is all about. Subsequently, as those ideas are conveyed to the human mind, they are converted into words, pictures or symbols, which give My representatives some semblance of the true reality of My positive state and My True Nature.

The way you have to understand the reality of the positive state and the way they communicate amongst themselves and with Me is, that their communication takes place from mind to mind by the means of ideas. In the positive state the words “The Lord Jesus Christ” evoke one immensely beautiful and indescribable-in-human-words idea which contains the entire meaning and mystical connotation of the words “The Lord Jesus Christ.” Any time that this one idea enters their mind, they perceive and understand it as The Lord Jesus Christ. In this sense, they don’t perceive it as three words but as one singular idea which contains those three words and everything they mean and signify. However, as that particular idea is sent out to you — My representatives, because of the limitations put on you by the human aspects of your nature, as it descends down, it sounds in your mind as three words — The Lord Jesus Christ. These words subsequently evoke your ability to be connected not only to Me personally but to all aspects of your mind, as well as to all dimensions of the multiverse to which each one of you is connected.

As you see from this description, the human aspects of your mind, to which you are limited at the present time, have no other recourse but to use these three words — The Lord Jesus Christ — in order to evoke everything which enables you to be in a proper spiritual position with full connection to Me personally and to My positive state. At the same time, the reverse direction is also significant because it evokes the mystical connection between you and your world (planet Zero) and Myself and the true reality of the positive state. This connection makes it possible for everyone on your planet to be in their own mode of life or pseudo-life, respectively.

What happens here is that as you say the words “The Lord Jesus Christ,” as they ascend to Me and to everyone in the positive state, as well as

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

everyone in the negative state, in the positive state and in relationship to Me, they are converted into one immensely beautiful Idea, which contains the full meaning and significance of the three words “The Lord Jesus Christ,” connecting you to Me and My World. On the other hand, in the negative state, as those words enter there, they are converted into zillions of fractions by which they are able to maintain their own pseudo-life but also by which they are connected to Me for the purpose of their control and check so that they don’t exceed anything permissible and agreed upon before their pseudo-being and pseudo-existence came to their adverse fruition. At the same time, by your continuously sending out those three words — “The Lord Jesus Christ” — a favorable condition is being built in the negative state for the eventual conversion of everyone there to the positive state.

As you know, only through My New Nature and My New Revelation, as reflected and contained in those three words — “The Lord Jesus Christ,” from the position of planet Zero, as well as by those words, or to what they spiritually correspond and what they contain, can anyone be converted to the positive state. Because at this time no other means for this conversion exist, it is important that you continuously evoke My Name in three words — “The Lord Jesus Christ,” but with the idea in your mind that it is being always converted by Me, as it ascends to Me, into One Absolute Singular Idea which contains everything that I am and that I have in My Absolute Nature.

So, in answering Milan’s question, as long as you are in the human life, and as long as you use the external words of your respective language for communication, it is utterly impossible to express everything contained in My New Nature by one singular word. And not only that, but, because of the special condition which exists in human life in relationship between the Absolute and all relative humans to that Absolute, from the position of their relative condition, at this time, no other form of expression is possible at all. You would have to be either absolute yourself or, at least, out of the human life in order to express anything in one singular idea which would express everything contained in that Absolute.

In the positive state there is an approximation of that Absolute which allows all members of the positive state to perceive and to apprehend that Absolute as One Singular Idea projected into three aspects in such a way that it is registered in their mind as an integrated and unified Whole expressed in a multimodal and multidimensional projection imparted on all its inhabitants at the level and degree of their spiritual development. Because of that, although they do have an impression of

the idea which contains these three aspects, represented at your level as the words “The Lord Jesus Christ,” nevertheless, they don’t see it as something which has three distinct beings and existences but as something that unifies all and everything. In that sense, when you say at your level “The Lord Jesus Christ,” everyone in other dimensions, connected to you, doesn’t hear them as three different words but as one unified and integrated Whole, in which the Absolute is contained in an absolute condition and sense.

Because of this setup, what would happen, if, *after* I acquired My New Nature in its Absolute Condition and State, you would say only one word, such as for example, “The Lord,” or “Jesus,” or “Christ,” or any other one singular word by which you would want to address Me or relate to Me? In that case, you would fail to establish the proper connection either with Me or with anyone in the positive state to whom you are connected and especially to the members of the New Universe, whose nature is rooted in My New Nature as expressed by the words “The Lord Jesus Christ.” As that one word, expressed from your relative condition, would try to ascend to their level, they would register it as an empty notion without any meaning. It couldn’t evoke anything significant or needed in order to have any impact on them or on you. As you see from this situation, at the present time, your connection to Me and to everyone in the positive state is, in a very special, mysterious and mystical way, executed by the use of the words “The Lord Jesus Christ,” and by anything contained in My New Revelation founded and built on those three words and what they contain. I can assure you that the fullness of My New Revelation would not be possible without My New Nature and thus, without The Lord Jesus Christ. Remember that!

However, there is another point to this issue. It relates to the negative state and human life. Previously, before the Twenty Fourth Dialog was recorded by you, Peter, anything contained in My New Revelation and any time you said the words “The Lord Jesus Christ,” as all that descended to the negative state, it was split and disjointed into a multitude of fractions and transmogrified into pure distortions and falsities in the same manner as those words in the positive state were unified, integrated and transformed into One Beautiful Idea, which contained the entirety of the content of My New Revelation as well as of My New Nature and conveyed to the level of everyone’s spiritual development and progression. However, this situation changed entirely from that time. As you remember from that and subsequent Dialogs, at the present time, when you read My New Revelation in all their three sources, and as you say the words “The Lord Jesus Christ,” those words

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

and what they contain sound in My Voice in their minds without any distortions or falsities.

In this case, what would happen if you were to limit yourself to one singular word, especially as related to My Name? It would instantly reestablish the old ways of distortions and falsifications and no one in the negative state would be able to hear Me any longer. The reason for this fact is because you would be talking from the position of separation, disunion and disintegration and thus, in an ultimate sense, from the position of the negative state. In that case, you wouldn't be eliminating the negative state but reinforcing its pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. And as you know, the only way to eliminate the negative state is by the means of My New Nature which is reflected in the words "The Lord Jesus Christ" and in everything contained in My New Revelation. Of course, there are many other reasons why from the position of all relative beings it is necessary to retain the expression "The Lord Jesus Christ." However, these reasons are either of the absolute nature, which could not be comprehended and apprehended by any relative mind, or they are premature to reveal. The latter ones will become obvious at some other time, when conditions will be such that they would allow shedding further light on this spiritually important issue.

Peter: Thank You very much for this revelation. I hope that Milan will be satisfied with Your answer, at least to some degree.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. As far as satisfaction is concerned, it is necessary to restate the principle of modesty, humbleness and humility. One has to learn to be thankful and grateful for what is available and utilize it to its fullest potentials instead of craving for more or something different. As you remember, it was indicated to all of you previously, that if you have some questions and the answers for them are not forthcoming, it only means that at this particular time they would not serve any spiritual benefit for you or anyone else. For that reason, as you know so well, everything has its own time and place. It is a sign of true wisdom, maturity and humbleness to be satisfied with whatever answers you receive at each particular time.

Peter: I understand, and I fully accept this necessity. Again, thank You very much for everything. Is there anything else that You would like to convey to us today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Not today, Peter. I think it is enough for now. Go in peace.

Ninety Third Dialog

August 2, 1999, in Prague, Czech Republic

Peter: This morning I would like to continue in presenting for Your consideration questions asked during my visits in Slovakia and the Czech Republic, if I may. However, before formulating these questions, perhaps You would like to discuss some other spiritual or practical, or whatever, issues that need to be brought to our attention.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for asking Me to talk first. Of course, you may continue in asking questions on behalf of those who presented them for My consideration. However, before going into that, something else needs to be reminded or brought to your attention.

As you remember from one of the previous Dialogs, it was indicated to you all that during this phase of the ongoing shift, it is vital and crucial to reevaluate and redefine all concepts, ideas, words, and expressions commonly and uncommonly used by all of you. It is not that much that you need to replace their old or current meaning as to realize that they do contain something else besides what you thought they meant or signified up to this point. In the previous Dialogs, we have already redefined some of the most common expressions and words used in your language.

Today I would like to bring to your attention some other words that you use so often in your daily expressions and during the reading of My New Revelation. Because in the previous Dialog the question was about three words by which I am Named and why I am Named by these three words — The Lord Jesus Christ — it is necessary to acquire a transcending understanding what they really mean and signify.

There are several positions in the multiverse, as well as in the Zone of Displacement and on planet Zero, from which these three words are apprehended and have a subsequent impact on all in My Creation, in the pseudo-creation and on planet Zero. Not all aspects of these positions could be grasped by the human mind or by any relative sentient mind. They are of the Absolute Nature. However, this Absolute Nature can be approximated by the relative sentient mind.

Each particular word in this triad has relevance to the two levels of its significance. One relates to all sentient beings everywhere and everywhen and the other relates to Me personally and to My Absolute Nature.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

In relationship to all sentient beings, the word “Lord,” among many other things, denotes One Absolute Fundamental Principle by which and through which any life is possible and feasible. It signifies the fact that any life at all, no matter of what type or non-type, is grounded and anchored in this One Absolute Principle. By it and through it everything and everyone is unified and has its own meaning and place in being and existence, as well as in pseudo-being and pseudo-existence and on planet Zero. In relationship to Me personally the word “Lord” signifies the Absolute Oneness of Godhood that has no beginning and ending and that is of non-time and non-space and is not only present in non-time and non-space but makes any such states and processes, or anything else for that matter, possible. It is something that in its true nature is incomprehensible and cannot be named by any human or non-human words, ideas, symbols and expressions.

The word “Jesus,” in relationship to all sentient beings, among many other things, signifies the beginning and ending of each cycle of time and a permanent positioning, in the progressive mode, of all sentient beings at various levels, degrees, steps, dimensions, etc., of the entire multiverse, the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero. It also enables the being and existence of uniqueness, individualization and personalization of each and every living and breathing entity everywhere and everywhen. In relationship to Me personally, the word “Jesus,” among many other significant things, denotes My personal and unique presence in each and every individual, or, better to say, that each and every individual, by being such an individual from My unique element, by which that individual is what he/she is, is present in Me and I in him/her. Thus, in this sense, the word “Jesus” also means that all are in Me and I am in them. Because all are in Me, I am the only One who Always Absolutely Is in Myself and by Myself.

The word “Christ,” in relationship to all sentient entities, among many other most significant things, means the very ability of being sentient or being someone who comprehends, understands and is able to know. The ability to know and self-know or sentiency itself is enabled by that which is contained in the word “Christ.” In this sense, you can conceptualize it as the beginning and ending of all and every knowledge and, most importantly, the knowledge of self. The knowledge of self is the foundation on which all other knowledge is possible and conceivable. In relationship to Me personally, the word “Christ,” among many other things, signifies that I am the only One Who Truly Knows. In this sense, you can say that I am the Knowledge in Myself and by Myself. If I were not to be and to exist, no Knowledge would be and exist as well. I AM

WHO I AM and there is none besides Me. This is what the word “Christ” in relationship to Me truly signifies or denotes.

Now, from the position of the Absolute, as indicated in the previous Dialog (92), these three words are in the state and process of One Singular Absolute Idea. They are in the condition of absolute unification, integration and oneness. They are not perceived as something disjointed or separated or different from one another or disunited. However, from the position of any relative sentient mind, the need to emphasize these three most important aspects of this Absolute Oneness, in order that these words enter their minds on the level of their relativity, they need to be split into the three words, which are able to convey or to evoke the proper perception and meaning of their true reality. Subsequently, as anyone is repeating these three words, by the process of their mystical power, they place everyone who says them, not only in the reality of their own individualized and personalized being and existence but, most importantly, into Me, and, at the very same time, receiving Me into themselves. By this process, they are able to sustain their sentiency and their own reality rooted in their “I am.”

From these facts, it is obvious why the need for the three words exists and why you should continue to use all three words — The Lord Jesus Christ — at all times during your stay on planet Zero and elsewhere. And this is all that needs to be revealed about this issue **at this time**. You may go ahead, Peter, and ask the mentioned questions.

Peter: Thank You very much for this explanation. In actuality, the first question, which was posed by Ján Béréš of Slovakia, has a direct relevance to the above-discussed issue. It can be formulated as follows: If You are Absolute and if You Are and Have Absolute Knowledge of everything and everyone, and if that Knowledge is not space-time bound but is of a non-temporal and non-spatial nature; and if that Absolute Knowledge really contains everything at all; and if, in an ultimate sense everyone is in You and You in them, then, in that case, it would also contain everything of the negative state and its nature. And yet, by the logic of the nature of the Absolute, if that Absolute is of the Absolute Positiveness, then, in that case, it cannot contain anything of the negative nature or have anything negative within itself. How do you reconcile this paradox?

The Lord Jesus Christ: The answer to this question should be obvious from everything contained in My New Revelation. You have to distinguish between something that is absolutely positive and that which is relative to that positive. In the initial setup, everything is positive in

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

its nature. As you know, the One Who is Absolutely Positive has the only recourse or ability to define what is really positive. Once you define in relative terms what positive really is, in order for the relative mind to understand what it means to be positive, you also have to define what positive is not. It is not that much that you have to concretely define what it is or how it looks like or feels like to be something else but positive; but it is more like defining precisely what it is to be positive and exclude everything else by the simple logical factor that it doesn't exist. The logical conclusion in this respect is that everything which doesn't exist and therefore, is not contained in that which was defined as positive, cannot be positive. Otherwise, it would be contained in that positive.

Now, when the relative sentient mind, as it was relatively separated from My Absolute State for the purpose of establishment of its own independent, free and choice-making state and process, searched for that which was not contained in that Absolutely Positive, by the factor of definition of that positiveness, and by the factor of knowledge that anything at all which was not contained in it, must be something else; but that it also is defined by that Absolutely Positive, it established a lifestyle that became the negative state.

Because in an ultimate sense, this negative state is derived from the relative condition, even though its definition is established from the original definition of what the positive state is, by the factor of what it is not, and by the factor of that One Who defines what the positive state is and is not, that One has also the absolute knowledge of what the nature of the negative state is. To have such knowledge does not mean to be in that which that knowledge describes.

You have to distinguish here between having something, experiencing something and being an initiator or originator of something. The Absolute State knows everything about everything, including about that which is of the relative nature. However, to have this knowledge, doesn't mean to be an initiator or originator or **container** of that which is the subject of that knowledge.

As you know, in order for the negative state to be initiated, its originators needed to separate themselves from Me, thus, effectively, turning away from Me by no longer facing Me. In a symbolical way, you may say that they went behind Me (go behind Me, Satan!). If they were to continue to face Me, in no way could they initiate the negative state. To face Someone who is Absolutely Positive, precludes existence of anything else but something which is positive and of that positive.

During the process of this separation, the initiators of the negative state excluded themselves from being in Me. However, I still remained in them — otherwise they could not live — but now turned away from facing them or being in the back of them where they couldn't see Me or discern My presence and where I was not influenced by their deeds. Because they positioned themselves in the back of Me, and because I could not face them face to face, whatever they were fabricating, it eluded My direct perception and influence, thus, making such fabrications possible to become their own pseudo-reality. It is said that their fabrications eluded My direct perception and influence. The reason for this statement is in the fact that My presence in them — in their ability to choose and to change — was aware of everything that they were doing without any interference or preventive measures from doing whatever they were doing at that time. The position and direction of that presence in them was such that it would not allow Me or give Me an opportunity to prevent the activation of the negative state. As you know, from the position of My Absolute Freedom, I could not impose on them anything contrary to their asking for My intervention.

However, there is another important issue in this respect. It relates to something which was described in the Law of Spiritual Reality (Chapter 10 in ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***). As you remember from the content of that Law, in actuality and factuality, there is only one reality — the reality of My positive state which derives from the Absolute Reality of My Being and Existence. In this sense, My Absolute Reality is the only true being and existence, which enables the being and existence of anything else. Because of this fact, the so-called reality of the negative state is, in fact, non-reality and in the true reality it doesn't exist. As you remember from the previous Dialogs, it was indicated there that the negative state has an appearance of reality but not the true reality. Because of this appearance, it is only an illusion which cannot be registered in the true perceptive and self-perceptive spectrum of the genuine being and existence. Due to the fact that, symbolically speaking, the negative state, and everything it contains, is behind Me, it cannot enter Me or My Absolute Reality. For that reason, from the position of the Absoluteness of My Absolute Positiveness, in My Absolute Perceptive, Impressive and Receptive Realization, it doesn't exist either. Anything that is derived from the relative state, and thus, is relative to the relative only and, thus, by its nature is transient and temporary, cannot be contained in anything Absolutely Positive. Therefore, in this state, for all practical purposes, it doesn't exist, or, at least it cannot be registered in anything which contains the only true reality.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

The problem with this situation about the negative state is or was that, in this condition, because the negative state is or was behind Me, without My presence in its pseudo-reality or non-reality, nothing could be done about its appearances and the way its illusion impinges itself on the perception of those who believe it to be the true reality. If you believe in your illusions as having their own reality, it will appear that way to you and you would not consider it anything else but the true reality.

This situation created a considerable problem for everyone in being and existence as well as in the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. The problem in this respect is that if the negative state cannot be contained or be perceived as the true reality in My Absolute State, and if the negative state is behind Me, then, in that case, I am unable to do anything about its elimination. In order to eliminate something, you have to assume that it is real. Otherwise, there is no need for such an elimination. After all, if the negative state is not a part of My Absolute Reality, and if, for all practical purposes, it doesn't exist in any true reality, then, logically speaking, there is nothing to eliminate.

So, how do you go about rectifying this situation? You have no recourse but to enter that pseudo-reality and illusion of reality and clothe yourself with its appearances. By that factor, for that moment, in its own sphere, it does become real and tangible. Now you can grasp what it is all about and include it in your perceptive spectrum so that it becomes registered in your full awareness not as something theoretical or hypothetical but experiential and realizable, and something that has impact on your life. From that position, you can now do something about removal of this illusion that plagues the sentient mind, trying its worst to convince it that it is real or that it has the only true reality.

This is the reason why I Myself had to enter the negative state, via human life, and experience all its aspects and all its illusions and insanity and everything else it contained in its illusional and delusional non-reality. As you know, during My stay on your planet and in the Zone of Displacement, the major effort of all rulers and inhabitants of this illusional world, was to convince Me, through all kinds of temptations, that the negative state is as real or even more so than the positive state. If I were to acknowledge the negative state's pseudo-reality and its illusion as the true reality and the true being and existence, by the fact that My acknowledgement would be coming from My Absolute State as the only Absolute Reality, I would turn the negative state into the true reality. In that case, I would have to admit it into Myself and internalize it. What would happen in that case? In the terms of your physics, it would be like combining matter and anti-matter in one container. Such a

combination would end in a spectacular explosion that would annihilate not only the negative state but also the positive state and My Own Absoluteness. As a result, the entire Creation would cease to be and to exist as well. Such an ending would be inconceivable, impossible and inconsistent with My True Nature.

From everything that was said about this problem and about My Absolute Knowledge of everything that is and is not, because of the seeming reality of the negative state, and because of its non-reality, originally, it could not be registered in My Absolute Reality. Thus, in human terms, you can say that the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the negative state, at the time before its activation, didn't enter My Mind.

Do you remember My statement recorded in one of the prophets in the Bible (prophet Jeremiah) when I was rebuking the children of Israel about their coming up with some abominable practices that had never entered My Mind? At that time, they were practicing human sacrifices to the demons. What do you think the mentioned Biblical text was all about? It was describing the fact that the negative state, represented here by the demons and the children of Israel, had never entered My Mind and that I had never conceived or had in Me anything related to the activation and establishment of the negative state. How can anything that is only an illusion be initiated in something that has the only Absolute Reality? From true reality nothing of unreality can be derived. It doesn't enter the Absolute Sentient Mind which is the only true reality. By its nature, this Mind does not contain anything even remotely related to anything of the illusional and unreal nature.

However, in the relative sentient mind, because of its inability to grasp the fullness and completeness of the Absolute State, and because of its needs to understand what the true reality is all about, it may and can initiate something that is not of the true reality. From the position of the relative condition, the only way to understand what the true reality is all about, is by the oblique way through establishing of something which is not real. This gives the relative sentient mind an ability to compare that which is real to that which, in its essence and substance, is unreal. A better way to say it, in its non-essence and non-substance, is it is unreal. The reason for this oblique way of coming up with the right conclusions about anything is in the fact that the relative sentient mind cannot take any position which would enable it to perceive everything from the Absolute State. For that reason, it has to arrive at any conclusions by comparing something which is true with something which is not so. In this case, by comparing what is real with that which is unreal. The

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

process of the establishment of this non-reality and its actual realization, in order to succeed, must always happen outside of the Absolute Sentient Mind. Otherwise, it could not happen. Thus, the statement, '*it has never entered My Mind.*'

Peter: Thank You very much for this explanation. Should I continue in presenting for Your consideration some other questions or should we postpone them to some other time?

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. My recommendation would be to postpone it to some other time. This Dialog is also a difficult one. As you noticed from today's work, you had to interrupt the recording of this Dialog several times because of visitors and other things which needed to be taken care of. So, go in peace and we'll resume our Dialogs in a more opportune time. You'll know when.

Ninety Fourth Dialog

August 5, 1999, Prague, Czech Republic

Peter: This morning I would like to continue in presenting to You some other questions as posed by Marko Mihálik and my brother Ivan. However, I would like to yield to You first should You have anything to contribute for our consideration this nice and sunny morning.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for yielding this time to Me so that I could talk first. Yes, it is proper and timely to respond to the questions posed by Marko and Ivan. However, before we go into answering their questions, I would like to return to the topic of the Ninety Third Dialog, which, among other things, dealt with the issue of My foresight and awareness of the nature of the negative state and whether it was within Me; as well as with the issue of how really real the negative state and human life are, as seen or experienced from the position of My Absolute Reality and the reality of the positive state or the true Creation.

As you remember, it was indicated in that Dialog that, for all practical purposes, in the true reality of the positive state or in My Creation, it is as if the negative state doesn't exist at all. From their position, the negative state, and its end product — the human life, is only an illusion and appearance of the true reality but not reality in itself and by itself.

As you also remember, this perception of the negative state and human life created a considerable problem for all concerned with the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the negative state and human life. The problem was in the fact, that if the negative state and human life are not contained at all in the true reality of being and existence, and if for all practical purposes it doesn't exist, then how do you go about its elimination? And not only that, but how can you learn anything about that other pseudo-life, other than the life of the positive state, if in reality it is only an illusion and appearance of the true life?

Do you see from this question a serious philosophical and spiritual dilemma which this situation established?

Peter: Yes, very clearly. And I am wondering: How was this dilemma resolved?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, here comes the issue of My incarnation into the human life and via it into the negative state or other regions of

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

the Zone of Displacement. The pseudo-existence of human life, in the scheme of events of any life, can be conceived as a blink of an eye. In the reality of the eternal life and its eternal continuation, from the position of its discreteness, in a non-time and non-space setup, anything of the nature which is equated with the human life, its continuation doesn't last longer than a blink of an eye.

However, when you are inside of the linearity of that one blink, within its own occurrence, for those who are positioned within that blink, the time flow is so slow that it seems to all participants in it as though it has always been and it always will be. This condition needed to be established in order to give humans a sense of their own reality and continuation. And not only that but, as you know from the nature of human life, the impression which was given to humans was that no other reality exists at all or if it does, it is no different than what they have and experience.

Consider this fact: There are millions of humans, for example, who claim very seriously that no other life exists at all but only the human life; and that following anyone's death, the life for that one ceases to be and to exist and that one no longer has any chance to continue in his/her life somewhere else. Another extreme in this case is a claim that humans continuously reincarnate on this planet into the human life in order to continue in their human life. Still, another extreme was proposed by Swedenborg, when he seriously claimed that anyone at all who lives in the spiritual world, at some time or another, was in human life and that therefore, humans are seedlings from which all other creatures in the positive state are derived.

So, as you see from this example, humans are in a very peculiar position which doesn't allow them to physically see or hear or perceive the being and existence of the positive state or of any other dimensions as well as any places and states of the Zone of Displacement and its Hells. As you know from My New Revelation, humans were purposefully isolated into their own pseudo-life so that no direct physical contact was made available to them with anyone or anything else elsewhere — outside of the human life. This was a necessary arrangement in order to illustrate the nature of life which has no tangible and concrete perception of any other type of life or pseudo-life.

But let us go back to the issue of non-reality and illusion of human life and the negative state in general. How do you connect anything at all in the positive state and in My Creation in general to the pseudo-reality of human life and the negative state in order for any learning about its

nature and what never to choose to occur? As you remember from the ***Corollaries...***, it was indicated there that anything which is taking place in the human life and in the negative state in general is completely incomprehensible to them because it is like hieroglyphs to them. No wonder that it is like hieroglyphs to them, without any meaning, if the negative state and human life, in fact, are only an illusion and appearance of the true reality but not reality in itself and by itself.

In order to circumvent this situation, as you remember, throughout the entire history of the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the negative state and human life, I have continuously maintained My special agents — all of you who read these words and all other agents of My positive state, who functioned as translators for My positive state of everything which has been happening or has been taking place within that blink of an eye — which is the human life and the negative state. By this function of all My translators, the pseudo-reality of the negative state and human life was brought to the attention of all in My Creation in such a manner as if it was the true reality as well. By this factor, and by this ability, by the means of this continuous translation, all in My Creation could learn everything that they needed to learn about the nature of the negative state and human life. This is how the problem with the non-reality of the negative state and human life was resolved.

However, in this setup, non-awareness of the true reality of the positive state and My Creation in general continued to plague those who were situated in the negative state and in the human life. And not only that, the translation was directed to all others in My Creation but not directly to Me personally. Only indirectly was I in contact with the negative state and human life by the means of My being in those who were continuously receiving this translation. This situation was a serious liability because it didn't allow Me to directly control and direct the destiny of all those who trapped themselves in the negative state and in human life. As you know, originally, the control and government of the pseudo-reality was given to those who established the negative state and human life.

On the other hand, as long as I had no direct participation in anything related to the negative state and the human life, for all practical purposes, in My Absolute Reality, they continued to be unreal — as if non-existent. As you remember, the negative state and its end product — the human life, were outside of Me or, symbolically speaking, behind Me. Should this situation continue indefinitely, or should I allow the negative state and the human life to stay in relationship to Me as it had been originally and initially, they would stay in their pseudo-reality indefinitely likewise. In that case, everyone who was situated in them,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

would be locked in their pseudo-reality forever without ever being able to recognize the illusion and appearance of their so-called reality. And not only that, but they would continue to be totally ignorant of anything at all which is contained in the positive state or in My true Creation in general.

The translators were translating from the position of the negative state and human life and they were illustrating the nature of their pseudo-life by their own examples. For that reason, by and large, they could not very well convey to humans and other creatures of the negative state what the positive state or My true Creation were all about. In truth, humans and other creatures of the negative state were totally ignorant about anything related to the positive state and My Creation in general. From their position, before My incarnation into the human life, they assumed that the positive state either didn't exist at all or its nature was exactly the same as of the negative state and human life. And not only that, but they had no awareness that they were in the negative state.

As you are aware from previous Dialogs, it was indicated there that, in order for the negative state and its human life to have a chance to prove its point and to establish its own brand of pseudo-life, for the purpose of comparison, it was necessary to eliminate any memories about how things were in the positive state or that even the positive state existed at all; and if it existed at all, it was no different from the life of the negative state and the human life.

To rectify this situation, and to establish a condition under which the pseudo-reality of the negative state and human life could be eliminated once and for all, and everyone in it could be saved, it was necessary for Me personally to enter human life.

Why was this necessary at all? Take into consideration this factor: In the true reality of My Absolute Being and Existence, because of its Absolute Positive Nature, nothing of the negative nature could be contained or experienced in Me. However, the relative beings initiated this negative state and human life. And not only that but they volunteered not only to establish the negative state and human life themselves but they also agreed to forget that initially they were of the positive state themselves and also what the positive state looks like or is like. Because they could not remember anything about these facts, and because the function of the translators was different than to bring these facts to their attention — after all, the translators themselves didn't know why and how the negative state and human life were activated and put into their own pseudo-being and pseudo-existence — it was necessary for someone who

knew and remembered about all these things to bring all these factors to everyone's attention.

As you know, I was the only one, and none other, Who knew and remembered everything about our mutual agreement and about My promise that this situation with the negative state and human life would be rectified in an opportune time. Now, the reason why it was not possible to accomplish this work from the position of My Old Nature, was because, as you remember, in My Absolute State and its Absolute Positive Reality, the negative state and human life didn't exist. How could you do anything about them if they are not a part of your perceptual and experiential awareness and containment? For this reason, in order to fulfill My promise to all about this situation, I agreed to become a typical human Myself so that I could experience the nature of human life and the negative state in their completeness and fullness and also that I would be able to experience physically and factually the life of the negative state and human life exactly the way humans and creatures of the negative state do. Only by such an experience, the pseudo-reality of the negative state and human life could become as real to Me as to humans and creatures of the Zone of Displacement.

If I were to experience human life and life of the negative state from some other position but theirs, or from the position of My Old Nature, as you remember, it would mean to admit into My Absolute Positiveness something which is not of that positiveness. In that case, by their mutual exclusion, everything would perish. In order to avoid this most undesirable and ungodly-like outcome, it was absolutely vital that I would become a regular human and as a human would recognize and acknowledge the pseudo-reality of the negative state and human life as real. Notice, please, that I did so as a human and not as God. From the position of God, such experience would cause the total annihilation of everything human and of the negative state because nothing of the negative nature could survive the presence of God Who is Absolutely Positive.

This is the reason why I had to clothe Myself with human nature which contained all evils and falsities, or illusions and appearances, and from that position I could begin the process of incorporation and fusion of the human nature into My Godly Nature. Following its purification and cleansing from all evils and falsities, as you know, by the means of My Human Nature I acquired My New Nature which enabled Me to see, to hear, to sense, to perceive, to feel and to control all and everything that has been and will be happening in the negative state and the human life. Now the negative state and human life are as real to Me as to them.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

From this position, I will be able, when the time is right, to eliminate the illusion and appearances of the negative state and human life and to bring everyone out of them, placing them back where they belong — in My positive state. And this is all that I wanted to contribute this morning.

The topic of the above discourse has a direct relevance to Marko's and Ivan's questions. Go ahead, Peter, and ask their questions.

Peter: Marko is asking about the meaning of Your words which, at one point, You said to Your disciples: *'And I gave you My example...'* He wants to know what exactly You meant by those words. Ivan's question relates to Your behavior and rebuke which You expressed to Your disciples when You warned them to be aware and to beware of the leaven of Pharisees. They interpreted Your warning not spiritually but literally, thinking that You were rebuking them for not remembering to buy bread for their physical sustenance. It was at this point that You almost got angry at them for not understanding about the spiritual significance of Your warning, reminding them about two cases of miraculous feeding of several thousand humans during Your teaching them about the reality of Your positive state and healing them from their infirmities. Any comment on these two issues?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Let us consider Marko's question first. The answer to his question could be derived from everything that has been revealed so far in the three sources of My New Revelation and your books preceding them, Peter; also from what was revealed above.

Consider this factor: How do you bring to the attention of someone who has no knowledge, no discernment and no nothing about the nature of the positive state or how things are in the positive state? Remember, please, that no one, including My disciples, had any true knowledge or understanding about anything related to the true reality and nature of the positive state. At that time, the only thing they had was ritualistic and external procedures, as recorded in Moses' law, which gave them some direction of how to be, how to behave and what to do. However, the content of that law was far away from the true reality of the positive state which is anchored in everyone's internals and not in the externals as that law prescribed.

Another point in this respect was that Moses' law contained important spiritual correspondences and symbolism which reflected the true reality of the positive state, differentiating between what the true reality was from what the non-reality of the negative state was. However, at that

time, no one had the key or even the remotest knowledge that anything of the internal, spiritual nature was hidden or contained in that law. As you know, it was not until Swedenborg wrote his *Arcana Coelestia*, when the secrets of correspondences, contained in Moses' law, were explained, or one of their aspects was revealed, that their meaning was made available to you. At the time of My incarnation on planet Zero, when I clothed Myself with the human nature, the state of extreme externalization was the prevailing mode of life. No one knew anything about the state of internals and that the true reality of the positive state, or the Kingdom of God, is within everyone and not without everyone.

Under those conditions, because of the external factors which ruled human life, the only way you could convey to humans anything about anything was by behavioral external examples. This is the only way anything is understandable to anyone whose life is rooted in the state of externals. Don't ever forget about one important fact: The true reality of the positive state or My Creation in general is anchored in the state of everyone's internals. Do you remember how the negative state was activated and thus, how the illusions and appearances did come to their adverse fruition? They came about by receding from the arrangement of the true reality of My Creation and, symbolically speaking, by stepping outside of the state of internals, turning their back on them, and placing everything and all values into the state of externals. And because in the true reality externals do not exist, it was necessary to fabricate an illusion and appearance as if they do exist. Once you situate yourself in their position, they become for you the only reality you know. In that moment you will close any access to your internals and because of that, you simply deny that anything internal even exists.

During My incarnation on planet Zero, it was necessary for Me to begin from the position in which human life was vested — from the externals. In that position, the only thing that anyone would be able to understand anything about anything, was by the way I behaved toward them and especially toward My disciples. By My behavior, I was setting an example for them of what it is and how it is to be positive, showing them the way to their internals and, thus, to My positive state. Hence, *'I gave you My example or an example or examples'* how to be, how to think, how to feel, how to will, how to behave and how to relate to others and to themselves.

That it was a tremendously difficult task for anyone to accomplish, including My disciples, and to acquire the proper understanding of the true spiritual reality, rooted in their internals, was very obvious from the event Ivan's question relates to. What was happening here? On two

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

previous occasions, as I was teaching and healing the multitude, I asked My disciples to feed those people physically. All day they were fed spiritually but by the late afternoon, they also became hungry physically. In order to restore the proper balance, I indicated to My disciples that it was necessary to provide for them some physical or external sustenance. Because the gathering of that multitude happened far away from any inhabitable place where they could buy some food, in fact, it happened on a desert, it was necessary to feed them right on the spot where they were. And yet, as you remember, only a few loaves of bread and some small fish were available for their feeding. So, as I asked them to position themselves in an orderly fashion, I blessed that bread and that fish and gave them to My disciples and they distributed them amongst all the people who were with Me in the desert. Not only were they all fed, but still several baskets of bread remained and were gathered. This event has a tremendously important spiritual significance. Of course, it eluded not only My disciples, but everyone present. A special connection between the internals and externals, or between the reality of the positive state and illusions and appearances of the negative state was being established and illustrated. Also, an example was shown how the life of humans and the creatures of the negative state depends on the true reality of the positive state, and in an ultimate sense on Me — the Absolute Life and Its Absolute Reality. Who was feeding the multitude and by what means? The multitude was representing the negative state and human life which can be sustained only by something which is coming directly from Me and My positive state. Its illusion and appearances are possible only because the true reality of My Absolute Being and Existence always is.

At the same time, the sequence in which the feeding was taking place and how it was arranged illustrates the proper procedure by which the life of the positive state and, in their case, return from illusions and appearances to the true reality of the positive state, could be accomplished. Notice please, the sequence here: First, all day they are fed spiritually — by My teaching. Spiritual feeding is feeding of their internals, which by the process of their feeding are being opened, giving them access to their internals for the first time. It took all day to do that. To take all day signifies until everything in the negative state and human life fulfills its purpose and the opening of their internals and everything related to them takes place. Following that, a proper arrangement is made for all of them to be fed physically, satisfying the needs of their externals. The process of arrangements signifies putting everything in the human life and the negative state in proper order so that it could be permanently eliminated. The subsequent feeding them with bread and fish symbolizes giving them for the first time the true

knowledge of what good and truth are all about. It also signifies the incorporation and subsuming of the externals into the state of internals, by the process of purification through the act of physical feeding with bread and fish — good and truth — so that a unification of the externals — which were separated, isolated and closed off from the internals — with these, the internals could take place. The gathering up of the remaining bread and fish into several baskets signifies that the good and truth of My Nature is inexhaustible and is always available to everyone who is willing to listen to Me and to follow the examples of My behavior (*I gave you My example*) in their own everyday life.

Now, all these things were represented by the above described two events. And yet, despite all of these facts, My disciples were still blind and rooted so much in the literal and external way and mode of thinking and life in general, that when I warned them to beware of the leaven of Pharisees, they disregarded the two important experiences they had with Me during the above mentioned feeding, and interpreted My statement in a typical human fashion and not as being aware and beware about the false and distorted teachings of philosophy or pseudo-spirituality of the Pharisees. My reaction to their blindness, ignorance and incomprehension of the spiritual reality was from a typical human standpoint in order to give them a taste and show all in My Creation, who were watching and observing everything that I did and how I behaved, how it is to be a human and what it means to react from a typical human position — impatiently and frustratingly. When you are subjected to such obvious miraculous examples and yet, no matter what, you still are unable to make proper conclusions and derive from them all other meanings, contained in their nature and what they are telling you, how could you react otherwise than with frustration and impatience? It is at points like these, that from the position of My Human Nature, I was saying something like, *‘how long I will suffer you or how long I have to be with you.’* The frustration of statements like that is obvious. It illustrates the tremendous difficulties that humans and creatures of the negative state have in seeing things behind the scene and not at or on the scene.

Take another example in this respect. I was walking with My disciples through a country which belonged to gentiles. When we wanted to stay there, the inhabitants of that region refused to accept us because we were Jews. So, what was the very first impulse of My disciples to that rejection? They asked Me if I wanted them to bring fire from heaven so that those inhabitants could be burned into cinder and thus, wiped out from the face of the earth. Again, they behaved from the position of self-exclusiveness and isolation of the Jews from all others, representing the isolation and self-exclusiveness of all members of the negative state and

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

humans proper. In other words, they reacted from the position of the negative state, being in the negative state. What did I answer to them? *'You don't know what kind of spirit you are. For I came not to destroy but to save all of them.'* I am paraphrasing this statement.

Once again, I was setting up an example of the proper behavior and lifestyle ingrained in the very nature of My positive state and in My Own Nature. This particular example indicates very clearly that no matter what and no matter who, in the negative state and in human life, everyone in them is subject to My salvation and liberation from their illusions and appearances. But it also shows you not to judge and condemn anyone no matter how bad and evil they are, because their evilness, badness and wrongs are, in an ultimate sense, only appearances and illusions clothed in the pseudo-reality of their assumptions and beliefs that they are real and factual. Within that blink of an eye, in which the human life and the negative state run their course, they are real, tangible, factual and experiential but outside of it they have no place or reality. Therefore, do not judge so that you are not judged by your non-consideration and blindness the way My disciples occasionally were.

As My true representatives, you were humbly asked by Me to take over the exemplification of the way My Nature and My positive state are. This is one of the many important reasons why during this shift, which has been taking place for some time and which will be taking place for some time to come, you were positioned in the midst of the positive state while physically still situated in the negative state and its end product — human life. Again, *I gave you My example*. Follow it! And this is true not only in relationship amongst those of you who are connected to My New Revelation but also to all others who are blind, maimed, insane, foolish, illusional, delusional and who live in distortions, falsities and evils. And this is all that needed to be said today.

Peter: Thank You very much for this meaningful elaboration. Is there anything else that You would like to talk about today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: No, Peter, this should be enough for today. Go in peace.

Ninety Fifth Dialog

August 13, 1999, Prague, Czech Republic

Peter: Today is Friday the 13th. Superstitious people associate these types of dates with some kind of misfortune, or possible accidents or with something bad or unusual happening, or potentially happening, in the negative sense. They call number 13 a devil's dozen. Any comment on this so-called superstitious human tendency? Of course, before answering this seemingly unimportant question, perhaps You have something on Your Mind which You would like to talk about first this morning. Moreover, as You know, basically, I have finished my visit in Europe, I have met with everyone with whom I was supposed to meet and now I am ready to return, back to Santa Barbara. Because of that, if it is appropriate and timely, You may want to say something about the meaning and significance of all those meetings that I have attended up to yesterday afternoon.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, Peter, even though your question seems to be somewhat out of context of the so far discussed issues, nevertheless, it has important relevance to you all as My true representatives. Don't forget that even amongst you, some tendencies toward being superstitious not only about Friday the 13th but about some other things, still might exist. Therefore, it is appropriate to bring these facts to the attention of all readers of these Dialogs.

However, before going into this topic, as well as before going into evaluation of the meaning of your meetings with My people in Russia, Slovakia, Czech Republic; with Manfred of Ulm, Germany, who visited you during your stay in Prague; and with Lyudmila, who came to stay with you in Prague; as well as with Karel Pech, the retired prominent actor, director, producer and cultural activist of the former Czechoslovakia, I would like to take advantage of your kind offer, Peter, and talk about something else. For a few moments, I would like to return to the question Ivan was asking about, the answer to which was recorded in the Ninety Fourth Dialog. As you remember, the issue was My peculiar behavior that I exhibited toward My disciples, whose understanding of My statements and teachings was so blinded by the traditional and external approach to all matters of life that despite the fact that they were witnessing so many obvious and concrete examples of My activities and miracles (the so-called miracles), nevertheless, they were unable to draw proper conclusions about anything related to them by Me.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

If I was the true God, in whom the so-called Father was present — most of the time anyway — from the very beginning of My important activities on planet Zero, and if I knew in an absolute sense the nature and the limitations of My disciples, who, at that time, were typical humans, how could I, the long-suffering and infinitely patient God, react in such an ungodly and seemingly impatient manner?

The answer to this question is concealed in the situation which existed at that time with My disciples and humans in general, as well as with all in the negative state who were watching and observing Me during My incarnation on planet Zero. As you know, if I were to respond to them from the position of My Divine Nature, as the case was on many occasions, they would not be able to grasp the true meaning of My responses. Simply stated, because of the typical structure of the human mind, and the minds of all in the negative state, anything conveyed by Me from the position of My Divine Nature, or the true meaning of anything I was saying or conveying to them, would elude their minds or it would not register at all in it; or they would interpret it in a typical human fashion — externally and literally, distorting or falsifying its true meaning.

For that reason, very often, in the process of My teachings, I had to withdraw from My Divine Nature and revert back to the human aspects of My Nature and respond to them in a typical human fashion — externally, literally and behaviorally; in other words, with something which was very familiar and understandable to them. You have to be aware of the fact that in the process of My activities on planet Zero, most of the time, I spoke in the multiversal language of correspondences, understandable by all in the positive state. However, this language was not known to My disciples or to any humans. For that reason, in order to bring to their attention the true meaning of My sayings, sometimes, I had to illustrate their meaning in the language understandable to them. This is the language of externals, of literal, concrete meaning and behavioral expression, as well as of familiarity. My disciples, as typical humans, as well as all other humans, were very much familiar with the reactions of an upset, impatient and frustrated man, whose behavior was able to convey to them the proper understanding of what he wanted or expected from them. At that time, no other language was understandable or even available to them. For this reason, in most instances, I spoke in double fashion — from the position of My Divine, which speaking was directed to all in My Creation; and from the position of My Human Nature, which speaking was directed to My disciples and to all other humans as well as to all other inhabitants of the Zone of Displacement.

Sometimes, Peter, in your own behavior, you have been paralleling these types of reactions when talking about or explaining or discussing some important concepts of My New Revelation to My representatives whose behavior occasionally is inconsistent with the general climate existing during such discussions. The issues which, in your correct opinion, should be obvious to them, but they are not, or their understanding or response to them is inappropriate, or their behavior or questions during such times, are totally out of context of the nature of everything which is going on in situations like that, trigger in you the need to respond or to behave in a typical human fashion and not as the transmitter of My New Revelation. In situations like that, this is a very appropriate behavior on your part, because it concretely conveys to those who behave inappropriately how not to be and how not to behave and what type of questions not to ask under those kinds of conditions, etc. I can assure you, based on My own experiences with human nature, that at such times, no other type of behavior or reaction on your part would be able to bring to their attention that something is wrong in their own behavior or reactions or about their questions. For that reason, to say to you that you were reacting from your typical ego state, as you were told on one occasion during your meetings in Moravia, is not quite correct. You were responding or reacting from the position of familiarity and external behavioral manifestation in the language which was the only one appropriate at that particular time under those particular conditions. Nothing else would be able to make a needed and desirable impact on that situation. So, don't feel bad about it and don't feel guilty or in the need of anyone's forgiveness. Although it is appropriate to ask for it, I want you to be aware that in situations like that, it is appropriate to react in the manner in which I reacted to My disciples and in which, in a parallel fashion, you react when interacting with those who read and practice My New Revelation or who are My representatives, as well as who are your spiritual children. As long as you are in the human skin, so-to-speak, it is inevitable to occasionally react like that. And this is all that I wanted to talk about related to Ivan's question. As you see, his question also brought to your attention the issue of your paralleling My occasional behavior while on planet Zero. Because you are still on planet Zero, physically speaking, you will be in a position to behave occasionally in a similar manner in the process of interacting with your spiritual children. As you see, I am using here the expression of "your spiritual children" in order to emphasize the need, when the occasion calls for it, to behave on your part as a father behaves to his children. This all has its deeper meaning and significance.

Peter: Well, to tell You the truth, I wasn't at all expecting that this discussion will turn toward my behavior and role. This fact reminds me

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

of something which occurred to me this morning during my early morning walk and dialoging with You. It relates to the mentioned number 13. Is there some kind of connection or symbolism here? As you know, Update 13 also talks about my role and my true nature. Also the Thirteenth Dialog talks about my personal matters; and now on Friday the 13th we are again talking about my position and role. Knowing that no coincidences exist, the question is, is there any relevance to such dates or numbers to anything at all, as well as to my own situation on planet Zero? If one were to take into consideration a typical human interpretation and understanding of the number 13, calling it the devil's dozen, one would have to conclude that I am some kind of a devil, demon or deceiver or pretender or who knows what. Perhaps, I am.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, Peter, here comes the problem of improper understanding and interpretation of the correspondences. From the historical perspective, as long as humanity has been in its pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, it has equated number 13, especially Friday the 13th, with very negative, evil, bad, unfortunate and sinister predispositions and expectations. Is there any credibility in such views or opinions about this issue? Yes, there is a spiritual correspondence of this number to something important. But whether it is necessarily associated with something sinister, evil, bad and unfortunate, is an entirely different story. As you know, humans' expectations and beliefs projected into any events, very often may become for them self-fulfilling prophecies. Because they expect something bad to happen, in this case on the dates like that, unconsciously, by their own design and wishful thinking, they seek out situations which would place them in danger, thus, confirming for them that their expectations were correct and that such dates truly have sinister and evil connotation.

However, in themselves and by themselves, such dates are neutral and don't carry anything of sinister or evil or bad nature. In fact, in the true spiritual meaning of them, they herald the beginning of something new and different. Because it is new and different, in comparison with that which was or had been up to that point, it is unfamiliar to them. And because, as you know, human life, as well as any life in the negative state, is vested in familiarity, or anything familiar; any unknown or unfamiliar factor, automatically carries with itself fear of the unknown. Because fear is always a negative emotion, it produces expectations that something evil, bad, sinister and unfortunate must happen. While in fact, the opposite could be true — very often anything new and different might be very beneficial and positive for everyone's life.

As you know, number 13 is preceded by number 12. In the spiritual meaning of number 12, or to be precise, in one of its many spiritual meanings, this number signifies the completion and establishment of some kind of important phase in the process of spiritual progression of the multiverse or even in the life of one sentient entity. This means that something important was completed and put in a proper order and that a foundation was built on which the next important step in the spiritual progression is ready to commence. The readiness for the next step to commence and for something new and different about to begin is represented by number 13. In this peculiar sense you may consider this number also as number 1 (one) on a higher scale of spiritual progression; meaning, that the number one in the current level of spiritual progression, is higher or deeper or more inward than number one in the previous or preceding level of spiritual progression. But also, you may consider number 13 as number 4 (four) because number 4 (four) is the foundation on which anything can be built. It has four corners; thus, it is the potential for the beginning of something new and different.

The reason why number 13 is called by humans and all others in the negative state the devil's dozen, is because whenever any new and deeper or more inward step or phase is coming to its fruition, it always causes a painful ripple effect in the fabric of pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, which considerably disturbs the illusions and appearances in which everyone in the negative state and human life resides. This disturbance is perceived by everyone in those lives as misfortune, evilness, badness and everything negative. As you see from this example, whenever anything of this nature is happening in the positive sense, a more deeper and more closer to Me situation is occurring, whereas in the positive state it brings about nothing else but joy, delight, pleasure, happiness and elation because of the transcending, more deeper, more closer to Me situation occurring; in the negative state it brings into the foreground and conscious experiential mode only that which is contained in the very fabric of the negative state and human life — the exact opposite of that which is experienced in the positive state — misery, suffering, misfortune, deeper and more ugly, evil, bad, wrong and similar adverse states, conditions and processes.

As far as My representatives — you — are concerned, any such dates and events, during the presently ongoing shift, reflect the beginning of the new phase of this shift, which indicates the need to change your perception, understanding and application of anything that you have known, understood and applied up to this point, especially and particularly related to the spiritual concepts, ideas, views and principles as well as to My New Nature. It is a phase during which a transcending

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

understanding of all and everything needs to be acquired and subsequently applied in your own lives. And because, from the position of your human nature, such transcendence is unfamiliar and unknown to you, it could cause some of you, if you look at it and experience it from the position of that nature, fear, anxiety, confusion, worries and uncertainty. However, looking at this transcendence from the position of the positive state, and My position in particular, that is to say, looking at it from the position of your being My true representatives, this transcendence should cause you to experience only joy, delight, happiness, elation and similar positive emotions which herald to you that you are ready to proceed or to progress to a higher or more inward level of the understanding and acceptance of My True Nature, the nature of My positive state, your true nature and the true meaning and importance of your role and your assignment which you have from Me.

What is the relevance of such numbers or dates as the 13th to your own role, destiny and assignment, Peter? As you noticed from the three mentioned occurrences, they related to the revelation about some further aspects of your true nature, of who you are, what your true role and position in My services are and what your placement in the hierarchy of the spiritual organization is.

This particular revelation very clearly indicates to all of you that all your roles, assignments, positions, destinies or whatever you have from Me, have many aspects and applications. These aspects and applications are not manifested all at once. They are triggered or they are unfolding in the process of your own spiritual progression as a reflection of the events or spiritual progression in other dimensions and pseudo-dimensions to which everyone of you is connected. As certain events are about to take place or already are taking place in those worlds and pseudo-worlds, they trigger in you the need for that aspect of your role and assignment to come into your focus which is the most relevant to the nature of the changes taking place in those worlds and pseudo-worlds. In that moment, you are facing the need to transcend everything in your life and to place yourself into a more inward position or closer to Me and My positive state. In some way you can say that during such times, you are placed in a more central or closer-to-the-center position of those worlds and pseudo-worlds to which you are connected. In that position your participation in the events of those worlds and pseudo-worlds becomes more involved and intense and your contributions to the outcome of everything and all are more meaningful and significant.

At the present time, especially today on Friday the 13th, as you are recording our present Dialog, Peter, and as your trip to Europe is coming

to an end, you are facing another milestone and breaking point in the fabric of My Creation and pseudo-creation. This factor necessarily triggers the need to acquire, first of all, the proper understanding of different aspects of your role and position and, secondly, and most importantly, to firmly establish this aspect in relationship to all and everything. For that reason, to your dismay and anxiety, we need to talk about you for a while before going into the process of evaluation of everything which you have experienced during your visit in Europe or were visited by Manfred and Lyudmila in the Czech Republic.

During these crucial, important and significant times, as things are accelerating and rapidly changing at all levels of the multiverse and in the pseudo-creation, your position and role, Peter, became, **among many other things**, to be a vital focus point of all energies of My representatives, connected to My New Revelation and with whom you have come in contact during your trip to Europe, for their amplification, multiplication and their subsequent transmission to the members of My New Universe, to the pseudo-creators and, ultimately, to the Great Alliance and personally, to Me. Why is this arrangement necessary at this time and why the need for such an important focus point concentrated in one person — you, Peter? And why not directly take that energy from each one of you separately and without dependence on anyone or anything and utilize it for that purpose?

The answer to this question can be found in the specific role and position that all of you have as My true representatives. As you remember from previous Dialogs and from the ***Corollaries...***, each and every one of you is connected to a different level, not only of understanding and application of My New Revelation in all its sources, but, most importantly, you are connected very specifically and particularly to very specific and very particular dimensions and pseudo-dimensions which have, as well as you have, very specific and unique energies that contribute to the specific and particular aspect of the very important maintenance of the function of My Creation and pseudo-creation. Through you and by you, or from your specific and particular energies, from the position which you occupy on planet Zero, which is the place of the ultimate externalization and outsideness of all and everything and which, as you remember, contains all elements of everything and everyone in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, a proper function and inter- and intra-connectedness is maintained and made possible. The specificity and particularities of your energies, because of their specific and particular nature and content, can and may relate only to those worlds and pseudo-worlds and their respective sentient entities, to which you are connected. Because of that, if you, or

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

anyone else, were to try to send out those energies without some type of specific focus point and its amplifying abilities, those energies would become so defused and scattered that they would not be able to have the desired impact on the totality of being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. In that case, your energies would be unnecessarily wasted and lost.

On the other hand, from My Absolute Condition, if I were to directly become the Absolute Focusing and Amplifying Point for the energies which come from the relative conditions, because of My Absoluteness, these energies would be amplified to absolute proportions and in that absolute condition they would be conveyed to the rest of My Creation and the pseudo-creation. Because of the relative condition of all in My Creation and pseudo-creation, the absolute amplification and multiplication of all those energies would cause an instantaneous fiery consumption of all and everything. For that reason, I maintain on planet Zero, which is, in some ways, the ultimate place of manifestation of all and everything, someone who, in his relative condition, can become the focus point of all your relative energies, and from his all-inclusive position, is able to transmit them to the members of the New Universe and by their unique means to the aspects of My Divine Human Nature directly and to all other dimensions and pseudo-dimensions, for the purpose of their utilization and application for the ultimate outcome of the current cycle of time and pseudo-time, as well as for planet Zero, humans and the inhabitants of the negative state in general.

You, Peter, are in that position. The reason why it is you and none other at this time, is because of how, when and for what purpose you were created. How you were created, at this time cannot be revealed or comprehended by you or anyone, as long as you live on planet Zero. As you remember, you were created directly from Me in the non-time and non-space state which preceded the actual Creation. From that point on, you specifically and particularly assisted Me in the process of Creation. As each level of Creation and its multiverse was created, you were specifically and particularly connected to each and every one of those levels so that there is no level in My Creation, and by association or pseudo-association, in pseudo-creation, to which you would not be connected or would not have some important relevance. In some way you can say, that in your relative condition, you were and are potentially the unifying principle for all of them. This fact, once again, is paralleling My Absolute Condition and State as being Someone Who is the Absolute and the Only Unifying principle of all and everything. The members of My New Universe function in the same role from the position of the New Universe and by the means of your position on planet Zero, they are able

to carry your focused energies, gathered from all My representatives, and apply them as needed and where needed.

Due to the fact that in some way or other, you are connected to all levels of all dimensions and pseudo-dimensions, you are able to relate to all My representatives on their specific and particular levels and thus, from that position, you are able to be an important focus point for amplification, multiplication and transmission of all their energies to where those energies belong. From this role and position of yours, Peter, can be derived, interpreted and evaluated the meaning of your trip to Europe and of all your meetings with My representatives.

There are many important aspects of everything that has been happening during this time. First of all, your presence was necessary in Russia during the dangerous times when the renegades tried to unleash on humanity and in all other pseudo-dimensions the devastating destruction and wars. The focus of energies which you received from Lyudmila, Victor and Vera Vasilievna, whenever you interacted with them directly or indirectly, in combination with all others in the positive state, with the members of the New Universe and with the pseudo-creators, were utilized effectively and successfully for defusing the danger of that destruction and war. Also, your presence in Moscow established a special condition which will be necessary for something that is in the process of unfolding there. As seen from the position of on or at the scene, it will not always be pleasant and it will create many dangerous situations for the entire humanity and to what it corresponds in the other dimensions and pseudo-dimensions. As you are aware, shortly after your departure from Moscow, things in Russia started to take a very peculiar and dangerous trend. This turn of events in that country reflects the precarious situation which exists in the camp of the renegades and their pseudo-worlds. The confusion and chaos in them are taking the ultimate extreme.

However, there is another meaning of Russia's position and to what it corresponds. This meaning is reflected in the position which Lyudmila, Victor and Vera Vasilievna occupy. As you know, among a few languages, in which My New Revelation was made available, the Russian language became one of them. The importance of this translation and how it will be utilized for the salvation and integration of that to which Russia corresponds in the scheme of all events, cannot be emphasized enough.

Do you remember, Peter, and all who read these words, how in one of the previous Dialogs, in response to your question why NATO was supporting Muslims and not their own so-called Christians brothers, it

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

was indicated to you that it was necessary to take into consideration those factors, and corresponding to them, all others, which represented the greatest danger to the positive state and to the ultimate elimination of the negative state, and support them instead of the Christian nation?

There is a paralleling process going on in the positive state and other dimensions. As you know, the process of integration, unification, interconnection and oneness of all dimensions is taking place, under the auspices of My New Nature and with the direct involvement of the members of My New Universe and all My representatives on planet Zero. Now, this process is a gradual process. What it means, is that this integration and unification begins with those levels of My Creation and their respective worlds, which occupy the most strategically important position from the standpoint of the currently ongoing shift. Once they complete their integration and unification, all others will follow their suit in their own states, conditions, times and para-times.

Once again, there is a paralleling process going on, on planet Zero. The countries on planet Zero, in the languages of which My New Revelation was made available, as well as the countries in which one or two or more people are able to read and accept My New Revelation in English (in Germany, for example, as represented by Manfred Moll and Monika Schuh), correspond to those levels of My Creation and their respective worlds, in which this process of integration and unification is taking place. This important factor of integration and unification has been reflected in everything which has been happening during your visit, Peter, in Slovakia, Moravia and Bohemia (the Czech Republic) and during Manfred's visit with you in Prague and Lyudmila's visit and meeting with My representatives both in Prague and Brno.

The importance of your visits with all of them stems from your role and position as the focusing point and integrator and unifier of all those levels to which those with whom your meetings were taking place correspond. Among many other things, three important things were accomplished during these times. The first thing relates to the state of each individual, who participated in those meetings. In the process of these meetings, important progress was made within each individual related to the gradual integration and unification of his/her own mind. A tremendously effective step in this respect was made. This progress enabled each individual to permanently anchor in his/her individuality, personality and independence, taking responsibility for their own life without any necessity to be dependent on anyone or anything else.

The second thing which was accomplished during these times, and which could be considered as rectification of the previously unfavorable condition, was that, because of the factor of this established individualization, personalization and independence, it was possible to defy the negative state's influence on and negative support of the large group meetings, thus, transcending the ego states of each participant so that any interaction, in most instances, was taking place not from the position of the typical human ego, but from the position of the spiritual "I am" of each participant. And in those cases when some indication of the human ego involvement was present, it was immediately and properly dealt with so that it had no negative impact on anything happening during those meetings. And not only that, but anyone responding from that position, immediately recognized his/her ego state and corrected his/her response on the spot, so-to-speak.

And the third, and the most crucial thing that was accomplished during these times, was integration and unification of My representatives from different nations, as an important correspondence of and impact on all other dimensions, which are in the process of their own integration and unification. Thus, a spiritually very important connection was made, through the process of integration and unification, among all those who represent these nations and other dimensions and worlds corresponding to them, Slovaks, Czechs, Russians, Germans, Spanish-speaking people and Americans, and all those to whom they correspond in the spiritual worlds, through and by My representatives, as they embarked on the road of their own integration and unification, were put into an important position for their salvation and subsequent unification and integration. This process reflects an example and illustration how the process of ultimate integration and unification of all and everything not only in My Creation but also in the pseudo-creation, following their salvation and liberation, will be accomplished. During your meetings, Peter, with all participants, thanks to your presence and involvement, all of you together established an important foundation on which something very important and unusual will be built which will be instrumental in the process of total and complete elimination of the negative state and its end product — human life, in its negative aspects; and in the process of building the completeness and fullness of life in the positive state. As a focusing point, through you, Peter, and in the process of your meetings, it was possible to mutually interconnect, through the corresponding factors of Russians, Germans, Spanish-speaking people, Americans, Slovaks and Czechs, with all those to whom they all correspond in the spiritual world and with each other, regardless of the fact that not all of them met each other physically. Because they all met with you, through you, this

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

important interconnection was made, making it possible for the process of their unification and integration to begin.

Take for example, Manfred of Germany and what his role, position, name and representation signify. In some way, the name 'Manfred' can be considered as an embodiment of the German's character and what Germany in reality represents. As you know, historically speaking, Germany or Germans and their politics, could be defined as very aggressive, somewhat arrogant, inconsiderate and bent on world domination. On the other hand, Germany gave to humanity some of the greatest artists, philosophers, scientists, engineers and mystics who significantly influenced the developments of the human race as a whole. These two contradictory extremes, can be found in the name of 'Manfred' or to what it corresponds. Because of that, in order to rectify the negative aspects which Germany contains and in order to establish a favorable condition under which these negative aspects could be eliminated, Germany, and to what it corresponds both in the spiritual world and the pseudo-spiritual world, would be in a position to be integrated and unified with all others, and especially with those to whom Russians, Czechs, Slovaks, Spanish-speaking people and Americans correspond and what they represent in the reality-of-it-all; it was not by all means a coincidence that Manfred of Ulm, Germany, and in connection with him, Monika Schuh of Kressbronn, Germany, agreed to represent what they represent and to become an important bridge, through and by the means of My New Revelation, for establishing this important connection and building a foundation, by the examples of their own lives, on which this unification and integration will be able to take place when the time is right. In being with you in Prague, Peter, and through you and your interaction with all others, Manfred was able to establish an important connection with My representatives even though he has not met any of them physically yet (with the exception of Lyudmila). This connection will have a very important impact on other levels to which Manfred is connected by his role and assignment. Of course, during his time with you, he met all of them on the other level. At this particular time, it was more important for his cause and role to meet them on the spiritual level rather than on the physical level. The reason for this fact will become apparent at a later time. Thus, in his role and position, Manfred, together with Monika Schuh, can be considered as representatives of the entire Germany in its positive aspects.

On the other hand, Lyudmila represents the positive aspects of the Russian people and to what they correspond and what they represent. In some ways Russians were not that much different from Germans in that, historically speaking, they were likewise aggressive, arrogant,

inconsiderate and bent on world domination. At the same time, you can find amongst them great writers, scientists, composers and artists in general. As you see from this parallel, it is not by coincidence that Germans and Russians spent many years in wars with each other. This situation needs to be rectified. Lyudmila's presence with you, Peter, at this time in the Czech Republic, besides her other significant meanings in connection with you and your work, and Manfred's visit with you in Prague, indicates an important integration and unification of all positive aspects of Germany and Russia and to what they spiritually correspond. Together with them, the process of unification and integration of the Czechs, Slovaks, Spanish-speaking people and Americans, and to what they all correspond, through and by the means of My representatives, and by the means of you, Peter, being that you are My focusing point for all of their energies and everything else that they represent, that process has begun. At this particular time, this process and its impact is happening on the other levels and not that much on your physical level or in your nations where you are situated and where you perform your function and work in whatever capacity you are engaged at each particular time. The physical factor will take some time before it can be engaged in this important process. Of course, by your interactions, during your visits and meetings with Peter, you have prepared all means, by which, in an opportune time, also their physical integration and unification will take place. Therefore, be patient and endure to the very end.

However, amongst you personally, as you were interacting during your meetings and visits with Peter, a new level of love, wisdom, compassion, empathy, understanding and acceptance, unthinkable up to this point, was achieved and established. And not only that, but, most importantly, by the impact of these meetings and visits, as you were relating to each other from the position of your unique individualized and personalized nature, you were able to experience profound and the most significant changes which were visibly taking place within each one of you. To use your human expression, it was almost miraculous to see how, from day to day, these changes were taking place and how your true selves, or your true "I am," in which My presence in the most obvious and tangible manner, was coming through, shining in the most brilliant and exquisite manner.

Another important factor, which was potentially established during these visits and meetings, was that a possibility for an all-inclusive sharing amongst you could and may take place in a similar fashion as it occurs in My positive state. This is a very important breakthrough. Even though not all of you were or are ready for such an experience, the willingness

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

that you showed during this time for establishing such an all-inclusive sharing, even if nothing of this nature would be accomplished as yet, is a significant beginning for the building of a firm foundation on which such sharing could take place also on this level. The factor of your willingness could be considered as one of the most important steps toward unification and integration of your minds personally and toward your integration and unification with all levels of My being and existence and the entirety of My Creation. I can assure you that in your position this will be one of the most difficult tasks to accomplish. Being that you are in your human skin, so-to-speak, it will not be easy to overcome the feelings of jealousy, envy, possessiveness, dependency, self-exclusiveness and similar negative emotions, inherent in your human ego states. However, is there any other way to get rid of these negative feelings, emotions and states than by recognizing them, by facing them and overcoming them in the process of your mutual sharing on all levels? In your position, there are no other ways.

If you always invite Me to partake in your mutual sharing, as well as the members of your spiritual family, as well as the members of the New Universe, and if you approach such sharing for no other ulterior reasons but for mutual benefit, and for the greater acquirement of knowledge of My Nature, the nature of that person with whom you share knowledge of your own nature, as well as for the purpose of establishment of such an important sharing on the human level on planet Zero, where such sharing up to this point has been inconceivable and almost impossible, then, in that case, you will succeed in overcoming those negative feelings, emotions and states. However, before being engaged in such a mutual all-inclusive sharing, you are advised to very carefully explore your motivation and intention with which you intend to approach it. Otherwise, you may enter the state of very unpleasant temptation which could considerably complicate your life for a long period of time and which could impede the fulfillment of your mission and transmission of your energies for My services. On the other hand, those of you who have no such needs, and I am repeating this again, should not force yourselves into such relationships. It only means that it is not your role, agreement and assignment on this level to have such experiences.

And finally, Peter, your presence in Europe and your participation in all those numerous and well-attended meetings, was also necessary for correcting some problems which were appearing in relationship to My New Revelation and its availability. Something was going on which was very wrong. An inappropriate responsibility was taken in regard to this factor, where it didn't belong at all. The shift of this responsibility was utilized by the forces of the negative state to impede making available

My New Revelation to the nation in question. Your presence was needed in order to make those things right, which were made wrong. You have succeeded in this effort and everything is moving in the proper direction. For that reason, we are not going to discuss this issue further. Let this situation be a warning and reminder to all that the full responsibility for My New Revelation on planet Zero and everywhere to which all of you are connected and to which your countries that you represent correspond, ultimately is on My shoulder through Peter. Remember, he is a focusing point and the only one who can make a proper decision in this respect. Otherwise, he would not be in the position in which he is.

In conclusion of this Dialog, I would like to congratulate all of you, as well as to express My profound gratitude, appreciation and thankfulness, for participation in all these meetings and for your valuable work in My services and for taking good care of Peter during his visits and meetings with you. I am also joining Peter in appreciation of the very important fact that so many young people were eager, warm, loving, sharing and willing participants in those meetings and for their current unconditional devotion to Me and My New Revelation.

The completion of Peter's visit with you in Europe signifies the ending of one important phase of the currently ongoing shift. The new phase will be in process after he arrives in Santa Barbara. The important differentiation was established during this phase and during Peter's visit in Europe. Something different and new will be coming into focus. What it will be, is not safe to reveal at this time. As it will begin to unfold, gradually, you will become cognizant of its nature. In the meantime, hold your current position and continue in developing, deepening, enhancing and practicing that which you acquired during Peter's visits and meetings with you.

Of course, as always, there are some other important reasons, Peter, for your visits and meetings in Europe. Something else, very significant and important, was accomplished and established. However, for security reasons, at this time, it cannot be revealed. In the meantime, continue in your work for Me and for being a focusing point for all My representatives with whom you have met directly or indirectly (through someone else).

As it became very obvious and apparent to you, your meetings and interactions with My representatives were very important not only for them and you personally but also for all of us here in the spiritual world and elsewhere.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Therefore, it is important that you visit them face-to-face as often as possible and as often as the need will arise. And this is all for now. Go in peace with Me. Have a very pleasant time for the remaining days with Lyudmila and your sister Vera and her daughter Veruska.

Peter: Thank You very much for these encouraging words.

Ninety Sixth Dialog

August 24, 1999

Peter: Well, I am back in Santa Barbara. It seems to me that I am unable to get rid of some kind of fog in my brain or mind as if I am coming down from some kind of different dimension and have problems adjusting to or anchoring myself in this place on this planet. I know that it could be ascribed to the so-called jet lag but perhaps there is a different aspect to it than just that. Any comments on this situation or on anything else that You feel would be beneficial and useful to talk about this very foggy morning in Santa Barbara, California?

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are right, Peter, there is a different connotation to your fogginess than just jet lag. Don't forget from what place and situation you are returning to Santa Barbara. During your three months stay in Europe, almost at all times you were engaged in very important spiritual work which had no relevance to anything external and non-spiritual. Being in such a state, as well as place, and doing what you were doing, could be easily equated as being in Heaven with Me and in My positive state without any preoccupation with worldly, earthly things and without any concerns about everyday hassles of a typical human life. So, almost ninety nine percent of your time was spent in such heavenly activities. In that sense, you may really say that you were coming down from Heaven to planet Zero where you have to face the regular issues of everyday living in the place and state which is ruled by all kinds of external concerns related to your everyday survival on your planet and in Santa Barbara.

This is a spiritual correspondence to the reality of the positive state and the pseudo-reality of the negative state and planet Zero. While you were in Europe, because you spent all your time with My people, doing important work together with them in My services, you experienced the most profound clarity and insight in all matters that were brought to your attention. Thus, no fogginess, so common to the negative state, was invading your brain or mind during that time. However, as you returned to your usual place, the pseudo-reality of your pseudo-world set in, reflected in the fogginess of your brain. Of course, as you adjust to your current condition, this state will pass. And this is the reason for your present condition.

At this point in time, I would like to address your concerns and worries about the permanency of everything which was established and accomplished during your interaction with My representatives in Europe.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

As you remember from the Ninety Fifth Dialog, it was indicated there that the process of integration, unification and oneness has begun as represented by the changes accomplished by all who were present with you, and through you and with them, all others who couldn't participate in those meetings at that time. Your worries in this respect, Peter, are about whether those changes, and everything that was accomplished and established there, will have a lasting effect and whether they will not wear off and gradually, under the pressures and stresses of everyday life on planet Zero, they will not revert back to the old, unproductive and no longer appropriate or feasible ways of behavior, attitude and living their lives.

In your view, if such things could or would happen, they would refute everything that was indicated in the Ninety Fifth Dialog about the meaning of your trip and about things which were accomplished and established at that time. You are concerned that after you left those countries, everything with the participants in the meetings with you will go back the way it was before.

Although these are all legitimate concerns, they lack the awareness of the accomplishments which were made in other dimensions to which all participants and you, Peter, correspond and to which all of you are connected. Let us assume for a moment that all, or most, or some participants, will really revert back to the ways they were before your meetings with them. Despite the fact that such a possibility exists, it would relate only to the state and condition existing on planet Zero and to everyone's personal choice without having any impact on the state and condition which was established during that time in other dimensions. Don't forget about one important thing: During that time, an important example, or a sample, if you want to say it that way, was achieved and permanently established and grounded in the Universality-Of-It-All, as well as in the dimensions relevant to all participants, which indicates that such integration, unification and oneness was possible to accomplish at a place and state which has no notion whatsoever what this integration, unification and oneness is all about or that they even could exist. And not only that, but it was assumed by everyone that in a place and state like planet Zero, no such thing is possible to achieve ever. Even if this accomplishment were to last or would be lasting only for the duration of your presence in Europe, nevertheless, it would accomplish its most important goal — to set up a permanent condition on planet Zero and in all dimensions, states, places and conditions (to which every participant and relevant-to-his/her-and-her/his country correspond) for this integration, unification and oneness to take place at an opportune time.

Bear in mind, please, that it was extremely vital, crucial and important that such a sample was established. Without it, no grounds would exist on which the salvation of all in human life, as well as in the entirety of the Zone of Displacement, could ever be built or accomplished. The importance of your achievements in this respect should never be underestimated. It transcends your human understanding.

However, there is another aspect to this example or sample which was established as a result of your mutual meetings and interaction. It relates to your own role, Peter. Because of your role as a focusing point for all energies, as well as many other aspects of your role, you carry within you and with you everything that was accomplished, achieved and established during your visit in Europe at all levels of being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. What does this statement mean? It means that even if someone or even all participants were to revert back to the previous ways — an utter impossibility — nevertheless, in you and through you all and everything which was achieved, established and accomplished would continue to have life and would be constantly generated to all and everything in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. By that factor, nothing would be lost — ever. And not only that, but by the factor that any experience at all, once it was experienced, regardless of whether the subject of that experience changed or not or reverted back to the old ways, that experience is preserved forever in the Universality-Of-It-All and is available to all and everything for utilization, learning and implementation whenever it is needed.

So, looking on your concerns and worries from this perspective, Peter, you are advised to relax and take it easy and give them to Me. I will assure that everything that was accomplished during your time in Europe, will be permanently effective, having its impact at all levels.

At the same time, I want you to be aware that it is totally inconceivable that return to the previous mode of life and behavior, following all experiences that they had, could happen. Although it is possible that some external behavior patterns in relationship to everyday work and coping with hassles of living on planet Zero, could return to the same mode as they were before on the internal levels, where it really counts, nothing will ever be the same. I can assure you that no one and nothing can or may nullify to any degree what was accomplished, achieved and established during that time.

Peter: I really appreciate this explanation. Knowing human nature, I am always worried that the tendency is always there to recede from any

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

such accomplishments or even to refute the genuineness of experiences. I am talking here about my past experiences in this respect.

The Lord Jesus Christ: It is understandable. However, these are different times and different situations as well as different levels of functioning of all and everything. We are building here something that was not possible to be built under the previously existing conditions. Fortunately, those conditions were transcended and we live in a totally different time and state. To repeat again and again: Nothing is the same. However, even if something of that nature could or would happen, it still does not erase the true meaning and impact it had and will have on everyone and everything in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence.

Peter: I appreciate Your reminder very much in this respect. Is there any other aspect or meaning to everything that was going on during my stay in Europe with Your people?

The Lord Jesus Christ: As you remember, it was indicated to you that much was accomplished during that time. One interesting aspect to those meetings relates to an important issue of gathering so many people in one small room. This happened on several occasions in various places or towns. As you know, each participant in those meetings represented a different level of understanding, acceptance and practice of My New Revelation as well as manifestation of a different aspect of My element placed in each individual by which that individual is what he/she is and by which he/she lives and functions. This factor determines the quality and content of energies generated by each individual during his/her activities or seeming non-activities (during sleep or relaxation). These energies are very specific and unique. They are reflections of and they are congruent to those levels of other dimensions (both in the positive state and in the negative state, respectively), and their respective inhabitants, to which each individual is connected and is in a corresponding relatedness (in most instances, without his/her human conscious awareness).

When you gathered in one small room, that room was packed by all present to an unimaginable density. In simple human conceptualization, under these kinds of conditions, it would be impossible to avoid some kind of negative outcome or conflict. And yet, the exact opposite occurred. The most positive conditions and states were experienced by everyone involved. Among many other things, there are two levels of events which were taking place during those times. One relates to the transcendence of human ego states which always wants to dominate and to interfere with

the course of such events in order to get attention from others, disregarding the needs of others. In this respect, an important example was set up, showing or illustrating or demonstrating that it was possible to achieve such a transcendence despite the fact that each individual present was at a different level of understanding, acceptance and practice of My New Revelation and manifesting a different element of My Nature in his/her relative condition, as well as generating a uniquely different quality of personal and individualized energies. As mentioned above, it was assumed by everyone that such things are impossible to achieve while in the human skin, so-to-speak. This was a very important illustration and demonstration. It clearly indicated that if you relate not from your ego state but from your unique individualized and personalized position, and if you deeply respect everyone else's unique personality and individuality, it is not only possible to avoid any conflict during such big gatherings, but an unusual state of integration, unification and oneness can be experienced and a new level of mutual love, respect, understanding and acceptance can be accomplished under those kinds of conditions.

The second level in the course of these events relates to something which was going on in other dimensions, especially in the New Universe and with the pseudo-creators and the renegades. As you remember, it was indicated to you that the situation during your meetings in Europe, Peter, was very volatile, dangerous, unstable and, from a typical human standpoint, unpredictable. Without your being consciously aware, the entirety of humanity was at the brink of total destruction and annihilation several times. Whenever you were in such meetings, that were taking place in those packed rooms, the intensity, the quality, the extensity and the uniqueness of energies of everyone present, as it was magnified, amplified, compounded, multiplied by and generated through you, Peter, as My focusing point, was further combined with all energies of those to which everyone present was connected and in contact with, and subsequently utilized to avert any such destruction and annihilation which the renegades were trying to wrought on planet Zero in retaliation for the defeat they suffered from the Great Alliance. I want all of you to be aware that without your combined unique energies, which you made freely available during those densely packed meetings, the renegades would succeed in their ploy. Thus, as you see from this revelation, your meetings had a tremendous importance at many levels of understanding of their significance and need.

Only from the position of integration, unification and oneness of all your unique personalized and individualized energies, as represented by each and every one of you who participated in those meetings, was it possible

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

to avert many very unpleasant things which otherwise would be taking place and influencing your life very adversely. So, as you see from this revelation, there are many important aspects related to your meetings and for the need of your combined unique energies utilized in My services.

The question here is: Why was it also necessary to utilize your unique and specific energies, as generated by every participant in those meetings, and not limit them to those energies generated by all inhabitants of those worlds and dimensions to which everyone of you was/is connected and of which you were/are an integral part, functioning for them as a vital link to everything going on in this pseudo-world? Your positioning on planet Zero, which at the present time became an ultimate corresponding stage for the final battle between the pseudo-creators and renegades, as well as between all factions of the entire Zone of Displacement, is unique in many important aspects. Through you and by you, by the contribution of your specific and unique energies, it is possible to prevent, influence, alter and change many things that otherwise, without your energies, would be detrimental to the outcome of the fate of humanity and all inhabitants of the negative state. This is your vital role as My true representatives. Because of that, only with your specific and unique energies, from your position, from the position of where each and every one of you is situated and to which each and every one of you correspond in other dimensions, anything of this significance can be accomplished. You can consider yourself as being the final link in the chain of energies which discharges these energies, or points them in the needed direction for the purpose of accomplishing whatever needs to be accomplished. Without this final and compounding link, the energies discharged from the other dimensions, would not be able to reach your planet and the Zone of Displacement and exert the necessary influence on the course of events on them. In that case, a devastating situation would occur which would prevent the final elimination of the negative state to take place. For that reason, I have always maintained on your planet someone like you in order to utilize your energies for this purpose.

There is one more thing I would like to discuss at this point. It relates to your feelings about people with whom you met in Europe and about My representatives who live in the United States. You were very much shocked by these very obvious striking differences. Although these differences could be attributed to some extent by the factor of everyone's being on a different level of understanding, acceptance, practice and manifestation of everything contained in My New Revelation, as well as in My Nature and in My positive state, nevertheless, some of them have

a much more general significance. You were impressed by their genuineness, humbleness, modesty, openness, respect, acceptance, attentiveness, selflessness, devotion to My cause and to The New Revelation, by warmth, eagerness, sacrifice, prioritization, unconditional love, readiness to share at all levels and by similar positive characteristics that the vast majority of the participants demonstrated during the meetings with you, Peter. It was very obvious that very little of the typical human ego involvement on their part was present during those times.

On the other hand, up to this point, you have not been able to experience these attributes and characteristics to such a degree in people here in the United States. In some ways this can be attributed to the history of those in Europe and those in this country. In comparison with you in this country, My representatives in Europe have very little material possessions, if anything at all. They are barely surviving from day to day. So, they are not bogged down in them as much as you are in this country who have such possessions and who need to take necessary care of them. To some degree, these possessions rob you of a certain amount of energies which are lacking from the need to develop the same level of intensity, depth and quality of sharing and of all the above mentioned characteristics as is present and manifested in people there. The American lifestyle, which is also reflected to some degree in your individual lifestyles, is much more self-centered, ambitious and ego-state driven than the lifestyle which My representatives in those countries which you visited, Peter, have.

However, the message here is very obvious: It is vital and crucial, and absolutely necessary to break out of the typical American lifestyle and achieve the same level of intensity, quality and manifestation of all those characteristics as are being manifested in the mentioned countries by the majority of My representatives.

Now, this requirement doesn't mean that you have to give up your possessions or get rid of them. If you have them, it means that you have to have them. It is a matter of your attitude and priorities which determine to what extent you are ruled by your possessions and not vice versa: You rule your possessions. If your possessions are the means for some higher spiritual accomplishment and not the goal in themselves and for themselves, then you are going in the right direction and you are about to embark on a higher level of your spiritual awareness, becoming more and more as and like I am in your relative condition or as and like those with whom Peter interacted during his meetings in the mentioned countries.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Also, this doesn't mean that you in the United States have to become the same way as those people are. You need to be your own individualized and personalized manifestation in the conglomeration of your own characteristics and traits that you possess and have. What needs to be done in this respect is to bring them to the level that exists in the positive state and which, to a certain degree, was seen and experienced in the majority of participants in their meetings with you, Peter, in the mentioned countries. The need to accomplish this stems from the need to set up a favorable condition for the integration, unification and oneness of all those that represent Americans, Russians, Germans, Czech, Slovaks and Spanish-speaking people and to what they all correspond in other dimensions and pseudo-dimensions. As you know, this process has begun. With your return to Santa Barbara, Peter, a new phase in the currently ongoing shift has been instituted which reflects this most needed process of integration, unification and oneness. Your participation in this process is very crucial. It is reflected primarily by your willingness and ability to transcend your current state and lifestyle and to get on a higher level of manifestation of My Divine Love and Divine Wisdom and sharing of all their attributes with very little, or not at all, of your ego state involvement.

Peter: Thank You very much for this reminder. Would You like to make any comments on the devastating earthquake in Turkey?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter. There are many aspects to that tragic (from your standpoint) event. Only two can be revealed. The first one relates to the efforts of the renegades to retaliate for their defeat in the NATO war against Yugoslavia. As you know, Turkey is a member of NATO. The retaliation was done by the renegades to which Serbs and, to some degree, Russia correspond. As you know, Turkey is predominantly a Muslim country. Thus, retaliation goes against both NATO and the Muslims. If they couldn't accomplish their goal in Kosovo, then they redirected it to the weakest point in the chain of NATO's membership, which Turkey is. At the same time, the renegades of the Muslim faction are retaliating against the Russian renegades for siding with the Serbs' renegades as seen in Russia's problems that they have with the Muslims in Dagestan.

The second one relates to the issue of retribution for all the bloody and cruel atrocities and abominations that Turkey, and to what that country corresponds, committed during the history of its existence. This is the reason why the number of victims of this earthquake is so high. What Turkey wrought on other countries and their inhabitants in its cruelty and bloodshed, far exceeds anything anyone has done on the European

continent. It is not by coincidence that such devastating earthquakes, in the majority of cases, usually hit either countries that profess the Koran or the so-called non-Christian countries. There is an important spiritual correspondence of those countries with certain regions of the Hells. Their connection to those Hells determines the choices that the inhabitants of these countries made to participate in such devastating events. Of course, they are devastating only from your standpoint but not from their standpoint. If I agreed to something, it is my duty and responsibility to carry out my agreement. For that reason, whatever happens to me is a matter of my choice and not of the tragedy. If I agreed to illustrate the factors of retribution and punishment, then in that case I am fulfilling my purpose for which I was made responsible. I am only doing my job in illustrating and demonstrating the consequences of accepting and living the life of distortions and falsities.

The powerfulness and general devastation of such earthquakes in those countries reflects the highest possible degree of spiritual distortions and falsifications in which their inhabitants live and which they internalized and accepted as the only truth to the point that they not only reject any other possibilities but they are bent on wiping out or destroying everyone who is not of their belief system.

Now, these factors don't relate only to earthquakes but to any such devastating and destructive events on your planet in which many thousands of humans perish. As you see from these facts, behind all such events are always the spiritual factors which determine the need for such events to take place. They all relate to wrong spirituality or to the acceptance of distortions and falsities in lieu of truths. Once a certain measure and degree of such an acceptance is established, it triggers the need for retribution. In that moment, some type of disaster strikes which fulfills the need for all participants in them to be transported to other dimensions in order to strengthen the position of those dimensions in whatever needs they have at each particular time. At the same time, the consequences of the acceptance of distortions and falsities and their internalization are being illustrated by their fate. And this is all that you need to know about this issue at this particular time.

Peter: Thank You very much for this revelation. Is there anything else that needs to be elaborated upon today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. The only thing I would like to remind you about is that you have embarked (all of you) on a very important and crucial spiritual journey within the new phase of the ongoing shift which began the moment you, Peter, returned to Santa

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Barbara. Within this phase, your role as My representatives on planet Zero will be taking a much more significant and important face. Your behavior, attitude, relationships, interactions and work, in whatever capacity it is or will be, and wherever and whenever you are or will be, in all aspects of your life, all that will be having a different meaning and implication. Your responsibility and assignment will be of much greater proportions than it has ever been up to this point. Although all these things will be happening primarily on your internal level, nevertheless, the impact will be significantly felt also on the external level. For this reason it is advisable that you carefully reevaluate all the priorities of your life, making sure that the spiritual factors of your life, related to My New Revelation, are your very first priority. Of course, as always, only if you choose them to be so by your own free will and free choice. And this is all that I wanted to contribute today, Peter. Go in peace and have a good afternoon.

Peter: Accept my appreciation and gratitude for everything that You are extending to us.

Ninety Seventh Dialog

August 25, 1999

Peter: For a few days now I have been thinking about the issue of temptation as related to us, Your representatives, and whether there are some hidden or more subtle ways to be tempted by the forces of the negative state than by the obvious ones. The way I see it, the problem with the possible hidden forms of temptation is that we would not be able to see them as such or we would simply overlook them or consider them harmless. Is there anything to my concerns in this respect? I also have another question but before going into it or before answering my present concerns, I would gladly yield to You to talk first about anything You feel needs to be brought to our attention at this time.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for your kind offer. The only thing I would like to briefly touch upon is the striking difference in attitude, behavior and the way My representatives with whom you met in Europe, Peter, accept, relate to and practice My New Revelation as compared with those in this country; and upon the possibility that some of them in this country might feel hurt by such a comparison because within themselves they don't feel that way or perceive themselves that way. Your comparison in this respect doesn't denote sweeping generalizations applicable to all who read and practice My New Revelation in this country. It is obvious that amongst them there are vast differences and many levels of relatedness to, acceptance and practice of anything contained in all sources of My New Revelation.

The issue here is not judging anyone, or demanding anything from anyone because, after all, whatever attitude and lifestyle one prefers to have or exhibit, it only means that it is the way such a person should be by his/her own free will and choice. So, it is not as if we are imposing anything on anyone. The only thing that needs to be concentrated upon — and this is only a humble suggestion — is careful examination of priorities of anyone's everyday life. What are the preferences that one has? To what extent is one in control of one's life? Who or what is the ruling force in one's behavior, attitude and lifestyle in general? What is it that one considers to be the most important thing in one's life? To what degree are the true Divine Love and Divine Wisdom, and all their exquisite attributes, contained in and an integral part of all decision-making processes of one's everyday life? Are the principles of My New Revelation the most cherished and most desirable factors of one's life, being on the top of the mentioned priorities? Is there a congruence and balance between intellectual, rational, logical and by reason of

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

acceptance of those principles and the emotive, intuitive, behavioral and relational factors of one's everyday life? In other words, what is the degree of agreement between your head and your heart — symbolically speaking? Is the content of My New Revelation in all its sources considered to be only a nice and beautiful decoration or construct that pleases one's external intellectual thirst or curiosity or is it a matter of life and everyday living? What are the motivational and intentional factors that establish one's need to be involved with My New Revelation in the first place?

These are very important questions that everyone connected to My New Revelation, no matter where and to what degree, needs to carefully explore and consider. Why is it so? Why is this emphasis on the need to reevaluate where each and every one of you is in this respect at the present time? And why is it that we are bringing to your attention the factor of striking differences between how you, Peter, experienced My people during your visit in Europe and how you experienced My people in this country — at least up to the point of your departure to Europe?

As you know, nothing is by coincidence. Certain things, at certain times need to be brought to everyone's attention in order to insure the right direction by which the spiritual development of everyone is proceeding, bringing it in congruence with the nature of the new phase which is in the process of its establishment within the ongoing shift.

As you remember, you were told several times in the preceding Dialogs that you have entered very dangerous times, which require from you very serious efforts of adjustment and changes in all aspects of your internal life and consequently in your external life as well. The forces of the negative state have established full control on this planet. Their all-out effort is toward elimination of anything positive and good or of all remnants of the positive and good contained in humans. Because of this effort, they will make all kinds of attempts to target you — My representatives, in order to sway you to their side so that you would be supporting their cause and not My cause and the cause of My New Revelation. Because of the tremendous degree of protection and insulation that you have from Me, they are incapable of hurting or harming or destroying you in any manner and way. In some way you can say that it would not be profitable or desirable for them, especially for the renegades, to kill you or eliminate you or to make you impotent in your activities, as to tempt you to succumb to their cause. They would like nothing better than to reconvert you to the negative state because if they were to succeed in this respect, it would give them such a boost and so much positive and good energies that it would reinforce all their

positions and they would become much more powerful and effective in all their undertakings. Should anything of that nature happen, it would extend the pseudo-life of the negative state indefinitely, or at least, for a long period of time.

Now, this is the major reason, why the forces of the negative state, at this junction of their functioning, are making and will be making an all-out effort to corrupt you, to tempt you and to convince you by all possible means about the virtue and goodness of their cause. For that reason, in a subtle and almost imperceptible way, the forces of the negative state will exert influence on your mind and your preferences, as well as on seemingly unimportant things and negligible details of your everyday living so that they can get you in such a way that you would not even know about your falling into their traps. In this case, you would have all kinds of plausible justifications why you are the way you are or behave the way you behave or relate the way you relate. And not only that, but in that case, there would be a tendency to seek inappropriate confirmation and justification of your attitude or whatever it will be, by the principles of My New Revelation. You would think and feel that all aspects of your life, your attitude, behavior, relationships and actions are in agreement with the principles of My New Revelation while, in reality, they would be in total opposition to them. The blindness on your part in such a case would become complete.

This is a serious trap. And this is a serious warning to all of you. To repeat again: The current situation on your planet and in the pseudo-worlds of the negative state, to which you have proximity and connection, is very serious, volatile, dangerous and unstable. For that reason, what used to be harmless, acceptable and tolerable is no longer so. Unfortunately, in most instances, there is a tendency to continue in considering them harmless, acceptable and tolerable. Don't ever forget about the progressive and, in the negative state, regressive mode of spiritual and/or pseudo-spiritual development. This means, and we are repeating this numerously, nothing is the same today, and I can assure you that nothing will be the same tomorrow. This is the reason why you were advised to continuously explore and examine your lifestyle, your priorities and preferences in order to discover what it is in your life and attitude that needs to be transcended or entirely eliminated. By doing that, you would bring yourself into alignment with constantly happening changes and the progressive mode of the spiritual life.

Your energies, which you continuously discharge by your daily activities and seeming inactivities (during sleep and rest), are very much needed for the cause of the positive state, that is to say, for My cause. However,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

the same energies are desperately desired by the negative state likewise. So, you will be, and some of you already are, experiencing tremendous pull and tension in this respect as the efforts by the negative state to utilize your energies for its cause are being tremendously applied by all available means. Under these conditions, your attitude, your relationships with each other, your mutual support, help, interactions, cohesiveness, combinations of your specific and unique energies from your own level; your mutual love and respect; your mutual acceptance of the way each and every one of you is; your care for each other; your tolerance of each other; your understanding of each other; your openness; your devotion to My cause and My New Revelation; your mutual socialization for the purpose of combining, amplifying, multiplying and conveying your unique and specific energies to the positive state or to the Great Alliance, as well as for the purpose of mutual encouragement, verification, checks and strengthening of your positions, your roles and your standing in My cause, all these things are extremely important under the presently existing conditions in all worlds and pseudo-worlds and on your planet.

For this reason, it is no longer appropriate to isolate yourself from each other or to avoid each other, as the situation has been in some cases until now, because by continuing in that mode, you are inadvertently supporting the cause of the negative state by not combining your unique and specific energies with the unique and specific energies of My other representatives.

However, this requirement can be true only and only under one condition: The purpose, the motivational and intentional factors for such meetings have to be only and only for the above mentioned reasons and for nothing else. Such meetings shouldn't be taking place for idle talks about nothing, or about your pets, or things that have no obvious meaning and significance. In that case, meetings of that nature would serve the cause of the negative state and would have no positive meaning. Just the opposite: They would contribute to discord, which you have been occasionally experiencing in the near past, and to the exhibition of your ego states which would widely open the doors to temptation by the negative state to enter you.

And this discourse brings us directly to answering your question, Peter, about the possibility of some more hidden or subtle temptations and influences by the negative state on you. As you remember, you were warned that the renegades will be seeking all kinds of means by which they could influence you, impede you and utilize your energies for their cause. It is not necessary to repeat here the obvious modes of

temptations by the negative state which were outlined to you in one of the previous Dialogs. In the Eighty Fifth Dialog we mentioned how your domestic pets could be utilized to rob you of your energies and sidetrack you from your proper functioning during which your energies are needed somewhere else. In the Eighty Second Dialog we indicated to you how sexuality could be used for this adverse purpose, and how tempting it would be for you to get sexually involved with someone who is not related in any way to My New Revelation.

At this time I would like to bring to your attention another possible form of temptation which is not as obvious as others. In fact, it looks and feels very harmless and it would never occur to you that it could be just the opposite: It could pollute, contaminate and confuse your mind and lead you astray from the Truth of My New Revelation. As you know, in the last few years, a plethora of all kinds of pseudo-spiritual books and writings appeared in your bookstores. Among them are books which became bestsellers and which are read by millions of humans. Although we have already touched upon this subject previously, it is very timely to reiterate it again, because there is a tendency on your part to conveniently forget about it. Don't forget that the negative state very much tries to influence your memory so that you wouldn't remember too much about warnings which were given to you in this and any other respects.

Whereas in the past, up to this point, to the point of the currently ongoing shift, reading of such books could have been considered harmless; at the present time, these types of pseudo-spiritual books and writings, have become a potent tool in the hands of the forces of the negative state to tempt you by their content and what they convey to humans. As you noticed, Peter, some of My representatives in Europe and possibly in this country are curious about the content of such books and are eagerly reading them without realizing the tremendous danger that they are exposing themselves to by such reading. The fascination may come about by finding some statements in those books which are in seeming agreement with that which is contained in My New Revelation. And this is a dangerous trap. Some of you have forgotten what we said about this situation previously. It was said that the negative state will include in its pseudo-spiritual books some ideas of The New Revelation or some seeming truths which sound as truths in order to catch the reader in accepting the rest of the falsities.

What you have to understand in this respect, is that any correct or truthful ideas, if they are wrapped in distortions and falsities, because they are approached from the position of the negative state and not from

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

the position of the positive state, become useless and ineffectual in their impact or influence on anyone's mind and life. The combination of right ideas with the wrong ones, from the position of the negative state, contaminates the rightness of the right ideas making them the property of the negative state. Then the negative state utilizes them for confirmation and support of its own wrong, distorted and false ideas. Do you remember the symbolism of the barrel of brimstone and the honey? If you put a spoonful of honey into a barrel of brimstone, the brimstone absorbs the honey, stripping it of all its positive and useful properties. The honey will no longer be honey but, for all practical purposes, it will become an integral part of the brimstone, thus, supporting the properties of the brimstone. On the other hand, if you put a spoonful of brimstone into a barrel of honey, the brimstone spoils all properties of honey so that the honey could no longer be used for any good purpose.

This analogy shows you clearly to what the combination of some positive and right ideas with total distortions and falsities leads. So, during your reading of such pseudo-spiritual books, if you begin to admire how many good and positive ideas they contain, by the factor of their absorption by the distortions and outright falsities, you are supporting the negative state. And not only that, and this is very important, in the process of reading such books, all your unique and specific energies, as you were admiring and accepting those so-called right ideas, are being transmitted to and utilized by the negative state instead of going to the cause of the positive state and the Great Alliance. At the same time, by this factor, you opened the doors widely to the negative state to tempt you. Don't forget one important thing: By reading such books, in the process of their reading, you wasted very precious time which could have gone to the cause of the positive state. All that time went to the benefit of the negative state. In that case, the negative state got you and you can expect, if you continue in such activities, that your life will be influenced not by Me but by the negative state and the renegades in particular.

The problem with this situation is that, under the influence of the negative state, you will begin to justify and rationalize your needs and desires to read such pseudo-spiritual books and to consider their value for your own spiritual progression. In that case, I can assure you that you will not go along the line of spiritual progression but along the line of spiritual regression.

Now, all these things are very important warnings in order to let you know how volatile and dangerous the current situation is. You have been warned about this situation previously but, nevertheless, for your own good, it was necessary to repeat this warning in an even stronger degree

than ever before. It is for your own protection and safety. Of course, as always, by your own free will and choice, you may disregard this warning and continue in any way you wish in this, or any other respect.

This warning doesn't at all mean that you are prohibited from reading any books. You can read anything you wish. However, always consider the spiritual ramifications of such readings and how you are being influenced by the content of the books read. To be informed about something and to admire and accept that something, are totally different things. Remember that!

Another problem and/or temptation which can occur in the lives of My representatives in this respect is through their spouses who are not readers and followers of My New Revelation. You were surprised, Peter, by how many couples in Europe whose spouses not only don't read and accept My New Revelation but, in all their fanatical zeal, are almost violently against it. Some other spouses, who are not for or against it, but maintain some kind of neutrality, are reading everything else but My New Revelation. The possible subtle and imperceptible influence of such spouses on the readers, followers and practitioners of My New Revelation — My representatives, could be very much present.

At this point in time, when the negative state is in the position in which it is — a very dangerous and volatile position — it could very effectively use your non-reading and non-accepting spouses to undermine your works that you do in My services. It is conceivable that in order to keep some degree of external peace and harmony, there could be a tendency to compromise or to yield in many ways to one's spouse's demands or impositions. Or, in order to please one's spouse, you would go places, or do things, or read his/her books or do some other things with your spouse which would be spiritually dangerous for you and which would easily sidetrack you from the path of your spiritual progression and thus, from being My representatives. In that case, all your energies, which are needed for the positive state, would go into support of the negative state's causes.

Another form of possible temptation, that some of you may face, came about not so long ago. It relates to the appearance of, and presently widely used, Internet. As you know, the Internet became one of the major sources of all kinds of useful, useless and, in some cases, totally dangerous information. Presently, the negative state can and may utilize this tool for entrapment of My representatives. If you spend many hours a day exploring the Web, so-to-speak, and if you read all kinds of information which it contains, and if your purpose of being on the Web is

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

nothing else but useless intellectual curiosity and a time-killer; or endlessly, hour-by-hour, playing games on it or on your computer in general; or if it is for the purpose of avoidance of everyday pseudo-reality of your individual life, or boredom; then you have wasted your energies in the services of the negative state. Instead of devoting your time to My New Revelation, or to finding and establishing better ways to practice all its principles in your own individualized and personalized lives, or on some other more useful activities, you have wasted your precious energies for hours and hours on doing something which has ultimately little meaning and significance. So much time, so much energies were devoted to something which has no relevance to the needs of the positive state and to the needs of your own spiritual growth and progression. In this case your unique and specific energies were depleted with very little left of them to be utilized in the services of the proper and positive cause.

And this is exactly what the forces of the negative state are after. If they cannot utilize your unique and specific energies for their own adverse purposes and needs, at least they can trap you into wasting your energies somewhere or on something else instead of on the positive state so that very little or almost none would remain that could be utilized in My services and for the Great Alliance. Do you see the many possibilities how the negative state could utilize so seemingly harmless and, in some instances, even useful tools such as the Internet could be? The sophistication of the negative state in this respect and the many ways it can trap you into wasting your precious unique and specific energies on something which would make it impossible for you to give them to the proper causes, is very much advanced and potent.

Of course, this statement does not mean at all that you should avoid going online on the Internet. What it means however, is that, before going online, have a very clear outline and understanding of the purpose with which you want to do that so that you go straight to the area of your particular interest or information-gathering without wasting your time on useless browsing — this way or that way or without reading all kinds of junk with which the Internet is so abundantly infested.

As you see from these examples, there are two ways by which the negative state can and may rob you of your precious unique and specific energies. One way, which is the most preferable and desirable for the forces of the negative state, is to utilize them in their own services or for their own purpose. The immense significance and usefulness of your energies, the energies of My representatives, in their own cause could have a tremendous compounding and reinforcing effect and a most beneficial result on their position. You have no idea whatsoever what it

means for the negative state to have your energies — the energies of My representatives. Bear in mind please, your energies are very unique and very different from all others who are not My representatives. In the negative state they are valued as the most precious, most valuable, most desirable life-giving and life-supporting commodities which are desperately needed for the maintenance of their own pseudo-life. By the means of your energies, their pseudo-reality becomes more real to them than otherwise would be the case and they could continue in their negative efforts much more effectively and successfully with your energies than with anyone else's. Such is the quality and nature of your energies. This is the reason why the negative state, in its present condition, will be after your energies so much. And this is the reason why so much warning is extended to you in these Dialogs so that you take heed and recognize the dangers you are facing in this respect.

The other way of the negative state's interference with conveyance of your energies to our cause is less preferable and desirable by its forces but, if nothing else would be available to them then it could be utilized also because it would serve their purpose indirectly. If the forces of the negative state could succeed in redirecting your energies to something else which would be neither positive nor negative, in that case, it would be also welcomed by them because it would considerably weaken the position of the positive state on this planet as manifested in the lives of My representatives. In this case, your energies would be going neither to the positive state nor to the negative state, respectively. They would be totally uselessly wasted.

As you see from these facts, your responsibilities as My representatives on planet Zero are great. And the importance of your roles and positions is incalculable and immense. Up to this point you have not known what you have and who you are and how important your energies are for all concerned. It is time that you know this, recognize this and accept this. Again, remember that!

Of course, recognizing and accepting the importance of your roles, positions and the qualities of your unique and specific energies puts a tremendous burden of responsibility on your shoulders. Also, presently, it exposes you to the greatest possible degree of temptations by the negative state by all kinds of obvious and not-so-obvious means, ways and tools so that you could be swayed, if possible at all, to the cause of the renegades or, at least, if nothing else, to no one else's cause.

These are some important warnings for these times and situations. Of course, there are many other possibilities that could be utilized by the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

negative state to tempt you and to sidetrack you from your being My representatives than just the ones mentioned above. Most of them however, could be very much specific to your own individualized and personalized life and to your own unique position, role and connection to other dimensions that you have. These types of possibilities need to be discovered by the process of your own self-exploration, self-examination and intuition and by asking Me to help you in this process. To repeat again: It is always a good policy to turn yourself to Me and ask Me about what would be, in your particular case, proper or improper for you to do, or how to behave, how to relate, what to read or not read, what to have or not have, etc. By doing that, you will never go wrong.

As you see, Peter, and all who read these words, this Dialog was entirely devoted to some very timely and practical issues which need to be taken into consideration by all readers. Temptations could come in many subtle, imperceptible, hidden, secretive and disguised ways. The most favorite ways by which the negative state likes to induce them are under the umbrella of their being beneficial, positive, useful and good. Remember that!

Although from the position of the positive state you live in the world of illusions, appearances, and non-reality, from the position of your human nature, everything is very much real and tangible. So are or will be all your temptations. In order to give the readers time to ponder about the content of this Dialog, I would suggest to finish it for today and resume our dialoging some other time. In the meantime, have a very nice day, Peter.

Peter: Thank You very much for this timely and very current reminder.

Ninety Eighth Dialog

August 26, 1999

Peter: Some readers of Your New Revelation and these Dialogs are raising a question about the meaning of the term 'cycle of time.' They would like to have some clarification on what this term really means. You know, whenever I get questions of this nature, I wonder to what extent anything read in Your New Revelation was registered or retained in their minds. As far as I remember, this term was discussed in the Big Book (***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***). It was even pointed out that each cycle of time lasts approximately five quintillion years, more or less, depending on the spiritual level of its nature, during which it manifests in its relative condition, the quality of spiritual factors released by You from Your Absolute Condition, which rule and supply life to each cycle of time. I wonder, if, in these Dialogs we'll need to restate and to reexplain everything which has already been revealed in Your Big Book or any other books of Your New Revelation. Any comment on this or any other issue?

The Lord Jesus Christ: If I were you, Peter, I wouldn't be so frustrated or disappointed by questions of this nature. Don't forget one important fact: If the questions are asked, no matter what kind, and no matter how many times they were answered, or answers which are already contained in some or all books of My New Revelation, it only means that we have to look on these answers from an entirely different perspective. As you know, each specific time, and in our case, each phase of the ongoing shift, very often, requires restatement and reevaluation of some terms in order to bring into focus its different aspect and meaning which was not available, or timely to have, up to this point. So, if someone is asking for the explanation of the term 'cycle of time,' it only means that it is now timely to look at its meaning from the position of the currently ongoing shift and its currently running phase.

The term 'cycle of time' can be considered a philosophical construct, and in conceptualization of human language and understanding, from the position of the time-space continuum, a physical (in the sense of physics) construct. In some way you can consider its genesis as the need to establish an orientation point for any relative mind, which is not anchored in the Absolute State and Absolute Process, in order to give it some direction in understanding how and why things flow or are being conveyed to it the way they are.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

What you have to understand, — and this will not be an easy task, — is that the entire meaning of the term ‘cycle of time’ denotes the nature of how any form of relationship can be established and accomplished between the Absolute State and its Absolute Process and the relative state and its relative process. The issue here is, as mentioned in the Twenty First Chapter of the Big Book, the state of Creation and the process of Creation. As you remember from that chapter, the state of Creation has always been and it will always be. Thus, it has no beginning or ending. However, the process of Creation occurs, and in application to the physical multiverse of Creation, it has some kind of tangible beginning and tangible ending. In the moment Creation occurs, it becomes relative to the Absolute State.

As you are aware, the life of Creation and its multiverse, is maintained by life force energies which are being continuously emanated from the Absolute State — Me. As you also know, the relative Creation and its multiverse, due to its relative condition, is incapable of containing all and everything which is contained in the Absolute — Me. And yet, in order to continue in its progressive mode, Creation needs to be supplied by everything contained in this Absolute State — Me.

How do you go about providing for Creation and its multiverse everything that is contained in this Absolute if Creation is incapable of containing in the totality that Absolute? And here comes the problem with explaining the multilevel character of being and existence of Creation and its multiverse. As you know, basically and initially, Creation proceeded in three levels of its manifestation and establishment of its life. As you remember, these three levels reflected the nature of the Absolute, which functioned and discharged Its Absolute Energies from Its three levels — from the most within spiritual level, or Its Spiritual Mind; from the intermediate level, or Its Interior Mind; and from the external level, or Its External Mind. As these Creative Energies of the Absolute were in the process of their discharge in the outward direction, they established three distinct and different dimensions — the spiritual dimension or the spiritual world; the intermediate dimension or the intermediate world; and the external dimension or external or physical world.

As you know, in the spiritual world, as well as in the intermediate world, the time-space phenomenon doesn't have any objective reality in the same manner as it has in the physical world. The linearity of the physical world is determined by its nature which has a straightforward flow based on the externalization of all occurring phenomena. The term ‘external world’ and the term ‘external’ in itself and by itself denotes this

factor of externalization. Once something becomes external, it perceives and conceives itself as a linear beginning with a subsequent flow in the linear direction. From this nature of the external world, you have an objective experience of time and space. This is the nature of the time-space continuum. In it everything has a beginning as well as its ending, which establishes a foundation for a new beginning.

However, the problem, or, to be precise, the non-problem of the spiritual and intermediate worlds is in the fact that their positioning is such that it precludes the possibility of objective or external perception and conception of something that is space-time bound. And yet, because of their relative condition, in relationship to the Absolute, they need to have some orientation points that would enable them to perceive and conceive themselves as being somewhere and somewhen. In their case, this non-problem is resolved by giving them a subjective sense that they are somewhere and somewhen. This condition gives them a firm orientation point from which they can relate to the Absolute State — Me.

As you see from this description, we have established a foundation on which the answer to the question about the meaning of the term ‘cycle of time’ could be answered. As mentioned above, the entire issue here was the need to convey something which is absolute to someone who is relative. Because it is impossible to convey anything absolute to anything relative in its absolute content, the subjective time and space for the inhabitants of the spiritual and intermediate world, and the seemingly objective time and space for the physical or external world are established, within which a gradual release of everything contained in the Absolute State and its Absolute Process is instituted that gives all inhabitants of all worlds of the multiverse the needed energies and everything else in order to enable their lives to be lived, and for their creative functioning. The way you have to understand this issue is that any life is possible by its spiritual factors. These spiritual factors derive from My Absolute Spiritual Nature. As you remember, during My life on planet Zero, I clearly indicated that God was Spirit. In this sense, God — Me — was the Absolute Spirit. If the determining factor for any life, including My Absolute Life is always its spiritual nature, then it follows that everything or everyone else lives, breathes, functions and is, at all, by these spiritual factors.

So, in order to maintain any life of anyone to eternity, because they are relative, you need to feed them by the spiritual life which stems from Its Absolute Spiritual Life. And because you cannot give them everything, contained in that Absolute Life, at once, you release it in infinitesimally

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

small steps which are accommodated to the level of perceptive, receptive and applicable ability of each and every sentient mind.

Once you release from your Absolute State a certain spiritual component needed for the maintenance of any life, because of its Absolute Nature, it needs to be broken down into acceptable components accommodated to the relative condition of the multiverse and all its inhabitants. The impact of the released spiritual component, which rules the life of each and every current flow of Creation, is spread out throughout this flow in such a manner that it continues its influence and function until it is fully understood, accepted, apprehended, incorporated, internalized, externalized and manifested in the lives of all sentient entities situated everywhere and everywhen. In that moment another spiritual component replaces the previous one so that life of the multiverse could continue uninterrupted.

In order to exhaust all possibilities, contained in that one spiritual component, released from the Absolute State to the relative condition, because of the relativity of the multiverse and because of the relative flow of the process of the relative life, it takes a lot of subjective, as well as seemingly objective, time and space to do that. In your terms, depending on the quality and content of the released spiritual component, it takes approximately five quintillion years — more or less — to fulfill the entire purpose for which that spiritual component was released. The time needed for this fulfillment is called — **One Cycle of Time**. This term applies to the life of the entire Creation and its multiverse. The entire Creation and its multiverse lives by that which rules its course or which constitutes its very foundation on which it stands and functions. Thus, Creation and its multiverse proceeds from one cycle of time to another cycle of time in its own subjective and seemingly objective flow (in the physical multiverse), during which it reflects the various aspects of The Absolute Life — Me, in its relative condition.

This flow, or to use better words, the release of various spiritual components to My Creation and its multiverse, takes place in progressive steps. What does it mean — in progressive steps? Initially, symbolically speaking, — and only symbolically speaking — Creation and its multiverse, in order to relate, was situated far away in proximity to My Absolute State, Process and Condition. A different, and more relevant way of saying this is that Creation and its multiverse, in relationship to Me and My Absolute State, Process and Condition, was situated in the state, process and condition of outwardness. From the very onset of the process of Creation, this state, process and condition of outwardness, in

proximity to My Absolute State, Process and Condition, was positioned in a far away or the most-remote-from-Me state. The reason for this positioning was in the fact, that the newly established process of My Creation and its multiverse, in its symbolical infancy, could not be in closer proximity to Me, because in its initial relative infantile state, it would be burned to a cinder by anything coming directly from Me. For that reason, it was positioned into such a proximity to Me so as to enable it to be fed by very small and the most external spiritual components which could sustain its life and its functioning.

And here you have the rule and the law of spiritual progression. Creation and its multiverse begins from the lowest or, better to say, from the most outward position in relationship to Me, and then gradually and slowly, at its own pace, moves closer and closer to Me and to its own state of inwardness. This movement is ruled by the above mentioned cycles of time.

As My Creation and its multiverse matures and proceeds on its way to manifest the spiritual component released from Me, in the process of its maturation and proceeding, it is readied for the release of another spiritual component which comes from the more inward area of My Nature, thus, placing My Creation and its multiverse into a condition which, in the process of absorption, internalization and utilization of that component, brings it closer to the state of its own inwardness as well as to My Own State of Inwardness. Thus, as you see from this description, each new release of such a spiritual component, heralds the ending of the current cycle of time, and the beginning of a new cycle of time.

The above description and definition of the term 'cycle of time' relates to its global application as related to the entire Creation and its multiverse. However, as you know, within My Creation and its multiverse, there are many universes, galaxies, solar systems, planets, worlds, countries and individual sentient entities. In this respect you have to distinguish between the global cycle of time as applicable to My entire Creation and its multiverse, and the more localized cycle of time applicable to one universe, or to one galaxy, or to one solar system, or to one planet, or to one world, or to one country or region, or to one nation, or even to one individual. They are ruled by the nature of their own cycle of time as well as by the nature of the global cycle of time. The way you have to understand this localized cycle of time, is that, as each new spiritual component is released from My Absolute State and its Absolute Process, it is redistributed amongst all spiritual, intermediate and physical worlds and their respective sentient entities. This redistribution follows the law of titration. A certain portion, or its relevant quality, is taken out

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

of that one spiritual component, and it is broken down into as many smaller components as there are universes, galaxies, solar systems, planets, worlds, countries, societies, nations and individuals, and imparted on all of them, giving them a surge of a special type of spiritual energy which enables them to live, to function and to progress along the line of their own individualized, personalized and unique nature. The way these smaller spiritual sub-components are imparted on everything and everyone is that they are being adjusted to the quality, uniqueness, nature, purpose, goal, position, condition, state and process of each and every above mentioned entities and sentient individuals.

As each such entity and sentient individual absorbs, accepts, understands, internalizes, externalizes and utilizes this assigned-to-it/him/her spiritual sub-component, by the factor of fulfillment of the purpose for which that sub-component was imparted on them, they all contribute from the position of their own locality and individuality, to the fulfillment and closure of the global cycle of time. Within themselves, and within their own individualized and personalized cycle of time, as well as within the global cycle of time, at that point in time, they are ready to transcend their own condition and receive a new aspect from the global spiritual component which rules any current cycle of time. At that point, they are in the position to begin a new cycle of their own individualized, personalized and unique time, ruled by the newly released aspect from the global spiritual component.

The way you have to understand this function, is that one global spiritual component, which is released from My Absolute State, Process and Condition, contains numerous aspects, sub-components and various other elements that are subsequently redistributed amongst all and everything. At each particular subjective and objective time, in a progressive mode, a certain aspect, sub-component and their elements are released and imparted on all and everything at their own level of functioning, role, assignment and positioning. When that sub-component, or aspect or their elements has fully been manifested, internalized, externalized and utilized, a new aspect or sub-component or their elements, by the factor of the fulfillment of the previous one, is being triggered from the global spiritual component and imparted on all and everything, extending their lives, functions, roles and positioning. In that moment for them, a new localized cycle of time begins, within the currently ongoing global cycle of time. The bigger the entity is, such as an entire universe, for example, the longer the flow of time and non-time or subjective time is required for the full manifestation and utilization of the released aspect, sub-component or elements. In this case, its own localized cycle of time may continue for many millions or even billions of

years (as counted in human temporal terms). The smaller the entity is, such as for example, a solar system or even a planet, less time is required for that purpose. And on the individualized and personalized level of each sentient entity, the time flow is very short in comparison with all other bigger entities.

At one point in time, within the allotted five quintillion years, or within one global cycle of time, all sub-components, aspects and elements of that one spiritual component become fully and completely exhausted as related to My relative Creation and its multiverse. In other words, all of them were absorbed, apprehended, internalized, externalized, utilized and manifested by all involved, at their own localized cycles of time. When this happens, I am ready to release another spiritual component from My Absolute Nature, which will be coming from the more inward level of My Absolute State, Process and Condition. In that moment, the current cycle of time, as it fulfilled its purpose for which it was established in the first place, is being closed and a new cycle of time is coming into its being and existence which will carry this newly released spiritual component. And this is how My Creation and its multiverse, and everyone and everything within them, is continuous in its being and existence and how spiritual progression is assured to eternity.

The situation is somewhat different as far as the fate of the currently ongoing cycle of time in My Creation and its multiverse is concerned. As it was stated in ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***, the specificity and unusualness of the current cycle of time is in the fact that within it you have something that has never been in the previous cycles of time and that will never be in the future cycles of time — the negative state in its active mode and its end product — the human life. The nature of the negative state and human life is such that, because it was initiated from the position of the relative mind, it doesn't require as long a time, or being in its own state and process, as the case is with something that comes from the Absolute State, Process and Condition. Therefore, this cycle of time, within which you currently live, will be considerably shortened as compared with all others. The nature of the negative state and human life is exhaustible much faster than the nature of the positive state, which is ruled by the spiritual component coming directly from Me. This is one of the reasons why in the process of titration of its pseudo-nature, in all its aspects, sub-components and elements, all their carriers have a shortened life span as applied to their own individualized and personalized function, role and position which they have in the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero. Also, in relationship to others, who are in the positive state, the spiritual component that rules their lives is such that it is accommodated to the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

requirements of a shorter time or non-time flow than otherwise would be the case. This is done for the purpose of lightening the burden which you all have both in the positive state, and in the negative state and human life, due to the active mode of the pseudo-life of the negative state and human life. Hence, this cycle of time will not last as long as all the others.

I hope that this, somewhat extensive explanation, fully answers the question about the meaning of the term 'cycle of time.' Because the subject of this particular Dialog, Peter, is difficult, perhaps even very difficult, I would recommend to stop here and not to continue with your need to clarify certain possible discrepancies in some of our previous statements, which are on your mind.

Peter: I gladly postpone any of my own inquiries to a more opportune time. Please, accept my gratitude and appreciation for Your willingness to put up with our questions.

The Lord Jesus Christ: I can assure you, Peter, and all concerned, that it is My great pleasure to do so. Go in peace and continue in your good work for Me and for all My representatives.

Ninety Ninth Dialog

August 28, 1999

Peter: Today, I would like, if I may, to formulate my own question which relates to the possible discrepancy or contradiction between something that was revealed some time ago in one of the previous Dialogs and in a more recent Dialog, recorded in Prague. In the former Dialog it was stated that, at one point in time, before Your incarnation on planet Zero, the sentient entities, both from the positive state and the negative state, respectively, had direct access to planet Zero and could visibly appear to its inhabitants. On the other hand, in the latter Dialog, it was indicated that human life and pseudo-life of the negative state is unreal and because of that, it is not contained in the true reality of Your Creation. And not only that, but it was indicated on several occasions, that anything happening in the negative state and human life was like hieroglyphs to them so that they had no idea about anything related to the negative state and human life. How do You reconcile this discrepancy? Of course, I know the answer to this question but for the sake of others who might notice this seeming discrepancy, I would like to ask for Your explanation of this issue. However, before answering my question, perhaps You have something to reveal to us, or to add to anything previously discussed.

The Lord Jesus Christ: It is appropriate to answer your question, Peter. However, before going into that, I would first like to use this opportunity to talk about something else. There are two diametrically different issues that I want to touch upon in the form of a reminder. As you know, human language and its words, in its expressive, comprehensive ability, and to what each word contains, means and signifies, when it is used for explanation of deep and pure spiritual ideas and concepts is incapable to fully, and sometimes even remotely, convey the true reality of the discussed issues related to spiritual factors. The problem with this situation is that, if you are trying to convey to the human mind something related to very deep and most inward spiritual ideas and concepts, it cannot grasp the full meaning of that which is being conveyed to it. And not only that, but because of the tendency of the typical human mind to perceive and to apprehend everything in the external, literal sense, the proper understanding of such ideas, the way they are being conveyed to it in this respect, and the way their real meaning is, very often, eludes their full and appropriate comprehension.

This situation could become a problem. If something is not properly understood and apprehended, it may lead to the acceptance of those

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

ideas in such a way that the human mind either distorts their true meaning, — and this is a better case, — or it falsifies them completely — and this is the worst case scenario.

On the other hand, how do you convey to humans something which totally transcends their ability, or the ability of their language and used words, to grasp the full meaning and significance of that something? The limitations of human language and words used in this respect are enormous. This structure of the human mind and its language was originally fabricated by the pseudo-creators with only one purpose: To conceal as much as possible the ability of proper and correct understanding of anything truly spiritual, meaningful and deeply inward from humans.

The reason for this reminder at this particular time is in the fact that My New Revelation in all its aspects contains deep spiritual ideas. One of the reasons, although not the only one, why each and every one of you is on a different level of understanding, apprehension, conception, acceptance and practice of My New Revelation, is that your human mind, in your own individualized and personalized structure, grasps its ideas, precepts, concepts and principles from the position of your own pseudo-unique limitations and restrictions. This, in turn, leads to the possibility of your own brand of possible distortions and misunderstanding of what My New Revelation, in all its sources, contains. Because of the specific structure of your human mind, the tendency would be very strong to take some concepts of My New Revelation in their literal sense or in the sense of the meaning of the words which are used for conveyance of such spiritual ideas. Here we are not talking about the inner sense and the literal sense as reflected, for example, the way the Christian Bible was written. What we are talking about here is the meaning of the literal, external human language and its words which is totally and completely incapable of expressing the true meaning of anything spiritual, internal and Absolute.

Unfortunately, no other mode of conveyance is available to you at this time — as long as you are bound by the human language and its words. Take for example, a very important but highly abstractive and philosophical explanation of the term ‘cycle of time,’ which was extensively discussed in the Ninety Eighth Dialog. At one point of its explanation, it was said that My Creation and its multiverse was put in the farthest possible proximity, or in the most outward state, process and condition, from My Absolute State, Condition and Process. How do you really understand this statement by your typical human mind? Obviously, because your human mind is structured in the time-space categories, it would tend to perceive this statement in a typical time-

space bound fashion. In other words, your human mind would tend to see this relationship as something in the sense that I am somewhere out there, several trillion light years away from you in some kind of spatial-temporal warp-type condition, where I wait for you to mature enough in order to bring you closer and closer to Myself.

But what kind of other words or expressions could you use to describe such a non-tangible, non-literal and non-physical concept as the relationship between Absolute and relative or between Me and My Creation and its multiverse? There is no other way — if you want to use human language and its words to describe this relationship or any other important spiritual concepts and ideas.

However, as you remember, it was stated to you several times, that you, as My representatives on planet Zero, were wired somewhat differently from all others. This different wiring puts you in a position to utilize something for understanding such concepts, regardless of what kinds of words are used for their description, that is highly developed within you — your intuition. Your intuition, as compared with the so-called intuition of typical humans and researchers and discoverers, is of a totally different brand. Their intuition was limited only to the sudden discovery of the phenomena which were of the natural, non-spiritual causes. It is not the same type of intuition that you have. Although in their intuition My presence was likewise, it was limited to the one-sided flow from Me to them but not from them to Me, so that they couldn't perceive, acknowledge and accept My presence in them and ascribe all their discoveries, or whatever they were coming up with, to My presence in their intuition. This is the fundamental difference between you and them or between their brand of intuition and yours.

In your particular case, your intuition is geared entirely, or mostly, to the apprehension, grasp, understanding and acceptance of all My spiritual ideas in their right mode, the way they really are and what they really mean. This intuition of yours predisposes you, or makes it possible for you, to see everything the way it is behind the scene, even though, very often, you are not able to express it in the typical human language and its limiting, one-sided, literal and distorting (as well as disturbing) words; or to see it or comprehend it by your external mind.

The reason I am bringing this factor to your attention at this particular time, is because that part of you which is called your human nature, will be subject to the greatest temptation by the forces of the negative state. I can assure you that the renegades and all their minions will be very vigorously tempting the human aspects of your nature in order to make

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

believe that it is the most important part of your overall nature so that you would look upon everything not from the position of your special type of intuition but from the position of your human nature. I also can assure you that they are very much afraid, almost horrified, by your ability to intuit the way you are capable of. This ability of yours is totally and completely driving them insane because it undermines their position and makes it impossible for them to establish their rule based on total externalization, literalization and physicalization of everything in their domain. Their purpose in this respect is to totally eliminate from their mode of life and from human life anything spiritual, inward and properly intuitive. With all other humans, they have been succeeding very rapidly in this respect.

However, you are a totally different story. With you, thanks to your intuition, which puts you in the position of reception, understanding, acceptance and practice of My New Revelation, the renegades and their numerous minions are unable to accomplish their goal in this respect. But they know that you do have an aspect in your nature which is typically human. Therefore, they will be very strongly, viciously and forcefully targeting that aspect in question. The way they will do it is to make you look at everything and understand everything in a typically human, non-spiritual fashion. They will try to force you to forget about your intuition and to listen to that which is coming from the human aspects. One way of doing this will be to ascribe to the meaning of your human external language and its words, whenever any spiritual ideas, concepts and constructs are being conveyed to you, only that which is contained in your human language and its words. In this case you would tend to concentrate on the external, literal meaning of the words used to describe these important spiritual concepts instead of on your specific intuition which clearly explains to you the real meaning hidden behind those words.

If the renegades and their minions could accomplish this, they would effectively sidetrack you from the proper understanding of the ideas, conveyed to you, and you would end up distorting or even falsifying them. Should something like that happen, and should you continue to look upon all spiritual factors from the typical aspect of your human nature, then gradually and almost imperceptibly, you would suffocate your ability to intuit or to use your very specific intuition for seeing the true meaning of all spiritual ideas conveyed to you the way that meaning hides behind the external meanings of the words of the human limited and limiting language. And this is what the renegades and their minions would like to accomplish.

In view of these facts, therefore, it is very crucial and important for you to bear this danger in your mind and to ask Me to continuously magnify and amplify your specific intuition and to protect you (by protecting yourself) from falling into this trap hidden in the use of human language and its words as reflected in the typical aspect of your human nature. Because of this danger, you need to train yourself on a daily basis to utilize your intuition in all matters of your life but especially whenever you are receiving My revelation about deeper spiritual ideas such as contained in My New Revelation or, to be more specific, such as contained, for example, in the Ninety Eighth Dialog. Only by the process of your specific intuition will you be able to fully grasp the true meaning of all such spiritual ideas, concepts, terms, precepts and principles.

The other issue that I wanted to talk about is somewhat more practical from your human standpoint than the above discussed issue. It relates to your human tendency to ascribe to external things, such as to food's ingredients, for example, and similar things, which they don't have in themselves and by themselves. We have already touched upon this issue several times. However, at this time, it is brought to your attention once again, in order to look at it from the perspective of the currently ongoing shift. The issue here again is — temptation, to which you are and will be subjected by the forces of the negative state in order to deter you from properly leading and manifesting your spiritual life and from your role, position and assignment which you have as My representatives.

The danger of ascribing something to anything which it doesn't have, is in the fact that by doing that, you are, in fact, supporting the falsehoods of the negative state, seeing things not the way they are behind the scene but as they are on or at the scene. Any extreme preoccupation with properties of something which is neutral in itself and by itself, may lead to ascribing it something which it doesn't have. By projecting into regular, everyday type of food's ingredients, for example, (and this is only one example amongst many!), of which the normal and regular food is made, some harmful substances or elements for your body and soul, lead to the distortion and falsification of the true reality. In this case, it is not those ingredients, or any other similar things, that cause problems for your body and soul, and subsequently, for your spiritual well-being, but your wrong, inappropriate and inadequate attitude that does so. Unless you have some obvious medical conditions which would justify avoidance of the use of some of these ingredients, you would have no spiritual reasons whatsoever, for limiting and restricting your life and the everyday pleasures of that life which is, in itself and by itself, by its very nature, already restricting and limiting to an extreme degree and which gives you very little true pleasure.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

As mentioned above, any such possible tendency on your part, will be, and already is utilized by the renegades and their minions for adversely influencing your life. After all, if you, by your wrong and inappropriate attitude, accept and identify yourself with falsities, by ascribing to something external that which it doesn't have, you, for all practical purposes, support the renegade's cause who always see everything and all from the position of their externals. Knowing well the human tendency to ascribe to all such external factors and entities something which they don't have or contain or possess in themselves and by themselves, the renegades and their minions will target you very strongly should they detect that you are inclined to have such tendencies and that you are trying to avoid certain things in your life because of your wrong and inappropriate beliefs about the properties of such things.

Now, this is only a warning. Basically, you can do anything you want. You are not obliged to listen to or to follow anything which is being offered to you in the form of reminders or advice in the content of these Dialogs. However, as mentioned previously, one of the many purposes for which these Dialogs are being made available to you is to bring all these important matters to your attention. At the present time, the dangers are very potent and real, the temptations are very strong and difficult and your positions are being challenged on all fronts. Take heed and be alert to anything which could be utilized to tempt you. Remember, turn yourself to Me in your specific and unique intuition!

Peter: Thank You for this timely reminder. Before answering my question, which I formulated at the beginning of this Dialog, I would like to humbly ask You to make any comment on the question which Heather raised yesterday in a phone conversation with me, after reading the Ninety Eighth Dialog. Her question was: How does the concept of the lines of progression fit into the concept of the cycles of time the way it was explained in that Dialog?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, you see, Peter, here we are again facing the problem of expressing something in the words of the human language which is extremely difficult, or almost impossible, to do. Take for example, the word 'line.' What does it convey to your typical human mind? What would be the very first tendency to see behind that word? At first glance, in the human conceptualization of that word, it would be deduced that some straightforward line is in being and existence, which has some kind of beginning and, logically speaking, some kind of ending. In the true reality of this concept, no such line exists. However, this term came about in order to give you some orientation points so that you could

grasp how things evolve in being and existence and how they pseudo-evolve in pseudo-being and pseudo-existence.

Initially, this term was used to refute the false concept of reincarnation to which many humans desperately cling. At that time it was indicated that a certain line of destiny is followed by each participant within each cycle of time. The word 'line' is a theoretical construct which brings the concept of a buildup of a certain quality of spiritual reality, or pseudo-spiritual pseudo-reality, and its very specific aspects, somewhat closer to your understanding, which is followed by sentient entities in their choices to participate in the effectual implementation and discharge of that spiritual quality's aspect and their contribution to the fulfillment of the purpose for which each cycle of time was/is being instituted.

The way you have to understand this concept is by realizing that, once any aspect of the spiritual component, released from My Absolute Nature, within the globality of the relevant cycle of time, is discharged and establishes itself within the locality of each specific time and non-time, it produces its own 'line' of destiny, which requires its fulfillment until it runs its course or until it exhausts all its possibilities and its entire content. The way this process runs its course is by any volunteering sentient entity entering this imaginary 'line' for the purpose of taking upon itself its nature and its destiny and everything it contains in his/her unique way and manner. Two things, among many other things, happen in this process. By the very specific aspect of the mentioned spiritual component, the continuous life of each participating sentient entity in that 'line' is assured. Any sentient entity in that line, in fact, lives and is alive by what that 'line,' or, to be more precise, which that spiritual aspect in that line, continuously provides.

Because each sentient entity in that 'line,' in comparison with that line, or with the aspect of the spiritual component of that line, which rules that line and its destiny, is comparatively in a shorter cycle of time in relationship to himself/herself than the entire line in itself, that sentient entity fulfills its purpose much faster than the entirety of that line. And here comes the second thing that happens in this process. The departing sentient entity of that line, also leaves behind everything related to his/her specific nature and the uniqueness of contributions that this entity made during the stay in that line. These are necessary to leave behind in order to assure the continuation of the course which was running within that line and in order to give a base into which the newly incoming sentient entity could be anchored and build his/her own unique mode of life, thus, contributing his/her own efforts to the fulfillment of the purpose for which that line was established in the first place.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

From this process the false concept of reincarnation on planet Zero and the Zone of Displacement originated. As you know, the pseudo-life in the negative state and on planet Zero follows the same course. Thus, it has its own pseudo-lines which determine the destiny of all who agreed to participate in those lines. Because each sentient entity leaves behind everything related to his/her specific and unique nature, the incoming new sentient entity inherits all memories of that nature on which he/she builds his/her own unique pseudo-life. Due to the fact that he/she has no conscious memories or information about any previous participants in that line, he/she assumes that it was him/her who was in that line on many previous occasions.

In the positive state, however, the situation is entirely different. There is a full awareness about all unique former participants in that line and the full recognition that whatever was inherited from them belongs to them and is available to the new incoming sentient entities as a necessary chain of continuous progression for the purpose of fulfillment of everything contained in the aspect of that spiritual component which rules both the global current cycle of time, the localized cycle of time and the individualized cycle of time. Therefore, in the positive state the concept of reincarnation into the same line has no reality and meaning.

So, as you see from this description, each cycle of time has many imaginary lines of progression, each line having its own specific aspect from the spiritual component which rules the cycle of time in question. The corresponding factors to this line in your pseudo-worlds can be found in the existence of various nations which have basically a common goal, purpose, nature and functioning. They all have something very specific, inherent only to them and no other nation. Whoever incarnates into such a nation, inherits all its history that it had. Subsequently, the inheritor follows the same line which is characteristic to that nation, contributing to it his/her own unique and specific nature which is in accord with the needs of the specificity of that nation.

Similarly, in the positive state, many societies exist which are situated within their own imaginary lines where they fulfill their own purpose for which they chose to be in those lines. As you see from this description, the purpose for existence of such imaginary lines is to assure a continuous progression on all levels of being and existence of My Creation and its multiverse. Their function, basically, is to direct the proper flow of My spiritual energies, stemming from the spiritual components and all its aspects, sub-components and elements, released by Me, and to provide all sentient entities an orientation point and a subjective sense of being somewhere and somewhen in order to be able to

relate from their relative condition, state and process to My Absolute Condition, State and Process. Such is the meaning of these imaginary lines of progression. I hope this explanation will satisfy Heather.

Peter: I hope so, too. And I am thankful and grateful for this explanation. And now to my question, if we may.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, we may. There are several levels of explanation of how it is possible to reconcile the seeming contradiction or discrepancy between My statement that the negative state and human life are unreal and only appear to be such, and the allegation that sentient entities from both the positive state and the negative state freely roamed on planet Zero and were seen by many, almost with their physical eyes, so-to-speak. How is it possible if neither side had any recourse of recognizing each other's reality or pseudo-reality, respectively?

First of all, as you remember, the wiring of the nervous system and the physical brain of humans at those times (before and at the time of My incarnation on planet Zero), was very much different. This was the original arrangement by the pseudo-creators in order to enable humans to perceive them and the inhabitants of the negative state so that they could exert their influence on humans. The side effect of this setup was that if you are able to see some events in the pseudo-dimension, by the same factor, you will be able to have some limited ability to see something also from the other dimensions. However, this side effect was not considered to be a side effect by the pseudo-creators because they were able to convince humans of that time that whoever they saw, regardless of their nature, were from the very same dimensions, only with a different purpose in mind. Also, they needed this arrangement so that they could try to sway the members of My positive state to their cause.

Secondly, the pseudo-creators of that time, by their original connection to the positive state, were able, for a long period of time, (until My incarnation on planet Zero), to maintain that connection, thus providing some sort of bridge to the positive state so that some of its inhabitants could appear to humans in order to see what was going on amongst them and how the pseudo-creators proceeded with their goal and purpose. Thus, by and through the pseudo-creators, the non-reality and illusion of the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of their pseudo-worlds for that moment would become real for some selected members of the positive state.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Thirdly, as you remember, I have always been maintaining My special agents in your pseudo-world and in the Zone of Displacement, whose special role was to function as a bridge, not only of translation, but, at that particular time, also, as a means by which some members of the positive state could come down and do whatever was necessary to do in My services.

Fourthly, in the Old School, there was a division which was specializing in the training of some carefully selected members of the positive state to be able to see, to hear, to perceive and to participate in your pseudo-world and the pseudo-worlds of the Zone of Displacement as if those pseudo-worlds were real and sensible, in order to provide the necessary balance between the forces of the positive state and the forces of the negative state. This training was provided by these members of the original group of the sentient entities from which group the pseudo-creators originated.

And fifthly, as you remember, there used to be a special type of intermediate world, which was a transitional and training ground for all those who were about to be incarnated on planet Zero both from the positive state, from the negative state and humans proper. Because that intermediate world had some affinity to planet Zero, it functioned as a certain type of mediator amongst all of them. By its means, it was possible to apprehend the pseudo-reality and illusions of your planet and all the worlds of the Zone of Displacement as real and tangible. All these factors at that time served the purpose for balancing out the negative state versus the positive state. At the present time the situation is entirely different in all respects. But this is a different topic, not related to the present discussion. Also, it is for a different time and not for now. Therefore, I would recommend to finish for today and to continue in our dialoging some other time.

Peter: Thank You very much for this lucid explanation and revelation.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. Go in peace and have a nice day.

One Hundredth Dialog

August 30-31, 1999

Peter: Well, here we are, recording the One Hundredth Dialog. It seems like some kind of jubilee. From a typical human standpoint, it would be a reason for celebration. Is there any significance to this number from Your standpoint and from the standpoint of Your positive state and all present? Or is this number like any other number and we should not ascribe to it anything special or significant?

The Lord Jesus Christ: In fact, Peter, here at our level we are in the process of celebrating this event. And even though, in true human meaning, there is nothing special about this number in comparison with any other number, yet, from the spiritual standpoint, in this particular case, it heralds something important.

The importance of this event will be difficult to convey to you in your human words. Only intuitively will you know that something more than just a milestone is being established as of this day with recording of this particular Dialog. In the spiritual sense, something is being completed and closed, and something new and different is in the process of its nascence or beginning.

This event will require from all of you everywhere in being and existence, in pseudo-being and pseudo-existence and on planet Zero to prepare yourself for a different level of understanding of all spiritual concepts, and, particularly and most importantly, of My New Nature.

First of all, let it be revealed that the current cycle of time, in which you live and function, and the specificity of which is determined by existence in its process and unfolding of the negative state and humanity, is drawing to a close. How long has this cycle of time been in its process and unfolding? If you count it in human time measurement, then, existence of the Zone of Displacement has been lasting for approximately 20–30 billion years. As far as planet Zero is concerned, its age is less than that but its existence is still in the several billions of years. Now, this doesn't necessarily mean that humanity, in its present state and condition, has been in existence for the same period of time. Its existence could be counted in several million years. Don't forget that it took a long period of time, from the standpoint of time-space continuum, for the process of activation of the negative state, its full establishment and for the subsequent fabrication of typical humans, to take place. However, our count, in this respect, begins from the moment when a separation of the chunk of matter, from the total volume of matter, for establishment of the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Zone of Displacement, had taken place. Because of that, the true time for the beginning of this cycle of time, or for the so-called fabrication of the Zone of Displacement, and everything related to it, as well as for fabrication of typical humans, would differ much from the common scientific assumption of when your universe (anti-universe from our perspective) had begun its pseudo-life. So, don't look for any confirmation or congruency between what your scientists-astronomers are telling you in this respect and what is being conveyed to you in this Dialog.

Now, in comparison with other cycles of time, which could last up to five quintillion years, 20-30 billion years seems like nothing. In this sense, when we are talking about the closure of this cycle of time, or that we are at the threshold of its ending, we are using astronomical time measurements and not the measurements of the typical human life span, which counts in decades. So, the last few thousand years, or even a few million years, which this cycle of time still might have or might not have, in comparison with the many billion years it has had, seem like a very short period of time. Of course, all this counting is applicable only and only to the temporal-spatial continuum of the multiverse and not to other non-temporal and non-spatial dimensions. Moreover, the situation is somewhat different in this respect with planet Zero and its position and, thus, with humanity in general. As you remember from **The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ**, in Chapters 17 and 21 of that book, it was indicated there that planet Zero was positioned in place which is no place and in time which is no time. Its positioning is such that by that peculiar and mind-boggling positioning, it distorts the possibility of perception of true time and true place-space.

What is this situation with planet Zero and humanity telling you? It is telling you that any time-space designation in human understanding and conceptualization of time-space categories will be completely off and, thus, it will not reflect the true flow of time and the true positioning in space. What humans would have are illusions and appearances of time and space but not their true perception the way they are in their nature and characteristics as they occur within the real temporal-spatial continuum or in the real physical multiverse.

For this reason, it is very difficult for humans to understand what true time and place-space are all about. In this respect, when we talk about the ending or closure of this cycle of time, we are not using the time-space measurements the way humans understand and use them. For us, in our conceptualization of these categories, the time allotted or the time which remains for the existence of the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero, or to be more precise, the time that remains for the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the negative state and humanity in its present

condition, is a very short time, counted almost in days or weeks. However, when you apply the same time to its human conceptualization or to that portion of the cycle of time which is allotted to the negative state, and particularly to planet Zero and to humans, in their pseudo-time these days or weeks could equal several thousands or even millions of years.

Of course, regardless which way you look at this issue of ending or closure of this cycle of time, whether from our position of timing or from the typical human position of pseudo-timing, nevertheless, it is the last phase of existence of this cycle of time. After all, even if you take humans' conceptualization of their own pseudo-time, several thousands or even millions of years in comparison to the pseudo-time during which the negative state and all related to it have been in its pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, it is really like a few days or weeks.

So, don't expect any drastic or imminent ending of this cycle of time. On the other hand, because no genuine perception of true time and true space is conceivable for humans to apprehend, you can also say that those thousands of years or even millions of years could really be equated to several months or a few human years. In this respect, you can really say that this ending can take place either at the beginning of the next millenium or during the next millenium or, on the other hand, several million years from now. This is how distorting and distorted human time-space measurements are. This is a reflection of illusions and appearances of their temporal-spatial categorization. Because, for humans, it is only an illusion and appearance, the discussed ending of this cycle of time could happen either in a few days, months or years or in many millions of years. No matter which way you look at it, their timing is still only an illusion and appearance that such will be the case.

For us, however, preparations are being made on all fronts for the ending and closure of this cycle of time. As of today, as this particular Dialog is being recorded, this process of the final phase and ending of this cycle of time is being put into motion. This is the reason why it was stated at the beginning of this Dialog, that it reflects and represents more than just a milestone. At this junction of all events taking place everywhere and everywhen in other dimensions, within the currently ongoing shift, you can say that this is one of the most important events that have been in process of their occurrence during this cycle of time. So far, nothing as important has occurred as that which is taking place right now. And this is the reason why we are celebrating this event in the spiritual world and in many other dimensions of My Creation and its multiverse. So, in essence, you may celebrate too, even though it is difficult, or almost impossible, for the human portion of your mind to understand or to apprehend what is really going on in this respect.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Now, when we are talking about the ending or closing of this cycle of time, we are talking about its global positioning and functioning. As you remember from the Ninety Eighth Dialog, each cycle of time is ruled by the spiritual component which I release from My Absolute Nature in a progressive mode. Furthermore, as you remember from that Dialog, this spiritual component is broken down into as many sub-components, aspects and elements as there are universes, galaxies, solar systems, planets, countries, nations, societies and singular sentient individuals. For this reason, when we are talking about the ending or closure of this cycle of time, it is necessary to apply this factor in a widespread manner. This means that, in the globality of its ending, within this cycle of time, there are many different time factors, accommodated to each and every sub-component, aspect and element, which require their closure or ending first, in order to bring about the final closure or ending of the global cycle of time in its entirety. This timing factor of ending or closure will be accommodated to the allotted life span of each entity and sentient individual in question. Thus, the shortest time factor will, of course, be applied with a singular individual or individuals. For them, as seen from the standpoint of their own subjective time, this ending or closure will be much sooner, than for their respective community, society, nation, country, planet, solar system, galaxy, universe, multiverse or the entire Creation in all its manifestations.

As you see from this description, from the standpoint of the temporal-spatial position, there is a sequential proceeding of the event of the discussed closure or ending. It goes from the least time needed for this to happen, as reflected in the lives of all individuals in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, to the longest time as reflected in the life of My Creation. On planet Zero, such events are reflected in a massive recall of humans from their world and placing them somewhere else into a different position and readiness for the global closure of this cycle of time.

The very first sign of such a closure or ending on the planetary and individual scale occurred during the massive earthquake which happened in Turkey, for example. The number of victims in that earthquake surpasses, many times over, any other earthquakes that happened in this particular century. Yes, there was one that resulted in a much greater number of victims. That one happened in China. But that earthquake happened in a different century and it also had a totally different connotation and meaning. So, in addition to that which was indicated to you previously why the earthquake in Turkey happened at all, it also has an entirely different connotation and meaning than any other earthquakes or similar disasters on your planet which have been taking place during the current century. You can conceive its occurrence as the

very first sign of heralding the closure or ending of this cycle of time, and within it, the closure or ending of the typical human life in all its negative aspects.

However, there is a direct relevance between what was said about Turkey's earthquake in one of the previous Dialogs, and its currently revealed meaning. As was indicated previously, that earthquake was a means of revenge by the renegades against the pseudo-creators. The fury and violence which is manifested by the renegades at this junction of their pseudo-activities, are also in response to the closure or ending of their own individualized and personalized cycle of time, as well as of their own pseudo-dimensions located within the Zone of Displacement. In their unimaginable fury, they are putting an all-out effort to prevent this closure or ending from happening. There is a paradox in this effort of theirs. The paradox is reflected in the fact that, the more furious and violent they become, the greater effort they put forth in trying to stop the clock from ticking in this respect; by that factor itself, they are accelerating this closure or ending to take place, from the position of their own time factors, from the position of their own personal cycle of time, and the cycle of time of their own pseudo-dimensions.

Thus, from now on, from this very moment, anything of this nature happening on your planet, will be the result of this closure or ending. For this reason, you, as My representatives, are advised to evaluate all such events from the position of this closure or ending.

What do all these talks about closure or ending really mean and signify? As you know, each cycle of time is alive, lives, functions and is ruled by the spiritual component released for that purpose from My Absolute Nature. If we are, in fact, talking about this closure or ending, we are talking about the spiritual component in question which is presently situated at its point when the entirety of its content, as well as all its sub-components, aspects and elements, is at a threshold of its being completely absorbed, internalized, externalized, manifested, assimilated and fully utilized by all and everything involved in the life of this cycle of time.

As you know, among many other things, two most significant events have taken place during this cycle of time. The first one was activation of the negative state, appearance of the Zone of Displacement, formation of various Hells, fabrication of the human stock and establishment of the other type of life other than the life of the positive state. The second most important thing was My incarnation on planet Zero into human life, via it to all regions of the Zone of Displacement and all its Hells, and, most importantly, acquirement of My New Nature and establishment of a new

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

form of relatedness between the Absolute — Me, and the relative — all in My Creation and pseudo-creation by the means which is contained in the three most significant words — **The Lord Jesus Christ**. These two events were determined by the nature, character and content of the released spiritual component which has been ruling the current cycle of time.

Because of these two events, which determined the entire nature of the current cycle of time, basically, they are the target of profound changes. First of all, in the process of this closure or ending, the negative state in all its aspects will be eliminated, and thus, will be no more. Secondly, the negative aspect of the typical human nature will be eliminated as well, and will be no more likewise. And thirdly, the understanding of what My True New Nature is all about will also undergo considerable changes.

As you know, any such event as the closure or ending of any cycle of time, and especially the current one, cannot happen in a blink of an eye. To close or to end one and then, immediately, begin with the other one is impossible. The abrupt closure or ending and the sudden beginning of something totally different, which has not been in being and existence up to that point, in the relative condition of all in My Creation and its multiverse, could cause a fatal shock to all participants in the current cycle of time. In order to avoid such a fatal shock, a transitional period from one cycle of time to another one is first being instituted. During this transitional period, a gradual and slow exposure to all new sub-components, aspects and elements of the new incoming global spiritual component, which will rule the incoming cycle of time, is taking place in order to adjust and accommodate everyone to the entirely new requirements of spiritual reality, which will supply for all Creation and its multiverse, a new content, form, meaning and understanding of life and living.

Thus, as you can see, each new cycle of time is preceded by a transitional period. In this period some old concepts and forms of living are temporarily retained, and then, as everyone is trained in the understanding and mode of application of everything new coming in, these old concepts, forms and conditions of life and living are being gradually replaced with new ones. Once all old components and forms are removed, and new ones are understood and accepted, then and only then, the next cycle of time begins.

The way all this is accomplished, is by the preceding energies which are emanated from everything new coming into its being and existence. As you know, any event at all, before it fully sets in, is preceded by its energies which are radiated and emanated from the content of the event

in question. In the concepts of physics, the emanating and radiating energy spreads out much faster than the core itself from which that energy originates. For that reason, from those energies, you can already judge, or readout from them, to some extent, the nature of that which will be forthcoming.

At the present time, you are entering a new phase of the ongoing shift, which will experience the first surge of these preceding energies and which heralds the event of closure or ending of everything old and established within this cycle of time and of the coming of something new and totally different that has never been experienced before. The first surge of these energies relates solely to the closure or ending of everything old and established. Their second surge relates to the character of the newly introduced transitional period which precedes the ascent of the new cycle of time. And the third surge of these energies relates solely to the nature of the released new spiritual component from the Absolute State, Condition and Process of My New Nature. Within this third surge of the energies in question is embedded a special type of different energy which contains something entirely new related to My Absolute New Nature. It relates to two tiers of changes: One tier is the new form of relationship which will be established and which will be taking place between the Absolute — Me, and the relative — all sentient entities. The second tier relates to dynamic changes within My New Nature as applied to Its understanding by the relative sentient entities.

The way you have to understand the statement about dynamic changes within My Own New Nature, is by the factor of My voluntary accommodation to the needs of My Creation and its multiverse and to the needs of all relative sentient entities. As you know, no one is able to encompass or to take in, into themselves, the Absoluteness of My Nature in its entirety. Philosophically speaking, and this will be difficult to understand, within My Absolute State, Condition and Process, all changes of My Nature, and the dynamics of those changes, are ever-present in a discrete, simultaneous, non-time, non-space mode. In that sense, **and only in that sense**, you can say that I never change because all My changes are forever present within Me at all times and non-times. However, this mode of My functioning is not conceivable and cannot be apprehended by relative sentient entities. In order to rectify this situation, from the position of relative states and processes, as well as from the position of the time-space bound portion of My Creation and its multiverse, it was necessary to project such changes in a continuous or sequential mode.

For that purpose, I needed to descend to that portion of My Creation and its multiverse which is time-space bound, and clothe Myself with their

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

mode of perception of reality and assume their proceeding time flow. By this factor I was and am able to convey My infinite progressive changes to them in their mode of perception, comprehension and apprehension so that they not only could relate to Me from their own position but have a foundation for their own progressive changes in all aspects of their lives as well.

This factor also applies to all My sentient entities who are positioned in non-objective time and space. As you were told previously, they live in their own subjective time and space. From the position of their own subjective time and space, within themselves, they apprehend My changes as a progressive, sequential flow almost in the same manner as do My sentient entities situated in time-space continuum. The reason we are saying 'almost,' is because, objectively, they have, in comparison with others, full awareness of the subjectivity of their perception which doesn't reflect the objectivity of the true reality of My Nature. However, they are also aware that without this subjective sense and perception, they would have no basis and foundation on which their own spiritual progression could take place. In that case, they would be locked forever in one limited and limiting mode of perception, understanding, apprehension and acceptance of My New Nature and what It contains, effectively preventing themselves from progressing any further. This adverse situation would not only impede any possibility of manifesting their own creative efforts and having incentives to proceed further, but, in fact, it would put them in the midst of the negative state which is based on such stagnant, limited and limiting conditions. In that case, the negative state would have to stay forever and the present cycle of time could not be closed or ended forever either.

As you see from this revealed factor, any progression is effected by changes in My Own Nature, and how those changes are being projected into the lives of all sentient entities. Also, even though the entirety of the negative state, and many of its human minions, deny that they have anything to do with Me or My positive state, they are able to function in their own pseudo-reality only because of those changes which have been released in the process of history of this cycle of time, as well as in all previous cycles of time. Those changes fuel life to everyone and everything, no matter where or when they are situated.

At the present time, the very first indication of the surge of the new energy is being conveyed to all in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. This energy is radiated and emanated from the core of the new spiritual component which is being prepared for its release into My Creation and its multiverse. As this energy begins its impact on all and everything, it will prepare them for the transitional period to

commence. From the position of time-space continuum, and from the position of humans on planet Zero, the time needed for this energy to be felt and experienced and the time for establishment of the transitional period to set in, can be perceived as many years or even millennia. However, before this energy sets in, and performs the preparatory work for this transition to happen, a portion of it is devoted to the process of closure or ending of everything related to the negative state, to human life and to this cycle of time in general. Again, the process of this closure or ending, from the human conceptualization of time, could take many years or even millennia. But it could also take only a few months or a few years if the choices are made by all involved to accelerate this process and to achieve this closure or ending much sooner than the energy available for that purpose would contain.

The nature of that energy and its potency to achieve this goal is such that it enables either the minimum time or the maximum time, or any inbetween time, required for this process to take place, accommodated and adjusted to the factor of choices of all involved. However, in the properties of this energy is encoded the factor of the minimum time and the factor of the maximum time. This means that this process cannot be completed sooner than the minimum time required for its completion; but also, it cannot exceed its maximum time. All this has to happen within these two poles of the discharging energy in question. Thus, as you see from this factor, enough time and energy is given for everyone to make appropriate choices and accomplish anything that everyone needs to accomplish within this cycle of time. This is one of the many reasons why it cannot be predicted with an exact date when the closure or ending of this cycle of time will be completed; when the transitional period will begin and how long it will last; and when the new cycle of time will be instituted.

In the process of this release, as the energy preceding it is registered in My Creation and its multiverse, and as it enters the awareness of sentient minds, it carries with itself the most important message to all of them. The message is that a new, different and transcending understanding of My New Nature, and what it contains and how it will be needed to be apprehended, accepted and applied in the lives of everyone, will be coming into focus, as an integral part of the soon-to-be-released (in a non-time sense) from Me, a very important spiritual component which will be shaping, formatting and giving life to the next cycle of time in which no place will exist for anything of the negative state and of the negative aspects of human nature to plague the course of its spiritual progression.

This message will prepare everyone's awareness to accept the fact that, although everything related to My New Nature, which was available to all up to that point, is true, correct and proper, nevertheless, it is only a very

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

small part of the totality of what My New Nature truly contains and of which It truly consists or what It truly is.

In the Zone of Displacement and on planet Zero the situation is somewhat different. In themselves and by themselves, no one amongst them is able to understand or readout from the preceding energies this message and what it contains. You, as My true representatives, are being informed about this fact by the means of this Dialog. The problem with you and all inhabitants of the Zone of Displacement and humans is that none of you, or them, are capable of detecting the surge of energy in question by your external or conscious mind. Because in your world and in the entire Zone of Displacement everything is externalized, the only thing that they and humans can detect is if it is of the external nature. However, this energy, and what it contains, is stemming from the state of pure internals — from the Absolute State of My Absolute Internals or Within. Because of that, it can be registered and readout only by the state of anyone's internals or their within and, subsequently, from that position, it can be transmitted to the conscious mind and the state of externals.

In order not to deprive anyone in the negative state about these facts, and make this message and what it entails available to them as well, I am expressing or revealing these facts in this Dialog, by means of external words, which are written down in human language and which will be read first and foremost by My representatives. As you remember, as you will be reading this particular Dialog, and as you have been reading all preceding Dialogs, if you read and have read them with full involvement of all aspects of your mind, and if you had My presence in your mind, or if you concentrated on My presence with you during this reading, your read words have been, are, and will be heard in My voice in the minds of those in the negative state who are assigned to you for that purpose. With each new reading of these Dialogs, as you were told, a different group of negative entities is assigned to you so that this message can be heard by as many as possible.

In the process of this reading, as this message, and what it contains, is received by the negative entities assigned to you, it enters their mind and triggers the opening of the doors to their internals, the doors which have been tightly shut, up to that point, and the message is registered and embedded in them so that they understand and convey it to all others in their proximity. The importance of that message is so obvious to them that, following its reception and incorporation in the inner sanctum of their mind, they become very eager to share it with all others. This is how this message will be spread throughout all the Hells and the entirety of the Zone of Displacement. Thus, the message of that energy, will prepare them likewise for the closure or ending of their own individualized and

personalized cycle of time and for the local cycle of time of their own Hell, as well as of the Zone of Displacement. And not only that, but, by the means of awareness of what My New Nature has been and will be about, they will be able, for the first time, to know, to understand, to apprehend and to recognize the truth about My True Nature, about Who I am and what the purpose of My incarnation on planet Zero and via planet Zero and human life to all their own regions was all about. Up to this point, they believed falsities about all these facts.

From the above revelation it is very obvious how important your role, as My true representatives, is and how important it is for you to study these Dialogs as well as all other sources of My New Revelation, on a continuous basis, and to incorporate their content in your life by the process of their internalization by all aspects of your mind and by your behavior. As you see from the above facts, you are doing this not only for yourself but, most importantly, for all others whose only access to this important information is by the means of your reading, studying and living or practicing in your everyday behavior what they contain. By doing that, you are contributing to the closure or ending of this cycle of time and preparing many in the negative state for receiving the New Aspects of My New Nature and the new, transcending spiritual component which will rule the incoming new cycle of time.

The situation with humans on planet Zero is different. Unfortunately for them, they are situated in the same non-pseudo-dimension as are your physical bodies and your external conscious mind. Thus, you share with them the same physical non-localization which has its certain specific pseudo-rules by which everyone's situation in this non-region has to abide by in order to feel or experience themselves and others as real and to be really real in the perception of their own minds. The reason we are using such unusual terms here as 'non-pseudo-dimension,' 'pseudo-rules,' 'non-localization,' 'non-region,' etc., is because, as you remember, planet Zero, paradoxically speaking, is situated in place which is non-place, in time which is non-time, in region which is non-region and in locality which is non-localization, and therefore, logically speaking, has rules, which are non-rules.

This particular situation with planet Zero and its inhabitants precludes any conscious access to anything which is being released from Me or from My positive state. Because of that, humans have no conscious awareness that anything of the above described nature is happening or taking place. Even if you, as My true representatives, read these Dialogs, or whatever books of My New Revelation, it doesn't enter their mind the same way as all those who are connected to you — be they from the positive state or the negative state, respectively. Humans either need to read the sources of My

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

New Revelation themselves, or they see a different type of your external behavior, or profound changes in you, which could lead them to explore the reasons for your changes and, subsequently, to acquire a desire to familiarize themselves with the written sources that enabled your changes and established your current behavior and lifestyle.

Thus, as you see from this peculiar situation with humans, they need the external examples in order to become interested in anything which was the source of those external changes. By their means they can be led into a desire to read My New Revelation — the source of and motivation for changes — and, subsequently, into the state of their internals. At the present time, the only key for anyone of the human stock into their within or the state of their internals, is by the means of reading and accepting My New Revelation. No other keys, ways or sources exist any longer.

Again, your behavior, lifestyle, attitude, relationships, your external appearance and the way you go about your everyday business, and everything else you do or don't do, became a crucial means by which other humans, who have no access to anything related to the true spiritual affairs or to the message of the discussed energy, or to you personally, are being impacted on the level of their unconscious mind. Thus, your responsibility, in this respect, is great.

The importance of the message that the discussed preceding energy carries to all everywhere and everywhen, regardless of by whatever means, cannot be emphasized enough. Don't forget that the major issue here is the impending change in My New Nature or, to be more precise, from My point of view, the impending release of something entirely new and different in My New Nature which has not been available to anyone up to this point. Whenever something of this magnitude and importance happens, it profoundly impacts and changes everyone everywhere and everywhen. There are no corners to hide from this impact. The information about this fact is for the purpose of preparing everyone in being and existence, and by your means, as My true representatives, in the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, and on planet Zero, to be in a state of readiness to experience the full impact of this release when the time comes.

As you see from this description, the first step is experiencing the impact of the preceding energy of impending changes which carries within itself the message about the impending closure or ending of this cycle of time, the impending opening of the transitional period, the impending release of an entirely new aspect related to My New Nature and about the nature of the spiritual component which will be in force during the next cycle of time. This message functions as important information to all in order to

give them enough time to be in readiness for the next step to commence. The next step consists of incorporation and assimilation of everything contained in that message, which makes everyone ready to receive the core of the changes preceded by its radiating and emanating energies. Once everyone is ready, the transitional phase begins. In the process of the transitional period, total internalization, absorption, assimilation and externalization of all changes take place which prepares everyone to enter the newly opened cycle of time. The major point, and most important one in the process of this internalization, is incorporation and assimilation of the new aspect of My New Nature or acceptance of Its transcending manifestation and subsequent application and implementation of all consequences, results and outcomes of this Nature in everyone's personal life.

If you take into consideration, the many times repeated factor, that the most important issue for everyone in being and existence is the understanding and acceptance of the Nature of God — Me, then it is obvious that any changes, or, to be more precise, any release of something new and different about My Nature puts everyone into the position of their own fundamental and profound changes. As the Nature of God, due to that release and manifestation, is no longer the same in their perception and apprehension, as a result of that non-sameness, they cannot continue to be the same as they had been before this release and, subsequently, they change likewise in order to accommodate themselves to everything new and different. This new and different stems from the New and Different in My Own Nature as applied to all relative beings.

As mentioned before, in My Absolute State, all changes are present in their absolute totality in a non-time and non-space condition. However, when they are applied to relative beings who are located either in subjective or objective time-space continuum, respectively, they perceive any release of something different and new as a change in the Nature of God. In their perception, God changed and He/She is no longer the same; while the reality of this situation is that God released from His/Her Absolute Nature something which was not available up to that point. The result of this release is that it is the perception and apprehension of the relative receivers of this release which changed, and not God Himself/Herself who eternally contains all His/Her changes. However, for relative beings, there is no other way to perceive and understand this event of the release but as a real change in the Nature of God — Me. And this is the way it is supposed to be.

So, in essence, you are entering the phase of this shift, which, in our perception and understanding of its nature, could be considered one of the most important and crucial because it entails receiving all the above

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

mentioned energies which precede the actual changes and the closure or ending of the current cycle of time. As mentioned at the beginning of this Dialog, the time factor for these energies for the purpose of having their impact is different in its relevancy to the spiritual condition and degree of spiritual progression of all involved and of their respective worlds.

Peter: This is a very important and most significant revelation, at least in my own perception and understanding of its true meaning. How will the situation be in this respect in the negative state and in human life?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, Peter, look at this issue this way: If the most important factor of life, any life, is the proper understanding and acceptance of My Nature, as indicated throughout all the books of My New Revelation, then, in order for the negative state and its end product — typical human life — to flourish and manifest its own opposing face, it needs to have a totally inaccurate, distorted and false perception and understanding of My Nature. Do you believe that if the negative state had or retained the proper and correct understanding and acceptance of Who I am and What My True Nature is that it would be able, even for one fraction of a second, to be in its own pseudo-being and pseudo-existence and to fabricate something so strange, unstable, confusing, uncertain and feeble as human nature? In no way could it do it that way.

Just look at the entire history of humanity from the moment of its fabrication, when it was put into its own motion, to the very present time. Do you think that, during its history, humanity has ever had any correct and proper notion what the Nature of God — Me, is all about? I can assure you that, aside from what was revealed about My Nature in Swedenborg's writings or in My present New Revelation, as reflected in the books that you wrote, Peter, nothing has ever been understood or accepted about It. But how many people read and accepted what was revealed about My Nature in Swedenborg's books, or your books, Peter?

If you carefully explore the history of humanity in this respect, you will find numerous irreconcilable, contradictory, obscure, convoluted and confusing conceptualizations of My Nature and what My standing toward and relationship with sentient entities and humans really is. In the true reality of this issue, none of these conceptualizations came even remotely close to the correct perception and understanding of Who I am and what My True Nature is all about. This factor is reflected in the numerous religions and their even more numerous respective sects who proclaim that their conceptualization of the Nature of God, and how they relate to Him/Her is the only correct one.

From a typical philosophical standpoint, you have there several major concepts which are trying to define and determine My Nature and how involved or not involved I am with My Creation in general and with humanity in particular. On your planet you have there the following major conceptualizations of My Nature in this respect: atheism, pantheism, deism and theism.

As you are aware, **atheism** denies the existence of any God; or that nature, the universe and everything contained in it was the result of some kind of creative effort by some kind of supernatural sentient being. **Pantheism** equates nature or the entire universe with God. This view, for all practical purposes, conceptualizes the universe as God itself. Thus, there is a certain degree of identification of God and the universe as one and the same, in a sense that the universe is the manifestation of God and God is the manifestation of the universe. For this reason, pantheism is not that far off from atheism. **Deism** admits that everything and everyone was initially created by some kind of God but that God has little interest in the affairs of His/Her Creation and leaves it alone without providing it with any input or revelation. And finally, **theism** professes that God truly created all and everything and not only that, but is personally involved in all affairs of His/Her Creation, providing it with His/Her input by the means of some kind of revelation, such as for example, contained in the Christian Bible and the Holy Books of all other religions. And although the theistic view of My personal involvement with My Creation comes close to the reality of this fact, nevertheless, the way it understands My True Nature is totally distorted or even false because it derives from the literal sense of those so-called Holy Books which portray Me by the way of human projection of how I am or should be, and not how I really am.

So, as you see from this grave situation, there is nothing in the human conceptualization of My Nature which comes even remotely close to the reality of My True Nature. Why do you think it was necessary to have The New Revelation which began with Swedenborg and continued with your/My books, Peter, if there wasn't even one shred of proper understanding or conceptualization of My Nature? The major need for My New Revelation, besides many other things, was to bring to everyone's awareness that My Nature is not what everyone thinks, or is convinced, that it is. Unless this fact is brought to everyone's attention in the negative state and in human life, no steps could be taken for the process of elimination of the negative state and human life in its negative aspects.

What do you think, Peter, is the most important and most potent tool for the process of elimination of the negative state and all its aspects and factors? It is by getting rid of or eliminating from their mind the wrong, distorted, inappropriate, false and totally inadequate conceptualization

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

and understanding of My True Nature and Its acceptance the way it really is. My New Revelation was and is being given for this purpose exactly — to know what My current Nature is or how My Nature is really being manifested in the reality of My being and existence. I can assure you, Peter, and all who read these words, that this is the most important purpose for which My New Revelation was and is being given to you and for which it has been and will be made available to all in the negative state and in human life. By its means, **and only by its means**, elimination of the negative state and of the negative aspects of human life will effectively and successfully be accomplished.

Due to the above most important revealed facts, it is obvious where the effort of the renegades will be felt and experienced most by humanity in general. By all available means, the renegades will block, as much as possible, the awareness of humanity, and everyone in their own domain, about acceptance of anything revealed in My New Revelation about My True New Nature. It is the awareness of the existence of My **New** Nature and how the released information about the changes in It is being conveyed to all, which is the most dangerous knowledge and its acceptance that poses the greatest danger to the cause of the renegades.

The prior conceptualization of My **Old** Nature doesn't have this connotation for the renegades because it portrays Me in the projections of humans traits and characteristics which are, in most instances, false or distorted. As long as you hold the old image of My Old Nature, the way it was/is portrayed in human's so-called Holy Books, you keep them in the clutches of the negative state because such nature in true reality doesn't exist. If, in true reality it doesn't exist, then, whatever humans worship, they worship an empty notion which no longer exists anywhere or anywhen. By that factor, life of the negative state, the way the renegades want it to be, is assured in its indefinite continuation.

Due to this fact, the renegades have no choice in this matter but to target the spread of My New Revelation and to tempt My representatives by all available means so that they could be swayed from their mission which is, among many other things, to carry in their mind, heart and life, the proper, correct and right image of Who I am and what My New Nature is all about as revealed in My New Revelation. **You can consider this part of the mission of My true representatives on planet Zero as the most significant, the most important and the most needed one.**

The issue of the renegades targeting you is connected with the question about which many readers of these Dialogs are asking. How is this targeting accomplished by them and, whether they know specifically who you are in your own identity and personality? The targeting is

accomplished by means of various temptations, the way they were outlined in the previous Dialogs and which will be described and reminded to you, from time to time, in subsequent Dialogs. Seeking out and finding the most sensitive and vulnerable points of the human aspects of your nature, and what the priorities of your daily life are, will be the most effective way of tempting you to recede from your involvement with My New Revelation and from constantly carrying My True Nature in your mind and heart, communicating It to everyone who comes in contact with you; and relating It to them by your sole presence in their company even if you don't say a word verbally about your understanding and acceptance of My New Nature. Your sole presence in their company is sufficient to influence their unconscious mind which is able to readout the information of My New Revelation about My New Nature and Its acceptance in your mind and heart and which will be permanently registered in the unconscious portion of their mind and, in an opportune time, utilized for their salvation in the final outcome of the pseudo-life of the negative state and human life in its negative aspects.

Do they know who you are personally, individually and concretely? Even if they were to know you that way, don't forget about the factor of insulation into which you were wrapped and which protects you, as well as them, from any harm to you or to them. The only time they can get you is if you succumb to their temptations. But even then, if you recognize your mistake, and if you correct it on the spot, so-to-speak, they would have no power over you and they would lose their awareness of your identity. Basically, however, they don't have direct knowledge of your identities. The way they go about tempting you, is by setting up all kinds of traps along the roadside which you travel, in the same way as a hunter sets up traps in the woods and fields for the animals to fall into. As you travel your road of life, the renegades hope that you will fall into one of the numerous traps they set up for you, hoping that by the typical aspects of your human nature, you will be caught in their traps and, subsequently, will succumb to their temptations. It is only in the moment that you get caught in one of those traps that they become aware of your true identity.

So, as long as you are aware of the existence of these traps, and as long as you don't open yourself up by your inappropriate attitude and behavior to their temptations, you have absolutely nothing to be afraid of. In no other ways would the renegades have power over you. Why do you think we have recently been talking so much about various forms of temptations that you may be subjected to by the renegades? To warn you, to prepare you and to prevent you from falling into the states of temptations by the means of the renegades' traps.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

The human portion of your nature will be the most vulnerable and the most sensitive to these temptations. However, if you are fully aware of these facts and if you constantly have Me in My True New Nature on your mind and in your heart, and if you direct all your thoughts, feelings, emotions, senses, or whatever you have, on My presence in you in My New Nature, and if you surrender the human aspects of your nature to Me, I can assure you that you will not succumb to the renegades' temptations. At all times you will be safe and secure. After all, don't ever forget that I need you the way you are in your position and role as My true representatives. The importance of your role and position has been emphasized many times over throughout these Dialogs. If you are the carriers of the correct and right perception, understanding and acceptance of My New Nature, as well as of all the principles of My New Revelation in all its major sources, and if this carrying is one of the most important and crucial portions of your assignment from Me, then you can be assured that everything is being provided for the purpose of protecting you and preventing you from any interference with or impediment of carrying out your missions in this respect. Of course, as always, this is all contingent upon your full acceptance, by your own free will and choice, to carry within your mind and heart, and to exhibit in your daily life, My True New Nature and everything contained in My New Revelation.

Peter: On behalf of all of us, thank You very much for Your assurance in this matter. What about the release of the entirely new aspect of Your New Nature, which will change or will transcend the ways we perceive and understand Your Nature at the present time? How will the energies which precede this monumental change influence our positions and roles in this respect, if any?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, Peter, first, let's look at this issue from or in a somewhat historical perspective. The issue here is the three words: **The Lord Jesus Christ**. From the position and perspective of My New Revelation, and from My Own perspective, these words incorporate, in a mystical and secret manner, everything contained in My Absolute New Nature, or to be more precise, in that aspect of My New Nature which relates to the nature of the currently ongoing cycle of time. The nature of this particular cycle of time, in which the negative state and human life are in their pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, in order for it to fulfill its purpose for which it was triggered and put into motion in the first place, required the establishment of My New Nature or release of that new aspect of My Absolute Nature which would be congruent to the needs of this cycle of time and to the ultimate salvation of all from the illusions and appearances of the negative state and human life in its negative aspects.

There are many more factors to this release than just that but those factors are of absolute proportions and, therefore, they could not be grasped by any relative mind. The relative mind however, knows about the existence of these factors and accepts them as such without trying to understand them in the present state of its progression or at its present level of functioning at which it is currently (within this cycle of time). On the other hand, as the sentient mind is on its way of progression, within each succeeding cycle of time, it comes closer and closer to the level of its functioning, at which level it can grasp more and more of anything related to My Absolute New Nature which, from its perspective, and from the perspective of all reality, is constantly becoming Newer and Newer and more and more comprehensible and apprehensible in Its Absolute Properties. The way this process takes place, is by the above mentioned consecutive and sequential release of new aspects from My Absolute Nature in the manner that they are being accommodated to any transcending state of the sentient mind.

Now, as mentioned above, this cycle of time is ruled by everything contained in the concepts of the three words — **The Lord Jesus Christ**, or, in other words, by My New Nature. How do you understand this statement, from your standpoint, if My New Nature has been in being and existence only for a few years (since Christmas of 1987)? In the non-time and non-space/place condition, that is to say, in My Absolute State, Condition and Process, My New Nature, as related to this cycle of time, or as related to the time-space continuum, or as related to the very specific and unusual needs of this cycle of time, has always been in a state of My Absolute State within Me, but not in Its Process. From the position of that State, related to My New Nature, which became Its own Absolute Process, I have continuously ruled this cycle of time. In this mystical and philosophical sense, the rule of this cycle of time has always been executed from My New Nature or from that which is contained in those three words — **The Lord Jesus Christ**. So, as you see, from your temporal perspective, the very State of My New Nature has always been with Me, and its release or application of its powers from the position of that State began at the very same moment when this cycle of time was established and came to its fruition. In your temporal scientific terms, as related to your own universe or pseudo-universe, you can say that this State of My New Nature, has ruled this cycle of time for at least 20-30 billion years.

However, the very Process of this State, in order to establish Its spatial-temporal position and in order to effectively establish Itself in the illusions and appearances of the pseudo-reality of the negative state and human life, by which factor they became reality as well for Me the same way as for humans and all other creatures and sub-creatures of the negative state and all regions of its Zone of Displacement, as well as to all

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

others elsewhere, who are in the time-space continuum, it took My incarnation on planet Zero, acquirement of the human nature and all else related to this event, to change from the State of My New Nature to Its very Process. In other words, I also became tangibly, concretely, physically, externally, and in all other ways, My New Nature, as embodied in the three words — **The Lord Jesus Christ**.

So what did happen or what is presently happening to the Lord Jesus Christ or to all concepts contained in those three words? As you know, the way those words are conceived and utilized by the majority of humans and all in the negative state, became in their mind totally meaningless without any substance to them. How many times in human expressions, during their talking or saying something, those words or some of those words, are being taken in vain without ascribing to them any significant meaning? In their use, they became empty notions, used for cursing or for some other, mostly negative, purposes. Many people are turned off by those words. I can assure you, Peter, that if your books would be put on display so that all could see them clearly, making them available to all as free copies, the majority of humans would turn away from them with disgust, only because they would see the three words — **The Lord Jesus Christ**. This is how far Christian religions and their numerous sects bastardized, polluted, distorted, falsified and degraded their true meaning. The negative state, by means of all existing religions on planet Zero, was very successful in accomplishing this goal.

Here we are not going to go into the reasons why this bastardization, pollution, distortion, falsification and degradation was permitted by Me. The need for this permission was extensively discussed in the other books of My New Revelation. The purpose of this particular Dialog is different. We are building here a foundation for the revelation of the possible impact on you, My representatives, of the energies which herald something entirely new coming related to My New Nature and how that nature will be changing and, subsequently, influencing all.

Moreover, even some of My representatives question or have difficulties accepting the need for calling upon Me by the means of those three words — **The Lord Jesus Christ**. Either it seems to them too common, too misused, abused, boring, meaningless and banal, thanks to the negative state's influence on how those words are being used by humans, or they complain that I, being Absolute, in naming Myself, should come up with something more elevated and more effectual than those three words. They would like to see Me name Myself by one word which would be able to contain all that, and more, which is contained in the three words — **The Lord Jesus Christ**.

Why is it that these requirements are entering the minds of some of My representatives? Obliquely speaking, it is the very first sign of the preceding energies, containing the message of change in My New Nature and how that Nature will impact all in being and existence, in pseudo-being and pseudo-existence and on planet Zero, which energies are effecting their minds and raising those questions. Intuitively they feel that some imminent changes are forthcoming and that those changes have something to do with My New Nature as reflected in the words — **The Lord Jesus Christ**.

The question in your mind, Peter, which resulted from everything we have been talking about so far, relates to the fact, whether in the new cycle of time, following the closure or ending of the current cycle of time, these three words — **The Lord Jesus Christ** — will be retained or will be replaced with some other words or ideas, or concepts or whatever mode of expression will be needed at that time in relating to Me by all sentient entities.

Peter: Yes, You are very right. This question has been going through my mind for some time now. The rationale for its asking is as follows: If Your New Nature, as reflected in the three words, — **The Lord Jesus Christ** — is ruling this particular cycle of time, and if, whatever their mystical and secret meaning contains relates to the elimination of the negative state and negative aspects of human nature, and to the subsequent salvation of all, then, would it be necessary in the next cycle of time, in which nothing of that negative nature would be present, to retain those three words and to relate to You from their position? Wouldn't it be a contradiction to Your statement in the Second Chapter of **The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ**, which indicates that The Lord Jesus Christ will rule all and everything to eternity?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Do you remember what was said in one of the previous Dialogs, when we were answering Milan Schultz's question why I was not able to come up with one single word for My Name which would contain everything and more which is in the three words — **The Lord Jesus Christ**? As you remember from that Dialog, it was indicated to you that in the spiritual world and in My Own Absolute State as those three words ascend to Me, they are converted into One Beautiful Idea which contains everything and all which is contained in the initial three words as they are uttered on the human level.

Thus, everyone in the spiritual world recognizes in that One Idea the words — **The Lord Jesus Christ**, in such a manner so that it conveys to them, in that one idea, everything contained in the initial three words. What does it mean? First of all, in the mentioned chapter of My New

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

Revelation, we were talking about My New Nature as reflected in My becoming The Lord Jesus Christ to eternity. In this respect, these words signify that whatever was accomplished during My unification with that portion of My Absolute Nature which is called by humans — Father, will stay to eternity, and the situation will never ever again revert back to itself the way it used to be before My New Nature came to its most desirable, and expected-by-all, fruition.

Secondly, the accomplishments in this respect were designated by the change of My Name in order to give everyone in My Creation and its multiverse, as well as in pseudo-creation and on planet Zero, the possibility to have a tangible perception, understanding and acceptance of what My New Nature is all about. The spiritual quality of those three words, and their mystical and secret power, enabled such conveyance and understanding to be established in everyone's mind.

Thirdly, although My New Nature has a direct relevance to the needs of this particular cycle of time, it is not limited only to those needs. What you have to understand very clearly in this respect, Peter, is that without continuation of My New Nature, as it was established in its Process from Its Absolute State, the next cycle of time could not come into its being and existence. In fact, its establishment is totally contingent on My New Nature as reflected in those three words — **The Lord Jesus Christ**.

However, this statement in no way implies that no other aspects are contained in My New Nature which would not be utilized in or needed for the next cycle of time to commence. You have known only about those aspects of My New Nature which related to the needs of this cycle of time. Up to this point, it was premature to talk about some other aspects of that Nature. First of all, it was necessary to establish and ingrain into the very core of this cycle of time those aspects of My New Nature which related to the elimination of the negative state and salvation of all. Don't ever forget even for a moment that throughout this cycle of time the motive of salvation has been reflected in all creative efforts and writings of all its participants. For that reason, only those aspects of My New Nature were emphasized and put in the foreground which related to this process of salvation.

But, as of now, we have established everything that needed to be established in this respect and we are in the mode of the very first step to inform everyone that there are infinite numbers of aspects in My New Nature which will be released for each new cycle of time in a progressive and sequential mode.

As indicated previously, from the position of the relative sentient mind, any release of such a new aspect from My New Nature is perceived and understood as the very change of My Nature. Therefore, My New Nature, with each new cycle of time, in its correct perception, becomes always newer and newer. This newness is apprehended by all as the very New and Different Nature of My Absolute Being and Existence. This is one of the very important reasons, why I stated so many times that nothing in My New Revelation should ever become old. My New Revelation has to be always new, renewing itself and regenerating itself, in order to reflect these facts about My New Nature. If My New Nature is always in the process of becoming newer and newer and different and different, so is My New Revelation. Otherwise, it could not be My New Revelation.

So, will the name of The Lord Jesus Christ be retained in the next cycle of time as some new and different aspects of My New Nature, which will rule it, will be released and in the minds of all sentient entities My New Nature will change, becoming newer and different? It all depends on from what perspective and how you look at this issue of changes. Looking at it from the present human perspective, that Name and what it really contains, can never change. The reason for this is in the fact that incorporation of human nature without its negative aspects, after experiencing them all, into the totality of My Absolute Nature, cannot ever be removed. It will always be there to eternity. In order to reflect this fact, the name — **The Lord Jesus Christ**, thus, will be retained to eternity likewise.

However, the factor of My Human Nature, embedded into My overall Absolute Nature, has a much more significant meaning than just a reflection of My experience of everything human and negative. What it does, and this is its most important function, it allows Me to come down (symbolically speaking) to the level of all relative sentient beings and relate to them from *their* position, perceiving Me as one of them. Without the Human portion of My New Nature, such experience would not be possible. In that case, all sentient entities would be deprived of one of the most important experiences of their lives — to be with Me as one of them and to have Me involved personally in all their external activities. From this standpoint, because the words — **The Lord Jesus Christ** — reflect this one of the most important factors, this Name will be retained to eternity.

On the other hand, once the negative state is eliminated and once all negative aspects of the typical human nature will be no more, the situation with humans and all creatures and sub-creatures of the negative state will profoundly change. They will all reactivate their ability, locked and closed for many millions of years, to communicate in ideas and from

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — First Volume

mind to mind and in the language in which the sentient entities in the positive state communicate. In that case, the crude words of the typical human language, which reflect very little meaning of the true content of any idea, will no longer be used. Because of this new setup, the One Beautiful Idea, which contains everything contained in the three words — **The Lord Jesus Christ**, will replace the necessity to utter those words in the same manner as you do now. In the meantime, however, continue to use them as before but with the idea in mind that this is a transient situation and that you are on the threshold of something very new and different which is soon to be released (in a non-time sense) and which is preceded by its energies. These energies are already influencing your life covertly or will be influencing it covertly as you will be reading this One Hundredth Dialog.

The information contained in all One Hundred Dialogs is immensely important, potent and significant beyond your full comprehension. You haven't had full awareness about what you have been and will be receiving — if the situation warrants having such future receptions. All information, given to you in these Dialogs, no matter how insignificant and unimportant it seemed to you, has the most significant and impacting influence on all levels of My Creation and its multiverse. Therefore, don't underestimate it but cherish it as something unique and very needed, coming directly from Me — **The Lord Jesus Christ**.

At this point in time, My recommendation would be to finish this volume of the Dialogs so that it appears as one book and, if the situation warrants, to begin the next volume with the One Hundred and First Dialog. However, it is important to have some time off between completion of this book of Dialogs and the beginning of the next one. All readers of these Dialogs need to have time for absorption, assimilation, internalization, externalization and practice of everything which was revealed in them. This takes time. Unless there are important questions of multiversal significance, we'll take a break at this junction of time.

This has been the longest Dialog recorded by you so far, Peter. However, the meaning of that which is happening in other dimensions is such that it was necessary to spend some time explaining all these factors. So, go in peace, take a rest and we will resume our dialoging whenever it will be necessary. Your intuition will tell you when. In closure, I would like to take this opportunity to express My personal appreciation and gratitude to all My true representatives for their reading My New Revelation in all its three sources and for reflecting its principles in their everyday life. Continue to the very end in this laudable effort.

Peter: My deep gratitude and appreciation to You for our dialoging.